



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

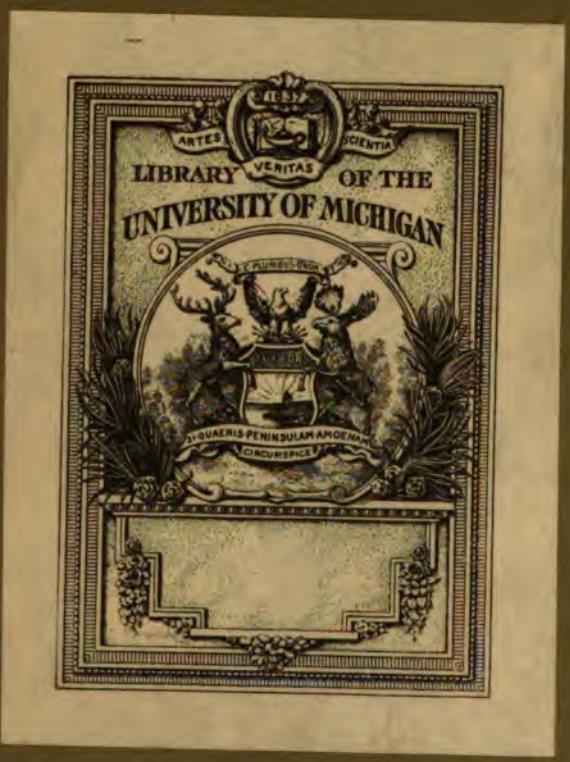
We also ask that you:

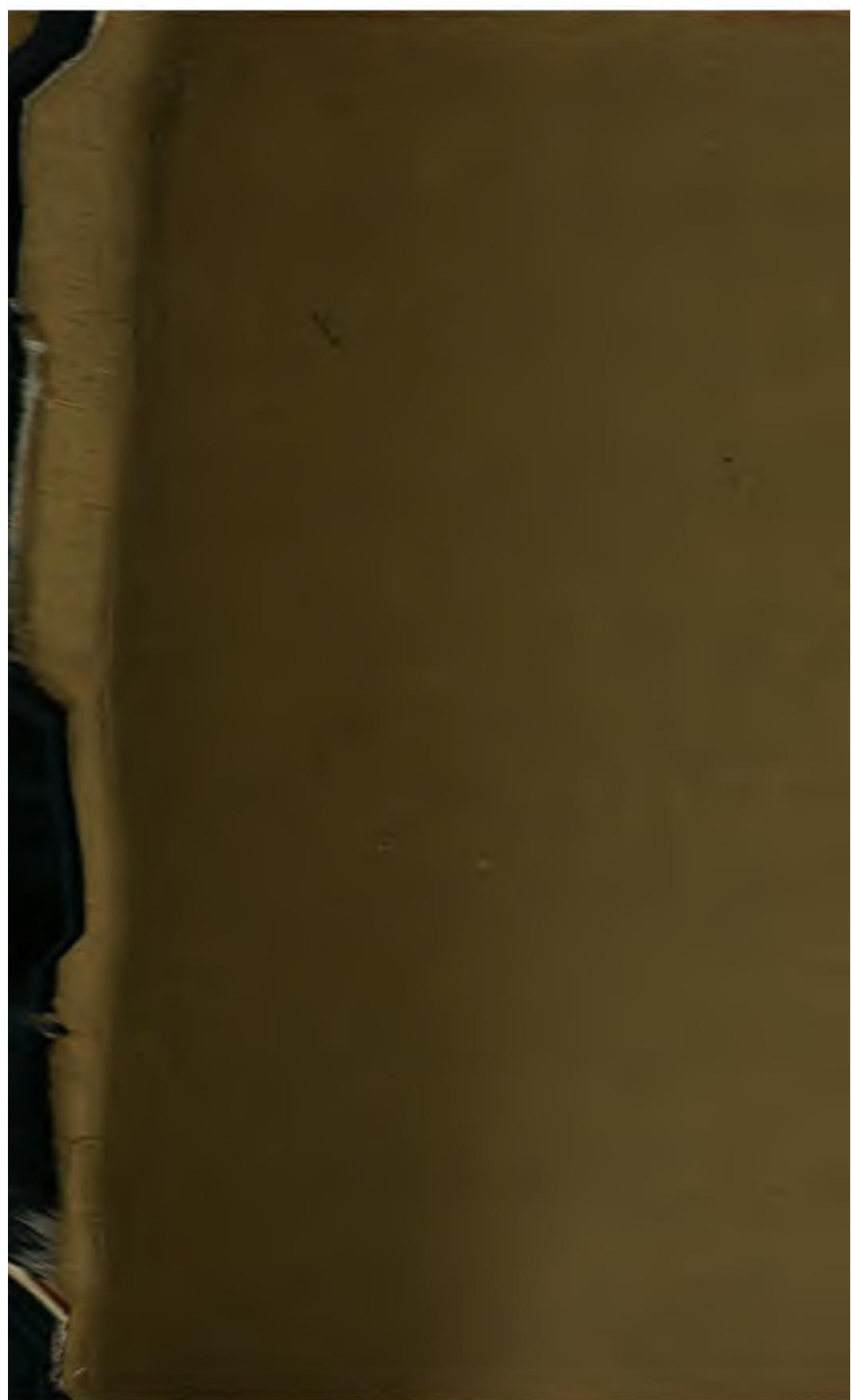
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

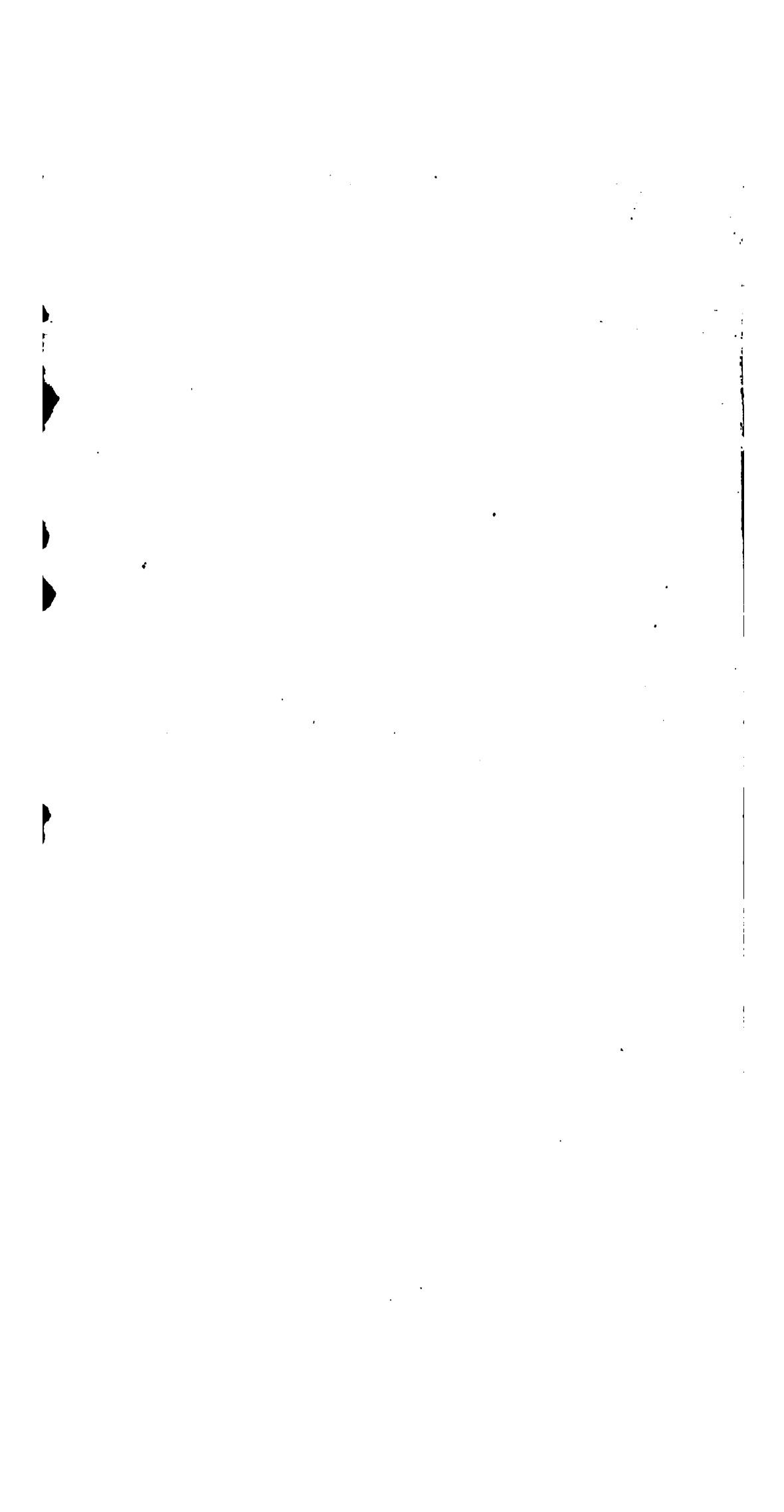
### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

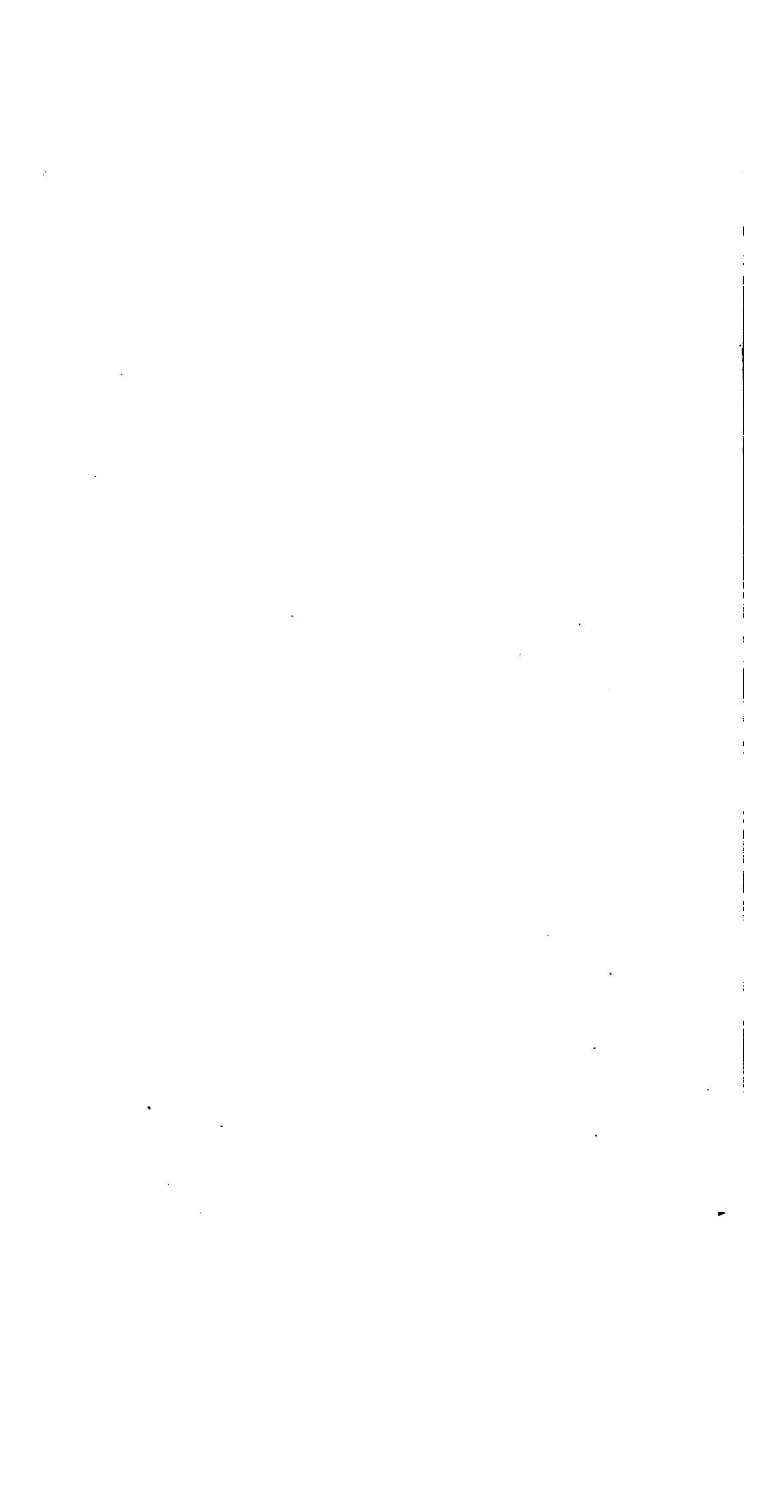












THE  
AMERICAN  
BIBLICAL REPOSITORY,  
46108  
DEVOTED TO

BIBLICAL AND GENERAL LITERATURE, THEOLOGICAL DISCUSSION, THE  
HISTORY OF THEOLOGICAL OPINIONS, ETC.

CONDUCTED BY  
JOHN HOLMES AGNEW.

Second Series.

VOL. XI. NOS. XXI., XXII.—WHOLE NOS. LIII., LIV.

NEW-YORK:  
PUBLISHED BY LEAVITT, TROW, & CO.  
No. 194 BROADWAY.  
BOSTON:  
SAXTON & PIERCE, 133½ WASHINGTON-STREET.  
LONDON:  
WILEY & PUTNAM, 35 PATERNOSTER ROW.  
1844.

**ENTERED according to Act of Congress, in the year 1844, by  
J. H. A G N E W,  
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court for the Southern  
District of New-York.**

**JOHN F. TROW & CO., PRINTERS,  
33 ANN-STREET,  
NEW-YORK.**

## CONTENTS OF VOL. XI.

### No. XXI.

<p><b>ART. I. REVIEW OF HAIGHT'S "GUIDE," AND McILVAINE'S "SOLEMN RESPONSIBILITY OF MINISTERS."</b> By Rev. J. W. McLane, Pastor of the Madison-street Presbyterian Church, New-York, . . . . .</p> <p><b>ART. II. REVIEW OF BORE'S TRAVELS IN TURKEY AND PERSIA.</b> By Rev. A. Homes, Missionary at Constantinople, . . . . .</p> <p><b>ART. III. THE ENGLISH REFORMERS, AND THEIR PRINCIPLES.</b> By John Lord, Boston, Massachusetts, . . . . .</p> <p><b>ART. IV. RELIGION OF EXPERIENCE AND THAT OF IMITATION.</b> By Rev. George B. Cheever, Pastor of Allen-st. Presbyterian Church, N. Y. . . . .</p> <p><b>ART. V. DIVINE AGENCY AND GOVERNMENT, TOGETHER WITH HUMAN AGENCY AND FREEDOM.</b> By Rev. Leonard Woods, D. D., Professor Theol. Sem., Andover, Mass. . . . .</p> <p><b>ART. VI. THE LANGUAGE OF ANCIENT EGYPT.</b> By Rev. R. D. C. Robbins, Andover, Mass. . . . .</p> <p><b>ART. VII. THE PATRIARCHAL RELIGION, AS DEVELOPED IN THE BOOK OF JOB.</b> By Albert Barnes—Introductory note. . . . .</p> <p><b>ART. VIII. DOMINCI DIODATI, DE CHRISTO GRECE LOQUENTE EXERCITATIO.</b> Translated by O. T. Dobbin, LL. B. of</p>	<p>Trinity College, Dublin—Introductory note. . . . .</p> <p><b>ART. IX. INFANT BAPTISM.</b> By Rev. C. A. Hollenbeck, Athens, New-York. . . . .</p> <p><b>ART. X. CRITICAL NOTICES.</b></p> <table style="width: 100%; border-collapse: collapse;"> <tr> <td style="width: 10%;">1</td> <td>Journal of the Oriental Society, . . . . .</td> <td>224</td> </tr> <tr> <td>28</td> <td>Fiske's Manual of Classical Literature, . . . . .</td> <td>228</td> </tr> <tr> <td>65</td> <td>Robbin's Hengstenberg's Egypt . . . . .</td> <td>229</td> </tr> <tr> <td>92</td> <td>D'Aubigné's Voice of the Church, . . . . .</td> <td>230</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Burnet's History of the Reformation, . . . . .</td> <td>231</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Charlotte Elizabeth's Flower Garden, . . . . .</td> <td>231</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Trial of the Pope of Rome, . . . . .</td> <td>232</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Geological Cosmogony, . . . . .</td> <td>233</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Phillips's Memoir of Evans . . . . .</td> <td>233</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Horne's Protestant Memorial, . . . . .</td> <td>234</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Sherman's Governmental History of the U. S. . . . .</td> <td>234</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Punchard's Congregationalism, . . . . .</td> <td>235</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Mrs. Copley's Profit and Honor, . . . . .</td> <td>235</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Uncle Barnaby, . . . . .</td> <td>235</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Barnes's Hebrews, . . . . .</td> <td>236</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Charlotte Elizabeth's Letters from Ireland, . . . . .</td> <td>236</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Charlotte Elizabeth's Foral Biography, . . . . .</td> <td>237</td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td>Additional Notices, . . . . .</td> <td>237</td> </tr> </table> <p><b>ART. XI. LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.</b> . . . . .</p>	1	Journal of the Oriental Society, . . . . .	224	28	Fiske's Manual of Classical Literature, . . . . .	228	65	Robbin's Hengstenberg's Egypt . . . . .	229	92	D'Aubigné's Voice of the Church, . . . . .	230		Burnet's History of the Reformation, . . . . .	231		Charlotte Elizabeth's Flower Garden, . . . . .	231		Trial of the Pope of Rome, . . . . .	232		Geological Cosmogony, . . . . .	233		Phillips's Memoir of Evans . . . . .	233		Horne's Protestant Memorial, . . . . .	234		Sherman's Governmental History of the U. S. . . . .	234		Punchard's Congregationalism, . . . . .	235		Mrs. Copley's Profit and Honor, . . . . .	235		Uncle Barnaby, . . . . .	235		Barnes's Hebrews, . . . . .	236		Charlotte Elizabeth's Letters from Ireland, . . . . .	236		Charlotte Elizabeth's Foral Biography, . . . . .	237		Additional Notices, . . . . .	237
1	Journal of the Oriental Society, . . . . .	224																																																					
28	Fiske's Manual of Classical Literature, . . . . .	228																																																					
65	Robbin's Hengstenberg's Egypt . . . . .	229																																																					
92	D'Aubigné's Voice of the Church, . . . . .	230																																																					
	Burnet's History of the Reformation, . . . . .	231																																																					
	Charlotte Elizabeth's Flower Garden, . . . . .	231																																																					
	Trial of the Pope of Rome, . . . . .	232																																																					
	Geological Cosmogony, . . . . .	233																																																					
	Phillips's Memoir of Evans . . . . .	233																																																					
	Horne's Protestant Memorial, . . . . .	234																																																					
	Sherman's Governmental History of the U. S. . . . .	234																																																					
	Punchard's Congregationalism, . . . . .	235																																																					
	Mrs. Copley's Profit and Honor, . . . . .	235																																																					
	Uncle Barnaby, . . . . .	235																																																					
	Barnes's Hebrews, . . . . .	236																																																					
	Charlotte Elizabeth's Letters from Ireland, . . . . .	236																																																					
	Charlotte Elizabeth's Foral Biography, . . . . .	237																																																					
	Additional Notices, . . . . .	237																																																					

**No. XXII.**

<b>ART. I. WRITINGS OF MARTIN LUTHER.</b> By C. E. Stowe, D. D., Professor of Biblical Literature, Lane Seminary, Cincinnati, . . . . .	<b>241</b>	<b>ART. XI. CRITICAL NOTICES.</b>	
1. Professor H. B. Hackett's <i>Plutarchus, etc.</i>	459	2. Hetherington's Church of Scotland, . . . . .	460
3. Buddicom's <i>Emanuel,</i>	461	4. Horne's <i>Introduction,</i>	461
5. Bangs's <i>Arminius,</i>	462	6. Smith's <i>Heart Delineated,</i>	463
7. Charlotte Elizabeth's <i>Combination,</i>	463	8. Coleman's <i>Apostolical Church,</i>	463
9. Mrs. Ellis's <i>Mothers of England,</i>	464	10. Spring's <i>Church in the Wilderness,</i>	465
11. Madame Guizot's <i>Young Student,</i>	465	12. Charlotte Elizabeth's <i>Wrongs of Women,</i>	466
13. Mrs. Ellis's <i>Minister's Family,</i>	466	14. Uncle Philip's <i>Daniel Boone,</i>	466
15. Parker's <i>Invitation to Happiness,</i>	467	16. Woman's <i>Worth,</i>	467
17. Bunyan's <i>Grace Abounding,</i>	468	18. Holland's <i>Summerfield,</i>	469
19. Hetherington's <i>Westminster Assembly,</i>	469	20. Kendall's <i>Santa Fé Expedition,</i>	470
21. Kitto's <i>Cyclopaedia,</i>	470	22. Calvin's <i>Necessity of the Reformation,</i>	471
23. Spring's <i>Rule of Faith,</i>	471	24. Smith's <i>Tractarian System,</i>	471
25. D'Aubigné's <i>History of Christianity,</i>	472	26. Gordon's <i>Lives of Alexander VI and Cesar Borgia,</i>	472
27. Additional Notices,	473	<b>ART. XII. LITERARY INTELLIGENCE,</b>	474

## THE NEW YEAR.

### TO OUR PATRONS.

We are happy to greet our readers with our January Number of 1844. The Lord has preserved our lives and enabled us to complete our works for another year. Many of our fellow-creatures, and some of our dear brethren and fathers in the ministry have, during the past twelve months, found a resting-place in the silence of the tomb. How precious the belief that many of them, released from their toils, are now where the wicked cease from troubling and the weary are at rest. We still remain in this world of care and perplexity, and for ourselves we mean to toil on, by the grace of God, in the discharge of our duties, relying on his Almighty strength. Especially is it our purpose to devote ourselves to the improvement and advancement of the Repository, using our best endeavors to render it valuable, not only to the minister of the Gospel, but also to literary men of other professions.

We are much encouraged to proceed, also, by letters from men of reputation for scholarship, both in this country and in Europe, approving our course and expressing great satisfaction with the manner in which the work is conducted. Our principles have already been expressed and need not be repeated.

Our opinion is, that our patrons will find the present number a rich and highly valuable one; and we hope to render each succeeding one equally so. To this end, we have promise of aid from some of the best biblical scholars of our own country, and from some also in Europe: and we hope, too, to find leisure to furnish more translations from the German and French Religious Periodicals.

The Repository is of so long standing and sustains so high a reputation, that, as has been well said, "No Minister of the Gospel can afford to do without it." The first series contained twelve volumes. Should we finish the present year, there will be twelve volumes of the second series. Our purpose then is to make and publish a *Complete Index to the*

*whole work from the commencement*, which will unquestionably be of great value.

We had some modification and improvement in view, to commence with this number; but when we reflected that the end of this year will give an equal number of volumes for the second series as for the first, we concluded to postpone that modification, and make it with, probably, the beginning of a Third Series, in 1845, *Deo volente*.

Our readers will bear with us, further, if we say, that it very sensibly promotes our peace and comfort in the conduct of the work, to have them remember that *money is absolutely essential, and that we feel a special regard for those, who do not forget us in the early part of the year.* To pay in advance is THE BEST WAY, both for subscriber, publisher, and editor. Do not postpone, then, but at once transmit what is due for the past and the present year, *through your Postmaster.* Thus it can be done without expense to you or us.

EDITOR.

---

N. B. We have on hand two or three complete sets of the Repository from the commencement; and we believe there are no other entire sets now to be had.

#### ERRATA.

- P. 30, l. 25,—for American, read Armenian.
- P. 32, ll. fr. bot. 7, 9,—for Vau, read Van.
- P. 36, l. 3, fr. bot.—for American, read Armenian.

THE  
AMERICAN  
BIBLICAL REPOSITORY.

JANUARY, 1844.

SECOND SERIES, NO. XXI. WHOLE NO. LIII.

ARTICLE I.

REVIEW OF HAIGHT'S "GUIDE" AND M'ILVAINE'S "SOLEMN  
RESPONSIBILITY OF MINISTERS."

By Rev. J. W. McLane, Pastor of Madison-st. Presbyterian Church, N. Y.

*The Guide to the Understanding of the Holy Scriptures, and  
the Unity of the Church; two Sermons preached in All  
Saints' Church, New York. By Benjamin I. Haight, A. M.,  
Rector. With Notes and an Appendix.* New-York: 1841.  
*Solemn Responsibility of Ministers of the Gospel; a Sermon,  
by the Right Rev. Charles P. M'Ilvaine, D. D., Bishop of  
the Diocese of Ohio; delivered before the Bishops, Clergy, and  
Laity of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States  
of America, in General Convention, at the Consecration of the  
Rev. Alfred Lee, D. D., to the Episcopate of the Diocese of  
Delaware, in St. Paul's Chapel, New-York, Oct. 1841, and  
published by order of the Convention.*

THESE sermons may be taken, in some aspects at least, as specimens of two very different kinds of preaching in the Episcopal Church, and of two equally different and consequent tendencies in the same at the present time. The one concerns itself chiefly with the externals of religion, and inclines strongly towards superstition and popery. The other takes a nobler position, and spends its strength in the proclamation of the

SECOND SERIES, VOL. XI. NO. I.

gospel—depending less upon forms and ceremonies, and planting itself more firmly in defence of the great doctrines of the Reformation. It is mainly *as samples* of these opposites that we bring these productions together, and to the notice of our readers at present. “The Guide,” for it assumes to be something more than a guide, was published, as we learn from a letter of the vestry accompanying it, at their request, and for the purpose of giving “their neighbors, relatives, and friends,” most of whom they consider “honest in their prejudices,” a correct view of the “Constitution of the Church, and of the relation which tradition holds to the sacred volume.” Finding it difficult, as it would seem, to satisfy the minds of those who object to their “peculiar views,” and to “set them right,” in these matters, the vestry anticipated important aid in their work from the publication of this Guide. Hence its appearance.

The sermon of the Prelate was delivered on a more imposing occasion, and for a far nobler object. Its sentiments are those of a pure and elevated piety—and are alike honorable to the head and the heart of that distinguished servant of Christ who uttered them. The friends of truth, especially in the Episcopal communion, are much indebted to Bishop M'Illvaine, for the noble stand he has taken against some of the Oxford doctrines in this discourse, and more particularly in the publication of a work, for which many pious hearts have thanked God, but which a stupid and wretched formalism has marked and stigmatized as “the Gambier Romance.” Some parts of the sermon under review must have fallen with disastrous and crushing weight upon the author of “the Guide.” We must, however, take our leave of the Prelate, until we call him before our readers to pour forth the manly and eloquent indignation of his soul upon sentiments which would have darkened the Tiber, even in the worst days of popery. It is with the Rector of All Saints that we have to do.

The first part of the Guide refers to the understanding of the Scriptures, and is based upon the question of Philip to the Ethiopan eunuch, and his reply: Understandest thou what thou readest? How can I, except some man should guide me? From this the Rector raises the question, “Is the Bible without note or comment a sufficient guide to a man who is sincerely seeking to know and do the will of God? Or does he need something else?” Strange as it may seem in the nineteenth century, and in a church calling itself Protestant, he takes the

position that the Bible in such cases is not sufficient—that man needs something more in order to know and do the will of God, and to keep him from error. Most Protestants believe the Bible to be a plain book in all things pertaining to righteousness and life—so plain that the wayfaring man, though a fool, need not err. The conviction in Protestant churches almost universally is, that the difficulty in understanding the Bible exists far more in the state of a man's heart, than in the impotency of his intellect, and that, therefore, the readiest way to understand its truths is to do the will of God,—that the seed of heavenly truth, when sown, yields its fold just in proportion to *the goodness* of the ground upon which it falls; and that therefore those who lack wisdom are the most likely to find it, who, as the Apostle directs, look to God for it, and not to man—who, are taught by the Spirit, and consequently know more of the will of God than they do who betake themselves to the teachings of men.\*

The Rector, however, is of a different opinion. This course of study and prayer does not remove the difficulty. For he sees "men with the Bible in their hands, which they receive as the word of God, and which they regard as the *only source* of divine truth, and which they have perused most assiduously upon bended knees, and with hearts raised to heaven, differing not a little in their interpretation of Scripture." And hence he tells us, "they are divided into sects and subdivision of sects." The conclusion therefore is, that in our efforts to understand the Bible, we need something more than this book, "studied with humility and prayer." We need a Guide.† But who or what

---

\* Let men say what they will, they will find it hard to discover any volume, which, in all its great outlines, is plainer than the *book of God*. It has its obscurities and its mysteries, it is true—wisely left there; but they trouble not the humble and docile—myriads of whom without any teacher but itself, have learned from it enough to teach them how to live well, and how to die happy.—Ed. Review for Jan. 1843.

† It is with a feeling of just indignation that we hear professed Christians and professed Protestants—at all events those who are *not* professed Romanists—giving utterance to the sentiment, that the private student of Scripture would not ordinarily gain a knowledge of the gospel from it. Such a doctrine is not merely an insult to common sense—it is a libel on the Divine Author of the Bible.—Idem.

is this to be, is the next question started by the Rector. "Who is to inform us whether the Bible teaches the doctrines held by this sect or by that? or which of its various interpretations is correct?" An immediate answer is not given to these questions. The author first takes an excursion into ecclesiastical history to ascertain whether the professed followers of Christ have always thus differed as to the sense of the Saviour's words, and those of his apostles. Here he is greatly comforted. He sees in the past, a time when all were agreed as to the meaning of the Bible—a time when, from sea to sea, and from the river to the ends of the earth, one unbroken sentiment on this subject existed. He introduces Irenæus, who, as he says, "*was the disciple of St. John,*" and who lived in those halcyon days, to state that in his time there was "no difference of faith or tradition" in the churches East or West, North or South; and proceeds to give us the reason of this unanimity of opinion about the meaning of the Bible. If we could have had the ear of the Rector just here, we would have whispered the wise precaution of Franklin, of first ascertaining whether what is here asserted be a fact, before proceeding to account for it. But the chasm was leaped, and the explanation given. It is too precious to be omitted—"Christ taught his apostles; they taught others both by word and epistles. Teachers, who had been taught by apostles, or apostolic men, brought forward no new subjects, or doctrines, but simply referred their hearers to points on which they had been previously instructed, and which had been summed up in the creed which they had been taught, and incorporated in the liturgy which they had constantly used. All question as to whether the Bible taught this or that doctrine was shut out of the early church," i. e., by an appeal to tradition—to what the apostles taught, and what had been handed down from one to another.

In admiration, the Rector exclaims, "No wonder that, as Irenæus says, there was no difference of faith or tradition in the churches of Germany, Spain, and Gaul, in the East, in Egypt, in Africa, or in the more central parts of the world;" or that in the council at Nice, "bishops from all parts of the world were perfectly agreed as to what the faith of the church then was, as it had been from the beginning." All this unanimity as to the meaning of the Bible not only existed then, but would have continued even to this day, if men "had adhered to primitive doctrines and usages," (and let the Bible alone, or had

been satisfied with what was known of it in the first centuries of the church,) and "had, in their interpretations of it, kept close to apostolic teaching, as witnessed to by a long train of saints and martyrs, and embodied in the creeds and formulæries of the ancient church. But this was not done. Pride of intellect, evil passions, and worldly influence and other causes led men to leave the old paths, the good way, and led them to mark out new ones ; and so false doctrine, heresy, and schism were brought into the Christian fold. The unity of the church was rent. The one faith gave way to a thousand new systems of man's invention, and all the evils were introduced under which Christendom now groans, as it has for at least nine centuries."

This we regard as a most extraordinary piece of ecclesiastical history. The idea intended to be conveyed by it is, that for centuries Christians were all agreed as to the meaning of the Bible,—that the whole surface of Christendom was unbroken by any differences of opinion—undisturbed even by a breath of false doctrine, heresy, or schism ; and this too when the very passage, which he quotes from Irenæus to prove it, is taken from an elaborate work written against *such evils then existing in the bosom of the church.*\* The quotation from Irenæus does not prove the point for which it is adduced. The unanimity of which he speaks consisted in a belief of those doctrines and forms that had been handed down from the times of the apostles, through the churches founded by them. But this was a mere shell—a bare outline of the more prominent doctrines. Under this there was, and had been, even from the days of the apostles, a difference of opinion. The Epistles of the New Testament show beyond all question that the surface of Christendom was far from being unbroken by differences of opinion in matters of religion. In churches planted by the apostles, and almost contemporary with their establishment, men began to improve upon the simplicity of apostolic teaching—to mould its forms and its doctrines according to the patterns of a human philosophy—to combine with the religion of Jesus the commandments of men. Even from the inspired page we hear the strange sounds of division—of I am of Paul and I of Apollos—yes, even of seducing spirits and damnable heresies. Differences, which began in Paul's day, continued, like the streams of the earth, to widen and deepen, and disturb the peace of the church.

---

\* Irenæus *Adversus Haereses.*

In the second century we find these bitter waters increased in volume, and in many instances maddened into greater rapidity. The simple religion of Jesus was more and more corrupted by the infusions of a heathen philosophy, and the peace of the church disturbed by the collision of opposite views of divine truth. It is *not true* that men were then perfectly agreed in doctrinal views, or in their interpretations of the Bible. And still less true is it, that men "kept close to the teaching of the apostles." There were loud complaints of departures from it. Was there a perfect harmony of feeling and sentiment between the Jewish and Gentile Christians? Were all agreed as to the condition of the soul after death? Was there no difference of faith or tradition in the practice of the Jewish and the Gentile churches? Was there no difference of opinion as to the meaning of the Scriptures, for example, between Irenæus and Tertullian? between the school of allegorizing theologians, and that of the austere and gloomy Montanists? In the second and third centuries were there no divisions—no false doctrine—no schism—in the church? No war between faith and reason—between religion and philosophy? No contests about the nature of Christ? Let any tyro in history answer.

The Rector's explanation is like his fact. We might discard it at once, since what it is adduced to eclaircise never did exist. But we have a word to say in reference to it, which, in justice to truth, ought not to be suppressed here. The unbroken harmony of sentiment in regard to the meaning of the Bible, which existed in those days of "virgin purity," as the Rector is pleased to call the first centuries of the church, was secured, it seems, by confining the minds of men "to points upon which they had been instructed by apostles, or apostolic men, and which had been summed up in the creed they had been taught, and incorporated into the liturgy they had constantly used." Here we have both a creed and a liturgy formed by the apostles, or by apostolical men, i. e., by men instructed by the apostles! But what proof have we of the existence of any such creed? And where is that liturgy? What has become of it? Who has seen it in modern days? Who ever saw it? Is there any allusion to such a thing in the New Testament? The author has drawn largely here upon his imagination. We commend to him the remark of Coleridge, He, who dreams of flying,*flies only in his dreams*.

Our author comes back from his delightful excursion with an

answer to the question, Who is to guide us in interpreting the Bible? It is to be interpreted by "PRIMITIVE ANTIQUITY!"—by tradition, as witnessed to by a long train of saints, and embodied in the creed, and incorporated into the liturgy formed by the apostles, or by apostolic men! We are not of those who cast aside "the Fathers," or "the long line of witnessing saints," as wholly useless. For a time the primitive church had to be guided by tradition. Until the books of the New Testament were compiled, they had to be directed by what was handed down from one to another. When this was done—when they once had the words of Christ and his apostles, they had all that they needed to become wise unto salvation—they had what was to settle every question—to determine the reception of tradition. In the mean time, however, serious evils had entered the church through tradition. In passing from mind to mind, and from one generation to another, it had not proved an exception to the "Mobilitate viget, viresque acquirit eundo" of transmitted intelligence. Thus it had converted hints into certainties, possible allusions into facts, and fixed what the laws of interpretation absolutely forbid. Hence, in the second and third centuries, doctrines and practices were introduced which were unknown in the days of the apostles. Many appealed to what they called apostolic tradition in defence of that which was not only contrary to other traditions, but opposed to the writings of the apostles which they had in their hands. Hence we find it laid down by Irenæus and others as a rule, that "no tradition is to be received as apostolic, *unless founded on the Holy Scriptures and conformable to them.*" Tradition, therefore, was not to be the determiner of Scripture, but Scripture of tradition. Its voice was not to be heard, unless it coincided in its testimony with the New Testament. Every student of history knows the reason. Besides what is contained in this book, we have very little credible information respecting the Christian church in the first, and the succeeding half of the next century; while that which follows this period is often still more objectionable. Hence the Reformers wisely took the position that tradition is not to determine the meaning of the Bible—they had too much good sense, and had seen too much of the consequences of following that *ignis fatuus*, to do so. They planted themselves on the ground that the Bible is the only rule of faith—the only "*principium cognoscendi*" in theology. Hence the wonders which they wrought.

Now before we are sent back to April\* in this matter by the Rector, and his Romish friends of the Oxford school, let us try the rule here laid down, and see how it will work—or what light we shall get. The rule is, that "Primitive Antiquity" is to determine the meaning of Scripture. We come to this tribunal then with the question which meets us at the very outset, namely, upon what principle are we to interpret the Bible? We call upon the fathers of the Nicene theology for an answer. What do they say? This, that "the language of the Bible has two meanings, one of which is obvious and corresponds with the direct meaning of the words, the other is recondite, and concealed under the words, like a nut in its shell, and that we are to neglect the former as of little value, and to seek the latter," i. e., to leave the plain import of the Bible, and engage in the work of allegorizing—in putting fiction for fact—the vagaries of a fervid and undisciplined imagination in the place of the plain and eternal verities of the truth as it is in Jesus. In order to illustrate the meaning of this answer, we will give our readers an example or two of their mode of explaining the Bible. Clement, an apostolic father, in his second Epistle to the Corinthians, thus comments on the remark of the apostle in Gal., 'that there is neither male nor female.' "He calls our anger the male, and our concupiscence the female. When, therefore, a man is subject neither to the one nor the other of these, but having dispelled the mist arising from them, and being full of shame, shall by repentance have united both his soul and spirit in the obedience of reason, then, as Paul says, there is in us neither male nor female." See Abp. Wake's Genuine Epistles of the Apostolic Fathers. Hear Father Barnabas expound the spiritual import of the passage in Gen. 17: 27. "Abraham," he says, "circumcised three hundred and eighteen men of his house. But what, therefore, was the mystery that was made known to him? Mark first the eighteen, and next the three hundred. For the numeral letters of ten and eight are I. H. And these denote Jesus (being the first and second letters of that name in Greek). And because the cross was that by which we were to find grace, therefore he adds three hundred; the note of which is T (the figure of the cross). Wherefore, by two letters he signified Jesus, and by the third

---

\* In plain language, ere we are made fools of.

his cross."—General Epistle of Barnabas, ch. VIII. 11—13. In such exegesis many of the ancient fathers abound. To any one at all acquainted with history, we need not say that this is a fair specimen of the mystical allegorizing method of interpreting the Bible by "Primitive Antiquity."

We go to the fathers of the Nicene council, who lived in the period of the church's "virgin purity," with the question, What saith the Bible on the subject of celibacy? Is the Rector ready for their answer? Is he ready and willing to interpret the Scriptures here in accordance with their decision? Is he prepared to place celibacy above holiness?—to make it the highest preparation for heaven?—the greatest possible approach in man while on earth to the divine purity, to the incorruptible God? If not, then he is not prepared to act in accordance with his rule. We go to "Primitive Antiquity" to learn what the Bible teaches about the soul after death, and learn from that interpreter that the spirits of only the more eminent saints are happy after they leave the body, and that only the grossest sinners sink to perdition—that all others go to a place, where they are detained till the second coming of Christ, or at least till they are freed from all their impurities. In the second century, in the days even of "the virgin purity of the church," we find this germ of purgatory generally believed. Let any one go to "Primitive Antiquity"—to the days of Justin Martyr, Irenæus, and Tertullian—to the times of Theophilus of Antioch, of Tatian and Origen, and make the views then held about the nature of Christ, the meaning of the Bible, and what will be his creed? The Son is of the same essence with the Father, and *inferior* to him. Let this same determiner of the meaning of the Bible explain the nature of Christ's death, and what is the result? a faith which is emphatically a "rudis indigestaque moles." We cannot enter the "Parish School of All Saints," and learn from "Primitive Antiquity," as there enthroned, what the Bible means. The idea to us is monstrous. In their opinions of the import of the Scriptures, the Fathers are truly what Milton affirms, "sea-weed, shells, and rubbish," which, for the most part, have long been thrown into the same lumber-room, where, as crudities, we have put our ghosts, witches, and alchemists. We are glad, therefore, to find better teaching in some parts of the Episcopal Church. The language of the gifted Prelate, in the sermon before us, is truly refreshing to us after listening to such popish nonsense about "Primitive Anti-

quity,"—about darkness pouring light on the bright pages of inspiration.

" What the Lord saith, that is our lively oracle. And since we have no evidence, that the Lord bath so spoken to his church as to furnish her any other oracles than those of the Holy Scriptures, we are left to conclude that in them is the only final rule of faith to the church—the *only final authority*, to which a minister is to go for the words of eternal life. Till recently it was not supposed possible that under such solemn pledges, (as are given by ministers when ordained,) the single authority of the Scriptures, as alone the oracles of God, could be drawn into question. But strange and mortifying it is to say that the Protestant Church (i. e., the Episcopal part of it) is at this day molested with attempts within to introduce, for co-ordinate authority, that which we had hoped had long since been finally rejected and protested against, with all other like *devices of the man of sin for overthrowing the reign of Christ*. Into the consideration of what is now taught (in 'the Guide,' for instance) on the subject of tradition as the authoritative interpreter of the Scriptures, as constituting with them a joint rule of faith, as proceeding originally from the same fount of inspiration, and so meriting, in this the eighteenth century of its course, an equally reverential regard, we have no intention of entering. The existence of such *an apparition* in the present age of our Protestant church, has been alluded to for the sake of the strong contrast, by which it enables us to show the doctrine of our ordination vows concerning the Scriptures as alone the oracles of God; and also, that I may urge upon my brethren in the ministry, that whatever evil may come to others from the gathering up of the traditions by the draught of a drag-net, which embraces the rubbish of even *seven* centuries, for an infallible interpretation of the Scriptures; they, for themselves, will take heed that the affliction may be so sanctified to them, that by showing them how easily the wisdom of man may be deceived by a false 'angel of light,' and how prone it is, under an idea of doing God service, to pervert his plain truth by complex inventions of men, they may be led by the present evil only to search more diligently, follow more simply, and preach more exclusively and fondly the plain text of the Bible. Be assured we escape no controversies, but multiply all, by associating with the Bible, for *final authority*, the judgments of men, however

numerous, learned, holy, or ancient. It is not because the Scriptures are not plain enough, that divisions in doctrine abound; but because the hearts of men are not honest enough. The same cause would darken any counsel, and pervert any rule, and the easier in proportion as the rule was strict and the counsel holy. It is no more to be supposed that God, in providing a revelation for man, would have furnished such means of understanding it, that none could help knowing the doctrine, than that he should have so displayed its evidences that none could help believing its truth. It is as really our probation whether we will so read the Scriptures as to understand their doctrine, as whether we will so read the same as to obey their precept. To seek a rule, in tradition, or in any thing else, by which to prevent the possibility of errors, and divisions, and heresies, concerning the faith, no matter what the jaundice of the eye, or the enmity of the heart, is to seek what would be wholly inconsistent with that probation under which we are held, as well for the unbiassed use of our understanding as for the obedient submission of our will. The existence of divers opinions as to what is truth, is no more the evidence that the written word, as a rule of faith, is defective, than the multiplied forms of ungodliness in a Christian land are proof of defect in the motives for holy obedience to the moral law. The remedy against error is not in mending the rule by which we measure our doctrines, but in taking the beam out of the eye that judges of their truth; not by making the Scripture profitable for doctrine by dividing its authority with the traditions of many centuries, but by humbling the reader into a more implicit submission to, and a more entire contentment with, whatever it teaches. The wayfaring man, who cannot choose his course by taking observations of the sun, as it shines in the broad daylight of the Scriptures, will little help his accuracy by resorting to *the dead reckoning of tradition.*"

We have not yet, however, reached the summit to which "the Guide" conducts us. One Alpine height remains for us to climb. Man cannot of himself understand the Bible,—he needs something else. "Primitive Antiquity" must determine its meaning for him. This may seem at first to be setting men afloat on a sea of uncertainty, or perilling the truth with difficulty. What! must we go back, and read the musty tomes of the fathers in order to understand the Bible? or to know what we must do to be saved? Oh! no; there is no necessity for this.

"*Primitive Antiquity is presented in its FULNESS AND PURITY IN THE BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER.*" Verily, this Prayer-Book is a wonderful work! It contains all primitive antiquity in its fulness and purity! Yes; "its liturgies and creeds, its prayers, anthems, and hymns, are all of high antiquity. They have glowed upon the lips of apostles, saints, and martyrs!" This is the summit. It is an elevation above any thing we have seen from the Oxford school. The creeds of this book date back to the apostles! The Nicene with its additions, for example, was used by the apostles! Its anthems and hymns too are of the same high antiquity! That is, the compositions of Steele, Toplady, Watts, Barbauld, Doddridge, Luther, Cowper, Addison, Wesley, Dwight, Heber, and Montgomery, have all glowed upon the lips of apostles, saints, and martyrs of high antiquity! We defy any Romanist to surpass this. Comment here is unnecessary. We have a word more to say, however, before we leave this point. The Rector tells us that this Prayer-Book contains primitive antiquity in its fulness and purity,—of course there is in it a faithful transcript of the teaching and biblical exegesis of the primitive church. Does it contain the teaching of the Nicene Fathers on the subject of celibacy? Does it teach what primitive antiquity taught about the condition of the soul after death? or about the nature of Christ? or the object of his sufferings and death? It does not. In its structure, this Prayer-Book conforms much more to the theolog of Leyden in the sixteenth century, than to primitive antiquity. It wears much more the aspects of the age of Edward and Elizabeth, than of the times of Irenæus and Tertullian. It is much more thoroughly penetrated with the spirit of Arminianism, than with the teachings of primitive times.

In one particular, however, we must concede it inculcates the doctrine of primitive antiquity in its fulness and purity. We refer to baptismal regeneration. The early Fathers, as is well known, ascribed to baptism a peculiar efficacy. In their view there was an inherent virtue in the act, which changed the nature of man—or that innate sin was removed from the individual, or child, in connection with the performance of this rite. This popish and unscriptural idea is taught in this Book of Common Prayer. When a child is baptized, the minister is directed to say, "We yield thee hearty thanks, most merciful Father, that *it hath pleased thee to REGENERATE THIS INFANT WITH THY HOLY SPIRIT.*" Now, if this be true, then one of two things must follow,

either all children, baptized in the Episcopal church, are saved, or that some of them fall from grace, and become again children of wrath. Which of these horns will our Episcopal friends choose? They do not believe, we suppose, that any one who has been regenerated by the Holy Spirit is ever lost. We are compelled, therefore, to one of two conclusions—either that all infants baptized in their church are regenerated, and therefore saved, or that they speak with their lips in this case what they do not believe in their hearts.

We have said, we do not discard the writings of the Fathers. We would not. They subserve an important end. Their testimony is good as to what they saw and heard—as to what was the practice of the church in their day. But as interpreters of Scripture, as possessing co-ordinate authority with inspired writers, we receive them not. We cannot allow them to determine for us what saith the Lord. We are willing to hear their opinions, and to give them all their just weight, but further than this, we cannot go. As interpreters of the Bible, we cannot sit at their feet, and consent to receive the law from their hands. No; they are *the young and inexperienced men* of the church. They knew much better how to suffer than to teach—to explain the Bible.\* Here they are full of blunders, often talk at random, and are contradictory. They are to serve, not to govern us. As the sole arbiters of the meaning of the Bible, we renounce them, and should just as soon think of receiving the infallibility of the Pope, or the supremacy of Victoria, or of her more illustrious maiden predecessor, in matters of faith. The Bible is a plain book in all things pertaining to life and righteousness,—in all points essential to salvation, a child can understand its lessons of wisdom. It requires only an honest heart, and the application of the rules of language and of common sense, under the spiritual illumination of the Holy Ghost, to be understood in all points essential to peace on earth and joy in heaven. The student of the Bible, therefore, is to direct his course, as Paul did, by prayer, by communion with God, by attaining purity of heart,—a sympathy of soul with the divine mind, the revealing Spirit, in these pages of heavenly love. At every step, and with all the help of man, he is to lift up his eye to God and ask, Open thou mine eyes, as the surest way of un-

---

\* To believe, to suffer, to love—not to write, was the primitive taste.—Milner.

derstanding wondrous things out of the Bible. Yes ; he must direct his course by heavenly signs, by catching every breath of celestial air. He is to be guided in ascertaining the meaning of Scripture, not by the fancies of men—not by the fulness and purity of primitive antiquity, boiled down into the consistency of some homily, or Prayer-Book—no,—but by assiduous study, and “on bended knees, and with a heart raised to heaven,”—by honest, persevering, and prayerful effort.\*

We agree perfectly with the illustrious Prelate, whose words of burning rebuke we have quoted, that the attempt, now made in certain parts of the Episcopal church, to exalt the teachings of man's wisdom to an equal, if not higher place than those of the Holy Ghost, to make the voice of primitive antiquity the determiner of the truth as it is in Jesus, exhibits some of the worst features of the man of sin. It is an attempt by a taper light to show us the sun in the heavens, and even to cast light upon its bright and burning disk. We feel no possible sympathy with such a movement. It strikes us with peculiar infelicity that we should be turned back in these last days, as we are in this “Guide,” and sent to the school of Ignatius, or of Cyprian, to ascertain what the Bible means, when they tell us that all they knew they learned from the Bible. We abhor this Oxford movement—this shameful and adulterous union of tradition with divine truth. The place of the Bible is not at the feet of human philosophy ; nor yet on an equal elevation with it. It is enthroned as far above it, as the pure heaven, whence it came, is above the low earth, on which we dwell. From that celestial eminence it must not be brought down, and united with the teachings of man's wisdom—with any thing earthly. When the Saviour came into the world, he found the Scriptures wedded to tradition, and under its control and guidance, and at once and

---

\* I will not scruple to assert, that the most illiterate Christian, if he can but read his English Bible, and will but take the pains to read it in this manner, (comparing parallel passages,) will not only attain all that practical knowledge which is necessary to his salvation ; but, by God's blessing, he will become learned in every thing relating to his religion in such a degree, that he will not be liable to be misled, either by the refined arguments or by the false assertions of those who endeavor to ingraft their own opinion upon the oracles of God. Bishop Horsley.

forever dissolved the nuptials as forced and offensive to him. The pure word of God needs no such alliance—no such aid. This heavenly manna, as Milton intimates, is not to be seasoned with the tainted scraps of an unknown table. The spotless and undecaying robe of truth—we still use the words of the great poet—is not to be interlaced, and set off with the over-worn rags that have dropped from the toiling shoulders of time, however carefully gathered up, and by whomsoever preserved. So Protestants feel. With them the Bible alone is the Word of God. Divine truth, like the seamless vesture worn by the Master, was not rent by the Spirit, and divided between the Scriptures and tradition, the written and the unwritten word. No, it is whole and entire in the Bible—in the doctrine and discipline of the gospel—in the cross of Christ, and the glorious truths which encircle that bright and burning focus of Christianity ; and requires most of all a humble, contrite heart—a heart in sympathy with what is holy, to understand and love it. It is upon minds darkened by guilt, upon hearts alienated by transgression, that the Bible fails to make its legitimate impression. If the gospel, therefore, be hid from any, it is not from those who, "on bended knees, and with hearts raised to heaven," are seeking the truth ; but from those whose minds the god of this world hath blinded. The difficulty is in *the hearts* of men, who obey not the truth. The rays of light from the pages of inspiration fall upon *troubled* waters, and therefore, the image of the heavenly is not seen. Let the winds of passion just cease to disturb the surface of the human mind, let the sea of the corrupt heart once cease to cast up mire and dirt, and the understanding be opened by an influence from above, and then men will understand the Bible—then will the bosom of those same waters catch and retain the image of the truth, and reflect its softness and beauty to the eye of men, and make them wise unto salvation. "Here endeth the first lesson."

The second part of "the Guide" respects the unity of the church. Here the Rector is equally felicitous in his positions. Without defining the term, he proceeds to say, that the violation of this unity is a sin—that it has been violated, but is careful to tell us that the sin does not lie at the door of his denomination—that the Episcopal church in this country is the child of that in England, which, before the times of Luther, was one—that at the Reformation she threw off the impositions of popery and returned to the primitive faith—that the Papists,

who would not submit to this, left the church and became separatists and schismatics,—and that the Puritans also, in the reign of Elizabeth, left the church and formed an opposing communion,—that unable to mould the church according to their views, “inasmuch as she went as she had begun under Edward VI., looking to primitive antiquity, and the consent of the Catholic Fathers, and the ancient bishops as her guide and pattern,” the Puritans began “to declaim against the church as popish and superstitious; and affirming Episcopacy to be anti-christian, they separated from the church, and formed conventicles.” Hence the author concludes that the sin of schism does not rest on the Anglican church, nor on her fair daughter in America.

History gives us a very different version of this matter. In the reign of Edward, the ignorance of the clergy called for the preparation of homilies and prayers to aid them in their duties. The Book of Common Prayer was compiled, and *chiefly from the Roman*. It retained many of the strong features of popery. It was afterwards revised, and some of these were left out. Elizabeth had the liturgy remodelled, and issued fifty-two injunctions, regulating worship and discipline—the lives and duties of clergymen—rites and ceremonies, and the like. Respecting the forms of worship, the convocation was about equally divided in opinion. One part urged, and with great earnestness, a return to greater simplicity. The other opposed this. The queen, who was fond of splendor in worship, and claiming supreme authority in religious matters, carried her point, and enforced uniformity to her views. According to Hume, the forms and ceremonies retained by Elizabeth in the liturgy tended to reconcile the Catholics to the established religion. The same historian adds, that if the queen could have had her way, the external appearance of worship would have had a still greater similarity to Rome,—that her love of state and magnificence, which she affected in every thing, inspired her with an inclination towards the pomp of the Catholic religion, and that it was in compliance with the prejudices of her party that she gave up images, addresses to the saints, and prayers for the dead. The Puritans saw this, and grieved over it. The crust of popery was indeed broken, but much of the shell was still retained. They wished to throw away the whole of it; and they would have moulded the church according to their views, if they had not been resisted by one, who, like the pope, claimed

supreme authority in matters of religion, and who established a worship, full of "the show and pomp of Rome," and ordered all her subjects to conform to the same.

The Episcopalian "went as they had begun under Edward, looking to primitive antiquity—to the consent of the Catholic Fathers and Ancient Bishops"—but not to the New Testament, as the *ultima ratio legum* in regard to all religious matters. They stopped where it was safe for them to stop. Determined to retain the forms and practices of Prelacy, it would not have been wise for them to have gone beyond primitive antiquity, and to have ventured into the presence of the New Testament—the witnessing spirit of the first and purest age of the church. The safe place for Prelacy is in the sea-weed and shells of Milton's drag-net—which in the third century, the period of "the church's *virgin purity*," had gathered together a multitude of forms and ceremonies, unknown in the days of the apostles. This, therefore, is the never-failing refuge of Episcopalian when discomfited, as they are sure to be, whenever they so far forget themselves as to venture into the clear light of the Scriptures with the claims of Episcopacy. The church of England, therefore, under the auspices of Elizabeth, who "regarded her spiritual supremacy as the brightest jewel in her crown," looked only to primitive antiquity—to the consent of the Catholic Fathers and of the Ancient Bishops. The Puritans looked beyond the authority of man to that of God—beyond the decrees of councils to those of heaven. The Prelatists were satisfied with a partial reform. The Puritans were for thorough work—for pushing the Reformation back to the beginning, and for planting every thing pertaining to the church *on the simple basis of the New Testament*. With them it was not enough that the wretched incrustation of popery was broken; every part and particle of it was to be thrown away. The question with them was, whether they should return to the simplicity of apostolic worship, or rest satisfied with that which was "full of the show and pomp of Rome." Here they could not, for one moment, hesitate. Prelacy established its forms and ceremonies, and demanded compliance with them. The Puritan could not conform. His conscience would not allow him to do it. Prelacy, "looking to primitive antiquity," frowned and menaced through her court of High Commission, her Inquisition in miniature. The Puritan laid his hand upon his Bible, and by its authority claimed the right of private judgment in matters of religion.

Prelacy, with "the consent of the Catholic Fathers," lighted up the fires of persecution. The Puritan, following a nobler example, took joyfully the spoiling of his goods. That which was born after the flesh, persecuted that which was born after the Spirit. Thus Prelacy, in its very essence intolerant, drove from her communion, and ultimately from her soil, the Puritans, those men of God, of whom the world was not worthy.

During the Reformation in England, the community was divided into three great parties. The Catholics took their stand in defence of all the abominations of popery. The Prelatists in some things were in favor of reform. The Puritans urged an immediate return to the simplicity of apostolic worship. According to the Rector of All Saints, the Prelatists were perfectly right in doing what they did—were discharging an indispensable duty in throwing off what seemed to them the impositions of popery. And so we believe. But how comes it, that the Puritans were not discharging the same high and imperative duty in casting away all that *seemed to them* of the same character? The Prelatists justified their action by an appeal to the Bible—to the liberty which it gives to each one of thinking for himself. The Puritans made the same appeal, and how is it that they had not the same right? Prelatists shaped the forms and ceremonies of their worship to suit their views: why must the Puritan conform to a mode of worship, in his opinion, full of the show and pomp of Rome, or, if he thinks for himself, be branded as a separatist and a schismatic? With what countenance can Prelatists claim for themselves what they deny to all others, the right of private judgment? On what ground can they fix upon others the odious charge of schism, for doing the very thing they did—for casting away the impositions of popery? The English church took a position which is right, but which gives to all others what she claimed for herself—the liberty of conscience—the liberty to think, each one for himself. To say, therefore, as the author of the Guide does, that all who do not conform to her mode of worship are separatists and schismatics, is monstrous in the extreme. It is virtually saying, that *the Episcopal church alone has the right of private judgment—that in her bosom alone is the liberty to be enjoyed, with which Christ has made us all free.* They may alter and amend their forms of worship—may cast off what seems to them the impositions of popery, and it is all right. But if others exercise

the same freedom, and, following the Bible and the dictates of conscience, go further than they do in the work of reform, and return to the simplicity of the gospel, as they think, they transcend their liberty, they break the unity of the church, and commit sin! We know of nothing more preposterous or intolerant. Such a feeling has in it the germ and the essence of that which established the Court of High Commission, and laid the foundations of the Inquisition. The position is verily ridiculous. It involves a most palpable absurdity. We will suppose that a member of All Saints, who has hitherto taken Prelacy upon trust, as it is to be feared too many do, is led to test its claims by Scripture, and comes, after much prayerful consideration, to the conclusion that its doctrines and practices are not countenanced by the Bible. He comes to the Rector with his difficulty. "I cannot conscientiously," he says, "affirm what the church affirms, or practise what she enjoins, without doing wrong. What am I to do? You tell me, in 'the Guide,' that separation from the Episcopal communion is a great sin—that it is breaking the unity of the church—I am therefore in a strait. If I stay, I feel that I shall commit sin by so doing. If I leave the church, you say I will commit sin. How, then, am I to act?" Perhaps the Rector, aided by the Oxford Tracts, with which there is great sympathy in the Guide, might relieve the conscience of his inquirer thus: "You must distinguish here; though you cannot secede from us without sin, yet it does not hence follow that you are a sinner, for a man may commit sin, and yet not be himself a sinner!"\*

We proceed with our "Guide." "For six centuries the oneness of the church was preserved—These were the days of her glory and her strength—The fruits of the Spirit everywhere abounded—Christians were known by the loftiness of their lives—The soldiers of the cross were successful in their warfare with the god of this world, and the cross was carried forward in triumph." To the first century and to the succeeding half of the second, this language may apply. But to the far greater part of this period of the church's pretended oneness, it is wholly inapplicable. It is a well-known fact, and one over which the spirit of piety weeps in unavailing sorrow, that even in the days of Irenæus, a fatal eclipse began to cover the disk of the church,

---

\* See Tract No. 51, where the "*supra mundane doctrine*" is taught, that man may commit sin, and yet not be a sinner.

and shade after shade of deepening gloom to settle down upon the interests of religion like a funeral pall. The four centuries preceding the seventh, present us with any thing, rather than the glory of the church. They form the great laboratory, in which most of those giant evils, that for ages wasted the energies and corrupted the virtue of Christendom, had their origin. They properly form a part of the "Dark Ages" of the church, and furnish us with much of what may very justly be called the miseries of "the Middle Passage" of Christianity—the painful sufferings and oppressions, which she was compelled to endure in passing from the hands of the apostles, and their immediate successors, through an ocean of darkness to the light and freedom of the Reformation. These the days of the church's glory ! When her learning and piety were steadily declining, and the constant increase of rites and ceremonies was crushing her free spirit into the dust and into the lifelessness of a stupid formality—when the church was brought into unhallowed union with the civil power, and the whole frame-work of a spiritual hierarchy fashioned and put together, and fixed upon men. Days of the church's glory and strength ! When the monastic economy with all its tides of corruption was introduced,—when the waters of the sanctuary, destined for the welfare of the world, were poisoned : and the streams, which were for the healing of the nations, "turned off by a deep cross-cut into monasteries, there to stagnate into a turbid pool, or to sink away through bottomless quicksands." Days of glory and strength ! When ascetics—monks, nuns, eremites, pillar-saints, et id omne genus, were the great and good ones of the earth—the objects of universal admiration and applause,—when men were seen travelling to far-distant places, not to carry to the famishing the bread of life—not to tell the story of redeeming love to the heathen—but to see some pretended relic—the bones of some saint —the ashes of some martyr, or, what was much more an object of desire, to see *the dunghill* on which the pious patriarch of Uz sat, and which Chrysostom says is more venerable than the throne of a king. In the days of the apostles, men worshipped God their Saviour. In the latter part of this period of the church's glory, they paid their homage equally to the wood of the cross, to the images of the dead, and to the bones of dubious saints. In the first century men were either happy or miserable immediately after death ; in the fourth and onward, purgatory effected for the wicked what the gospel had been unable to ac-

complish. In Paul's day men were saved by grace; in that of Gregory the Great, they were saved by good works. In the New Testament the spirit of piety appears in her simplicity, and breathes easily in the atmosphere of purity and love; in the days of the church's glory, she is oppressed with the costume of heathen attire; and, unable to lift up her head in the attenuated and sickly air of cells and cloisters, she resigns her dominion over mind to the control of ignorance and superstition. There were indeed in those days some in the church of noble character. God has always had a people on earth to praise him, the seven thousand, who bow not the knee to Baal. But these were the excepted few. A wild and fearful fanaticism generally prevailed—a wide-spread and shameful profligacy pervaded the christian community. One tide of corruption rapidly followed another—until, as the author of *Ancient Christianity* forcibly remarks, the Mahometan deluge came as a *cleansing inundation* in places where it spread.

The change that has taken place deeply affects the Rector. He is in tears at the thought of it. "Now that the golden chain is broken, which then bound the disciples in one holy brotherhood, the glory and the strength are departed. Primitive piety, primitive zeal, primitive love, primitive self-denial, primitive labors, and primitive missions, with their thousand converts to the faith, where are they now to be found? We ask, but there comes no answer." No: none, if the author is addressing the daughter of the Anglican church in America, that has never broken the unity of the church, with these high questionings. We know not where in the action of "the church of the United States," we can find those several primitives—that zeal—that love—those missions with their thousand converts to the faith. But if his interrogatories have a wider bearing than this, and include those who have broken the unity of the church—those whose ancestors left the Episcopal communion and built conventicles; we can point him to some of these schismatics,—some who have been unchurched, and left only to the uncovenanted mercies of God—some who, with the Bible only as their "Guide," have manifested something of the zeal and love of the early Christians—who have sent out their hundreds of missionaries, and have gathered their thousand converts to the faith. But we must not interrupt the Rector. "What is the strong hold of all the opposing powers of the gospel? The disunion and the strife of Christians! Why does the work of the conversion of the heathen advance so

slowly? Because the strength of Christendom is frittered away by division, and because their intestine feuds are transferred, as they must of necessity be while they exist, to distant shores along with those who repair thither to tell the benighted savage of his misery and danger, and of the way of relief and escape which has been provided by the Saviour." There is much truth no doubt in all this, but the difficulty is not exactly what our author imagines it to be. The objection to Christianity does not arise from the mere existence of denominational differences, where they are not allowed to disturb the harmony of intercommunion. It is truly a fearful hinderance, however, when one denomination assumes to be the church, and speaks of all others who do not conform to its forms and ceremonies as separatists and schismatics, and leaves them to the uncovenanted mercies of God. This creates the difficulty. When the world sees Christians making more of the shell than of the nut which it contains,—more of forms and ceremonies than of love to God and good will to man; it will feel that there is nothing in religion—nothing but shell and forms.

And as to those intestine feuds being transferred to distant shores by missionaries, who go there to preach the gospel, we deny the assertion, so far as it respects the men sent out by the American and Presbyterian Boards. We stand between them and such a charge. We admit that these feuds are transferred to distant shores, but by whom is this done? Our missionaries are willing to labour in the same field with those of any other evangelical denomination, and harmoniously too. Who are they that refuse to do this? Who is it at Constantinople, that refuses to recognize the missionaries of the American Board as ministers of Christ? Who is it, in Jerusalem, where once the disciples of Jesus were all of one accord, that stands aloof from those faithful heralds of the gospel who proclaim the truth as it is in Jesus, taking care never to treat them as the ambassadors of Christ? Aye, and who is it, that in his travels of observation in the East, carries with him an "eucharistic apparatus," that he may not be under the necessity of either entirely omitting the sacrament of the Lord's supper, or of receiving its elements from the hands of one, on whose head prelacy has never laid its imposition? And who excited those jealousies, which have ruined the Nestorians? We hope the learned Rector will inform his people and the public on these points in the next edition of "the Guide." It will not do to say, as he does, that these things must be thus transferred, while they exist at home. One

wrong cannot be an excuse for another. Denominational exclusiveness here is wicked, and its wickedness here is no reason why it should exist on heathen shores.

But how are things to be righted? How is this lost unity of the church to be restored? After so much lamentation over the evils of disunion, our readers will expect to see the manifestation of an enlarged charity on the part of the Rector for the sake of this end. In this, however, they are doomed to sad disappointment. Not one jot or tittle does he propose to give up for the sake of this result. No: the change is to be all on the other side. His denomination has never broken the unity of the church; and of course has nothing of which to repent—no change to make—conforms to primitive usage, and interprets the Scriptures according to Primitive Antiquity, contained in all its fulness and purity in that great commentary of the Bible—that Thesaurus of primitive lore—the Book of Common Prayer! All must therefore conform to them. Not a particle of their peculiarities can be laid aside—not even a gown, or a saint's day. We all have got to come back into the bosom of Prelacy unconditionally. To accomplish this several things are recommended by the Rector. The truth on this vital point of unity is to be spoken to us schismatics with the utmost fulness and frankness—missionaries are to be sent out on every side, and churches built, in which the holy sacraments may be *truly* administered, and the word of God, interpreted according to "Primitive Antiquity," *truly* preached—schools are to be established, in which the young are to be instructed in their duty to the church: and lastly, the press is to be used—books and tracts, such, we suppose, as those "for the Times," are to be prepared and sent everywhere. Thus by boldly advancing the claims of his church, "as contradistinguished from all who have left her communion, or who stand aloof from her pale; and by carrying out her blessed doctrines and *rites*, with all her glorious privileges, looking neither to the right hand nor to the left, ever ready for *conciliation*, but never for *compromise*," the Rector thinks that much may be accomplished in bringing back the separatists and schismatics, and thus restoring the golden age of the church! Alas, for those who are not in the Episcopal enclosure! What a work of repentance is there before them! How much have Baptists, Congregationalists, and Presbyterians to undo! How we envy the Roman Catholics! Their work will be comparatively easy. They will have to

give up only a few things, such as extreme unction, prayers for the dead, the worship of images and the like, and consent to a transfer of spiritual supremacy from Rome to London, from Gregory to Victoria ; they will then be like the English church, and of course not very unlike her American daughter. In their efforts to effect this return of the schismatics, our author would have his people manifest the spirit of the gospel, and thinks that “when churchmen, one and all, shall bring forth the fruits of the Spirit,—when the cross of the Lord, *traced on their brow at the laver of regeneration*, shall be deeply imbedded in their hearts ; and when they shall have the apostolic spirit, as well as the apostolic succession, then will those around them be disposed to receive their views of Christian truth and of the Christian church.” Very good ! We have no doubt that when they have the apostolic spirit, that their denominational exclusiveness will be at an end—that primacy in the ministry will be remembered only to be lamented, and the ceremonial of that sect no longer be made a bar to intercommunion. The apostolic spirit, whenever it exists, will strip prelacy of its self-constituted authority, and sweep from the Episcopal church every “Guide” which teaches for doctrines the commandments of men, and gives to primitive antiquity an authority above that of the Bible.

The unity of the church ! How do men talk about it, as our author does, meaning by it only a conformity of all others to their own individual sect, or denomination ! But is this the unity spoken of in the Bible ? Not at all. It does not consist in an unbroken uniformity in the externals of worship. Its elements are not sameness of ceremonial—similarity of name—agreement as to the forms witnessed to as apostolic by primitive antiquity—using a liturgy, and singing those ancient hymns of Addison and others, which have glowed on the lips of apostles. No : these things are all outward—concern the shell—the modus in quo of Christianity, not the essence of Christianity itself. The unity of the church, as taught in the New Testament, is a moral oneness, and comes from the connection of each one with Christ. All who profess faith in Jesus are members of one society called the church, whatever may be their difference of opinion about the externals of religion. This was the union for which Christ prayed—a union of love on the basis of a common attachment to him. All who believe in him are one. They have all one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and

Father, who is above all, and in them all. This oneness, therefore, consists in the faith and practice which Christ makes essential to salvation—in the substantial reception of the gospel. When a man repents and believes in Jesus he is a new creature—is born of God, and is an heir of heaven. To deny him the privilege of intercommunion—to interpose a form between him and any company of believers—to preach that men must repent and believe in Christ,—that regeneration is the great essential requisite to salvation,—and then, when they have repented, and are created anew in Christ Jesus, to tell them that they are not members of the church, and cannot be, until they submit to forms and ceremonies which they do not believe the Bible teaches or sanctions,—that until this is done they must take their place in the outer court, and company with separatists and schismatics, and rest their hope of heaven only in the uncovenanted mercies of God, is monstrous in the extreme, and bears on its very face the marks of a terrible contradiction. They are in the kingdom—units in that glorious assemblage of units which compose the church of Christ on earth. Whatever may be their difference of opinion about things not essential to salvation, around the cross all such are one. This is the great central point of assimilation, to which all Christians conform, and which, therefore, makes them one,—the great nucleus, where all the elements of the kingdom of God in this world come together, fasten, and crystalize alike into one glorious constellation of stars for the diadem of the Redeemer.

If we are right in this position, then it is easy to see how this unity of the church, about which so much is said, is to be effected. Christians must take the word of God as their guide—and ascending above the *dead level* of forms and ceremonies, come up at once to a religion of love, emanating from a few divinely energetic principles, which pervade almost every page of the Bible, and which demand nothing for their reception, except a humble, holy heart, and allow to each other freedom of opinion on all matters not essential to salvation. This is the work to be done. The arms of every denomination must be open for intercommunion with all who love our Lord Jesus Christ. A sufficient warrant for this must be found in the great doctrines of the cross, held alike by each—in the connection of all believers with Christ, and therefore with each other. Here we believe there is now among all evangelical Christians a substantial unity, a more correct, intelligent, and homogeneous faith,

than has existed in the church since the days of the apostles. While they differ from each other on minor points, as Christians always have differed here, around the cross they think and feel alike—are one; and ought, therefore, to blend their sympathies together as such on earth, in anticipation of the day when they will meet as the disciples of Christ—as the purchase of his blood—around the throne of God and the Lamb.

Another fact is equally clear. We see what hinders the manifestation of the spirit of this unity. The difficulty is in *the externals* of religion,—the frame-work thrown around the sacred form of vital Christianity by the hands of men,—the ceremonies of worship claimed as apostolic,—the creeds and confessions placed above the Bible,—the assumption, on the score of these things, of one denomination to be the church, and all others to be schismatics. This is the hinderance. This prevents the spirit of Christian union from acting itself out in all its loveliness and subduing power. It cannot speak out in such circumstances. It cannot shine forth upon others through any external medium more dense than that, which allows the light of essential truth to pass through it, and to warm the bosom of others, and on the ground of a like sympathy in them with that truth. Denominational peculiarities do not disturb the unity of the church, where they do not interfere with the spirit of intercommunion. Ten thousand stars glitter in the firmament above us, and one star differeth from another in glory, yet they all harmonize, and form one bright and burning arch—a light to all below. So we would have it in the church. Each denomination of believers—a constellation of stars by itself—ought to blend its light harmoniously with that of others, and thus fill the whole hemisphere of man with the light and love of heaven. No one, therefore, ought to talk about the desirableness of unity, whose zeal for its existence does not rise above the zero of denominational feeling. His expectation that all other branches of the church will ultimately be merged into his, is utopian,—the desire of it, only a refined species of selfishness. Those who would secure the unity of the church, must ascend to higher ground—must fix the mind on the great point of union, the cross, not indeed “as traced on the brow at the laver of regeneration,” not as seen on the top of a bishop’s house, or a Roman cathedral—not as hung around the neck for an ornament—but on the cross, as seen by Paul—on Christ and him crucified, and look upon all believers as bearing his image, and as crucified with him. Amid

all the diversities of denominational peculiarities, this new life in men—this resurrection with Christ—this image of the heavenly in the soul—must become the one thing needful for Christian union—the central point of spiritual attraction. Christians must learn to look more upon this inward resemblance, and less upon their external difference,—more upon the similarity of spiritual feeling and action, and less upon the want of sameness in the forms and ceremonies of worship, if they are to meet and mingle together on earth in one glorious brotherhood of being.

The difficulty we say is in the externals of religion. Here it always has been. Here the mind is left free, and each one, therefore, will think for himself. The claim of any denomination to be the church, or that its forms and ceremonies are the only proper ones, is perfectly futile. One man has just as much right to think for himself as another; and one branch of the church to frame its mode of worship according to its view of the Bible as another. Here difference of opinion exists, and always has to a greater or less extent. Uniformity here, we believe, is out of the question. The effort to enforce it has been the great source of mischief—has broken the unity of the church, and separated on earth those who will be eternally united in heaven. Let Christians then take a nobler position, and strive for a far higher attainment, the charity, which will constrain Judah not to vex Ephraim, and Ephraim not to envy Judah,—the charity which will embrace all who love our Lord Jesus Christ,—the feeling which, amid all our difficulties on minor points, will fix the mind upon the unity of the spirit, and make infinitely more of this than of any uniformity of the letter. Christians must cease to separate on points not deemed necessary to harmony in heaven. They must cease to exact from each other as a condition of intercommunion, while encompassed with darkness and beset with imperfection, as Robert Hall justly insists, more harmony and correctness of sentiment than is necessary to qualify them to sit down with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven,—cease to repel from their communion, and brand, as a schismatic, a Howe, a Watts, or a Brainard, whom the Lord of glory will welcome to his presence. They must cease, as some are beginning to do,\*

---

\* See an able article in the British and Foreign Review for June, 1842. Also Archbishop Whately's *Kingdom of Christ Delineated*.

from the wretched inflation that their party or sect is the church, and all others are separatists. They must come down from the high and barren mountains of such sectarian pride and arrogance, and feel that in the possession and exhibition of love towards all who are Christ's disciples, consists the true apostolic spirit and succession—the practice of those to whom the faith was once delivered—of the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth as it is in Jesus.

---

## ARTICLE II.

### REVIEW OF BORE'S TRAVELS IN TURKEY AND PERSIA.

By Rev. H. A. Homes, Missionary of the A. B. C. F. M. Constantinople.

*Correspondance et Mémoires d'un Voyageur en Orient, par Eugène Bore, Chargé d'une Mission Scientifique par le Ministère d'Instruction Publique.* Tom. I. 424, II. 498 pp. Paris: 1840.  
 [Correspondence and Memoirs of an Oriental Traveller, by Eugene Bore. In two volumes. Paris: 1840.]

The following article from one who stands on a good post of observation, possesses especial interest at the present time, as it lays before us the operations of those politico-religious missionaries of France, which, in connection with the movements of Puseyism, have resulted in the destruction of the Christians.

Some remarks occur here, also, on the mooted question of the Jewish origin of this people. ED.

THESE volumes of M. Boré have been published for more than two years, but as they contain matter of peculiar interest to our readers both as Americans and Christians, we hope we are doing them a favor in giving them some account of their contents.

M. Boré, after having passed a very honorable examination at one of the Royal Colleges of Paris, completed his education in 1835 under the tuition of the able corps of professors of the Oriental Languages in that city. The same year he went to Venice, where he spent many months with the industrious and philan-

thropic Armenian Catholic monks, who conduct the extensive printing establishment in their monastery. He had long been animated with some of that new religious enthusiasm, which swells in the bosoms of not a few of the Catholic youth of France; and with most fixed will, he determined to gain all his honors under the wing of the Catholic church, and for its glory. "I have no ambitious views," he writes; "I desire neither riches nor office; the love of God and of my brethren, and of science, is enough for me. I am ready to go to the East or to the West as soon as I see any social or religious good to effect." He made it an axiom, to maintain, as founded in reason, all the dogmas that the church enforced, and he aimed to exhibit that it was possible for a highly cultivated and scientific mind, to be enamored of the beautiful and the holy as represented by that church, even if the majority of his countrymen were pronouncing it all to be effete and absurd, and ready to vanish away. Yet with all his professed, almost apostolic, devotion to the cause of mother church, it would still perplex a reader, uninitiated in the doublings of the human heart, of the French heart, and of the heart of M. Boré in particular, to decide what feelings most predominated in his breast, those of the Romanist, the Frenchman, or the Egoist. We happen to know that his earliest purpose was to obtain the professorship of Armenian at the Collège de France. It appears, also, that although he became a zealous propagandist and proselytist after he had entered on his travels, yet that his first avowed intentions were, to pass over the whole of the Eastern world that has any classic associations, in the short space of three years. His commission from the minister of Public Instruction was not obtained till long after the commencement of his tour, and then only through the most pressing solicitation of his friends.

The preparations for his land journey he made at Constantinople, and there and elsewhere he was engaged in the study of six or seven languages at a time—and doubtless with a proficiency corresponding to the variety. In the same letters from Constantinople in which he describes his studies and speaks of his plans for the advancement of the church, and of his bliss in partaking of the communion, he gives us a precious specimen of his more social occupations. "The three Armenian sisters in the family where I reside are charming. Our habitual game with these young ladies is cards, which they love exceedingly. It is the only game which I have been able to teach

them, in return for what they have taught me." I. 98. We hope to be excused the accusation of malice towards M. Boré, if, farther to illustrate his character, we extract the following specimen of vanity, which sufficiently establishes his claim to being entirely French. "I tried my English saddle at Pera the other day, and in cantering before the spectators, many of whom would not perhaps have disdained my talent, I praised myself over and over for having gone to Thirion's riding school. Reflecting on the thousand miles I had to ride, I said to myself, 'If you had not principles, how could you accustom yourself to horses of every kind of mouth? How could you guess their instincts and forestall their malice,'" I. 133.

The route which M. Boré took, carried him along the shores of the Black Sea to Samsoon, thence to Tocat, Sivas, Erzroom, and Tebriz, deviating from his main route whenever attracted by any relics of antiquity. During a considerable part of his whole tour he was accompanied by M. Scafi, Superior of the Lazarist convent at Constantinople. The topics in his pages which would probably most arrest the attention of our readers, are his observations on the Armenians, on the Chaldeans or Nestorians, their language, history, and modern Protestant missions among them, the obviously new phase of Popery and Popish missions, and lastly the extension of French influence in those countries. We will first slightly touch on his notice of the American Catholics.

The designs of the Romanists upon the Christian races in the East, are more aimed at the Armenians than at the Greeks. They have lost nearly all hopes of gaining the latter, who are members of the "Great Orthodox Eastern Church," as they proudly designate it; and are supported by Russia, a power nearer and stronger than France. If ever they change extensively, it will be the result of the intrigues of their rulers. Catholic Armenians are also a young sect in Turkey, and the success of the past twenty years affords them great encouragement for the future. We see, therefore, that the Latin monks and priests, who have made their home in the East, carefully seek the Armenians, endeavor to establish schools for them, print books for them in various cities, on every subject; while for the Greeks they print nothing but a few books of devotion, and those too in the Roman character, although in the Greek language. Besides, the somewhat successful labors of Protestant missionaries among the Armenians, have given a piquancy

to their zeal, surpassing its ordinary degree. The monopolizing and procrustean spirit of Rome is not at all satisfied with the spirit of the Armenian Catholic clergy—they have too much nationality, and too little Romanism. M. Boré needlessly distributes them into four classes as respects their tastes and sympathies. Those educated at Rome, Venice and Vienna, Mt. Lebanon, or in Turkey, make each a party by themselves. The contests of the last fifty years between the Venice party protected by Austria, and the Roman or Mount Lebanon party, are everywhere notorious. “Those of Venice are most influential. They have the advantage over the others of a more varied education ; their manners are more engaging, and they form, so to speak, the aristocratic portion of their hierarchy. Having been first to gain honor for the Armenian language and literature, they represent in their community the national party.” I. 156.

We can say more plainly than M. Boré that these Mechanist Armenians of Venice have lost favor also at Rome by the character of their publications, which are very numerous, and tend greatly to elevate the whole mass of Armenian mind. They have prepared helps for studying most of the languages of Europe, and especially for the study of the English language, which of course introduces them to a pure and uncontaminated literature. They circulate various works on morals and religion, where the appeal is made by far too much to the human reason and too little to the authority of the church. They are also by far too willing to humor the Armenians of the standing order, in retaining all their ancient days, rites, and ceremonies. But Rome is not satisfied with allowing the large nucleus of Armenian Catholics to proselyte in the Levant in their own way, merely with the aid of her treasures. She has sent from time immemorial her own missionaries ; and since the days of Pius VI., all the establishments of the Jesuits have been confided to a more modern order, the Lazarists, who, with a central station at Constantinople, have the charge of all the other missions in the East, whether in Persia, Turkey, or the countries of Russia bordering on these. We hope soon to introduce the Lazarists more particularly.

A plan in detail is given for speedily converting to the Romish faith all the Armenians of Persia. The first point to be aimed at, according to this scheme, is to obtain public protection for Romanism. This part of the plan was so effectually followed up by M. Boré, that, after obtaining imperial firman for their schools, the Shah was obliged to issue another firman ex-

elling all Catholic missionaries from the kingdom, which took place in 1842. The second item in the plan is entitled "pecuniary assistance to relieve the unfortunate;" and *under this head*, 6000 francs is asked for the salary of an apostolic vicar, and 6000 francs for an interpreter and five priests, and an equal sum in presents to the civil and religious authorities, (i. e., to the Armenians of the standing order,) and to provide shoes for the children; so that more than one half of the expenses of the first year, aside from the salary of the vicar, are to be in presents. II. 476. The third point to be arrived at is, to gain possession of the lands of the three ancient Catholic convents at Isfahan. We learn from Chardin (*Voyages en Perse*) that in 1598 the Augustine monks began Catholic missions in Persia—and in his time, 1670, there were already convents of four other European orders at Isfahan,—the Carmelites, the Capucins, the Dominicans, and the Jesuits. Besides these, there were twelve other missionary convents in various parts of Persia. So much however has the missionary zeal of Catholics been checked from various causes, that all these establishments are now reduced to a single convent in Isfahan, inhabited by an Armenian Catholic monk, and he has a parish of about one hundred souls. "All the succeeding generations of the proselytes made by these missionaries have again become heretics," is M. Bore's confession. The Lazarists are laboring to put things on a better footing; but unless all their efforts are assiduously followed up, their success will be destitute of permanence. One corrupt doctrine laboring by the side of another will always have but a feeble hold, unless the proselyters are at hand with peculiar incentives to faith.

We are glad to be able to justify the wisdom of the American Board in having established a station at Erzroom, which M. Bore says "has become the most important town of all Armenia, by its favorable situation on the borders of the Ottoman and Persian empires." The next place to which he directs our attention, as well as that of the Catholics, is Vau. "The first positions to seize upon are Trebizonde, Erzroom, Tocat, and especially Vau." II. 287. He calculates the whole number of Catholics in Georgia, Persia, and Turkey, evidently from the reports of those who wished to please him. He carries their number up to 3,621 families, and is very severe on Messrs. Smith and Dwight because they could find so few. Yet we have his own confession cited above, which confirms their testimony, and also his admission, that whereas in 1750 there

were 450 Catholic families in Erzroom, there are not now forty. I. 396. We think this notice of the diminution of the Papal forces is important. While we may be alarmed by the display of their present zeal, or by modern triumphs, we may console ourselves by their having run out and disappeared in places where they were formerly in vigor.

Of all the subjects which engaged the ardor and the zeal of M. Boré, there is no one on which he dwells more largely than the state of the Chaldean or Nestorian church: and we shall therefore be excused, if we give it the same relative proportion in our notice of his travels. Let us accompany him, therefore, on his visit to the plain of Oroomiah, and hear his tirades and calumnies on the labors of the American Protestant missionaries there. Who would wonder that a man filled with a mere spirit of proselytism, and only some feeble desires for the general amelioration of the human race, should be filled with gall and bitterness, at finding a field of wheat, where he had imagined none would dream of reaping but his own party, already occupied by men whom he regards as "thieves and murderers," and who find the field white even for the harvest? Listen then, without surprise, to his impudent wholesale scandal of our missionaries, which none could believe but a Romanist, trained up in the same course of conduct as that which he charges upon them. We shall quote not a tithe of the whole, but enough to more than substantiate a charge of wilful falsehood on the writer.

"The Protestant mission established at Oroomiah, limits its exertions to buying men's consciences with gold." "They gain no proselytes but by the aid of silver." "The enterprising and commercial spirit of the Americans is well known; but it is not so well known, that these propagandists have mingled with the religion which they bring the financial element, and that money is the nerve and the instrument of all their operations." "The whole expense of the mission amounts to 100,000 francs a year." II. 59, etc.

"They are anticipating aid from an Armenian as a French teacher, whom they have gained over to their belief, or rather who, like themselves, believes nothing." "When the Nestorians asked them for their faith, they said, 'we believe in God; Their creed was as short as this one article. When they were asked what they believed about Christ, the missionaries stammered out an answer which seemed to harmonize with the confes-

sions of the Nestorians, and they rejoiced." "These Protestant missionaries, already arrived at Deism, deny at the bottom of their hearts the divinity of Christ, although the confession of this mystery just expires on their lips. The Nestorians believe in every thing which the Americans deny; they practise whatever the latter reject. The negation of a creed does not constitute one." II. 324, 350.

"The mission determined to give a pension to all the Nestorian bishops, or rather to buy their adhesion to the school, and to pay each scholar twenty-five cents a week and more as the child should grow older." "They have forbidden them to make the sign of the cross." II. 353, 352.

It is not necessary to ask for explanations from our missionaries, to refute these and similar charges. We know too well their Christian character to seek for their denials. As to the amount of money expended, we see, by a report of the American Board for 1838, that for the numerous members of the mission there, and all their operations, there was expended but a third of one hundred thousand francs; so that M. Boré's estimate is three times too large. Three bishops have at different times been partially in their employ as teachers and translators only, and the laborer is worthy of his hire. There are now forty schools supported by the mission, in only one of which is any allowance made to the scholars, namely—the Boarding Charity School. Of course the poor children of this school, who find their own clothes, must have food to eat; and they, like indigent students in America, receive food gratuitously, being allowed a sum which approaches nearer, if we are not misinformed, twenty-five cents a month, than twenty-five cents a week. M. Boré is too well educated not to fully know the doctrines of the Protestants; and the very tract against Popery which they have circulated, and of which he gives a translation at the close of his work, is a sufficient testimony of their orthodox faith. He calls it a Protestant libel; but while we wonder, we thank him for having given a translation of a valuable Scripture argument against Romanism, for the benefit of his French readers.

M. Boré gives a detailed account of his troubles with Mar Gabriel of Ardisher, where he wished to establish a school. The bishop was not a Catholic, but, won by promises of money, (which promises M. Boré admits he had made,) he gave his consent for the school. The Nestorians succeeded in getting the proposed school stopped. By means of presents M. Boré

succeeds in obtaining an edict from the prince who owns the village, that the school might be opened ; although, as the prince was not a magistrate in authority, his edict had no effect. In his account of this affair M. Boré charges the American missionaries with persecution.

" Not having been able to gain Mar Gabriel, who had promised to become a Catholic, the Americans succeeded by night in transporting him to their own house, and gained him over. With what kind of arguments ? A silver watch and two hundred dollars. Protestant intolerance pushes men on here as in England and Prussia. The American missionaries again assembled the bishops. They offered presents to Melik Manzour Mirza, and distributed money to fifty persons, to get them to affirm that there was no wish for the school at Ardisher." " The equitable sentence that the prince gave in our favor in the suit against us of the Americans and the Nestorian bishops has not made them desist from any of their culpable intentions. To open persecutions, from which they had been prohibited by the divan, they have added the war of dogmas, and are circulating copies of their libels against us." II. 362, 422.

With this calumnious account compare the unvarnished narrative found in the faithful details of Rev. J. Perkins's admirable volume, '*Residence of Nine Years in Persia*',—written without any knowledge of M. Boré's work. It will there be evidently seen that, without any previous steps on the part of American missionaries, and without any wish even on his part for bribes, the bishop sought of them to be delivered from the snare into which he had fallen. In any Christian's view, the deliverance of the bishop, was an event above and without the device of man, and a remarkable providence. And we have heard a missionary of that station pronounce M. Boré's account of this matter full of " downright falsehoods."

Will it now be credited, that on the very same pages where such accusations of bribery and persecution are brought against our missionaries, and characterized properly as abominable crimes, the system of buying proselytes and buying Catholic influence is continually avowed and practised ? We will not wonder that he makes the charge upon others, when he had found the potency of the measure by his own experience. Yet we wonder how he could reconcile the fact, that when he could buy consciences with gold, yet, as he admits, he could not point to a single proselyte of the Protestants. Honest reasoning

would have led him to conclude, that their object is not to make proselytes, but to bring men to the Shepherd that liveth evermore. As an answer to the charges against American missionaries, hear his unblushing confessions of his means of proselytism.

"In the new letter which I have forwarded to you on Chaldea, I have attempted to demonstrate the necessity of sending missionaries and *temporal succors* to this country. With this double lever we shall accomplish a happy revolution." II. 153. "My expenses are much increased by the number of domestics I am obliged to keep to maintain respectability, by the presents I have to make without receiving any, and by the hospitality I am obliged to show to the Catholics of these countries." II. 103. "The poor patriarch is much embarrassed, and has been waiting for a long time for help from Rome, and on account of the offer I have made him of paying the expenses of his journey. It costs much to do good in these countries, where every step must be paid for in hard money." II. 332. "The school costs me much, because I have been obliged to help some of the pupils distinguished for their good dispositions. Besides, at Salmas I have been obliged to give in charity for pressing objects. While in Chaldea I had the honor of feeding the Catholic clergy and the chief men, without counting other parasites more numerous than elsewhere. When my disputes arose with the Protestants, it became worse than ever. In Persia one cannot gain the favor of the great, without small presents. To combat adversaries very liberal in this respect, I have been obliged to be very liberal also." "If the French do not come, the bishop of Ardishier, Mar Gabriel, in spite or necessity will unite with the Americans. You know that it has been resolved upon, that we seek in every way possible to obtain for him a pension. This money will be well employed, for it will be the price of the salvation of many thousand souls. And it will be necessary, for at least several years, for he cannot obtain sufficient revenue from his flock." 309.

"The news of a donation of 6000 francs to the patriarch has produced a very good effect, and upon the Nestorians even, who see that the Catholic chiefs are better paid by the Latin church, than their own by the missionaries from Boston." (334.) "Father Giovanni, the American Catholic priest at Isfahan, is obliged to deprive himself of the sweet consolation of gaining the poor of other sects by the benefits of his charity." "Many of

the clergy of all these sects receive a moderate allowance, (from France and Rome,) which in these poor countries becomes a very profitable resource. The good bishop of Syra spoke with gratitude of the pension of 300 francs which is sent to him each year." I. 83.

We see, by these admissions made by M. Boré with such simplicity and unsuspectingness, who are those who are trying to gain the Nestorians, and indeed all the world, by means of money. We should like to see the shock that would be produced, if the member of any Protestant association or any mission should avow or practise any system of proselytism, founded on such means. We here see M. Boré and his friends, without a single missionary on the ground, lavishing out money to patriarchs, bishops, princes, and people, merely to secure the acknowledgment of the pope as head of the church—without undertaking any thing for the social, moral, or religious elevation of the people, but rather teaching them that the Holy Ghost can be bought with money.

Converts made among the Nestorians or any other people may have great value in the eyes of those who believe that, by a few verbal professions, a man may change his religion as easily as he changes his coat. But in the present age we little fear the results of such proselytism in the East. As long as the Eastern world knew of the existence of no other church in Europe but the Roman, there was some hope of permanence in such changes. But now that Protestantism comes to lift up her trumpet of alarm, the battle will be with less odds. Moreover, these proselytes to the Romish church from the Eastern churches have not the same bigoted attachment to Rome with the Catholics of Europe. They have not only been allowed to retain their national rites, language, and ceremonies, but they are living among their co-nationals, who are in a large majority; and they are nearly as open, individually, to reason and truth as those who have remained in their ancient folds. As a proof of the unsoundness and insincerity of the conversion of the Nestorians to Rome, it is conceded by M. Boré, as is withal a well known historical fact, that three times successively in modern times, as well as on five occasions in more ancient times, their patriarchs have given in their adherence to the Romish faith; but their allegiance to the pope lasted no longer than the duration of the pecuniary allowance. And the mass of the people have remained faithful to their ancient standards under a

new patriarch, there not being at this moment ten thousand Catholic Chaldeans. And yet Rome, exception being made of her peculiar and fatal doctrines, comes in the garb of a refined civilization, with more or less of science, and with political protection, and is capable of holding out very flattering promises to any oppressed and ignorant people. But Rome aided by France is not now alone in this field; Russia with her national church offers to the parties resembling her a strong arm; and now England, with its national establishment, is urged by the church, for the first time in its history, to aid those communities which have most sympathy with her. In the midst of these contending parties, we may confidently hope, that it is not in vain that there are those on the ground who, not trusting to might or power, are directing the nations to the imperishable living truths of a purely spiritual salvation, without which all other progress and growth is comparatively valueless.

It is not without instruction to observe what are the points in which a Catholic layman condemns the Oriental churches in their present character and condition. M. Bore censures them for many things, in which a Protestant Christian would have included also no small portion of the Catholic church. And it is surprising that he should find so much that is blameworthy, even in those churches which in our own view, and in the view of the churches themselves, differ in so few particulars from the Romanists. It is only a new proof how exacting Rome is, in her laws of conformity; and also evidence that although now, when she has not the power to control, she does not force the branches of the Eastern churches which she has proselyted, to change all their rites and ceremonies, and even makes a boast of variety in unity as regards them, yet that, as opportunity offers, she will, in every particular of language, calendar, marriage, order, and doctrine, oblige these partially united churches to conform to the Latin rites.

"Among the Armenians, the Holy Sacrifice of the mass, which the Catholic church offers most freely, is made very rarely and even as an exception. And they never perform two masses a day in the same church or on the same altar, and baptism is not administered to children till the eighth day after their birth. A simple priest arrogates to himself the power of confirmation." I. 99. Those who recall the limitations of the Catholic church on the degree of contamination of original sin, and the indecent haste with which in some ages, if not now, they have proceeded

to baptism, will not be at a loss to appreciate the cause of the censure of the more orthodox moderation of the Armenians. Nor is it more surprising that a Catholic should feel that there must be a want of grace where the communion is so rarely administered. We have ourselves, in a cathedral in Italy, seen seven different priests, at seven different altars, performing seven different masses, and the total of the audience (spectators) was not seven persons.

M. Boré notices as of peculiarly evil tendency in the Armenian church, the fact that the laity mix themselves in the affairs of the church, thus putting the clergy in dependence on them. And he therefore quarrels with Armenian Catholic laity who retain so much of the same prerogative, and who are too eager to take the lead in conducting the plans of proselytism from their ancient nation. "If their clergy do not manage to free themselves from secular jurisdiction, they will be constantly paralyzed in their acts, and will be exposed to interminable intrigues. Brethren of the same religious order often live insulated in their own houses, or in the families where they exercise their ministry. So the priests will go into families to hear the confessions of penitents, and as private chapels are multiplied, they go there to celebrate the holy mysteries." I. 377. For the purpose of noticing his testimony to the simpler forms of the Nestorians, we propose citing here another passage :

"The Nestorian bishop eats, drinks, sleeps, hunts, and walks like other men, and only two or three times a year does he take the trouble to sacrifice on the altar the Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world. The sight of these bishops, who are more numerous than our country curates, explains to us a fact of ecclesiastical history, viz., that the councils called by the emperors of Constantinople (*conciliabules*) were neither as imposing or as difficult to get up, as we might suppose from the number of their members. The Episcopacy in the East has never had as much of social distinction as in the West. The deacon draws the curtain of the sanctuary to read the gospel to the people, while he explains and chants ordinarily in the vulgar language. Confession is abolished among them, nevertheless the men and the women are not afraid to present themselves pellmell to the communion, which is given them under the form of solid and fermented bread. They all drink abundantly out of the cup of wine which is presented to them as the precious blood of Christ.—Power is given, and it

is even made obligatory on the priests, to marry. In comparing only under a worldly point of view this portion of their clergy with ours, I have a thousand times thought, that the best answer to the opposers and enemies of the celibacy of the priesthood, would be to point to them a few traits of the condition of a married priesthood in the East. It is very easy for these disputers to argue speciously against this most praiseworthy rule of Catholic discipline ; because they judge of it from the point of view of France, and because they are accustomed to see before them an order of clergy of a zealous, intelligent, and sober life. They imprudently imagine that marriage would be a complement of these qualities, and that it would add to the sacerdotal character the merit of a social utility, according to the conventional language of these economists." II. 100.

Every line here on the celibacy of the clergy is directly the contrary of what we should expect to find. We should neither expect that a candid man would put the moral life of an unmarried clergy foremost in his argument, nor that the enemy of their celibate life would be found appealing to their morality, as a reason why they should marry. After men desert the safe and sure guide of Scripture, and trust to their own understandings or to authority, they may look at all the institutions of society from such extraordinary points of view, that no one can anticipate the absurdities that will be uttered. In all the degradation of the Eastern churches, it is impossible to tell from what evils the degree in which marriage is tolerated among their ecclesiastics has preserved them ; certainly they have never fallen so low in point of morals, as did that clergy whose shameless conduct demanded the Great Reformation. This institution, the marriage of the clergy, and numerous others in which the Eastern churches conform to evangelical principles, (and of course they are much more numerous than presented by M. Boré,) now that the voice of evangelical protestantism is heard in their midst, will forever effectually bar their passing over to acknowledge the authority of the Western church.

If we were disposed meekly to listen to the complacent self-gratulations of such Romish writers as M. Boré, we should not find it difficult to present a solution of the cause of their present degradation. The commencement of their fall dates, according to him, from the day when they forsook the Catholic church, and their abasement was a natural judgment upon them, for their error in forsaking unity. As one specimen

among many, the following is his language respecting the Nestorians.

"As soon as the unity of the church was broken by the heresy of Nestorius, the Pagan powers took advantage of these divisions to repair the losses they had suffered under the Roman emperors. The persecutions excited against the orthodox were provoked by the heretics, who, to conciliate the favor of Sapor and Chosroes, gave them to understand that the means of resisting the sovereigns of Constantinople, would be to destroy the Catholic population, who seemed to be allied with them. What did they gain by this treason? They made more heavy the yoke of the unbelievers on their own heads, and dug the abyss of misfortune in which they are now plunged." "These people are now weary of their errors and their insulation, and see that their deliverance is in returning to the holy and universal church." II. 77, 320.

It would be impossible here briefly to answer all the false pretensions and assumptions in such accusations. A schismatic spirit truly is sinful, yet, owing to the want of true charity in the rulers of the church and in the people, schisms will come: but it is not for the strongest party to exclaim as a consequence, "we only are the true church." We believe indeed that the Eastern churches have been visited with judgments for their sins; and the Greeks and Armenians, as they contemplate the history of Mohammedan rule over them, confess the same; but the judgments of God connected with the Mohammedan conquests fell upon the larger part of them, hundreds of years before these same portions were separated from the Western church. Yet the outward unity of the churches was not a protection to the Greeks; rather the brothers in unity of the Western church betrayed their Eastern brethren, through the jealousies of their metropolitan bishops.

The true unity of the church is not to be found in a formal acknowledgment of a visible head, but in being united to the one Lord in spirit; and the evils that have weighed down so heavily on the Eastern churches, will be found to have had their origin, rather in having forsaken this latter unity—which made room for every jealousy, intrigue, dissension and persecution.

M. Boré enters with much minuteness into the history of the Chaldean or Nestorian nation and church. We will not follow him in his detailed survey; we give only his conclusions on

their national origin, remarking that he had personally surveyed the ground, and was in possession at the time of writing of a rich selection of books on the subject. His views are:—"First, that all the tribes designated by the name of Chaldean, are one and the same people, occupying, from the remotest antiquity, Babylonia, Mesopotamia, and Assyria, the east and north of Syria, and part of the actual Kurdistan. Second, that the Chaldeans are distinct from the Curds in origin and language, that they are of a Shemitic stock, and are not Medo-Persians, as many German orientalists have maintained." He regards the Nestorians evidently as of the same race as the Chaldeans of revealed and profane history. On minuter points we seek not for discussion, nor do we pretend to adopt his views in all their definiteness, however worthy of consideration. He arrived at the conclusion which most interests the general reader, by means of various historical, philological, and geographical comparisons, and without any acquaintance with recent controversies.

We feel disposed ourselves to present, briefly, some facts tending to confirm these conjectures, and support this side of a disputed question: for the knowledge of these facts for several years past, has hitherto prevented our obtaining a conviction of the alleged Jewish origin of the Nestorians. Some of the grounds, then, from which it may be inferred that the Nestorians may, with propriety, be called Chaldeans, are—

First: The Nestorians still retain, exclusively of all other people, the *name* of Chaldean. While the designation, Syrian, is applied to them and used as an ecclesiastical name, and the designation of Nestorian is their name of reproach from other sects, that of Chaldean is their civil or national name. They are also called Nasrani or Nazarenes.\* Rev. Mr. Perkins of

\* In addition to the remarks of Dr. Grant in his work on the Nestorians, and of Dr. Robinson in his review of the same, we would add the following observation on the use of this word as a designation of Christians in the East. It is the theological word of the Mohammedans to designate all Christians. The Koran was written by Mohammed with the aid of Jews, who called the Christians Nazarenes. In every place in Sale's Translation of the Koran, where the word Christian is found, the word in the original Arabic is Nazarenes. Vid. Chap. II. v. 105, 107, 114, 59. Chap. V. 17, 22, 85. And this is in fact the only word used in the Koran to desig-

Oroomiah, in a letter dated November, 1838, remarks, that "the Nestorians have often expressed a preference for being called Chaldeans;" and in a letter of later date, April, 1840, he says: "The Nestorians say that they call themselves Chaldeans, (they almost never do it among themselves,) because their country was Ur of the Chaldees, the country of Abraham. There seems to be a *pride of lineage* connected with the appellation, which leads them to arrogate it to themselves as an ornament for the occasion." Yet we think the statements in the letters of Mr. Perkins go far to establish the position that it is their national name.

Another striking fact is, that their patriarch retains the same title formerly given to the patriarchs of Ctesiphon and Seleucia, that is, *Patriarch of the Chaldeans*. We have seen a letter directed to Mar Shimon, the present patriarch, by a Nestorian deacon, in which he is addressed by this title. During a long period of the early church, all the Christians of Mesopotamia were under the see of Antioch. After many years of animosities between the Chaldean and Syrian Christians, at last the bishop of Seleucia succeeded in entirely breaking off relations with the see of Antioch, and was styled the Patriarch of the Chaldeans—the separation being consummated in 485, by the heresy of Nestorius. This title has been perpetuated among the Nestorians, as being themselves the people over whom the patriarch of the Chaldeans always exercised authority. It is very plain, therefore, why the Catholics call their proselytes from this sect, Chaldeans; but it is not the Latin Catholics only who do this. The Jacobite Syrians, their neighbors, also designate them as Chaldeans. Yet no one has thought of calling the Catholic

---

nate Christians, unless when they are called infidels. The Persians calling the Nestorians Nazarenes, arises from the fact that they were the first Christians with whom the Persians became acquainted, while to the Armenians they were obliged for distinction to leave their national name. Just in the same manner, though more remarkable in a historical point of view, the national name of the Greeks of Tocat and Iconium is Christian, having remained to them from the days when the disciples were called Christians first at Antioch; while the Armenians, as having been latest converted, are called Armenians. Said a Greek to us—"I am not an Armenian, but a Christian." And an Armenian of that region said the reverse.

Syrians by the name of Chaldeans, for the distinction of Catholic Chaldeans and Catholic Syrians is carefully kept up—while all alike, Nestorians, Jacobites, Catholic Chaldeans, and Syrians, use the Syriac Scriptures and liturgy. In giving this name to their proselytes from among the Nestorians and to the patriarch, the Catholics can only have followed ancient usage. Indeed, in what age of the church, since the separation from the see of Antioch, can it be shown that there has not been a patriarch of the Chaldeans, as well as of the Syrians? Only that now we have two patriarchs, one of the Catholic Chaldeans, and another of the Nestorian Chaldeans. The language of Simon Asseman, in his dissertation in his *Bib. Orient.*, on the Nestorians, is indicative of his weighty opinion. The dissertation is entitled, "De *Chaldeis seu Assyriis* quos mundi plaga incolunt Orientales, et ab hæresi quam profitentur Nestorianos appellantur."

Second. The Nestorians are still living in and about the *proper country* of the Chaldeans. And as among none of the other distinct races inhabiting Chaldea can we find their descendants, why may we not search for them among the Nestorians? The appellation Chaldea has, at different periods, been in use as the general name of the whole country, from the Persian Gulf to the Taurus. Even to this day, at one extreme, we find, near the Persian Gulf, the Nabatai, or Sabian Christians of St. John the Baptist, speaking a Chaldean dialect—while Jacobite Syrian Christians, speaking also an Aramean tongue, occupy other portions of the ancient Babylonian monarchy. Regarding the people of Cilicia and Lycia as having been included among the Chaldeans, we have the present Nestorians occupying a position near the geographical centre of this empire, at the time when they were all united as one great people. The 30,000 souls who have passed beyond the Gordian or Curdistan mountains, to the plains of Oroomiah, are not in the original position of their race. Yet still many are to be found in the vicinity of Mosul; and, till within a few generations, they were found in large numbers in Mesopotamia; and, till the times of the Mohammedian conquests, the majority even were found on the banks of the Tigris, from whence they have been driven to the mountain fastnesses, or absorbed in the various races around them. Now, if the Nestorians have other claims to being considered Chaldeans, as it may be argued they have, and they have, indeed, an *a priori* claim, until there is

proof to the contrary, why may not the fact that they are called Chaldeans, and are in the Chaldean territory, suggest the supposition, that they are, indeed, the representatives of the ancient Chaldeans?

*Third.* The *language*, also, of the Nestorians, has claims to being regarded as Chaldean. The language which they still speak, is a dialect of the language spoken by Chaldeans under the Babylonish and Assyrian monarchies. It is a corrupt continuation of the Casidim, of the language of Abraham, of the wise men of Babylon, of the language of the Tarquins, and the language of our Chaldean grammars. This branch of the Semitic languages has had a most eventful history; and were the materials extant, many dialects of the Aramean language would be discovered to have existed during its various phases. Bar Hebreus says, that in his day the Aramean was divided into three dialects, the Syrian, the Chaldean, and Nabatai. It being clear that the Nestorians speak Aramean, and the language of Bar Hebreus permitting us to look for more than one modern dialect of it, the question on which a division of opinion might arise, would be, whether the language of the Nestorians more nearly approaches the Chaldee or the Syriac. The differences were never very great; and it has been freely assumed, that the present Nestorian dialect is a Syrian dialect; but, for the purpose of making out their Chaldean origin, it would be important to show that their present language prefers Chaldee affinities. Even, however, if it should, after farther investigation, appear that their language has an intimate relation to the Syriac of books, it would not decide that their language was not related to the original Chaldee, from which came both the East and West Aramean or Syriac. The Greeks gave the name of Syriac to the latter language, because Syria was the country in which the Aramean was most cultivated, and was the centre of the intellectual movement of the Chaldean mind.

We do not claim more than the most superficial knowledge of these languages; but having investigated the subject somewhat, we would, for the sake of drawing out the opinion of those who have the opportunity for deeper research, suggest the inquiry, whether there are not grounds for maintaining that, however slight may have been the difference between the Syriac and Chaldee, the language of the Nestorians, notwithstanding all the changes the modern dialects have undergone, assimilates with the latter? And the differences which actually do exist be-

tween the dialects spoken by the twenty-five thousand Syrians near Mardin and the Nestorians of Kurdistan, are they not, in many respects, those indicated by the grammars of the classical dialects of each? This difference then, as now, aside from the preference for certain roots and substantives, was chiefly in the pronunciation of the vowels and consonants. At the present day, the letters which the Syrian aspirates, the Chaldean pronounces hard; the *ph* and *dh* and *th* of the Syriac, becoming the *p* and *d* and *t* of the Chaldee. The Chaldean also pronounces the vowel letters Pethocho and Zekofo of the Syrian, with the sound Petoho and Zekopo. Thus, while a Syrian, for God, says *alaha*, the Chaldean says *aloho*; while the Syrian says *taora* for ox, the Chaldean says *tora*. They incline also to the same alteration of the sibilant and dental letters in some words, as in ancient times. In illustration of this difference of pronunciation, we give here the manner in which the first, second, and third verses of Matt. v. were read to us by a Nestorian deacon and a Syrian bishop. The first reading is the Nestorian.

Kad khaza déin isho 'l hinshi islik 'l túra û kad itiu karéu  
'l wateh telmidao: Weptah púmi û malip hewa 'l hoon û  
amer: Towehhún 'l miskini be rúhh didilhun hü melkúta desh-  
méya.

This second reading is by a Syrian bishop:—

Kadh hezo den yeshuo el hunshi islik eltúro o kadh yitia  
kûréu 'l woteh telmidhao. Westhah fúmi o malef hevo 'l hún  
womar. Tubéhún 'l miskini bi ruh didilhún hi melkútha  
deshmaya.

This difference of pronunciation that has come over each modern dialect is so great, that a Syrian cannot converse intelligibly with a Chaldean: an experiment which we have seen tried. The opinion of Messrs. Smith and Dwight in their Researches (II. p. 212), that the language of the Nestorians was the same as that of the Syrians, was expressed before any investigation had been made into the character of either dialect, and needs some qualification. Where, however, Chaldeans and Syrians have intimate relations with each other, as at Mosul, the difference is not so apparent, the people of different villages speaking dialects, now inclining to one and then to another of those two forms of the Aramean. We have been informed, however, of several instances where the Nabathai or Sabeans have conversed freely with Nestorians; and on one occasion the Sabeans said to the Chaldean or Nestorian, " You speak our

dialect like a nightingale." Mr. Kassam, a Chaldean, and English consul at Mosul, calls the dialect of the Nestorians a Syro-Chaldean.\* We suppose that we shall not arrive at a correct conclusion of the question, whether the language of the Nestorians has most affinity with the Chaldee or Syriac, by comparing their spoken language with the remains of Chaldee literature: the book of Daniel, for instance, and the ancient Syriac version of the same together. For, of course, in translating the Bible from the Hebrew into their spoken language, whenever at a loss for words, we should choose them from a book more or less familiar to them, viz., the Syriac version, which is their ecclesiastical and classic language, and which they adopted when they became Christians; while the Chaldee of our Scriptures, to whatever extent it may be regarded as pure, was still but the language of a particular epoch and a local form.

Certainly those who suppose that the Nestorians are descended from the ten tribes, cannot be disposed to deny that their language is Chaldean, seeing that the Chaldean is notoriously the language which the Jews learned in their captivity. Yet at this day, the Jews of that region, as if to show the difference between their origin and that of the Chaldeans, speak the language as they do that of every nation under heaven where they are found, with a peculiar accent: and in those countries with such other differences, that the utmost that can be said of them is, that the Jews and Nestorians contrive to understand one another. But in 1839, Mr. Kaṣṣam remarked to us, that he could not understand the Chaldean Jews around *Mosul*, even when they were using words with which he was acquainted. Although, as has been seen, we have proposed to give the name of modern Chaldee, rather than of modern Syriac, to the dialect spoken by the Nestorians, still we would not that our main conclusion should be unnecessarily rejected from a strife about words. Even if we abandon the distinction of two independent dialects being spoken at the present day, it will be sufficient for the substantiation of the argument as to their Chaldean origin, that they speak a language derived from the Aramean or Chaldee.

*Fourth.* We cannot forbear suggesting that their *physiognomy* is such as to justify the supposition that the Nestorians

---

\* Ainsworth's *Travels in Asia Minor*, Vol. II. 264

are Chaldeans. The Chaldeans have a near affinity of race with the Jews. When Abraham emigrated to Canaan, he carried with him the language of his brother Nahor, and from that time an intimacy was kept up for hundreds of years between their descendants. After a thousand years, the descendants of Abraham as Hebrews are again brought in close contact with the same people from whose race they were descended, the Chaldeans. The physiognomy of both was originally the same. In the Chaldeans of the present day, the Shemitic type has remained so marked, that several persons much conversant with men of different races, have thought they resembled Jews. And we ourselves having had several weeks intercourse with twenty or more of the mountain Nestorians, were struck at first sight with what may be called their Jewish physiognomy. Now, unless we must necessarily regard them as of unmixed Jewish descent, this may be very satisfactorily accounted for, by referring, in the first place, to this original relationship of the Hebrews and the Chaldeans; and in the second place, from the assimilation of the features of the Jews in many respects to the features of those in whose country they have been dwelling; and thirdly, from the fact that the myriads of Jews of whom Josephus speaks, have intermarried many of them with the original Chaldeans and Syrians of the country. For the physiognomy of the Jacobite Syrians is more Jewish than that of any other people, unless we except the Chaldeans. The descendants of the large number of Jews who became Christians, would, after the amalgamation, more resemble Jews than would the descendants of those who, becoming Mussulmans, intermarried with Arabs and Persians. For, in the former case, they would have reunited with those who were of the same original stock. In admitting this resemblance of physiognomy between Jews and Chaldeans, that which we first asserted as the candid expression of a conviction, although we knew not how to account for it, we now can make use of as a means of ascertaining their origin. M. Boré, in maintaining their Chaldean origin, finds the same resemblance. His language is, "The Chaldean physiognomy is of the same type with the Jewish." II. 210.

Now, when we find a people in the original country of the Chaldeans speaking the language of the Chaldeans, and called often by themselves, and generally by others, Chaldeans, with a physiognomy that allows them to be Chaldeans, it is fair to suppose, if other facts harmonize, that they are *bona fide* Chal-

deans. On the general question, in addition to the opinion of M Boré, it may be well to quote the opinion of Dr. Ainsworth, a distinguished English traveller, who has lately explored the country under the direction of the Royal Geographical Society. "As far as my own information goes, and as far as Mr. Rassam, who is a native of the country, could ever trace the remote traditions of the country, the Nestorians consider themselves as Chaldeans, and as descendants of the ancient Chaldeans of Assyria, Mesopotamia, and Babylonia, driven by the persecutions of Mohammedanism to their present mountain fastnesses."\* If the theory be adopted that they are the ten tribes, we are called upon to annihilate the relics of a far mightier nation, still found in the country of their fathers. For, if we conclude all the Nestorians to be Jews, and nothing else but Christian Jews, (and unless they have been preserved pure, the argument for their identity with the ten tribes has no peculiar force,) then where shall we hope to find any distinct remains of this ancient and great people, the Chaldeans? If we estimate the Nestorians at a hundred thousand, and allow them to be regarded as the representatives of the Chaldeans, we still may find a population large enough to gratify our Christian enthusiasm for the Jews, and to solace our hopes of finding the lost tribes, in the fact that there are more than three times one hundred thousand Jews, still to be found abiding to their ancient traditions, either on the spot of their exile, or in other parts of Central Asia. And it is not the first time that some of these same Jews have been thought to be remnants of the tribes of the Captivity. Moreover, the conclusion urged by Dr. Grant, in his interesting work on the Nestorians, and with such elaborate detail, would prove too much for the prejudices of our early faith. Great events, even the conversion of other nations not yet brought, or not then brought into the kingdom, depend on the conversion of the Jews. The lost tribes whom we have sought, have been Jews, and not Christians. But, if the ten tribes were the myriads that they are supposed to have been at the time of their conversion to the church, being then more numerous there than in any other part of the world, the fulfilment of those prophecies should long since have been accomplished. Of all the arguments that may be adduced in favor of the Jewish origin of the Nestorians, is

\* Ainsworth's *Travels and Researches in Asia Minor and Mesopotamia.* London, 1842. Vol. II. 256.

there one, unless a limited exception be made of the argument from their striking traditions, which may not also with hope and plausibility be urged in favor of their Chaldean origin? While at the same time their Chaldean name, country, and language, (whether called Syriac or Chaldee,) is an a priori claim to their being the representatives of the Chaldeans. We have not wished, however, to be drawn into an examination of the arguments for their Jewish origin: it is only incidentally that we have done so. We aimed simply to give some of the positive evidences of a different view of a disputed question.

Let us again follow M. Boré in his melancholy lucubrations. The brief specimens we shall give of his general language in reference to Protestants, are not, we believe, to be regarded as tokens of a peculiarly narrow spirit, or of an illiterate mind, but of the feelings of many eminent Romanists. M. Boré pretends not to be a member of any ecclesiastical order, (although we have high authority for believing that he is under monastic vows,) and assumes the position of a tolerant Catholic; and has had the best opportunities of having his prejudices softened down. But the intolerance and severe language which he manifests, are inwrought in the system which he espouses. If, for a moment, he adopts the generous language of liberality, he is soon borne away from it: he is never constrained by his better genius to make concessions of benevolence, sincerity, or other honorable traits to a Protestant, but the antithesis of his sentence buries his praise with a fearful load of opprobrium.

"Let us never forget that without our religion, which alone honors the most holy virgin, the mother of Christ, woman would never have acquired the influence she possesses. If there is any one thing which exhibits the weak side of Protestantism, and its powerlessness to effect in Christian society any radical change, it is in regard to the emancipation of woman, and her re-establishment in the dignity which she owes to Catholicism. The American ministers might remain centuries in this country, and gain all the men over to their doctrine; yet they would not have accomplished more than half of their task, for they will never be able to extend their influence over woman, nor penetrate into the sanctuary of a family. A father will take good care that his daughter shall not enter into a chamber, which the presence of a bible cannot, in his eyes, transform into a church. The only expedient would perhaps be to confide the female part of the flock to the wives of these gentlemen." II. 283. Is it

in irony that our friend writes here? One of the very evils that we should have thought he would deplore, would be, that the "minister," being married, can have so much more influence over woman than an unmarried monk. In what, whether in Christian or in Heathen lands, has the influence of Protestant institutions been as signal as in elevating the condition of woman? Wherever M. Boré moves, Protestantism is present to his startled imagination. In those fields where he had expected to find only the sectaries of the Eastern churches, he finds enlightened men of the Western world, and he seems filled with a spirit of extermination. "We Franks," he exclaims, "we Franks, American Missionary Sirs, who have caused your missions at Constantinople, Smyrna and Beyroot, and everywhere else, to make shipwreck, produce great fear in your minds." II. 360. After this imprudent boast of the cause of the troubles that our missionaries have experienced in various places, he admits that these same missionaries are not such contemptible enemies.

"If the Propaganda of the Americans is not annihilated by a more devoted mission, and founded on the truth, we shall soon have to renounce all hope of doing any good in the country. The system of the Americans has rendered the position of a European who wishes to counteract their disagreeable proselytism very difficult." II. 332. "My good Chaldean priest, who lives with me, writes every little while to Nestorians and Catholic Chaldeans to keep up friendly relations with them, and to overthrow the influence of American propagandism, which in vain is making its redoubled efforts."

"There is no comparison between these heretical communities and Protestant communities. Protestantism, as the most able controversialists have proved, cannot have any divine worship, and is from necessity continually passing into Deism. Their pastors limit all their functions to go and preach a lecture once a week, and give explanations of the spiritual and literal sense that every one is free to accept or reject. There is no priesthood in this: it becomes just the office of a reader, more convenient and more profitable to fill than that of mayor. Protestantism is naturally incompatible with the mind of the Orientals. It will perish in the cold and misty climates where it was born, and where, for a while, it still swallows up the faith and charity of men." II. 418. "Protestantism, implying in itself negation, cannot be of long duration, but soon exhausts itself

a state that the Protestant church now offers to our eyes, degenerated as it is to a state bordering on Socinianism." I. 33.

"In the second place, a thing which we can never pardon in the missionaries, is their complete ignorance of the first doctrines of the Christian religion, which they pretend to preach to the Orientals. How can they expect to be favorably received by these men, of whose ignorance they complain, when these same men hear them deny the divinity of our Lord, the hierarchical establishment of the primitive church, and when they see them stupefied with the fact, that they still practise the baptism of infants, whereas the use of this ordinance, according to the Americans, signifies a superstitious belief in original sin?" II. 52.

"Although I am but a layman, I can do some service to the church here. There are some things that can be done most easily without the priestly character. Therefore I will say that the battle of three weeks which I had with the Americans, leagued with the Nestorians, would not have terminated so happily, if it had been sustained by a missionary, who is obliged to be somewhat reserved. I, on the contrary, with a sort of military costume, drove about on horseback like a dragoon, with my sword at my side, saying that I was come on the part of the Persian government, as indeed I could, seeing that I had a firman for a school at Tébreez. All doors were opened to me; the greatest personages were afraid of displeasing me; generals and chiefs of the army courted me; and the poor Nestorians, who saw themselves attacked by me in the heart of their church, could not therefore resort to the Mussulmans for defence. I appeared as a man of the world to Mussulmans, and, underhanded, I made use, I assure you, of theological arguments, which are now circulating in the country, and will compel the Protestants to new apostolical labors. They have lost all which they thought they had gained in Turkey during the last five years. We think that we ought to give to the mother of God the honor of the confusion thrown upon those who deny her divine maternity." II. 334, 366.

We will not burden our pages with comments on the false or superficial statements in these extracts, nor direct attention to their impudent or blasphemous tone; we have quoted them, that it may be seen what ideas intelligent Catholics dare to propagate about Protestant belief, and with what unendurable means they presume to think of checking Protestant operations.

We might have quoted more of a similar character, where, in a pretendedly cool, historical survey, he charges Protestants with being "foremost in persecutions," "moved by temporal motives," opposing the church from "the pride of disobedience," and that they as a sect are now "dying amid doubt and Pantheism." But, lest some should suppose that the above specimens of prejudice and bigotry are more than commonly extravagant and bigoted, or are tokens merely of the feelings of an isolated individual, rather than of those of millions in a large body, we will subjoin here a few sentences from other writers; from the *Correspondance de l'Orient de MM. Michaut et Poujoulat*, in seven volumes. It will be seen that in their persecuting tendencies, they at least equal the language of M. Boré. They write from Beyroot.

"A point difficult to manage arises here. It is clear that very grave inconveniences arise from all these attempts at conversion. Now, would it not be desirable that the Mussulman government should forbid the missionaries to continue the work of proselytism, which they have begun? And as it would not be reasonable to demand of the Mussulman law, privileges for such or such a church, the Lazarists should no longer attempt to bring the Greeks, Syrians, or Armenians to their faith, but limit their exertions to keeping faith alive in the hearts of Christians of the Latin church. If such an order should today come to our clergy of Damascus or Antura, it seems to us that it could not occasion the same complaints that it might have done formerly, and for two reasons: first, because the missions of the Lazarists have not the same importance, or the same extent, as the missions of the Jesuits formerly: and second, because the friends of Catholicism would find an advantage in it, which to them must be sacred, viz. that of hindering the American and English Bible-men from blowing the wind of Protestantism in Lebanon or Palestine. Would not a Lazarist have as much joy in hindering a Catholic from becoming Protestant, as in gaining to the Catholic faith the soul of a schismatic?"

We can hardly give these gentlemen the credit of their apparent good faith in this proposition; as if they were willing that Jesuit missionaries should be excluded from Syria alike with Protestants. The fact is, the Catholics have already 150,000 followers in Syria, and a large number of the native priests have been educated at Rome. By the proposed edict, Jesuits would

have the right of raising up native preachers for all kinds of Syrians from among these Catholics, and thus have real possession of the field; while the Protestants, forbidden to have intercourse with any sect, would be driven from the field. This hint has been followed up by action on the part of the Jesuits in Syria, and if we have any missionaries there still, it is not because the Jesuits have not urged the Turkish government, both in Syria and at Constantinople, to expel the Americans. But God has hitherto allowed all their plans to be frustrated.

The animosity and aspersions with which Protestant missions are treated by Romanists, is not exceeded by the Greeks, but expressed in more rude, unpolished style. We cannot help quoting a few Greek opinions for the purpose of showing through what a tide of calumny and prejudice gospel truth will have to be forced, before it can directly reach the mind and hearts of the men of the East. One Papadopolos, in a volume printed at Athens in 1841, writes thus:

"The heresies of the Lutherans are seven: *first*, they are opposed to images; *second*, they make war on prayer, the church, and the saints; *third*, they honor not the Holy Virgin; *fourth*, they falsify the Scriptures; *fifth*, they say that Christ was not crucified, but that it was only an optical illusion; *sixth*, they do not worship the Cross; *seventh*, they deny transubstantiation. They have lost all feeling, since they follow the words of the devil, and listen to Sadducees and Nestorians, Voltaire and Luther. They have their inheritance with their father, the devil." Says Baïsios, a bishop, in a volume he published at Constantinople, in 1839: "The Satanic deeds of the Lutherans, who are of no sect at all, having become manifest, the plans of these infidels have been brought to nought, and they have been expelled from the nation." The late patriarch of Constantinople, Gregory VI., in a letter of fulminations against Protestants, says: "Let these heterodox apostles consider how they would have treated us, if we had acted in their country as they have acted in ours, against the religion of their ancestors. Let them remember, besides, that the people of all nations decree the penalty of death against those who dare to contaminate the religion of a people. Let them give us the same rights and privileges as to other people."

We might multiply such quotations from other printed documents, but we have quoted enough to show how little the enlightened Catholic differs from the clergy of a church that is

still fixed in the ideas of the dark ages, and would, by this confession of the patriarch himself, put missionaries to death, if they had the power. If such things are exposed in print by either party, what a deeper tinge of hatred must be found in their private conversations! We need not wonder at the slow progress which evangelical truths make in the East, when such is the character of the opposition, the falsehoods, and the prejudices with which the missionary has to contend. None but the enlightened suppose that there is any difference between the followers of Luther and Voltaire. This is the work of Romanist slanderers, for they find more work to do at present in the East in withstanding Protestant efforts, than in building up Popery itself. Their zeal and ardor for missionary enterprise, after a sleep of more than a hundred years, has within the last twenty years greatly increased; and it is important to keep in view that, by the admissions of Catholics themselves, they have been excited to this degree of zeal by the labors of Protestants. Full proof of this is found in these volumes. M. Boré, in his letter to the Society at Lyons, and to his private friends, makes continual use of this stimulant of rivalry. While in one breath he tries to prove that our labors are without fruit, in the next he will say, "Send on help soon, or these countries are forever lost."

"What I know and see of the Bible Society, and of the American Society, convinces me of the wonderful suitableness of your holy association, which fights Protestantism with its own weapons. Shall the zeal and the charity of Catholics be overcome by the half-faith of the Reformed churches? The Propagation Society seems to be so much the more necessary, as Rome seems to be in straits for money. At least she no longer sends the annuities which she used to do." II. 323.

"Let us thank God that the American missionaries have drawn so many souls half way along the road to truth, for we shall be able the sooner to lead them to the goal. We shall be grateful for being allowed to enter by all the doors that they have opened with so much difficulty. And above all, we have a kind of good will towards them, for having so sharpened the zeal and the charity of Catholics by the example of their vast Propaganda, which idea they first obtained from us." II. 285.

"Zeal for propagating the faith has manifested itself under all forms in the Catholic church, but that form which is best adapted to our epoch, is doubtless that of the Society of Lyons;

because, besides its other innumerable advantages, it unites that of directly destroying the efforts of the sects which, with means greater in a pecuniary point of view, still obtain no results." I. 88.

The above extracts clearly demonstrate that modern Catholic zeal has been greatly stimulated by the "fruitless" missions of the Protestants, and that they have been forced, in imitation of Protestants, to establish, in a measure independent of Rome, voluntary associations like those of Lyons and Vienna, as the surest means of obtaining a militia and other means suited to their purpose. M. Boré opens to us a long chapter of Romish schemes, for "seizing" (this is his own word) on the various Oriental churches, and proselyting them to the Pope; and to accomplish this object, the funds administered by the Lyons Society, and put at the disposal of monks and bishops, are his great reliance.

The two measures which, in his view, seem likely to be most effective in procuring the subjection of the Oriental churches, are: first, Catholic missions conducted on a more enlightened and liberal foundation than in past years; and second, the sort of protectorate that France claims to exercise over all Catholic subjects of the Ottomans.

M. Boré, as well as many of his countrymen, feels that the ancient system of missionary operations was carried on by men of too limited education, and of too contracted views. The constitutions of some of the ancient monastic orders restricted the monkish missionary, by his vows, from taking a sufficiently wide scope; and other great bodies have lost either their wealth or their zeal, and it is difficult to replenish such carcases with either. More important still is the fact, that by far the larger number of men attached to the missionary orders of monks have not the degree of science and education necessary to combat with the errors of the age. Protestants have begun to flood the world with their missionaries, who are generally well educated men. Formerly, when the Romish missionaries had the whole field to themselves, the most ignorant agent could make any honest or dishonest representations of the Catholic faith, and there was no one at hand, as now, to dispute or contradict him. They were able also to avail themselves of Catholic kings of Europe, who sometimes substituted force for arguments. But, in this respect, the Catholics in theological warfare are now but as one third against the other two thirds of Europe; the Greek

church and the Protestant church standing prominent as counterbalancing powers to the Romish church. She is reduced, therefore, to the necessity of defending her doctrines, not by bold assertion and authority merely, but by the claims of the learning, science and civilization to be obtained through her means; and, whether well grounded or otherwise, the social and civil, as well as religious privileges that her followers enjoy.

This new phase of Romanism is clearly seen in the remodelled character of its missions in the East. Where formerly a convent would have been established, is now to be found a college. Where formerly a small school was established in a convent for a few boys destined to enter the priesthood, there are now to be found schools for the mass of the people, both male and female. Where were formerly printed but "Hours of Devotion" and the like, at their presses, if they had any, there are now printed popular school books and magazines of useful knowledge. Where the church formerly sent monks, with vows of mendicants upon them, it now sends monks belonging to orders established for the sole purpose of propagating the Catholic faith. If we examine the institutions and rules of the congregations, both male and female, which have been formed within the last hundred years—if we look at the peculiar duties which they have assigned themselves, we shall see that they are conceived in the spirit of a much more extensive and liberal philanthropy than former ones, and that the end is not simply the good works of a self-righteousness, or supererogatory penitence. The vows of the members of these orders are often of the simplest kind; or persons may enter them without taking any vows, and without entering the ecclesiastical order. And that order which takes a supervision of the whole world, the Jesuits, aids and protects them all. "The Jesuits have sought to rekindle in the people the flame of love and charity. To effect this, they have sought auxiliaries, and points of contact with the people, which they have found in this infinite number of religious congregations. These they regard as indispensable helps to the higher religious orders, and to the secular clergy."\* The formation of these societies of men and women for definite external Christian purposes, and of missionary seminaries of education, the modifications of the vows and aims of the monkish orders, and the voluntary associations of Lyons and Vienna,

---

\* Henrion. *Histoire des Ordres Religieux*. Bruxelles, 1838.

constitute a new era in the history of the propagation of the Catholic faith, and richly deserve the attention of the evangelical philanthropist. These relaxations of severity, and this introduction of scientific instruction, may have other results than their Jesuitical inventors imagined. They may be wielding weapons of might to their own destruction. As illustrating this new mode of operation, let us notice the Lazarists, who also have the largest share in Eastern missionary operations.

The Lazarists are the chief organs of French missionary zeal in the East. As is generally understood, they are the successors of the Jesuits, having been charged with their Eastern missions by Pius VI. They occupy all the ancient edifices formerly belonging to the Jesuits, and from these facts are often popularly called Jesuits. They have existed as an order since 1626, it having been founded by Vincent de Paul, who accomplished such wonders by his benevolent undertakings. They have charge of more of the theological seminaries of France than any other order. They received from their founder the title of missionary priests, and at first chiefly labored in France. The French government furnishes them with edifices for their seminaries, and a regular allowance for their missions. As their especial charge, they have the Chinese and Levant missions; the central station of the latter is Constantinople. The bishops of St. Louis and of New Orleans, at least, besides many priests among us, belong to this order. At Constantinople, Smyrna, and in many other places in the Levant, they have numerous colleges and schools for both sexes; and these are continually multiplying, and increasing in value and efficiency. They have become more numerous, especially since Protestants have opened so extensively their own schools. Their female seminaries, in the large cities, are worthy of notice, as being all of them established after Protestant schools, in imitation of them, and to counteract them; and yet M. Boré presumptuously boasts, that a school established by the Lazarists, at Constantinople, was the first female school opened in the Ottoman empire. M. Boré's own language explains what he understands by this new phase of Catholicism, and confirms the picture we have given of the Lazarists, and of the modification which their plans of missionary labor have undergone.

"The Lazarists have perfectly well understood, that, in accordance with the exigencies of the age, they must extend and multiply their means of action. They have felt the truth that

we shall never cease repeating to the clergy, that men led astray by the false light of philosophy and ignorance, can never be brought back to religion but by means of science. Preaching alone will not suffice; there must be, besides, a system of instruction. It is by elevating youth to the present level of science, and proving its harmony with our faith, that we can most easily inspire youth with the love of goodness; and form men who (from the spirit of proselytism inspired by the truth) will become so many secular apostles." I. 169.

"One course alone remains hereafter to the religious orders, whose lives are not absorbed by labors of a visible and social utility, as those of education, or of expiatory penance as among the Trappists; and this course is that which we call, the great road of science. It is by entering upon this that those corporations that have ease and leisure to cultivate its various branches, like the ancient Benedictines, will find favor with the age. Let them all put themselves upon the same ground, and we will assure them a victory over all their competitors."—I. 39.

"Let some of these voluntary enlighteners come, with positive knowledge of the arts, medicine and other sciences, and supply the incomplete knowledge of the missionary. The world would then gaze with admiration upon a new and intimate alliance between the clergy and the representatives of the other classes of society."

"I am told that the Carmelites have been chosen by the Propaganda to labor in Persia. I do not doubt that they have all the zeal, piety and faith necessary to make them apostles. But these are not sufficient titles, unless they are French. (Missionaries who come here only to evangelize Christia will not probably be protected by the Persians, unless they propose to perform some work directly useful and necessary. They must come out here as the missionaries of the last century went to China, with science and the light of arts and mechanics. The Mussulmans of Persia know, that if France is not at the head of all the other nations of Europe in knowledge, at least she is the most disinterested in her services." II. 305.

"We think that the missionaries ought to bring to Isfahan, with the treasures of religion, other treasures of science and civilization, and strengthen themselves by establishing a university, open without distinction to all classes, Mussulman and Christian. The former will thus learn to esteem our reli-

gion, and to appreciate the nation and country of its masters.”  
II. 383.

In accordance with these views, many of their common schools are transformed into colleges, under the direction of men educated at the colleges of Paris. Mathematics, physics, astronomy, and other branches of philosophy are taught, aided with good philosophical apparatus. But none of these changes were introduced until the Americans had first set them the example by similar colleges of their own. At Tébreez, M. Boré attempted to operate on this plan, and, till he showed too much disposition to exalt the proselyting part of his system, he had considerable success. The thought with which the last two of our extracts conclude, introduces us to the second lever by which it is proposed by Frenchmen, in addition to their colleges, to effect the triumph of Popery—and that lever is the Protectorate of Catholics by France. The French claim that, by ancient capitulations with Turkey, the right has been reserved to that power alone, to protect missionaries of whatever Catholic nation, that none of their establishments are in any wise to be interfered with by the Turkish government; and besides that, they have a certain protection by the same capitulations, for the religious rights of all Catholic subjects of the Porte. A portion of these privileges, at least, has been secured to the French, and in an age when the motives of their zeal were more religious than political. They are now insisted on and made use of by the French, more for the sake of securing an increased weight of political influence in a weak empire, and from pride, than from religious ardor. In the numerous places in M. Boré’s work, where he appeals to France, as called to the great work of establishing and extending Popery in the East, it is very difficult to decide which is the strongest feeling, that of the Frenchman or the Romanist,—whether he wishes to have France aid Catholicism chiefly for the sake of bringing a larger number of souls to acknowledge the vicegerent at Rome, or because that thereby the honor and glory of France, the “first among the nations of the earth,” will be greatly extended.

“If our faith weighs but little in the balance of those who reign over us, at least in view of our national interests and honor, they never neglect to use those means which have given us our title of ‘most Christian,’ and which will give us the alliance and love of the Oriental churches. These churches all have their eyes turned towards us, and they are proud to

hoist the French flag over their churches. It is remarkable, that France, which declares itself so openly atheist in other places, here assumes an orthodox character." I. 83.

" To understand the spiritual action of France, we must remember that we are the avowed protectors of Catholicism; it is under our banner that the orthodox communities find protection. The government and representatives of France in these countries may be irreligious, and enemies of the faith, without the entire nation being responsible. The association for the propagation of the faith has its most active centre in France. The only apostles of the faith that are seen are our missionaries, stationed at all points, and laboring disinterestedly for the religious and intellectual regeneration of the Levant." I. 166.

" The only means of preventing freedom of worship from being taken away from the Catholics of Persia, is to establish here an ambassador of that power which protects Catholicism in the East. Let not France neglect that power which she anciently obtained, and which elevates her far above all Christian sovereignties,—that of covering with her flag those churches which are daughters of the Catholic church. If France understood all the advantages, even temporal, which result from this sacred right, she would be as eager to extend it, as jealous to preserve it." II. 290.

" The day when France shall be unanimously Catholic, she will have the *empire of the world*. It is not in the hope of a political supremacy that is transitory and contemptible, that we utter this thought, but because our nation alone, of all the nations of the world, presents the distinctive character of an intimate unity, homogeneous and invincible, which she owes to having preserved her Catholic unity." II. 291.

But enough examples of this religious politician's glorifications in behalf of France. We see from them, and other preceding extracts, what an important sphere she moves in, as a propagator of the Catholic faith, and how far the zeal of the government is political or religious. It is only by being Catholic that France can extend her influence. It must not be France moving as a nation with civil prerogatives—but as Catholic France and as a Catholic nation. No other nation must be permitted to join her in this holy enterprise, unless as a subordinate co-operator, or the glory of France would be tarnished, and the political gain and glory would be divided. She consequently rejoices in the missionary coldness even of Austria, and that

Prince Metternich has almost formally resigned any protectorate of the Eastern Christians. The most remarkable occasion on which France manifested her disposition to interfere in the politico-religious affairs of the Oriental Christians, was after the exile by the Sultan of the Armeno-Catholics from Constantinople. These Armenian Catholics are strongly bound to the French, because for a century they have seen in them their only efficient protectors. For it is a matter of public history, that when these exiles were, a few years back, restored to Constantinople, it was by means of the intervention of the French ambassador. In Syria, her claims are most extravagant, as though because a few ten thousands of the population are Catholic, France has the right of a protective sovereignty over the whole kingdom. In Mount Lebanon, they would fain have the whole population under a Catholic prince, and consequently cannot endure the plan of Prince Metternich, by which a prince is secured to the Druses alike with the Maronites. We know for certain that all their consuls throughout Turkey have especial instructions to exert themselves earnestly for the propagation of the Catholic faith. In 1842, the French consul at Bagdad, on the feast day of the patron saint of Louis Philippe, summoned the Christians of every rite to celebrate it with him in church; and, to the number of several thousands, they accompanied him in procession. The course that France adopts in Turkey, she is disposed to adopt throughout the world. When we compare the nearness of time and place, of the humiliations in the name of religion and commerce to which France subjected the rulers of the Sandwich and Society Islands, with their taking possession of the Marquesas, we are led to suspect that the causes for both movements are intrinsically related. The Catholic faith and French arms are to be used jointly to promote the glory of France.

There is satisfaction in knowing that this vainglory of France is not unresisted, for her pretensions even are many of them illy founded. Her protectorate is founded more on custom than capitulations. The articles in their treaties with the Porte have been enlarged from the date of the first one in 1533 in the time of St. Louis; but they are for definite purposes, the protection of foreign priests laboring among Catholics, or attached to the convents and churches of the holy places, like Jerusalem and Nazareth. Not one of them contains a line giving France any interest in the subjects of the Porte who are of the Catholic

faith, or any privileges in propagating that faith. In January, 1843, this was proved in the Chamber of Deputies—and the hoisting of the French tri-colored flag over Catholic churches in the East, is a matter of tacit, careless consent on the part of the Turks. In fact, whatever privileges are not granted to France by treaty, are fast passing out of her hands. Other powers of Europe, intensely interested in the political affairs of Turkey, could not quietly look on and see France, for her own selfish ends, wielding such usurped influence. Consequently, in various disputed questions that have arisen during the last few years, where France would have asserted her pre-eminence, she has been obliged to succumb. One recent glaring instance was at Constantinople, where an association of European merchants having built a hospital, France claimed it as under her special protection, but was obliged to yield to a collective protectorate. When the enemies of the ministry with mortification said that France had been brought down to the level of the other powers of Europe, M. Guizot admitted that it was true in some particulars, but that the times are changed, and France cannot be left to act alone.

Some later portions of M. Boré's history portray the same Romish spirit invested with a love of French glory. They are valuable not merely as tokens of an individual character, but of what we may expect from other French lay missionaries. The language of the brothers Abbadie, in obtaining the expulsion of Protestant missionaries from Abyssinia, corresponds with that of M. Boré, and that of many others whom our readers will recall. For some time after M. Boré's visit to Oroomiah, to flatter the Nestorians with the idea of his having been sent to them by the King of France, and to frighten them, with alleging that he was sent by the Shah of Persia, (neither of which stories was true,) he remained at Tébreez occupied with his college ; having spread, according to his exact language, such rumors and stories about the missionaries, "as will take them many years to eradicate their effects." He here obtained a royal permission to establish schools for scientific education, promising to teach twenty youths gratuitously, on condition that there should be no interference with the plan of instruction. Notwithstanding his often declared purpose of remaining here till new teachers should come from France, he was too much of a *knight-errant* to remain patient and disengaged from ad-

ventures. He must go and tilt his lance in some other region. So, "sanctifying his journey with the presence of M. Scaf," a Lazarist monk of Constantinople, he went to Teheran. He was mistaken sometimes for a French ambassador, although he assumed more modestly the title of a Colonel: but he says, "I put a good face upon the matter, and took a solemn mien; my sword, pistols and sabre never left me, and all my suite were respectably armed. I played a rôle which disguised well my ulterior intentions. And thus shall I continue to make the Persians respect me." He flatters himself on the arrival of the French ambassador at Teheran, that so many years having elapsed since France had any representative there, henceforth she is destined to have a predominating influence. The ambassador, Count de Sercey, indeed, obtains a most pompous, but eminently futile firman for the emancipation of Catholics in Persia. Under his auspices, he commenced a school among the Armenians at Isfahan—but the embassy soon entirely left Persia. After professing to be giving instruction entirely in the sciences, he carried his proselytizing measures so far that he would not give up some Armenian youth whom he had made Catholics; and trusting to the influence which he thought the French ambassador had secured, he defended himself with swords and guns. He was obliged to leave: and the arrogant tone and high-handed measures of the agents who followed him, so alarmed the Persians, excited by the Armenians, that a second firman was issued, ordering the Jesuits out of Persia. But although two years have elapsed, even that firman is already in operation.

M. Boré next proceeded to Mosul, under the protection of M. Botta, the French consul there, and son of the author of the History of the American Revolution. Here he promised to all who would become Catholics, that they should have the protection of France, circulated the most false reports in the ears of the government, and especially of the Christians, of the designs of the American missionaries, established temporarily some rival schools, and after having done such an amount of evil that for shame he could not stay longer, he gave out that he was appointed consul at Jerusalem, which was also false, and returned rapidly to France. There he has been engaged in getting up a new crusade, having been occupied in exciting still farther the French mind to missionary operations in the Levant, and is now about to return to resume his politico-religious labors. The im-

pression that he has produced, and the double design of the missionary labors of France in the East, and in other parts of the world, is well conveyed in the following significant language of one of the Catholic religious journals of Paris, January, 1843.

"In the East, Catholicism is France: in the East France had formerly the sword with which to protect her missionaries. Now her missionaries and her Christian principles will be the safeguard of her name and of her memory. Yes! France must inundate the East with her principles and her missionaries. The lowest soldiers of the faithful militia are ambitious of the perilous honor of evangelization. Our country has seen the young and intrepid traveller, who is soon going to return and resume in Asia, Christian instruction, and the strife against heresy and schism. Our mission in the East has but just begun. Providence has reserved, perhaps, to those who during eight centuries have kept up the necessary *crusade of the sword* at the holy sepulchre, a better and more pacific crusade, that of spreading the treasures of learning and science,—and thus carrying to the highest point of splendor, the national glory and the glory of God."—*L'Univers.*

---

### ARTICLE III.

#### THE ENGLISH REFORMERS AND THEIR PRINCIPLES.

By John Lord, Boston, Mass.

OUR object, in this article, is, to present the religious movement in England, from the time of Cranmer to that of Baxter—two reformers who are representatives of the two great religious parties among those who seceded from Rome.

We wish to allude to the great leading characters of a period of intense religious excitement, and to the principles for which they contended.

SECOND SERIES, VOL. XI. NO. I.

5

In England, as in Germany, the Spirit of the Lord moved upon the face of the troubled waters of a new moral reformation. And yet we do not behold the same moral phenomena. The great evils to be removed were the same in both countries, but were to be removed in a different way. The social and political aspects of the two countries demanded a different class of reformers. We behold, in England, no fearless and uncompromising Luther, urged on by the impulses of an earnest nature, and by convictions based on the word of God, to resist, single-handed if necessary, the encroachments of the great Red Dragon, declaring his mind in the language of passionate indignation, bracing himself up to the most daring and revolutionary assaults, overwhelming, by a torrent of invective and sarcasm, the dialectical sophistry of the schoolmen, confounding learned prelates by arguments drawn from Scripture and reason, undaunted before kings, unmoved by the exhortations of friends, indifferent to the anathemas of popes, and giving no rest to his mind, no slumber to his eyes, until he had declared his noble message with all the intrepidity of the ascetic Baptist, and all the dignity of the learned Paul. We see no profound and deeply read Calvin, among the early English reformers, enforcing a discipline of the church on republican principles, successfully assailing all that was venerable in prelacy, and all that was imposing in the ritual of the Romish service, laying down rules with autocratic severity for both rulers and people, inspiring a deep and implacable hatred of the papal ceremonial, and infusing his spirit of civil and religious freedom into all the institutions of his country, and all the inquiring minds of the world. We behold, in the English nation, if in Scotland, no dignitaries of earth, quailing before the noblemen of nature, and receiving their spiritual teachings as the imperative mandates of the Invisible King. At first, we contemplate no great ferment of awakened mind, no furious outbreak of popular rage, no rebellion against the established authorities in church or state. The time came, in the progress of reform, when the whole country was rent with civil and religious commotion. But the Reformation did not arise from the people, nor, until the time of Elizabeth, was there any thing democratic in its character. The people were led on by *gradual* steps alone, to achieve their religious independence. Nor was it secured until they were generally instructed in the principles of the evangelical faith of Calvin, and they aroused, by a series of protracted and vexatious

insults and oppressions, to a determined and resolute resistance of the very authorities and institutions which they were anxious to maintain. In England, the first steps to reform were made by the most violent, rapacious and debauched of all her kings, suggested by one of the most unscrupulous ministers that ever rose to power, and defended by one of the most timid and inconsistent prelates that ever filled the see of Canterbury.

The English Reformation, as technically considered, was a mere preparation for the message of succeeding reformers, and is, moreover, a signal example of God's providence in making the passions of wicked men subservient to its high designs. And this is the great moral in the history of the times—the great central truth, indeed, which stands out from the page of all history. Providence is the life of history, as well as the soul of the world. "The burning bush has never yet gone out, nor has the ark of God ceased to float upon the world's waves." If there is grandeur in great changes and revolutions, especially in those which ultimately bring good to society, and in which their great actors seemed to be moved by no lofty principles, that grandeur is chiefly seen in the direction they are made to take by "Him who sitteth in the heavens, and who rideth on the wings of the wind." And he who contemplates the moral changes of the world, without recognizing this great central truth of history, is like one "gazing at the frightful convulsions of nature, with the vacant awe of idolatrous savages, without cognizance of those natural laws by which the material world is regulated, and without reflection on the nature of that awful Being by whose omnipotence those wonders were performed." It is difficult to find, in all the annals of the human race, stronger illustrations of that wrath which is made to praise the Lord, than in the leading events of the reigns of Henry VIII, of Mary, and of Elizabeth. Not even the sale of Joseph to the Ishmaelites, the oppression of the children of Israel in Egypt, their wanderings in the desert, Daniel in the lion's den, nor Mordecai in the snares of Haman, illustrates more fully a superintending power, than the unholy passion of Henry for Anne Boleyn, and his savage rapacity in seizing the lands of the church to enrich his nobles, and find the means of gratifying his own profligate desires.

Who could have predicted, when Henry was writing philippics against Luther, and defending with zeal the interests of the pope, that he would have been the very first of English sove-

reigns to rebel against his spiritual master, and pursue a policy fatal to the very church to whose doctrines and ceremonies he was ever attached? Even the unmanly and yielding temper of Cranmer, no less than the unprincipled boldness of his contemporary Cromwell, seemed just what were needed to advance reformation under such a king as Henry. And the unsparing bigotry of Mary, which encouraged the bloody persecution under Bonner and Gardiner, was overruled for good, by testing the sincerity of the first seceders from the ancient church. The fire of Smithfield "lighted a candle in England, which was never afterwards extinguished," and the flight of exiles to Geneva and Frankfort, resulted in the better understanding of the doctrines of Christianity, and a more ardent desire to promote a radical reform, both in the doctrines of faith, the discipline of the church, and the worship of Jehovah. Even the irritating policy of Elizabeth, respecting the nonconformists, provoked the most liberal and pious of the nation to resistance, when resistance led to liberty.

Though the Reformation, at first, was the work of great men, rather than a popular movement, still it could not have been carried on by them unless there had been a previous preparation. There had long been, among enlightened statesmen, no slight indignation that the surplus revenues of the realm should only be applied to the wants of the papal treasury. They could not be blinded to the impoverishment of England, in consequence of enormous drains of money, which flowed to Rome in the shape of annats and taxes.

In the universities, the claims of the popes were boldly discussed, and things were called by their right names. Wickliffe had carried on the contest between reason and authority, and, by the temerity of his speculations, had incited many inquiring minds to think boldly. The more intelligent of the laity despised the monks, who swarmed wherever there was money to be extorted, power to be gained, and ease to be enjoyed. Thirty thousand of these religious idlers and vagabond impostors were employed in counterfeiting relics, in forging miracles, and in selling masses for souls. The feeble taper, which their idolatrous hands held out as a light for the misguided people to find their way to heaven, was almost gone out, and this was sometimes entirely hidden in the deep recesses of their gloomy cloisters, or extinguished by the noisome vapors of their bacchanalian revels. Again, the barons looked with jealousy on the

wealth of the superior clergy, who owned half of the lands of England, and who fattened on the spoils of ages, neglectful of those spiritual interests which they professed to guard, and of those Christian duties which they were bound to discharge. They held high offices under government, and could easily consign the unfortunate victims of their resentment to imprisonment and torture, without restraint and without law. And the people themselves, particularly in the cities, enriched by commerce, liberalized by art, and banded together by associations, beheld, with an evil eye, the encroachments of an hierarchy bent on crushing every effort for intellectual independence. The Lollards, too obscure to attract much notice from the great, were nevertheless numerous; and, in their humble sphere, breathed out the spirit of popular indignation against the abuses of a corrupted church. What, to them, was a lofty altar, surmounted with costly vessels of gold and silver? What were wax candles, burning before the sacred crucifix? what the tones of the solemn organ, swelling through all the recesses of the vaulted roof? What were all the architectural wonders of the ancient cathedral; what the gorgeous dresses of the priest, the ceremony of the mass, the imposing ritual of the service, the transporting music of the choir, when their spiritual cravings were disregarded, and when they retired from the service of Him who dwelleth not in temples made with hands, with dazzled senses, excited imaginations, and no instruction on the great truth of a regenerating gospel? The people perceived, at last, that the church which had sheltered the submissive, was still intolerant of change—that it crushed all daring spirits, and was opposed to liberty of conscience, and the rights of private judgment. A spirit of discontent pervaded the nation, and so prepared the way for the efforts of the reformers.

The Reformation was needed to accomplish four things, under which most of the evils of Romanism may be ranged.

These were, separation from Rome, the removal of ecclesiastical abuses, the renovation of the doctrines and discipline of the Apostolic age, and the establishment of religious liberty.

The Reformation, at first, was the work of prelates and rulers, and did not become a popular movement, until Elizabeth had resolved it should advance no farther, and had issued an act of uniformity, which required submission to her sovereign will, and her royal conscience, even in those indifferent matters which the Bible and enlightened legislation leave to individual conscience.

to decide ; and which can never be meddled with by authority without a violation of the first principles of natural justice.

The Reformation received its first impulse from Henry VIII. But the only innovations which he ever encouraged, and to which he ever consented, were, disenthralment from Rome, and the suppression of monasteries,—the one to increase his power, and the other his wealth.

Every one knows the causes which led to the revolt from the pope, and we will not detail them ;—the disgust of the king for a virtuous wife, his passion for Anne Boleyn, the efforts he made to get a divorce from the one that he might marry the other, the indelicate obtrusion of his adulterous connection on the attention of Europe, and the squandering of his treasures in order to bribe the universities. Every one knows how he irritated the emperor Charles, annoyed Francis, worried the pope, and puzzled the doctors ; how Cranmer and Cromwell cut the Gordian knot ; how he made one primate and the other prime minister ; how, under their guidance, he defied the papal thunders, and secured to himself the supremacy of the Anglican Church. Henry, however, only raised his mistress to the throne by an entire revolt from the church which he loved, by squandering the treasures which his father left him, by exciting the indignation of his own age, and by enrolling his name on the list of the tyrants of mankind. He paid the penalty of his sin. His whole subsequent life was a constant scene of disappointment and irritation,—the fearful descensus averni, the bitter anguish of a premature purgatory, the continual commission of new crimes, and the remorse and shame by which they were succeeded.

In effecting the independence of the English church, Henry was but the blind instrument of the Almighty, and a mere tool in the hands of the two great Protestant leaders of his country —Cranmer and Cromwell. These men were the representatives of a rising party, who beheld with impatience the subjection of the people to a distant bishop, and the withdrawal of the revenues of the country to support his pomp. Cranmer regarded the usurpation of the pope with the eye of an enlightened scholastic, and Cromwell as an intelligent and calculating statesman. The one was a sagacious man of the world, the other a learned and pious scholar. The churchman looked upon Romanism as a corrupt form of Christianity ; the statesman, as an unlawful spiritual despotism, which interfered with the rights

of monarchs, and enslaved and robbed their subjects. He hated to see the spiritual power exalted over the temporal, in matters of mere secular interest. And this was the feeling of the enlightened men of the age. It was not ecclesiastical tyranny, when confined to the affairs of the church, which was complained of, so much as this tyranny extended into the state itself. It was the *subserviency* of the state to the church, not the *union* between them, which was complained of. The nobles were jealous of the influence of ecclesiastics, in a department which, according to the original institutions of Christ, they had no right to meddle with at all. The great lawyers and jurists despised the narrow and bigoted policy of priests, whenever they were called to associate with them in civil legislation. And they were indignant that the great secular offices were filled with churchmen, who usurped the government of the nation, and made it dependent on the will of Rome.

Moreover, the papacy had fulfilled its mission. No longer were turbulent barons independent of the crown, and unawed by a central power. No longer were excommunications and interdicts necessary to coerce the passions of lawless kings. No longer did the people require a shelter from the aggressions of the great. No longer was the church democratic in her sympathies. No longer did she protect the submissive and the injured, while she punished the schismatic and the rebellious. The people could now protect themselves. The whole age was against the Romish church, especially, since it was hostile to free inquiry, and intolerant of the spirit of reformation. Cranmer and Cromwell understood this spirit, and sympathized with it. They undoubtedly saw what the passions of the king would lead to, and they fomented them, not because they approved of their indulgence, but because they wished to see the papal authority weakened, at any cost, and by any means.

The existence of monasteries was another great eyesore to the reform party. It could do nothing so long as thirty thousand monks were poisoning the minds of youth in the universities, and inflaming the prejudices of the people. The monastic system, as well as the papacy, was no longer needed. It had done its work. It had preserved the monuments of ancient literature. It had afforded a retreat to the contemplative and studious. It had given a shelter to unprotected females. It had nursed the sick, and fed the traveller. It had patronized the poor and the distressed. It had been a nursery of learning, and, in its way,

of piety. It had been useful in ages of barbarism. But, in all the ways it had once advanced civilization, it now retarded it; not only because an improving age had found out better ways to advance learning and religion, but also because it had itself become corrupted, was sustained by fraud, and favored by lying superstition. The whole country was covered with monasteries and convents, which were corrupted beyond redemption—no longer receptacles of learning, no longer bee-hives of industry, no longer retreats for contemplative sages, but dens of iniquity, and cages of unclean birds. When, at the suggestion of Cromwell, a visitation was made, the commissioners found, at St. Edmund's, some coals that had roasted St. Lawrence, the paring of St. Edmund's toes, St. Thomas's penknife and boots, and as many pieces of the true cross as would load a cart. In Gloucestershire, a vial was exhibited which contained some of the blood of Christ; and at Thomas à Becket's shrine, as much gold as sixteen men could carry away.

Since monasteries had so deplorably degenerated, we see some palliation for the savage ruthlessness with which they were destroyed. More than one thousand religious houses were suppressed, their lands confiscated, and their wealth scattered. It would have been better had the church lands been sold to the people, as in France during the Revolution; but it was so ordered that the gainers were the barons, and the favorites of royalty. Half of the lands in the nation suddenly became the property of the aristocracy, which operated unfavorably to English liberty. But the moral effects were happier. The eyes of the people were opened to the evils of monkery. Nor could it ever afterwards be revived. The monks became inexhaustible subjects of sarcasm and mockery. The sufferings of thirty thousand religious, ejected from their venerable homes, could not deeply move the sympathies of the nation, so disgusted was it with the abuses and vices of the monks.

Cromwell had the chief hand in the suppression of monasteries. After he had fulfilled his task, he was left to experience the instability of royal favor. Like his former master, the more accomplished and ambitious Woolsey, he was elevated from nothing, and to nothing he returned.

It belonged to Cranmer, a meeker and a better man, to do all that could be done, under such a prince as Henry, for the religious improvement of his countrymen. Compared with some of his contemporaries, his character falls far short of theirs in

dignity and moral grandeur. We cannot excuse his mean compliance and unmanly fear. He was not indeed such a sycophant as Williams. Still we could have wished more moral intrepidity, and a less temporizing policy, even if the same should doom him to be a victim of Henry's resentment, from which, when roused, no man and no woman ever escaped.

All that the primate could do for reform, during the reign of the royal theologian, was, to secure the translation of the Bible, and a slight modification of the doctrines of the Romish church. But, even to these, the king reluctantly gave his assent. The Bible, though set up in churches, was chained to the posts of the choir. As ever, it was a sealed book to the people ; only a nobleman or a gentleman was permitted to possess a copy, while no woman, no artizan, no husbandman, was allowed to read it, at all, in private. All the advance toward reform, which was made in this reign, was *in the secession from Rome, and the suppression of monasteries.* And the history of even these reforms, "is the history of the king's fits of temper, of his likings and dislikings, of his pecuniary difficulties, of his amours, jealousies, and suspicions, of the swellings and ebbings of his pedantry and self-conceit, of the fluctuations of his bodily sores and distempers."

From the Reformation under such a prince, which was merely the exchange of tyrants, and an exchange for the worse, we proceed to consider its progress under Edward VI—"a quiet, pious, and learned boy," as Mackintosh calls him—under whose auspices Cranmer and his associates had full scope to prosecute their plans. They effected the second and third great objects of reform—the *removal of Romish abuses, and the settlement of the evangelical creed.* They placed the Bible in churches, and circulated it in families. They abolished the old Latin service, and introduced the Book of Common Prayer, compiled and translated from the ancient liturgy. They cleared away the old papal rubbish—the worship of images, the ceremony of the mass, auricular confession, wax candles before the altar, and little boys within the chancel. They turned the altars into communion tables, set up singing of psalms in the service, administered the communion in both kinds to the laity, curtailed the authority of the ecclesiastical courts, and prepared a book of homilies for the clergy, who were too ignorant to write their sermons. They invited eminent scholars to settle in England, established John à'Lasco in London, and gave chairs of theol-

ogy, in the universities, to Martyn and Bucer. Above all, they introduced the new standard of faith, in the form of forty-two articles, in which the principles of the evangelical creed of Calvin were distinctly recognized.

Under the reign of Edward, but few suffered from persecution, and only two were executed for heresy. Cranmer was opposed to violent measures, and was moderate if he was not tolerant. His treatment of Bonner and Gardiner, though harsh, was not sanguinary. They were simply shut up in the tower; during which imprisonment, the fat bishop of London made doleful lamentations that his supply of puddings was not sufficiently plentiful.

But after all, the reforms which Cranmer projected were not lasting, because they were the *work of mere authority*. The people had no hand in them, and were either indifferent to them, or yielded, because resistance was vain. Old Latimer, it is true, thundered against the Beast at St. Paul's Cross, and John à'Lasco instructed the people, in his chapel, on the principle of the continental reformers. Still the Reformation was not carried on from popular convictions. There was no enthusiasm in it. The people were submissive to every change. Hence they readily returned to their old abominations upon the accession of Mary.

It is not our object to detail the events of her infamous reign, disgraced by savage persecution and wanton outrage of the moral sentiments of the nation. The fires of Smithfield were rekindled. Four hundred suffered martyrdom. Cranmer was cheated, intimidated, and mocked. In an evil hour he had consented to become a liar and a hypocrite. Heart-broken and old, the fear of death was stronger than the voice of conscience. He lived indeed to retract, and, with Ridley and Latimer, heroically suffered, redeeming, by his sincere repentance and his many tears, his memory from shame. Bonner and Gardiner were restored to their sees. A papal legate was received at court. The interests of Rome were preferred to the political welfare of the nation. An obedient parliament, by a single statute of repeal, swept away all the acts of the last reign pertaining to the worship of God; and the queen and her ministers had the satisfaction of seeing the restoration of Romanism.

There is nothing in the history of those times which excites our indignation or surprise more than the sight of a whole people returning with such facility to the errors and superstitions which they had so lately renounced. We see in it both the slavery of

the people to absolute authority, and their imperfect conversion. And these facts take away from the reformation of Edward all glory and all sublimity. Even had it been a political movement, arising from the strength of ideas among the people, we should behold in it something of moral grandeur. Could we have seen the nation rising in indignation in view of the corruptions of Romanism, and fearlessly declaring their minds, even had they been too weak to effect any thing, there would have been grandeur. But, inasmuch as all the changes were the work of authority, they can never intensely excite us. And hence, in reading the events of those times, we do not feel a spirit of excitement enkindled within us—the blood does not flow more freely through our veins—until we read of the contest between Elizabeth and the Non-conformists; until Laud, who united the spirit of an old heathen persecutor with the fanaticism of a Spanish inquisitor, attempted to impose a liturgy on the Scottish nation, until the Puritans were driven to Holland and New England, until Pimm and Hampden uttered their indignant voices in the House of Commons, until the people rallied around the standard of Cromwell, and swore never to separate so long as either king, or parliament, or bishops, or synods, were bent on enforcing uniformity to the doctrine and discipline which each had in view to establish.

The reign of Mary, disastrous in its immediate effects to the cause of religious liberty, and to an evangelical Christianity, disgraced by infamous persecution, and by bad fortune in war, still was overruled for the ultimate advancement of religion. The cruelties of Bonner and Gardiner opened the eyes of the nation to the genius of the papal system. Persecution, so reckless and extravagant, shocked all who were not blindly attached to the ancient superstitions. The blood of martyrs, as usual, proved the seed of the church,—a sublime truth, whose hidden meaning was revealed to Ridley and Latimer and Cranmer amid the fires which consumed their venerable limbs, and amid the execrations of those who mocked their dying agonies and drowned their song of triumph. And not to them only, but to all who sympathize with their doctrines. Their firm endurance and unshaken faith, not less than their blameless lives, embalmed their memories, exalted their cause, and confirmed their principles. And this was perceived by the authors of their sufferings. Not only Gardiner and Philip saw how vain it was to suppress the religious enthusiasm which such martyrdom excited, but even Mary

herself became dejected and desolate. She lived to see how odious was her policy, and how detested were her ministers; and when she died, as she had lived, the poor victim of those superstitions which can never be revived, no lamentations were heard in her princely halls, and no tears were shed by her suffering people.

The nation hailed with enthusiasm the accession of Elizabeth. Then the exiles at Frankfort and Geneva returned to propagate the doctrines they had learned from Calvin and Beza. Then commenced the desire among the humbler classes for a simpler worship of God and greater strictness of church discipline, and more republican notions of government, than had existed, even in the reign of Edward.

Though Elizabeth turned the tables on the Catholics, and restored the doctrines and worship which Crammer had instituted, still she was averse to any farther reformation. She sympathized with the absolutism of her father,—she loved the pomp of a gorgeous worship, and she hated the spirit of innovation, when the same came from the people. Above all, she had ridiculous notions of her supremacy, and was impressed with the belief that *her* conscience was the only guide of the nation in matters of faith.

The Virgin Queen, by confirming the clergy in most of their ancient privileges, by retaining many of the ceremonies of the Romish ritual, by forming a close union of church and state, by assuming the supreme direction in ecclesiastical affairs, by requiring a rigid uniformity to the canons which she and her ministers imposed, and by disregarding all the rights of private judgment, left not only many new reforms to be made, but aroused a spirit of resistance which was to lead to convulsions which would overturn the throne.

It was the message of that rising party, which desired farther reformation, to declare the principles of religious liberty, and to call forth the popular enthusiasm of the nation. Henceforth, the battle was not to be fought with the *Catholics*, for they were bound hand and foot, but with the *Puritans*—with men attached to evangelical Christianity, distinguished no less for purity of morals than for enlargement of mind—men of great earnestness of character, deep religious convictions, active religious sympathies, and devoted loyalty to conscience.

This was that rising party which Elizabeth, by irritating enactments, endeavored to put down, and whose spirit and virtues,

with all her discernment, she did not understand. But how could she, or all the princes of the earth, extinguish the spreading fires of religious enthusiasm ? What was the loss of one's ears, or a whipping in the pillory, or confinement in a jail, or confiscation of property, or banishment from country, to the loss of intellectual independence, and the privilege of worshipping God according to the dictates of conscience ? And the poor man was no longer contemptible. No longer was he a feudal slave, but civilized by art, enriched by industry, and potent by union. He now learned his duties from the Bible, and his politics from advancing civilization. His mind received light from heaven, and his spirit caught fire from the new impulses which were active around him. His soul, in an awakening and brilliant period, showed, in every thing, how deeply it was moved. He believed in progress, and offered his brawny arm wherever abuses were to be removed. He did not fear to declare his mind. He spoke with dignity, and he acted with energy. His eager and watchful eyes beheld the dawning light of a better day, and his exulting soul gave thanks to God that deliverance was at hand. It was soon to be seen how rash it was in James to mock the spirit of his time, and how dangerous in Charles to resist it. Under Cromwell the world was to be taught the power of new ideas, and under William to see their triumph. The excesses of popular enthusiasm were to react, indeed, in favor of oppression, but oppression was not long to confine the spirit over which it had gained a victory. It was to burst out again with less wildness, but more power, and mocking despotism with gloomy imprecations, was to retreat forever to funereal shades.

It now remains for us to present, briefly, the struggles of the Puritans for the last great blessing of the Reformation—*religious toleration*. That was the grand idea which inflamed their souls. They commenced where Cranmer and Ridley ended, and attempted what was as odious to Elizabeth, as the reformation of Edward was hateful to the pope. The great object for which they contended was not the removal of papal impostures, for these had been long ago exposed ; nor was it for the establishment of the Genevan creed, for this was as cordially embraced by Cranmer as it was hated by Bancroft. The Puritans, indeed, considered the pope as Antichrist, and abhorred the whole ritual of the service, and all the paraphernalia of the beast. Nor can it be denied that they viewed the reformation

as incomplete, so long as there was a cathedral service and an order of bishops. It is true, also, that they abominated dancing and scenic performances, and did not hold in much reverence either light literature, or golden trinkets, or frivolous amusements. They were, perhaps, ascetic, and sometimes wore rather long faces, put on ungraceful dresses, and even spoke through their noses. But with all their peculiarities, and with all their hatred of every thing which reminded them of Rome, it was religious toleration at which they aimed, and which chiefly called forth their energies. They were as much opposed to the Procrustean obstinacy and dogmatic intolerance of the Scotch Presbyterians, as they were to the persecuting bigotry of the English hierarchy. They claimed exemption alike from the trammels of courts, of prelates, and of synods. And when their principles were fully developed, they insisted on entire independency—on the right of each congregation to govern itself, and the exemption of an excommunicated brother from the severity of penal laws.

It is true, the Puritans did not exercise that perfect toleration which they claimed. But they advanced and defended the *idea*. And in this they went far beyond the preceding reformers. Cromwell, who theoretically favored the principle, was as much beyond Elizabeth as she was beyond the pope, and Milton as superior to Cecil, as he was to Sir Thomas Moore. Baxter was as far removed from Cranmer, as he from St. Dunstan or St. Dominic. It is something, if, in an age of persecution, the Puritans should have advanced the idea of toleration. What if they did not fully exercise it? When has it been exhibited in all of its celestial benignity? Intolerance is odious; but who is free from it? who ever has been free from it? The whole history of society is the history of its existence, and to it nearly all persecution can be traced, from the stoning of Stephen to the burning of Anne Askew. And we make these remarks, because, in considering the persecution which disgraced the reformers, we are apt to forget the spirit of the times, and the natural intolerance of the human soul. Nor do we wish to allude to persecution, unless to illustrate either the genius of a darker age, or to show unnatural cruelty. We may palliate the bigotry of Parker and Whitgift, "the Puritan hatred of Quakers and Baptists," and even the burning of witches by Sir Matthew Hale. But we should do violence to our feelings, and

to charity itself, were we to attempt the like extenuation of the barbarities of the "gluttonous" Bonner, or the cruelties of the "drivelling" Laud—"par nobile fratrū."

The Puritan party arose, like all great parties in the world, from small beginnings, and, at first, for the attainment of trivial ends. Difficulties about a clerical dress led gradually to the advocacy of simpler forms of worship, stricter rules of life, more democratic principles in government, and more definite articles of faith. In their efforts to introduce what they considered a closer resemblance to primitive Christianity, the Puritans were molested. Persecution led to resistance, and resistance to liberty. The contest was interesting even in reference to reform. It was sublime when a nation arose in defence of the natural rights of mankind. It was not to abolish the square cap, or the surplice, or the episcopal order itself, that the non-conformists were aroused to resistance, but for liberty. John Hampden refused to pay the tax of sixteen shillings, on precisely similar grounds to the American patriots of the Revolution, not because it was *burdensome*, but because it was *unlawful*.

The toleration act of Elizabeth would have excited but little opposition in the time of Henry. But society had advanced since his reign. The refugees who had lived in Geneva, brought with them into England the free and revolutionary spirit of the Swiss. They loved Calvin's doctrines ardently, but they loved freedom more. And so resolute were they in their claims, that they appeared unquiet and disorganizing. The authorities would not permit the great master-spirit among them to remain in England. Knox had to seek refuge in Scotland. He had, moreover, laughed at the idea of a woman's supremacy in religion, and Elizabeth never forgave him.

The spirit and doctrines of the returned exiles were speedily communicated to their countrymen. The Saxon blood has ever boiled in view of injustice. The Lollards had ever defended the essential principles of the Puritans. They believed, that to force men to a set form of prayer was against the liberty of the gospel. Any one must perceive that the legislation of the queen infringed on this liberty, and swept away all the rights of conscience.

Parker, when elevated to the see of Canterbury, used all his power to enforce uniformity. He imprisoned and fined the rebellious. Multitudes of ministers were ejected from their livings, and driven from ministerial employments. Even many

churches were shut up for lack of ministers, an evil which was deplored by Cecil more than by the queen, who almost thought that half a dozen clergymen were enough for the kingdom. Not only were the nonconformists forbidden to assemble together for religious service, in their own way, but required to attend the churches of the establishment when they maintained that many things in their service were against their consciences. Those who refused to go to church regularly, were subjected to heavy penalties. The common people, who could not afford to pay twenty pounds, had nothing to expect but to rot in jails, where many languished and died.

At last, the Puritans, disgusted and irritated, resolved to separate and set up the Genevan service book, and to abstain from frequenting the churches of the establishment. The lines were drawn, the separation became wider and wider every day. Then they complained that the bishops affected to be a superior order to presbyters. They disliked their temporal dignities, and their engagement with secular affairs. They disapproved of the holy-days of the church, and the promiscuous access of all to the Lord's Supper. Above all, they detested the high commission court, which the queen had established to try ecclesiastical offences.

It would be useless to allude to the numerous instances of persecution, which, under the direction of this hated court, disgraced the government of Elizabeth. One example is enough, and this is quoted from Neal. A poor minister wrote thus to the Rt. Rev. Father in God, the Bishop of London:—“ My Lord, I am cast into prison by your order, and for a matter which, about seven years ago, was slanderously raised against me. I was, by course of law, acquitted; and the Lord God doth know I was and am falsely accused. I have been extremely sick in prison, and the physicians say that its infections will be dangerous. I have a wife and five children, all in lamentable case, in consequence of my imprisonment. If you have no compassion on me, yet take pity on them. I crave no more than to be bailed; and, if I am found guilty of breach of law, let me have extremity without mercy.” In view of the inquisitorial character of the high commission court, Cecil himself was shocked, and wrote to the primate in the following language: “ I have read over your twenty-four articles; and I find them so curiously penned, that I think the inquisition of Spain used not so many questions to entrap their priests.” But

Whitgift thought differently. "If," said he to one of the ejected ministers, "you do not subscribe to the book of Common Prayer, you do, in effect, say that there is no service of God in the land. If you do not subscribe to the book of Ordination, then our calling is made unlawful, and we have no ministry in England. If you do not subscribe to the Thirty-nine Articles, then you deny true doctrines to be established among us." But the Nonconformists did not object to subscribe to these articles on doctrinal grounds, for they were framed on Calvinistic principles. Moreover, they themselves attempted to secure uniformity, the standard of which were the decrees of the provincial synods.

Until near the close of the reign of Elizabeth, the controversy had been chiefly about habits and ceremonies, and church government, but then it took a new form, and began to be about doctrinal points. Both parties had before united in sustaining the Genevan creed.

There now was seen a party that was for overturning the doctrines of Calvin in regard to predestination, perseverance, free-will, and the extent of our Saviour's redemption, and which can be traced to the influence of the celebrated Arminius of Leyden. Dr. Bond, too, about this time, published his famous book about the better observance of the Sabbath, with whose views the Puritans sympathized. This was a time of unparalleled religious excitement in England, and to which may be dated the strict morality of the Puritans, who believed that the true power of the Cross was seldom felt, unless the laws of Sinai were also spiritually obeyed.

And, according to Neal and Brooks, it was not until this period that the bishops were divided off from the other clergy, and the *jure divino* principle established. Before this time the English prelates had acknowledged the validity of Presbyterial ordination. But now they set up claims as high as the pope himself, and maintained that no man had a right to preach the gospel, or baptize a child, or bury the dead, unless he could trace his succession to some one of the apostles. It was these old papal claims that shocked and irritated the Puritans more than any thing else,—to see Catholicism revived under a Protestant name, and men fighting under the standard of the man of sin, with the names of Luther and Cranmer emblazoned on its folds. "They were no enemies to the name, nor the function of bishop, provided he was no more than president of a college of presbyters. Nor did they object to prescribed forms in

prayer, provided liberty was granted to make use of a prayer of their own, before or after sermon. Nor had they any aversion to any habits which were not derived from popery." They, themselves, generally wore the black gown, cassock and bands, which have now, except in some metropolitan pulpits, gone out of fashion.

Such is a brief summary of the rise and progress of the Puritans during the reign of Elizabeth. They were chiefly Presbyterians. The Independents did not become powerful until the next reign.

And this reign, when the "Solomon of the age" held the sceptre, was among the most disastrous in English history,—disgraced by the loss of the Palatinate and the elevation of Villiers, the infamous Duke of Buckingham—a reign almost rendered memorable by the glory and the shame of Bacon. The character of James is fully described in a single sentence of Macauley—"a witty, well-read scholar who disputed and harangued, and a nervous, drivelling idiot who acted."

On his accession, all parties presented their petitions, all were promised relief, and all were cheated and deceived. The royal pedant's treatment of the famous millenary petition of the Puritans, at the conference at Hampton Court, is a sample of the way this rising party was insulted and mocked. "Well, Doctor," said the king to Reynolds, after he had vainly endeavored, for three days, to beat logic and reason into the heads of the assembled dignitaries, "have you any thing more to say?" Upon his reply in the negative, his majesty, with that mingled levity and insolence which characterized the whole house of Stuart, replied, "that had they thus disputed in a college where he had been moderator, he would have had them fetched up, and the rod applied to — ; that he would have them conform, or he would hurry them out of the land ; that he would have one doctrine in faith and ceremony ; that he found the Puritans aiming at a Scotch Presbytery, which agreed with monarchy as God and the Devil ; that Jack and Tom and Will and Dick would be censuring him and his council at their pleasure ; that if, seven years hence, he became fat and pursy, with his windpipe stopped up, he might hearken unto them ; but, so long as he had the power, he would enforce his supremacy." Then, with the exclamation, "no bishop, no king," he dismissed the assembly, upon which Bishop Bancroft fell on his knees, and gave thanks to Almighty God, that he had, in his singular

mercy, "given the nation such a king as had not been since the time of Christ," while Archbishop Whitgift exclaimed, in raptures, "that he was verily persuaded the King spoke by the Spirit of God!"

What had the Puritans to expect, after the logic of such a Solomon, but persecution and disaster? The servile Bancroft, being soon elevated to the primacy, swelled the high commission court into a monstrous grievance, defended the divine right of episcopacy, and preached the doctrine of passive obedience, and even declared, through his vicar general, that the king was not bound by the laws, or his coronation oath. He persecuted all who did not agree to the Arminian creed, and even those who enforced doctrines contained in the thirty-nine articles. No person, but a bishop or a dean, was permitted to discourse on predestination, election, reprobation, efficacy or universality of God's grace. And even the king would hear no doctrines except those which he had himself condemned at the synod of Dort; nor was there any chance to secure his favor, unless one preached up his absolute power, and spoke favorably of popery.

The persecutions of the Puritans, never before so severe, drove them to Holland and to America. The Brownists established a congregation at Leyden, under the excellent Robinson, on a most liberal basis, part of which congregation formed subsequently the colony of Plymouth, and laid the foundation of a new republic.

But despised as were the Puritans, during the reign of James, they constantly increased. Every sentence of the star chamber or high commission court called forth popular indignation, and fanned those fires which were soon to burst forth and blaze to heaven. The volcano, over whose fearful brink the royal family, and the haughty hierarchy were standing, was already sending forth, in rumbling and frightful noises, the certain indications of approaching convulsions.

But the king was permitted to end his days in peace. The storm burst upon the head of his son,—more decent than his father in private life, who was degraded by the royal vices of drunkenness, lying, and licentiousness. But, like all his odious family, he was insincere in his professions, tyrannical in his policy, unyielding in all the great crises of his reign, and blind to the spirit of the nation, and of the times.

His impolitic and repeated dissolution of his parliaments, his unlawful attempts to rule without them, his constant encroach-

ments on the liberties of his subjects, his patronage of Laud and Strafford, added to the Irish Rebellion, and the premature efforts to impose a liturgy on the Scotch, hastened the crisis which was consummated on the seizure of the parliamentary orators. We will not dwell on the events of that revolutionary time—how Laud drove the Puritans from the country; how the king made blunder after blunder, and blunders which were worse than crimes; how, at length, the parliament was arrayed against the throne; how it seized the reins of government; how it abolished the star chamber, the high commission court, the order of bishops, and the ceremonial of a renovated Romanism; how it formed an union with the Scottish nation, raised an army, and executed the king. All know how Pimm and Hampden thundered in the House of Commons; how Strafford was attainted for acts which he had executed by order of his sovereign, and Laud beheaded to satisfy the vengeance of the Scotch; how the Presbyterians attempted, in their turn, to enforce uniformity; how the Independents rebelled; how Cromwell rose to power, and overturned the throne. We shall ever admire the heroism, and deplore the untimely death of Hampden—the only man in the nation that could have saved it—the Washington of his age, in the prudence of his counsels, the energy of his movements, and the magnanimity of his soul. We even pity the royal martyr, while we detest his policy. We gaze with wonder on the rising fortunes of Cromwell, and exalt his matchless abilities, while we neither defend his usurpation, nor palliate his crimes—if his cruelties in war, especially in Ireland, may be so considered. We admire his courage as much as we hate his cant; and rejoice in his government, while we condemn the acts by which it was administered. His policy, though vigorous, was pursued with moderation. His piety was sincere, though sullied by duplicity, and his patriotism unquestioned, though stained by ambition. If we cannot conceal the blemishes in his public career, we must yet admit the virtues of his private life. Nor can it be denied that his policy was enlarged, and his administration able. He gave to England more liberty than was ever before enjoyed, raised the great men of his age to power, made his country prosperous at home and respected abroad, and shed around his throne, the glory of a patriotic warrior, and the benignant light of a Christian ruler.

Until the civil commotions that succeeded the death of Charles, the great religious conflict in England had been be-

tween the established church and the Puritans. But when the hierarchy was suppressed, when Strafford and Laud were executed, when the king was a prisoner, and the parliament supreme, the warfare raged between the Presbyterians and those who sought still greater liberty. As the whole interest in the religious history of the times hangs on the contentions of these two parties, we will, for a moment, glance at the principles they defended.

The Presbyterian party, which embraced the Scottish nation, most of the nobility and gentry that adhered to the parliamentary side, the dissenting clergy of rank, and a large proportion of the citizens of London, was not behindhand with the Episcopacy, in hatred of sects, and even of a free press. The trammels which the Presbyterians, while in power, imposed on the press, drew out John Milton in his famous tract on the liberty of unlicensed printing. This party had its models of worship, and avowed the divine origin of its government. It looked upon schism as the parent of heresy and licentiousness, insisted on uniformity, and claimed the use of the secular sword, to punish schismatics and heretics. It stood in awe of the army, and preferred the royal authority, when restrained, to the government of Cromwell. But the model of its worship was Geneva, its creed orthodox, its morality severe, and its piety elevated.

The other party embraced all the other dissenting sects, and the head of which were the Independents. They wished not only the total abolition of prelacy, but of synods and presbyteries. They believed that every congregation was a distinct and independent church, and had the right to elect its own pastor. They preferred a multitude of churches, with diverse and even heretical sentiments, to the idea of exterminating error by penal laws. They were inflexibly bent on not submitting to those who sought to bind the conscience in secular chains. They rejected all spiritual courts, claimed the right of each congregation to govern itself, and maintained that the Scriptures were the only perfect rule of faith and practice. In politics they wished a total overthrow of monarchy, aristocracy, and episcopacy, and were averse to any peace which should not secure toleration.

It must be seen, that between the Presbyterians and Independents of that age there could be no lasting alliance. They indeed united to suppress the common foe, and then they turned

their arms against each other. The army, with Cromwell at its head, had no objection that Presbyterianism should become the national religion, but insisted on the free toleration of all their countless doctrines, and resolved not to lay down their arms until it was secure. To effect this, "they first treated with the king, and, when they suspected he was not dealing fairly with them, they made proposals to the parliament; but when they found the Presbyterians as averse to toleration as the Episcopalianists, they were disappointed and irritated. Then they seized his majesty's person a second time, purged the House of Commons, blew up the constitution, and buried king, parliament, and Presbyterians in its ruins. This was not their original intention, nor the result of their principles, but the effect of violence, resulting from despair."

Such is the statement of Neal, who perhaps was too favorable to the Independent party. Still we acknowledge the good which the Presbyterians did for England, under whose auspices the famous assembly of divines was convened at Westminster, and the universities filled with learned and pious professors.

If toleration is one of the greatest blessings of the Reformation, then we cannot look upon it as complete until the Independents came into power. It was the glory of Oliver Cromwell to grant a greater degree of religious liberty than has ever been since enjoyed in England. He did not give perfect toleration. It was not extended to the Catholics nor the Quakers. And here he erred, and was not true to his own principles. But he regarded the essential principle of Romanism as persecuting and intolerant, and opposed the Catholics, as some do now, on the principle of self-defence. The Quakers he detested, and had some reason for his antipathy, since they disturbed his government, and interfered with the religious rights of others. The followers of George Fox afterwards defended the true idea of liberty, but, in the time of Cromwell, they were noisy and agrarian, fanatical, and even blasphemous. They went into public meetings, and disturbed them by calling the clergy dumb dogs and lying prophets. Of all the savage denunciators in ancient or modern times, Pagan, Jewish, or Roman, the impostor Muggleton had the most unceremonious way of sending people to perdition. In a letter to the Quakers of York, he says, "These words are sin against the Holy Ghost, and since God hath chosen me, on earth, judge of blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, therefore, in obedience to my commis-

sion from the true God, I do pronounce on all those twenty-six persons, whose names are above written, cursed and damned to all eternity." This was the inspiration of the "inner light," with a vengeance. Such blasphemy and impudence ought to have been punished with both pillory and imprisonment. Such people as the Ranters, and Familists, and Quakers of the time, who rejected all constraint whatsoever, and indulged in the wildest excesses of democratic fanaticism, would have tried the patience even of a milder man than the protector. And, after all, perhaps, the statute which he enacted was the best for the times that could have been made. Compared with the most indulgent acts of the kings of England, from William I. to William III., it was liberty itself. It runs thus: "All who profess faith in God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, and do acknowledge the Scriptures as the revealed will of God, though in other things they may differ from the public profession, shall not be compelled from their profession, and shall be protected in the exercise of their religion, provided they abuse not their liberty to the civil injury of others, or the disturbance of the public peace, and provided that this liberty do not extend to popery or prelacy, or to the countenance of horrid blasphemies. And those ministers who agree with the public profession of faith, though they may differ in matters of worship and discipline, shall not only have protection in their churches, but shall be deemed fit and capable of trust, promotion, and employment in the public service."

This was the charter of liberty which Cromwell granted, and which was more liberal than England has since enjoyed. It was an error in the protector, that it was not granted to all, and the refusal to extend it to the Papists and Quakers, was a violation of the great principles of Protestantism, and it was an assumption of the very principles of Catholicism itself. It was Satan casting out Satan. In the conflict of principles, there are no worldly weapons to be used—no penal laws—no persecution. And any resort to carnal warfare, will certainly ensure defeat, inasmuch as it is running races with the devil on his own ground.

The Restoration was a victory over both the Independents and the general swarm of sectaries which unparalleled religious excitement had encouraged. Charles did not immediately kindle the old fires, because undisguised retaliation would not have been decent. But it was impossible to forget the past. At

first, there was an effort to unite all parties,—an attempt which was to be expected from a Gallio in religion, and a Gallienus in the knowledge of human nature. So soon as that attempt had proved a failure, the old policy of the kings of England was resorted to. Another act of uniformity was passed. Charles could think of no better method of settling the religious affairs of his kingdom, even in view of the melancholy experiments of his father. The old hierarchy was restored, and the old penal laws enforced. And, inasmuch as the morals and habits of the people in this reign were too strict, the number of holydays was increased. The Common Prayer Book became the standard of faith and worship. Persecution recommenced her reign. During the government of Charles II., four thousand Nonconformists perished in prison, and sixty thousand families were ruined. So great was the severity of the times, and the arbitrary proceedings of justice, that many were afraid to pray in their families, or even to ask a blessing at table, if four or five of their neighbors were present. Even women were persecuted for attending social religious meetings.

Nor was there seen the spirit of resistance. The people quietly acquiesced in these arbitrary proceedings, and tamely submitted to indignities which once would have roused the whole nation to frenzy. The truth is, that a great torpor had succeeded this great awakening. All classes sought repose—“to be soothed”—and all yielded to the vices of the times. The wars of Cromwell were followed by the natural consequences of all wars—drunkenness, debauchery, licentiousness, prodigality, levity, and infidelity. The deep earnestness of a religious age was succeeded by apathy and indifference; and impassioned monitors of the past, and the seven interpreters of the ancient revelation, and the keen controversialists of a period rich, beyond comparison, in theological inquiry, gave place to consecrated buffoons, who had no sympathy with freedom, nor learning, nor religion. It is true, there were exceptions among the sleek divines of the re-established church. Those who had passed through seven experiences, and were trained under a Puritan regime, still adorned the establishment. Leighton, whose pious father had been whipped at the pillory for nonconformity, and Burnet, the historian of the Reformation, and Tillotson, and Stillingfleet, and some others, were lights amid the darkness, and sincerely deplored the disgraces of the times. Jeremy Taylor wrote a treatise in defence of toleration, and, like another Irish

bishop of our day, who has distinguished himself by opposition to the dark ages in the form of Puseyism, was an illustrious ornament of a degenerate church ;—a man of heavenly mind and loving heart, of liberal feeling and soaring eloquence, learned without pedantry, and holy without asceticism.

Charles II. was not murdered, nor driven from his kingdom ; but his last days were melancholy, and his last hours heathenish. He finished his profligate life by recommending to his brother his mistress, and illegitimate children, without the least penitence for his crimes and follies, and without saying a word about his queen, his country, his friends, his debts, or his future hopes. As the Romans said of Leo X., whom they could not forgive for leaving behind so many debts, and dying without the sacraments, so might the English have said of their libertine and infidel king, “he glided in like a fox, he ruled like a lion, and he died like a dog.” Dissimulation and buffoonery were his greatest talents. He was equally false to friends and enemies, and consistent in nothing but levity and libertinism.

James II., who succeeded him, was not quite so profligate, but was more odious to the nation,—a man as insincere as Charles, as bigoted as Mary, and as cruel as Henry VIII. He completes the catalogue of the Stuart princes. Every one knows how deceitful were his promises, how severe were his enactments, and how disastrous was his policy. He was a Romanist at heart, and the nation found it out. They bore the inhuman butcheries of Jeffries, but resented the arrest of the ten protestant bishops. James, from all the instructive lessons of the past, seemed to have learned no wisdom, and to have derived no advantage. His plans were as unsuccessful as his reign was inglorious, and both will ever be spoken of with a contempt only equalled by detestation. Of all his blunders and cruelties, his patronage of Jeffries and Kirk, “two tigers who delighted in blood,” was the most odious and revolting. It is said that the judge, who generally was drunk, and always insolent, hanged, in all, six hundred persons. His cruelty to Baxter was the most unpardonable and unreasonable,—one of the brightest ornaments of the sacred literature of his country; a man who had refused a bishopric, and had retired to Kidderminster, that he might discharge his humble duties in peace, and enjoy, unmolested, the consolations of his religion. And yet this eminent and inoffensive saint and scholar, in the very fulness of his fame and usefulness, was ejected from his humble parish, imprisoned in the foulest jails, and condemned to seek a precarious

support in the most unknown retreats which misery could find. But then, “a childless widower, groaning under the agonies of bodily pain, and reduced to the greatest penury,” did he, like his blind contemporary, who,

Far above the Aonian mount, pursued  
Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme,

possess his soul in patience, tranquil in the review of a laborious life, during which he had executed more than Herculean tasks, and happy in the prospect of that mansion of peace where the wicked cease from troubling and the weary are at rest.

But Baxter suffered scarcely less than thousands of others who, with him, had remained steadfast to principle and patient under affliction. The day was hastening when violent persecution for religion was to end, and the people to be unbound,—when the mocking Philistines, who filled the hierachal livings of the establishment, and surrounded the court, should no longer despise the captive Samson, and make sport of his blinded eyes. Alas! alas! they little dreamed of his renovated strength—that his locks had again grown long, and that he stood between the mighty pillars which sustained the throne. The spirit of liberty was not yet extinguished. The blood of Sydney and Russell was not shed in vain. The scaffold with which it was dyed, became only a sacred emblem of freedom, and rallied around it new avengers of crime. And, indeed, the spirit of religious independence never will die. “Human agency is insufficient to extinguish it. Oceans may overwhelm it. Mountains may press it down. But, like the earth’s central fires, its own violent and unconquerable force will heave both ocean and land; and, some time or other, and in some place or other, the volcano will burst forth and blaze to heaven.”

Even the church of England at length opened her lethargic eyes, and saw that she herself had been laboring for her own destruction. She found that she had been paving the way for undisguised Romanism, by encouraging the doctrine of passive obedience. Churchmen retracted their errors, and united with dissenters in calling over to England the Protestant Prince of Orange, who easily effected the bloodless revolution of 1688.

The toleration act of William and Mary gave to the dissenters the privilege for which they had long contended, of worshipping God according to the dictates of their consciences, and was, moreover, the first great step which the nation made toward liberty since the declaration of Magna Charta. It not only exempted from pun-

ishment, but rendered the dissenting worship innocent and lawful. It closed the long struggles of one hundred and fifty years for religious toleration. "With the accession of William III. despotism drew its last breath, royal prerogative bowed before the voice of the people, and religious liberty commenced its reign."

And yet there still remained some claims of power over conscience, which were not entirely removed, and religious toleration was granted as a *favor*, rather than bestowed as a *right*. But, inasmuch as this favor was all that was insisted on, we should not complain that no more was conceded. The dissenters obtained what they fought for. They had their requests. Will their descendants be contented with the boon which was granted one hundred and fifty years ago? Are there no more victories to be gained over despotism? Is the old Saxon earnestness of the people extinct? Is it in accordance with progress or Providence that old lies shall last forever? How long shall church and state be united in such a country as England? Will such a nation as the English be much longer submissive to the old invention of Constantine and Paganism?

In tracing the gradual steps by which the English arrived to an imperfect toleration, many allusions have been made to the Puritans. No wonder if, amid that school of sorrow through which they passed, they should have evinced traits with which we have no sympathy. Their faults and peculiarities are too well known to be enlarged on in an essay like this. They were not perfect. But it is something that they, of all their countrymen, in an age of despotism and darkness, should have caught glimpses of truth, and still more, should have been faithful to it. All admit, even Hume, that they were the most consistent friends of liberty, and religion, and learning, in the nation. *They* had faith, which their antagonists *had not*, in their principles and in themselves. Nor could disappointment weaken this faith, nor sorrow destroy it. The principles which they valued they were anxious to transmit to their children. Nor did they rest until they had secured what they prized above country, and comfort, and friends. "Vestigia nulla retrorsum," was the motto of their first and noblest leader, and ought to be of their latest posterity, and of all men contending for such noble principles as liberty of conscience, and the rights of private judgment. These principles may be mockery in the mouths of those who sympathize with Romanism and the dark ages,—of men who think that liberty and equality are nothing but vulgar Protestant evils,

and that those old times of superstition and ignorance, when every thing the lords temporal commanded was obeyed, and every thing the lords spiritual said was believed, were really "ages of faith and of highest grace to man!" But these principles, for which the Puritans contended, have, thus far, proved the soul of progress, and of every thing which gives grandeur to the individual man. It was the defence of these which chiefly made the Puritans illustrious, and which we are never to lose sight of in the estimation of their character. *They* had faith in progress, and faith in the gospel. Their humanity, their popular sympathies, were equal to their piety and learning. *They* never sneered at the people. Without such enlarged ideas, as *they* enforced, man can never rise, and freedom can never be perpetuated. It is taking a narrow view of these reformers,—it is doing them great injustice to overlook their loyalty to conscience, and their love of freedom, and their faith in progress, to dwell on their vices or follies. He who cannot see *these things*, in their struggles and character, has, we are persuaded, no appreciation of what is most exalted in human nature, and most sublime in the history of the human race.

---

## ARTICLE IV.

## THE RELIGION OF EXPERIENCE, AND THAT OF IMITATION.

By Rev. George B. Cheever, of the Allen-Street Presbyterian Church, N. Y.

WE have happened upon an age, in which there is a great resurrection and life of old, dead, exploded errors. These errors, in this new life, are beginning to stalk about so proud and populous, that in some quarters truth retires and is hidden, or is even stricken down in the streets and churches. Error puts on the semblance of truth, and religion itself, in a form of mere earthly aggrandizement, becomes one enormous, despotic, consolidated lie.

The difference between the religion of experience and that of imitation, is a theme which at this crisis is occupying many minds;—nor is this wonderful, for it is all the difference between a missionary piety, and a piety of pride, intolerance, and self-indulgence. In the introduction of our subject, we shall, in few words, designate the two.

The world is to be saved, if saved at all, by the religion of Experience, and not that of Imitation. The religion of imitation is that of forms; the religion of experience is that of realities. The religion of imitation is *Churchianity*; the religion of experience is *Christianity*. The religion of imitation, except when it oppresses, is that of profound quiet and weakness; the religion of experience is that of conflict and power.

Imitation will do for calm times, and gorgeous forms and rites, and magnificent cathedrals; but experience is needed in the midst of danger, in dens and caves of the earth, or to support the bare simplicity of the gospel. Imitation may be a persecuting religion, experience alone can be a suffering one. Imitation goes to books, schools, forms, names, institutes; experience to God. Imitation takes Anselm, Bernard, Calvin, Edwards, Brainard, Emmons, any thing, every thing, but God's word. Experience goes to the living truth, and drinks into it. Imitation has the semblance of experience, but not its essence or its power. Imitation takes at second-hand what experience originates. Imitation studies systems, and reads the Bible to prove them. Experience studies the Bible, and reads human systems for illustration. Imitation is not a missionary spirit; experience is. Imitation may fill the world with the forms of piety, and with most of its refining influences. You may bring men away, in great measure, from their vices, and you may refine their manners, and yet bring them no nearer to Christ. And here I am constrained to remark, that one of our greatest dangers in the Missionary enterprise lies in the fact, that so much, in reality, may be done without the religion of experience, the co-operation of the Holy Spirit. The world might be filled with a nominal Christianity, yea, an evangelical Christianity, and the Spirit of God have very little to do with it. There might be all the ameliorating influences of Christianity, except that of real conversion, following in the train of our efforts in every part of the world, and even the instrumentality of a prayerless church might be sufficient for such an evangelization. The dome of some gorgeous and heartless establishment, with

all its decency and refinement, might be let down to cover every form of idolatry and heathenism, and to bring all tribes and communities of the gentile world in obedience to its rubrics and beneath its power. But what then would be gained? Why, this spiritual quackery on a vast scale, this healing of the world's hurts slightly, would only put off to a more distant period the real prevalence of Christ's kingdom, and render a thousand times more difficult the real redemption of mankind from sin.

Now, it is to be feared that the religious characteristic of this age, compared with some other ages, is that of imitation rather than experience. This, in some respects, is the natural course of things. It is so, intellectually. An age of eminently original genius is ordinarily succeeded by an imitative age; or, if not imitative, the contrast between the splendor of genius, and the poverty of mere talent, makes it appear such. For example, the Elizabethian age in England, the age of Shakspere, Milton, and Bacon, was an age of originality and power; the age of Queen Anne afterwards was an age of comparative imitation and weakness. These two ages, or something near them, may also be taken as corresponding examples of the religion of experience and that of imitation. The presence and agency of God's spirit, and the power of God's word, marked the one; that of human morality, speculation, and understanding, the other. Bunyan and Baxter, and we may add Leighton, may stand to personify the one; Tillotson and Locke may be the interpreters of the other. The seventeenth century, both in literature and religion, may, in a general comparison with our century, be said to stand in the contrast of an age of experience with an age of imitation.

For this inferiority of one age to another, there may be natural inevitable causes in respect to the development of mind and genius, but in religious things we are sure it ought not to be so. An age of religious imitation marks a period of departure from God; this is undeniable. An age cannot be destitute of deep and original religious experience, if it enjoy the word of God, and the ordinances of religion, without a great falling off from duty, and a great betrayal of its own interests. Yet it is to be feared, all things taken together, that the religion of this age is a religion of imitation, rather than experience; a religion, the character of which, on the whole, is superficiality rather than profound originality and power. Into this prevailing habitude every individual new-comer is baptized; every religionist grows

up in this atmosphere ; forms his habits, active and passive, meditative and operative, inward and external, beneath it. The form of piety in the New Testament is not the object of general vision, but the form of piety in the Church ; and through this medium the characteristics of the gospel are seen as through an obscuring haze, and not in their own clear, definite, celestial shape. It is as if we should contemplate the heavens, and study astronomy in the reflection thrown into the bosom of a mountain lake. Indeed, if the lake be clear and pellucid, seen in a still night, you may read the heavens therein ; but if the wind ruffle its surface ever so little, or if any impurity obscure the crystal clearness of its waters, you can never have the image of the truth. The stars will seem double and dim, the planets will twinkle and lose their lustre, and you would not give much for the best astronomical system that ages of investigation could produce from such a study. So we contemplate the forms of religion, not in their native brightness, but in the obscurity of men's lives, in a dim, turbid reflection, in the troubled waters of a wordly piety. And this is just the error against which the Apostle warns us by the example of those who, "measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise." However pure may be the medium, if we have come into the habit of looking at the piety of the gospel through it, or rather at the reflection of the gospel in it, we soon lose the sense of its native power and glory.

Now all this produces a puny, sickly, stunted, dwarf-like, superstitious piety, instead of the free, noble, healthful, manly growth of the Scriptures. Instead of a piety that mounts up on wings as eagles, those wings are clipped, and the bird that should have soared even above the lightnings of the tempest into the pure empyrean, beats and soils its plumes against the bars of its prison. We know not if this age will ever awake to a sense of its departure from God, and of the degraded and imprisoned state of its piety ; but we are perfectly sure that this soiled, craven, doubting, plodding, care-worn, self-seeking form, in which religion goes about in our churches, is not the open, noble, trusting, singing, independent, angelic, self-forgetting creature of the Scriptures. "These things," said our blessed Saviour to his disciples, "have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full." We stand in amazement before the open door of heaven revealed in

these words by the Saviour to his people. There is a glory and a power, a beauty and a depth of blessedness in them, that we never see realized. And yet this is but one description of the piety of the New Testament ; this is the angelic form of that religion which the Apostles believed was to fill the world. This experience of Christ's own joy is the legitimate product of Christ's own word in its native power and glory. And truly, if all believers possessed this experience, and lived by it and upon it, the radiancy of such piety *would* fill the world. This, we say, is the power of God's word ; this is its essential nature. If we do but note its elements in the most careless manner, we shall find this to be the case. They are such, that no man can bring his soul under the power of them, and not experience this disenenthralment and transfiguration of his being. Never did our Saviour mean that his joy should remain in his disciples in any other way, than by the words which he spake unto them, and would still speak, remaining in them. And this, indeed, is what he said : "if ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you." And this was to be the office of the Holy Ghost, the Comforter, to "teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you." We say again, this is the power of God's word, and this is the religion of experience ; but it is *not* the power of God's word with a soul which is not kept under it. It *is* the power of God's word, when its living truths are believed and realized ; and these truths are of such a nature, that it is not possible it should be otherwise.

I. Now, in dwelling upon some of the causes, which have tended to make the piety of this age an imitative piety, rather than a piety of experience and originality ; and therefore a self-indulgent, rather than a missionary piety ; we shall begin with the mention of this great evil, namely, the want of a vivid, abiding perception of, and a meditative pondering upon, the individual truths of the Scriptures. It is not the habit of this age to *live* in and upon God's word ; though at the same time this age knows more *about* the word of God, than any preceding age. Hence results inward weakness, even amidst great apparent knowledge. Hence, although the form may be perfect, the Spirit inhabits it not. Hence an inertness, like that which ensues on the breaking or partial interruption of a galvanic chain ; a paralysis, like that of the limbs, when there happens a disconnection between the spine and the extremities.

What we need is a new baptism from heaven in the faith which appreciates the power of divine truth, and sees and feels its reality. If we had this faith, we should be very different creatures. Any one of the great truths revealed in God's word, distinctly seen, and fully believed and appreciated, would change the whole character. It would possess the mind and enlist all the faculties. It would lift up the soul from the atmosphere of earth, to the atmosphere of heaven. Baptized into its power as a spiritual element, it would make us superior alike to the fear of man, and the allurements of the world; insensible to fatigue, and ready for perpetual effort. It would be received 'into our spiritual existence, a powerful, practical life, and not a mere barren speculation.

A belief of the truth that hundreds of millions of our fellow-beings are, generation after generation, sinking into endless ruin; and that God has placed in our hands the means of their salvation; an appreciation of this truth, with a spiritual vividness and power at all like that which dwelt in the soul of the apostles, would quite arrest and enchain the mind beneath its influence, so that a man would act with so much exhaustless energy for the redemption of his fellow-beings, that the world would well nigh deem him mad. And such madness would be true wisdom. Just so, a view of the glory of Christ, the holiness of God, the nature of sin, the shortness of time, the nearness of eternity, would in like manner govern and stamp the character, and make a man live like a superior being. These are the elements of faith, of prayer, of love, of solemnity, of power. And it is the blessed nature of these principles, their divine and indissoluble harmony and oneness, that a profound meditation upon any one, and a complete mastery of the mind by it, instead of disturbing the mind's balance, or diminishing its impression of the power and majesty of the others, does but set the soul in the centre, like an angel in the sun, and prepares it the better for the influence of the whole circle of divine truths. Men whose benevolence is confined to one thing, and who give to that an absorbing predominance, are sometimes designated as men of one idea. It were to be wished that the world were full of Christians with one idea. The cross of Christ is an idea. It is *the* idea, which possessed and governed the lives of the Apostles. It is the idea that ought to rule the world. When an earthly idea masters the mind, to the exclusion of every other, it produces insanity. In regard to heavenly

things, such madness is wise. Oh that we were all thus mad! When one of the elementary truths of the gospel thus masters the mind, it quite transfigures it with power and glory. It gives it the wings of a seraph, the freedom and swiftness of a celestial nature. It darkens this world; but it is only because it lets in heaven upon the soul, and shows, along with the value of the soul, the true insignificance of this world and its vanities.

Now, it seems quite manifest that the ordinary measure of religion in this age fails to put the soul under this experience of the power of God's word, this burning, life-giving experience. We repeat it, that we need a new baptism from heaven, such personal, experimental knowledge of the irresistible energy and efficacy of divine truth, and such inward love and joy in its possession, as shall make us feel that this is the only weapon, the only instrumentality we need, for that it will work in the whole world as effectually as it does in ourselves. It would make a new Reformation, should there be such a baptism. In this view, we hail the appearance of such works as have come to us of late from among the mountains of Switzerland, the proper place for the birth and reverberation of such a voice, the voice as of a kingly spirit throned among the hills,—the work of Gaußen, on the Inspiration of God's Word, and that noble work of D'Aubigne, on the History of the Reformation. And sure we are, that if, in the spirit of reliance on God's word, and with the intensity of a living experience of its individual truths, we should go forth as Luther; if the Christian Church should do this, then would that system of Antichrist, which has lived by the hiding, corruption, ignorance, and inexperience of God's word, die. The *spirit* of Romanism would die also, whatever shape of formalism it may inhabit. The new forms of Romanism would perish almost as soon as they should be born. The idolatry of forms could no more stand against the fire of the Spirit of God's Word, than the sere leaves and withered branches of the woods, in autumn, could stand before a forest conflagration.

It cannot be denied that we have been using the word of God *rather as an external lamp, than an inward fountain*; and hence so much knowledge of duty, but so little love and performance. We were very much struck with this remark, in that book on inspiration, to which we have referred; for there is nothing more certain, than that other men's experience at second-hand, in divine things, is lifeless. It is not what David Brainerd or Jonathan Edwards felt, that can constitute my power,

but what the Spirit of God teaches *me*, and makes *me* feel. Assuredly this is the grand reason why so much of the piety of this age is ineffectual. There are trees which remain standing in the midst of the forest, even after they are inwardly and completely rotten, solely by the strength and thickness of their bark ; and just so a strong envelope of forms, with the “ odor of sanctity ” gathered from some great names, may keep the Christian and the church in the position of life, long after the spirit of life has almost utterly departed. But no Christian can live and be efficient by leaning on any thing external for support.

To be powerful in religion, a Christian must be, in a most important sense, a self-made man ; his acquisitions must be original ; he can no more gird himself with the freshness and power of a living piety at second-hand, than a man could wield the miraculous energy of Paul or Peter, by looking at its exercise. He must have a personal baptism from God’s word. Its living truths, in their simplicity and burning power, have been darkened by our speculations ; and even in correct feeling we are deep in the empty channels of Christian experience worn by others, like men travelling in the dry bed of a mountain torrent, instead of being rapt onward, as in a burning chariot, on the path, in which, led and sustained by the Spirit of God, it might seem as if no being ever travelled before us.

And is the power of God’s word never to be thus realized ? Is there never an age coming, in which the glory of Christ’s religion shall be demonstrated ? Shall this reproach never be lifted from the Scriptures, that they boast a power, which the world has never seen exerted ? Is the earth coming into its millennium, and is this imperfect, crude, lamenting, uninventing, world-conforming piety, or this superstitious, domineering, intolerant piety of forms, to be all the realization of righteousness on earth ? Are we willing, if we will be honest, to have the piety of a regenerated world moulded by the type of our piety ? No ! we will not believe that all the rapturous descriptions of the Bible are thus to end in smoke ; we will not subscribe to the idea that such an imperfect Christianity is all that we can expect to spread, or to be spread through the world, or that we must be satisfied never to have a race, that shall rise to the stature of full-grown men in Christ Jesus. True it is, that the world has never yet seen such a race, or but for a little. True it is, that this glory lost its lustre in the obscurity of men’s passions, very soon after the death of Christ and his apostles, and



that generation after generation has gone by, and up to this time no race has fully risen to the apostolic standard. Nevertheless, we may remark that no age was ever more favorably placed for thus rising, than ours. It is one of the greatest glories of the missionary enterprise, that it promises to transfigure our piety, to save it from corruption, and to raise it to the image of the same mind which was in Christ Jesus. It may prove the chariots of Israel, and the horsemen thereof, if God's people will but throw themselves into it.

II. The second cause which we shall urge for the imitative cast of the piety of this age, is the prevalence of low and indistinct views of Divine inspiration. These, so far as they prevail, are like a tetter in the blood, or a very *tabes dorsalis* for the corruption and weakening of the vitality of our piety. The Apostle commands those who received the gospel as being indeed the very word of God, and not as the word of men. Now there are many who, professing to receive it as a revelation from God, do nevertheless receive it as the word of men. The idea of the Rationalists and the Unitarians is indeed too prevalent, that for us it is not *the* revelation direct from God, but only the *record* of that revelation. Now we had almost said that we would as soon trust in the Koran, as in such a book. Our religion is built upon the sand, if its support be merely the human record of a divine revelation. We cannot take the word of God at second-hand, any more than, as Christians, we can adopt our piety from others' experience. It is, as we have already intimated, the blessedness of our religion, that in every thing we are brought directly to God. And so, as in order to be powerful in religion the Christian must be perfectly original in his spiritual acquisitions, receiving them for himself directly from the Spirit of God, he must likewise feed upon the very words of God, and feel that he is doing so. It is no record of a revelation that can satisfy him, or energize his soul, but *the* revelation itself; it is no mere human description of the word of God by Isaiah or Paul, but the word of God itself, addressed to you and me as plainly, as definitely, as verbally, as to Isaiah or Paul. If a man abandons this ground, he abandons the citadel of his piety. He is no longer original, but imitative, and at second-hand in every thing. In divine things, the very nerves of his soul will be cut in sunder; and though he may have a religion that will comport well with peaceable and idle times and ceremonies, yet in stormy times, in convulsions about faith,

in conference with infidels, and in personal conflicts with Apollyon, he will find himself weak, irresolute, and defenceless, with neither fixed positions, nor the means of sustaining them.

It is one pestilent consequence of low views of inspiration, that philosophy, falsely so called, is let in to intermeddle with the Scriptures. A man who cannot stand upon the Bible, as in every part the very word of God, will not and can not have that deep, abiding faith, which is superior to the vicissitudes of merely human speculations. His bark will be driven about even in religious things, by the side winds of philosophy and science. He will be ready to submit a certain science to an uncertain; he will alter his views of divine revelation in accordance with the latest and most approved geological theory; and his views of divine doctrine will be modified by or dependent upon metaphysical reasonings. For a missionary piety, the most unqualified, unhesitating reliance on the word of God, is absolutely essential. In this the Reformers were greatly superior to us. They came out of a church which was all error, and they went direct to Christ and his truth, with a relish that made them drink deep into it. We hesitate not to say that their views of inspiration were higher than ours. They used the Scriptures inwardly; they took the medicine into the soul, to be healed by it, where we take it into the laboratory to analyze its ingredients, and test its purity. They laid it away in the heart; we put it into crucibles. Their characteristics were those of experience and wisdom; ours are those of knowledge and imitation.

It must be regarded as a special providence of God, that amidst all the despotism of Roman Catholic error, amidst all the concealment and ignorance of the Scriptures, the belief of mankind in their inspiration was preserved from being undermined by such a tide of Neology as hath since swept over the world, leaving the mud and spawn of infidelity so universal, that it will take time even to cleanse it from our most sacred things and recesses. Had that tide come before the birth of Luther, he would have had but very little power over men's minds, in appealing to the word of God. If the Papacy had added to all its other refuges of lies, not merely the withdrawal of the word of God from common perusal, but the denial of its infallibility, the instruction of the people in a Rationalistic view of its inspiration, a thousand Luthers might have appealed to it in vain. And in our day, if men go forth to the work of the world's conversion with low and loose views of the inspiration of the Scriptures,

they will be shorn of their power. A man whose theory of a divine inspiration admits the possibility of error, the possibility that some passages may be less the word of God than others, and that some other passages may not be the word of God at all, has no firm ground to stand upon. "The prophet that hath a dream, let him tell a dream; but he that bath my word, let him speak my word faithfully. What has the chaff to do with the wheat? saith the Lord. Is not my word like as a fire, saith the Lord; and like a hammer, that breaketh the rock in pieces?"

III. The third cause, which we shall allege for the imitative state of our piety, is a practical relinquishment of the principle that the Bible is the only and sufficient rule of faith and practice. There is an evil of this nature in our age, double. There is one party in religion making the church a mediator between God's word and the soul. Instead of Christ's words, "I am the vine, ye are the branches; abide in me, and let my words abide in you;" their language is, "The church is the vine; abide in the church, and let the words and ordinances of the church abide in you." This produces a religion of dependence on the church, and imitative on that side. It is imitation of the church, obedience to ceremony and tradition, the sacrifice of personal independence, not for the sake of principle, but form; it is humility for the sake of pride, humility not in the shape of gentleness and love to those beneath us, but of the worship of power, authority, and grandeur above us. This is the humility which the forms of a monarchy tend to generate, humility upwards, not downwards; the minding of high things, not the condescending to men of low estate. This is the humility of Popery, and of that form of Popery, which exists as Puseyism or High Churchism. It is humility to all above, but pride and arrogance to all beneath. It is self-worship disguised, this professed absorption into the church; it is self-enlarged, and expanded over a sect; "the temple of the Lord, the temple of the Lord, the temple of the Lord, are we." It is arrogance and pride indulged, and erected into a virtue. This is one of the greatest triumphs of error and sin, when it can be enshrined into a form of duty.

On the other side it is not so bad, but the same imitative tendency prevails: Men, for a rule of practice, if not of faith, look not so much to God's word, as to men. The garb of piety is worn, which is conformable to good usage. Christian society

is the mirror, in which men dress and undress their souls for God. In this case it is the gregarious tendency of human nature, the same principle that leads a flock of sheep straight over a stone wall on one another's heels into green pastures. Unfortunately in this case it does not lead into green pasture, but away from it. Society, society, says Madame de Staél, how it makes the heart hard and the mind frivolous! how it leads us to live for what men will say of us! This is a great evil, this living for what men will say of us, instead of what God has said *for* us; but it is greater in the church than in the world. It is surprising how powerfully men will silently sustain one another in practical error, and almost paralyze their own consciences and the word of God in so doing. "Although," says Lord Bacon, "our persons live in the view of heaven, yet our spirits are included in the caves of our own complexions and customs, which minister unto us infinite errors and vain opinions, if they be not recalled to examination."

IV. A fourth cause which we shall mention, though perhaps more strictly it is part of the third, is the habit of deference to human authority, and the study of theology by systems and names, instead of the Scriptures. Hence an inquisitorial tendency, and the putting of books of human origin as standards of opinion. One man makes a Procrustes' bed out of Locke on the Human Understanding; another out of Edwards on the Will. We think this would not be the case, if we lived more upon God's word. Nothing tends so much to produce a manly independence and a genuine gospel liberty of thought and feeling as a simple reliance upon God's word, and an unconditional submission to it. This habit of deference to human authority grew up in the pastures of Popery and Paganism. At one time men went mad with worship of Aristotle; then again of Plato; then of Duns Scotus and Thomas Aquinas; and neglect of God's word personally and individually has permitted the church of Christ in every age to have her Aristotles and Platos, her Dunses and Aquinases. We cannot but behold a proof of this tendency, this love of borrowed light, and this habitual reliance upon other things, rather than the word of God, even in our own republication of the admirable tomes of divinity and Christian experience in the seventeenth century. The movement, undoubtedly, is ominous of good, and not of evil; and it indicates the beginning of a better relish, as well as the poverty of our own stores. But we are also in danger, while pursuing the streams, of being led

away from the fountain, and of omitting the same enthusiastic love and study of the word of God experimentally, which knit up into so great stature the giants of a past theological age. We are very, very far from undervaluing the labors of learned men, or the treasures of thought and experience digged out of the mines of God's word by their holy and enthusiastic industry. But we do say, that if we neglect the same labors, because great men of a past age entered into them, and because, therefore, we may do without them ; if we take their treasures, and the treasures which they spread before their own age, to use, in our admiration, instead of digging those mines ourselves anew, for our own age, and for our own souls, then farewell to all originality and power; then will our religion continue to be a religion of imitation instead of experience. If this is to be the result, it were better that every tome of divinity, and every record of Christian experience, were burned as soon as it should see the light. In this view we admire the nobleness of Luther, when the pope's bull of excommunication was published, and they began to burn the Reformer's books. "Let them destroy my works," said he ; "I desire nothing better; for all I wanted was to lead Christians to the Bible, that they might afterwards throw away my writings. Great God! if we had but a right understanding of the Holy Scriptures, what need would there be of my books?" O how noble is this! How characteristic of a soul that had drunk deep for its own self into the Bible, and would have every other soul go and plunge into the same fountain of blessedness, and drink, and continue to drink, there and there only. We love Luther for this noble declaration. And sure we are that his works, fresh and powerful as they are, and the works of every other uninspired man, though you collect the whole circle of possible mental developments, between the genius of Baxter and that of Leighton, when compared with God's word, are but as winking tapers in the light of a noonday sun. And what should we think of the man who, if a set of gas-lights were hung up to burn in the streets at noonday, should go about endeavoring to walk by their light, or perpetually calling upon you to admire their glory, while he scarcely seems aware that the sun above him, like the very face of God, is shining with such splendor, as almost to put out those pale and ineffectual fires.

This being the case, on a comparison even of the richly spiritual divines of the seventeenth century with inspiration, how much

more with reference to those writers called the Christian Fathers, comprehending so wide and chaotic a gathering of spoils and opinions in what Milton calls the drag-net of antiquity. It would be difficult to depict the ineffable absurdity of sending back the Christians of this generation into the twilight<sup>14</sup> of Romish superstition and philosophy, to interpret Scripture by tradition from the Fathers. Often as we see this attempted exaltation of the early doctors of the church into the place of supremacy over our own faith and opinion as founded on the Scriptures, we think of Taylor's powerful and beautiful delineation of the contrast between those doctors after the time of Christ, and the Jewish prophets before him. "It must be acknowledged that the writers of the ancient dispensation were such as those should be, who were looking onward towards the bright day of gospel splendor; while the early Christian doctors were just such as one might well expect to find those, who were looking onward toward that deep night of superstition, which covered Europe during the middle ages. The dawn is seen to be gleaming upon the foreheads of the one class of writers, while a sullen gloom overshadows the brows of the other."

If these remarks apply with any justice to books of practical divinity, much more do they to systems and books of theoretical speculation. For the student to let these prevent him from drinking in his theology originally and for himself at God's word, or to drink at these first, and form his taste there, and mould his opinions, and then, under the influence of that taste, and by the light of those opinions, to go to the Bible, and study it more or less under a cloud of prejudice, or if not under prejudice, at least in the attitude of a systematic theologian, rather than as a child, a learner, a former of his own system from divine truth by the Spirit of God, is to deprive his soul of the blessed elements of freshness and original power; it is to keep him from ever knowing the power of God's word; it is to make his religion the religion of imitation, and not that of experience.

We shall here strengthen our positions by some profound remarks of Lord Bacon. "As for perfection or completeness in divinity," says he, "it is not to be sought; which makes this course of artificial divinity the more suspect. For he that will reduce a knowledge into an art, will make it round and uniform: but in divinity many things must be left abrupt, and concluded with this: O the depth of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how incomprehensible are his judgments, and his ways past finding

out! So, again, the Apostle saith, *Ex parte scimus*: and to have the form of a total, when there is but matter for a part, cannot be without supplies by supposition and presumption. And therefore I conclude, that the true use of these terms and methods hath place in institutions or introductions preparatory unto knowledge; but in them, or by deducement from them, to handle the main body and substance of a knowledge, is in all sciences prejudicial, and in divinity dangerous." Lord Bacon likewise speaks of "the over early and peremptory reduction of knowledge into arts and methods; from which time commonly sciences receive small or no augmentation. But as young men, when they knit and shape perfectly, do seldom grow to a farther stature; so knowledge, while it is in aphorisms and observations, it is in growth; but when it once is comprehended in exact methods, it may, perchance, be farther polished and illustrated, and accommodated for use and practice; but it increaseth no more in bulk and substance."

The truth is, that no real advance can be made in theology, except by experience. It implies two things: knowledge of self, and knowledge of God; and in truth, as self can be known only by knowing God, all advance in theology, either manward or God-ward, depends upon divine grace. There is a passage in Zuingle's experience of great importance on this point. "Philosophy and theology," said he, "were constantly raising difficulties in my mind. At length I was brought to say we must leave these things, and endeavor to enter into God's thoughts in his own word. I applied myself in earnest prayer to the Lord, to give me his light; and though I read nothing but Scripture, its sense became clearer to me than if I had studied many commentators." "I study the doctors," said Zuingle, "just as you ask a friend, How do you understand this?" So, indeed, to neglect other writers, as if we could advance as well without them, would be pride and presumption; but there is a great difference in the mode of consulting them. A man, for example, on reading Edwards's history of Redemption, can not fail to make a great advance, by the aid of such comprehensive views, such a holy generalization of particulars, by a mind distinguished for this rare faculty. But this is not a book of systematic theology; and such a course of reading, and reading after and with a personal study of God's word, is very different from the consultation of systems and systematic writers, who, in the very fact of striving after the completeness of their

system, may prove unsuitable teachers. "By making authors dictators," says Lord Bacon, "that their words should stand, and not consuls to give advice, the damage is infinite that sciences have received thereby, as the principal cause that hath kept them low, at a stay, without growth or advancement."

There is all the difference between the study of theology in books, at second-hand, and in the Bible with original experience, that there is between a man's acquaintance with a romantic country, who goes straight through it in a rail-car, and his who travels as a pedestrian, over hill and valley, through city and hamlet, in meadows and by the river-side, calling at the peasant's door, visiting many a sweet nook and shady fountain, breathing the morning freshness, enjoying the sunset and the twilight, drinking in, at every step of the way, all the blessed influences of the air and the sunshine, and watching all the lovely and changeful aspects of the face of nature. There are excellent rail-carriages to ride through the Bible; perhaps the human mind will never invent better ones than some that have been constructed. You may take passage in Calvin's Institutes, or in Turretin, or, if you please, in Ridgley's body of divinity, or in Knapp, or in Storr and Flatt; and assuredly you cannot greatly err; but all this richness and blessedness of personal experience, and all the triumph and delight of individual discovery, and all the romance, novelty and freshness of pedestrian excursions, and all the power, variety, and certainty of original knowledge you must utterly forego.

There is a stream artificially walled up in the valley of Saratoga, into which the healthful mineral waters of the various springs pour themselves off together, after welling up independently at the fountain head. Now, suppose the visitors at Saratoga, in search of health, should go to that running stream, and prefer the taste of it, telling you in what a perfect unity, in what a comprehensive system, they receive the waters, by thus drinking of them; and suppose that men should thus test their remedial excellence in their own complaints, and should profess to analyze the elemental fountains by the study of that stream, visiting the original sources now and then, but dwelling ordinarily at the brook, and drinking of it habitually; these men would not unaptly represent the folly of a man, who should study the word of God, and form his opinions of its fundamental truths, principally by the streams of theology that have sprung from it, by human systems and institutes.

Even if the church universal could build a perfect conduit, still would we never give up the right of private judgment, nor the duty of each student of the Scriptures to form his theology originally for himself. Let him go to the deep well-springs, the separate individual fountains in the Old and New Testaments, and let him drink their sparkling contents fresh and pure in the clearness of their original and individual dialects. Let him do this to form his own theology, or rather to make the theology of the Scriptures possess and imbue his soul. Let him do this to fill full and keep ever overflowing the fountain of his own experience, joyous and rich, strong and abundant. Let him do this, striving all the while mightily in prayer for that baptism of the Spirit, which alone can make the truths of Scripture his own powerful, original, life-giving experience. This process makes a true, independent, biblical theologian; entire dependence on the word and Spirit of God, entire independence of human systems as authorities. If we are not greatly mistaken, this course is taught and commanded in the Scriptures; and if the history of individual minds be not utterly erroneous, this course clothes the soul with power; it makes the Christian a king and a priest unto God. It does this, just in proportion as he refuses every mediator between his own soul and the word of God; just in proportion as he receives in simplicity the engraven word, which is able to save his soul; just in proportion as he lives upon it, and in his own spiritual conflicts, in prayer and in profound meditation, and by the baptism of the Holy Spirit, makes its experience his own experience. This is power, wisdom, blessedness, glory. This comprehends all the elements of a missionary piety. "I had rather follow the shadow of Christ," said the noble Reformer and Martyr, Bishop Hooper, "than the body of all the general councils or doctors since the death of Christ. It is mine opinion unto all the world, that the Scripture solely, and the Apostles' church is to be followed, and no man's authority, be he Augustine, Tertullian, or even Cherubim or Seraphim."

V. A fifth cause for the imitative cast of piety in this age, we take to be the prevalence of a philosophical system unfavorable to religious faith. Whatever throws the mind in upon itself, and the soul upon God, begets originality and power; whatever throws it upon external supports and mediums of proof, weakens it. There are two principal things in philosophy—intuition and experience; the first may be compared to a compass, the

second to a chart. You may sail your ship a great way by the first, and yet throw her on the rocks, if you strive to make a harbor without the last. On the other hand, without the compass, the chart would be of little use to you; for you might have a correct chart of the coast of Europe, and yet, without the compass, sail for years in a circle on the Atlantic, endeavoring to find Europe. So it is with intuition and experience; if the denial of the last leaves you with nothing but *terra incognita*, the denial of the first leaves you without *terra firma*. A philosophy that denies the first, is like a fog in the atmosphere; if you sail upon the ocean of truth in such a fog, you must either do it by the lead and line, till you might almost, from disuse, deny the existence of the compass, or, if you dash onward, you are as likely to strike a reef of rocks, as to get into the harbor.

The prevalence of a philosophy that throws men upon external things, united with the experimental and physical spirit of this age, has tended to withdraw men's minds from the sublime and simple verities of God's word. An experimental tendency in one direction is infidelity; in another it is faith. Confined to second causes, it is infidelity; but if men would put experience as the standard in divine things, as they do in human, it would be well. All true religion is experimental. Hence the course of infidelity is the most unphilosophical in the world, while to some extent its principle is perfectly wise and philosophical. It refuses to believe, except on experience; very well: but it refuses to try the experiment, nay, it would, if possible, destroy the experiment. A Brahmin was once persuaded by an Englishman to look through a microscope at a vegetable, which constituted a favorite part of his diet. To the horror of the meat-abjuring Indian, he beheld whole herds of animals quietly browsing in their pastures, which he had been accustomed to eat at a mouthful. He seized the instrument, in his anger, trod on it, and crushed it to pieces. So the world are very ready to do with demonstrations that they do not like, or that oppose their favorite systems, or show their sins. Infidelity and the Roman Catholic religion would destroy, or keep out of sight, the heavenly instrument that exposes their own iniquity and error.

This empirical spirit in divine things, exercised in dogmatism, but stopping short of faith, makes an age proud and critical, rather than humble and believing. There is a great difference between an age of belief and an age of criticism; all the difference that there is between creative power and the power of judg-

ment. An age of belief will be employed in creative operations, leaving the lower work of criticism to be performed by those who come after. An age of criticism is an age of doubt, and therefore of weakness, not of inborn power. It is an age of the preparation of rules, not of principles in action, in vivifying operation; and so it is an age of the understanding of rules, not the *consciousness* of principles. Perhaps principles will even be denied, and the rules of empiricism alone adopted. Just as if in medicine there should be an age of physicians formed in the apothecary's shop, by the study of formulas, symptoms, and cases, instead of the powers of nature, the laws of the human constitution, and the principles of things. It is not to be denied that such a set of men might go very far, might come to great perfection, in the knowledge and classification of symptoms, cases, and cures; it would be an age of great proficiency in diagnosis; but do we not see that just in proportion to the perfection of such knowledge, if we stop there, we are at the greater distance from wisdom and power, from the seeds of things, and the elements of universality? As in general an age of systems stops the discovery of new truth, so an age of criticism stops the search for it. Homer and Thucydides mark a creative age; Quintilian and Longinus, a critical one; this is imitative, artificial, that is original and spontaneous.

In regard to the general subject of metaphysics, in connection with divinity, it is almost an undeniable truth, that in every age the predominant metaphysical opinions, the speculative philosophy in general acceptance, will influence the theology, and so, in an incalculable degree, the piety of that age. The history of the church shows this, and sometimes in a most melancholy demonstration. The possibility of articles of faith, their compatibility with the laws of Reason, is to be determined on metaphysical principles. The question whether they are agreeable to reason, or contrary to it, or simply undiscoverable by it, will be determined according to a man's metaphysics. Now, if that science be one that in its first principles rejects the possibility of intuitions of spiritual truths, the communion of the mind, through reason, with principles that could not be made known to it through the senses, then the consequence must be a denial of all mysterious truths in religion, of all truths that are above the reach of the unaided human understanding. "In each article of faith embraced on conviction, the mind determines, first, intuitively on its logical possibility; secondly,

discursively on its analogy to doctrines already believed, as well as on its correspondences to the wants and faculties of our nature ; and, thirdly, historically on the direct and indirect evidences." Now, it is manifest that, if on metaphysical principles the first determination of the mind, in respect to any such article of faith, be, that it is a logical impossibility, all its historical evidence, and all its alleged correspondency to our wants, and analogy to other doctrines, will go for nothing. "The question," says Mr. Coleridge, "whether an assertion be in itself inconceivable, or only by us unimaginable, will be decided by each individual, according to the positions assumed as first principles in the metaphysical system which he had previously adopted. Thus the existence of the Supreme Reason, the creator of the material universe, involved a contradiction for a disciple of Epicurus ; while, on the contrary, to a Platonist the position is necessarily presupposed in every other truth, as that without which every fact of experience would involve a contradiction in reason."

Just so a Unitarian denies the doctrine of the Trinity, as a metaphysical impossibility, setting a metaphysical lie above the verity of the Scriptures ; and, in general, a great cause of weakness and of lying doctrine in this age, is the marching of metaphysical speculations into regions where they do not belong. It is true that our philosophy, even where it is correct, is very short-sighted, and that in most cases, as the Indians say of the world that it rests first upon a mountain, then upon an elephant, and so on till they come to a tortoise, where they stop ; so it is with us in attempting to explain the mysteries of our being ; our philosophy generally ends with the tortoise. It is true, also, that the multitude, even of educated minds, receive metaphysical principles upon trust, without the least analysis of their nature, and with no perception of the extensive reach of their influence ; and in such cases, with the believer in God's word, where the received metaphysics are false, there is a happy and ignorant inconsistency between the false metaphysics and the spiritual faith. But still it is impossible that a false system of metaphysics should prevail, without exerting a powerful deteriorating influence over every province of mind and morals. The student and the Christian may never at any one moment be conscious of that influence, for that would be to see the falsehood of the system ; but the influence is felt, and is the more powerful for being imperceptible, unsuspected, and, therefore,

unresisted. It is an element of deterioration in the presence of every spiritual truth, depriving it of half its power; an influence that insensibly stupifies the mind itself, and dwarfs all its productions. You may not notice it while within its circle; but just remove into another atmosphere, and you will see what you have been suffering and what you have been losing. It is like being shut up for hours in a close, ill-ventilated, and crowded lecture-room; the air becomes very impure, but you, being accustomed to it, hardly notice the impurity, nor the deleterious influence over your system, till you go out into the fresh atmosphere; and then if you should again return into the room, where so many lungs have been respiring till the vital properties of the air have been almost exhausted, you could not endure it. So it is with the injurious influence which a prevailing false system of metaphysics will inevitably exert over the student's mind. The sublimities of the gospel itself will be deprived of half their grandeur, and in that unwholesome vapor, every thing will be pallid, meagre, lifeless, and cold. The clouds raised around the truths of the gospel through the medium of grovelling metaphysical speculations are not, as in the natural atmosphere, converted into glorious shapes, reflecting the sun's glory. They darken the truth, and it looks through them, shorn of its beams. The power of self-evidence that belongs to the things of religion is taken away, and the truth, instead of commanding assent in all the absolute majesty of the Supreme Reason, timidly and doubtfully entreats admittance to the heart. It cannot be otherwise, if the truths of theology grow up into a metaphysical system that in its first principles, if logically pressed, denies their possibility. The denial may not be open, may not be observed, but the deteriorating influence will certainly be exerted. And so sure as there is discernment enough to see that influence, combined with a skeptical disposition, the skepticism in the heart will take refuge in the metaphysics of the understanding, and there manufacture and thence send forth its attacks against the elements of spiritual faith. Thus it is that infidel speculations, grounded on false metaphysical premises, and concocted in the closet by speculative men, have found their way to the hearts of a common multitude, who know nothing about metaphysics, good or bad, except the name, but take the skepticism as the perfection of reason and common sense.

Now, we say that any thing which weakens the power of self-

evidence in the gospel must inevitably exert a disastrous influence over our piety ; and if there have been such an ingredient in the prevalent philosophy of this age, this is one cause for our want of originality and experience.

VI. A sixth cause why the piety of this age is weak and imitative, is to be found in the neglect and ignorance of the doctrine of justification by faith. We do not know of a single evangelical doctrine that has suffered such sad oversight. Perhaps one reason may be, that we have been occupied with controversies for other truths, and with enemies in other parts of the citadel, so frequently as to forget this danger ; but whatever be the cause, we have well nigh forgotten the doctrine, and to depart from it is to exhaust the very fountain of strength in our spiritual being. The life of the doctrine of the blessed reformers, and the light of their existence, was their experimental knowledge of this truth, which we know so partially. We have looked upon it too much as a negative speculation ; they regarded it as a positive life ; we study it, they possessed it ; we acknowledge it, and put it in our creeds ; they lived by it, and died for it. The consequence is, that it energizes all their productions ; from this cause alone their spirit and style are as different from the inert prettinesses of this age, as the transfiguration by Raphael from a modern lithographic engraving, as a great Gothic Cathedral from a gingerbread wooden imitation. We know not what we lose, nor how far we die, when we lose the spirit of this doctrine. The church is devoted to destruction, if this grace goes out of the temple ; and we may almost hear our guardian angels mournfully whispering, Let us depart hence. As the Atonement is the central doctrine of the Gospel, so an experimental knowledge of justification by faith is the central grace in the heart of the Christian and the church. If it be out of place, all other graces will hang loosely ; if it be deficient, all other graces will wither and waste as by a slow poison. In the piety of this age it is deficient ; it is out of place, pushed from its office ; in some quarters it is disowned, and well-nigh annihilated ; everywhere there is great ignorance and inexperience of it ; and the consequence is, that on the one hand sanctification is exalted into a Saviour, and on the other, formalists and priests and admirers of gilded crosses, despising sanctification and justification almost alike, are busily vamping up the trumpery of Popery in its stead. Instead of this reigning and radiant truth presented and developed, they

chant to us the Io Pæan of a baptismal regeneration, with candles at noonday, and fish on Friday; they sing to us delicately about the sacred beauty of the observance of sacred days, and sacred rites and ordinances. With what energy would Paul have rebuked this spirit! What! he would say, hath Christ, at such expense of blood, set you free from the despotism of the Man of Sin; and will ye again pass under the accursed yoke? Will ye enter your prison-house of will-worship, to grind in its filthy dungeons? How, turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years. I am afraid of you. Behold I, Paul, say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing: ye are fallen from grace.

But it is not those alone, who would worship the cross instead of the crucified Saviour, the altar instead of the altar's God, that have abjured this doctrine, or betrayed it into the hands of its enemies; it is we all, just in proportion to our neglect and inexperience of its life-giving power. And this inexperience is great; and every man who has any thing to do with the admission of candidates to the church of Christ, will have to deplore that this inexperience of this life-giving truth has become almost the type of piety in our new converts, so that you may perhaps find a greater ignorance of this than of any other doctrine of the Scriptures. But is this the preparation which is needed in a missionary age, which should characterize the piety of an age that hopes to accomplish the world's regeneration? We need a new baptism in the fire of individual scriptural truth, but more than all, in the fire of this truth of justification by faith. Doubtless, there is a power in this doctrine, which will annihilate every form of Romanism; but it must be felt, in order to be used. Was it exhausted at the Reformation, when we saw it flash so gloriously? Why does it not flash with equal glory now, when its power is equally needed? It did but half its work, it disclosed but half its energy. Perhaps one great reason why, under God, such a resurrection of refined and gilded formalism is now permitted, and such an exaltation of THE CHURCH, in the place of CHRIST, is to call all true Christians, by the very emergency, back to the rock and refuge of this doctrine. It is to make *Christ's-men* instead of *Church-men*. And sure we are, that if Luther were now on earth to publish again this element of his power, with the freshness of his burning experience, to pour it from the depths of his full heart as from a church

organ, accustomed as we are to think that we know all about it, it would stir Christendom now with almost as much enthusiasm, and with almost as great a convulsion, as it did then.

When we look at the discipline through which Luther and some other men passed, in their baptism with the fire of this doctrine, it seems that we do but dream about it, that we know nothing of it, that we are like men walking and talking in our sleep—a race of religious somnambulists. Indeed, without this burning experience, what are we doing, where is our efficiency? We are no better than petrified monks, and might almost as well be thrown back into past darkness, and with St. Anthony be employed in preaching to the fishes of the Atlantic. We might as well be hooded and cowed and shrouded in the cells of some old monastery, employed in doing penance, wearing sackcloth shirts, telling our beads, and ascending Pilate's staircase. The indomitable Luther himself once set out to do this upon his knees; and it was a great crisis of his being; for he had got about half way up, when there came a voice of thunder into his soul, **THE JUST SHALL LIVE BY FAITH!** and it scared him effectually and forever from his penance. There are numbers in our day who are ascending Pilate's staircase; some in forms and ceremonies, and apostolical successions, and hatred of conventicles, and kneelings to bishops, and Christless worship of the church, and contempt and persecution of all beyond their narrow sect, and open and avowed hatred of justification by faith; and others in the forgetfulness, disregard, and inexperience of this blessed doctrine. Would to God that such a voice from heaven might enter into every man's soul; but even if it did, it would do no good, without something of Luther's deep spiritual experience, gathered in conflict and prayer.

We need it; we all need it; it is the want of this, that forms the characteristic palsy of the piety of this age. With this living experience of Christ's truth, and so many Christians in motion under it, no false form of religion could stand before the church for a moment. We need it as ministers of the gospel, in our common, ordinary preaching. We need it, to have any power whatever in the conversion of men. We need it, to have our new converts baptized into it, instead of the spirit of indolence and worldly conformity. We need it, in order to preach from feeling, instead of imitation. We need it, to break up the reign of custom, and to let in upon the soul the unwonted freshness of a first love.

May God in mercy baptize every one of us with this spirit. May the church possess it. May the spirit and power of JUSTIFICATION BY FAITH take hold upon us! Then will the final conflict of the Gospel against Romanism, against Formalism, be a short conflict indeed; but a more glorious triumph of God's word and Spirit than the world has ever witnessed.

A point growing out of this last named cause for the want of experimental originality in the piety of this age, is the imagined discovery of a royal road to heaven. We are very desirous of believing that we can live at ease, and yet gain that experience which other men gathered only by conflict and prayer. We should like to possess the powerful experience of faith which Luther possessed, and which in general characterized the age of the Reformers; but we are not willing to undergo that intense, soul-trying, spiritual discipline, which he had to pass through in gaining it. It is the mistake of this age to make of religion a thing of comfort and ease, instead of self-mortification and labor. We forget that in its very essence religion is a thing of discipline, self-mortifying discipline, and that the principle of vicarious suffering is the one by which the world is to be converted to Christ, just as certainly as it is that in which was laid the very foundation of the world's redemption. Hence the church that draws back from the baptism of suffering, is not the church that can be instrumental in this world's regeneration; and if the church in our age be doing this, if self-indulgence be the mark of our piety, it is as clear as noonday that not to us has the glorious commission been vouchsafed of accomplishing the promises of God, and not to us will the glory ever be granted of ushering in this consummation. It was the beautiful language of the poet Cowper, wrung from him by his own experience of anguish,

The path of sorrow, and that path alone,  
Leads to the land where sorrow is unknown

We believe that this must not only be the experience of every individual Christian in getting to heaven, but that the church by which the world's regeneration shall be accomplished, will be a church baptized with suffering, or what will answer the same purpose, distinguished for voluntary self-denial. If we reject this, it is no wonder that our piety is destitute of originality and vital power; we are rejecting that which, in a world of

fallen beings, constitutes, in the very nature of things, the only source of power. Death, said Mr. Coleridge, only supplies the oil for the inextinguishable lamp of life. This great truth is true, even before our mortal dissolution ; that death to self which trial produces, constituting, even in this world, the very essence of strength, life, and glory.

Some men think that heaven is growing up on earth, a gradual amelioration and melting of earth into heaven, so that by and by half the Bible will get obsolete, because self-denial and affliction will no longer be the custom of our pilgrimage. The truth is, there never could be such a state of external things, as that fallen beings *could* be purified and refined without burning and filing. If we carry not heaven within us, external peace and beauty will never produce it ; and heaven within us is to be wrought in the midst of our corruption only by trial and suffering ; and even then, without continued discipline, the very piety of the church would cream and mantle like a stagnant pool.

We are aware that the analysis of causes which we have attempted is exceedingly imperfect, and certainly it might be pursued much farther with interest and profit. One or two conclusions, from our investigation, are of sufficient importance to lay up for consideration, if not to dwell upon now. And first, it is very evident that a missionary spirit is the only safeguard and guarantee of a sound theology. If any church or any body of men undertake to keep their spiritual privileges to themselves, to arrogate an exclusive possession of them, or to release themselves from the claims of Christian stewardship and self-denial for others, they will find them putrefying and rotting on their hands, with a brood of vipers generated in the midst of them, a thousandfold worse than the stinking worms which the Israelites found in their hoarded manna. The very coriander-seed of heaven will not keep from corruption, if men keep it to themselves. Our religion and our theology would be a dead sea, in which the fish would die, and nothing but the slime and pitch of metaphysics, and erroneous and bewildering speculations, would float upon the surface, if the rippling waters of a missionary piety did not flow through it. The epistles of the Apostles themselves would have been full of thorns and weeds and poisons, if their piety had not been of such a nature as to provide that the *Acts* of the Apostles should precede and accompany the *Letters*. The acrid humors and impostumes of monasticsuper-

stitions would have broken out ages before they did, and the first Pope would have been elected, not at Rome but at Jerusalem.

And we may add, as another conclusion, that a missionary spirit, as it is necessary to preserve the church from the despotism of error and of dogmatism, so it is the foundation of individual originality and power. Not even the word of God, nor the study of the word of God, will keep men from error, if the heart be not full of love, and thirsting after God's knowledge. The truths of the gospel are not to be discovered but by moral discipline, by a hard following of the soul after God; at any rate, not so to be discovered as to become the elements of power. No man could be a painter by seeing Raphael put on his colors; no man could be a musician by seeing Apollo himself play upon his pipe; no man could be a chemist by reading Sir Humphrey Davy's dissertations; and no man can be a theologian by the mere study of the Scriptures. He has not only to labor with the understanding, but to labor with the heart, in prayer. It is the want of this latter labor, that makes the piety of this age imitative and external. It produces individual darkness and weakness, even in the midst of learning. Most admirably doth Lord Bacon remark that "it was most aptly said by one of Plato's school, 'that the sense of man carrieth a resemblance with the sun, which, as we see, openeth and revealeth all the terrestrial globe, but then again it obscureth and concealeth the stars and celestial globe: so doth the sense discover natural things, but it darkeneth and shutteth up divine.' 'And hence it is true that it hath proceeded that divers learned men have been heretical, whilst they have sought to fly up to the secrets of the Deity, by the waxen wings of the senses.'" The truth is, it is only in God's light, that we can see the light. Who has not known this in his own experience? But God's light never comes without love; and there is a light of the understanding merely, which utterly fails to convince. Lord Bacon commends the *lumen siccum* of Heraclitus, as preferable to that *lumen madidum* or *maceratum*, which is "steeped and infused in the humors of the affections;" and this, with great truth, applied to men's personal passions and cares. But in reference to God, there is a *lumen siccum*, a dry light, in which the mind dies for want of moisture; the fervor of the affections constituting the only medium of salutary communication with certain truths, of believing communion with them. If this be absent, and yet the

soul be carried into the atmosphere of such truths, it is quite intolerable. It is the business of devils; and Milton has well set the wandering spirits of hell, in their sadness and pain, to metaphysical reasoning upon themes that can no more be handled without pain by a heart not at peace with God, than a man could take coals of fire in his hand and not be burned. The highest atmosphere of thought, to apply a physical image from this great poet, "burns frore, and cold performs the effect of heat," unless it be a region irradiated by the love of God. There is the same result to the soul, which Humboldt experienced in the body, when ascending into a mountain air so thin and rarefied that the lungs labored spasmodically, and the blood almost started from the pores.

To the same purpose, Lord Bacon again says, that "the quality of knowledge, if it be taken without the corrective thereof, hath in it some nature of venom or malignity, and some effects of that venom, which is ventosity or swelling. The corrective spice," he adds, "the mixture whereof maketh knowledge so sovereign, is CHARITY, as saith the Apostle." In speaking of certain writings, which acted in no slight degree to prevent his mind from being imprisoned within the outlines of any single dogmatical system, Mr. Coleridge presents a similar idea, with a vividness which is truly startling. "They contributed," says he, "to keep alive the *heart* in the *head*; gave me an indistinct, yet stirring and working presentiment, that all the products of the mere *reflective* faculty partook of DEATH, and were as the rattling twigs and sprays in winter, into which a sap was yet to be propelled from some root to which I had not yet penetrated, if they were to afford my soul either food or shelter."

That root, we believe, was CHRIST. And now let me add that there are some truths, of essential importance to the world's becoming better, of which we venture to say, no man can have such a belief as to constitute any power in the use of them, without much acquaintance with God in Christ. Take, for example, the very universally acknowledged truth of the eternal damnation of wicked souls. There is no man that can believe this truth, especially as applied to the heathen, with any thing more than the belief of assent and of custom, with the unassailable belief of power, without seeing and feeling the holiness of God; and the holiness of God is not to be seen and felt, without a close walk with God. Not one of God's attributes is to be known without *heart-labor*, and yet it is in the knowledge of

God's attributes, that all sound theology consists. And this truth, of which we have spoken, is at the very foundation of the whole missionary enterprise.

I wish now to beg your attention to one more conclusion, which, as those who hear me are young men,\* and as we are parts of a young nation, cannot but sink down deep into our minds, and I would hope may happily influence our own self-discipline. It is, that in the life of individuals and of nations, the provision of the materials of originality, experience, and power in the character, is confined for the most part, to a particular and an early period.

"The CHILD is father of the MAN."

Our great modern poet has put this great truth into a child's ballad, but it is for men to reflect upon. In the development whether of individuals or of nations it is true. The early studies of genius are wrought into the mind like beautiful pictures traced in sympathetic ink, and they afterwards come out into view in the influence they exert in all the mind's productions. The first studies of Rembrandt affected his after labors; that peculiarity of shadow, which marks all his pictures, originated in the circumstance of his father's mill receiving light from an aperture at the top, which habituated that artist afterwards to view all objects as if seen in that magical light. What is thus true in the course of individuals, is as true, on a vast scale, in the development of the literature and character of nations.

Now our practice of the science of self-culture and self-discipline is to too great a degree extemporaneous and late; nor do we sufficiently avail ourselves of others' experience. It is certainly important to discover what has been the nourishment of other minds, and then to apply your knowledge. It is not certain that the same discipline, through which Burke or Coleridge passed, would be as good for other minds as for theirs; but there must have been some qualities in their mental culture, some processes in their growth and development, which, discovered and applied by us, would be useful. For example, if Mr. Coleridge tells us that in early life he found in certain rare and neglected volumes, some trains of thought that set him powerfully to thinking, you may be quite sure that the same

---

\* Delivered as an address before the Society of Inquiry on Missions in Amherst College.

excitement would be favorable to a susceptible and growing mind now. But it may happen that the seed which will grow in one patch of ground will not in another. You may raise a good crop of potatoes where you cannot raise wheat, and the soil that will bear a wheat crop one year, will do better laid out in corn and melons the next. Now nature seems to require something the same alterations in the cultivation of mind; at any rate, there is no monotony. An age of great classical erudition may be succeeded by an age of deep philosophy, or these both by an age of physical science and rail-roads; and you may not be able, without difficulty, to trace the laws or causes of this change. If you cut down a forest of pines, there will spring up in its place a growth of the oak or the maple. So in the world's mind there are the germs of many developments, to which external accidents may give birth, some in one age, some in another. There is a singular analogy between the goings on of life in the natural and in the moral world, and nature many times suggests lessons which she does not directly teach. Nature is suggestive in her teachings; and so is the word of God; and so is every thing that in its teachings at the same time awakens and disciplines the mind.

But there is a period, after which even suggestive teachings and suggestive books lose their power. There is a germinating period, a period in which a good book goes down into the soul, as a precious seed into a moist furrow of earth in the spring, and germinates; a new growth springs from it. It is different from knowledge; it becomes the mind's own, and is reproduced in a form of originality; its principles become seeds in a man's being, and by and by blossom and fructify. This, I say, is a particular period, and it does not last. A man who has passed it may read the same book and *know* it perfectly; the acquisition of knowledge goes on through life; but knowledge as life, knowledge as the creator of wisdom, not so. It is all the difference between an oak set out, and one that grows from the acorn. I have in my mind some volumes which have exerted a refreshing and inspiring power over many young minds, but with older ones the power does not seem to exist; it is like putting a magnet to a lump of clay. Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone; and so, except a good book fall into the soul and die, it abideth alone; and the time in which a good book thus dies in the soul, is particular, and analogous to the springtide of the seasons. An ear of corn may

fall into the ground and die in midsummer ; but it will not be reproduced ; and just so with books and principles in men's minds : if the sowing of them be deferred till the midsummer or autumn of the soul, though they may enrich the soil, they will not produce a harvest ; there may be the green blade, but the full corn in the ear you will never see.

So also it is with the seeds and habits of our piety ; our character and attainments, not only in this world, but in eternity, will be the fruits of the germination of divine things in our souls now.

Let me pray you, therefore, to take care of the germinating period of your being ; for when you have passed through it, though you may have the same books to read, and the same means of study, they will not affect you as they once would. There is a tide in the deep souls of men, as well as in their affairs, which, taken at the flood, leads on to fortune ; and if you omit it, the loss and the misery will be yours. Suffer me now to leave your minds beneath the influence of one more aphorism from the wisdom of Lord Bacon. " For if you will have a tree bear more fruit than it hath used to do, it is not any thing you can do to the boughs, but it is the stirring of the earth, and putting new mould about the roots, that must work it." And if we might add one recipe as to the sort of mould you would do well to apply, we would say, take the study of Butler's Analogy, South's Sermons, (avoiding his hatred of the Puritans,) Bacon's Advancement of Learning, Burke's Character and Works, and (bating his erroneous views of the atonement) Coleridge's Friend, and Aids to Reflection. This is but a single formula ; you well know the catalogue might be greatly varied and enlarged ; and different men will put down different authors, according to their own idiosyncracies. But we speak now of suggestive works ; and the Latin proverb is worth remembering, Beware of the man of one book.

## ARTICLE VI.

DIVINE AGENCY AND GOVERNMENT, TOGETHER WITH HUMAN AGENCY  
AND FREEDOM.

By the Rev. Leonard Woods, D. D., Prof. Theol. Sem., Andover, Mass.

AMONG those who have accustomed themselves of late to metaphysical discussions, we cannot but observe various degrees of intellectual strength, and various aspects of intellectual character. Some there are, whose inclination towards philosophical investigations manifestly goes beyond their strength; who show at once, whenever they meddle with metaphysical subjects, that they have mistaken their employment; and who are likely to involve themselves, and perhaps others too, in error or in perplexity, according as they engage more or less in metaphysical inquiries. They may possess great activity of mind in other respects. They may be good reasoners, when their reasoning relates to other subjects. But the fact is,—and it is a pity they do not know it,—that they have not the patience, the acuteness, the power of analysis and discrimination, which are essential to constitute a metaphysician. Of course, they cannot be expected to arrive at right conclusions in regard to the more difficult questions in mental science. They do not comprehend the meaning of those questions. They do not understand what is to be done, or how to do it, or when it is done. There are others, who possess more intellectual acumen, but who fall into mistakes, because they have not proceeded far enough in their inquiries. Their decisions are erroneous, because they are premature. They may have been engaged in metaphysical studies a few months, or a few years. But the result of sober contemplation for twenty or thirty years would in all probability be more conformed to the truth, if they should be so happy as to be kept from committing themselves to the support of the wrong side of controverted subjects.

But there are many in our community, who have nothing to do with a metaphysical form of speaking or thinking, who do yet receive, practically and devoutly, the very same truths, which Edwards, and those who agree with him, deduce from meta-

physical considerations. And there are not a few ministers of the gospel and intelligent private Christians, whose own happy experience leads them, as a matter of course, with but little study, clearly to understand and firmly to believe the profoundest principles of mental science; who can at once solve questions which elude the grasp of a merely speculative understanding, devoted ever so long to laborious investigation.

Finally, there are those, and this number is by no means small, who unite the benefit of long and patient philosophical thinking with devout feeling; who are clear-sighted metaphysicians, and active spiritual Christians; and who, through divine grace, are unmoved by any of the winds of doctrine which carry about unstable minds; who always stand firm, how many soever may waver.

I have recently endeavored to take a careful, though a cursory view of what has been done, and what is now doing in regard to the class of subjects which I shall bring into view, and to see what are the results of the thinking and reasoning which have been going on during the last thirty or forty years; to see what is the fruit of metaphysical investigations among ministers and other literary men, in regard to the more difficult subjects in ethics and theology,—what advances have been made, and what truths, before unknown, have been discovered, and where we are now. After all the scenes through which I and my brethren have passed,—after the variety of changes which have taken place around us, and the variety of schemes, arguments, and opinions, which have occupied and sometimes agitated our minds, I wish, if I can, to ascertain where we now stand, and I shall take some special care to ascertain where I myself stand. I have sometimes found a man, who could not tell decidedly what his opinion was, and who has shown that he had no decided opinion. If it is otherwise, I have wished, with permission, to exhibit some proper evidence of it. I do not, however, touch upon this point, because I am desirous of obtruding myself or my opinions on the attention of the public, but because there is no way for a writer to deal honestly with his fellow-men, but to let them know just what he himself believes, together with the reasons of his belief; and because I suppose I may be able in this way to do something to confirm the faith of my younger brethren; and also because I am willing to inform those, who have labored to establish a new and different set of opinions, that while I

acknowledge their talents and respect their character, I must consider their reasoning to be altogether inconclusive. But my intention is to avoid personal allusions, and to confine myself to the consideration of important subjects. My chief question will be, not *who* is right or wrong, but *what* is right or wrong. I shall aim to keep away from what is doubtful or obscure, and to dwell upon what is clear and certain.

The topics, on which I propose more or less to remark, are such as these: namely, the divine government; divine and human agency; man's freedom and dependence; the work of the Holy Spirit in regeneration; natural and moral necessity and inability; cause and effect; self-determining power; volition, affection, and accountability. But I shall not oblige myself to take up these subjects in this particular order, nor to exclude other subjects allied to them.

I begin with *the government of God*.

We learn what the government of God is by careful attention to his word and providence. In his word he tells us not only that he rules over all his creatures, but on what principles he proceeds in administering the affairs of the universe. In his providence he exemplifies and illustrates those principles. He both speaks and acts. And what he speaks and what he does perfectly harmonize, and often explain each other. In many instances, we should be unable to understand the word of God without the help of his providence, or his providence without the help of his word. By proper attention to both, we correct the errors of our preconceived opinions, and obtain some just views of the divine government. We learn that the government of God is wise, and holy, and good, accomplishing the most righteous and benevolent objects by the most suitable means; and that, being omnipotent, it is never disappointed or hindered by any opposing influence. We learn that the perfections of God, instead of being concealed or dormant principles, are brought into open manifestation and constant action in his government; that the whole system of the created universe, and every part of it, is planned and executed by a God, whose wisdom cannot err, whose goodness has no bounds, and whose power none can successfully resist. All power in the creation is derived from God, and dependent on his will; as Jesus said to Pilate, "Thou couldst have no power against me, except it were given thee from above." No one can have any power,

except what God gives, and there can be no greater absurdity than to suppose that God will give to any of his creatures a power which he cannot control, and which shall, in any possible circumstances, so come in the way of his administration as actually to prevent him from doing what he wills to do. If he is really omnipotent, and if all power in creatures depends on him, it must be that he will do all his pleasure; that whatever he sees on the whole to be best, he will certainly accomplish.

As the supreme government of God relates to all his works, it relates particularly to the *moral* world. This is the most important part of the creation, and it is of course most of all important, that this should be managed right; and to be managed right, is to be managed according to the will of God: or in other words, according to the dictate of infinite perfection. If God is prevented from doing his own righteous and holy will, he is prevented by something *within* himself, or something *without* himself. If by something *within* himself, then there are contradictory attributes in his own spiritual nature; an imperfection in a mind which is absolutely perfect; a principle opposed to wisdom and goodness in one who is infinitely wise and good. And to suppose that he is in any case hindered from doing his own pleasure by any thing *without* himself, that is, by something in created beings, is to suppose that he has designedly invested them with power to frustrate his designs. And this is the same as to suppose that he purposely acts against himself.

I can find no resting place but this: that God reigns over the whole creation; that all things in the natural and moral world are under his control; that nothing is too small to be the object of his constant regard, and nothing too great to be held in subjection to his governing will. The Shorter Catechism teaches that God "preserves and governs all his creatures and all their actions;" and the Confession of Faith teaches the same doctrine more fully: "God the Creator upholds, directs, and governs all creatures, actions, and things, from the greatest even to the least—according to the immutable counsel of his will, to the praise of the glory of his wisdom, power, justice, goodness, and mercy." This is the doctrine contained in the only general creed publicly adopted in this country either by Presbyterians or Congregationalists.

*How* this unlimited government of God, carried on by his constant agency, can be consistent with the full exercise of the

powers of created beings, especially of moral beings, is a question which has proved too hard for man to solve. But that the two *are really consistent*, is a fact which cannot be doubted. And although men have labored with little success to explain the manner of reconciling them, no one has been able to prove any inconsistency. We may say,—and this is all we can say,—that there *appears* to be an inconsistency, and that we cannot see *how* one can be made to harmonize with the other. But this may be owing to our ignorance. How do we know that the difficulty is not *merely apparent*? How do we know that a perfect knowledge of divine agency and of human agency would not remove all appearance of incompatibility, and show them to be as consistent as any two things in the universe? They certainly *are* consistent; and God certainly sees them to be so. And after all the speculative arguments which men have brought forward to prove the two things inconsistent, it is a plain fact, that no one ever saw or felt any inconsistency in *practice*. The constant experience of men through all past time, and in all circumstances, would unquestionably have detected an inconsistency, had there been any. But no individual of the human race has ever found his own free agency in the least degree fettered, obstructed, or incumbered by the supreme and efficacious agency of God.

This absolute divine control over moral beings is indispensable to a perfect government. God's dominion even over the *material* world, according to established laws, depends, to a great extent, upon his control over the minds and voluntary actions of men. He does indeed cause the motion of the planets and the tides, and various other events in the natural world, independently of the agency of man. But there is an endless variety of events, and those of vast importance, in the natural world, which are inseparably connected with the agency of man. So that if God governs events of this kind, he must govern that human agency, on which they depend. But the events which are of the greatest moment, are those which take place in the moral world itself, and which consist primarily in the affections and actions of men. If God completely controls these, his dominion is perfect: he doeth all his pleasure. But if in any case he fails of directing the affections and acts of men according to his sovereign pleasure, his dominion is imperfect.

Should I look at this subject separately from the Scriptures, and from facts, and should I forget what God is, and what man

is, I might perhaps think, that God's power over the minds and voluntary actions of men must be limited; that our will cannot be free, if constantly subjected to the divine control. I might give place to the imagination, that, as far as we are free moral agents, we are independent; and that for God to exercise an effectual influence over our mental acts, particularly our volitions, is to take away their freedom and responsibility. But such an opinion vanishes before the light of truth. Just views of God and the knowledge of facts must lead us to abandon it at once. The Bible from beginning to end teaches, with the utmost plainness, that God effectually governs the hearts and actions of men; that he controls their disposition and conduct in circumstances which render such control the most difficult; that he not only directs the common exercises of men, sinful as well as holy, for his own righteous ends; that is, directs the exercises of sinners in accordance with their own sinful hearts, and the exercises of saints in accordance with their sanctified hearts, working in them both to will and to do, so as to accomplish his own purposes; but essentially changes the character of men, renewing their hearts, and turning them from sin to holiness, and in many instances turns those who are the most obstinately bent on evil courses; thus making it manifest, that there is no strength of evil bias which he cannot subdue, and that in this respect, as well as in others, all things are possible with God. Now if, in so many instances, he overcomes the most powerful resistance, he could, if he pleased, overcome it in other instances. Were there any thing in the nature of man beyond the reach of omnipotence, why has it not been discovered? In all ages, God has sanctified the hearts of men or left them unsanctified, saved them or left them to perish, not as he has found himself *able* to do, but according as it hath seemed good in his sight. This representation, so often repeated in Scripture, utterly precludes the idea, that the exercise of God's power is limited by any thing in the nature of moral agency, or free will. If it were thus limited, then, instead of saying, "he hath mercy on whom he will have mercy," we should be obliged to say, he hath mercy *as far as moral agency will permit, or as far as he can without interfering with free will.* But God himself, who must be allowed to understand this matter, teaches us that there is no hardness of heart which he cannot melt,—no depth of depravity which he cannot eradicate.

This is my way of thinking; and, if I mistake not, it is derived

from the word of God. When, therefore, I turn my thoughts to any theory which leads to a different conclusion,—a theory which throws in a limitation of the power of God from the nature of moral agency, and makes the sovereign dominion of God over men to be merely his controlling them as far as their free will permits, I see at once that such a theory stands in palpable opposition to the Bible, and has upon it the plain marks of error.

Still another thought occurs to me. If the theory which I am controverting were true, we should suppose that God, in the work of saving sinners, would uniformly select those as the objects of his mercy, whose hearts are the least depraved and the most easily overcome by his gracious influence, such as the young and tender, and those least confirmed in wickedness; and that those who, by sinning long and with a high hand, have acquired an unusual degree of obduracy, would always be passed by, as having a free will so perverse, that omnipotence itself cannot subdue it: whereas God does in fact frequently renew the chief of sinners, and saves those whom it would, in human view, seem impossible to save; and does it, among other things, for the very purpose of showing “the greatness of his power,” and that with him “nothing is impossible.” And why should I think of any limitation to the exercise of God’s power, besides that which he has made known in his word and providence,—any especially, which would diminish the extent of his sovereignty, and prevent him, in any case, from executing his holy will? There are, indeed, speculative difficulties attending the view which I entertain of this subject. But, in my judgment, the difficulties are less than those which attend any other view of the subject, and no greater than attend many other essential truths. And it is moreover manifest, that these difficulties arise principally from our ignorance or depravity, or from both united. Beings of higher intelligence and greater purity of heart are doubtless rid of all these perplexing speculations, and see the truth in regard to the supreme dominion of God in its own unclouded brightness.

That God, according to his own perfect will, exercises an absolute power over the minds and actions of men, “ordering and governing them to his own holy ends,” is a doctrine essentially connected with the doctrine of his effectual grace in converting his chosen people, and in preserving them through faith to eternal life. Considering what human nature is, we can find no other ground of confidence or hope, that those whom God has

given to Christ will be renewed and kept from falling away, except the unlimited power of God over the heart. God's chosen people have, in their natural state, proud, stubborn hearts,—in many instances as proud and stubborn, and as hard to be subdued, as can be found in any of the human race. If he had not full power over the heart, should we not expect that he would find it impossible to convert at least some of those whom he had ordained to eternal life, and that some, in whom he had begun the work of sanctification, would have so much remaining sin, and would so turn their free will against him, that he could not preserve them from final apostacy. And, on this supposition, how could we be sure that he would execute any of his purposes, which relate to the hearts and actions of men? Whereas the Scriptures, which give the truest history of God's providence, are full of instances in which God has exercised a sovereign control over the heart, and has given such a turn to the wills and actions of men, even of the most wicked men, as would effectually baffle the designs of his enemies, and promote the welfare of his kingdom. And what friend of God does not rejoice that it is so, and will be so forever? This is the rock on which I plant my feet,—*the unlimited, absolute dominion of God over the material and spiritual world, as resulting from his perfections, and from the entire dependence of created beings, and as set forth in the Scriptures.* Whatever is obscure, this is clear. Whatever is doubtful, this is certain. Whatever is liable to be shaken or changed, this is fixed and immutable. And if any opinion or scheme of thought is found to be in opposition to this fundamental truth; for that very reason I feel myself warranted and required to reject it.

#### DIVINE AGENCY AND HUMAN AGENCY.

This subject has been involved in the foregoing discussion; but I wish to remark upon it with some more particularity. And I shall here do, what I deem it expedient for every writer to do, that is, I shall deal honestly with the subject, and show as exactly as possible in what manner I think and reason upon it.

It was once an inquiry with me, how far human agency goes and where it ends, and where divine agency begins; or, where divine agency ends, and where human agency begins. But I never could get any satisfaction. In this mode of inquiry it was assumed, that divine agency and human agency cannot be united in the same thing,—in other words, that they are exclusive

of each other. For example, as far as the sanctification of the heart is to be ascribed to divine agency, it was assumed that there can be no human agency; and that, as far as human agency is concerned, there can be no divine agency. But the reading of the Scriptures and serious reflection soon convinced me that the assumption was false; that the two agencies, instead of being exclusive of each other, coexist. I saw that the Christian has an agency, a real and complete agency in loving and obeying God, while it is a plain Scripture truth, that in that very love and obedience the divine agency is directly concerned; that the very love to God which is our inward act, is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit, and that the very obedience to God, which is also our act, is prompted by the Divine Spirit. Thus I arrive at the principle, that the divine agency and human agency coexist, and are perfectly consistent with each other; and that they are not only consistent with each other, but that human agency *implies* divine agency, and either directly or indirectly results from it. All things are *of God*, that is, they depend, immediately or ultimately, on him as an active cause. It is owing to the operation of that cause, immediately or mediately, that they are, and are what they are. This is as true of moral agency, as of any thing else. The willing and doing of Christians depend as really upon divine agency, as the motion of the planets. Christians will and do because God worketh in them to will and to do. I wish not to encumber this subject with the difficulties which are supposed to attend the divine agency in regard to sinful beings. It is the dictate of wisdom, that we should first contemplate a subject in the way which is the most free from perplexities, and the most likely to bring us to a satisfactory conclusion. It is enough for me to know that sinners are in reality dependent on God; that they have no power to do good or evil, except what is given them from above; that, in a way consistent with his perfections, and with their moral agency, he either so influences them by his own power, or so directs the various influences which act upon them, that they will certainly accomplish his purposes. I maintain this position, because the inspired writers teach me that God does in fact thus direct and control the wicked, because they give unnumbered instances where he has actually done it,—instances prominent and remarkable, and concerning which a candid reader of the Bible cannot mistake. It is by no means implied, that the manner of the divine agency relative to the wicked is the same

as the manner of his sanctifying agency in believers. There is plainly a wide difference. While in all cases God has an uncontrolled and perfect dominion, the particular mode of his agency is always suited to his own attributes, and to the states and circumstances of those concerned, and suited also to accomplish his own holy ends. Going thus far is sufficient. There are depths in this subject which we cannot fathom. The doctrine which is of use to us is that which establishes the perfect dominion of God; which brings all his creatures and all their actions under his sway; which binds the whole creation to his throne; which gives us the assurance that all his designs will be fulfilled; and that the wrath of the wicked shall as really be turned to his glory, as the obedience of the holy, though in a very different way. As I consider this principle settled and certain, I can admit nothing into my belief which interferes with it. If it is affirmed that the acts of a free moral agent must from their very nature be uncontrolled by any cause or influence from without, I know the affirmation to be groundless and fanciful. The sacred writers never had such a dream. Who can show from the Bible, or from divine providence, that there is any such thing in the wide universe as a free moral agent, who is not completely under the dominion of God, and is not actually directed and governed by him according to his sovereign pleasure? If any one still affirms, that the very nature of free will is inconsistent with such a subjection to an effectual, controlling divine influence, I ask him, whether he expects me to receive his affirmation as a conclusive argument? If he says he rests his affirmation upon proof, I ask, what proof? He can point out to me no instance in which a moral agent has been exempt from the divine control; while I can produce instances without number, in which a free moral agent, just such as man is, has been completely swayed by divine power. If he says this is inconceivable, I make no reply but to say, it is not inconceivable. If he says it is inconceivable to *him*, I say it is not so to others. And I suppose the ground of difficulty with him to be, that he admits into his notion of *free will*, or *free moral agency*, something which does not, and never did, and never can belong to it. As God's word and providence clearly teach the fact, that he does govern all his creatures and all their actions according to his pleasure, and for the accomplishment of his own purposes, I infer with certainty that his government and human freedom do not clash with each other. If both are facts, they must be

consistent. Our notions of free moral actions must not be made out by the workings of speculative reason or imagination, but must be derived from the very actions which we and others have performed, and must correspond with the nature and circumstances of those actions. And if there are any acts of free will, which have been directed and governed by the power of God, it is plain that other free acts may be, and that there is nothing in the most perfect freedom which is in the least incompatible with such subjection to God.

In common with many others, I have been pressed with doubts and difficulties on this subject, and have examined it again and again. I have carefully looked at moral agency, as it is made known to me by my own experience and consciousness, and by the Scriptures; and have often made the inquiry, Is there any thing belonging to this moral, accountable agency, which may not exist unimpaired under that controlling influence which God is supposed to exercise over it? I find myself possessed of the faculty of reason or understanding. But I can see nothing in the nature or exercise of this faculty, which excludes entire dependence on God. For surely he who created our intelligent nature can determine its laws, and direct its exercises according to those laws. I am conscious also of the power or faculty of loving and hating objects brought before me, according as they are congenial or not with my disposition, or the character of my mind. This is the principle or law according to which my affections have been elicited. I never knew any other law. I am conscious that I have loved and chosen what is congenial with my inclinations, or the predominant character of my mind; and I am very sure I shall continue to do so in all future time. I am conscious that I have hated and refused, and I am sure I shall continue to hate and refuse, what is contrary to my predominant inclination. God has given me this faculty of loving and hating, and fixed its laws; and according to these laws he directs and governs its exercises. Even love to God, which is owing to a special operation of the Spirit in the heart, still takes place in accordance with these unalterable laws. When one who has hated God begins to love him, he does it because the renovated disposition of his mind is conformed to the divine character, so that he now sees that in God which is agreeable to him;—sees that which is not only in reality, but in *his view* excellent and amiable, and which

therefore calls forth the love of his heart. The fact that he has a heart prepared to love God is indeed owing to the new creating influence of the Spirit. But how does this interfere with his free moral agency in loving God? Is it possible that we should love God on any other principle, or in any other way? Can we love him while we see nothing in his character which is congenial with our disposition? Can we love while we see nothing which appears to us lovely? Can we love while we have that carnal mind which is enmity? The apostle says we cannot. The emotion which will arise towards an object which is altogether disagreeable to the prevailing temper of our mind, will be and must be an emotion of dislike or hatred, while the emotion which will arise towards an object that is entirely agreeable to us, will be an emotion of love and complacency. Now if God in his providence, or by his Spirit, directs this loving and hating, and sways all its exercises, in perfect accordance with this law of our moral nature, how does he in any respect or in any degree disturb our moral agency? On the contrary, how evident it is, that the sovereign agency of God in thus governing our affections, is the very thing which gives support to our moral agency, and guards it effectually against all infringement from without, or from within. How strange then,—I had almost said, how senseless is the notion, that that very divine agency, on which the beginning and continuance and all the exercises of my moral agency depend, and without which it could not for a moment exist, does after all supersede and destroy it!

Again, I find that I have the faculty or power of willing or determining to do or not to do this or that particular thing. And I find that I always exercise this faculty on particular principles, the chief of which is, that my volitions or the determinations of my will follow my affections, and are governed by them; in other words, I always will in conformity with my predominant affections. If I have such an affection towards any person, I always will to act so as to please him. If I have a predominant affection towards any good, and a predominant desire to obtain it, I always will to act accordingly. To suppose that the acts of the will ever vary from this law,—to suppose that a man ever did or ever will put forth volitions, except in conformity with his affections and desires, is to suppose that which is contrary to the nature of the mind, and which, if it actually took place, would subvert moral agency. I have nothing to do

here with that ambiguous question, whether a man has *power* to will contrary to his predominant affections and desires. I inquire after that which is matter of fact in human nature. *Did* any man ever will to do one thing or another, except in accordance with his affections and desires? And will any one ever do it? Was there ever an instance in past time, or will there ever be an instance in time to come, in which the supposed power was or will be exercised? If we learn what has always been and always must be fact in this case, we discover the law of the mind; and this is all that true philosophy aims at. Whether a man has *power* in this case to act contrary to the laws of his mind, that is, power to will and choose contrary to his affections and desires, I am willing to leave to others, being content myself to ascertain what are the facts in the case, and what are the laws of mental action. If any one should think there is such a power, he will, I hope, remember, that it is a power never developed,—a power which has always lain and always will lie still and dormant in some unseen chamber of the mind. And he will, I hope, tell us, when he finds it convenient, of what use a power is, which never was and never will be used, and which, if it should be used, would occasion a good deal of trouble.

If it is alleged that we do in fact frequently will to do an act which is disagreeable to us, and is thus contrary to our desires, I maintain that the fact is not in the least contrary to the above-mentioned law of the mind. For, when the case referred to is examined, it appears at once that the volition follows a desire for an ultimate good, and the disagreeable act which is chosen, is not chosen for its own sake, but as a means to that good on which the predominant desire is fixed. So that volition in this case, as much as in any other, is in accordance with the predominant desire. Indeed, what is volition but affection and desire acted out in reference to its object?

Now for the application of this to the subject. If the government which God maintains over moral agents in respect to their volitions is always correspondent with this settled principle or law of their mental constitution—if he so influences them, that all the acts of their will are conformed to their inclinations and desires; it is clear that the agency he exercises in his government is so far from infringing their moral agency, that it preserves it entire, and gives it efficacy.

My conclusion then is the same as before;—that there is

nothing in free moral agency which is at all interfered with or disturbed by the universal and controlling agency of God ;—but on the contrary, that the superintending and almighty agency of God effectually sustains our free, accountable agency, and secures it against infringement from all possible causes.

But can the will be *free*, or rather, can man be free in his volitions, on the principle above laid down ? I reply, that man is free in all the respects in which freedom is desirable. To be compelled to act against my will, or to be hindered from acting according to my will, or to be forced, if it were possible, to will contrary to my inclinations and desires, would certainly be a very unwelcome servitude. The liberty which I crave is liberty to act as I please, or according to my will, and liberty to will according to the predominant inclinations of my heart. But if you speak of being free from dependence on God, and free from his sovereign dominion and control,—what Christian does or can desire such freedom as this ? What Christian does not regard his condition of dependence on the wise and powerful and benevolent agency of God, and subjection to his perfect dominion, as the best of all blessings ? What good man would not be distressed, and sink in discouragement, were it not for the belief, that God works and will work in him both to will and to do ? To be free from this gracious agency of God's Spirit, or rather, to be destitute of it, would be instant ruin to the soul.

See how the word freedom is used in other cases, particularly in regard to citizens who are said to be free, or to enjoy civil liberty. Are they free in all respects ? Certainly they are not free from the common laws of nature. Nor are they free from the authority of civil rulers or civil laws. They are not at liberty in all cases to use their own property as they would choose to do, but must use it, or abstain from using it, as the laws require. Nor have all free citizens actually chosen to be under such a government. They are born under it, and are held to submit to it, though to some of them it is exceedingly disagreeable. And in some circumstances they may, by compulsion, be made to act contrary to their wills, and yet they may be under a free government, and may be free men. They may be free, not absolutely, but, what is better, in a qualified sense ; free in various and most important respects. They may have freedom in comparison with what is enjoyed elsewhere ; freedom from oppression ; freedom from unjust laws, and the arbitrary dicta-

tion of a despot, and security to their persons and rights; in short, they may have freedom in the sense in which it is desirable and consistent. Now who will say that citizens, in order to be considered free, must be free in all respects, or in any respects, except so far as they may be so without injury to themselves or to their fellow-creatures?

These remarks apply to the subject of free moral agency. The freedom which may properly be predicated of man, is the freedom which is found actually to belong to him as an intelligent, responsible being. Experience and consciousness show what it is, and how it is exercised, and what are its limitations. Limitations it has; but they are those, which necessarily result from the nature of the subject, and from which no reasonable man would wish to be exempt. Certainly no reasonable man can wish, that human freedom should pass beyond the limits assigned to it, so as to curtail the power of God, or hinder the execution of his holy purposes. No reasonable man can wish for any other freedom than that which God has given him. We turn then to ourselves, and listen to the testimony of our own experience and consciousness, to ascertain what is the kind and degree of freedom which belongs to us. And what I maintain is, that such freedom as this exists unimpaired, under the constant, wise, and all-controlling agency of God, and the supposition, that this divine agency interferes with the proper freedom of man, is totally groundless.

I must defer to another time my remarks on the other topics mentioned near the beginning of this article.

---

## ARTICLE VI.

### THE LANGUAGE OF ANCIENT EGYPT.

By Rev. E. D. C. Robbins, Andover, Mass.

EGYPT has been justly called a land of wonders. Its physical peculiarities have been an unfailing source of interest to the traveller who has watched the changes of its sacred river, and to the naturalist who has attempted to explain the formation of its oases and its delta. The fact of the early cultivation of its inhabitants has excited the mingled wonder, admiration, and

distrust of every generation who have lived since the sages of Greece sat believably at the feet of the priests of Heliopolis and Memphis, and "studied the wisdom," which was but the echo of an age then long past. The fragments of the history of Egypt, preserved in the inspired volume, give abundant occasion for the unquestioning belief of the Christian and for the cavils of the skeptic. They also furnish an armory from which the champions of some of the hardest doctrines of the Bible select their most effective weapons. The Jewish prophets poured out upon this land the vials of their indignation, and the hail, the locusts and the pestilence, the escape of the Israelites from bondage, and the overthrow of Pharaoh's host in the Red Sea, have been a theme for some of the most lofty and spirited triumphal songs of any age or nation.

The works of the 'Memphian kings,' "the greatest monuments of fame," have not failed to awaken the astonishment of all beholders, from the 'father of history' or his predecessor in Egyptian travel, Hecataeus of Miletus, to the last pilgrim who has trodden the soil of the doomed valley. They were long expected to reveal the secrets of olden time. But notwithstanding the enchantments of the magicians and soothsayers of all Christendom, they remained mute, or spoke a jargon which was but "confusion worse confounded." They now, however, utter intelligible language. Though hoary with age and just ready to crumble to dust, they yield up the long concealed secret, and tell us of their origin and design, of those who erected them and dwelt in them, or prepared them for their final home. The manner in which they tell their story, and the reliance to be placed upon it, is what we are particularly occupied with at present.

The ancient Egyptians made use of four different kinds of writing, hieroglyphic, hieratic, demotic, and coptic. The hieroglyphic is termed *γράμματα ιερά* (sacred letters) by Herodotus,\* Diodorus,† and on the Rosetta stone, *ἱερογραφικά* (sacred writing) by Manetho, and *ἱερογλυφικά* (sacred engraving) by Clement of Alexandria. This is the character most commonly employed in Egypt for inscription on public edifices. It is also found engraved on coffins of stone and wood, on vessels of terra cotta, and sometimes on parchment and papyrus rolls.

\* 2. 36.

† 3. 3. Both Herodotus and Diodorus include under this appellation hieratic as well as hieroglyphic writing.

Hieroglyphics are divided by Lepsius into ideographic and phonetic hieroglyphics.\* The former are again divided into hieroglyphics, which are a literal representation of the objects for which they stand (cyrilogic or imitative,†) and those which are used with a symbolic or tropical significance. Imitative characters, as a circle for the sun or a crescent for the moon, were without doubt the first means employed for conveying information among the Egyptians, as also among the Mexicans and Chineses. They were much more numerous in Egypt than in China. M. Abel Rémusat, in his Chinese Grammar, p. 2, computes these at only about 200, whilst in Egypt they amounted to about 800. They were, however, much less frequently used by the Egyptians than might be expected. In the whole hieroglyphic text of the Rosetta inscription only seven characters are strictly imitative.

Tropical hieroglyphics are more frequently employed by the Egyptians, and exhibit several varieties of signification. By synecdoche, a part of a thing is put for the whole; as two arms raised towards heaven, for a person offering sacrifice, or a vase with water escaping from it, for a libation. By metonymy, the cause is put for the effect, or the reverse; as two eyes for the act of seeing. On this same principle we see on the Rosetta stone the pencil or reed by which letters are traced, with the palette having on it the colors black and red, to represent the act of writing or the writing itself. Sometimes a little vase, in which the brush is dipped, is added. Metaphor is very often employed, especially in expressing truths which have nothing directly corresponding to them in the material world; as when a picture of the crocodile is put for rapacity, the sparrow-hawk for loftiness, or the fly for impudence; and various more remote resemblances, as when the folds of a serpent represent the course of the stars, or the palm-branch the year. When the relation of the objects represented and the idea to be expressed were entirely imaginary and conventional, and several of them were united into one figure without the intervention of phonetic hieroglyphics, they are sometimes called anaglyphs. Such were

\* A more common but less philosophical division is into figurative symbolic and phonetic hieroglyphics.

† This word is used in this article, as it is thought less objectionable than *figurative*, which has been more frequently employed by writers on this subject.

many of the symbols for the Egyptian deities ; e. g. an animal sacred to a god, with some of the insignia belonging to the god, are put for the being itself. Representations of sphinxes, too, may be considered as anaglyphs. These figures are often accompanied by legends or placed in situations which explain them ; but when they are not, it is frequently difficult to determine their import. The word *ἀναγλύφη* signifies raised carving, or *bas relief* ; and in accordance with this meaning, anaglyphs were frequently carved on the monuments, both as an ornament and as indicative of the object to which the monument was consecrated. Two classes of characters in Chinese answer to symbolic hieroglyphics in Egyptian, the *kia-tseiēi* (borrowed) and *hoei-i* (combined characters). The latter, however, are of much more extensive use in Chinese. Indeed, while in the Egyptian language they are few, as the anaglyphs, in Chinese they compose a considerable part of the language.

The knowledge we possess of the meaning of ideographic characters is derived from several sources. The first class of them (images) explain themselves. The symbolic figures sometimes stand upon the object which they represent, or are accompanied by a formal explanation in writing. Some of them are found explained by ancient authors, such as *Horapollo*, Diodorus, Clement, Plutarch, and Eusebius. But the testimony of these authors is sometimes contradictory, and should be well examined before it is received. The translations of entire hieroglyphical texts, like that on the Rosetta stone or those found in Hermapion, define the meaning of some of these signs. The phonetic groups which precede the symbols in so many cases are of great service in this particular ; as when the word *king* in phonetic characters is followed by the *bee*, the import of this hieroglyphic is made certain. The connexion in which they are placed in words, with phonetic or even with other ideographic characters already understood, frequently points out the meaning of the symbol, as when the character stands at the beginning of a phonetic group : e. g. the *crux ansata* followed by the letters *nh ñnh* means life ; we accordingly know that this same figure when it stands by itself has the same signification. Other expedients are sometimes resorted to, but it is unnecessary to enumerate them here.

Ideographic are always, even on the oldest monuments, found in connexion with phonetic characters. These last, which derive their name from *qəwṛī*, (sound,) are representatives of sound, and

answer to our alphabetic letters. They compose nearly two thirds of all hieroglyphic writing. The necessity of signs to represent sounds must ever be felt by a nation which has made much progress in civilization, especially if they have intercourse with foreign nations. New words, particularly proper names, will be introduced into the spoken language, and the written language will gradually assimilate to it. Particles also, and grammatical endings, which always arise as soon as a language is much cultivated, cannot be expressed by characters representing ideas merely. The Chinese made phonetic syllables answer this purpose to a certain extent, and in a few cases perhaps the Egyptians did the same, but they generally made use of letters. The general principle of this species of writing is, that the picture of the object stands for the letter with which its name begins in the ancient spoken language of Egypt: e. g., *l* would be expressed by the figure of a lion, whose name *laboi* begins with *l*; *t* by the hand, whose name is *tot*; *r* by a mouth, *rd*, etc. This principle may be illustrated by an English word. If we wished to write Washington in the manner of the Egyptians, we might do it by the picture of a wheel for the *W*, shears for *sh*, a narcissus blossom for *n*, a goose for *g*, a trumpet for *t*, and for *n* the narcissus blossom might be repeated, or some other object whose name begins with *n* substituted for it, and the vowels might be left to be supplied. The whole should then be inclosed in an oval, or parallelogram with rounded corners, and followed by a figure denoting that he was a man; and if we chose to denote him as a conqueror, we might add the sword, and some trophy as a symbol of victory. The analogy between the Egyptian language and the Hebrew, where the name of the letter which is also the name of some object frequently begins with that letter, will not escape the notice of those familiar with that language.

The number of sounds represented in this way by the ancient Egyptians was very few. Lepsius\* limits the signs which are

---

\* When Lepsius (Dr. Richard), the distinguished Prussian Archaeologist, is quoted in this discussion, reference is made to an article by the late Dr. William Gesenius in the *Allgemeine Literatur-Zeitung*, May, 1839, Num. 77, 78, 79, 80, and 81, Seite 1—40. The article is a Review of Champollion's "Grammaire Egyptienne," "Lettre à Mr. le Professeur H. Rosellini sur l'Alphabet Hiéroglyphique, par le Dr. Richard

'everywhere, at all times, and in all circumstances' phonetic, to about thirty, representing fifteen sounds. Some of the two hundred and twenty-one characters which Champollion considered as phonetic were only modifications of each other, for the sake of ornament. Others could only be used phonetically at the beginning of a word : e. g. the *cross ansata*, which by itself is a symbol of life, is a phonetic *ə* only when followed by *nh=ənh*, which word also signifies life. Either the word or the character by itself might be employed as the writer preferred; still others were not used as letters until after the Grecian and Roman dominion in Egypt. The vowel sounds are probably *three* or four, and many of the characters which were at first supposed to be vowels are breathings, like the Hebrew *ئ*, after which the vowels, whether of the *a e o* class, were omitted in writing. The consonants correspond to our *b k* (also including *g*), *t* (*d, th*), *l* (*r*), *m n p s sch f ch h*. These were sufficient to designate proper names, especially those of foreign origin ; a multitude of appellatives, often with the addition of a determinative, as *stni* with the bee a symbolic determinative for king ; *irp* with the picture of two wine-cups for wine ; particles and grammatical endings. These different classes of hieroglyphics were not only employed on the oldest monuments on which inscriptions are found, but also continued to be used until the latest times of the monuments.

Hieroglyphics are a species of picture-writing, and exhibit a representation of almost every class of objects in the material creation. We find among them figures of human beings of both sexes, of every age and rank, in all the positions of which the body is susceptible, and also the various parts of the human system themselves ; different celestial bodies, as the sun, moon, stars, the sky, etc. ; quadrupeds, domestic and wild ; birds of various form and plumage ; reptiles, fishes, insects ; vegetables of diverse classes, with flowers and fruits ; various works of art, such as vases, domestic and agricultural implements, and musical instruments ; edifices, private and public, and many geo-

---

Lepsius," and "Horapollinis Niloi Hieroglyphica," edited etc. by Dr. Conrad Leemans. The article is worthy of its distinguished author, and will, I doubt not, be perused with pleasure by those interested in such discussions. I have made use of it in the preparation of the present paper whenever it has been to my purpose.

metrical figures, representations of deities and fantastic beings, and other objects of worship, etc. The number of subjects represented is, however, less than might be supposed. Gesenius says they amounted to only about eight hundred. Champollion computed them at between eight and nine hundred. The different classes into which they are divided, with respect to their origin and the number belonging to each class, may be seen in the "Précis" of Champollion.\* Although these figures are sometimes so disposed among themselves as to please the eye, they are generally brought together in the most incongruous groups conceivable. Objects the most unlike in nature and appearance frequently stand side by side; and if they were intended for the mere ornament of the structures upon which they are found, as has sometimes been maintained, they would need an arranging spirit to move over them as much as the chaotic elements of the first day of the creation.

Hieroglyphics are to be read in different directions even on the same monument. They sometimes stand in vertical columns, yet not like the Chinese characters one under another, but in groups of two or three or more; at other times they are arranged in horizontal lines, and when they accompany paintings and sculptures they are arranged according to the space left upon the stone or wall where the painting is made. They are sometimes to be read from right to left, and sometimes from left to right. The direction of the faces of men, the heads of animals, the angles, prominent or indented parts of inanimate things, indicate where the reader is to begin, and in what way he is to proceed.

The hieroglyphic characters are delineated with very different degrees of accuracy. They are often so minutely represented in respect to figures, and sometimes in respect to color, (the color was at other times conventional,) that the genus and species of animals, for example, are easily determined; and vases and other similar articles exhibit a considerable degree of elegance. When they are thus accurately pictured, whether in bas relief or traced with or without coloring, Champollion gave them the name of *pure* hieroglyphics. These belong in preference to public edifices, although they are sometimes found traced even on papyrus. When the sculptor first traced the figure to be represented, and removed the stone or plaster from

---

\* Vol. I. 316; also compare page 302 seq.

within the tracing, and filled the cavity with mastich or a colored enamel, or merely traced them and painted the interior of a uniform color without any detail, the same author called them *profile* hieroglyphics. This is the character upon the Rosetta stone, and generally in the inscriptions on pillars, statues, funereal vases, amulets, etc. *Linear* hieroglyphics are those where only the most prominent parts of the figure are traced, and just enough of the outlines are sketched to show the general form of the object. Most of the manuscripts are written in this way, also the legends upon the wrappings of the mummies and such like things.\*

The *hieratic* writing is an abridgment of the hieroglyphic. It is the running-hand of the hieroglyphic signs, and is composed of both ideographic and phonetic characters, although the number of the latter is greater than in the original mode of writing, and the former are fewer. The characters used are much changed from the primitive form, and sometimes seem to be entirely disconnected with them and arbitrary; but close inspection shows that they are, at least in general, a mere modification for the sake of simplicity and facility in writing. Champollion makes three classes of hieratic characters. 1. Those which are an accurate imitation of the original character, though much abridged. 2. Those which are an abridgment, not of the whole, but only the principal part of the original figure. 3. Those which are arbitrary. He, however, says that these last, which are not numerous, may originally be derived hieroglyphics, but are now varied so much that the similarity cannot be traced. The same general principles apply here as in hieroglyphic writing. The hieratic character, as the name indicates, was that used by the priests and sacred scribes, and is found upon the papyri which contain treatises upon scientific and religious subjects and the history and astrology of the ancient Egyptians. These manuscripts have been specially serviceable in determining dates and explaining the numerical system employed by this ancient nation. They are always written in horizontal lines, and when the characters are phonetic they always follow the succession of the letters represented; whilst in hieroglyphics the position is sometimes varied for the sake of ornament. Manuscripts in this character are not found of a date anterior

\* See Champol. *Précis*, Vol. I. p. 309 seq.

to the commencement of the eighteenth dynasty, but it is probable that it was sooner used. Although this species of writing answered the purposes of the sacred scribes it was too complicated for popular use, and consequently was modified to suit the wants of the common people.

This modification constitutes the species of writing commonly termed demotic, from the Greek δημος, and is called enchorial upon the Rosetta stone, and epistolographic by Clement of Alexandria. At this stage of the progress of the Egyptian language all imitative signs are rejected. Some symbolic signs are retained, although the language is made up mainly of phonetic characters and the sounds of these characters, which are also fewer; and the language, consequently less copious than in the other two species of writing, was probably shorter and more flowing. It is a curious fact, that most of the ideographic characters retained were symbols of the divinities of Egypt and of sacred things, showing how averse the inhabitants were to change in respect to matters of this nature. This kind of writing was used in ordinary transactions of civil and social life, as in epistolary correspondence, contracts of sale, and things of the like nature. It is also sometimes found engraved on stone, as on that found at Rosetta, and a similar one now deposited in the Turin Museum. This, as we should naturally expect, is of much more recent origin than the hieroglyphic and hieratic writing. No traces of it have been discovered of a date earlier than the seventh century before the Christian era.

These three different species of writing continued in use until the third century after Christ. The Roman Emperors Caracalla and Geta are the last which appear in the hieroglyphics, and the most modern manuscript known in the hieratic and demotic character is one in the Leyden Museum, which Professor Reuvens attributes to the beginning of the third century. About that time the Egyptian language underwent an important change. The Greek alphabet was adopted into that language. Of the twenty-four Greek elementary sounds, eighteen are correspondent to the same number in the Egyptian language, and these consequently were made to express those sounds. The remaining six Greek letters were also retained, but not often used, except in writing Greek and Roman words. There were still seven sounds in their language which they had no character to express. They accordingly retained seven of the characters employed in hieratic writing. Thus the Coptic was made up of these three

parts, viz., eighteen Greek letters representing sounds of the native Egyptian language, seven Egyptian characters representing Egyptian sounds, and six Greek letters representing sounds which were not previously employed by the Egyptians.\* This language was spoken by the Coptic inhabitants of Egypt until about a century ago, and is now in use in their churches. The similarity of the Coptic to the ancient hieroglyphic language will appear from comparisons which will be instituted in speaking of the grammatical peculiarities of the more ancient form of the language. It may however be said in general that they do not perhaps differ more than the Chaldee and the Hebrew.<sup>†</sup>

When we compare the writing of the Egyptians with that of the Chinese and Mexicans, it seems certain that they are all alike in their origin. The method first suggested to these three nations so widely separated from each other, for conveying information, is that of a simple representation or picture of the objects about which information is desired to be given. Writing and painting, then, seem to be identical in their origin; and it is worthy of notice, that in the ancient Egyptian language the same word expresses the art of writing and painting, the same word the painter and writer and the painting and writing. Many figures too are common both in inscriptions and paintings. These languages diverged much from each other as the people advanced in cultivation. The Mexicans merely combined simple images to express complex ideas. If, for example, they wished to convey the idea of royal authority, they would do it by the picture of a man surrounded by the ensigns of royalty. If it was desired to show that the king had taken a town in battle, they would combine with this picture a shield crossed by a spear, and a house for the town, with something characteristic of the particular town taken. If four cities were subdued, they would repeat the towns and houses four times. The characters termed *hoët-i* (combined) in *China* and the anaglyphs of the Egyptians are similar to these. But the common method among the Egyptians for communicating such ideas has already been sufficiently illustrated.

It is evident that the Egyptian language had passed through several stages of improvement at the time when the oldest inscriptions which have been discovered were made, more than

---

\* Champollion, *L'Egypte sous Les Pharaons*, p. 48.  
† Lit. Zeit. article before referred to, p. 141.

two thousand years before Christ, or within three hundred years of the date attributed to the deluge. It must in all probability have taken a considerable time for the language to pass from simple pictures to symbolic characters, and from symbols to phonetic signs. To the degree of cultivation indicated by these successive improvements in their language the Egyptians had arrived, when the inscription was made in the tomb near the first pyramid of Geezeh. We infer not only the early civilization of Egypt from their language, but we learn something of their subsequent history. There was a permanence about this nation which is indicated by their language as well as their remains of architecture and sculpture. The same language must have continued with gradual improvement, but without material change in structure, for nearly two thousand five hundred years. If, as it is supposed, this nation was ruled for a time by foreign conquerors, the Hyksos, they seem to have retained their original language. They made it more suitable for particular purposes by the abbreviation which appears in the hieratic and demotic character, but the original method of writing was not superseded. During several hundred years, whilst the sculptor with his chisel was carving hieroglyphics upon the imperishable rock, and the sacred scribe was delineating his zodiac with the accompanying astrological documents, or writing the rituals for temple-worship or for the dead in the hieratic character, the steward was taking account of his master's flocks and herds, and the daughter or brother was inditing an epistle in demotic for the group which gathered around the paternal hearth, and the Mokattam and the mountains of Lybia echoed with the sounds which were afterwards represented in the Coptic letters. The same language was not only used over all of Egypt, at Heliopolis, Memphis, Thebes, and E'Souan, but also all along the deserts of Nubia. But a change at last came over this nation. Persian, Greek, and Roman, successively swayed the sceptre of the Pharaohs. The city with its hundred gates, its colossi, obelisks, and massive palace-temples, was in ruins. The Memphian chivalry had been robbed of its former glory. Memnon was no longer vocal. The fire had gone out on the altar of Pthah, and the priests of On and Heliopolis, shorn of their strength, had become as other men. The blood of Sesostris and Remeses had long ceased to flow in royal veins, and the nation, 'broken and peeled,' yet proud in its ruins, was compelled to adapt its customs and practices, and even its lan-

guage, to its foreign conquerors, once despised, but now hated. Then were the words of prophecy applicable to this land : "The spirit of Egypt shall fail in the midst thereof." "The fishers shall mourn," etc.\*

Several grammatical peculiarities of the ancient Egyptian language, as pointed out by Champollion and Lepsius, next deserve attention. It was evident to Champollion before he had deciphered many words in the inscriptions, that the vowels were frequently omitted, as in ancient Hebrew and modern Arabic. But the general principle of their omission was first established by Lepsius. This author has shown that the vowel is not generally written in the middle of a word, but when there is a concurrence of two or more vowels, one of them is commonly retained: e. g., the word *Souan*, Syene, would be written *Soun*; *tōout*, statue, *tout*. Even when the vowel was pronounced in the middle of a word, it was sometimes written at the end, as *imo* for *iom*, sea; *rri* for *rir*, swine. It may, however, be a question whether this peculiarity was not sometimes caused by the shape or size of the hieroglyphic, as in the word *rri* the two mouths representing the two *r*'s, are written under each other when transposed, and consequently require no more space in the line than one of the characters by itself. The extent occupied and the appearance of the word might be of considerable importance, when the inscription accompanied a painting; and in a language so peculiarly monumental might therefore modify the method of writing a large class of words. Letters corresponding to the vowel-letters *ن*, *ي* and *ه* in Hebrew, and the similar letters in Arabic, were also employed in Egypt.

The Egyptian *article*, masc. *p* or *pi*, is represented by a square, or a bird with outstretched wings; fem. *t* is always expressed phonetically, and is added to substantives, whether ideographic or phonetic. The former is prefixed like the Heb. *ת*, and the latter generally suffixed so as to answer to the feminine termination *ن*, or the definite article in the Chaldee and Syriac, which is added at the end of the substantive, making what is called the emphatic state. In Coptic the article, whether masculine or feminine, is commonly prefixed to the substantive. The plural article in both genders is *ne* or *ni*, with the occasional addition of the sign of plurality.

*Nouns* were expressed either by a simple representative of

---

\* *Isaiah xix.*

the object, by a symbol, or by phonetic characters. But they were not satisfied with simply expressing the thing in one way. Inverting the order of an artist of whom all have probably heard, they wrote the name of the object in letters, and then added the picture or symbol of the object; e. g. the word *eh* (Copt. *ehe*), bullock, is followed by a picture of that animal, or *kk* (Copt. *kake*), darkness, by a representation of the starry heavens. Symbols merely denoting the genus or the class to which an object belongs, as the name for a bird followed by a goose, to show that it belongs to the feathered tribe, were very common in Egypt. Names of persons are also followed by determinatives, showing whether they belong to gods or men, whether they are male or female, foreigners or natives, friends or enemies. For example, they designated foreigners by a club, a barbarian weapon, and on the historic inscriptions of the Remesseum, or palace of Remeses the Great, and the palace of Karnac at Thebes, there is the name Soheta (Scythian) followed by a determinative, to show that the individual was a leader of that barbarian nation.

The gender of nouns is indicated by the article or the appellative, or a small straight line for the masculine gender, and a segment of a circle, either with or without this line, to denote the feminine gender. It has been suggested whether these last signs are not an abbreviation of the figure of both the sexes of the human race.

The *dual* number is used, as in Hebrew, to designate things that are in pairs; and it may be expressed by repeating ideographic signs, as the picture of two eyes or of two ears, or, phonetically, by two short vertical lines. In ideographic writing, the *plural* is indicated by repeating the sign three times, as three geese or three men for geese and men. The word is repeated three times when a thing is expressed phonetically, *soudn*, *soudn*, *soudn*, or three vertical lines one under the other are employed for the same purpose. The phonetic syllable *on*, *n*, *ion*, either with or without the vertical lines, indicates the same thing; as *souden n soudenion*, King of kings.

Nouns were not declined in ancient Egypt. Cases were designated by the position of the word in the sentence, or by prepositions. The nominative generally begins a clause, and the verb follows it. The genitive may be designated by its position after the governing noun: e. g., a goose with its head to the right, having a circle representing the sun over it at the

left, signifies son of the sun. This case is however more generally pointed out by the preposition *n*, *m*, *nt*. *N* or *l* (*r*) stands before the dative. This last preposition is compared with the Semitic *בְּ*. The accusative follows a verb or preposition, and the preposition *en* or *in* precedes the ablative.

The form of the personal pronoun and its use are of special interest, from its similarity to the Semitic languages of Asia. It has a full form, as when it stands alone, and an abbreviated form when it is suffixed to other words, and fragments of it are added to the verb in inflection. The first person *ank* or *nk* (= Heb. *אָנָּךְ*), shortened to *a* or *i* in the suffix state, always has with it an ideographic character, to show whether it designates a man or woman, king or god.\* The fragments of pronouns added to nouns, and answering to our possessive pronouns, may be suffixed as in the Heb.; e. g. *si-a*, my son, *si-k*, thy son, or inserted between the article and noun, as *p-a-si*, my son, *p-ek matoi*, thy soldier. These pronouns are also, as in other oriental languages, suffixed to verbs as the object of

\* The following list of pronouns is placed here, both as an illustration of the Egyptian language, and to show the striking analogy between that and the Semitic languages of Asia.

Pron. Sep.	Affixed to the verb.	Suffix.	Heb. Pron. &c.
1. ank or nk	— i	ti a i	anoki, ani (suf. i)
2 m. entk or ntk	— k	k	atta Arab. anta Syr. & Chal. ant
2 f. ento or nto	— t	t	att, Arab. anti, &c.
3 m. entf or ntif	— f	f	hn, the same in Syr. & Chal. (suf. u. o. v.)
3 f. ents nts	— s	s	hi
Plur. 1st, anon	— n	n	anohnu, anu, nohnu (suf. nu)
— 2. entoten or ntoten	— tn	tn	attem, atten (suf. chem chen)
— 3. entsn or ntsn	— sn	sn	hem (suf. hem)

It will be noticed here that the syllable *an*, *anth*, *enth*, in the Egyptian pronoun, is dropped when it is appended to nouns or verbs; so in the first and second persons in Hebrew and the cognate dialects, with some modifications. Gesenius says, this syllable appears to be a kind of article or general pronoun; and he refers to the Heb. *אֲנָה* *אָנֹרֶךְ* and the Egyptian relative *ent*, &c., as perhaps having some relation to it. This author also thinks the Egyptian *f*, which is frequently exchanged with *ou*, the same as the *i* in *entf*, and in the feminine the sibilant *s* answers to the *n*, and consequently the *sn*, — *ən* and *ŋn*.

the action ; e. g. *heli-k*, they fear thee. Sometimes union syllables are added, as *meio-ou-k*, they see thee. The relative pronoun is *n̄te*, *nti* (Copt. *ente*, *enti*, et). The article is frequently prefixed to it, *pnt̄e*, *tnt̄*, and with the omission of the *n* it is often found in proper names, as in Pet-Amon, he who belongs to or is consecrated to Amon, or in the Petepetre (Potiphar) of the Scriptures.

Adjectives are never written in imitative hieroglyphics, but always either in symbols, as a papyrus stalk for green, or a little bird for any thing small or base ; or phonetically. In this last case the determinative is usually added in the same way as to nouns ; e. g. with the adjective *young* there would stand the picture of a little child, or a palm shoot, or a lock of hair, with the adjective black.

The substantive verb is very frequently omitted in ancient Egyptian. The pronoun is seldom substituted for it, as very often in Coptic and some of the Semitic languages. The indeclinable *o* (= אֹ), *ouon*, and *iri*, which literally means *to do*, are frequently used as synonymous with the verb *to be*. Verbs were frequently expressed by imitative hieroglyphics, as a figure with the legs extended for the verb *to go*, and the same figure turned around for the verb *to return* ; a person kneeling with the hands raised for *to entreat*. The same verb is often expressed by different figures at different times. Sometimes also the figure is abbreviated, as when two arms with a spear and shield stand for the verb *to fight*. By metonymy two eyes are put for the verb *to see*, or two feet for *to go*, etc. Metaphorically two horns stand for the verb *to shine*. The

Hebrew עַבְדָּה, *to emit rays*, from עַבְדָּה, *horn*, and the Arabic شَرْق, <sup>sun-beams</sup>, are naturally suggested by this. Other similar cases of analogy might be pointed out ; and when this language shall become better understood, without doubt the metaphorical use of many Hebrew words which are now obscure will be explained. A large share of the verbs in ancient Egyptian were written with phonetic characters followed by an ideographic determinative. These determinatives are so entirely analogous to those of nouns that one or two examples will make the principle plain ; e. g. the verb answering to our phrase *to be cunning*, is followed by the picture of a fox, or the verb *to drink*, *to flow*, etc., by the representation of water. The inflec-

tion of the verb is illustrated below.\* The preterite tense is designated by the addition of *n*, as *ai-i*, I go, *nai-i*, I went, *nef i*, he went. The future is expressed by a periphrasis of the verb to be, *o*, *oi*, and the particle *l*, as *i-ol-iri*, I am to do. The imperative mood is like the present tense, but is shown to be imperative by placing before it an interjection—this interjection may be a figure with the hand stretched out as a gesture of calling, or speaking to a person, or by a phonetic syllable.† In order to illustrate some of these principles of the language of Egypt, I will give a clause of the Rosetta inscription in English letters, and such illustrations as can be understood without the hieroglyphic text: *sko hn-t n stn Ptolm̄es onh-sjh-to phth-mai noutr hr nib-ni nōpre*. *Sko* is from the verb *ko* to place, the *s* giving it the causative sense (literally, to cause to erect). It is followed by *two feet* as a determinative. The *k* is expressed by a sistrum called *kelkel*. *Hn-t*, statue, is a word not found in Coptic, where *tōt* is used with the same meaning; the *t* is the fem. article, and the word is followed by the figure of a man as a determinative. *N*, the picture of the turban *Pochent*, designates the genitive. *Stn*, king, is followed by the bee with the fem. article, as a symbolic determinative. *Ptolm̄es* is explained in giving an account of the interpretation of hieroglyphics. In *onh-sjh-to*, the *crux ansata* = *ohn*, life, *sjh* is the particle *to*, *unto*, and *to*, expressed by a straight line, means world, (Heb. סְבִיבָה).

\* The present tense of the hieroglyphic and Coptic verb to give (root *t*) is given here as indicating the relationship of these two languages, and also the similarity, especially of the more ancient verb, to the Heb. in its inflection.

Hierogl.	Copt.
1. t-i or t-ti	ei-t
2 m. t-k	k-t
2 f. t-t	k-t
3 m. t-f	f-t
3 f. t-s	s-t
1. Plur. t-n	n-t
2. t-tn	tetn-t
3. t-sn	on-t, se-t

† For the other forms of the verb, see All. Lit. Zeit. Mai 1889, Num. 80, S. 32, and also on the whole subject of the etymology of the language so briefly and imperfectly discussed here, S. 26-32.

Phth-mai, beloved of Phtha. *Noutr* = God, and *hr*, probably face, with the determinative of two feet, signifies appearing, and here Epiphanes. *Nib* = lord, *ni* prep. before the genitive *noutr*, good.\*

The doubt may still exist in the minds of some whether these results are certain. In order to aid in dispelling this doubt, it will not, perhaps, be amiss to give some account of the process which led to these discoveries. We might expect to obtain from the Greeks who studied in Egypt, all of the treasures of knowledge concealed in the mysterious writing of that ancient nation, or at least all of the information we need with regard to their language. But the priests did not lift the ‘veil of Isis’ before unhallowed eyes. They cared more to administer to the credulity of the good-natured admirers of the antiquity, wisdom, and piety of their ancestors, than to communicate truth. Even Herodotus† shows that he was grossly ignorant of the Egyptian language, and was thus betrayed into the most palpable errors. Clement of Alexandria is the only one who gives any definite information on this subject. The profane historians all confound hieroglyphic with hieratic writing, and they also seem to suppose that the knowledge of this sacred dialect (including both the hieroglyphic and hieratic) was confined to the priests. Diodorus‡ says this expressly, but the situations in which it is found, showing its common use, utterly preclude such a supposition. Clement not only speaks of three species of writing among the Egyptians, but says that they were all “learned” by those who made any pretension to an education. The epistolographic (demotic) letters they learned first, then the hieratic, and lastly the hieroglyphic.§ It is also now supposed that this father

\* See Ges. s. 36 seq.

† Wilkinson in his ‘Ancient Egyptians,’ Vol. I. 17, as an example of this author’s ignorance of the language of the people among whom he travelled, states, that when the priests, speaking of their ancestors, said that each was a “piromis son of a piromis,” he did not understand even this common word *ρόμι* (man) with the article *πι*.

‡ B. iii. 3.

§ The passage is as follows: Αὐτίκα οἱ παῖς Αἰγυπτίοις παιδενόμενοι, πρῶτον μὲν πάτερν τὴν Αἰγυπτίων γραμμάτων μέθοδον εκμαθάνονται, τὴν ἐπιστολογραφίαν καὶ ἡγεμόνην δευτεραν δὲ, τὴν ἵερατικήν, ἣ χρῶνται οἱ ἱερογράμματεις· ὑστάτην δὲ καὶ τελευταλαν τὴν ἴερογλυφικὴν. Stromat. V. 651, ed. Potter.

recognizes the use of phonetic characters in Egypt, although he was not formerly so understood. Speaking of hieroglyphics, he says they are of two kinds: ἡς ἡ μέν ἐστι διὰ τῶν πρώτων στοχείων κυριολογική, ἡ δὲ συμβολική, one of which expresses ideas by the sounds of the words, and the other by symbols.\* But Clement stands alone in respect to this matter among Greek and Roman writers. It should not seem strange then, that when, with the revival of literature, curiosity began to awake concerning the monuments of Egypt, crude hypotheses and fanciful theories were broached, where even those who had so comparatively good opportunities for acquiring information, knew so little. Where Herodotus and Diodorus blundered, a Cöylus or a Montfauçon should not be *too* severely censured, even though they presented fanciful reveries as well established facts.

But these absurdities were carried to an extent by Kircher and those of his school which can hardly be accounted for on any principles of analogy, or in accordance with the common laws of belief. We do not wonder, therefore, that the infidel turned to this province, so well suited to his purpose, it being “neither sea nor good dry land,” in order to sustain his opposition to that part of the inspired volume which has reference to Egypt. And it is not so strange as it might at first appear, that amidst so much confusion the sincere believer in revelation, less wise in his generation than the children of this world, should be almost lost in the mazy labyrinth, or staggered by the handwriting on the walls of these wonderful structures of the opposers of the chosen people of God. We will enumerate a few of the theories of the early investigators of Egyptian antiquity, in order to account for the incredulity which has been felt and uttered in some quarters ever since the publication of the works of Champollion and other eminent archæologists of the present century.

Father Kircher, who published two volumes in quarto and four in folio (the last in 1652) upon Egypt, was able to read hieroglyphics in any way, beginning at the right or left or in the centre of the inscription, that might aid his pre-established notions. We cannot wonder, then, that the imagination which enabled

---

\* In proof of this interpretation of the passage, see Champollion's *Précis*, p. 378 seq. and Greppo's *Essay on the Hierogl. Syst.* p. 30.

him to give an accurate delineation of the interior of Noah's ark, and a natural history of each of the animals preserved there, should be equal to the task of framing from the hieroglyphic inscriptions a complete system of Cabballistic science, accompanied by the most monstrous reveries of a refined demonology. A good specimen of his interpretation is found in Champollion's *Précis*, p. 436, where the word *Aotkrtr*, (*Ἄντροκάτηρ*) the Emperor, found on the Pamphylian obelisk at Rome, is said to express emblematically the following ideas: "The author of fecundity and all vegetation is Osiris, of which the generative faculty is derived from heaven by saint Mophtha." Well might Jablonski say of him, "he deceives his readers, and sells them smoke." But these absurdities did not cease with him who first promulgated them. A more recent author has asserted, that the hieroglyphics upon a large temple at Denderah, which among other things contain records of the dedications of several Roman Emperors, are a translation of the hundredth Psalm of David, placed there to call the people to worship. According to others, the hieroglyphic legends are simple Hebrew expressed in a different character from the usual one; and the inscription on the Pamphylian obelisk is an account of the triumph of the Holy Trinity over the infidels in the sixth century after the Deluge. The natural consequence of such crude speculations was to involve Egypt in thicker darkness than before. The learned had become wearied with so many vain attempts to penetrate the mysteries which the Egyptian priests were supposed to have concealed from the uninitiated. Revelations enough had been made from the sanctuaries of Iris and of Pthah, but they had ever proved as ambiguous and as absurd as the responses of the Theban Apollo or of Delphos. Gleams of light had been emitted from time to time from the recess of some half buried temple or newly opened sepulchre, but they had proved to be the result of fire kindled by unhallowed hands, or the vaporous lights which are wont to hover over the abodes of the dead. Champollion justly says, in view of these investigations, that only the single opinion, "that it was impossible ever to acquire that knowledge which had hitherto been sought with great labor and in vain," appeared to be well established.

Such was the state of feeling until near the close of the last century. George Zoëga, a learned Dane, published at Rome in 1797 his work entitled: "De Origine et Usu Obeliscorum."

The author gave exact copies of hieroglyphic inscriptions, and suggested that the groups contained in the oval lines, now termed cartouches, might be proper names. He also, as well as Warburton, who had previously published an entirely theoretical discussion of the passages found in ancient authors upon the Egyptian language, suggested the probability that characters representing sounds, and first termed phonetic by him, were used. But he did not substantiate his conjecture, and consequently but little notice was taken of it at the time. It is true that Kircher, Montfaucon, and others, had previously published representations of Egyptian tablets, but they were executed with so little care that they furnished no just idea of the copies from which they were taken. The good work begun by Zoëga was prosecuted with zeal by the commission of learned men who accompanied Buonaparte's expedition into Egypt. The publication of the results of their investigations, with the numerous representations of ruins and the fac-similes of inscriptions, although some of them have since proved to be inaccurate, did much for the cause of Egyptian Archæology, not only by the direct diffusion of information, but by interesting others both to go to Egypt for the purpose of investigation, and to make use of the means offered at home. One discovery made about this time deserves particular attention.

In 1799, while one division of the French army was stationed at Raschid, the present Rosetta, in digging for the foundation of Fort St. Julien they discovered a block of black basalt, which, although much mutilated, proved on examination to contain three inscriptions, one in Greek and two others in distinct and equally unintelligible characters. The Greek inscription was found to be a decree in honor of Ptolemy Epiphanes, and as a relic of the usages of Egypt more than two thousand years ago, is well worth the perusal of all. The closing paragraph is as follows: "And in order that it may be known why in Egypt he is glorified and honored as is just, the god Epiphanes, most gracious sovereign, the present decree shall be engraved on a stela of hard stone in *sacred characters* (i. e. in hieroglyphics), in writing of the country (i. e. in enchorial or demotic), and in Greek letters; and this stela shall be placed in each of the temples of the first, second, and third class, existing in all the kingdom."\* This suggested the thought that the

---

\* Gliddon's *Ancient Egypt*, p. 5.

same document was contained in the other inscriptions upon this stone. By the capitulation of Alexandria this curious monument, with many others obtained from the ruins of Egypt, fell into the hands of the English. A military trophy to the English, it was a more glorious trophy to the world of the resuscitation of a dead nation. The arrival of this stone in England distinguishes the year 1802 as an era in the investigations of Egyptian antiquity. Numerous casts of it were made and copies were scattered throughout Europe. The attention of the learned was everywhere turned to it with hope. The demotic inscription was particularly investigated, as probably furnishing most readily the clue to the long concealed treasure. The result, however, showed that this was an error. The lamented Silvestre De Sacy and the learned Swede Akerblad discovered in the demotic text the groups which stand for the proper names of the Greeks, such as Ptolemy and Arsinoë, and showed that they were expressed by Egyptian letters. Akerblad attempted to extend his readings beyond the Greek proper names, but was unable to advance a step. The reason, as it afterwards appeared, was ignorance of the suppression of the vowels and the use of ideographic characters. Thus the progress of discovery was again checked. Disappointment was felt and expressed from every quarter. The discoveries already made, stimulated curiosity and excited wonder, rather than satisfied by imparting real knowledge. But zeal, enthusiasm and assiduity were not destined to prove fruitless. The way was preparing in several respects for the revelation soon to be made. A succession of travellers, English, French, Italian, were laboriously occupied in removing the sands which had mantled around column and pyramid and colossi for centuries, and in removing the deposites of the Nile which had annually been accumulating over city walls, ruined palaces, and abodes of the dead. All the wonderful productions of old centuries, though yet obscure as to their origin and design, were gradually exposed to view, as light was thrown upon one subterranean enclosure after another. It was becoming certain, that this Nile-valley was no dreamland, and that no Orpheus-lyre ever raised such walls as those of the city with its hundred gates. Men—real, living, breathing men, not phantoms—had left there their impress, but yet it was easy to believe that “there were giants in those days.” We admire the enthusiasm of such travellers as Bruce, Belzoni, and Baron Von Minutoli, and acknowledge with plea-

sure their influence in diffusing information on the subject of Egyptian antiquity ; but we cannot but feel that a little vandalism has been exhibited by too many travellers in tearing, with feelings of rivalry or mercenary motives, from their resting-place the figures and tablets which have stood since, white in their new working and fresh chiselling, they greeted the sun when it shone on a far other world than the present. We have a higher respect for some of later day, who, while they quietly pursue their investigations

“ Where Nile reflects the endless length  
Of dark, red colonnades.”

do not needlessly demolish what the hand of time and the more ruthless human spoiler has reverently left untouched. But we are digressing. Numerous obelisks, broken statues, blocks from temples and tombs, mummy-cases and papyri covered with inscriptions, were constantly accumulating in the museums of Europe, and the attention of scholars was still directed to them, although so often disappointed in their expectations. Previously (in 1800) M. Etienne Quatremère had published a work, in which he had shown that the Coptic was the ancient spoken language of Egypt. This was an important step, as it afterwards appeared, towards the interpretation of hieroglyphics. The learned T. C. Tychsen of Göttingen had also shown that the hieratic character was a mere abridged mode of writing hieroglyphics. The Rosetta stone, tortured into an agreement with various hypotheses, and almost abandoned, was again brought into requisition. In 1819 Mr. Thomas Young of London, after a long study of the inscriptions on this monument, (he had published in 1814, some investigations on the demotic inscription,) made the discovery, that the figures inclosed in the ovals or cartouches were names of kings. He also explained the different signs as representatives of letters, or perhaps, in some cases, of syllables, and made an analysis of the names of Ptolemy and Berenice, and suggested the probable explanation of other groups. But important errors in his system prevented him from advancing much farther. He did not understand that the vowels are not written, as frequently in Hebrew and modern Arabic, and did not seem to have accurately understood the force and extent of the phonetic element of the language, although he analyzed the names Ptolemy and Berenice phonetically. He also, as well as the writers in the “ Description de l’Egypte,” confounded the hieratic with demotic writing, and

gave the name hieratic to linear hieroglyphics. It might have been previously mentioned that the authors of the memoirs in the "Description" supposed, that the hieratic texts were entirely alphabetical, and the hieroglyphic texts, on the contrary, composed wholly of symbols and imitative characters. Champollion,\* taking advantage, it is believed, of previous discoveries by Dr. Young and others, corrected some of their errors and extended investigations much further upon the Rosetta stone. He analyzed the group of characters which seemed to correspond with the *Πτολεμαῖος* of the Greek inscription, and believed that he found signs equivalent to the letters P, T, O, L, M, E, & S (Ptolmēs). Here were seven signs of a phonetic alphabet, but he must substantiate his discovery, which was yet conjecture. The Rosetta inscription did not furnish the means of doing this. Another bilingual inscription was required. Fortunately, Mr. W. J. Bankes had sent to London the copy of a Greek inscription found at the base of an obelisk at Philaë. It was suggested by M. Letronne that this was a translation; and when this suggestion reached Mr. Bankes, in 1822, he sent to Europe a lithograph copy of the inscription on the four sides of the obelisk. Champollion found, on receiving this, that the first group afforded him no assistance, as it was composed of the same letters as the name previously analyzed. The second, which from the Greek translation was supposed to stand for Cleopatra, he proceeded to analyze. The first letter *k*, represented by a quadrant, (*keli* in Coptic,) should not correspond to any letter in Ptolemy, which was found to be the fact. The second letter, a *couchant* lion (*labori* in Coptic), was the same as the fourth figure in the preceding group. The third sign, a feather, represented ē (epsilon), as the two feathers in Ptolemy represented ē (η). The fourth character in this group consisted of a flower with the stem bent back, and corresponded to the third sign, o, in Ptolemy. The fifth, a square, corresponded to the first figure in Ptolemy. The sixth, a hawk, representing a, ought not to be found in Ptolemy, and is not. The seventh character, an open hand, represents t, the second letter in Ptolemy, which is there represented by a

\* Those interested in the question of priority of discovery between Champollion and Dr. Young, can see a discussion of it in the "London Quarterly Review" for Feb. 1823, Gliddon's *Ancient Egypt*, p. 6 seq. and various other authors on the subject of the antiquities of Egypt. The object of the present article is to give general facts merely.

half circle, the two signs both standing for the same letter, as was subsequently proved. The eighth sign, a mouth, representing *r*, is not found in Ptolemy, and the ninth, a hawk, == *a*, is the same with the sixth in the same word. This name is followed by the sign of the feminine gender.\* Thus five letters were verified, and the whole stock of supposed letters increased to twelve. Champollion proceeded to read other names of kings and private individuals, and appellations of the deities of Egypt, and also explained grammatical forms. In fine, he conclusively showed that hieroglyphic writing was made up of a mingling of ideographic and phonetic signs. His 'Précis' first appeared in 1824. Subsequent investigations in Italy were made public in a letter to his patron, Duke de Blacas. In 1828 and 1829 he made a visit to Egypt, and afterwards collected the results of all his investigations with reference to the language of Egypt, in his "Grammaire Egyptienne," which at the time of his death, in 1831, was ready for publication. Since his death, the fundamental principles of interpretation, as established by Champollion, have been variously tested by Salvolini, Leemans, Rosellini, Wilkinson, Lepsius, and others, and may now be considered as incontrovertible. Lepsius, who is at the present time in Egypt, pursuing his investigations, has done much for the cause of Egyptian philology by correcting errors in details, and by placing many of the principles of interpretation on a more philosophical basis. In fine, although much remains to be done, we think it cannot be doubted, that not only the true method of interpretation is at last found, but that the principles of the phonetic system, and indeed many of the details as above given summarily and imperfectly, are so well established that all coming Kirchers and De Gebelins cannot mystify, nor all future Klaproths gainsay them.

By these discoveries, new generations seem to have arisen from the dead, and we behold them in "every and of every department of life." We know even less, in some respects, of the comforts and discomforts of the present occupants of the Nile-valley than of those who dwelt there three thousand years ago. No harem walls concealed from view the domestic and social enjoyments and miseries of this ancient nation, as now among the followers of the false prophet. We can almost hear the sound

---

\* See Champoll. Letter to M. Dacier in Sept. 1822; also Greppo's Essay, Eng. Trans. p. 197.

of the lash of the taskmaster as he stands to urge on the poor brickmaker of Thebes, and see the contortions of the captive dragged after the chariot of Remeses, as an offering to his god. We can go with the subjects of the Pharaohs to deposit their king or their priest in his last home, or to the altar where ‘fanatic Egypt and her priests’ deposited their offerings, or poured out their libations to ‘Osiris, Isis, Orus, and their train of wandering gods, disguised in brutish forms.’ But the interest of these discoveries is not limited by the bounds of one nation, although that nation be one of the most ancient and wonderful of which we have any records. The history of neighboring countries was more or less involved with that of ancient Egypt. The Pharaohs carried their conquests south to Ethiopia, and east over a great part of Western Asia. Of these conquests we have minute representations in the paintings and hieroglyphics. One inscription may here be adduced as an example. This is chosen not only for the confirmation of Scripture history which it furnishes, but also for its interest in reference to chronology.

In 2 Chronicles 12: 2—9 it is said that Shishak (Heb. שִׁיחָק) king of Egypt entered Judea with a large army, and captured the walled towns of Judah, and plundered the temple of Jerusalem, and made the people tributary to Egypt. In accordance with this account, a cartouche is found on the walls of the temple at Carnac, surmounted by the very common designation of the Pharaohs, “Son of the Sun,” and containing in phonetic characters the words *Amon-mai Shshnk*, beloved of Amon, Sheshonk. The king, as is usual on the tablets representing the victories of the kings of Egypt, is offering his prisoners, in this case, from more than thirty vanquished nations, to the deity of the temple. To each is attached an oval, showing what district or town he represents. In one of these are the hieroglyphics which stand for I, U, D, H, M, A, L, K, with the sign of the land, which Champollion and Rosellini supposed to mean kingdom of Judah. Although Wilkinson doubts whether this is correct, he does not hesitate to say that this king is the Shishak of the Scriptures.

The Bible, especially the historical and some of the prophetic parts of it, receives various confirmation and illustration from these discoveries in Egypt. Famine compelled the progenitors of the Jewish nation to take refuge in the dominion of the Memphian kings. By their long abode there, their subsequent history and their institutions were necessarily much influenced.

But the limits of the present article do not allow an extended discussion of these points. As far as the Pentateuch is concerned, at least, it has already been done by others. The utility of the investigations of hieroglyphic language in a philological point of view, will not escape the notice of those who are familiar with the Hebrew and its cognate dialects. Its similarity to those languages is striking in many points. Sometimes it agrees with the Hebrew, when that differs from the Aramaean and the Coptic. At other times it agrees with these where they differ from the Hebrew. It seems certain that it belongs to the same general family of languages with those of Western Asia, and its undoubted antiquity also enhances its value in comparative philology.

Every student of the Bible, every one interested in the early history of his race, will bid those now making investigations among the tombs of Egypt, or in the museums of Europe, 'God speed.' The discovery of the key to these concealed treasures, seems to have been just in season to save them from oblivion. For the condition of many of the monuments is that of ruin. The hand of time has pressed heavily upon them, but the hand of the spoiler more heavily. Scythian, Persian, Greek, Roman, Arab, and Turk, have all labored to despoil that long line of kings, extending even to the fabulous reign of the gods, of their rightful honors. The sands of the desert, and even the sacred river, false to its faithful worshippers, have emulated them. The opening of those dark and silent abodes of the dead, where a gleam of light nor a breath of air has penetrated since the royal seal was first placed upon them, hastens the decay, already far advanced. Pillars are splitting and slipping from their bases, ceilings are falling in fragments, and the paintings are peeling off in scales. What then is done in this department of archæology must be done quickly.

## ARTICLE VII.

## THE PATRIARCHAL RELIGION, AS DEVELOPED IN THE BOOK OF JOB.

From the Introduction to Barnes's Job.

## INTRODUCTORY NOTE.

WE are happy to have the privilege of presenting to our readers, in advance, an extract from the Introduction to a Commentary on the Book of Job, by ALBERT BARNES, now in the press of Leavitt & Trow.

It presents a clear and condensed view of the religion of the patriarchs in the time of Job, and gives promise of a rich treat for the scholar and the Christian in the Commentary itself.—ED.

ON the supposition that this book was composed at the time supposed, then it is an invaluable document, in regard to the nature of the patriarchal religion. We have comparatively few notices on that subject in the book of Genesis, and this volume supplies a chasm which it is of the greatest importance to fill up in order to understand the history of the world. We may suppose, without impropriety, that the mind of Job was imbued with the principles of religion, as then understood by the patriarchs ; that he was acquainted with the traditions which had come down from more remote periods ; that he was apprised of the revelations which had then been communicated to mankind, and that he practised the rites of religion which were then prevalent among the true worshippers of God. If this is so, then it will be of interest and importance to bring together, in a brief compass, some of the notices of the patriarchal religion scattered throughout this book.

(1.) The existence of one Supreme God, the infinitely wise and glorious Creator of all things. In the entire book, God is spoken of as *one*, nor is there an intimation by any of the speakers that there is more than one God. There are no allusions to a *good* and an *evil* principle contending in the universe, nor any trace of the doctrine, which subsequently became prevalent in the East, that such contending principles existed. No sentiments occur, like those which were afterwards embodied in Persia respecting the existence and conflicts of Ormuzd and Ahriman

(see Creuzer, *Symbolik und Mythologie*, Erster Band, 226 seq.; and Neander, *Geschichte*, 2, a. 219 seq.,) or what became subsequently the doctrine of the Manichæans. The religion of the book of Job is, throughout, a pure *theism*. This fact is remarkable, because the subject of the controversy, the mingled good and evil in the world, was such as constituted the foundation of the argument for *dualism*, subsequently, in a considerable portion of the Oriental world.

The characteristics ascribed to God in this book, are such as are everywhere attributed to him in the Bible, and are far above any conceptions which prevailed of him at any time among Pagan philosophers. He is *almighty*, ch. 5: 9. 6: 4. 9: 5-12, *et al.* He is *omniscient*, ch. 11: 11. 21: 22. He is *wise*, ch. 12: 13. 24: 1. *Inscrutable*, ch. 11: 7-9. 36: 26. *Invisible*, ch. 9: 11. He is the *Supreme Governor of the world, and the regulator of its concerns*, ch. 5: 9-13. 8: 4-6. He is the *Creator of all things*, ch. 4: 17. 10: 8-11. 35: 10. 38: 4-10. He is *perfectly pure and holy*, ch. 15: 15, 16. 25: 5, 6. He is *eternal*, ch. 10: 5. He is a *spiritual being*, ch. 10: 4. He is *gracious*, and is *ready to forgive sin to the penitent*, ch. 5: 17-27. 11: 13-19. 22: 21-23. 33: 23-28. He is a *hearer of prayer*, ch. 33: 26. 12: 4. 22: 27. He is the *dispenser of life and death*, ch. 4: 9. 10: 12. 33: 4. He communicates his *will by revelation to mankind*, ch. 4: 12-17. 33: 14-17.

In these, and in numerous other passages in the book, the existence and attributes of the One Supreme God are stated with perhaps as much clearness as in any part of the Bible, and in a manner infinitely superior to any statements respecting the divine character and perfections in any other ancient books, except those of the Scriptures.

(2.) The universe was created by this one great and glorious God. It was not the work of chance; it was not the creation of any inferior beings; it was not eternal. A single passage is all that is necessary to be referred to on this point—a passage of unequalled sublimity, ch. 38: 4-11—

Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth ?  
Declare if thou hast understanding.  
Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest ?  
Or who hath stretched the line upon it ?  
Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened ?  
Or who laid the corner stone thereof ?  
When the morning stars sang together,  
And all the Sons of God shouted for joy ?

Or who shut up the sea with doors,  
 When it broke forth as if it had issued out of the womb ?  
 When I made the cloud the garment thereof,  
 And thick darkness a swaddling-band for it,  
 And broke up for it my decreed place,  
 And set bars and doors,  
 And said, " Hitherio thou shalt come but no further ;  
 And here shall thy proud waves be stayed ?"

(3.) He is the Moral Governor of all his intelligent creatures, dispensing rewards and punishments according to their character. It is unnecessary to refer to particular passages demonstrating this, as the whole of the controversy in this book turns on it. The fact that God thus governs the universe, and that he punishes the evil and rewards the good, is assumed on both sides in the controversy, and is never called in question. The point of inquiry is, In what manner is it done? One of the parties maintains that the dispensations of God here are strictly according to human character, and that character may be fairly inferred from those dispensations; the other denies this, but maintains that there will be a *future* retribution, that will be strictly in accordance with justice. Comp. Notes on ch. 19: 23-27. *Somewhere*, and *somewhat*, it seems to have been held by all parties, God would show himself the friend of the righteous and the punisher of the wicked.

(4.) The existence of *angels*, or a superior rank of holy intelligences, is asserted. In ch. 1: 6, it cannot be denied that by "the sons of God" who came to present themselves before God, holy beings superior to men are denoted, and that it is designed to represent this scene as occurring in heaven. It is further implied there, that they came together from an important service, *as if* they had been absent, engaged in some ministry to other parts of the universe, and returned now to render an account, and to receive a fresh commission in their work. The term 'son of God' is used in Daniel 3: 25, comp. 28, to denote an angel. Angels also are, undoubtedly, referred to in ch. 15: 15—

Behold, he putteth no trust in his saints;  
 Yea, the heavens are not clean in his sight.

The express mention of "the heavens" in the parallelism, as well as the contrast between the "saints" or holy ones here referred to and *man*, (vs. 14, 16,) proves that the 'holy ones' are angels. It is possible also that in a parallel expression in ch. 25: 5, there may be a reference to angels.

Behold, even to the moon, and it shineth not ;  
Yea, the stars are not pure in his sight.

The declaration in ch. 15 : 15, demonstrates that the received opinion then was that the angels were far inferior to God. They are spoken of as holy beings; as superior to men; as eminently holy in comparison with the most holy men, but still so far inferior to God that they were comparatively impure.

In ch. 5 : 1, also, there is probably an allusion to angels :

Call now if there be any to answer thee ;  
And to which of the saints wilt thou turn ?

And in ch. 38 : 7, they are mentioned as having been present at the creation of the earth, and as celebrating that great event with a song of praise :

When the morning stars sang together,  
And all the sons of God shouted for joy.

If the book of Job was composed in the time which I have supposed, as stated in the previous parts of this Introduction, then these are among the earliest notices of the heavenly hierarchy that we have in the sacred volume. They imply that the existence of superior intelligences was an undisputed fact that might be used for the sake of argument and illustration; that they were evidently holy, though far inferior to God; that they performed important offices in the administration of the universe, and that they were under the control of the Almighty, and assembled together before him from time to time to give their account, and to receive afresh his commands. Early notices of the existence of angelic beings may be found also in Gen. 19 : 1, 15. 22 : 11. 24 : 7, 40. 28 : 12. 48 : 16. Ex. 23 : 20, Judges 13 : 19. 2 Sam. 24 : 16, *et al.*

It would be impossible now to trace the origin of this belief in the existence of superior ranks of holy intelligences, and it would be inappropriate here to attempt to follow out the *development* of this idea as it occurs in the Scriptures, or as it is found in the early views of the Orientals. The view, however, has always pervaded the Oriental world, of a series of ascending orders of intelligences, employed for various purposes in the administration of the affairs of the universe. See Creuzer, Sym. u. Myth. and Neander, as quoted above. "The ancient Persians," says Mr. Sale, Pre. Dis. to the Koran, sect. iv, "firmly believed the ministry of angels, and their superintendence over the affairs of the world, (as the Magians still do,) and therefore

assign them distinct charges and provinces, giving their names to the months and the days of the months." The Mohammedans probably derived their views on this subject from the Old Testament, intermingled with the fables of the Jews; but it is an interesting fact, that in the country of Mohammed, in the days of Job, the doctrine of the existence of a superior order of intelligences was held in its purity, and without any of the intermixtures of puerility with which the doctrine is intermingled in the Jewish traditions, and in the Koran. See Sale, *Pre. Dis. sect. iv.*

(5.) The doctrine of the existence of evil spirits, was believed with as much certainty. The introduction of the character of Satan, ch. 1 : 11, is conclusive proof on this point. He is a dark, malignant, accusing spirit; one who lives to spy out the conduct of others; who is suspicious of the sincerity of all virtue; who delights in the opportunity of putting virtue to the severest test, with a view to show that it is false and hollow; who delights to give pain. Satan is introduced in ch. 1 : 11, as if it were generally admitted that there were such evil spirits, and as if their character was so well understood that it was unnecessary to offer a remark on the subject. The book of Job, however, furnishes no information as to the prevalent belief whether those spirits were originally evil, or whether they had apostatized from a former state of holiness and happiness. The character of Satan, however, in the book of Job, is such as to render it in the highest degree probable that it was a matter of tradition that *he* had been the agent in the temptation of Adam, and in the introduction of sin into the world. There is a strong resemblance between the feelings with which he looked on Job and those with which he must have regarded man in Paradise; and the general distrust which he is represented as having in the piety of Job, and the conviction which he expresses that if the proper test were applied it would be found to be insincere, is such as we might expect from one emboldened by the successful attempt to alienate man, as he was created, from his Creator. There is, indeed, a slight intimation in the poem itself, that Satan was a fallen spirit that had been once holy and happy. It is found in the expression of the belief of Eliphaz, in two places, that entire confidence could not be put even in the holy angels, as if there had been some revolt or apostasy among them which rendered it possible that there might be more:

Behold, he put no trust in his servants,  
And his angels he charged with folly.

How much less in them that dwell in houses of clay,  
Whose foundation is in the dust.—Ch. 4 : 18, 19.

And again :

Behold, he putteth no trust in his saints :  
Yea, the heavens are not clean in his sight.—Ch. 15 : 15.

Comp. ch. 25 : 5. Language like this would hardly be employed unless there was a belief that even the holiness of the angels was not incorruptible, and that there had been some revolt there among a part, which rendered it *possible* that others might revolt also. Comp. Jude 6 : “ And the angels which kept not their first estate.” These passages, taken together, lead to a clear intimation of a belief that there had been a defection among the heavenly hosts, which was of such a character as to make it *possible* that they who remained there might apostatize also. They are not represented, indeed, as *sinful*; (see the Notes on those passages;) they have a degree of holiness which nothing human can equal; but still, it is not of the same character as that of God: it is not so exalted as to put it above the suspicion that it *might* fall.

(6.) Man, in the time of Job, was regarded as a fallen being, and as wholly depraved. Of the belief that man is fallen, the following passages are full proof :

Shall mortal man be more just than God ?  
Shall a man be more pure than his Maker ?  
Behold, he put no trust in his servants,  
And his angels he charged with folly.  
How much less in them that dwell in houses of clay,  
Whose foundation is in the dust.—Ch. 4 : 17-19.

Man that is born of a woman is of few days,  
And full of trouble.  
Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean ?  
Not one.—Ch. 14 : 1-4.

What is man that he should be clean ?  
And he that is born of a woman that he should be righteous ?  
Behold, he putteth no trust in his saints ;  
Yea, the heavens are not clean in his sight ;  
How much more abominable and filthy is man,  
Who drinketh iniquity like water.—Ch. 15 : 14-16.

There is also an allusion to the manner in which this depravity was introduced into the world :

If I covered my transgressions as Adam,  
By hiding mine iniquity in my bosom.—Ch. 31 : 33.

In ch. 1 : 21, there seems also to be an allusion to the sen-

tence pronounced on man in consequence of the apostasy, and in ch. 10 : 9 it is possible that there may be the same allusion. As the language there used, however, is such as is common in all languages, and such as may be suggested by mere observation, it is not conclusively certain that this reference is to the sentence pronounced on man on account of his sin.

(7.) The necessity of reconciliation with God, in order that peace may be enjoyed, is abundantly stated and enforced.

Acquaint now thyself with him, and be at peace;  
Thereby good shall come unto thee.  
Receive, I pray thee, the law from his mouth,  
And lay up his words in thine heart.—Ch. 22 : 21, 22.

Comp. ch. 4 : 17-27. 11 : 13-19.

(8.) The doctrine is taught that, if man was penitent under the divine chastisement, God would receive the true penitent to his favor. See the passages quoted above (7) and the following :

If thou return to the Almighty, thou shalt be built up;  
Thou shalt put away iniquity far from thy tabernacles.  
Ch. 22 : 23.

If there be a messenger with him, an interpreter,  
One among a thousand, to show unto man his uprightness,  
Then he is gracious unto him and saith,  
Deliver him from going down to the pit,  
I have found a ransom.  
His flesh shall be fresher than a child's;  
He shall return to the days of his youth:  
He shall pray unto God, and he will be favorable unto him;  
And he shall see his face with joy;  
For he will render unto man his righteousness.  
He looketh upon men: and if any say, I have sinned,  
And perverted that which was right, and it profited me not,  
He will deliver his soul from going unto the pit,  
And his life shall see the light.—Ch. 33 : 23-28.

(9.) The doctrine was held that man would not live again on the earth; that when he died, he departed to return no more. See this opinion presented with great beauty and force, in ch. 14.

(10.) A very important inquiry next meets us in reference to the question whether man would live after death, and if he did, what would be his condition then. This inquiry is of special importance, if, as has been supposed, this is the oldest book in the world. It will thus throw important light on the development of the idea of the future state, and the belief of the early ages on this point. On this important subject, the following

remarks will probably comprise all the views presented in the book of Job.

(a) There is no distinct and formal statement of the doctrine of the immortality of the soul. Indeed, it would be difficult, if not impossible, to make out from this book that there were any settled views on the subject then prevailing.

(b) There is no mention made of heaven, as a place of rest, or as an abode of holiness. The angels are referred to, and God is often mentioned, and there is, as we shall see, a reference to a future state of being, but there is no distinct conception of heaven as a place where the righteous would dwell together forever.

(c) There is no belief expressed of the resurrection. The only passage which can, by any persons, be regarded as teaching this doctrine, is the celebrated passage, ch. 19 : 25-27. But that this does not refer to the resurrection of the body, seems to me to be clear, for the reasons which are suggested in the notes on that passage. The remarks also in ch. 14 seem to be conclusive proof that Job did not suppose that the body would be raised up again after it had once been laid in the dust :

For there is hope of a tree,  
If it be cut down, that it will sprout again,  
And that the tender branch thereof will not cease,  
Though the root thereof wax old in the earth,  
And the stock thereof die in the ground ;  
Yet through the scent of water it will bud,  
And bring forth boughs like a plant.  
But man dieth and wasteth away ;  
Yea, man giveth up the ghost, and where is he ?—vs. 7-10.

The same disbelief of the doctrine of the resurrection, or ignorance of it, appears from the following passages :

As the cloud is consumed and vanisheth away,  
So he that goeth down to the grave shall come up no more.  
He shall return no more to his house,  
Neither shall his place know him any more.—Ch. 7 : 9, 10.

As the waters fail from the sea,  
And the flood decayeth and drieth up,  
So man lieth down and riseth not ;  
Till the heavens be no more they shall not awake,  
Nor be raised out of their sleep.—Ch. 14 : 11, 12.

If a man die, shall he live again ?—Ver. 14.

It may be said that these passages only teach that man would not appear again *on the earth* ; that he would not rise up, as the tree sprouts up and lives again. This may be so ; but still, if

they had known of the resurrection at all, these sentiments would not have been uttered. *That* doctrine would have relieved all the difficulty as effectually as the belief that man would be raised up to dwell on the earth would have done.

(d) The doctrine of future retribution is not brought forward as it would have been if it was clearly understood. The reference to a future state of rewards and punishments would have removed all the embarrassment which was felt by Job and his friends. It would have explained the mysterious events in the unequal distribution of rewards and punishments in this life; relieved the difficulty arising from the fact that the righteous suffer and the wicked are prosperous here; and would have kept Job from murmuring and complaining under his severe trials. And though there is an occasional allusion to a future state, yet it is by no means such as would be made now, in arguing on the difficulties which perplexed the minds of Job and his friends.

(e) Yet still, there *was* a belief that man would live after death, or that the grave would not be the end of existence. It is remarkable that the only passages which refer to the subject, or express the belief at all, occur in the speeches of Job; and the manner in which he brings forward the doctrine seems to have made no impression on the minds of the other speakers. Even the reference to the future state by Job himself does not appear to have been designed to turn aside the force of their arguments. The views which he presented on the subject do not seem to have excited any curiosity in their minds, or to have been regarded as of sufficient importance to demand a reply. The views which were entertained by Job on the subject are the following :

(a) The grave was a quiet resting place; a place where toil, and wo, and care would cease.

For now should I have lain still and been quiet;  
I should have slept;  
Then had I been at rest  
With kings and counsellors of the earth.  
Or, as an hidden untimely birth, I had not been;  
As infants which never saw the light.  
There the wicked cease from troubling;  
And there the weary be at rest. Ch. 3: 13-17.

My days are passed;  
My plans are at an end—  
The cherished purposes of my heart.

Night has become day to me;  
 The light bordereth on darkness.  
 Truly I look to Sheol as my home;  
 My bed I spread in this place of darkness.  
 To corruption I say, "Thou art my father;"  
 To the worms, "My mother and my sister."  
 And where now is my hope?  
 And who will see my hope fulfilled?  
 To the bars of Sheol they must descend;  
 Yea, we shall descend together to the dust.—Ch. 17: 11-16.

For the numbered years pass away;  
 And I am going the way whence I shall not return.  
 My spirit is exhausted.  
 My days are at an end;  
 The grave waits for me.—Ch. 16: 22. 17: 1.

And surely its mountain falling comes to nought,  
 And the work is removed from his place;  
 The waters wear away the stones,  
 The floods wash away the dust of the earth,  
 And the hope of man thou dost destroy.  
 Thou dost overpower him forever, and he passes off;  
 Thou dost change his countenance, and sendest him away.  
 His sons are honest, but he knoweth it not,  
 Or they are brought low, but he perceiveth it not.—Ch. 14: 18-21.

(b) But though the grave is thus the termination of man's earthly hopes, yet it is not the end of man. There is an abode to which the grave is but the entrance; a world where there is still consciousness, and susceptibility of happiness or wo.

In that world the Shades, or the *Rephaim* reside,—the spirits of departed men :

The shades tremble from beneath ;  
 The waters and their inhabitants.  
 Sheol is naked before him,  
 And Destruction hath no covering.

It is clear here that the world is supposed to be 'beneath'; that it is under the waters; that it is the region of 'Sheol,' to which the grave is the entrance; and that there is a dominion of God over those departed Shades or Rephaim, so that he has power to make them tremble. There can be no doubt that by the Shades or Rephaim here, there is allusion to the *manes mortuum*, the spirits of the dead confined in Sheol. Comp. Isa. 14: 9. Prov. 11: 18. Ps. 88: 10. Prov. 9: 18. Isa. 26: 19.

That world is dark and dismal. There is an obscure light there, but it serves only to heighten the gloom :

**Are not my days few?**

O spare me, and let me alone, that I may take a little ease,  
Before I go whence I shall not return,  
To the land of darkness, and the shadow of death—  
The land of darkness, like the blackness of the shadow of death;  
Where there is no order, and where its shining is like blackness.

Ch. 10: 20—22.

For the bearing of this passage on the belief of the future state, the reader is referred to the notes. This view of the future world is remarkably obscure and gloomy, and shows that even the mind of Job had not such anticipations of the future state as to cheer and support him in the time of trial. The apprehension seems to have been that all the dead would descend through the grave to a region where only a few scattered rays of light would exist, and where the whole aspect of the dwelling was in strong contrast with the cheerful regions of the “land of the living.” To that dark world, even Job felt that it would be a calamity to descend, for though there was an expectation that there would be a distinction there between the good and the evil, yet, compared with the present world of light and beauty, it was a sad and gloomy dwelling-place.

(c) That world was regarded by the ancients as less desirable as a place of residence than this in several respects. It was dark and gloomy. It was entered through the grave, and the grave was only its outer court. They who dwelt there were cut off from the enjoyments of the present life. It was a land of silence. Thus Hezekiah, speaking of that world to which he had a prospect of descending when so sick, says :

I said, I shall not see JEHOVAH ;  
JEHOVAH in the land of the living :  
I shall see man no more,  
Among the inhabitants of the land of stillness.—Isa. 38 : 11.

In like manner it would be a place where the worship of God could not be appropriately celebrated. Thus Hezekiah says :

For Sheol cannot praise thee ;  
Death cannot celebrate thee ;  
They that go down into the pit cannot hope for thy truth.  
The living, the living, he shall praise thee, as I do this day ;  
The father to the children shall make known thy faithfulness.  
Isa. 38 : 18, 19.

A similar sentiment is expressed by David, Ps. 6 : 5—

For in death there is no remembrance of thee ;  
In the grave who shall give thee thanks ?

A similar view of that world appears to have been taken by Job. Indeed, it is not improbable that the view of Job was even more gloomy in regard to that future world, as he lived at a period so much earlier than David and Hezekiah. Successive revelations imparted new light, and the idea of the future state was more and more developed, though in the time of Hezekiah it was accompanied with much that was dark and gloomy. It was reserved for the gospel fully "to bring life and immortality to light." Yet,

(d) In that future world there was some belief that there would be a separation between the good and the bad ; or that the wicked would be visited with *punishment*—though the belief of this is represented as received from travellers ; the faith of foreign lands :

Have ye not inquired of the travellers ?  
And will you not admit their testimony ?  
That the wicked man is kept for the day of destruction ?  
And that he shall be brought forth in the day of fierce wrath ?  
Ch. 21 : 29, 30.

That this 'wrath' refers to punishment which the wicked will experience after death, is apparent from what Job immediately adds, that he well knows that his present life may be one of prosperity, and that he may lie down with honor in the grave, and that the clods of the valley will be sweet unto him.

Who charges him with his way to his face ?  
And who recompenses to him that which he hath done ?  
And he shall be borne [with honor] to the grave,  
And [friends] shall watch tenderly over his tomb.  
Sweet to him shall be the clods of the valley ;  
Every man shall go out to honor him,  
And of those before him there shall be no number.

Ch. 21 : 31-33.

Comp. notes on Isa. 14 : 15-19. It will be apparent from these illustrations, that the views of the future state in the time of Job were very obscure, and this is the reason of the remarkable fact that no particular reference is made in the argument to it, in order to remove the difficulties that were felt in regard to the divine administration here.

(11.) God was to be worshipped by sacrifice and burnt-offerings. It was in this way that Job sought to make expiation for the sins which his children might inadvertently have committed, (ch. 1 : 5, 6,) and that the sins of his friends were to be

expiated ; ch. 42 : 8. This was evidently among the earliest modes of worship, (comp. Gen. 4 : 4. 8 : 20, 21,) and there was, therefore, some idea of the nature of an atonement, or of expiation for sin. I do not see any reason to doubt that Job, in common with all the patriarchs, may have had some conception that these bloody offerings were designed to point to the one great sacrifice that was to be made for the sins of the world ; but there is no intimation of any such belief in the book itself. Of the modes of worship, besides the offering of sacrifice, nothing can be learned from this book, except that sacrifices were to be accompanied with prayer, and that prayer was acceptable to God, and would be heard ; ch. 42 : 8. 33 : 26, 27, 28. 11 : 13-15. Repentance was also demanded, and where there was a penitent heart, the offender would be accepted :

If thou prepare thine heart,  
And stretch out thine hands towards him ;  
If the iniquity which is in thine hands thou wilt put far away ;  
And wilt not suffer evil to dwell in thy habitation,  
Then shalt thou lift up thy countenance [bright] without spot,  
And thou shalt be firm, and shalt not fear.

And thy life shall be bright above the noon-day,—  
Now thou art in darkness—but thou shalt be as the morning.  
Ch. 13 : 13-17.

The religion of the time of Job was a pure theism. It consisted in the worship of one God, with appropriate sacrifices, and with acts of confidence and adoration, and with dependence on his mercy to lost sinners. There is, indeed, no express mention of convocations for public worship ; nor of the Sabbath ; nor of the office of priest. As in the time of Noah, (Gen. 8,) the father of a family was the officiating priest who laid the victim on the altar, so it was in the time of Job ; ch. 1 : 4, 5. In these services there was the most profound veneration for the One God, and the deepest abhorrence of idolatry in all its forms.

If I have made gold my trust,  
Or said to the fine gold, Thou art my confidence ;  
If I rejoiced because my wealth was great,  
And because my hand had found much ;—  
If I beheld the sun when it shined,  
And the moon advancing in its brightness,  
And my heart has been secretly enticed,  
And my mouth has kissed my hand ;—  
This also were a crime to be punished by the judge,  
For I should have denied the God who is above.—Ch. 31: 24-28.

There is nowhere in the book an intimation that the sun, the moon, the stars, or any created being was to be honored as God.

(12.) We have in the book of Job an interesting view of the nature and effects of true piety. The necessity of holiness of life, of trust in God, of integrity and truth, is everywhere insisted on as essential to true religion. To transcribe the particular places where these are dwelt upon, would be to transcribe a considerable part of the book. We may just advert to the beautiful manner in which the necessity of *sincerity* in the service of God is urged, and in which the sin and danger of *hypocrisy* are expressed :

Can the paper reed grow up without mire ?  
 Can the bulrush grow up without water ?  
 Even yet in its greenness, and uncut,  
 It withereth before any other herb.  
 Such are the ways of all who forget God ;  
 So perishes the hope of the hypocrite.  
 His hope shall rot,  
 And his trust shall be the building of the spider.  
 He shall lean upon the building, and it shall not stand,  
 He shall grasp it, but it shall not endure.—Ch. 8: 11-15.

Knowest thou not that from the most ancient times,  
 From the time when man was placed upon the earth,  
 That the triumphing of the wicked is short,  
 And the joy of the hypocrite is but for a moment ?  
 Though his greatness mount up to the heavens,  
 And his excellency unto the clouds,  
 Yet he shall perish forever as the vilest substance.  
 They who have seen him shall say, Where is he !  
 He shall flee away as a dream, and not be found,  
 Yea, he shall vanish as a vision of the night.—Ch. 20 : 4-8.

For what is the hope of the hypocrite when [God] cuts him off ;  
 When he taketh away his life ?  
 Will God listen to his cry  
 When trouble cometh upon him ?  
 Will he delight himself in the Almighty ?  
 Will he call at all times upon God ?—Ch. 27 : 8-10.

(13.) An interesting view of the religion of the time of Job is seen in its influence on morals and manners. Customs in the Oriental world change little, and in Arabia at the present time we have still interesting illustrations of what existed in the days of Job. In the patriarchal times all this was identified with their religion, and there is scarcely even now to be found anywhere more beautiful illustrations of the nature and effects of religion,

in these respects, than occur in the book of Job, and nowhere are there more happy descriptions of the simplicity, the purity, the urbanity of early manners and customs. This is seen in the book of Job in the following respects.

(a) In the perfect respectfulness of manner in their treatment of each other. In all this long controversy recorded in this book, and in all that was said that was harsh and adapted to irritate, there is no *interruption* of the speaker. There is no passionate outbreak. It was a conceded and well-understood matter, that the speaker was to be heard patiently through, and then that the reply was to be heard *as* patiently. No matter how much misapprehension of the meaning of the one who had spoken there might be, no matter what reflection there might be on his motives or character, and no matter how severe and withering the sarcasm, yet there is no attempt to break in upon the speaker. This is understood still to be courtesy in the Oriental world; this was regarded as courtesy among the aborigines of this country; and in this respect the more civilized and polished people of our times might learn something from even the wandering Arab, or the "wild, untutored Indian." Thus Dr. Franklin, (Works, Vol. II, 455,) speaking of the "savages of North America," says, "Having frequent occasions to hold public councils, they have acquired great order and decency in conducting them. The old men sit in the foremost ranks, the warriors in the next, and the women and children in the hindmost. The business of the women is to take exact notice of what passes, imprint it on their memories, and communicate it to their children. He that would speak rises. The rest observe a profound silence. When he has finished and sits down, they leave him five or six minutes to recollect, that if he has omitted any thing he intended to say, or has anything to add, he may rise again and deliver it. To interrupt another, even in common conversation, is reckoned highly indelicate. How different this is from the conduct of a polite British House of Commons, when scarce a day passes without some confusion, that makes the Speaker hoarse in calling to *order*," etc. "It is one of the Indian rules of politeness, not to answer a public proposition the same day that it is made; they think it would be treating it as a light matter, and that they show it respect by taking time to consider it, as of a matter important"—(Ibid. p. 454.)

(b) Respect for age. More beautiful instances of this can no-  
SECOND SERIES, VOL. XI. NO. I. 12

where be found than in the modesty of Elihu, and in the deference which Job said was paid to him in his days of prosperity. Elihu says:

I am young, and ye are very old ;  
 Therefore I was afraid,  
 And durst not make known to you my opinion.  
 I said, Days should speak,  
 And multitude of years should teach wisdom.  
 But there is a spirit in man ;—  
 And the inspiration of the Almighty giveth him understanding.  
 Great men are not always wise ;  
 Neither do the aged always understand what is right.  
 Therefore I said : Harken unto me ;  
 I also will declare mine opinion.  
 Behold I waited for your words,  
 I listened to your arguments,  
 While ye searched out what to say.  
 Yea, I attended to you ;  
 And behold there is no one that hath refuted Job,  
 Or answered his words.  
 They were confounded ; they answered no more ;  
 They put words far from them.  
 And I waited, although they did not speak ;  
 Although they stood still and answered no more.  
 Now I will answer on my part ;  
 Even I will show mine opinion.—Ch. 32 : 6-17.

So Job speaks of the respect that was shown him in the days of his prosperity :

When I went forth to the gate through the city,  
 And prepared my seat in the public place,  
 The young men saw me and respectfully retired before me,  
 The aged arose and stood.  
 The princes refrained from speaking,  
 And laid their hand upon their mouth.  
 The voice of counsellors was silent,  
 And their tongue cleaved to the roof of their mouth.  
 For the ear heard, and it blessed me,  
 And the eye saw, and it bore witness to me.—Ch. 29 : 7-11.

(c) One of the virtues then much dwelt on, as an act of piety, was that of hospitality. This is frequently alluded to with great beauty in the poem, as it is in all the poetry of Arabia now, and in the days of Job was esteemed to be a virtue as essential as it is now in the East.

If I have withheld the poor from their desire,  
 Or caused the eyes of the widow to fail ;  
 If I have eaten my morsel alone,

And the fatherless hath not eaten of it;—  
 For from my youth he grew up with me as with a father,  
 And I was her guide from my earliest days.—  
 If I have seen any one perish for want of clothing,  
 Or any poor man without covering;  
 If his loins have not blessed me,  
 And if he have not been warmed with the fleece of my sheep,  
 Then may my shoulder fall from the blade,  
 And mine arm be broken from the upper bone.—Ch. 31 : 16-22.  
 If my domestics could not at all times say,  
 ‘Let them show one who has not been satisfied from his hos-  
 pitable table;’  
 (The stranger did not lodge in the street;  
 My doors I opened to the traveller—)  
 Then let me be confounded before a great multitude!  
 Let the contempt of families crush me.—Ch. 31 : 31-34.

See also ch. 18 : 5, 6, 21 : 17, and the Notes on those places.  
 (d) In like manner, piety then consisted much in kindness to the poor, the widow, and the fatherless, and to those in the humbler ranks of life. Job’s beautiful description of his own piety in the days of his prosperity is all that is needful to illustrate this :

For I rescued the poor when they cried,  
 And the fatherless when there was none to help him.  
 The blessing of him that was ready to perish came upon me,  
 And I caused the heart of the widow to sing for joy.  
 Ch. 29 : 12, 13.

I was eyes to the blind,  
 And feet was I to the lame;  
 I was a father to the poor,  
 And the cause of the unknown I searched out.  
 And I broke the teeth of the wicked,  
 And from their teeth I plucked away the spoil.—Ch. 29 : 15-17.

Did not I weep for him that was in trouble ?  
 Has not my soul grieved for the poor ?—Ch. 30 : 25.

If I have refused justice to my man-servant or maid-servant,  
 When they had a cause with me,  
 What shall I do when God riseth up ?  
 When he visiteth, what shall I answer him ?  
 Did not he that made me in the womb, make him ?  
 Did not the same One fashion us in the womb ?—Ch. 31 : 13-15.

If my land cry out against me,  
 And the furrows likewise complain ;  
 If I have eaten its fruits without payment,  
 And extorted the living of its owners ;  
 Let thistles grow up instead of wheat,  
 And noxious weeds instead of barley.

## ARTICLE VIII.

**DOMINICI DIODATI I. C. NEAPOLITANI, DE CHRISTO GRÆCE  
LOQUENTE EXERCITATIO.**

Translated by O. T. Dobbin, LL. B. of Trinity College, Dublin.

## INTRODUCTORY NOTE.]

THOSE who have read Hug's Introduction to the New Testament, or a translation of Sect. 10, Part II. in the Biblical Repository, Vol. I. No. 3, p. 530, and the article of Prof. Pfannkuche, Bib. Rep. Vol. I. No. 2, p. 317, are aware that there has been much controversy in respect to the language spoken in Palestine, in the time of Christ and his apostles. This question has been more or less connected with that relating to the language in which Matthew wrote the gospel bearing his name. Those contending for an Aramæan original, are disposed to represent this as the current language of Palestine, at that time; whilst those, on the other hand, who believe in a Greek original, contend that Greek was the vernacular tongue.

On this question Pfannkuche and Hug differ: the former advocating the Aramæan as the prevailing language, the latter the Greek.

The work of Diodati, one of the earliest and most extended on the subject, had become so rare that neither Pfannkuche nor Hug had seen it prior to the writing of their essays. Professor Dobbin, therefore, the editor of the present edition recently published, merits the commendation of the literary world for his enterprise in offering to them an exact reprint of the original Latin. We are also indebted to him for the translation which we have begun to publish and intend to complete in successive numbers of the Repository, probably extending through the present year.

Considering the treatise valuable, we had made up our minds to translate it, but, in correspondence with Prof. Dobbin, ascertained that he had himself undertaken the task. We consequently obtained his consent to furnish the translation for the pages of the Repository. As far as we have compared it with the original, we feel confidence in pronouncing it lucid and accurate.

Diodati has, undoubtedly, made out a strong case, and although he may have erred in carrying his hypothesis to an

extreme, yet the evidence adduced by him, as well as by Hug, proves uncontestedly the general prevalence of the Greek language in Palestine, and renders it certain that Christ and his apostles spoke it freely, if not habitually.

His lucubrations will, at all events, be perused with pleasure and profit, and, we have thought, would give value to our work.

Of Diodati Mr. Dobbin says, in his Preface, "DOMINICK DIODATI, a civilian, the author of the following Exercitation, was born at Naples in the year 1736, of a family distinguished for several generations by literary eminence. He received his education in the University of his native city, and proved by his whole illustrious career that the seed did not fall upon an unproductive soil. His first publication was the Essay, "De Christo Græce Loquente," which appeared in the year 1767. It excited the liveliest interest throughout the learned world, and procured for the author enrolment by acclaim among the members of several Academies, and other literary institutions. Royalty itself condescended to express its approbation of the genius and ability of Diodati, and Catherine II. of Russia forwarded to Naples tokens of her imperial regard. After this publication, his researches were chiefly directed to the antiquities of Italy and Sicily. Besides one or two separate volumes on this subject, he enriched the Transactions of the Academy of Herculaneum (Academy d'Ercolano) with several learned antiquarian papers. He died in the year 1801 in the city of his birth, where a memoir of her distinguished son appeared in the year 1815."

Let our readers judge for themselves of the ability of the Essay, as also of its conclusiveness, after a comparison with the articles from Pfannkuche and Hug.—[ED.

*Dominici Diodati I. C. Neapolitani, De Christo Græce Loquente Exercitatio; Qua Ostenditur Græcam sive Hellenisticam linguam cum Judeis omnibus, tum ipsi adeo Christo Domino et Apostolis nativam, ac vernaculam fuisse. Neapoli MDCCLXVII. Excudebat Josephus Raymundus, Utraque potestate annuente.*

DOMINICUS DIODATI.—TO THE READER.

The desire to learn as much as possible of those who have been celebrated in past times is so common, as to be almost an instinct of our nature. Nor does this propension confine

its researches to those who owe their notoriety to their merits, being such

“Whom rare desert  
Has raised to seats in heaven.”

It embraces those within its range, no less, who have been distinguished only for their crimes. Our curiosity extends not merely to their acts and history, but also to their personal appearance, their features, their carriage, and every habit of their body. It is this which imparts such extreme interest to the description of the persons of Plato, Alexander, Aristotle, Cæsar, Tully, Nero, and others. A likeness of these remarkable men upon a pebble gives it the value of a gem, and as such it decorates the fingers of our wealthy *virtuosi*. Let but antiquity render up some memorial of the illustrious dead, which it has long concealed beneath the soil, and men will hie from afar to gaze upon the relic that has been disinterred, will esteem it beyond price, and count it among the choicest treasures of the world. Now, far be it from us with cynic censure to condemn an enthusiasm so innocent, so unblameworthy as this! But if this feeling be pardonable when indulged in relation to distinguished men, how much more worthy is it of indulgence when the Redeemer of mankind is its object! Francis Vavassor, for instance, has engaged in an inquiry respecting the form and countenance of Christ. Joannes Merekenius has discussed the question, whether he was subject to disease, and marked by any personal blemish. Boilæus has written of his stature, and others, of the number of years he lived, his language, aspect, and innumerable other particulars concerning him. Now, is all this to be denounced as the work of obscure diligence, (*obscuræ diligentiae*) or as labor expended in vain? Shall we say that the commonwealth of letters reaps little benefit from investigations of this nature? In our own judgment, such a sentence would be no less unwise than ungrateful.

Among topics of this kind, none, I am persuaded, can justly claim a higher place than an inquiry into the language which Christ habitually spoke. Sacred philology cannot fail to gain advantage from labor bestowed on such a theme as this. But the subject is one upon which widely differing opinions are held by the learned. Some entertain the notion that Christ and the apostles spoke Hebrew. A few are found contending for Latin as his native tongue. The remainder agree in thinking that the Chaldee or the Syriac was the language which the Saviour

spoke; some patronizing the one, and some the other dialect. In this last opinion, I myself long concurred. But when I came somewhat more minutely to look into this conclusion, I discovered many things which shook my confidence in its truth. In short, I learned to believe that neither Hebrew, Syriac, nor Latin was the vernacular language of the Saviour, but Greek. My proofs I now submit to the judgment of the learned in the following dissertation.

Before, however, the reader enters upon the perusal of the work, I am bound, in common honesty, to state to whom I have been indebted for the idea on which it is founded. A long time since, when pursuing the study of the Greek language at the University of Naples, I had the good fortune to attend the lectures of Jacobus Martorellius, who taught there with distinguished ability. On one occasion, he casually dropped the opinion that the Lord Jesus spoke Greek, an assertion little likely to commend itself to the great body of his pupils, and to myself only attractive from its novelty. Accustomed as I had been from childhood to the perusal of the word of God, I derived from this hint an inducement to continue the delightful practice with increasing ardor. Every thing I now met with, which seemed to bear upon the opinion of the professor, I noted with care. When I had collected materials in considerable quantity, I set about arranging them to the best of my ability, and produced an adumbration of my present work. No sooner had I done so, than the conviction fastened itself upon my mind that the idea of Christ's Hellenism, startling though it might be at first from its strangeness, was amply sustained by the volume of Inspiration, by the testimony of coins, and by the other remains of antiquity. So satisfying to my own mind proved the evidence from these various sources, that I wondered the idea had never been fairly and fully examined before, especially as the language of Christ had long been the subject of controversy, and no common abilities had been employed in the discussion. I had a strong desire to finish my work and give it to the world in print. I paused, however, when I reflected that the path was entirely new. It was tempting indeed to the ambition of him who could say with Lucretius,

"Juvat integros accedere fonteis,  
Atque haurire, juvatque novos decerpere flores,  
Insignemque meo capiti peteret inde coronam,  
Unde prius nulli velarint tempora Musæ."

But a check was instantly applied in my case, by my conscious unfitness for an office which would task the noblest powers and the most extensive erudition. I was further disheartened by remembering the Hebrew proverb, *חָמֵץ בָּרֶךְ כַּסְף וְשָׂרִירָה כַּבְשָׁן*, “Speech is silver, but silence is gold,” and in consequence had almost entirely renounced my design of publication. In this state of perplexity, a sentence of Isaac Vossius in his *Treatise de Sybillinis Oraculis*, which accidentally met my eye, encouraged me to proceed. In it I found this writer maintaining my very position against Simonius, in few, indeed, but unequivocal words. Nothing could have happened more providentially than this discovery of the coincidence between this accomplished scholar and myself, for it decided me at once upon presenting my lucubration to the world.

Such is, in brief, the history of this Essay. I have little to add to what has been said. The reader will perceive that the name of the work, as it appears on the title-page, is different from the running title throughout the volume. The change was made advisedly. The ecclesiastical Censor had the strongest objection (*qui-minime probaret*) to the running title; but this could not be altered, as the sheets were struck off. The title-page presents all the emendation in our power to effect.

Those who would see at a glance the plan upon which I have proceeded, may consult the synopsis which immediately follows. As for the work itself (*vñr*), I have to allege that it is all mine, with the single exception of the fundamental idea, the position I have undertaken to establish (*θέσις*). For this I am indebted to the ingenious persons just named. But for all besides, the arguments, the illustrations, the answering of objections, and the solution of difficulties, I alone am responsible. I venture to hope the reader will not be disappointed in the issue; but of this he will be the proper judge. Should any thing herein appear, contrary to my expectation and wish, marked by rashness and inconsideration, with all the readiness of a lover of truth will the writer make the requisite alterations when his error is pointed out. His object in this treatise, the ascertainment of truth, establishes a strong claim for indulgent criticism. Conscious imperfection joins to reiterate the plea. Reader, farewell.

NAPLES, MARCH MDCCCLXVII.

## SYNOPSIS OF THE TREATISE.

The method I have pursued in proving that Christ was a Hellenist, or spoke Greek, for this is what I mean by the use of the term, is this: I prove that the Greek was the vernacular language of all the Jews throughout Judea, from the time of the Maccabees. When this is proved, it directly follows that Greek was the native and proper tongue of Christ, his mother, and the Apostles, who were all natives of Judea. The Essay, therefore, divides itself into these three parts: I. We show how the Greek language was introduced into Judea. II. We present those considerations which go to prove that Christ, the Apostles, and the whole Jewish people used the Greek idiom. III. We discuss and refute the objections of those who hold contrary opinions.

Each of these parts is further divided into two chapters. In the close of the work, we show how certain questions of biblical philology are answered by means of this argument (*συριματος*).

PART I.—How the Greek language was introduced into Judea.

CHAPTER I. Certain propositions are laid down as the basis of the argument.

*Prop. 1.* That the language of conquered nations has frequently given place to that of their conquerors.

*Prop. 2.* That the Egyptians spoke Greek in the time of Ptolemy Lagus.

*Prop. 3.* That the Syrians from Seleucus Nicator spoke Greek.

CHAPTER II. That the Jews received the Greek language from the Greeks, Egyptians, and Syrians.

§ 1. The rudiments of Hellenism introduced into Judea by Alexander the Great.

§ 2. Alexander settles Macedonians in Samaria, having removed the native inhabitants.

§ 3. Seventy thousand Jews bring the Greek language into Judea from Egypt.

§ 4. The Jews returning from Syria, also introduced the language along with the epoch and language of Greece.

§ 5. Jason, the high-priest, endeavors to seduce the Jews into the adoption of the religion of the Greeks, and succeeds.

§ 6. The progress of Hellenism in Judea under the high-priest Menelaus.

§ 7. Antiochus Epiphanes exerts all his influence to establish the hold of the Grecian language, manners and laws upon the inhabitants of Judea.

§ 8. Jerusalem is filled with Grecian settlers.

§ 9. The Samaritans of Shechem of their own accord adopt the Grecian usages, and dedicate the temple on Gerizim to Hellenian Jove.

§ 10. Antiochus threatens the penalty of death to those Jews who hold out against Hellenism, and will not renounce their ancient faith.

§ 11. The same Antiochus removes all causes that might conduce to the abjuration of Hellenism among the Jews.

§ 12. The chief-priest Alcinius vigorously propagates Hellenism.

§ 13. All Judea is covered with Grecian colonies for the space of twenty-one years.

§ 14. The Jews follow the Grecian sects of philosophy.

§ 15. The Jewish kings who succeeded greatly favored Hellenists and Hellenism.

An Excursus upon the Hellenists of Acts vi. 1.

Who were the Hellenists?

Was there a Hellenistic tongue?

§ 16. Summary of the whole.

PART II.—That Christ, the Apostles, and all the Jews spoke the Hellenistic tongue, proved by various arguments.

CHAPTER I. In this is shown that the Hellenistic language was vernacular among the Jews, and commonly spoken from the time of the Maccabees.

§ 1. From the age of the Maccabees all the Jews wrote in Greek.

§ 2. The coins of the Jews bore Greek legends.

§ 3. The same language was employed in the inscriptions and edicts set forth for general perusal.

§ 4. The Jews gave themselves and children Greek names.

§ 5. The Greek alphabet was taught in their schools.

§ 6. The Greek Scriptures were read in their synagogues.

§ 7. That the Jews spoke Greek, shown by the testimony of Josephus.

§ 8. The Greek was employed to designate divisions of territory, and the new cities among the Jews.

§ 9. Feasts, edifices, ranks, orders, coins, and other things instituted since the time of the Maccabees, received Greek names.

§ 10. Summary of the chapter.

CHAPTER II. Direct proof that Christ and the Apostles spoke Greek.

§ 1. Jesus had a Greek surname.

§ 2. The college of the Apostles bore also a Greek name.

§ 3. Christ used the Greek Scriptures.

§ 4. Christ quoted Greek proverbs.

§ 5. He made use of the Greek alphabet.

§ 6. This language was native and vernacular to the Apostles likewise.

PART III.—This part is devoted to the solution of difficulties and the answering of opponents.

CHAPTER I. The conflicting opinions concerning the language spoken by Christ are announced and refuted.

§ 1. The Hebrew tongue was neither vernacular to Christ nor to the Jews of his day.

§ 2. Harduin is refuted, who maintained that Christ and the Jews spoke Latin.

§ 3. Neither Christ nor the contemporary Jews spoke Syriac.

CHAPTER II. Answer is herein made to the objections of opponents.

§ 1. Why Paul addressed the Jews in Hebrew.

§ 2. Of the Syriac or Hebrew words which occur in the New Testament.

§ 3. An explication of two passages of Josephus, in the preface and close of his *Antiquities*, that seem to make against our opinion.

§ 4. Wherefore and for whom Josephus wrote his *Jewish War in Chaldee*.

§ 5. An inquiry why Josephus in addressing the Jews spoke Hebrew.

§ 6. Of the Books of the Rabbins.

**APPENDIX.—How certain philological knots are disengaged by means of this system.**

- § 1. Of the Gospels of Matthew and Mark.
- § 2. Of the Epistle of Paul to the Hebrews.
- § 3. Of the Hellenists and their language.
- § 4. Of the first Book of the Maccabees.
- § 5. Of the Greek version of the Seventy.
- § 6. Conclusion of the Treatise.

**DE CHRISTO HELLENISTA—THAT CHRIST WAS A HELLENIST.**

**PART I.—*How the Greek language was introduced into Judea.***

Before I enter upon the direct proof of my general proposition, I will lay down certain principles or facts as the foundation of my argument. In this I shall follow the example of the mathematician, who, by premising definition, axiom and postulate, makes his proofs demonstrative (*ἀποδεικτικάς*). I shall thus establish the correctness of my position, beyond the possibility of dispute. Looking for divine assistance (*σὺν θεῷ*) in our task, we now commence the discussion.

**CHAPTER I.—*Certain propositions laid down as the basis of the argument.***

There are three things which we consider necessary to set forth and prove as initiative to the discussion. The *first* is, That the languages of conquered nations have been superseded by those of their conquerors. The *second* is, That the Greek was the vernacular language of Egypt under Ptolemy Soter. And the *third*, That the Syrians adopted the Greek language under Seleucus Nicator.

**PROPOSITION I.—*That the language of conquered nations has frequently given place to that of their conquerors.***

To begin with the authority of the poet, we find Horace asserting the progressive change and corruption of language in these lines of his Epistle to the Pisos.\*

Ut silvae foliis pronus mutantur in annos  
Prima cadunt, ita verborum vetus interit ætas  
Et juvenum ritu florent modo nata, vigentque.  
Debemur morti nos, nostraque, etc.

---

\* Horat. in Arte v. 60 et seq.; et v. 68. ad 72.

To effect these changes, time and circumstance are ever effectually working; but nothing, it has been observed by general consent, has greater influence than the conquest of the land by a people of another speech. In such a case, the native inhabitants gradually adopt the language with the customs and laws of their conquerors, and by the same degrees neglect and abandon their own. But this not only follows as a natural consequence of their relative position: other circumstances tend to the same result. Especially has the pride of the victors contributed to the change, the imposition of a new language being regarded by them as an additional proof of subjection in the vanquished, and as a measure likely to confirm their own dominion. The testimonies of the learned on this head, may be collected from Bodin,\* Walton,† Aldret,‡ Du Fresne,|| Gesner,§ and many others. The last in particular says, "It often happens that a change of language flows in along with the tide of conquest over a vanquished people. The victory appears incomplete, unless the language of the natives is also subdued."

But it will be said, this does not always hold good. For instance, our own Naples has often bowed to the yoke of the invader, yet it still speaks Neapolitan. Spain also is an exception, which was long subject to Austria, and after that fell into the hands of Philip V. Duke of Angers. Hetruria, too, which Francis III. Duke of Lorraine obtained in 1736; not to mention other countries.

But these are not in reality exceptions; for the conquerors neither established colonies of their own countrymen in these regions, nor did they deport the natives in any numbers into a foreign soil. Had such measures as these been pursued, then certainly the usual result would have followed—the language of the victor would have superseded, ere long, that of the vanquished. That such is the usual course of events, I will prove by some well-known instances.

To begin with the Greeks. When the Phocians emigrated to Marseilles, they established their language along with their sway in that country. So completely did it secure predomi-

\* Bodin. in Method. Hist. cap. 9.

† Walton. Proleg. I. c. 19, p. 5.

‡ Aldretus, Origine de la lingua Castellana I. 11, 12.

|| Du-Fresne Præfat. ad Glossar. § 11.

§ Gesnerus in Mithrid. cap. 1.

nance there, that Strabo tells us the early Romans used to go to Marseilles to study Greek, rather than to Attica.\*

Alexander of Macedon always labored to make the Greek language coextensive with his empire; as a consequence of which, Jerome says, "the entire East came to speak<sup>†</sup> Greek." In proof of this, we may add that, not only the Scythians, but the Indians also whom Apollonius of Tyana met in his travels, conversed familiarly in that language.

In the same manner the Latin tongue spread with the conquests of Rome. "That imperious city," as Augustine reports,‡ "always made it a part of its policy to induce the adoption of the Latin language wherever it succeeded in imposing the yoke of civil subjection." And so successful were the Romans in this measure, that wherever the Roman arm was felt, there the Roman tongue came quickly into use, and the native idiom (*idioma*) was abandoned. So completely have all traces of the original dialects been effaced, that the curious inquiry of the learned is now directed to ascertain what languages the inhabitants of so many conquered provinces originally spoke. This entire oblivion of the native dialect had occurred, in many cases, so early as the time of Strabo. That accomplished geographer writes of certain tribes in Spain: "Οι μέν τοι Τουρδίανοι, καὶ μάλιστα οἱ περὶ τὸν Βασιν τελέως εἰς τὸν Ρώμαιον μεταβεβληγμένοι τρόπον οὐδὲ τῆς διαλέκτου τῆς σφρέζας ἔτι μεμνημένοι."||

The same circumstance occurred in the history of those ancient Gauls, who made an incursion into the Greek provinces of Asia Minor. They succeeded in giving their name to the country, Galatia or Gallogrecia, and in naturalizing their language

\* Δηλοῖ δὲ τὰ καθευγκότα νυν· πάντες γάρ οἱ χαριστεῖς πρὸς τὸ λέγεν τρέπονται καὶ φίλοσοφεῖν· ὁσθ' η πόλις μικρῷ μὲν τοῖς βαρβάροις ἀντίτο παιδεντήριον καὶ φιλέλληνες κατεσκεύαστο τοὺς Γιλάτας, ὥστε καὶ τὰ συμβόλαια Ἑλληνιστὶ γράφειν ἐν δὲ τῷ παφόντι καὶ τοὺς γνωριμωτάτους Ρώμαιον πέπειν, ἀπτὸ τῆς εἰς Ἀθήνας ἀποδημίας ἀκεῖσε φοιτὴρ φιλομαθεῖς ὄντας.

† Hieronymus Proem, ad lib. 2, Ep. ad Galat.

‡ August. lib. XIX. de Civ. Dei. c. 7.

|| Strabo, lib. III. p. 151. [Tom. I. pag. 404, Ed. Sieb. Δατῖνοι τέ οἱ πλεῖστοι γέγοναι — — — θοτε μικρὸν ἀπέχουσι τοῦ πάντας εἶναι Ρώμαιοι.—ED.]

among the people, to the partial or total supercession of the native tongue.\*

Thus William too, the conqueror of England, introduced the old French language into that island, and, so far did it succeed in displacing the English and Saxon, that these became almost extinct. Such is the testimony of Ingulfus,† and of Robert Holkot‡ the Dominican, who lived about the year 1350. The words of the latter are, "Historians tell us that when William Duke of Normandy seized the crown of England, he took measures to abolish the use of the Saxon tongue, and make French the language of both parts of his dominions. He passed a law that no one should plead in the courts in any other than the French language; also, that in the education of youth, instruction in French should invariably precede instruction in Latin; in fact, that the latter should only be taught through the medium of the former." Thus the English tongue was all but lost. The complaint of Henry of Huntingdon|| on this point is still extant, and as follows :

"Who in the heavens will not be affected with pity, and who upon earth will not shudder with horror, while reflecting upon the destruction of their kings, their princes, and their people," (viz. those of the English,) "nay, more, of their entire stock, language, and name? That other things should perish, we wonder not; but that their tongue, coeval with the earliest, should pass into oblivion, causes a surprise which no words can express."

But, to omit other conclusions and facts regarding the Parthians in Persia, the Arabs in Carthage, the Turks, Tartars, and Scavonians in Greece, the Spaniards, French, and English in the American provinces, and many besides, a notable and convincing proof is furnished us in the history of the Jews. This nation, it is well known, before the Babylonish captivity, spoke the Hebrew tongue. But, after their conquest by the Chaldeans, adopted their dialect, and allowed their own national dialect to drop into disuse.¶

By the facts and testimonies just adduced, we conceive our

\* Vide Hieron. loc. sit.

† Ingulfus, p. 895, 901, 912.

‡ Holkotus, lect. 2, sup. Sapientiam.

|| Lib. II. Hist. Anglic. p. 300.

¶ Vide, que dicam infra, part 3, cap. L § 1.

first proposition abundantly established, *that conquerors have changed the languages of conquered nations.*

**PROPOSITION II.—That the Egyptians spoke Greek in the time of Ptolemy Lagus (A. C. 323).**

So early as the reign of King Psammitichus, nearly 400 years before Lagus, the Greek language began to find its way into Egypt, along with the Carians and Ionians who settled there to the number of thirty thousand. Grateful for their efficient aid in establishing him on the throne, Psammitichus appointed them a settlement about Bubastis and Pelusium, and committed Egyptian youth to their care, to be instructed in the Grecian tongue. To overcome too, as much as he might, the barbarous habits of his countrymen, and introduce among them the higher civilization of Greece, he conferred the greatest proofs of his regard upon the strangers, and invited other Greeks to settle in the country. Not long afterwards, his successor, Amasis, who was equally attached to the Greeks with himself, transferred them from Pelusium to Memphis and Naukratis, the seat of empire and the heart of Egypt. Hence originated more frequent and familiar intercourse between the Egyptians and the Greeks. Of this circumstance Herodotus thus writes in his Euterpe, CLIV:\*

*Τούτων δὲ οἰκισθέντων ἐν Αἴγυπτῳ οἱ Ἑλλήνες οὕτω ἐπιμεγόμενοι τούτοις, τὰ πάρι Αἴγυπτον γνώμενα, ἀπὸ ψαμμιτίχον βασιλῆος ἀρξάμενοι, πάντα, καὶ τὰ ὑστεροὶ ἐπιστάμεθα ἀτρεκίως· πρῶτοι γέ οὗτοι ἐν Αἴγυπτῳ ἀλλογλωσσοι κατοικήθησαν· τότε αὐτοὶ δὲ ἔξανθησαν χώρουν, ἐν τούτοις δὴ οἱ τε ὄλκοι τῶν νεῶν, καὶ τὰ ἐρείπια τῶν οἰκημάτων τὸ μέγρι ἔμεν ἡσαν.*

Thus, by degrees, Hellenism (*Ἑλληνισμὸς*) made its way into the country, the progress of which became more rapid, and its prevalence more extensive, when that empire was overrun by the Grecian armies. As soon as Alexander had completed the conquest of Egypt, and built the city which he named after himself Alexandria, and drafted a colony of Greeks into it, he set himself about effecting an entire revolution in the country, according to Strabo. The inhabitants were compelled to adopt the language, manners, and laws of Greece. And when Alexander died at Babylon, Egypt then ceded into the hands of one inclined to pursue the same policy with equal vigor. Ptolemy

\* Herod. ex Wesseling. edit. p. 179, v. 59.

Lagus, a Macedonian like his predecessor, strenuously endeavored to abolish the native Egyptian tongue, and forbade the use of any but Greek throughout his kingdom. Much to the same purpose is the testimony of the learned Bochart,\* that, "under the Ptolemies, the Greek language struck its roots deeply into the soil of Egypt."

That this representation is essentially correct, all the evidence we can collect goes to prove. All the memorials of that age and realm are Grecian. The authors compose in no other tongue. Manetho of Diospolis; all the Ptolemies, Soter, Philadelphus, Euergetes, and Philoponius; Ammonius, Herodian, Philo Judæus, Appion, and the Alexandrians Apollonius, Diodymus, Paullus, Cyrus, Appianus, and others almost innumerable, either born or residing in Egypt, all wrote in Greek.

If we look to the coins of the country, we find their testimony to the same effect. Ever since Egypt became subject to Grecian rulers, their language alone appears upon the coinage. It would be tedious to present a catalogue of these, yet improper to pass them over altogether without notice. Suffice it that we present a specimen from Vaillant:



Here the head of Ptolemy Soter appears, encircled with a diadem, while on the reverse stands an eagle on a thunderbolt. The inscription is Greek—*ΒΑΣΙΛΕΩΣ ΠΤΟΛΕΜΑΙΟΥ*. In like manner the succeeding Egyptian kings used Greek upon their coinage, as Patin, Noris, Spanheim, and others who have made numismatology their study, convincingly prove; but above all, the distinguished Vaillant, who has published a history of the kings of Egypt illustrated by the coins of the country.

\* Bochart Phaleg, lib. 1. cap. 16. [Samuel B. nat. 1599, ob. 1667. *Geographia Sacra. Ed.*]

We have yet to glance at inscriptions upon buildings and other records of a kindred nature. As, however, there is much more of this kind of testimony available for our purpose than we can venture to use in this compendious essay, we must content ourselves with the adduction of a single fact. The one we shall exhibit will be that called the Adulitan monument, from Adule, a maritime town of the Ethiopians, where it was raised by Ptolemy Euergetes. He dedicated a chariot (*διόργον*) to Mars, at the entrance of the city, on the back of which were carved figures of Hercules and representations of his exploits. This was preserved down to the time of the Emperor Justin, as Allatius, Thevenot, and others quoted by Fabricius show.\* Ptolemy had it carved with Greek characters, the inscription beginning thus:

*Βασιλεὺς μέγας Πτολεμαῖος νῖος βασιλέως  
Πτολεμαῖου, καὶ βασιλίσσης Ἀρσινοῆς.*

This is a fact of more than common interest and importance, inasmuch as it clearly proves the vernacular language of Egypt to be Greek, by exhibiting the Egyptians making use of that language even beyond the confines of their own land, while in Egypt itself the knowledge of the Greek language and literature prevailed to such an extent, that many made that country their school for Greek, as did Valentinus, according to Epiphanius.†

But wherefore urge further proofs in maintenance of a position which none of the learned doubt, and even my opponents will not venture to controvert. Salmasius himself, in his "Funus linguæ Hellenisticae," makes this remarkable concession: "The Greek idiom was vulgarly used in Syria and Egypt."‡ If Huet, Walton, Petavius, Stephens, Cartheromachus,|| Emmius, and others be consulted, they will be found delivering themselves to the same effect.

In opposition, however, to this view, a difficulty has been urged by Simon, after Kircher, viz., that Coptic had currency in Egypt at the same time as Greek. This we are bound to notice. Simon, indeed, confesses that Ptolemy patronized the

\* Vide Fabric. Biblioth. Græc. lib. 3, t. 2, p. 604.

† Epiph. Hæres. 31, cap. 2, p. 164, aliisque.

‡ Salmas. in Fun. p. 42.

|| [Scipio Forte-guerri, nat. 1466, ph. 1515. Ed.]

Greek language, yet conceives that it never superseded the ancient language of the country, which he calls Coptic, but rather, that both existed contemporaneously in Egypt.\* This opinion of the learned father, however, has been completely demolished by the following sentence from his antagonist, Isaac Voss: "Simon is utterly mistaken in the opinion he has put forth, since the very name of Coptic was unknown until the Arabs gained possession of Egypt. The language itself is sufficient to prove that it is a compound of Greek and Arabic."†

It may be worth while to present a fact or two in support of Vossius's assertion.

The first point worthy of observation is, that the Coptic idiom is nothing else but degenerate Greek mixed with Arabic. I repeat it, degenerate Greek, for most words in the Coptic vocabulary are derived from Greece. With few exceptions their vocables savor of Hellenism, (*Ἑλληνισμὸς* redolent,) and the letters of their alphabet in name, figure, and power, are all but identical with the Greek, as the following scheme will show:

FIG.	NOM.	POT.
Α α	Alpha	A a
Β β	Vida	V v
Γ γ	Gamma	G g
Δ δ	Dalda	D d
Ε ε	Ei	E e
Ϛ ς	So	S s
Ϛ ς	Zida	Z z
Ϛ ς	Hida	I i
Ϛ ς	Thida	TH th
Ϛ ς	Iauda	I i
Ϛ ς	Kabba	K k
Ϛ ς	Lauda	L l
Ϛ ς	Mi	M m
Ϛ ς	Ni	N n

\* Simonius Hist. Critiq. du N. T. chap. 16.

† Vossius ad iter. P. Sim. Objecti. Resp. p. 350.

FIG.	NOM.	POT.
Ξξ	Exi	X x
Οο	O	O o
Ππ	Bi	P p
Ρρ	Ro	R r
Ϲϲ	Sima	S s
Ττ	Dau	T t
Υϩ	H	E e
ΦΦ	Phi	F f
Χχ	Chi	CH ch
ϢϢ	O	O
ϢϢ	Scei	SC sc
ӦӦ	Fei	F f
ӦӦ	Chei	CH ch
ӦӦ	Hori	H h
ӦӦ	Giangia	G g
ӦӦ	Scima	SC sc
ӦӦ	Dei	DI di
ӦӦ	Ebsi	PS ps

From the Arabic, also, the Coptic derived innumerable words: e.g.

πτομος	{	Tomus.	{	الطومس
Pitomos				Ettamus
πχαρτοс	{	Charta.	{	القرطس
Pichartos				Elcartas
εργανδαρа	{	Centena- rius.	{	القندار
Ergandara				Elcandar
οτκαρθαλλοс	{	Cartallus	{	القرحال
Oekarthallos		seu Fiscella.	{	Elcartal
τανoo	{	Pavo.	{	الطرووس
Tavoo				Ettamus

πιτομαριόν	}	Codex rati-	}	الطومار
Pitomarion	}	onum.	}	Ettaumàr

And a great many more of the same kind scattered up and down in the Coptic Lexicon. But, admitting these exceptions, Simon would have the basis of the language to be Egyptian. We challenge him, however, to tell us what or what was the nature of that other language, the traces of which Simon has so clearly discovered in the Coptic tongue, as also to give us the rule by which he discovers this or the other word to be Egyptian. He certainly has no ancient authority upon which he can fall back, and, if candid, must confess his ignorance. The ancients maintain the silence of the grave upon the subject. This Kircher is honest enough to own in the following words: "But should any one ask, what was the ancient language of the Egyptians, I can more easily present him with opinions than with facts, for there is positively not one author who presents himself as my guide amid the darkness of antiquity. On this subject the ancient writers have neither seen with their eyes, nor spoken with their tongues."\*

But even were we disposed to grant that the words which Simon calls Egyptian are, in fact, Egyptian, (which many certainly are not,) he gains little by the concession. It was perfectly natural that, when the Egyptians adopted the Greek language, they should retain some terms from their old familiar tongue, and hand them down to posterity; just as it was natural for Latin, and Hebrew, and Samaritan words to find their way also into the Coptic. For the Latin it is easy to account. The Egyptians would adopt them where they fell under Roman rule, although Greek was still the staple material of the common speech. The Samaritan and Hebrew present no greater difficulty, for these the Egyptians would occasionally borrow, in order to veil under the secrecy of a foreign nomenclature the dogmata of their religion from the apprehension of the vulgar. The same motive which led to the invention of their mystic characters, the hieroglyphics, might operate here, as well as the common superstition of the East, which attached an indescribable virtue to foreign and untranslated words. The ancient oracle of the Chaldeans, published and translated by Psellus may be usefully consulted for information upon this point. In sup-

---

\* Kircher in *Prod. Copt. c. 5.* p. 123.

port of what has been just alleged, we may add that those Chaldean words are to be found in the Coptic books and Lexicon.

The second point worthy of notice in answer to Simon is, that the Arabians did not pass beyond their own confines until the seventh century of the Christian era. They were distinguished, indeed, by an ancient lineage, but had passed their time, up to that period, in a peaceful obscurity. Then, at length, bursting forth from their deserts, under the command of Omar I. they invaded Jerusalem, Syria, and Egypt, and gained unnumbered triumphs in Asia, and in extensive regions of Africa and Europe.

From these premises we may conclude that the Coptic owns no parent source but Greek, and that it became a distinct dialect only after the irruption of the Arabs into Egypt. For the Greek language and literature, which struck their roots so deeply into the Egyptian mind under the Ptolemies, prevailed down to the seventh century. But when the Arabs entered the country, it underwent a process of change and deterioration so as to form an entirely new dialect. The change, I repeat, was deterioration, not destruction, for either through the rapidity of their conquests, or the few immigrants that settled in the country, the Arabs left the Greek tongue to form the chief element in the new compound. Thus, the Egyptians, combining the language of their conquerors with their own, formed the Coptic from the union of the two; just as the occupation of Syria by the Persians issued in the formation of the Aramaean or Syriac, from the fusion of the Greek, Persian, and Arabic. The Syriac is the tongue in which, up to this day, the books of the Maronites and Nestorians are composed. Nor did it happen otherwise in Judea and other lands. The same period witnessed the extinction of the pure Greek language and literature throughout the entire East. Then, and not before, was the name Coptic formed, which is nothing more than a corruption of *Αἰγυπτιος* or *Αἴγυπτος*, and which, by a barbarous contraction, becomes *Κόντρος*. Nothing can be more incorrect, then, than the statement of Simon, that the inhabitants of Egypt under the Ptolemies spoke both languages, Greek and Coptic. The more correct representation is, that Coptic itself owes its origin to a depravation of the Greek of comparatively modern date.

**PROPOSITION III.—That the Syrians, from Seleucus Nicator, spoke Greek.**

After Alexander had seized upon Syria, he established several Grecian colonies there. From that event may be dated the

commencement of the Hellenism, (*Ἑλλησμοῦ*), which afterwards obtained so universally in that region. When Alexander died, his vast empire was split up and divided amongst his generals. Syria fell to the lot of Laomedon of Mitylene, who hastened to take possession of it with a large army of Greeks.\* But as, in the same partition of the empire, Seleucus Nicator obtained the supreme command of the Macedonian troops, he succeeded, after many a hard-fought battle, in securing Syria for himself. Fixing his residence in the country, he labored with all his might to introduce the Greek language and laws, or rather to confirm them in their hold upon the people. He raised Greek cities in every direction. Sixteen of these were called Antioch, (*Ἀντιόχεια*), from his father and his son. Six were called Laodicea, (*Λαοδίκεια*), from his mother. Nine had their name from himself, Seleucia, (*Σελεύκεια*), and four were named after his two wives, namely, three Apamea, (*Ἀπαμεία*), and one Stratonice, (*Στρατονίκη*). To other cities he gave Greek or Macedonian names, either in commemoration of some exploit of his own, or in honor of Alexander the Great. Hence it is that so many towns with Greek or Macedonian names are found in Syria and other countries that border on the Mediterranean. Vaillant,† whom we have already quoted more than once, furnishes a long list of them. In these cities he located numbers of Macedonian and other Greek inhabitants. Strabo‡ informs us that, with a view to deepen the Grecian character of the city, five thousand three hundred Athenians and Macedonians were transferred from Antigone, where Antigonus had placed them, to Antioch. Thus, into Syria and especially into Lower Syria, or Palestine, to which my remarks chiefly apply, was the Greek language borne, in the first place through the sovereignty of Alexander, next through that of Seleucus, and finally through that of the succeeding kings. The Greek colonies established among the conquered people, secured the wide diffusion and general adoption of the language and institutions of Greece. The Greek names for the year and months were universally received, and only Greek money circulated.

Their coins were called *æra Seleucida*, from the name of their

\* Diodorus Sic. lib. 8, Bibl. Hist. Arrianus apud Photium, lib. x. cod. 92.

† Vaillant in Seleucid. Imp. p. 12.

‡ Strabo, Geogr. lib. 16, p. 750.

king. Greek moneys and inscriptions equally prevailed under the succeeding monarchs of that dynasty. One specimen from John Foy Vaillant we present:



The obverse presents the head of Seleucus covered with a lion's skin, the reverse a figure of Jupiter sitting with an image of victory, (*dextera victoriolam tenens*), in his right hand, and in his left an inverted spear. The epigraph is Greek—*ΒΑΣΙΛΕΩΣ ΣΕΛΕΥΚΟΤ*. Antiochus Soter, in like manner, Antiochus Deus, Seleucus Callinicus, Seleucus Ceraunus, Antiochus Magnus, and the other kings who followed, coined Greek money. Noris\* and Vaillant† are our principal authorities upon these points, and afford valuable information.

From his time, too, the inhabitants of Syria are ascertained to have used the Greek language in the composition of books. Seleucus Nicator himself wrote a book, *περὶ Ἑλλησμοῦ*, mentioned by Athenaeus, in which he treated of the Greek vocabulary, the origin and use of words. Posidonius Apameensis, so called from his birthplace, Apamea, composed a work, *περὶ Πατιδωσίων σχολῶν*. Pherecydes, the philosopher, also a Syrian,‡

\* Noris, tom ii. in *Dissert. de Anno Syro-Maced.* [Henricus N. Cardin. nat. 1631, ob. 1704. *Annus et Epochæ Syro-Macedonum in vetustis urbiis Syriae nummis præsertim Medicæis expositæ*, 4to. Ed.]

† Vaillant in *Historia Seleucidarum*.

‡ [*"Pherecydes Syrus primum dixit animos hominum esse sempiternos."* Cic. Tusc. Disp. lib. I, c. 16. Videas, lector, quomodo Donatus vocem "sempiternus" definit in Ter. And. act. v. sc. 5; qui longe aliter ac Diodati explicat; cui velim adjungas ea quæ celeberrimus ille Warburton super hac quæstione docte admodum et subtiliter, uti solet, disseruit in "The Divine Legation of Moses demonstrated," book 3, § 4. Ed.]

who, Cicero assures us, first publicly taught the immortality of the soul, wrote many treatises in Greek, all of which are hopelessly lost. Iseus, a Syrian too, composed his orations in such elegant Greek, that the ancients admired them as marked by all the grace of the Attic style. How exquisitely and wittily Lucian also knew how to employ the language, it were superfluous to mention here. It is well known that Syria claims him also as her son. But not to dwell on individual instances, Jamblichus, Nicomachus, Arimedeus, St. Lucian of Antioch, Meleager, Luke the Evangelist, wrote in Greek, and countless others, whose names should I attempt to give, it were scarce exaggeration to say with Plautus:

"The night would fall ere I could close my strain."

But the questions may be asked here, Was not St. Ephrem a Syrian, and did he not write in Syriac rather than in Greek, as Jerome\* and Photius† testify? and are there not coins extant of Antiochus IV. and Demetrius II., with partly Greek and partly Phœnician inscriptions? Nay more, are there not some wholly inscribed with Phœnician characters copied in Spanheim,‡ Vailant§, and more recently still, in Barthelemy, in his essay lately published in Paris?§

Our reply is, that these facts do not make against us in the slightest degree when they are properly understood. Our observations are confined to Syria of Palestine, within the Euphrates, having for its northern boundary Cilicia and Cappadocia, on the east the Euphrates, on the south Arabia Petræa, and on the west the Mediterranean Sea. This entire region was covered with Grecian settlements, and gave prevalence to Hellenic speech and usages among the Jews, as we shall more widely unfold hereafter. But St. Ephrem was born at Edessa, in Mesopotamia, beyond the Euphrates. Although this region bore the common name of Syria, and formerly belonged to that kingdom, yet was it at a considerable distance from that Syria proper of which I speak. That the Greek language should not

\* Hieronym. in Catal. Script. Eccles. cap. 115.

† Photius in Bibliotheca, cod. 169.

‡ Spanheim, De usu et Præst. Numis. diss. 2.

§ Vaillant in Hist. Reg. Syr. pp. 106, 109, 151.

§ Lettre de M. l'Abbé Barthelemy à Messieurs les Auteurs du Journal des Savans sur quelques Médailles Phœnicielles.

have become familiar in that remote district, excites in us no surprise, as it presents no obstacle to our conclusion. I remember perfectly well reading, among the acts of the Council of Chalcedon, (A. D. 451) a document (postulationem) forwarded by a certain clergyman of Edessa, to which the names of the greater part of the clergy were subscribed in Greek, but many of the Presbyters, Deacons, and Sub-deacons are reported to have written theirs in Syriac, (*καὶ ἡ ὑπογραφὴ Συριακῆ.*<sup>\*</sup>) In the acts of the same council we read that one Uranius, a Bishop of Mesopotamia, was present, to whom was interpreted in Syriac what the fathers transacted in Greek.<sup>†</sup> Theodoret, too, mentions Abraham, a Bishop of Charræ, who was ignorant of the Greek language.<sup>‡</sup> Nothing could be more natural nor more easily explained than that St. Ephrem, an Edessene by birth, should write in Syriac rather than in any other tongue.

With respect to the coins said to exist, having inscriptions in Greek and Phœnician, or in Phœnician alone, I can scarcely prevail on myself to believe them genuine. For, after Alexander of Macedon and his successors obtained possession of the country, the native tongue of the inhabitants totally disappeared, (prorsus evanuit,) and the Greek took its place so completely that the Phœnicians used no other. In proof of this, I appeal to those two very remarkable remains given by Gruter, namely, the letter of the Phœnicians residing at Puteoli to the senate (ordini) and people of Tyre, and their answer, both written in Greek.<sup>||</sup> Besides, in the writers on numismatics, we

\* V. Acta Syn. Chalced. act. 10, p. 250 ad 256.

† Ibid. p. 219 ad 222. tom. vii. ex edit. P. Mansi.

‡ Theodoretus in Hist. Relig. cap. 17, p. 849, tom. iii.

|| Monumenta hæc pluribus mendis inquinata habes in Gruteri Thesauro. (<sup>1</sup>) Sed ea oppido quam emendata, ac Latine insuper versa reperies in quantivis pretiis opere, cedroque lignendo, "I Fenici i primi abitatori di Napoli, (<sup>2</sup>)" nuper edito a Duce Michaele Vargas Macciucca, nobilissimo juvene, longeque ornatissimo, qui vestigia clarissimi patrui Equitis Francisci Vargas Macciucca viri de literis, de literatis hominibus, deque re Neapolitana omni publica optime meriti premens, πατρὶς ἀρχαιολογίας diurno labore, summoque studio illustrat decoratque.

(<sup>1</sup>) Gruterus in Thesaur. Inscript. p. 1105.

(<sup>2</sup>) Dell'antiche Colonie venute in Napoli, p. 331, 333.

find coins unnumbered of the Tyrians, Sidonians, and other Phœnicians, bearing Greek inscriptions only. But, upon this subject, Vaillant,\* who contends for the genuineness of the coins, had better be consulted. The epoch of the Seleucidæ, from which the Phœnicians reckoned, even when they came under the Roman yoke, being signalized by the ascendancy of Greek, yet appearing on these coins in Phœnician characters, strengthens my suspicion of their spuriousness.

While my thoughts were thus employed, I received no little pleasure from finding my own opinion confirmed by that of a person of the weightiest authority, Otho Sperling, whose words I quote :

“ Afterwards the Greeks occupied Tyre, and built a mint and treasury, and coined τετραδράχμονες. The Tyrian coins, therefore, mentioned by Josephus, ought to be understood as Greek and not native; inscribed with Grecian letters, and not Hebrew, Syriac, or ancient Tyrian. For, ever since Alexander and his Greek successors took possession of the country, the inhabitants came to speak and write in the language of their masters, all the affairs of the government were administered after the Greek fashion, Greek moneys were struck, and, as a natural consequence, the old Tyrian or Phœnician character and language fell completely into disuse.” (Omnisque Tyria vel Phœnicia scriptio vetusta et inscriptio evanuit, ac perii.†)

But, even should we concede these coins to be genuine, the admission would not affect our argument. For we speak not so much of Phœnicia as of Syria, and, in this latter, beyond all question, the Greek was vernacular about that time. But let us hear Vaillant again :

“ Seleucus Nicator, as soon as he had seized on Syria, intending to make it the seat of his government, not only gave Grecian names to most of the cities, but also imbued the people with the language, and strictly enjoined its use in all transactions of a public nature,” &c., &c.‡

To the same purpose is the testimony of Noris :||

“ When Seleucus Nicator, after the violent death of Antigonus, became master of Syria, and had distributed the Mace-

\* Vaillant Hist. Reg. Syr. p. 81, 86, 131, 132, 150. V. Noris Dissert. 4, de Epoch. Syro-Maced. cap. 3, 4, 5.

† Sperlingius de Num. non. cisis, p. 51.

‡ Vaillant in Hist. Reg. Syriæ, p. 109.

|| Noris de An. Syro-Maced. diss. 1, cap. 3, p. 38.

donian soldiers as settlers throughout the cities he built or repaired in that country, the Syrians straightway embraced the laws and language of the conqueror, and, by a general consent, the year and its months soon came to be known all over the land, by the Macedonian names only.” Joseph Stephens,<sup>\*</sup> Salmatius,<sup>†</sup> Emmius,<sup>‡</sup> and almost all the learned bear the same testimony, but I spare the reader the tediousness of quotation.

One class of testimony, however, of higher authority than any yet adduced, I cannot merge in a simple allusion, viz., that of the sacred Scriptures. In them we find the most explicit reference to Syria, Egypt, and their inhabitants, as Greek kingdoms and people. The author of the First Book of Maccabees, after describing how the Jews fell under the power of the Egyptians and Syrians, proceeds:

“Judas chose Eupolemus and Jason, and sent them to Rome, to close an alliance and treaty and to remove from the Jews the yoke of the Grecians”—meaning by this, of course, the Egyptians and Syrians.<sup>||</sup>

The author of the Second Book of Maccabees calls the prevalence of Syrian manners among the Jews “the supremacy of the Greek,” (*ἀκμὴ τις Ἑλλησμονός*) and shortly afterwards the glory of the Syrians, “Grecian glories.”<sup>§</sup>

To the same effect is the testimony of the Fourth Book of Maccabees, whatever degree of credit may be attached to that production.<sup>¶</sup>

But the prophet Daniel led the way in this usage. In his visions he regards Syria and Egypt as parts of the Greek empire.<sup>\*\*</sup> Throughout his prophecies, which relate to the kingdoms that were to precede the advent of Christ, he seems to pay especial attention to these two countries between which Judea lay, and from which it derived its new habits, laws and language. So also Zechariah.<sup>††</sup>

In the same style of nomenclature we find Josephus the Jew calling the Egyptians and Syrians by the name of Macedonians.<sup>‡‡</sup>

\* Stephanus Com. ad c. 1 lib. 1 Mach. p. 49.

† Salmatius in Fun. Ling. Hell. p. 42.

‡ Ubbo Emmius de Graecia Vet. lib. 6.

|| Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 8, v. 17. [18, τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν Ἑλλήνων.]

§ Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 4, v. 13, 15. Ἑλληνικὰς δόξας.

¶ Lib. 4 Mach. cap. 4, v. 3, et 5.

\*\* Daniel, cap. 7, v. 6, cap. 8, v. 8, et alibi.

†† Zacharias, cap. 6, v. 3.

‡‡ Joseph. lib. 13 Antiq. p. 631, 634, 635, 638.

In a word, Arrian, Dexippus, Strabo, Appian, Curtius, Justin, and all the ancient and modern writers who touched the point, give the same designation to the Syrians and Egyptians. That I do not quote these authorities expressly will be excused on the plea of supererogation. (*Ne major thylaco accessio fiat.*)

From all these facts, the conclusion is obvious, that the Jews, both by reason of their country being covered with Syrian colonies, as well as being often reduced to subjection by foreign invaders; by reason of their proximity to Syria and Egypt, and of the frequent intercourse with the people of these countries which naturally ensued; but especially by reason of coming under the Grecian yoke about 190 years before, had generally received the Greek language at the time of Christ.

But this subject we shall treat more fully in the next chapter.

#### CHAPTER II.—*That the Jews received the Greek language from the Greeks, Egyptians and Syrians.*

The foundation of my work has been laid in the facts and statements of the preceding chapter. We now enter upon our proper subject of discussion, bearing in mind, meanwhile, that from the close of the Babylonish captivity, the Jews spoke Syriac. Our purpose now is to show how the Greek language was introduced into their country by means of the Greeks, Syrians and Egyptians.

##### § 1. *The elements of Hellenism introduced into Judea under Alexander the Great.*

In the year of the world 3652, before the era of Christ 332, Alexander of Macedon entered Judea with his army. When he approached Jerusalem, Jaddua, who was then high priest, opening the gates of the city, went out to meet him attended by a choir of priests, and received him as a friend. As soon as Alexander perceived the priest, he went up to him alone, saluted him, adored the name of Jehovah which was graven upon his mitre, and said that in his own country he had seen God in the likeness of the high priest, who, moreover, had promised him victory over the Persians. When he had been conducted to the temple, the priests showed him the Book of Daniel, in which the prophet foretold that the Grecian emperor should become master of the Persian dominions.\* Alexander, interpret-

---

\* Daniel, cap. 8, v. 7, 20, 21; et cap. 11, v. 13.

ing this of himself, presented sacrifice with gladness to God. He invited the Jews to share in his enterprises, and promised them the most perfect religious freedom. Induced by his invitation and promise, many of that nation enrolled themselves in his army, and followed him.\* From that period, an intimacy of the closest kind continued with the Greeks,† and the language of their Macedonian allies began to spread among the Jews, as rapidly as if they had been subject to Grecian dominion.‡ We read, for instance, in the *Chronicon Magnum*|| of the Samaritans, that both the Jews and people of Samaria began to call their children after Alexander. At length, in the thirteenth year of that monarch, as the Jews in his army objected to work at the temple of Delos, whose restoration he had ordered, considering it an infraction of their religious duty, Alexander, respecting their scruples, dismissed them.§ Now, these having served with the Grecian troops for a term of eight years, when they came back to Judea, naturally brought the Greek language with them.

**§ 2. Alexander settles Macedonians in Samaria, having removed the native inhabitants.**

About the same time, say 331 before Christ, the Samaritans rose up against Andromachus, the governor whom Alexander had appointed over that district, and burned him to death in his house. When the tidings of the revolt were heard by the king in Egypt, he was affected with the liveliest indignation.¶ He hastens back again to Samaria with the utmost speed, to avenge the murder of his officer, puts to death the guilty parties, banishes the rest of the citizens, and repeoples the place with Macedonians.\*\* The whole region of Samaria, exempted from the payment of tribute, he annexed to the territory of

\* Joseph. lib. 11 Antiq: cap. ult. § 5, p. 581, 582.

† Vide Huetium, Dem. Evang. prop. 4, cap. 12, § 1.

‡ Ex propositione 1 capit. superioris.

|| *Chronicon Samaritanum*, cap. 44. Hoc manuscriptum ad-  
huc latet in bibliotheca Leidensi, ex Hebræa lingua in Arabi-  
cam conversum, sed charactere Samaritano descriptum. Vide  
excerpta ejusdem apud Hottingerum Hist. Orient. p. 60, §  
131, et in Exercitat. Anti-Morin. p. 64, § 106.

§ Hecatæus Abder. apud Jos. lib. 1. c. Apion, § 22, p. 456.

¶ Quin. Curtius, lib. 4, cap. 8, n. 9, 10.

\*\* Euseb. in Chron. A. 1685, Olymp. 112, p. 177.

Judea, in reward of the fidelity of the Jews, as Hecatæus of Abdera records.\* Thus, from the incorporation of Samaria, the Jews became more closely than ever connected with the Greeks.

§ 3. *Seventy thousand Jews bring the Greek language into Judea.*

When Alexander died in the flower of his age, his empire was broken up into many parts. The sovereignty of Judea, after many changes, was obtained by Ptolemy Soter, king of Egypt, by means of an act of treachery,† In the year of the world 3684, and before the Christian era 320, he found admission into Jerusalem on the Sabbath day, under color of a desire to offer sacrifice. As soon as he entered, he secured the city without opposition, treated it with extreme cruelty, and carried off with him to Egypt a hundred thousand Jewish captives.‡ Part of these he distributed amongst the Macedonians of Alexandria, and part he consigned to servitude among the soldiery and the other inhabitants of the country. Here these Jews were compelled to adopt the Greek language, which we have already observed to have been the common dialect of Egypt, on the authority of Huet,|| and others of the learned. Scaliger declares they were obliged to use the Greek language in all their covenants and agreements.§ Ptolemy Soter was succeeded, on his death, by Ptolemy Philadelphus, a prince distinguished beyond all of his own age or any former age by his royal virtues, besides far surpassing his father in humanity, as Philo testifies.¶ Clearly perceiving that the Jews whom his father had made captive were the victims of treachery and violence, enslaved in opposition to every human and divine law, Philadelphus ordered them to be redeemed with money out of the treasury, and to be sent back to Jerusalem with their children. This circumstance, I suppose it is, which has afforded a handle to the Pseudo-Aristeas to say, that Ptolemy set them free for the sake of obtaining a translation of their law; whereas, in reality, they owe their freedom

\* Hecatæus apud Jos. lib. 2, c. Apion, § 4, p. 472.

† Joseph. lib. 12, Antiq. cap. 1, p. 584.

‡ Apud. Jos. ibid. Agatharchides Cnidius, p. 585.

|| Demonstr. Evang. prop. 4, de lib. 2 Mac. § 1.

§ Scaliger in epist. 11 ad Seguinum, lib. 1, p. 100. Salmasius in *Funere Linguae Hellenisticæ*, p. 158.

¶ Philo Judæus de Vita Mosis, p. 658.

to the magnanimity of the king and his earnest desire to obtain the good will of all men.\* The number of those to whom liberty was given was upwards of a hundred thousand, of whom thirty thousand of the military age were retained in the army; some were kept about the king's person and guarded the palace, but all the rest, about seventy thousand, went back to Judea.† Vaillant fixes the date of this event at 273 A. C., and 77 years after Soter had deported them into Egypt. The length of time is enough to prove that those whom Philadelphus emancipated were not the actual persons whom his father had enslaved. These must have died, with few if any exceptions, while those who went back to Judea must have been their children and grandchildren. Born, then, and nurtured in the midst of a Greek population, with whom Greek was the vernacular tongue, these seventy thousand Jews took back with them this language rather than any other to their own country.

These remigrants must, therefore, have added to the mass of Hellenism already existing in Judea.

*§ 4. The Jews returning from Syria also bring the Greek language into Judea.*

Antiochus the Great, king of Syria, contributed in no slight degree to the same end. But the history of Syrian influence over Judea we must trace a little further back.

No fact can be better established than that Seleucus Nicator placed great numbers of Jews in the cities which he built in Lower Syria and in his own metropolis of Antioch, and that there they lived in the enjoyment of equal privileges with the

---

\* Vix dici potest quot commentis, et fabellis historiam hauc exornant Josephus et suppositus Aristæas, locis infra indicandis. (1) Qui dum Judaicum nomen augere student, undique corrogatis laudibus mactant, necnon se ipsos reprehendendos et deridendos præbent. Qua de re vide quæ in extremo hoc libro adnotavimus.

† Vide Joseph. loc. cit. § 2, p. 586; Augustin. lib. 16 de Civ. Dei, c. 42; Sgambatum, lib. 3 Archiv. Vet. Test. tit. 3; Calmet, Hist. de la Bible et des Juifs, A. M. 3727.

‡ Vaillant, Hist. Regum Ægypt. p. 18 et seq.

(1) Joseph. lib. 12 Antiq. c. 2. Aristæas in edict. regis, et ep. ad Eleaz.

Greeks and Macedonians. Such is the account of Josephus,\* and of Eusebius in his chronicle, the latter of whom uses these words: 'Ο Σέλευκος ἐν ταῖς νέαις πόλεσι Ιουδαίους συνῆκεν Ἐλλησιν, καὶ πολιτείας αὐτοὺς ἡξώσ, καὶ τοῖς ἐποιησθεῖσιν ισορίμους ἀπέδειξ. "Seleucus fixed Jews in the new towns which he built, bestowing on them the right of citizenship and municipal rank on the same terms as the Grecians."†

But as, after the death of Alexander, Judea was harassed by perpetual wars and incursions, now by the power of Syria, now by that of Egypt, without exaggeration,

"tossed  
Like a frail bark upon a raging sea,"

Syria became the common place of refuge for the inhabitants, remembering the kind treatment their countrymen had met with there. These persons would naturally learn the language of the country to which they fled,‡ and thus become bilingual, speaking both the Chaldaic and the Greek. But their children, born in Syria, contented with their vernacular Greek spoken around them, would neglect and disuse the native language of their parents. How all this tended to bring the Greek tongue into Judea, will be seen in the sequel. In the year 198 before the Christian epoch, while Antiochus Magnus was striving with all his might to secure possession of Palestine again, which he had once before wrested from Ptolemy Epiphanes, the Jews, deserting the side of his opponents, supplied his army and elephants with provisions, and aided him in his attack upon the Egyptian garrison left in the citadel of Jerusalem. Grateful for their important services, Antiochus bestowed many favors upon the Jews. He caused the temple at Jerusalem to be repaired at his own expense, gave for the purchase of sacrifices 5,400 pieces of silver, together with 375 bushels of salt, and bestowed many presents besides to aid them in the services of religion. He thus established Judea again, shattered by many reverses, by rebuilding its towns and strengthening its fortresses. In its cities and territories, lest they should be widowed of inhabitant and cultivator, he fixed great numbers of the Jews whom he recalled from Syria for the purpose. Their wil-

\* Joseph. Antiq. lib. 12, c. 3, § 1, p. 596.

† Eusebius in Chron. A. 1726. Olymp. 122. p. 180.

‡ Vide Fleury, *Mœurs des Israélites*, par. 3, c. 3.

lingness corresponded with his desire, for no sooner did his kindness present a happy home for them in their native land, than innumerable families of the Jews repaired from Syria to Judea.\* Of these returning exiles, some were the children or grandchildren of those whom, ninety-four years previous, Seleucus had settled in his Syro-Grecian cities, while others were those or the progeny of those who, many years back, had fled for safety into Syria, as noticed above. But all, from their long and familiar intercourse with the Greeks, would not fail to spread far and wide a knowledge of the Greek language in the country of their Hebrew forefathers. They introduced, for instance, the epoch of the Greeks called the era of the Seleucidae, which came in consequence to be universally adopted in the calculation of years, tables, and histories. The later Rabbins call it ταράχη τηρεῖ—the era of contracts.† In addition, they brought in other observances and malpractices of the Greeks, such as the idolatrous Olympian and Isthmian games, together with the infamous παιδεφαστία as the author of the Second Book of Maccabees informs us.

After naming the institution by Jason of *Gymnasia* and *Ephobia* in Judea, which I shall enlarge upon in the next section, he thus proceeds: *Hν δὲ οὐτως ἀκμὴ τις Ἐλληνισμοῦ, καὶ πρόσθιας ἀλλοφυλίσμοι.*

The vulgate Latin rather expounds than translates it: “Erat autem hoc non initium, sed incrementum quoddam, et profectus gentilis, et alienigenæ conversationis propter impii Jasonis nefarium et inauditum scelus.”‡

#### § 5. *Jason endeavours to seduce the Jews into an adoption of Grecian manners.*

In the year 177 before Christ, and the 120th year of the Greeks, after the death of Antiochus and his successor, Seleucus, Antiochus Epiphanes came to the throne in the pontificate of Onias III. But Jesus, the brother of Onias, coveting the office, went to the new king and purchased the high-priesthood

\* Josephus, lib. 12 Antiq. c. 3, p. 598.

† Vide Joan. Mayerum de Temporibus sacris, par. 1, cap. 7, apud Ugolinum tom. i. qui putat perdurasse usque ad Mosis Bar-Maimonis æstatem, ejusve vitæ finem, qui mortuus censetur an. Christi 1201.

‡ Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 4, v. 13.

for a large sum of money. He obtained at the same time liberty to establish a gymnasium and school for youth (*epheborum ludum*) at Jerusalem, and procured for the Jewish people at large enrollment as citizens of Antioch. Returning to the capital of Judea, and assuming the pontificate, he sought, by all possible means, to withdraw the people from the customs of their forefathers, and to lead them into conformity with those of the Greeks. To aid him in this measure, he brought back a great multitude of persons along with him from Syria. The first step he took was to have the citizens called men of Antioch. Next, at the foot of Mount Zion he erected a gymnasium in which naked Jews wrestled and played after the Greek fashion. In fine, he established a brothel for the gratification of unnatural lust. Thus the Jews began to desert the laws of their fathers, to imbibe new habits, to imitate the Grecian games and worship, and to seek to rival each other in devotion to these pursuits. The testimony of the Second Book of Maccabees is painfully express upon this point:

“That the priests had no courage to serve any more at the altar, but despising the temple and neglecting the sacrifices, hastened to be partakers of the unlawful allowance in the place of exercise, after the game of Discus called them forth; not setting by the honors of their fathers, but liking the glory of the Grecians best of all. By reason whereof sore calamity came upon them: for they had them to be their enemies and avengers, whose custom they followed so earnestly, and unto whom they desired to be like in all things. For it is not a light thing to do wickedly against the laws of God: but the time following shall declare these things.”\*

Nay, so far did this Philhellenism (*φιλελληνισμός*) go, that the Jews devised means to correct the effect of their circumcision, that they might not be distinguished when naked from the Greeks.† By certain artificial contrivances they obliterated the traces of this national badge, contrivances unknown to Hippocrates and the art of medicine.‡ Now, from all these cir-

\* Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 4, v. 14 ad 17.

† Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 1, v. 15.

‡ Hippocrates, sect. 6, aphoris. 19. At contraria docuerunt Celsius, lib. 7, cap. 25; Galenus, lib. 14, Methodi, cap. 16; Paulus Aegineta, lib. 6, cap. 53.

cumstances combined, it may be easily conceived how widely the Greek language must then have prevailed in Judea. Greek names, too, were generally affected, as, for instance, in the case of the high priest himself, whose proper name was Ιησος—Jesus. This he changed into Jason, (*Iασωνα vocari voluit.*)

§ 6. *The progress of Hellenism under the pontificate of Menelaus.*

After an interval of three years from the occupation of the pontifical throne by Jason, he resolved to send Onias, brother of the prefect of the temple, to Antiochus with the stipulated price of his priestly office, and with tidings of the state of Judea. This Onias, a greater villain than Jason himself, presented the money in his own name, not in that of his employer, added to the sum three hundred talents more, and obtained the office of the high-priesthood for himself.\* On his return to Judea, a struggle naturally ensued between the actual holder and the claimer of the office—

“the crowd, meanwhile,  
Poised by conflicting claims, knows not to choose.”

The sons of Tobias stood by Onias, but the greater part of the people sided with Jason. Onias and his friends thereupon retire to Antiochus, as Josephus gives it;† and profess their earnest desire to forsake every thing Jewish, and wholly adopt a Greek form of government and all social usages besides. To a Philhellenic king (*philhellēnē*) such a declaration was beyond measure agreeable. In order to sustain those who made it, he despatches into Judea a large force to assist them in upsetting the faction and influence of Jason. The high priest retires before them and flies to Ammonitis. When Onias had thus secured the object of his ambition, the most important duty demanding his care was the fulfilment of his Græcising profession to the king. In carrying it out into operation, a mighty impulse was given to the already widely prevalent Hellenism. He, too, changed his name, like his predecessor, calling himself Menelaus instead of the Hebrew Onias.‡

\* Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 4, v. 23 et seq.

† Joseph. lib. 12 Antiq. cap. 5, p. 608.

‡ Vide Josephum, loc. cit.

§ 7. *Antiochus Epiphanes endeavors to establish Hellenism in Judea.*

But these facts are of little moment, compared with those now to be noticed, of which Antiochus Epiphanes was the author in Judea. We must, however, premise a word or two about his character. He was of a fierce and savage disposition, incredibly insolent and proud, and persevering above conception in every thing which he undertook—(supra modum pertinax.) So frantic, however, and wild was he in his proceedings, that Polybius the grave historian calls him '*Επιμανής*', not '*Επιφάνης illustrious.*'\* He was wonderfully addicted to Greek habits. Thus, after he came to the throne of Syria, there was nothing which so occupied his thoughts as the scheme for turning the Jews into Greeks, (*ut Judæos Græcos redderet,*) by forcing the Greek language no less than the Greek laws upon them. Polybius† and Tacitus, the heathen authors, affirm the fact; the latter says: *Antiochus demere superstitionem, et mores Græcorum dare adnixus, quominus tetterimam gentem in melius commutaret.*‡ Therefore labor, threat, punishment, reward, or stratagem, any and every art by which he hoped to gain his end, the propagation of Hellenism, he spared not, as I shall presently show.

In the year 171 A. C., and in the fifth year of his reign, Antiochus visited Jerusalem with a large army, on his return from Alexandria. There, according to the testimony of Sulpicius Severus,|| he found great diversity of practice among the Jews with regard to the Grecian rites, and regulated his conduct accordingly; visiting with extraordinary favor those who faithfully observed them, whilst those who were tenacious of Judaism he gave to death. In the period of three days, therefore, Jerusalem mourned the loss of eighty thousand souls, besides forty thousand imprisoned, and as many sold to slavery.¶ After this, Antiochus went up into the temple with Menelaus, and offered sacrifice after the manner of the Greeks, and when he had taken eighteen hundred talents from the sacred edifice, he returned to Antioch.¶

\* Polybius apud Athenæum, lib. 5, cap. 3, p. 193.

† Polybius apud Photium in Biblioth. cod. 244.

‡ Tacitus, lib. 5 Histor. num. 8.

|| Sulpicius Sever. Hist. Sac. lib. 2, cap. 18, p. 215.

¶ Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 5, v. 14.

¶ Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 1, v. 23, 24; lib. 2, cap 5, v. 15, 22.

In the meantime, lest the Jews should prove unfaithful to this newly-adopted Hellenism, he placed garrisons of Grecian soldiers throughout the country. At Jerusalem he stationed Philip as prefect, at Gerizim Andronicus, over both of whom the enthusiastic Philhellenist (*φιλέλληνα*) Menelaus had command. All this was done with a view to secure allegiance to the Greek language and usages on the part of the enthralled Jews, if not through good will, at least through the influence of fear.

*§ 8. Jerusalem filled with Grecian settlers.*

Two years afterwards, Antiochus having heard that certain Jews had returned to their national observances, sent Apollonius, the chief collector of the tribute (*tributorum præfectum*)\* into their territory with an army of twenty-two thousand Macedonian soldiers. When Apollonius had reached Judea, he kept himself quiet until the Sabbath day. No sooner did he perceive the citizens indulging in the rest of the day, than he burst into Jerusalem, traversed it with his troops, and whomsoever they found professing the Jewish religion was put to the sword without delay. He then set fire to the city and levelled its walls to the ground. When these cruel deeds were done, he caused a castle to be built on Mount Zion,† or the city of David,‡ according to Josephus, in which he stationed a garrison of Grecian troops, to overawe the inhabitants into conformity with the king's Philhellenizing propensities. This castle was called by the Greek name "Ακρα, that is *summit*, as Josephus writes: *Toῦτο δὲ τοῦ ὅρεως τὸ μέρος. Ακρα κέληται.*|| Now the number of the Greek garrison stationed there greatly exceeded the number of the citizens, for, in the language of the First Book of Maccabees, "Jerusalem was made the habitation of strangers."§ This easily accounts for the incapacity of the Maccabean princes to throw off the incumbrance of a foreign yoke, as they strove to do again and again. Judas, for example, under Antiochus Epiphanes,¶ and again under Eupator,\*\* and Jonathan, after

\* [*Ἄρχοντα φορολογίας. Ed.*]

† Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 1, v. 30 et seq., lib. 2, cap. 5, v. 24 et seq.

‡ Joseph. lib. 12 Antiq. cap. v. § 4, p. 609.

Joseph. de Bello, lib. 1, cap. 1, § 4, p. 53.

§ Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 1, v. 40.

¶ Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 1, v. 41.

\*\* Ibid. cap. 6, v. 18 et seq.

the death of Judas, under king Demetrius.\* This gallant family were never able to accomplish their object, not so much through defect of valor as through insufficiency of numbers. Thus the Macedonian troops held the city for five and twenty years, until Simon Maccabeus drove them out with the concurrence of the king of Syria.† Hence it is evident that the Jews of Jerusalem must have learned the Greek language for the reasons named in our first proposition in the preceding chapter. The first effort of the Greeks would be naturally directed to inculcate their language rather than to enforce their religion upon the people,‡ as this must be the medium of intercourse with them, since they themselves were ignorant of the Chaldee. Such was the state of things at Jerusalem; now look we elsewhere.

*§ 9. The Samaritans, of their own accord, adopt the Grecian customs, and dedicate the temple on Gerizim to Hellenian Jove.*

The Samaritans who dwelt in Shechem, (for of Samaria the Greeks had possession, as already said,) when they saw the Jews tormented for their pertinacious adherence to the rites of Judaism, determined to "sail with the stream," or as the Greeks phrase it, *πρὸς τὸν εὐ παράτοιτα τοῦτον ἡγεμόνα*. They therefore despatched ambassadors to Antiochus to say that they were not Jews, but immigrants from Persia and Media, and prepared at once to adopt the Grecian habits and religion. In proof of their readiness to do this they asked permission to dedicate their temple, not yet appropriated to any particular god, to some Greek divinity. In the reply of Antiochus he granted their prayer, and the Sichemite Samaritans directly adopted Greek institutions and bestowed on the temple the name of the Hellenian Jove (*Ἄιδης Ἑλληνίου*.) In so doing they conformed, according to Josephus,|| entirely to the Greek ritual. While Herodotus§ to the same effect testifies that this was the title under which Jupiter was worshipped in Greece. The ancient coins of Syracuse also make mention of this *ΔΙΟΣΕΛΛΕΝΙΟΥ*. In Ægina, too, he was venerated under the same appellation, as Aris-

\* Lib. 1 Mach cap. 11, v. 20.

† Ibid. cap. 13, v. 49.

‡ Ibid. cap. 6, v. 23.

|| Joseph. lib. 12 Antiq. cap. 5, § 5, p. 610.

§ Herodotus, lib. 9, p. 693, v. 88.

tophanes\* shows, and Pindar† in the words *Πάρ βωμὸν πατέρος Ἑλλασίον*. Thus did the Samaritans bow a willing neck to the yoke of Hellenism.

§ 10. *Antiochus on pain of death commands the Jews to conform to Hellenism and renounce Judaism.*

The attempt of Antiochus to subvert Judaism and upset all that was national among the people did not rest here. Having heard that there were some who still clung to the sacred institutions of their country, he published a decree enjoining the Jews to forsake their ancestral usages and adopt those of Greece, on pain of death to the contumacious.‡ To carry this into execution he sent an aged Athenian (*Ἀθηναῖον*), (so the Greek text and Syriac version give it; not *Antiochian*, as it is in the vulgate,)|| to compel them to abjure the laws of their fathers and embrace the Grecian faith, to defile their temple and consecrate it to some heathen deity, to prevent the celebration of sacrifice, the Sabbath, and feast days, together with the circumcision of infants, to subject them, in fact, to every kind of infamy, death following disobedience. How much all this must have tended to promote Hellenism in the land, the reader may more easily conjecture than I describe. In the first place the temple was dedicated to Jupiter Olympus (*Διὸς Ὀλυμπίου nomine insignitum est.*) It was further polluted by the luxury and revellings of the Greeks, who even dared to take up their abode in its chambers with their courtesans. Next the Jews, after the total abolition of their religion, were taught to celebrate the king's birth-day every month with heathen sacrifices. As, moreover, Bacchus was a deity held in the highest honor by the Greeks, especially the Syrians, (his image is represented on some of the coins in Vaillant,)§ the Greek Bacchanalia soon came to be observed. Crowned with ivy the votaries traversed the city and temple, and indulged in drinking and dancing and every excess.¶ Obedience was thus secured by compulsory means to the ordinance of the king, the Macedo-

\* [*Ἐλλάσιε Ζεῦ..—Ed.*] Aristophan. in Equit. v. 1250.

† Pindarus, Nem. od. 5, v. 19.

‡ Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 1, v. 43 ad 52.

|| Lib. 2, cap. 6, v. 1 et seq.

§ Vaillantius in Hist. Reg. Syr. pp. 179, 181, 210.

¶ Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 6, v. 7.

nians in the city and country not allowing a man even to bear the name of Jew, (*ut quis se Judæum nominaret*,) as may be seen in Maccabees.\* All were obliged to profess themselves Greeks, all observed the Greek institutions, consequently all used the Greek language.

§11. *Antiochus removes all the causes that might prevent the adoption of Hellenism.*

A little afterwards, in the year of the Greek dynasty 145, on the fifteenth of the Jewish month Casleu, Antiochus came into Judea to put the finishing stroke to the work of conversion by his presence. His first care was to have the sacred books of the Law and the Prophets collected and burned.† He next erected an altar upon the altar of Jehovah, placed a Grecian idol on it, and sacrificed in accordance with the heathen ritual. He caused altars to be raised throughout all the cities, hamlets, and villages of the land to the same divinity, to whom the Jews were forced to offer swine. They were also obliged to conform to the idolatrous usage mentioned by Aristophanes, of having before their door in the streets little shrines of Diana, or Hecate, as she is vulgarly called. This fact is gathered by Calmet in his commentary from Isaiah and Macrobius.‡ To this, too, evidently refers what the author of First Maccabees records in these words, "Before the gates of their houses and in the highways they burned incense and offered sacrifice."|| In confirmation of this view is all which the same books narrate of the cruel tortures inflicted by order of the tyrant upon the Jews who clave to the religion of their ancestors, and could not be induced to abjure their faith.§ So successful, notwithstanding, had been the measures of the Syrian king, that when the first of the Maccabees, Judas, would recall the Jews to their fealty to the God of Heaven, he could only find six thousand faithful prepared to follow his arms. All were Græcised. (Græcabantur.) The unsupported patriot was therefore compelled to spend his life in exile.|| At length Antiochus died, but this

\* Ibid. v. 6.

† Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 1, v. 57 ad 60.

‡ Calmet in Com. ad lib. 1 Mach. cap. 1, v. 58.

|| Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 1, v. 58.

§ Videsis lib. 1 Machab. cap. 1, v. 63 et 64; lib. 2, cap. 6, v. 10, 18, usque ad cap. 7.

|| Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 8, v. 1.

event brought no change of treatment towards the Jews. His successors, Antiochus Eupator and Demetrius, were heirs of his spirit no less than of his throne. They pushed their zeal for Hellenism to the utmost of their power, and confirmed it in its dominion over Palestine day after day.\*

*§ 12. The Chief Priest Alcimus a vigorous propagator of Hellenism.*

When Menelaus the chief priest died, in the year 163 A. C., Jacim, a most devoted admirer of the Greeks, was appointed to the vacant office by Ptolemy Eupator. He commenced his pontificate by an act of the same kind as distinguished that of his predecessors. He adopted a Greek name. Instead of *Jacim*, Ιάκων, he became *Alcimus*, Ἀλκιμος, the name of one of the most distinguished heroes of the Iliad.† Besides, incensed at the patriotic efforts of Judas Maccabeus to avenge the laws and liberties of his country, he sought to stop that enterprising prince in his career, and did not scruple to use violent means where none other would suffice. He gained the object of his wishes. After the death of Judas, his followers were harassed in all places by Bacchides, the general of the Syrian king. A famine aided the efforts of the Grecian commander, for, under the sore pressure of want, they were compelled at last to surrender at discretion to Bacchides; in the words of Josephus, πρὸς τοὺς Μαχεδόνας αὐτομολῆσαι.‡ By the advice of Alcimus the surrendered territory was committed to the administration of the Hellenizing Jews. These, as soon as they received their appointment, hunted out, with all diligence, the followers of Judas and those who had abjured the Grecian rites, and then gave them over to Bacchides, by whom they were put to death with circumstances of extreme barbarity. None were spared in the massacre except those who professed a cordial reception of Greek usages.|| To abolish utterly all distinction between Jew and Greek, Alcimus, intent upon making the revolution complete, ordered the wall of the temple courts, which separated them in worship, to be levelled with the ground. But God stopped the mouth of the impious priest, and struck him with palsy, some three years after he succeeded to the pontificate.

\* Ibid. cap. 11, v. 24 et seq.

† Homerus, Iliad 19, v. 392, et 24, v. 564.

‡ Joseph. lib. 13, cap. 1, p. 631.

|| Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 8, v. 23 ad 27; Jos. loc. cit.

§ 13. *All Judea is covered with Grecian colonies.*

At length, in the year of the world 3843, and before Christ 161, when Jonathan assumed his deceased brother's command, Bacchides, fearing for the tranquillity of his royal master's dominions, came with a numerous Greek army to the river Jordan. In the words of Josephus, *φοβηθεὶς Βαχιδῆς μὴ παράσῃ πράγματα τῷ βασιλεῖ καὶ τοῖς Μαχεδόναις ὁ Ἰωνάθης.*\* There, after a battle had been fought between them, as Jonathan found himself unable to sustain the contest against such overwhelming numbers, he withdrew beyond the river, and thus escaped the present danger. Bacchides, bending his way thence toward Jerusalem, fortified the towns of Judea, Jericho, Ammaus, Bethoron, Bethel, Thamatha, Phara Thopho,† and others with walls and gates, and placed in them fresh reinforcements. But in Bethsura, Gazara, and in the castle of Jerusalem he established strong garrisons, and in them detained the sons of those Jewish chieftains as hostages who took part with Jonathan.‡ Judea was thus more than ever filled with foreigners of Greek extraction, and laid prostrate at their feet. There was no possibility of remaining a Jew, under those circumstances. Jonathan, an exile from the land, was compelled to betake himself to Bethbessen, as Fullonius supposes,|| and certainly beyond the Jordan, as Josephus assures us.§ And although he was enabled to defeat Bacchides two years afterwards, yet was he even then reduced to such straits, that the victor sent legates to the vanquished to sue for peace.¶ After this was concluded, Jonathan retired to Michmash and exercised a kind of princely rule over his own people. The Greeks, on the other hand, holding the country for nineteen years, gave such a circulation to the Greek tongue, that from that period the Chaldee began to fall into almost total desuetude, (*in desuetudinem abire cœperit Chaldaicus sermo, quem labentibus deinceps annis ne intelligebant quidem Judæi,*) and became in a short time unintelligible to the Jews themselves, as we are yet to show, but must not anticipate the

\* Joseph. lib. 13 Antiq. cap. 1, § 2, p. 632.

† [Pharathoni Tephon; ita enim in LXX. Apud Joseph. Pharatho, Tochoan. Ed.]

‡ Lib. 1 Mac. c. 9, v. 47 ad 53.

|| Fullonius in Comm. ad 1 Mach. cap. 9, v. 57, p. 314.

§ Joseph. in Antiquitatibus, loco citato.

¶ 1 Mach. cap. 9, v. 70.

argument of our third part. Meanwhile, in the year of the world 3841, of the Greek dynasty 170, before Christ 143, Simon succeeded his brother Jonathan, who had been slain. Having secured the alliance and protection of Demetrius, king of Syria, he stormed Gazara, Bethsura, Ammaus, and the other cities I have just named, and put their Greek garrisons to the sword. By this the prophecy of Zechariah was fulfilled : "And I will raise up thy sons, O Zion, against thy sons, O Greece, and I will make thee like the sword of the mighty."\* By this, too, the declaration of the author of First Maccabees : "The yoke of the Gentiles is removed from Israel,"† after a servitude of 190 years to Greek rule. Rabbi Jose is mistaken in making the period 180 in the Sedar Olam.‡

*§ 14. The Jews adopted the Greek Philosophy also.*

About the same time, or, as others will have it, under John Hyrcanus, the son of Simon Maccabeus, the Jews adopted the Greek sects of philosophy, namely, the Stoic, Epicurean and Pythagoric, known however among them by the names of Pharisaic, Sadducean, and Esselian. From these philosophies, we are informed, they received not only general habits and a rule of life, but also their peculiar doctrines, which they blended with the wisdom of their own ancestors.

In the first place, we find the sect of the Pharisees embracing the principles and laws of the Stoics. This we receive on the authority of Josephus himself, a Pharisee, who thus writes : *'Εννεακαίδεκα δ' ἦτη ἔχων, ἡρξάμην τε πολιτείσθαι τῇ φροντίᾳ αἰρέσει καταχολονθῶν, η παραπλῆσιός ἐστι τῇ παρ' Ἑλλήσι Στοικῆ λεγομένη.* "Being about nineteen years old, I began to conduct myself according to the sect of the Pharisees, which is near neighbor to that called Stoic among the Greeks."|| Like the Stoics, the Pharisees attributed all events to fate. They studied astrology with fervor, and gave new names to the planets and signs of the zodiac. They believed in the metempsychosis, or transmigration of souls from body to body. (*Μετεμψύχωσιν admittebant.*) This opinion led to the supposition that Christ was

\* Zach. cap. 9, v. 13, et interpretes ibi.

† Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 13, v. 41.

‡ L. Chronicon Hebræor. p. 91, et p. 3 et seq.

|| Josephus in ejus Vita, § 2, p. 2.

Jeremiah, or Elias, or John the Baptist, as though the soul of one of these prophets animated the body of Christ.\*

The Sadducees differed from these about as much as the Epicureans from the Stoicks. Philastrius happily says, “The madness of Epicurus was more palatable to them than the sanctions of the divine law.”†

Following the Epicurean dogmata, they admitted no providence. They considered man so independent of divine interference, as to have his happiness or misery entirely in his own keeping. They believed that the soul died utterly with the body—consequently that there were no rewards or punishments after death. Their natural inference was, that the chief good consisted in the unlimited enjoyment of earth.

The Essenes are reported by Josephus to have shaped their course of life much after the Pythagoreans: *Γένος δὲ τοῦτον τοιὶ διαιτη̄ χρώμενον τὴν παρὰ Ἑλλησιν ὑπὸ Πυθαγόρον καταδεῖγμένη.* “This class of persons leads the same kind of life as that prescribed by Pythagoras among the Greeks.”‡ The Essenes, therefore, after the pattern of the Pythagoreans, observed a perfect community of goods and fellowship. So complete was the denudation of property on the part of the rich, who came among them, that they received no more than the very poorest. Silence was had in high repute among them, and they imposed upon their novices (*νεοσύντατοι*) a four years’ observance of it before admitted to full brotherhood. Their life was frugal in an extreme degree. They considered all things under the dominion of fate. They believed the body alone to be mortal, the soul surviving imperishably.

From these various points of agreement it is evident enough, that the Pharisees, Sadducees, and Essenes, received their tenets and habits respectively from the Stoic, Epicurean, and Pythagorean philosophies. Much additional information, concerning these three sects may be gathered from Josephus|| of the ancients, and of the moderns from Serarius and Drusius, and from Scaliger, in his books, “*De tribæresi Hebræorum.*”

If, then, Hellenism had made such progress among the Jews, that they even embraced the Grecian philosophy, and adulter-

\* Matthæus, cap. 16, v. 14.

† Philastrius de Hæres. cap. 5, p. 16, ex edit Fabrie.

‡ Joseph. in Antiq. lib. 15, cap. 10, p. 777, § 4.

|| Jos. de Bello, lib. 2, cap. 8, p. 160 et seq.

ated with it, nay, in some instances, rejected for it the traditions and doctrines of the fathers of the nation, are we not bound to confess the evidence to be very strong indeed in favor of a general adoption of the Greek language among them at the same period?

[To be continued.]

## ARTICLE IX.

### INFANT BAPTISM.—EXPOSITION OF 1 COR. 10: 1-11.

By Rev. C. A. Hollenbeck, Athens, New-York.

“We should like to know how a discerning Baptist would succeed in replying to your argument”—[*Letter from Prof. Stuart and Woods.*]

“MOREOVER, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant how that ALL OUR FATHERS [that came out of Egypt by Moses] were under the cloud, and ALL passed through the sea, and WERE ALL BAPTIZED.”—1 Cor. 10: 1-11. ALL OUR FATHERS, i. e., those who were overthrown in the wilderness, and those who came in with Joshua into the possession of the Gentiles. What, at the time referred to, were these latter? They were ‘LITTLE ONES, children, which in that day had no knowledge of good and evil,’ Ex. 10: 9, 10, 11. 24: 12, 37. Numb. 14: 28, 31. Deut. 1: 39. 5: 3. Moreover, the apostle would not that we should be ignorant that these “LITTLE ONES,” and their fathers, WERE ALL BAPTIZED. But why would not the apostle that we should be ignorant of this circumstance? Because this thing (i. e., the baptism of “LITTLE ONES”) happened unto the fathers for our *example*, upon whom the ends of the world (or the gospel dispensation) are come. Verses 6th and 11th, “Now ALL these things (the things mentioned in the first four verses which were exemplary, and the others admonitory) happened unto them, and were our examples.”—τύποι, here translated examples, generally implies some institution under the Old Testament, appointed to represent or pre-figure something future under the *New*; and may therefore be, in some measure, referred to the head of prophecy, foretelling by things, as the latter does by words. Therefore, when the apostle says that he would not that we should be ignorant that ALL the fathers were baptized—for this thing happened unto

them for our example—his meaning probably is, that the baptism of the fathers under the Old Testament, was a preintimation; the sense, substance or solution of which is, that as the fathers and their “*LITTLE ONES*,” under the former dispensation, were baptized unto Moses, and thus *made members of the church in the wilderness; so believers and their CHILDREN, under the gospel dispensation, should be baptized unto or in the name of the Lord Jesus, and thus be made members of the general assembly and CHURCH OF THE FIRST BORN,*”—Ex. 13: 2. Heb. 12: 23. As if the apostle had said, Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant that the baptism of our fathers unto Moses, not only bound them to legal obedience, but also *served unto the example and shadow of Christian Baptism* for the time then present, and was imposed on them until the reformation; but Christ being come, that baptism is superseded by the baptism of Christ; but think not that the practice of baptizing “*little ones*” is now to surcease. No, my brethren! Christ is the same yesterday over the Old Testament, to-day over the New, and forever over the church triumphant in Heaven; therefore your children are to have the same relation to God and his people under the Christian dispensation, as under the Mosaic economy; and God hath confirmed the truth of this declaration by baptizing the fathers and their “*little ones*,” and actuating me by the inspiration of his Holy Spirit to record the same for your edification, as an *example* which you are to imitate unto the end of the world. If such is not the literal and obvious import of the passage under consideration, there can be no adequate reason assigned for the mention of the baptism of the fathers as our example; and the apparently deep and anxious solicitude of the apostle, lest he should keep back something from the Corinthians that was profitable for them to know, for the furtherance of their spiritual culture, evaporates at once into mere unmeaning grandiloquence and empty verbiage. Here, then, you see we have adduced the very example and precept, which have so often and so loudly been demanded, of a single instance recorded in the New Testament of an infant baptized, or of a commandment that it should be so done unto infants: “Go ye, therefore, and teach *all nations*, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost;” but when ye baptize, see that ye do it according to the pattern showed unto you in the practice of God himself, Heb. 8: 5., viz., baptize the children with the fathers, even though they be so young as to have no knowledge between good and evil.

## ARTICLE X.

## CRITICAL NOTICES.

1.—*Journal of the American Oriental Society.* Vol. I. No. 1.  
Boston : Little & Brown. 1843. pp. 78.

IT may strike our transatlantic cousins with some surprise to learn that an *Oriental Society* has been formed in Boston. They will, doubtless, regard it as a characteristic instance of Yankee presumption. What do we know of the East? Do the States of Massachusetts and New England\* really contain any vestiges of oriental lore? Has New York any body who thinks of aught besides dollars and cents? What have the barbarous regions of the West, including the renegades in Texas, and the Titans of Patagonia, to do with the palmy Orient, the seats of ancient civilization, the cradles of the human race? Much, we reply, in many ways.

First, we are endeavoring to send back the light of true religion and science to the regions where it first dawned. We are trying to pay the great debt which we, in common with Europe, owe to Asia. One of our Missionary Societies is, at this moment, employing on the continent of Asia and its islands, more than *seventy* collegially educated and ordained missionaries, who are opening the fountains of human knowledge as truly as they are the fountain of salvation. Some of them have mastered the language of China; others are skilled in the philosophy of the Hindoos; one has acquired an European reputation by his acquaintance with the difficult Arabic; another has translated the Old Testament Scriptures into the Hebrew-Spanish dialect, in a manner which has drawn forth the commendation of the most learned Rabbies. Now these various intelligent missionaries may be regarded as so many purveyors for the Oriental association at home, collectors of ancient MSS., coins, and whatever goes to form an Oriental museum, besides being themselves authors of valuable translations from the various languages of the East.

Second, our extensive commerce in all the Eastern seas may be subservient to the cultivation of Oriental studies, and the collection of valuable monuments at home. The East India

---

\* Vide Alison's *History of Europe*, Vol. IV. p. 483. Harpers' edition.

Marine Museum, at Salem, is a most interesting evidence of what can be accomplished in this way. Much more can be done by our intelligent sea-captains, if their attention is prominently directed to this object.

Third, some Americans who have been employed as consuls, and in other efficient capacities, have conferred honor on the country by their Oriental studies. It is sufficient to mention here, the names of William Shaler and William B. Hodgson. The latter is preparing for publication a learned and original work on the Foulah people of North Africa. Mr. Shaler's labors have been eulogized by the philologists of Germany. In this connection we may mention, that one of the literary gentlemen who were employed in the Exploring Expedition, has recently sailed for the East, in order to prosecute ethnographical observations.

Again, it is well known that biblical studies, including the Hebrew and the cognate languages, have received far more attention in the United States than they have in Great Britain.\* A work like the Biblical Researches could not be produced there. New and Old Testament lexicons and grammars are of *American* production, and in England are mere reprints. No commentaries, like those of Mr. Bush on the Pentateuch, or of Mr. Barnes on the New Testament, uniting a familiar acquaintance with the original, to a happy talent for practical exposition, can be found, so far as we know, in the recent theological literature of England.

These reasons will justify, if any justification were needed, the establishment of an Oriental association among us. Some capital is already accumulated. Some reputation has been acquired, Europeans themselves being judges. Facilities for obtaining information, by our scholars, in regard to West Africa, Western and Central Asia, and Polynesia, are hardly excelled in England herself.

These and other considerations induced a few gentlemen in Boston and its neighborhood, interested in Oriental literature, to form an association. This was in August, 1842. An act of incorporation was obtained from the Massachusetts Legislature in 1843. The President of the society is John Pickering of Boston; the Vice-Presidents are, William Jenks of Boston, Moses Stuart of Andover, and Edward Robinson of New York. The number of members is about forty, in-

\* In Scotland, as we are informed, the practice of studying Hebrew with the vowel-points, is just coming into vogue! The sale of the Biblical Cabinet, a valuable publication at Edinburgh, does not exceed 500 copies.

cluding our principal Oriental scholars, the most eminent foreign missionaries, and a few merchants engaged in eastern commerce. Four foreign honorary corresponding members have been chosen. A beginning has been made for a library by a collection of more than one hundred volumes, all pertaining to the Chinese language and its dialects. The objects contemplated by the society are: first, the cultivation of learning in the Asiatic, African, and Polynesian languages; second, the publication of memoirs, translations, vocabularies, and other works relating to those languages; third, the collection of a library.

At the first annual meeting of the society, an address was delivered by Mr. Pickering, which, with accompanying notes, etc., forms the first number of the journal of the society. Of this address, we will now give a short account. After noticing the disadvantages under which American scholars necessarily labor, and the energy and perseverance which they have, notwithstanding, exhibited, Mr. P. proceeds to present a comprehensive sketch of the field of inquiry. Particular prominence is given to Egypt and India, the former communicating its influence to Greece and Rome, and thence to Modern Europe; the latter, to Eastern Asia, including, perhaps, parts of China. A rapid survey is then presented of the discovery of the key to the hieroglyphic writing of Egypt, and of the labors of Young, Champollion, Wilkinson, Lepsius, and others. Some observations are then made on the principal dialects which have been used, or are now used, on the northern coast of Africa, the investigations of Gesenius on the Punic being specially noticed. The labors of Dr. Robinson and of Mr. Smith, in the Holy Land, are alluded to with much commendation, and the belief is expressed that rich discoveries remain yet to be made. Remarks then follow upon some of the more interesting objects in Asia Minor and the countries lying on the Black Sea. The literature of Armenia, it is remarked, is important, not merely for the original works of its native writers, but for the translations made by them from foreign languages, particularly the Greek. Of the antiquities called Babylonian, the most interesting are the specimens of the very ancient written language, called the cuneiform, or arrow-headed characters, which appear to have been used by the Medes, Persians and Assyrians. Dr. Grotefend of Frankfort has applied himself to the task of deciphering them with much promise of success. Some of the results of his investigations are, that the inscriptions are all written in an horizontal direction from left to right; that all cuneiform writing is

composed of letters, and not merely of syllabic signs ; that those of Persepolis, which are at present known, all have reference to Darius Hystaspes and his son Xerxes ; and that the language of the first species of Persepolitan writing is the Zend.

The language of Persia is peculiarly interesting to us, for the remarkable affinities which are found in it to our own and other languages of the great Teutonic family. In the study of the Persian language, our own countrymen have not been wholly inactive. "I have now lying before me," says Mr. P., "a MS. translation of a part of a copious Persian work, entitled the *Hyat-ut-Kulooob*; containing an original biography of Mohammed, and a history of his religion, written by a native of that country." The translation was made by the Rev. J. L. Merrick, an American missionary in Persia, who has executed his task with great fidelity and skill, and added valuable notes of his own. The work has been examined and strongly commended by Sir Gore Ouseley, president of the Asiatic Society of London.

If there were no other motive for the pursuit of the literature, science and history of India, there would be a sufficient one in the fact, that the great parent language of India, the Sanscrit, is now found to be so extensively incorporated into the Greek and Latin, and other languages of Europe, and above all, in those which we consider as belonging to the German family. "When I read the *Gothic* of Ulphilas's version of the Scriptures," says Prof. Bopp of Berlin, "I scarcely know whether I am reading Sanscrit or German." After leaving India, Mr. Pickering passes, in rapid review, Tartary, China, Japan, and the neighboring islands, Cochin China, the Indian Archipelago, and the principal groups of islands in the Pacific Ocean. Our limits do not allow of any further notice.

Some excellent concluding remarks are made, in answer to the inquiry, What is the utility of ethnographical studies ? With the great Leibnitz we might answer, "As the remote origin of nations goes back beyond the records of history, we have nothing but their *languages* to supply the place of historical information." These researches have, already, established affinities which were never suspected between remote nations. To the question, of what utility is knowledge of this kind ? it may be answered, as in many other cases, because a *natural* desire for such knowledge has been implanted in man, by his Creator, for wise purposes ; and when philosophy attempts to reason down this desire, nature rebels ; and no

man is willing to throw aside as useless these and a thousand other particulars of the past generations of his race, although he cannot demonstrate their direct applicability to any common purpose, that would in popular language be denominated practically useful.

A valuable appendix contains, first, an account of the literary operations of American missionaries in the East; second, a list of American voyages and travels in the East, and round the world; third, note on the cuneiform inscriptions; and fourth, note on British philology.

Professor Stuart has been appointed to deliver the next annual address before the society, at Boston, in the last week in May, 1844.

2.—*Manual of Classical Literature, from the German of J. J. Eschenberg, Professor in the Carolinum, at Brunswick, with additions, embracing treatises on the following subjects: first, classical geography and topography; second, classical chronology; third, Greek and Roman mythology; fourth, Greek antiquities; fifth, Roman antiquities; sixth, archaeology of Greek literature; seventh, archaeology of Roman literature; ninth, history of Greek literature; tenth, history of Roman literature.* By N. W. FISKE, Professor in Amherst College. fourth edition; six thousand. Philadelphia: E. C. Biddle, pp. 690.

We welcome the appearance of a fourth, and that a stereotype, edition of this excellent work, the first and second editions of which have been already noticed in the Repository. It does honor not only to the editor, who has prepared it with so much learning and taste, and to the publisher, who has brought it out in so substantial and elegant a form, but to the literary public, who have so justly appreciated its worth, and encouraged so much additional expenditure of labor and money. Selected as the basis of public and private instruction in the major part of the gymnasia and universities of Germany, extensively used in the classical schools and higher seminaries in France, and now adopted as a text-book, or recommended as a book of reference, in a large proportion of the American colleges, the Manual of Classical Literature may be regarded as having received the seal of public approbation. The translator has added much to its contents, and more to its value. The treatises on classical geography and chronology, are furnished entirely by him; and the additions and improvements in the other parts are so great, that a less scrupu-

pulous and less modest editor would not hesitate to publish it as an original work. Like Virgil's mistletoe, adorning the sacred oak with golden foliage, not her own—with “*happier branches which she never sowed.*” Such are the labors which the American editor has bestowed on the German “Handbuch.”

The fourth edition, besides valuable emendations and additions to the references, is enlarged and improved by the insertion of numerous tables which are truly multum in parvo, and by a great number of wood-cuts and copperplate engravings, which illustrate to the eye all those objects and usages of antiquity of which it is so difficult to give an intelligible description. The style of these engravings, and indeed of the whole book, is no less gratifying to the eye of taste, than the treasures of classical learning it contains are to the mind of the scholar. It does one good to look on such a book in these days of *cheap* literature. And it argues well for the cause of sound learning and good taste, when such scholars as Sears, Edwards, Felton and Fisk can afford to bring out the ripe fruits of laborious years under so attractive a form as the *Classical Studies* and the *Manual of Classical Literature*.

We should omit what it most becomes us to mention as editor of a *Biblical* journal, and what we presume will be most grateful to the feelings of the editor, should we fail to notice a feature of the work which he seems to have cherished with special care, and which will commend it to the esteem and love of the Christian scholar, viz., its habitual deference to the authority of the Bible—its view of every thing from the stand-point, and in the light of Christianity—its dedication, we had almost said, to the cause of sacred learning, with the prayer that “it may hold some humble place among the means of advancing classical learning, and of promoting thereby the knowledge of God and of Jesus Christ, whom to know is eternal life.”

3.—*Egypt and the Books of Moses; or the Books of Moses illustrated by the Monuments of Egypt: with an Appendix.* By Dr. E. W. Hengstenberg. From the German, by R. D. C. Robbins, Abbot Resident, Theol. Sem., Andover. Andover: Allen, Morril & Wardwell. New-York: M. H. Newman. 1843. pp. 300.

A new interest in Egyptian Antiquities has been awakened, since the investigations of Champollion the younger. His discoveries and those of Dr. Young, in respect to the hiero-

glyphics, have opened up a new field of research, and have unfolded important secrets of far-distant centuries.

Those researches have been regarded with deep interest, as well by the infidel as the Christian. The former felt confident that the revelations of the ancient monuments of Egypt would contradict and overthrow the revelations by Moses, and establish Deism throughout the world; whilst the latter, confident in the grounds of his faith, looked on calmly, and looked up trustfully to Him who sitteth on high beholding all the works of men, knowing assuredly that every true record of every age must confirm the declarations of God's word. And so it has eventuated thus far. The present investigations of Dr. Lepsius will, also, as certainly as the past, prove that Moses wrote with a perfect knowledge of the country, and strengthen our faith in his divine inspiration.

The work before us of Dr. Hengstenberg is timely, and must operate as a powerful antidote to infidelity. It is an appeal to facts, and shows convincingly the authenticity of the Pentateuch, by exhibiting the multiplied instances of coincidence between the testimony of Egyptian monuments and the books of Moses—instances sufficient totally to overwhelm all the objections of the skeptic. It is an admirable book for the Christian, as well as for the mere scholar, and the translator has done the cause of science and of true religion a valuable service, by offering it to the public in an English dress.

4.—*The Voice of the Church one, under all the successive forms of Christianity; A Discourse pronounced at the opening of the Theological School at Geneva. By J. H. Merle D'Aubigné, D. D. [Translated by Rev. R. Smith, Waterford, N. Y.] New-York: John S. Taylor & Co. 1844. pp. 63.*

As will be apparent from the title, this is a Discourse delivered by the celebrated Dr. Merle, at the opening of the Theological School at Geneva. The Christians of the United States have become so fascinated by his History of the Reformation, that every thing from his pen is eagerly sought after. He is unquestionably one of the most dramatic writers of the day, making his prose living with all the interest of romance. He is also synthetical, and in this 'Voice of the Church,' has reduced the history of the Church synthetically, into *Four Periods*, or forms of Christianity. 'The primitive, or the form of Life; the form of Dogma; the Scholastic, or the form of the School; the form of the Re-

formation.' The form of Life embraces the early period of the Church, in which the living efficacy of the faith was powerfully manifested in the life. The form of Dogma, that in which the practical part of Christianity is comparatively forgotten in an attention to creeds. The form of the School, that in which the spirit of science becomes manifested in breaking itself loose from the authority of the Church. The form of the Reformation, that in which the three preceding forms are reunited ; former things re-established. But we need say no more to recommend this little 'Voice' to the Christian public.

5.—*The History of the Reformation of the Church of England.* By Gilbert Burnet, D.D. Late Lord Bishop of Salisbury. With a Copious Index, Revised and Corrected, with additional Notes and a Preface calculated to remove certain difficulties attending the perusal of this important History ; by the Rev. E. Nares, D. D. With two Engravings, in 3 vols. New York : D. Appleton & Co. 1843.

Whilst we have been disposed to regret the floods of cheap, trashy literature,—scarcely, indeed, deserving the name,—which have almost overwhelmed the surface of society, we rejoice that there are some works of real value thus made accessible to the public. Among these must be enumerated Burnet's *History of the Reformation in England*. Such a work, indeed, merits a better dress, and those willing to pay for it can have it ; yet when we think of three large 8vo vols. for \$2,50, the paper and binding are certainly better than might have been expected. And, when we reflect that many a poor man will thus be enabled to enrich his mind with its treasures, who must otherwise dispense with that privilege, we are much inclined to withdraw our objection. We trust, at all events, that as the enterprising publishers have manifested a desire to afford all an opportunity of possessing the work, their enterprise will meet with its just reward.

Burnet's work has its faults and errors, yet it is a standard work of great celebrity, and should be read by every student of history. The present edition is printed in large type, with marginal summaries, and contains an important preface by Dr. Nares, as well as a valuable index of forty-three pages.

6.—*The Flower Garden ; or, Chapters on Flowers. A Sequel to Floral Biography.* By Charlotte Elizabeth. New-York : M. W. Dodd. 1844. pp. 328.

This work has already interested many readers, and is again offered to tempt the fancy of those who may wish to make a

delicate New Year or Christmas Gift. It abounds in beautiful thoughts, striking similes, and graceful expressions, and must add interest to a walk in the Flower Garden. "What my gracious Lord and Saviour has invited me to consider, I will not overlook ; what he tells me that Solomon in all his glory could not equal, I will not refuse to admire ; and what he represents as being clothed by the hand of God, as a symbol of his providential care over me, I will not fail to recognize as among the sweetest tokens of his love. While I live, flowers shall multiply in my garden, and be cherished in my bosom ; and when I die, if any kind hand will place them there, flowers shall smile upon my grave."

Charlotte Elizabeth, as is known, has adopted the opinions of the Literalists, and believes in the premillenial advent of Christ. Hence, speaking of the Lord's reign, she says, "The Russian violet, springing from the frozen ground, amid storms and every mark of devastation, presents also a more exact type of what I conceive will be the circumstances of that period. That the world will be converted by the preaching of the Gospel, I have not the slightest expectation."

7.—*The Trial of the Pope of Rome, the Antichrist, or Man of Sin, described in the Bible, for High Treason against the Son of God. Tried at the Sessions' House of Truth, before the Right Hon. Divine Revelation, Lord Chief Justice of His Majesty's Court of Equity ; the Hon. Justice Reason, of said Court ; and the Hon. Justice History, one of the Justices of His Majesty's Court of Reformation. Taken in short hand, by a Friend to St. Peter, Professor of Stenography, etc. Second American edition, with an Appendix. Boston : Tappan & Dennet. 1844. pp. 176.*

The title of this little volume is, in itself, sufficient to excite attention, and awaken interest ; and the perusal will fully meet the awakened interest. The Pope is tried for high treason against Jehovah, King of Heaven, for usurping his supremacy, titles, etc. The form of a state trial is kept up. The Pope is supposed to be always existing, only under different names. The dead, martyrs and others, are revived and summoned as witnesses. They make their own statements under examination by the lawyers, and thus the principal facts of history on this subject are adduced in a manner adapted to impress them on the memory. It of course becomes an abridgment of ecclesiastical history, and a confirmation of the testimony of Scripture.

- 8.—*Geological Cosmogony ; or an Examination of the Geological Theory of the Origin and Antiquity of the Earth, and of the Causes and Object of the Changes it has undergone. By a Layman.* New York : Robert Carter. 1843.

The author of this small volume is evidently an original thinker ; and his observations and arguments are well worth the consideration of the Christian and the Geologist. He examines the theories of Buckland, Lyell, J. Pye Smith and others, and concludes that, whilst they are ingenious and account for many phenomena, they leave out of view many other facts and relations, which are difficult of explanation in accordance with their theories. He is a firm believer in the Divine inspiration of the Scriptures, and thinks that no theory of the earth can be satisfactory which leaves out of view the revelations of that book, especially those relating to the fall of man, and the consequent corruption of the human family. His own opinion is, that the changes on the earth's structure occurred subsequently to the fall of man, and that they are all sufficiently accounted for consistently with the plain sense of the Scriptures, without any such theories as have been recently promulgated.

- 9.—*Memoir of the Life, Labors, and Extensive Usefulness, of the Rev. Christmas Evans ; a distinguished Minister of the Baptist Denomination in Wales. Extracted from the Welsh Memoir : by David Phillips.* New-York : M. W. Dodd. 1843. pp. 258.

This memoir details the history of an interesting and rather remarkable man. In early life he had no opportunities of instruction, indeed could not read a syllable when seventeen years of age. Yet he felt prompted to become a preacher of righteousness, and began to exhort in public when quite young and without much knowledge. He was finally inducted into the ministry in the Baptist Church, became extremely popular and extensively useful. He was born in 1766, on Christmas day, and died in July, 1838, having lived to a good old age, and then departed in peace to his rest in heaven.

The volume will, doubtless, be acceptable to members of the Baptist denomination, especially as Mr. Evans says, ‘After having gone through the whole of the New Testament, I could not find one passage substantiating the rite of infant baptism.’ It ought to be remembered that this examination was made about two or three years after he had first learned to read.

- 10.—*A Protestant Memorial: comprising, I. A Concise Historical Sketch of the Reformation. II. The Antiquity of the Religion of Protestants Demonstrated. III. The Safety of continuing in the Protestant Church. IV. Romanism Contradictory to the Bible.* By Thomas Hartwell Horne, B. D. From the ninth London edition. New-York: John S. Taylor & Co. 1844. pp. 149.

The title of this work sufficiently designates its plan and object. It was prepared in view of the celebration, on the fourth of October, 1835, of the completion of Coverdale's Bible, the first entire English Protestant Version of the Bible, finished Oct. 4, 1535. It is an excellent Manual, adapted to inform those, who are ignorant, on the rise and progress of the Reformation, and also to show that the Protestant religion is anterior to the Papal, and that the latter is contrary to the Scriptures.

Under the fourth chapter, the author quotes copiously from the authorities of the Church of Rome, and shows, on a great variety of topics, how totally diverse they are from the pure principles of the Gospel.

- 11.—*Governmental History of the United States of America, from the earliest settlement to the adoption of the present Constitution.* By Henry Sherman, Counsellor of Law, New-York. In four parts. New-York: Mark H. Newman. 1843. pp. 282.

We think it highly important that the rising generation should become familiar with the history of those institutions on which our life, as a nation, is dependent. Let them early imbibe the principles of wholesome, well-regulated liberty, and learn the story of the conflicts and trials of the Colonies, in their efforts at establishing an independent government.

This book we consider well adapted to instruct our youth in our governmental history, and would recommend its adoption as a text book for schools. It embraces all the important points on that subject, in four parts:—I. History of the Southern Colony of Virginia; II. History of the Northern Colony of Virginia or New England; III. Governmental History of the Colonies in their smaller divisions to the time of the Declaration of Independence; IV. Governmental History from the Declaration of Independence to the time of the adoption of the present Constitution.

- 12.—*A View of Congregationalism, its Principles and Doctrines, the Testimony of Ecclesiastical History in its favor, its practice and its advantages. By George Punchard, Author of the History of Congregationalism, with an Introductory Essay, by R. S. Storrs, D. D. Second Edition, revised and enlarged. Andover: Allen, Morrill, & Wardwell. New-York: Mark H. Newman. 1844. pp. 331.*

We have received this work in season to say but a word respecting it, and inform our readers of its publication. We deem it to be of great value to the members of the Congregational Church, and it will, doubtless, tend to strengthen the strong feeling of attachment to the forms of their fathers, which has been recently revived among the sons and daughters of New England.

Whatever the form of government, whilst it recognizes the parity of the ministry, and does not interfere with the spirituality and simplicity of the Gospel, we bid it God speed. Oh, that all our forms were more alive with the beauty and excellency of God's truth.

- 13.—*Profit and Honor; or, Illustrations of Humble Life. By Mrs. Copley. New-York: M. W. Dodd. 1843. pp. 263.*

Mrs. Copley (late Mrs. Hewlett) is well known and much admired as an authoress, on both sides of the Atlantic. Her 'Cottage Comforts,' has had an unusually large circulation; and we anticipate for 'Profit and Honor' no very limited sale. It is unquestionably an admirable book, and will serve an excellent purpose in families. Let it be presented to our domestics, with proper feelings of regard for them, and a manifested design to promote their happiness, and it will be thankfully received, and probably tend much to secure peace, quietness, and comfort.

It dwells on such topics as the following, in an interesting style: Advantages of Domestic Service—The Happy Servant-Maid—Fidelity in Servants—The Servant worth keeping at any price—Bad effects of Sloth—Connexion with Children—The Prudent Washerwoman—Sabbath Privileges—A Grateful Servant, etc. etc. etc.

- 14.—*Uncle Barnaby; or Recollections of his Character and Opinions. New York: M. W. Dodd. 1844. pp. 316.*

This Uncle Barnaby, whoever he was, was evidently a clever old gentleman, entertaining to his young friends, and ever

inculcating sound, wholesome sentiments. His character, as set forth in the volume, is one worthy of imitation. His opinions are wholesome in their tendency. As designed for the entertainment and instruction of the young, the book is worthy of all commendation. It cannot be read without interest and profit. There are remarks on such topics as the following: 'I cannot afford it'—'Do it, and it will be done'—'It's of no use to try'—'I don't care,' 'It will be all one a hundred years hence,' etc. etc.

- 15.—*Notes, Explanatory and Practical, on the Epistle to the Hebrews.* By Albert Barnes. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1843. pp. 335.

We have but just now received this volume from the publishers. It is not too late, however, to notice it and recommend it to the attention of those who love the study of God's word. It is in the style and after the manner of Mr. Barnes's other commentaries on different parts of the New Testament, and especially adapted to the wants of Sabbath School Teachers. An Introduction presents a very condensed and lucid view of the following topics: "To whom was the Epistle written?"—"Its author?"—"The time when written"—"The language in which it was written"—"The design and general argument of the Epistle"—and the body of the work is a plain, sound commentary on all the parts and phrases of the Epistle. We notice some errors in the printing, which should be corrected in subsequent editions. We specify only two. P. 27, l. 3, proved for purged; p. 39, l. 11, p. vol. as omitted, etc.

- 16.—*Letters from Ireland, MDCCCXXXVII.* By Charlotte Elizabeth. New-York: John S. Taylor & Co. 1843. pp. 351.

These letters have been before the public for some time, but are appropriately offered again, as a suitable book for the Holidays. To those who desire to know the manners and customs of Irish society in its different classes, and to read some vivid descriptions of scenery, the volume will afford the means. There will, also, be found in the work many important reflections and suggestions on the present state of the Irish population, as well Romanist as Protestant. The gifted authoress possesses a good judgment, fine sentiment, and a benevolent heart.

17.—*Floral Biography ; or, Chapters on Flowers.* By Charlotte Elizabeth. Fourth American, from the second London edition. New-York: John S. Taylor & Co. 1843. pp. 321.

It is scarcely necessary to say more of this volume, than that it can now be had in a neat style of publication. It has found its way into very many families with a welcome, and will, doubtless, adorn the libraries or centre-tables of many more.

#### ADDITIONAL NOTICES.

*Original Poems for Infant Minds.* By the Taylor Family. From the twelfth London edition. New-York: Saxton & Miles. Boston: Saxton, Peirce & Co. 1843. pp. 174.

These poems have already been published by the same house, in 'The Works of Jane Taylor.' They are now collected in a small, convenient volume, for the daily use of mothers and children.

*Sartor Resartus ; the Life and Opinions of Herr Teufelsdröckh.* In three books. By Thomas Carlyle. New-York: Saxton & Miles. Phil.: J. M. Campbell & Co. 1844. pp. 130.

This is a cheap edition of a very popular work of a very popular writer, sold for two shillings.

*The Silk Question Settled. The Testimony of one hundred and fifty Witnesses. Report of the Proceedings of the National Convention of Silk Growers and Silk Manufacturers, held in New-York, Oct. 13th and 14th, 1843.* New-York: Saxton & Miles.

This is a pamphlet of eighty closely printed pages, and contains a vast amount of valuable information in respect to the Silk Culture. Every one who has suitable soil and climate should read it.

## ARTICLE XI.

### LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.

#### Russia.

THE severe judgment passed against Professors Ulmann and Bunge in Dorpat, has been recalled by the Emperor. The former retains his place in the University; the latter has been appointed Burgo-master for Riga. Lieut. Ramstett has succeeded, by means of an electro-galvanic apparatus, in raising from the bottom of the sea very heavy metallic bodies.

**Germany.**

Many valuable historical works have appeared; among which Schlosser's History of the Eighteenth Century holds a very elevated rank.—Birch's History of Louis Philippe is also highly prized.—The new edition of the 'Conversations Lexicon' is exceedingly popular.—A new critical work entitled "Geschichte der Philologie in Alterthum," has been issued at Bonn, which will of course attract the attention of the scholar.

**France.**

A work entitled "Essai sur la formation du dogme Catholique," by a layman, is exciting much attention.—A valuable Supplement to the Dictionary of the French Academy, has been issued, supplying a want long felt.—Prof. Ranke has been pursuing his historical labors in Paris.

**Great Britain.**

"The Hellenistic Greek Testament" has recently been published in London. Its design is to point out the intimate connection between the Septuagint and Greek New Testament. There are over 30,000 illustrations, doctrinal and grammatical, arranged appropriately under the several verses.

**United States.**

**NEW WORK ON THE PRIMITIVE CHURCH.**—Gould, Kendall & Lincoln of Boston, have in press, and will publish in a few weeks, an important work, by the Rev. Lyman Coleman, entitled, "The Primitive Church popular in its government, and simple in its Rites." It will be embraced in a duodecimo volume, and will be sold for about a dollar. The author resided, during the last year, a number of months in Berlin, and completed his previous preparations for the undertaking, under the eye, and with the countenance, of Dr. Neander. The celebrated church historian has prepared an Introduction for the book, in which he gives sanction to the general principles and facts on which Mr. Coleman relies. The time embraced in the principal part of the discussion is the period immediately subsequent to the Apostles. Every important statement is fortified by the best authorities, which the library of the university of Berlin could afford. We cannot but rejoice that a work so timely is coming out under such favorable auspices.—We also take great pleasure in announcing that W. W. Turner, teacher of Hebrew in the Union Theological Seminary of New York, promises to complete the invaluable HEBREW and CHALDEE CONCORDANCE, commenced by Prof. Nordheimer and himself, but discontinued, on the decease of the former. The publishers, however, do not feel warranted in proceeding with so heavy a work until five hundred *bona fide* subscribers shall have been obtained. It will be published in *four parts*, at \$3 each, or \$12 for the whole.

The basis of this Concordance will be that of Dr. Julius Fürst of Leipsic; but, we feel fully assured, will be improved in the hands of Mr. Turner, especially as he is perfectly familiar with the plan of execution projected by Prof. Nordheimer.

THE  
AMERICAN  
BIBLICAL REPOSITORY.

APRIL, 1844.

SECOND SERIES, NO. XXII. WHOLE NO. LIV.

ARTICLE I.

WRITINGS OF MARTIN LUTHER.

By C. E. Stowe, D. D., Professor of Biblical Literature, Lane Seminary, Cincinnati.

1. Mt. LUTHERI Opera Latina, VII Tom. folio, Wittenbergæ, 1445-58. (Luther's Latin Works.)
2. Des Theuren Mannes Gottes D. MARTIN LUTHER's Sämmtliche theils von ihm selbst Deutsch versetzte theils aus dessen Lat. ins Deutsch übersetzte Schriften und Werke herausgeg. von C. F. Börner und J. G. Pfeiffer, XXII Thle, folio, Leipzig, 1729-34. (Complete works of the dear man of God, Dr. M. Luther, etc.)
3. LUTHER's Sämmtliche Schriften und Werke, welche aus allen vorhergehenden Samml. zusammengetragen worden, Deutsch mit Einleit. von J. G. Walch, XXIV Thle, 4to. Halle, 1740-52. (Luther's complete works, etc., edited by Walch.)
4. LUTHER's Sämmtliche Werke herausgegeben von F. W. P. von Ammon, C. S. T. Elsperger, J. K. Irmischer, und J. G. Plochmann. Erlangen, 1826. (To be completed in 60 volumes 8vo. The 30th volume was issued in 1842.)
5. Mt. LUTHER's auserlesene kleine Schriften herausgegeben von J. J. Rambach, 3 Aufl. 8vo. Jena, 1753. (Select minor writings.)

SECOND SERIES, VOL. XI. NO. II.

1

6. MT. LUTHER's erbauliche Schriften im Auszüg. von B. Lindner, IX Thle, 8vo. Halle, 1752. (Extracts from Luther's edifying writings.)
7. LUTHER's Deutsche Schriften theils vollständig theils in Auszügen herausgegeben von F. W. Lomler III Bde. 8vo. Gotha, 1816–17. (General writings, partly entire and partly in extracts.)
8. LUTHER's Werke in einer des Bedürfniss der Zeit berücksichtigenden Auswahl von H. L. A. Vent, X Bde. 8vo. 2 Aufl. Hamburg, 1727–28. (Works selected with reference to the Wants of the Times.)
9. LUTHER's Sämtliche Werke ausgewählt und angeordnet von Gst. Pfizer. 4to. Frankfurt am Main, 1840. (Works selected and arranged.)
10. LUTHER's Werke, vollständige Auswahl seiner Haupt-schriften, mit hist. Einleit. Anmerk. und Regist. von Otto von Gerlach, XXIV Bde, 18mo. Reformatorische Schriften, X Bde, Berlin, 1840–41. (Selection of Luther's principal writings entire.)
11. MT. LUTHER's Briefe, Sendschreiben, und Bedenken vollständig aus den verschied. Ausgaben seiner Werke gesammelt, krit. und hist. bearbeit. von W. M. L. De Wette, V Thle, 8vo. Berlin, 1826–28. (Letters and papers collected and illustrated.)
12. VR. L. von SECKENDORF, Comment. histor. et apologet. de Lutherismo, sive de Reformatione Religionis, etc. folio, Lipsiae, 1694. (History and defense of Lutheranism.)
13. DR. PHILIP MARHEINECKE, Geschichte der Deutschen Reformation, IV Bde. 2 Aufl. Berlin, 1831–34. (History of the German Reformation.)
14. J. H. MERLE D'AUBIGNE, Histoire de la Reformation du seizième Siècle, II Tom. 12mo. Paris, 1815–37. (History of the Reformation in the 16th century.)
15. J. M. V. AUDIN, Histoire de la Vie, des Ecrits, et de la Doctrine de Mt. LUTHER, 2 vols. 8vo. Paris, 1841. (Luther's life, writings, and doctrines.)
16. M. MICHELET, Mémoires de Mt. LUTHER par lui-même, 2 vols. 12mo. Paris, 1835. (Memoirs of Luther, written by himself, and edited by Michelet.)

We place at the head of this article a select list of the best editions of the great Reformer's writings, and the titles of a few

of the best and most accessible sources of information respecting him. The great interest of the subject, at the present time, will make such a catalogue very acceptable to many of our readers; and to increase the usefulness of the catalogue, we shall give, in the course of our remarks, a brief description of each of the works enumerated in it.

Luther has left more of his impress on the German nation, than any other one man has left on any nation. Hear a literary gentleman, Protestant or Catholic, at this day talk of Luther in his own land; and so intense and glowing is the enthusiasm with which they mention his name, and so fresh and hearty the feeling they manifest, that you would think they must have seen him and talked with him but yesterday. Any one who has visited France, cannot fail to see at once the pride and home-feeling with which the memory of Napoleon is cherished by the French. A man will say to you, "Here I saw the Emperor," as if he had stood on the spot but a few minutes before. So every spot where Luther stood, which can be identified, is still cherished by the Germans; and when they tell you that *Luther stood here*, though it were three centuries ago, they speak with such fondness of feeling and an eye so glistening, that you almost start as if the Reformer were actually there now. Riding once from Potzdam to Halle, I stopped for a few moments at a small hamlet by the roadside, and inquired of a peasant there the name of the place. "Luther's Brunnen" [Luther's Well,] replied he promptly and with a brightening eye. "Why has it that name?" continued I. With a face full of feeling and eyes glowing with pride, he answered, "Luther once drank here." This is but a specimen of what you meet everywhere in Germany. The cause of this national enthusiasm we trust the reader will be at no loss to discover, if he follow us patiently through the developments of this article.

On the most superficial glance at the writings of Luther, we are struck with astonishment at their number and variety, as well as their eloquence and power. Almost all subjects are embraced in them—theology, history, politics, education, literature, fables, poetry, music; he seems in all nearly equally at home; and on every topic his views are original, and sketched with a masterly hand. He led a life of almost as great public activity as Napoleon; his public influence, cares, and responsibilities were little, if any, less than those of the great emperor; and he had no facilities, such as Napoleon had, for commanding

the services of others. His correspondence alone seems enough to take more than the entire time of one strong man. In June, 1529, writing to one of his friends, he says: "The letters pour in upon me every day up to my neck; my table, benches, stools, writing-desk, window-seats, trunks, the floor itself is covered with them."

From 1517 to 1526, the first ten years of the Reformation, the number of his publications was three hundred; from 1527 to 1536, the second decade, the number was 232; and from 1537 to 1546, the year of his death, the number was 183. His first book was published in November, 1517, and he died in February, 1546, an interval of twenty-nine years and four months. In this time he published seven hundred and fifteen volumes, an average of more than twenty-five a year, or one a fortnight for every fortnight of his public life. He did not go through the manual labor of all this writing, it is true, for many of his published works were taken down from his lips by his friends; and it is also true, that several of the volumes were small enough in size to be denominated pamphlets; but many of them, also, are large and elaborate treatises. In the circumstances in which he wrote, his translation of the Bible alone would have been a gigantic task, even if he had had his lifetime to devote to it.

He continued his labors to the very last. The six weeks immediately preceding his death, he issued thirty-one publications from the press, an average of more than five a week. He did not enjoy uninterrupted health, nor was he free from the family cares and accidents which interrupt the labors of other men. For example, in one letter he says, "My home has become a hospital; Hannah is dangerously sick, Katey is near her confinement, and little Johnny is teething very hard." In another, "The plague has broken out here; Sebald's wife is dead, and I have taken their four children into my house." Again: "I am without help, for the kitchen-girl was so full of all mischief, that I was obliged to send her away." His own health often broke down under his labors. Says he in one letter, "I have such constant pains in my head I can neither read nor write." In another, "I have taken such a cold that I cannot speak a loud word; I can do nothing but cough." In another, "I am suffering with dizziness and pains in my head and breast, and a constant cough. My brain is often worn out." Nor was he at ease in his circumstances, and able always to

command the help which his family needed. His salary was small, he derived no income from his books, and he was often himself the nurse of his wife and children. All the family cares, anxieties, and hinderances to study, which come upon our poorest ministers in these days, Luther felt to the utmost, as any one may see who peruses his voluminous correspondence. It was not, then, because he was well taken care of, and had little to do for himself and family, that he found time to do so much for the public. No wonder he sometimes in his old age uttered such complaints as the following, which are found in a letter to a friend: "Old, worn-out, weary, spiritless, and now blind of one eye, I long for a little rest and quiet—and yet I must still write, and preach, and work, and endure, as if I had never written, or preached, or worked, or endured. I am weary of the world, and it is time the world were weary of me. The parting will be easy, like that of a traveller leaving his inn. I pray only that God may be kind to me in my last hour." "If the great pains and labor I undergo were not endured for the sake of him who died for me, all the money the world can offer were not enough to induce me to write a single book or translate the Bible. I desire not to be rewarded by the world for my work; the world is too, too poor and mean to give me satisfaction. This world by itself, what is it? The decalogue reversed, a witch's prayer, the devil's picture." The above extracts are not *selected*, they are just taken at hazard from Luther's letters; a hundred others of similar import may there be found; and the object of quoting these is simply to show, that when God called Luther to the mighty work which he accomplished, he did not give him leisure for it by exempting him from the little every-day ills and vexations of life. Had he not learned to bear these magnanimously and cheerfully, and to perform every little duty in its place as well as every great one, he could never have been God's instrument to accomplish the Reformation. With all his public labors and responsibilities, Luther as a neighbor was uniformly pleasant and accommodating; as a companion and friend, cheerful, generous, and lively; as a husband and father, affectionate, provident, and faithful.

The writings of Luther, as is well known and has been often repeated, have created the language and literature of modern Germany. Considering the circumstances in which he was placed and the object which he had in view, though we may justly find fault with many paragraphs he has written, yet

taking his treatises as a whole, few of them have ever been surpassed, and some of them have never been equalled. Luther was the author of modern church-music and psalmody as distinguished from the ancient chants. He was the first to appreciate the essential importance of an extended and well-sustained system of common school education for the instruction of all the people; and his eloquent and thrilling appeals to the German nation on this subject, find nothing to excel them among the educators of modern times. As a whole, his sermons, his commentaries, his popular addresses, his controversial treatises, his hymns, his music, his fables, his letters, are all of a high order of excellence.

The German style of Luther is wonderfully idiomatic, pointed, piercing, and full of speaking pictures. There is no mark of labor in it; it is visibly a mighty mind and a great heart overflowing like Niagara. His sentences are like full charges of cannister shot: they hit in all directions, they hit everywhere, and they hit all the time. It is in his native German, the German of his own creation, that his full power is seen, and never out of it.

As a revolutionary orator, Luther was irresistible. So much coolness and so much fire, so much self-possession and so much excitability, so much logical power and so much exuberance of fancy, so much good sense and such ready wit, with such advantages of person and voice, have seldom, if ever, been found united in one individual. Conceive of the steady, flaming, religious fervor of George Whitefield, united with the perspicuity to seize, and the genius to reproduce, every phase and fleeting form of human character,—the skill to touch, by the right word and the right metaphor, in exactly the right place, every chord of popular emotion,—which characterize Shakspeare; all this set off by a muscular frame of fine proportion and manly strength, a fair, glowing face, which portrayed every sentiment before it was uttered,—a large, clear blue eye, that radiated his very soul (and such a soul),—a voice powerful as thunder and musical as an organ—and you have some idea of what Luther was as a public speaker. Such was the power and flexibility of his voice, that even in his old age, he sang the alto to the delight of all who heard him.

In the revival of the papal controversy at the present day, in the revival of the domineering and blasphemous claims of *the mother of harlots and abominations of the earth*, no treatises

can be found better adapted to meet the exigencies of the times, to repel and annihilate the groundless and arrogant pretensions of high church bigotry, than the writings of Luther. But as our estimate of Luther may easily be set down as extravagant and exaggerated, as braggart Popery and puling Puseyism are now equally interested to depreciate him; and as some so-called Protestant writers, such as Hallam, who knew nothing of him, have spoken meanly concerning him, it may be well here to confirm our own views by introducing the testimony of Roman Catholic writers of the highest standing, the declared foes of the Reformation, but yet men who had made themselves acquainted with Luther and his writings, and were capable of appreciating them. We will select two Catholic writers of a past age, and two of our own time. Of the former, that violent enemy of Protestantism, the French Jesuit Maimbourg (born 1610), and the ecclesiastical historian Varillas (born 1624); and of the latter, Frederick von Schlegel, professor in the University of Vienna, and at present one of the leading literary men in Germany; and J. M. V. Audin, an able, active, and most zealous papal ecclesiastic, now living in France, shall be my authorities. All these writers speak in terms of strongest reprehension of Luther, as the author of the Reformation, all eulogize the papal church as the only true church of God on earth, all lament the influence of Luther as the sorest calamity that ever befell it; but they know something of the man, and attempt to show what he was.

Says Maimbourg: "He possessed a quick and penetrating genius, he was indefatigable in his studies, and frequently so absorbed in them as to abstain from meat whole days together. He acquired great knowledge of the languages and the fathers. He was remarkably strong and healthy, and of a sanguine bilious temperament. His eyes were piercing and full of fire. His voice sweet and vehement, when once fairly raised. He had a stern countenance; and though most intrepid and high-spirited, he could assume the appearance of modesty and humility whenever he pleased, which, however, was not very often the case." "He was always reckoned to live sufficiently blameless while he remained in the monastery, and till he absolutely ruined all his good qualities by his heresies."—*Maimbourg, Hist. du Lutheranisme, Paris, 1680.*

"This Augustine monk," says Varillas, "united in his single person all the good and all the bad qualities of the heresiarchs

of his time. To the robustness, health, and industry of a German, nature here seems to have added the spirit and vivacity of an Italian. Nobody exceeded him in philosophy and scholastic theology, nobody equalled him in the art of speaking. He was a most perfect master of eloquence. He had completely discovered where lay the strength or the weakness of the human mind; and accordingly he knew how to render his attacks successful. However various or discordant might be the passions of his audience, he could manage them to his own purpose; for he perfectly saw the ground on which he stood; and even if the subject were too difficult for much argument, he carried his point by popular illustration and the use of figures. In ordinary conversation, he displayed the same power over the affections, which he had so often demonstrated in the professor's chair and in the pulpit."

"No man, either of his own time or since, spoke or wrote the German language or understood its niceties better than Luther. Often, when he had made his first impression by bold strokes of eloquence, or by a bewitching pleasantry of conversation, he completed his triumphs by the elegance of his German style."—*Varillas, Hist. des Revolutions arrivées en Europe en Matière de Religion, Paris, 1686-'89.*

Both the above quotations and some others of like import, are given by Milner in his Church History, Cent. XVI. Ch. II.

F. von Schlegel: "There was one instrument by which the influx of barbarism was opposed, and one treasure which made up for what had been lost; I mean the German (Luther's) translation of the Bible. It is well known to you that all true philologists regard this as the standard and model of classical expression in the High German language; and that not only Klopstock, but other writers of high rank, have fashioned their style, and selected their phrases according to this version."

"We owe to him (Luther) the highest gratitude for placing in our hands this most noble and manly model of German expressions. Even in his own writings, he displays a most original eloquence, surpassed by few names that occur in the whole history of literature. He had, indeed, all those properties which render a man fit to be a revolutionary orator. This revolutionary eloquence is manifest, not only in his half political and business writings, such as the *Address to the Nobility of the German Nation*, but in all the works which he has left behind him. In almost the whole of them we perceive the marks of

mighty internal conflict. Two worlds appear to be contending for mastery over the mighty soul of this man so favored by God and nature."

"As to the intellectual power and greatness of Luther, abstracted from all consideration of the uses to which he applied them, I think there are few even of his own disciples, who appreciate him highly enough. His coadjutors were mostly mere scholars, indolent and enlightened men of the common order. It was upon him and his soul that the fate of Europe depended. He was the man of his age and his nation."—*Schlegel's History of Literature*, p. 349, '50. Am. edition.

The same writer speaks to the same effect in his *Philosophy of History*, vol. ii. pp. 204, 5. Am. edition.

J. M. V. Audin: "The poetic soul finds in this translation (Luther's Bible) evidences of genius, and expressions as natural, beautiful, and melodious, as in the original languages. Luther's translation sometimes renders the primitive phrases with touching simplicity, invests itself with sublimity and magnificence, and receives all the modifications which he wishes to impart to it. It is simple in the recital of the patriarchs, glowing in the predictions of the prophets, familiar in the gospels, and colloquial in the epistles of St. Peter and St. Paul. The imagery of the original is rendered with undeviating fidelity; the translation occasionally approaches the text. Add to this the odor of antiquity which the dialect used by Luther exhaled, and which is as pleasing as the peculiar tint that is found in the engravings of the old German masters. We must not, then, be astonished at the enthusiasm which Saxony felt at the appearance of Luther's version. Both Catholics and Protestants regarded it as an honor done to their ancient idiom."

"Luther holds a high and glorious place in German Literature." "He became neither vain nor rich by his writings." "Luther was the great preacher of the Reformation. He possessed almost all the qualities of an orator; an exhaustless store of thought, an imagination as ready to receive as to convey its impressions, and an inconceivable fluency and suppleness of style. His voice was clear and sonorous, his eye beamed with fire, his head was of the antique cast, his hands were beautiful, and his gesture graceful and abounding." "He was at once Rabelais and Fontaine—with the droll humor of the one and the polished elegance of the other."

"When he has to judge a prevaricating majesty, at least in

his eyes, then his eloquence is splendid. We may apply to him, as Addison has done to Milton, the words of the poet : ‘ Cedite Graii.’ Then is enacted a drama in which the Christian believes he is a spectator of the judgment of the dead. There is the judge with the fiery eye, holding the Bible with one hand, and in the other the pen which is to record the sentence. The crowned culprit appears in all the pomp of his royal insignia, of which Luther strips him one by one ; first taking the crown, then the robe, then the sceptre, and at length the sword of justice. Of the monarch nothing now remains but a body of clay, which has sinned, and all whose iniquities, even to the most secret thoughts, Luther holds up to the public view. The earthly monarch conceals his face, but he is forced to drink the chalice even to the dregs. He cries out for mercy, but Luther stirs the wormwood. He is forced to dissolve the delusion, otherwise you would be fascinated.” “ Never before was the human mind more prolific.”

“ Luther wrote always under the influence of excited feeling, and he consequently gave to his writings the fire and vigor of his own thoughts. He had no anxiety or care for human eyes ; he had not to rub his forehead to conjure up ideas, or give his brain repose. His pen could hardly follow the torrent of his ideas. In his manuscripts we nowhere discover the traces of fatigue or irritation, no embarrassment or erasures, no ill applied epithet, or unmanageable expression ; and by the correctness of his writing we might imagine he was the copyist rather than the writer of the work.”

“ The hymns which he translated from Latin into German may be unreservedly praised, as also those which he composed for the members of his own communion. He did not travestie the sacred word, nor set his anger to music. He is grave, simple, solemn, and grand ; and endeavors to reproduce the Latin image without burying it under capricious ornament. This collection had prodigious success ; the Latin hymns ceased all at once, and in the divine service nothing else was heard but the harmonious stanzas of the Reformer ; for Luther was at once the poet and the musician of a great number of his hymns.”

“ In several chapters of this work we have considered the writings of the Reformer in a literary point of view. We cannot forget that of which Germany is so justly proud, the German Bible, the noblest monument he raised to the glory of his

country."—*Audin's Life of Luther*, pp. 212–14; 500–506  
*American edition.*

From the tone of the above extracts, one might think that we had been quoting from some of Luther's most extravagant eulogists; but read the works from which the extracts are taken, and you will find that all this eulogy was by a mere sense of justice forced from those who show themselves to be, with the exception perhaps of Schlegel, his bitterest enemies. I need scarcely remind my readers how nobly those bold and full-hearted testimonials from stubborn theological foes contrast with the stupid and senseless paragraphs which have been written respecting Luther by the Englishman Hallam, in his *History of Literature*. Hallam knows nothing about Luther; he himself confesses his inability to read him in his native German, and this alone renders him incapable of judging intelligently respecting his merits as a writer; and knowing nothing, it would have been honorable in him to say nothing, at least to say nothing disparagingly. And by the way, it seems to us that writing a history of European Literature without a knowledge of German, is much like writing a history of metals without knowing any thing of iron and steel.

Such being the acknowledged power and copiousness of Luther as a writer, the effect which he produced on the language and literature of his countrymen is not difficult to be accounted for. When he commenced his career, the Upper German or Suabian dialect was the language of the court, of books, and of polite society, and seemed likely to remain so; but writing always in his own rude dialect, the High German, and thus polishing and enriching it, the unparalleled popularity of his works entirely displaced the Suabian dialect, and his own became and has ever since remained the language of literature and general intercourse among educated men, and is that which is now understood universally to be meant when THE GERMAN is spoken of. His translation of the Bible is still as much the standard of purity for that language as Homer is for the Greek.

If the reader's curiosity is now sufficiently awake to the subject, we will proceed, as we promised, to give a brief account of each of the works, pertaining to the writings of Luther, which are cited at the head of this article, following the order in which they are there numbered.

No. 1. (Luther's Latin Works.) This is the earliest complete collection of the Latin works of Luther. Another was

published at Jena, in 1612, in 4 vols. folio. The latest considerable collection was commenced at Erlangen by Erlsperger, in 1829, under the title of *Lutheri exegetica Opera Latina*, of which the 9th vol. (8vo) was issued, under the editorial care of H. Schmidt, in 1841. The work, I believe, is not yet completed. Luther's Latin writings, however, are the poorest part of his works. It is only in German that he appears in all the power, magnificence, and copiousness, of his unsurpassed eloquence.

No. 2. (Complete Works of the dear Man of God, etc.)

The earliest complete collections of Luther's German writings were these: Wittemberg, 12 vols. folio, 1539-'59; Jena, 7 vols. folio, 1555-'58; and Altenburg, 10 vols. folio, 1661-1664. Of these the last is the most highly esteemed. Rev. Dr. Murdock of New Haven owns a beautiful copy of it, which is the only one I have ever seen in America.

The collection whose title is given in No. 2, is a very complete and valuable one, containing not only the works which Luther wrote in German, but also German translations of all his Latin writings. Vols. 1-16 contain his commentaries on the Bible and his sermons, that is, his exegetical and homiletic writings. These generally were not written with his own pen, but taken down from his mouth by his friends as he delivered them from the pulpit or the professor's chair, and subsequently published with his revision and approbation. These extemporeaneous discourses are exceedingly lively and full of instruction, but more rambling and diffuse than the compositions which he elaborated in his closet. He often himself good-humoredly expresses his surprise at their wordiness. For example, in the preface to his commentary on one of Paul's epistles he says, "I am astonished, and I can scarcely bring myself to believe, that I have overwhelmed the epistle of St. Paul with such a deluge of words. And yet, in this epistle, I find all my thoughts carefully collected by some of my brethren. They might have been still more verbose." Vols. 17-22 are devoted to the writings more directly pertaining to the Reformation, and containing all his treatises of a polemic character. The pieces are arranged in chronological order, and are generally accompanied with historical introductions written by his contemporaries, Aurifaber and others, who themselves took part in the events which they describe. There are also several oral narratives by Luther himself, which were taken down from his lips by his

friends, and afterwards published. Among these is his unique, graphic, and simple, yet majestic and most thrilling description of his own arraignment before the Diet at Worms, as he related it at the request of his friends, while dining with them at Eisleben, his native town, in 1546, a few days only before his death. (Vol. XVII. p. 586.) These volumes also contain the most important acts of the Diet pertaining to the Reformation, the decrees of the emperor, the bulls of the pope, many letters of Luther's most distinguished correspondents, several of the pieces written against him to which he replied; numerous anecdotes, songs, satires, and other fugitive writings of that stirring period. In short, if a good newspaper had been published at that time and a file of it preserved, it would have furnished very much such kind of reading as we find in those six folios. Nothing more need be said to recommend them to the earnest perusal of every scholar who wishes to become acquainted with the history of the Reformation. Merle d'Aubigné has made good use of them in his very popular and useful work. There is a fine copy of this edition of Luther's writings in the library of Lane Seminary, and probably in other public and private libraries in the United States.

No. 3. (Luther's Complete Works, by Walch.) The general design of this edition is much like that of the preceding, only it is still more accurate and full. It contains also an elaborate biography of Luther. Indeed, this may be regarded as the *standard edition* of Luther's writings, and the source of ultimate appeal. It was the favorite book of the late king of Prussia, Frederic William III., especially in the later years of his life. Enter his private room in the little *schloss* near the University of Berlin almost any day after he had left it for his usual afternoon's walk, and you would see an open volume of Walch's Luther on his table, with a little folded paper of recent notes and extracts by the royal hand. I have seen well preserved copies of this edition in the library of Harvard University at Cambridge, and of the Theological Seminary at Andover. To render this work all complete, there ought always to go with it, Ch. W. F. Walch's *wahrhafte Geschichte der Catharina von Bora, Mt. Luther's Ehegattin*, 2 Bde, 8vo. Halle, 1751-1754. (Truthful History of Catharine de Bora, Mt. Luther's wife.)

No. 4. This edition is sometimes alluded to by German writers, as being in all respects still more valuable than Walch's.

I have never seen a complete set of it, and probably it has not yet all been published.

Nos. 5 and 6. These are among the best of the numerous older editions of extracts from Luther's writings, selected with reference to the promotion of practical piety. Rambach's selections pertain principally to the most important practical teachings of Christianity, and Lindner's are in the main taken from Luther's exegetical works. Another selection, entitled *Weisheit Dr. M. Luthers* (*Wisdom of Dr. M. Luther*), was made some twenty-five years ago by Niethammer, and published at Nurenberg. It consists mainly of the pithy sayings and pregnant aphorisms which are always so abundant in the conversations and writings of Luther.

No. 7. (*Luther's German Writings*, by Lomler.) This work was prepared with special reference to the third centenary of the Reformation in 1817. The selections are arranged in chronological order, Vol. I. including the writings from 1517-'24, Vol. II. from 1525-'35, and Vol. III. from 1536-'46, each (except the first) a period of ten years. Each volume is divided into three parts, as follows: part first contains entire treatises of Luther, with brief and instructive notes; part second, a chronological list of the other writings of Luther, belonging to the period embraced in the volume, with brief extracts from most of them, and short explanatory notes; and part third gives some of the most interesting of Luther's letters during the same period. In the three volumes there are forty-four treatises and one hundred and fourteen letters entire, besides numerous extracts from other pieces. A few of Luther's practical sermons and miscellaneous essays are here found; but the pieces are generally those which pertain directly to his work as a reformer. The chronological arrangement of the pieces and the notes which attend them; the chronological enumeration of the writings not here published, with the extracts and notes in the second part of each volume; and the chronological series of letters with which each volume closes, render this a very useful and convenient work to one who desires an orderly and well-grounded acquaintance with the history of the Reformation, so far as Luther took part in it. In the third volume, there is a very minute chronological table of all the principal events of Luther's life, which is a great help to the understanding of the treatises, and especially of the letters contained in the volumes. The first volume contains an

exceedingly characteristic engraving of Luther from a full length portrait by Lucas Cranach ; the second volume, a portrait of Frederick the Wise, and the third, one of John Frederick the Magnanimous, Electors of Saxony ; and there are also striking fac-similes of the great Reformer's handwriting engraved from the manuscripts of his translation of the Bible (now in the possession of Count Stollberg-Winzengerode) and from his letters. In this edition, the antique orthography is generally retained, which renders it somewhat difficult for beginners in German. By a little perseverance, however, this difficulty can be easily overcome. In these volumes we become quite familiar with Luther as a reformer, and it is one of the works which bore a distinguished part in reawaking the interest of Germany in that great event ; but in respect to the other interesting phases of his character, his deep evangelical spirit, his overflowing piety, his feelings and demeanor as a man, a neighbor, a friend, a husband and father, or even as a pastor and theological instructor, we have not in this work the means of learning much.

No. 8. (*Luther's Works, selected with reference to the Wants of the Times, by H. L. A. Vent.*) This work, in the main, is just what the preceding is not. It is intended entirely for the promotion of practical piety, and in it Luther appears, not as the reformer and controversialist, but as the Christian pastor, as the humble, evangelical, devotedly pious follower of Jesus. The work consists principally of extracts, except the sermons, prefaces, and letters, which for the most part are given entire. The ten volumes contain about a hundred of his best sermons, his prefaces to all the books of the Bible, his table-talk nearly entire, a few of his letters, hymns, and prayers, and very copious extracts from his voluminous commentaries on the Scriptures. The arrangement is entirely by subjects without reference to chronology, and the orthography throughout is modernized, so as to make it easy to the beginner in German. Lomler and Vent together, give a very complete picture of Luther.

No. 9. (*Luther's Works, selected and arranged by G. Pfizer.*) This is an admirable collection of Luther's Reformation writings, in some respects superior to that of Lomler, and designed by its author to be supplemental to Vent's collection. In form it corresponds to the large one-volume editions of Schiller, Goethe, and other German classics. They make very

handsome books for a cabinet library ; but the bulkiness of the volumes and the smallness of the type are poor recommendations to one whose enjoyment of books consists mainly in reading them.

No. 10. (Selection of Luther's principal Writings entire, by Otto von Gerlach.) This, on the whole, promises to be, for common readers, the most useful edition of Luther that has ever been published. Mr. von Gerlach, the editor, is one of the most amiable and pious of the Berlin pastors, and has already distinguished himself by a practical commentary on the whole Bible, which is highly acceptable to the pious portion of the German public. He accompanied the king of Prussia in his late tour to England ; and in a speech which he made at Dublin, he assured the clergy of the Episcopal church, that if they imagined either the Prussian monarch or the Prussian church desired any connection with them conditioned on the admission of their exclusive claims to the apostolic succession, they would find themselves very much deceived.

Mr. von Gerlach's edition of Luther is arranged in four divisions : the first containing the Reformation writings in chronological order ; the second, copious extracts from the exegetical writings, and the commentaries on some books entire ; the third, Luther's sermons ; and the fourth, miscellaneous pieces, some entire and some in extracts.

I have as yet seen only the first part, containing the Reformation writings, in ten volumes. This is executed in the most satisfactory manner. The general introduction, and the particular historical introductions to the different treatises, are just what the reader needs : and the letters of Luther are so inserted as to keep the narrative on in one continuous thread. The style of printing and the form of the volumes render the work a very convenient one to the reader, and each volume has a handsome lithograph of some distinguished reformer. The work also is cheap, costing in Germany, unbound, ten silver groschen (about 25 cents) a volume. It is to be hoped, that the interest now taken in the history of the Reformation, will induce many to purchase and read this collection, and thus become acquainted with that great event from the original sources.

No. 11. (Letters and papers of Luther collected and illustrated, by W. M. L. De Wette.) Luther's letters, in a historical point of view, are in many respects the most interesting and important of all his writings ; and this is altogether the most

complete and best edition of them that has ever been published. Merle D'Aubigné has read them thoroughly in this edition, and they have contributed not a little to the interest of his history. Indeed, his original sources, so far as the German Reformation is concerned, seem to be almost exclusively the works here arranged as Nos. 1, 2, 3, 11, and 12.

Thus far we have described the best editions of Luther's own writings. We come now to a brief review of the writings of others, which are best calculated to illustrate him and his times. It is only a selection, and that too a very meagre one, that we can present in this connection. The writings of his contemporaries we omit entirely.

No. 12. (Seckendorf's History and Defence of Lutheranism.) The old work of Counsellor Seckendorf (who died in 1692), the Chancellor of the University at Halle, remains one of the most complete and indispensable for an accurate acquaintance with Luther and his times. It was originally written in answer to the slanderous work of Maimbourg, the Jesuit quoted above, and is in the form of a Latin commentary on that history, which is inserted entire in a Latin translation as the text. To one who cannot read German, there is no source of information so full and unexceptionable as this folio of Seckendorf. The very interesting account which Milner gives in his church history of the names and characters of the Reformation, is derived from it almost entirely.

No. 13. (Marheinecke's History of the German Reformation.) Dr. Marheinecke, a theological professor in the University of Berlin, is now sixty-three years of age, and his lectures on Hegel have recently been interdicted by the king of Prussia. He has always been a Hegelian in philosophy, but professes to be evangelically orthodox in theology. He is a learned and voluminous writer; and though his philosophical and theological systems are to me quite unintelligible, yet his historical writings are among the clearest, most concise, and graphic I have ever read. His account of the Council of Trent and the Roman Catholic theology, in the first three volumes of his *Christliche Symbolik*, is admirable. His history of the Reformation in Germany, however, I regard as his best work. It begins with Martin Luther, and closes with the peace of Passau in 1552, going over a period of about thirty-five years. The style of the narrative is very concise (in this respect contrasting advantageously with the diffuseness of D'Aubigné); there is a simplicity and an air of the antique about it which are

very pleasing. So far as possible the transactions are narrated in the very words of the original witnesses; it gives copious extracts from the most important original documents, and it is full of graphic, characteristic incident. It is the result of a faithful, laborious, and long-continued study of the original sources, and its fidelity and accuracy may generally be implicitly relied upon. In my opinion, there is no history of the German Reformation equal to it, unless it be the celebrated work of Planck on the *origin and history of the Protestant system of doctrines,—Geschichte der Entstehung, der Veränderung, und der Bildung unseres protest. Lehrbegriffs*, VI Bde. 8vo. Leipzig, 1781—1800.

The first edition of Marheinecke's history, comprising the first two volumes, was published in Berlin 1817, on occasion of the third centenary of the Reformation; and it is surprising to me that D'Aubigné never alludes to it in all his work, for such is the identity of plan and general method of execution, that it certainly seems as if the Frenchman must have derived his first hint from the German. A great portion of the first two volumes is made up of verbal extracts from the letters and other writings of Luther, in his own simple and mighty words, just as he wrote them; and the style of the historian himself, is not unsuitable to those majestic passages. To every one who reads German, we recommend Marheinecke's book above all others.\*

No. 14. (D'Aubigné's History of the Reformation.) This work enjoys very great and deserved popularity; though in comprehensiveness of view and terseness of expression, the author is by no means equal to Marheinecke. He is too diffuse, too fond of antitheses, too much disposed to make the stout and stately old Germans of the Reformation a company of volatile Frenchmen. In the English translation, there is a double disadvantage; for in the first place, Luther and his contemporaries are turned from German into French, not a little to their detriment; and then again from French into English, so that at last their original

---

\* The Editor of the Repository announced, some two years since, that he would offer English readers a translation of Marheinecke's History, here so highly and deservedly recommended. His multiplied engagements have prevented the execution of his design. Yet he is happy to say that the first volume is nearly ready for the press. With Prof. Stowe, he considers it decidedly superior to every other he has seen.—ED.

characteristic features are but faintly seen. With all these defects, however, the work of D'Aubigné is one of the most timely and useful of the present century. It is, indeed, the only history that opens to the French or English reader any thing like an interior view of that great work of God, the Reformation in the sixteenth century; the style is graphic and full of life, and a delightful spirit of evangelical piety pervades the whole. In this last respect the author has greatly the advantage over Marheinecke. His plan also is more extensive, embracing Switzerland, France and England, while Marheinecke confines himself to Germany. May God preserve the life of this estimable author, and enable him to complete his work!

No. 15. (Audin's Life of Luther.) This is one of the most remarkable books of the age. Some general idea of its tone and spirit may be gained by the extracts already given. The author is a Papist, a violent enemy of Luther and the Reformation; yet he has an enthusiasm for his subject, an admiration for his hero, which knows no bounds. No devout Catholic ever went on pilgrimage to the shrines of his favorite saints with more self-denying zeal and irrepressible ardor than burned in the breast of Audin when in 1835-'36 he went the rounds of all the localities of Luther in Germany, devouring with cormorant eagerness every old bit of manuscript and every traditional legend respecting him. At this time I travelled with him in the diligence from Erfurt to Fulda, and I was then so enchanted with his wild talk, that I felt certain I should hear from him again ere long through the press, though I knew nothing of his intention to write a life of Luther. Audin can appreciate Luther's talent, his fire, his energy, his courage, his lofty poetic genius, his inconceivable fecundity and versatility of mind; but of his deep evangelical piety, of the motives which prompted him to the great work which he undertook, and of the considerations which sustained him in it, Audin can understand nothing. On all these points, Luther is travestied and not painted. If we may believe our author, while Luther had the most marvellous mind that ever God made and put into a human body, he was yet a tavern-haunter, a glutton, a wine-bibber, a beer-swiller, an unclean, licentious blackguard! This is a new way of attacking Luther, making him higher than an angel in talent, and lower than a very devil in moral feeling. It seems to take very well among Catholics, for this book has gone through two large editions in France, and has been translated and reprinted both

in England and America (Philadelphia, 1841). It shows throughout the marks of untiring industry, and is written with great spirit, vigor, and fire. The same author has written a life of Calvin in very much the same style.

No. 16. (*Memoirs of Luther written by himself, and edited by Michelet.*) M. Michelet is a French Roman Catholic layman, one of the most eminent and learned of the historical writers of France, and professor of history in the National University. He is the author of a history of Rome and a history of France, and his most recent work is an eloquent and soul-stirring appeal against the Jesuits, who have lately made upon him and his colleagues in the university a most violent and unsparing attack.

These memoirs are made up almost entirely of literal extracts from the letters, papers, and speeches of Luther, so arranged and connected by editorial remarks, as to exhibit Luther giving his own account of his own actions, character and writings. Michelet is very candid in respect to Luther, and inclined to do him full justice, and nothing more. The plan of the work is an admirable one, but the execution is rather straitened and meagre, considering the rich abundance of material which the biographer of Luther has to draw upon. I think Dr. Marbeinecke, who visited Michelet soon after he had completed this work, told me that the author was not familiar with German, and was obliged to depend very much on extracts and translations made by others. If this be the case, the comparative barrenness of the work is easily accounted for; and yet any one who knows not how exuberant the materials for such a biography are, might well consider it rich even in its present form. The thing to be done is, that one perfectly familiar with all the sources of Luther's biography, extend Michelet's plan, and construct a life of Luther on the scale of Middleton's life of Cicero, and Boswell's Johnson. This I hope to see accomplished before I die.

To the above catalogue of authorities respecting Luther, we feel constrained to add another, which is not inferior in interest and utility to any which we have enumerated. It is the exceedingly interesting life of Luther described in seventeen sermons by his contemporary and personal friend, J. Matherius. It has recently been republished at Berlin with a preface by Prof. Neander, with the following title. *J. Matherius: Leben Mt. Luthers, in 17 Predigten. Neu herausgeg. mit erläut. An-*

*merk. u. biograph. Anhang versehen, von A. Rost. Mit Vorwort von A. Neunder. Berlin, 1841.*

Let us now proceed to a cursory review of some of the more important of Luther's writings. We undertake this task chiefly with the hope of exciting some readers to a study of the writings themselves, for which the cheap and convenient modern editions above noticed, afford such admirable facilities.

We cannot do this intelligently, however, without advertizing briefly to the circumstances and the state of mind which called them forth.

The soul of man comes from God, partakes of the divine nature, and can never be happy without God. Being separated from God by sin, it still pulsates and throbs towards him, as the separated nerves of an amputated limb still vibrate towards the part that is lost, and are in pain for a reunion. These pulsations and throbings of the soul, unless early suppressed, are strong in a man, just in proportion to his amount of being; that is, the more of a man he is, other things being equal, the more earnest are his longings after reunion with God. This is the foundation of the religious sentiment, and this it is which gives to religious institutions a perpetuity among men in all circumstances and at all times.

The church of God is the depository of the truth which meets and satisfies these longings of the soul; and this truth, since the completion of the Scripture canon, is all contained in the written Word; and the office of the church is to explain, illustrate, and apply this truth by its teachings and ordinances. Whenever the church ceases to do this with fulness and fidelity, the pious element begins to separate itself from the dead and corrupt mass, and there must soon be either reformation or revolution.

At the time of Luther's birth the existing church as a whole, as an organized body, had ceased to meet the wants of the pious heart; and those whose religious sensibilities were awake, and who at the same time were gifted with strong and discriminating intellect, sought in vain, in the teachings and requirements of the church as it then existed, for that which really unites the soul to God, and gives it peace. The history of Protestantism, therefore, in its origin and early progress, is simply the history of an extensive and mighty revival of religion.

All this is forcibly illustrated in the religious experience and

writings of Luther. There was probably never created a more powerful human being, a more gigantic, full proportioned MAN, in the highest sense of the term, than Martin Luther. In him all that belongs to human nature, all that goes to constitute a MAN, had a strongly marked and characteristic development. He was a *model-man*, one that might be shown to other beings in other parts of the universe, as a specimen of collective manhood in its maturest growth. Of course the religious sentiment was in him strongly developed, and had been early cultivated. The principle of veneration was in him remarkably active, and it led him to seek most earnestly in existing institutions, and with the expectation of finding it there, that for which his soul continually longed, peace and communion with God. He sought it there, he sought it long and earnestly, he sought it with tears and agony; he sought it and found it not, because it did not there exist. And when he did find it, it was in the written Word which the church had bid, that he found it; and it was the setting up of this written Word against the unscriptural external church, that gave birth to Protestantism.

I suppose the actual condition of what at that time was called the church, is generally admitted by Catholics as well as Protestants to have been one of extreme ignorance and corruption; but on such a topic it is always best to compare testimony, especially the testimony of contemporaries. On this point we will give briefly the testimony of five witnesses, three Catholics and two Protestants. The first, Erasmus, was a contemporary, and lived and died in the communion of the church of Rome, and wrote in its defence, though he cannot be considered a partisan; the second, Cardinal Bellarmin, was born a few years before Luther died, and spent a long life in defending the prelacy against the attacks of Protestants, and is in every respect a strong partisan for the papacy; the third, Bossuet, the great French bishop, was born about the time that Bellarmin died, and he is a determined, thoroughgoing, papal partisan, and probably, on the whole, the strongest writer that Protestantism has ever had to encounter; and the last two, Matthaeus and Myconius, were strong Protestants, and partisans, if you please to call them so, and both of them contemporaries and personal friends of Luther. If those five witnesses, so different from each other, with views and interests so diverse, and with the best opportunities of knowing, substantially agree in their testimony on this subject, it must be that their testimony

is true. I am not aware that the sentences which I am now about to translate from these writers, except Bossuet, have ever yet been published in the English language, and therefore I presume no apology will be required for the space they may occupy.

Erasmus (Epist. Lib. XII. ch. 10.): "The mendicant monks have begun to leave out Christ, and to preach nothing but their novel and shameless dogmas. Of indulgences they speak in such a way, that even the most ignorant are disgusted with them. By these and other like means, all the fresh power of evangelical truth is gradually lost, and it must be so. Matters are continually growing worse, and at last every spark of the Christian religion, by which Christian love may again be enkindled, must go out. The essence of religion is changed into a worse than Jewish ceremonial. All good men sigh and cry over this, all divines acknowledge it, except those who are monks, and even the monks themselves in their private conversations."

Bellarmin (Opera, Tom. VI. p. 296, edit. Colon. 1619.): "For several years, before the Lutheran and Calvinistic heresies arose, there was almost nothing, as those testify who then lived, there was almost nothing (I say) of severity in ecclesiastical judgments, no discipline in morals, no learning in sacred science, no reverence in divine things, there was even almost no religion."

Bossuet (Hist. des Variat. des. Egl. prot. L. I. s. 1., L. V. s. 1, 2.): "The Roman Church \* \* \* \* \* was not exempt from evil; and so long since as the Council of Vienna, a great prelate, commissioned by the pope to prepare matters there to be treated on, laid it down for a groundwork to this holy assembly, that they ought to reform the church in the head and members."

"Luther's beginning \* \* \* \* \* carried a specious appearance. Crying out against abuses, *which were but too true*, with much force and liberty, interspersing his discourses with pious sentiments, the remains of a good education, and leading withal a life, if not perfect, at least *reproachless in the sight of men*," etc. etc.

"The reformation of corrupted manners was desired by the whole universe."

"Many preached up nothing but indulgences, pilgrimages, almsgiving to the monks; and these practices, which were but the accessories of piety, they made the groundwork. They spoke not as much as they ought of the grace of Jesus Christ."

"It was a saying of Erasmus, that the so stubborn and obdurate world stood in need of a master as rough as Luther."

Mattherius (*Leben Luthers in 19 Predigten*. Pred. 6.): "I cannot remember that in my youth, although, alas, I was imprisoned in the papacy till the five and twentieth year of my life, I ever heard from the pulpit any thing of the ten commandments, the Lord's prayer, the creed, or baptism. In the schools on fast days, we read respecting confession and communion in one kind; but of forgiveness and the comfort which one may get by a believing participation of the body and blood of Christ, I do not know that I ever heard, either in church or school, a single word until I came to Wittemberg. Neither can I remember in the papacy a single printed or written interpretation of the catechism, though I was in the habit, from my youth up, of reading diligently all the legends and St. Bridget's prayers, and especially at Munich, with my master, who had a large German library, in which I was reading for a whole year."

Myconius (*Hist. Ref.* I. p. 3. See also Seckendorf, I. p. 4.): "The anti-Christian papacy had become such a horrid and abominable beast, that it can scarcely be described even by the words of Paul and John. The merits and sufferings of Christ were treated as empty tales or the fables of Homer; respecting faith, whereby the righteousness and holiness of Christ, together with the inheritance of eternal life are taken hold of, there was entire silence. Christ was described as a relentless judge, who would damn all that did not provide themselves with the intercessions of the saints and the indulgences of the pope. On that account there were intercessors and saviours in the place of Christ, like the virgin Mary, as the heathen had their goddess Diana, and afterwards other saints, of whom the popes were continually making new ones. With this they taught that these saints would not intercede for us unless we merited it of them or of the orders founded by or in honor of them. It was then shown what kind of works would produce this merit. And here nothing was said of the real good works which God has commanded in his holy ten commandments, and which are required and demanded of all men; these were too simple for them; instead thereof they daily invented new works, which brought in much money to the priests and monks. And whoever did these things in plenty or bought them of others, of him it was said that he had repented rightly and merited eternal life. But whoever regarded them not and so died, must go direct to hell, or

into purgatory at least, and there he must burn and roast till he himself, or some one in his place, had done penance. Therefore these works were very highly esteemed and thought more of than the sufferings and the holiness of Christ himself: namely, fasting, various repetitions of the *Pater Noster* and *Ave Maria*, the rosary, the mantle of Mary, the prayer of Ursula, of Bridget, the Psalter, and the sacred hours. Day and night without ceasing, they would be singing and bawling and mumbling, without thinking of what Christ said, *when ye pray, make not many words as the heathen do*. There were seen various kinds of priests and monks, who were distinguished by a difference of dress, ceremonies, habits, modes of life and fasts; those who held such things were pronounced blessed, and it was claimed that these merits could be purchased of others and appropriated. So these orders came in possession of more than half the property, and they were all established and protected by the pope. They forbade the eating of flesh, butter, and cheese, and pretended it was a great sin to live in violation of these prohibitions; and yet this sin could be bought off by money. Hence there arose also a multitude of holy days and pilgrimages to Rome, Jerusalem, Compostella, St. Catharine on Mount Sinai, St. Michael, Aix, Fulda, St. Wolfgang, till there came to be almost as many pilgrimages as there were mountains and valleys and woods and trees; yet all these hard services could be bought off with money. People gave to the cloisters and priests money and money's worth, hens, geese, ducks, eggs, flax, hemp, butter, cheese; and upon that all was sounding and rustling with song and music and incense and offering; the kitchens were well supplied, and there was no lack of bold drinking, and after that came the masses which must make all right again. Nor did they refrain from unchastity and lewdness; sister harlot and brother whoremonger were not scarce. Yet these were little sins that could be easily taken away by papal indulgences. They had also new sacraments, confirmation and unction or the chrism. The bishops did not preach, but consecrated priests, monks, bells, churches, chapels, pictures, books, church-yards and the like; and all these things brought great income to the clergy. Relics were held in great estimation; bones, arms, feet, were preserved in gold and silver boxes, and during mass were held out to be kissed, and this not without pay. Thereby the people believed they should have great help from the intercession of the saints, whose bones,

limbs, and hairs they had touched. The brotherhoods were numerous beyond number, in which certain people associated themselves together, and established their own peculiar rules; and these had their priests, altars, chapels, lights, canons, holy-days, on which they came together to hear mass, and make oblations to their priests; and for this certain revenues were appointed, and hereby men supposed they could promote their salvation. They received children into their cloisters against the will of their parents, and sometimes married people who had deserted their families. The so-called cloister vows were, obedience, voluntary poverty, and chastity; these they preferred to all the sufferings of Christ, and publicly preached that they were better than baptism. The regular pastors seldom said mass or administered the Lord's supper. A great number of masses was daily sung in cities, villages, castles, churches and chapels, for which certain priests were appointed, and houses, lands and revenues set aside for their support. The most of the masses were said for the dead, even for those who had died centuries before, meanwhile the living were present who bravely laid their money upon the altar, all which was turned to the benefit of the priests. The number of the clergy was so enormous, that in this little city of Gotha (containing then about seven hundred houses) there were fourteen prebendaries, forty priests, thirty Augustine monks, two stationary mendicants, and thirty nuns to be maintained. These were esteemed holy people, fit to merit heaven for us, and yet they lived so shamefully and nastily, that you could scarcely in all the world find any thing worse. Marriage was forbidden them and they had no chastity, but filled the city with whoredom and adultery and sodomy, so that it was abominable; and they could not be restrained or punished, because they were amenable to the spiritual courts only. They held that the pope, seated in God's place, could not err, and no man should dare contradict him, and they also would endure no contradiction.”\*

Such is the description of a contemporary, and evidently drawn to the life. The fidelity of the picture is evident from the fact that it describes with graphic accuracy the existing state of so-

\* Most of the above extracts may be found in the German language in Marheinecke's *Geschichte*; B. I. s. 6-12. See also Muenscher's *Dogmengeschichte von Neudecker*, B. III. s. 2-10.

society at the present day in many parts of Italy and other countries where the papacy has unchecked control.

Such, according to the testimony on both sides of the question, was the state of religion in the church when Luther commenced his career; and what could so serious and earnest a soul, so powerful and discriminating a mind as his, find in such a church to feed and satisfy its religious desires and hopes? His religious experience well shows what he did find. A very full and satisfactory account of Luther's religious experience is given by D'Aubigné, and as that work is accessible to all the readers of the *Repository*, it is not necessary that we should enter on the subject here. It is enough that we have adduced sufficient contemporary testimony to enable the reader to appreciate the necessity, the adaptedness, and the excellence of Luther's

#### REFORMATION WRITINGS.

These consist of treatises, sermons, and letters, pertaining directly to the great work in which he was engaged in opposition to the tyranny and the corruptions of the papacy. In their multiplicity and variety we shall remark especially only on a few, chiefly with the hope of exciting the reader's attention to the whole series. They should be read in chronological order, for it is extremely interesting thus to trace the progress of Luther's mind, as he made one discovery after another, and gave himself up to the truth as it gradually developed itself to his understanding and conscience. He was scrupulously conscientious, and in all earnest seeking the salvation of his soul. At first he had the greatest veneration for the church as it then existed, and was a firm believer in its infallibility. The idea of *disobedience to the church* was a terror to his conscience; and nothing but the most imperative convictions of truth and duty could ever force him to a rupture of his ecclesiastical connections. Besides, he stood alone, a simple, untitled man, against the most terrific power that ever existed; a power before which kings and emperors trembled, and to which, when worst came to worst, they always implicitly submitted.

It is difficult for us even to conceive of a power like that of the papal church and of the popes at this period. It combined in one all the elements of power that had ever before been wielded singly. All opposition was silenced, and the church, so far as civilized Europe was concerned, was omnipotent and omnipresent. The church had the entire control of the money,

the armies, and the mind of Europe; and all the influences of time as well as of eternity, were at her command. The ecclesiastical power, the legislative, the judicial, the executive, the police, the educational influence, was all in her hands. He that breathed against the church, had all the influences of earth and heaven and hell instantaneously arrayed against him; and all this tremendous power was concentrated in the pope. The claims of the pope had already reached the fulness of the apostolic prediction, *So that he as God, sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.* At the fourth session of the Lateran Council in 1512, Christopher Marcellus thus addressed the pope: "For thou art pastor, thou art physician, thou art governor, thou art guardian, thou in fine art second God upon earth."

Labbei et Cossart Concil. XIV. 109. Venetus, bishop of Brixia, declared that "the pope is the true Lord of the world, and the true monarch, and that he possesses both kinds of monarchy, spiritual and temporal." The pope was declared to be superior to all other authority, even that of a general council; the pope was infallible, and to doubt concerning the infallibility of the pope, was to doubt concerning the Christian faith, was to cease to be a Christian; the pope had authority to depose kings and annihilate kingdoms, and establish new ones, and without assigning any reason for so doing, whenever, in his judgment, the good of the church required it. For abundant proof of all these points, examine the authorities cited in Muenscher's Dogmengeschichte von Neudecker, B. III. s. 3-7, and Gieseiler's Kirchengeschichte, B. II. Ab. 2. s. 7, 8. And this infallible church, under its infallible pope, and enjoying undisturbed control, converted all Europe into one vast charnel-house of moral death!

Such was the power and such the corruptions which Luther had to encounter, and for a long time he wrestled with them alone. With all his inward veneration and this outward fear, besides, the work which God laid upon him was immeasurably trying to his feelings. The truth and the truth only made him firm. Of this he himself often gives, unconsciously, beautiful illustrations. Speaking of his first interview with Cardinal Cajetan he says: I came before him with all humility. I fell at his feet, prostrating myself on the earth, and remained there till he had three times ordered me to rise. This pleased him much, and gave him hope that I might retract; but when

I returned the next day, I refused to do so in the least particular. He then said to me, "Do you think the pope fears Germany? Do you think the princes will defend you with arms? Most certainly they will not. Where, then, will you find refuge?" "Under the wide heavens," said I.

At a later period of his life, after it had become fashionable to attack the papacy, and many, now that all danger was passed, were boldly engaged in the work, he pleasantly remarked, in familiar conversation with his friends: "When I first began to write against the pope's indulgences, then we neither heard nor knew any thing of Jack or Jill or any of the rest; then they held in their horns; for the space of three years I was utterly forsaken and left alone: no man offered to me the helping hand; they all suffered me to wrestle alone with the papists. But now, when the business is finished to their hands, now they will triumph, and make a display of their noddles in writing books. Solomon said truly, *there is no end of writing books.* When I am once laid in the earth, such writing of books as there will be then!"

The Reformation writings are nowhere more conveniently arranged for chronological reading, or more happily introduced, than in the edition of von Gerlach, and to this edition we shall refer principally in our cursory review. Luther commenced his work as a reformer, by publishing on the same day, Oct. 31, 1517, his ninety-five theses against indulgences, his letter to Albert, archbishop of Mainz and primate of Germany, on the same subject; and preaching his first sermon on *indulgences and grace*, which was printed a few days after. These are all contained in von Gerlach, vol. i. pp. 25—51, and are well worthy of an attentive perusal. The sermon is short, containing only five pages 18mo., and is evidently nothing more than very brief notes from which he spoke, for it begins abruptly with the following sentence: "In the first place ye should know that certain modern teachers, as the master of sentences, St. Thomas, and their followers, give to penance three parts, namely, penitence, confession, and satisfaction." So it goes on regularly, *in the second place, in the third place, up to the nineteenth place, and the twentieth place*, with which it closes as abruptly as it began. Brief and abrupt as the sermon is, and imperfect as are the views which it develops, it is full of vigor and fire. It produced a wonderful effect, copies of it were multiplied, it was many times reprinted; Tetzel was alarmed, and not only

wrote violently against it, but also publicly burned it at Frankfort on the Oder, with many threats that its presumptuous author should share the same fate.

Between this time and October of the following year, 1518, Luther published a defence of his sermon against the attack of Tetzel, and a very copious exposition of his ninety-five theses, called forth by the many misrepresentations and the bitter hostility which they had provoked. This last he sent to the pope with an eloquent letter in his own defence ; and knowing that he was threatened with excommunication, he soon after preached and published a sermon on that subject, in which he maintains, what was then considered a great novelty, a very bold innovation, that exclusion from the visible church, if it be unjust, does not shut out the soul from the visible kingdom of Christ. (Von Gerlach, i. 58, ii. 118.)

In October, 1518, he published, under the title of *Acta Augustana*, a full account of the interviews he had held during the same month with Cardinal Cajetan at Augsburg. It is characterized by great simplicity and dignity ; it shows Luther's veneration for the church, and his still higher veneration for God and truth. (Von Gerlach, ii. 155-189.)

In November of the same year, he made his first appeal to a general council. (Von Gerlach, iii. 1-8.)

The controversy was warmly carried on during the whole of the next year, 1519 ; Luther still hoping against hope, that a reformation might be effected by means of the church itself. His second letter to the pope (Von Ger. iii. 20-23) expresses those hopes, and is written in a tone which nothing but such hopes could inspire.

In July of this year, the public disputation with Eck took place at Leipzig, in which Luther boldly took the ground that the supremacy of the Church of Rome was attempted to be proved by the mere decrees of the popes, which did not go back more than four centuries ; while against it was the verified history of more than 1100 years, the text of the Holy Scriptures, and the decrees of the Council of Nice ! He also affirmed openly, that many of the doctrines of John Huss were evangelical and thoroughly Christian, and such as the universal church could never condemn ; whereupon there was great excitement in the assembly, and Duke George of Saxony, setting his arms akimbo and shaking his head, exclaimed, "The fellow is crazy."

Luther saw more and more of the hostility of the great body of the clergy to all attempts at reformation, he was threatened with personal violence and assassination ; and he was at length, June 1520, summoned to Rome to answer for his heresies, and threatened with the extremest severity of excommunication if he refused compliance. In these circumstances, some of the most distinguished of the German nobility offered him their protection. Among these was Sylvester von Schaumberg, Ulrich von Hütten, and Franz von Sickingen. He respectfully declined all these offers, being determined, as it was the cause of God in which he was engaged, to rely on the protection of God alone, a resolution from which he never swerved during the whole of his subsequent career. In his hopes for effecting a reformation, however, he turned from the clergy to the laity. He wrote to Spalatin : "The die is cast. The Roman favor and the Roman fury I now equally despise. I will no more seek reconciliation with them for ever. Thus far is the end of lenity towards them."

In June, 1520, he published his tract *On the papacy at Rome*, in answer to Alveld (Von Ger. iii. 102-158), in which he maintains distinctly, that the church is entirely spiritual, that it can have no earthly visible head, that Christ is the only head of the church, and that the unity of the church is not a unity with Rome or with any other earthly metropolis, but a unity of doctrine, of affection, of worship.

The next month, July, he issued an appeal bolder and more decided than any which had hitherto come from his pen, namely, an *Address to the emperor and Christian nobility of the German nation respecting a reformation of religion*. (Von Ger. iii. 162-iv. 64.) It is one of the most eloquent of all Luther's productions. Within two months, 400 copies were sold, a prodigious number for that period, so soon after the invention of printing, when there were comparatively so few readers, and communication was so difficult. Charles V. had just ascended the imperial throne, a young and magnificent prince; the German nobility was adorned with many illustrious men; the appeal was most skilfully adapted to all their nobler and better feelings, and, as might be expected, the effect was electrical. The piece can never lose its interest. To this day it must excite the highest admiration, and move the warmest feelings of every reader susceptible of generous emotion. Though written against the papacy as it existed three centuries ago, it is equally ap-

propiate to the papal pretensions and the papal corruptions of the present day. Every student of the papal controversy should make himself familiar with it; and he can scarcely read it too often. A brief abstract of it is given by D'Aubigné (vol. ii. pp. 85-96. Am. ed.); but to feel its full power, it must be read, not in abstract or translation, but in the glowing and winged words of Luther himself.

It was Luther's declaration of war against all ecclesiastical tyranny; and a most noble and courageous declaration it is. The effect of it was visible in the whole subsequent history of the Reformation. It was a new thing, a point to which Luther himself had never expected to come, to appeal from the clergy to the laity in spiritual things, and to make religion a matter of general interest and common sense, rather than a sacred esoterism of which ecclesiastics alone could be the judges. The rights of every Christian as a king and priest under the new dispensation, are here clearly vindicated; and the awful, indelible character of the priesthood as claimed then and since, and the three strong walls, as the author calls them, of the papal usurpations, are entirely demolished.

Luther was writing this while the bull of excommunication against him was under advisement at Rome, and the two pieces were published very nearly together. But the times had already changed. Moral and intellectual power was becoming stronger than mere ecclesiastical or physical might. The papal fulminations fell harmless to the ground, while Luther's tract shook the world like a thunderbolt from heaven.

Luther vigorously followed up this tremendous stroke. In a few weeks after, he published his *Sermon on the mass* (Lomler, i. 238-243); and in October his effective tract *On the Babylonian captivity of the church*, and his magnificent *Sermon on the freedom of a Christian man*, which last he sent to the pope with an elaborate letter, the third which he wrote to that dignitary. These are not inferior to his address to the German nobility; they nearly completed the Reformation, so far as the principle is concerned; and they will richly reward attentive and repeated study. They are briefly noticed by D'Aubigné, (vol. ii. pp. 110-122,) and can be read at large, except the first, in von Gerlach, iv. 67-v. 47.

In his *Address to the nobility*, Luther had exposed principally the external oppressiveness of the papal power, had shown the monstrous political and social evils it had inflicted, especially on

Germany ; and he called upon his countrymen to shake off so intolerable a yoke. In his book on the *Babylonian captivity of the church*, he attacks more directly the internal source and spring of these external oppressions ; he shows how the papacy, by its doctrine of the sacraments, multiplying them, making them essential to salvation, and claiming that they could be administered only by its own consecrated priests, and when so administered were of themselves efficacious to salvation—had inclosed the souls of men as it were in a net, and held almost all Christendom in a worse than Babylonian captivity. He shows the entire unscripturalness and absurdity of all these pretensions ; he proves that in Scripture there are but two sacraments,—baptism and the Lord's supper ; that a living faith, and not the *indeebile character* in the ministering priest, is essential to give efficacy to those sacraments, that the laity are entitled to the cup as well as the bread in the Lord's supper ; and that the idea that the efficacy of baptism is destroyed by mortal sin subsequently committed, and that consequently the sacrament of penance is necessary in such cases, as the “second plank after a shipwreck,” is entirely groundless, and the invention of men. He also exposes the unscriptural folly of transubstantiation, baptismal regeneration, the mass as a sacrifice, and monastic vows.

It was this work which called into the field of controversy that overgrown wen of pedantry, brutishness, cruelty, and all abominations, Henry VIII. of England, and gained for him at the hand of the pope, the proud title of *Defender of the Faith*. “True,” said Luther, when he read the royal treatise, “it is a lion's skin, but there is nothing but an ass under it ; and I shall strip the donkey of his covering, and give him such a beating, that he'll never bray again :” a promise which he most faithfully fulfilled.

[To be continued.]

## ARTICLE II.

## ON THE POSITION OF MAN IN THE SCALE OF ORGANIC CREATION.

By Samuel Ferry, M. D., Author of the "Climate of the United States and its Endemic Influences," Editor of the "New-York Journal of Medicine," etc.

In the number of this Journal for July last, we attempted to demonstrate, on the principle that Revelation and Science are both beams of light emitted from the same Sun of Eternal Truth, that the Mosaic account of the unity of the human race, finds the fullest confirmation in the facts revealed by the scientific investigation of the natural history of man, conducted upon the strict rules of modern inductive reasoning. We there demonstrated, as we conceive, that those lines of demarcation, which pride and ignorance have set up between man and man, as regards physical formation and moral and intellectual faculties, have no foundation in nature; thus not only confirming, what was to the readers of the Repository a work of supererogation, the truth of Holy Writ, but justifying the eloquent pleadings of those gifted, and some of them *inspired*, men, who, seeing far in advance of their own generation, have, at various times, proclaimed the doctrine that the whole human race is but one family, entitled alike to equal justice and liberty.

The present article may be, therefore, regarded as a continuation of the former; and in this sequel, our effort will be to point out the distinguishing peculiarities of man—the essential characteristics of humanity, independent of the light of revealed truth.

Preliminary to a survey of the general subdivisions of the animal kingdom, it may be well to refer to the distinction between animals and plants—a chain united by the most gradual and undistinguishable transition. It is true that we are in no danger of confounding a rhinoceros with a palm; but, as we approach the opposite extremity of the scale, so completely do the distinguishing characters of each kingdom successively disappear, leaving those alone which seem common to both, that there are many tribes which the present state of our knowledge cannot assign with certainty to either division. Notwithstanding this difficulty in drawing a line of distinction in individual cases, it does not follow that no boundary exists. Accustomed

to regard plants as beings, devoid of the power of spontaneous motion, and passing, alike unconscious of pleasure and of pain, through the processes of growth, reproduction, and decay, we look, on the other hand, upon animals as beings endowed with the additional functions of voluntary moving from place to place, and of being conscious of surrounding impressions. But notwithstanding the apparent correctness of this definition, there are many tribes, as for instance the *sponge*, which defy its application.

Various attempts have been made to erect a distinction between the animal and vegetable kingdoms; as, for example, the mode in which the first development of the germ occurs,—the existence or non-existence of a stomach or internal cavity for the reception of food,—or, thirdly, the nature of the respiratory process. But a consideration of these topics would be here out of place.

Let us, however, at the same time, advert to those striking relations that exist between these two kingdoms of living nature—the sources whence they derive their elementary constituents, the changes that they unceasingly cause in the inorganic world, as well as their mutual dependencies and reciprocal actions.

So great is the elemental simplicity of organized matter, that all the countless diversities in the form, structure, and visible appearances of the glorious mechanisms of animal and vegetable life, are made up of a few simple constituents, ultimately resolvable into oxygen and nitrogen, hydrogen and carbon, with some earthy or saline matter. Indeed, there is not an element composing the constitution of an animal body, which is not found in the mineral or inorganic kingdom. As no inorganic substances can supply nourishment to an animal, it necessarily follows that the vegetable creation must have preceded that of animal beings—a deduction in beautiful accordance with the disclosures of revealed truth. Having thus been necessary to the very existence and support of animal life, the vegetable kingdom is still obviously the connecting link between the animal and mineral kingdoms; for, the plants upon which animals subsist, have the power of assimilating the inorganic elements around them into their own organized structures. As the bones abound in earthy matter, as iron is always present in the blood, and as many of the other fluids are rich in various salts, so these same inorganic materials exist in the vegetable food on which

animals live. As regards every living thing, how emphatically true is it, then, that "dust it is, and unto dust it shall return." The same elementary matters, differently arranged, now exist in the inert soil, now bloom in the flower, or anon incorporated with a living frame, become instinct with vitality—the organs of mind and intelligence; and thus, in the ever-recurring cycle of life and death—the law of formation and dissolution impressed upon all organic existence—we behold the decay of one generation but supplying the elements requisite for the development of its successor.

Let us now take a hasty glance at the distinctive characters of the animal kingdom, of which man is a member. Formerly this kingdom was divided into two primary groups, the *Vertebrata* and the *Invertebrata*. The former comprised those animals which are characterized by a jointed spinal column consisting of a number of distinct bones, termed vertebræ, while the *invertebrated* class are all devoid of this support. The defect of this primary division soon, however, became obvious in the want of a third fundamental idea essential in a classificatory science, which is that of proportion or relation in the primary groups; and the effort to remedy this imperfection led to the important discovery, that the spinal column is a modification of structure subordinately connected with an organic system of much higher importance in the animal economy than the skeleton, viz., the nervous system. In the prosecution of a long series of minute and elaborate dissections, the zoologists finally discovered three modifications of the nervous system, all of which were not less important than that relative to which a cranium and vertebral column are dependent and subordinate. In view of these four distinct types of organization, Cuvier proposed to divide the animal kingdom into as many provinces or sub-kingdoms; and these primary divisions he designated in the descending order of their development, *Vertebrata*, *Articulata*, *Mollusca*, and *Radiata*, the last comprising those animals that border closely on the vegetable kingdom.

However valuable a detailed account of the general characters of these four sub-kingdoms might prove, in the way of illustrating the closely connected links of the chain of animal existence, from the lowest point, which blends inseparably with the vegetable kingdom, up to the highest, terminating in the perfection of the human structure, we must, in consideration of the elementary nature of these facts, here forego their description.

Passing thus over the groups of Radiata, Mollusca, and Articulata, we reach the subdivision of the animal kingdom termed *Vertebrata*, in which man is included. But before proceeding to the consideration of man's characteristics, the main topic of this paper, it may be here stated that, notwithstanding the occasional and unavoidable use of certain technical terms, our aim is rather at a popular than a scientific exposition of the subject. In the language of Fontenelle, in the preface to his "*Pluralité des Mondes*,"—"I have wished to treat philosophy in a manner not philosophical: I have endeavored to bring it to a point where it would be neither too dry for the taste of the world, nor too light for people of learning." Nothing has, in truth, tended more to prevent the progress of scientific knowledge among the reading public, than the unpopular manner in which scientific truths have been explained by those who pretend to teach philosophy. The general reader is not to be attracted by mathematical erudition or the statement of prolix propositions; but he may be allured to the study of natural phenomena, if presented by means of familiar illustrations and the simplest methods of demonstration. We are not, at the same time, ignorant of the fact that he who attempts to render popular a scientific subject, encounters the risk of being deemed superficial; for, as dulness and pedantry, by long-established prescriptive right, have guarded the portals of the temple of science, so it has become quite natural to regard a liberal endowment of dulness, in connection with a due proportion of technical precision, as unerring indications of a profundity of knowledge.

But the present age—the era of cheap literature—is regarded as one of general information—the enlightened age of the nineteenth century! As much, however, of this literature consists of low and vile French romances, it is doubtful whether their numberless readers have improved much in natural science. It was taught by the celebrated John Locke, in his "Elements of Natural Philosophy," that "all stones, metals, and minerals, are real vegetables; that is, grow organically from proper seeds, as well as plants." Now if the question—*Do stones grow?*—were asked in these days of cheap literature, it is by no means clear that the majority would give a correct answer.

Compared with the other divisions of the animal kingdom, the class of vertebrata is characterized by a great development of the nervous system. It is a general character of this group, that the development of all the other organs shall be subordinate

to that of the nervous system ; and here we also find that the skeleton is always so arranged as to inclose and protect the nervous centres, while they give, on their exterior, attachment to the muscles by which the body is moved. Moreover, while the lower orders of animal creation seem to grow like plants, each part increasing by its own separate vitality, and evincing little dependence on any other, we observe in the vertebrata, in consequence of the predominance of the nervous system, all the different organs inseparably interwoven, and exerting the most close mutual dependence.

The vertebrata are again subdivided into the four classes of Fishes, Reptiles, Birds, and Mammalia ; and this last class, to which man pertains, at least so far as his corporeal structure is concerned, is the most highly organized, standing at the head of the great scale of organic nature. In the mammalia, we find the brain in the highest state of development ; and here also we discover, even when we exclude man, a most striking subordination of the *instinctive* powers to what may be termed *reasoning* faculties. So great is the sagacity of the dog, the elephant, or the monkey, that they display, under a great variety of circumstances, an intelligent adaptation of means to an end ; and although these are *educable* in the highest degree next to man, yet the difference between man and these brutes, in this respect, is so strongly marked, that it has been proposed by some naturalists to exclude him not only from the group of mammalia, but from the whole animal kingdom. This, however, would be unphilosophical, inasmuch as the psychical phenomena of man, in his present state of being, we have no reason to believe are less closely connected with their material tenement, than in the brute creation. But it is wholly unnecessary thus to exclude man from the animal kingdom for fear of blending his nature with that of the brute creation ; for it will be seen in the sequel, that, independent of his spiritual attributes, he possesses characteristics the most peculiar.

*Characteristics of Man.*—Between man and the rest of the animal kingdom, there is a broad line of separation. It is to man alone that the consciousness of the progress of time, of the decay of his strength and faculties, of the approach of death, and of the loss of friends, pertains ; and he alone is endowed with the attributes of religion—the belief in a subjection to invisible powers and in accountableness to these unseen agents in a world to come. Although it is evident that man's reasoning

powers, as well as his affections, differ rather in degree than in kind, from those of the inferior animals; yet in brutes, the affections, as for instance the attachment to offspring, cease with the necessity for their existence. These feelings in the human breast, on the contrary, do not die, but become the very bonds by which society and all the endearing relations of life are maintained. But, in addition to these peculiar privileges, man is also distinguished zoologically by certain striking anatomical characters, which it may be well to review here somewhat in detail; and from this survey it will be found that man, the "harp of a thousand strings," is unquestionably endowed with a perfection of structure best adapted for a being destined to exercise intelligent free-will.

Man has a peculiar adaptation to the erect position; and it is this characteristic of the human skeleton, which contradistinguishes it from that of all other animals. This attitude may, in truth, be regarded as the symbol of a being, elevated by his spiritual endowments above the servile state of mere animal nature. What classic scholar is there, who does not recollect the almost inspired words of the profane poet—*os homini sublime dedit*, etc.!

"Man alone," says Professor Green, the philosophic anatomist and accomplished writer, "is erect. It is to this posture that the body of man owes the character, impressed on the whole frame of its emancipation from subserviency to the mere animal needs, and becomes expressive of mind and of free and intelligent action. It will be seen that the lower limbs, answering the purposes of support and locomotion, have alone any obvious or necessitated utility; while the upper extremities are, in consequence, left at liberty, as the ready and facile instruments of his will. Hence, too, the senses are best freed from their servitude to the bodily wants, and the countenance is raised as the expressive exponent of thoughts and feelings, which the mouth declares and interprets by words. And thus, as the stem bears the corolla, the head is carried on high as the most noble part of the frame which it surmounts; all the rest of the body seems as if intended to carry it; and when considered in its fitness for expression, it may be said to be the representative of the whole man:

— "A creature, who, not prone  
And brute as other creatures, but endued  
With sanctity of reason, might erect

*His stature, and upright, with front serene,  
Govern the rest, self-knowing."*

But to illustrate this point anatomically. Thus the cranium, articulated with the top of the vertebral column, is so placed that a plumb-line dropped from the point of its support would fall through the centre of gravity between the feet. The foramen magnum, or orifice through which the brain and spinal marrow communicate, (see *a* fig. 1,) is not in the centre of the base of

(1.)



(2.)



the skull, but immediately behind it—a position which, as the contents of the anterior part of the cranium have many cavities, while that of the posterior part consists of solid matter, compensates the greater relative specific gravity. It is true that there is still a slight preponderance of the head anteriorly, when all the muscles are relaxed; but this disposition is counteracted by the greater power of the muscles attached to the back of the head, which is sufficiently evident from the fact, that no fatigue is produced by the slight and, we may say, involuntary effort required to keep up the head during a whole day. It will be further seen that this modification of structure adapting man to the erect position, obtains in every part of his frame, and that it belongs to him exclusively.

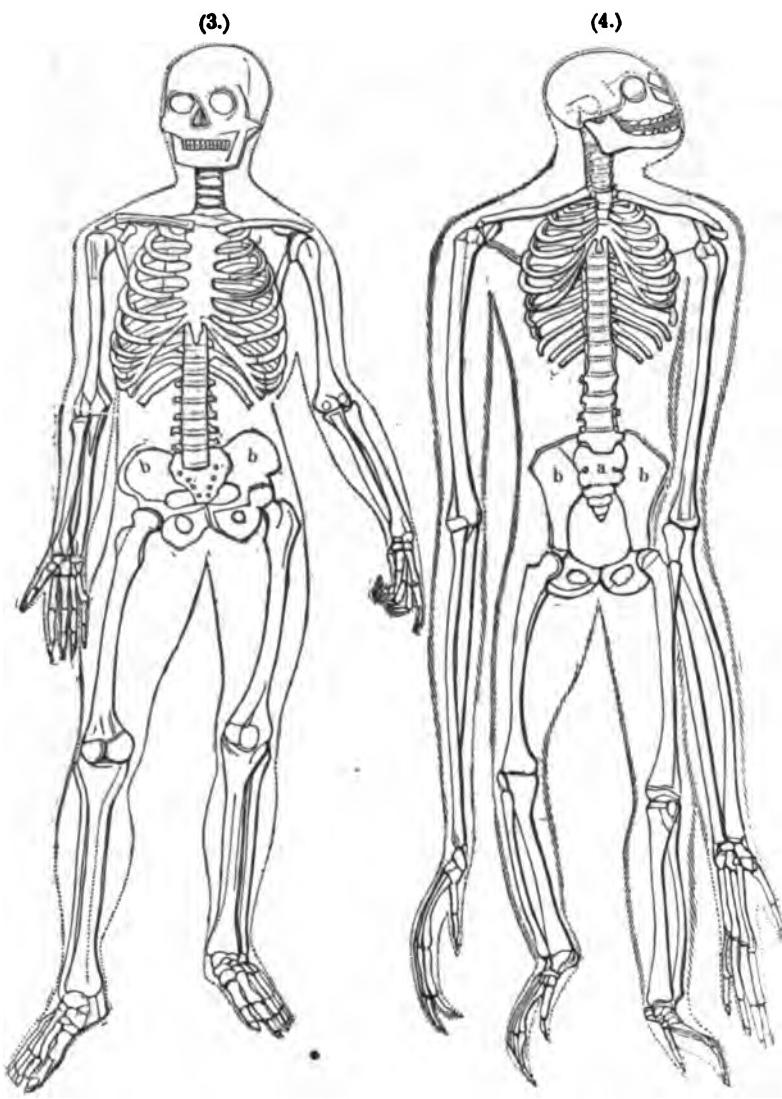
Compared with the chimpanzé and orang outan, which present the nearest approach to man in general aspect and structure, and which are hence called *anthropomorphous* or man-like, the foramen magnum, instead of being directly behind the base of

the centre of the skull, occupies the middle of the posterior third, (see *a* fig. 2,) and this same law holds good as we descend through the scale of mammalia, the foramen gradually approaching the back of the cranium, till finally it is found, as in the horse, nearly in the line of its longest diameter. The points of the skull articulated with the spinal column, are called *condyles*; and the angle which the surface of these, in man, makes with the horizontal is very small, while in the orang outan it is  $37^{\circ}$ , and in the horse as much as  $90^{\circ}$ , their plane being in the last vertical. Hence, if man's natural posture were horizontal, the plane of his condyles would, like those of the horse, be vertical; but that this horizontal position in which man would have the heaviest head with the least power of supporting it, is not natural to him, is plainly evident from the circumstance that, while in other mammalia, the head is supported horizontally by a powerful ligament extending from the back part of the head to the vertebræ of the neck and back, there is scarcely any trace of such a provision in man. It were easy to adduce additional evidence from the head, showing that the erect position is the one exclusively natural to man.

The spine in man, though bent like an italic *S*, has its curves so arranged that a vertical line from its top, when the body is erect, would strike exactly on the centre of its base—an adaptation which, in the various positions of the trunk, doubtless contributes toward preventing a loss of balance. The column increases considerably in size in the lumbar region, so as to have a pyramidal form, while its base (*the sacrum*) has a greater proportional breadth than that of any other animal; and as the human pelvis is also remarkably broad, these combined causes still further contribute to maintain the erect attitude. In the chimpanzé and orang, the lumbar vertebræ, which do not increase in size proportionally with that of man, are but four instead of five; and here, too, the processes for the attachment of the muscles to the back are greatly developed in man, while in other mammalia, it is the processes of the vertebræ of the neck and back that are very large and strong, in order to give support by ligaments to the pendent head.

In the accompanying wood-cut (figs. 3 and 4,) exhibiting a comparative view of the skeleton of man and the orang outan, the pelvis of the former is very differently constructed from that of the latter—a difference observed in all the mammalia beneath man. In the orang, it is much longer and narrower, the sacrum

[APRIL,

*a, sacrum**b b, pelvis, which also includes the sacrum and the bones in front.*

is also narrower but lengthened, while the whole pelvis and the spinal column are nearly in a line. (See *a* and *b*, *b*, in figs. 3 and 4.)

These peculiarities alone, together with the great mass of the muscles of the loins and hips, suffice to distinguish man from every other animal; and they not only secure to him the upright posture, but also the complete freedom of the arms, for the purposes of skill and art.

A splendid monograph has recently appeared on this subject, entitled "*Recherches d'Anatomie comparée sur le Chimpanzé.*" It was published at Amsterdam, in 1841, in folio, with plates. The author, Dr. W. Vrolik, found the materials for his study in the rich museums of Holland. But we deem it wholly unnecessary to follow Dr. V. on the present occasion, in his minute anatomical investigation of the differences and analogies between the human form and those of the man-like species, the chimpanzé, orang, and siamang.

Continuing this inquiry relative to the lower extremities, we find that the lateral breadth of the human pelvis throws outward the heads of the thigh bones, which is further increased by the neck of the latter; but a compensating adjustment is provided in the position of the thigh bones directed obliquely toward each other. Hence, in the upright posture, with the feet together, the knees are brought again in the line of the body, whose weight is received upon the heads of the *tibiae* (*leg-bones,*) which stand perpendicularly under the centre of gravity. Between the knee-joint of man and that even of the chimpanzé, an ape which stands high in the order of quadrumanæ, there is a very marked contrast; so that it is sufficiently obvious that the latter never was intended for the erect posture, or if so, only for a moment. In man the whole weight of the body is transmitted through the tibia to the arch of the foot, on which it rests securely; and lastly, to secure in the foot the requisite firmness in standing, its articulation with the leg is at right-angles, so that both the toes and the heel bear upon the ground; and this contact of the heel with the ground and also the arched form of the foot, are characteristic of man alone. Even those apes which most nearly approach man in general aspect, are destitute of the *heel*; and as the foot, when standing erect, rests rather upon the outer side than upon its sole, they cannot resist attempts to overthrow them, more especially as the narrowness of the pelvis is unfavorable to an equilibrium.

A comparison of figs. 3 and 4, also shows the greater

proportional length of the lower extremities in man, which would consequently present the most inconvenient obstacle to his progression in the horizontal posture; for he must necessarily either travel upon his knees, or upon the extremities of his toes. And a further comparison of these same figures, reveals other osteological differences; such as the striking predominance, in apes, of the fore-arm over the upper-arm, and the great length of the upper, contrasted with the shortness of the lower limbs, all adapting them peculiarly to their climbing habits. While in the erect human skeleton, the fingers reach the inferior third of the femur, (thigh-bone,) they extend, according to Dr. Vrolik, in the chimpanzé to the upper third of the tibia; and in the orang and siamang, they actually touch the feet. Moreover, while the lower extremities in man, as he advances from birth, grow proportionally more in length than the upper, the case in these apes is reversed. The chimpanzé and the siamang have each thirteen pairs of ribs, and consequently, thirteen dorsal vertebræ; but the orang has but twelve of each, in which respect he is nearer to man than his brother apes. It may be here added, that Dr. Vrolik, from the comparative osteological character of man, and the three most man-like apes, arrives at the conclusion, according to the ordinary rules of classification, that the difference is sufficiently great to warrant the placing of man, not only in a separate genus, but in a separate order; and while Cuvier assigned to the orang the place next to man, Vrolik decides in favor of the chimpanzé.

It is hence an indisputable conclusion, that to man the erect attitude and biped progression are natural; and it follows equally that the histories of supposed wild men, alleged to have been found in woods, crawling on all fours, as well as dumb and hairy, are stories resting upon the very slightest foundation.

If the human species were constituted into a distinct order, the name *binana* would be found the most appropriate; for it is man alone that is *two-handed*. "We ought to define," says Sir Charles Bell, "the hand as belonging exclusively to man."\* In the term *quadrumania*, are included apes, monkeys, and baboons, which present a regular series; and of these, the highest exhibit a striking resemblance to man in general conforma-

---

\* Bridgewater Treatise. *The Hand, its Mechanism and Vital Endowments, as evincing Design.* By Sir Charles Bell, K. G. H., F. R. S., L. & E.

tion. "That which constitutes the *hand*, properly so called," says Cuvier, "is the faculty of opposing the thumb to the other fingers, so as to seize the most minute objects,—a faculty which is carried to its highest degree of perfection in man, in whom the whole anterior extremity is free, and can be employed in prehension." Now the quadrupeds are distinguished from other viviparous mammalia, with the exception of opossums, by having an opposable thumb on each of the four extremities. But some naturalists, rejecting the term *hand*, as applied to the extremities of the monkey tribe, propose calling them *graspers*; and this is not without good reason, inasmuch as the anterior extremity of these animals is as much a foot, as the posterior is a hand. Indeed, it might with equal propriety be said that some of these tribes, in which the tail answers all the purposes of a hand, are *five-handed*. Naturalists have been so struck with the wonderful properties of the tail of the atèles, a South American monkey, which, however, is characterized by the absence or rudimental condition of the thumb of the anterior extremities, as to compare it with the proboscis of the elephant; and they even assure us that they actually use the tail in fishing! But our opossum applies the tail to a purpose, perhaps, still more useful and interesting; for the young ones, while the mother is escaping from her enemies, sit securely on her back, having their tails entwined around their mother's tail. It is thus that the four extremities of the monkey tribes are admirably adapted for their mode of progression, climbing and leaping from the branches of trees; but they are unable to seize very minute objects, or of performing many of those other actions, regarded as most characteristic of the human hand. This is due to the circumstance that in man, in consequence of the great size and power of the thumb, it can be brought into exact opposition to the extremities of all the fingers; while, on the other hand, in the highest quadrupeds, this contact is prevented, at least with any degree of force, in consequence of the length and slenderness of the fingers, and the undeveloped state of the thumb.

Thus it is seen, that the possession of the four so-called hands, not to say *five*, does not elevate the animal thus characterized, above two-handed man; for, as they are chiefly available in proportion as they are the ministers of intellect, a thousand hands, without the directing mind, would be comparatively valueless. "In these provisions," says Sir Charles Bell, "the

instrument corresponds with the superior mental capacities, the hand being capable of executing whatever man's ingenuity suggests. Nevertheless, the possession of the ready instrument is not the cause of the superiority of man, nor is its aptness the measure of his attainments." Hence, as man's elevated position is due to the conjoint operation of his mind and its instruments, the destitution of the former would soon find him, notwithstanding his two hands, either reduced to a very subordinate mode of mere brute existence, or rather altogether extinguished.

Another remarkable characteristic of man, is the absence of any natural weapons of defence or of offence; for, on all other animals in the same condition, God has bestowed the means of flight, of concealment, or of passive defence. Yet man, through the exercise of his reason and of his hands, has devised and constructed arms more terrible and destructive than those wielded by any other creature. In the language of Ray: "Some animals have horns, some have hoofs, some teeth, some talons, some claws, some spurs and beaks. Man hath none of all these, but is weak and feeble, and sent unarmed into the world; yet, a hand, with reason to use it, supplies the use of all these." If man, indeed, possessed any of these provisions, his sovereignty over the rest of the animal kingdom would be at once forfeited. This idea was long ago announced by the celebrated medical philosopher, Galen, who said: "Did man possess the natural armor of the brutes, he would no longer work as an artificer, nor protect himself with a breastplate, nor fashion a sword or spear, nor invent a bridle to mount the horse and hunt the lion. Neither could he follow the arts of peace, construct the pipe and lyre, erect houses, place altars, inscribe laws, and through letters hold communion with the wisdom of antiquity."

Man, indeed, renders subservient to his purposes every department of nature. For the gratification of his senses, the earth is compelled to yield her choicest treasures; he appropriates to his own use the service of the fleetest and strongest animals; for his convenience and luxury, the depths of the sea render up their gigantic inhabitants; even the burning deserts are made to surrender their most ferocious animals as trophies of his power; and lastly, the very elements themselves contribute to his comfort; for as the ocean is the great highway of nations, the winds, ay, boisterous steam itself, are here the untiring coursers which impel his ships from shore to shore.

From this topic there is a natural transition to that of the

brain of man, which, on a comparison of that of the lower mammalia, exhibits a more complex structure and greater proportional dimensions; and contrasted with the spinal cord and nerves, the magnitude of the human brain is also relatively greater than in any other animal. From the ape to the fish, in conformity to a proportionably diminishing development, does the skull decrease in capacity. The head of the horse and of the dog, shows how much the brain-case recedes and the jaws protrude, while in birds, reptiles, and fish, this cranial diminution so changes the shape of the head, that it appears to consist of the jaws alone. Hence it is man only that has a prominent chin. Of the extent of this distinguishing character of the human skull, compared with that of the lower orders of the kingdom, *Animalia*, the "facial angle," devised by the ingenious Camper, affords a tolerably correct indication. As this point was adverted to in our previous article, suffice it to say that, in man, the average facial angle of the European is  $80^{\circ}$ , and that of the Negro is about  $70^{\circ}$ ; while in the highest monkey tribes, the adult chimpanzé, it is only  $35^{\circ}$ , and in the orang but  $30^{\circ}$ . Descending in the scale of animal creation, the angle becomes gradually smaller, unless augmented by the comparative shortness of the jaws, or by unusual prominence of the frontal sinuses. The superiority of man, in this respect, is due chiefly to the great development of the cerebral hemispheres, or upper and anterior portion of the brain, and in the number and depth of its convolutions.

Man is also distinguished from all other animals, with the single exception of a fossil genus, by the equally close approximation of all his teeth in each jaw, and by the equality in their length. In consequence of the prehensile faculty of his hands, and the intelligence by which they are directed, the human teeth have such forms and proportions as serve simply to divide and crush the food; and hence too there is no occasion for that protraction of the jaws, found in animals that use the mouth only in seizing their food. Although the human canine teeth have crowns shaped for piercing, yet they do not exceed the adjoining teeth in length, nor is there, as in the instance of the anthropoid apes, (see figs. 1 and 2,) an interval in the dental series of each side of the jaw, to receive the canine teeth of the opposite jaw, when the mouth is closed. This character is so connected with the mode of life and nature of the food, as well as other peculiarities, that it is justly regarded by Dr. Vrolik as

a generic difference between them and man ; assuming as the standard that degree of difference which leads naturalists to place any kind of animals in distinct genera. It may be here added, that the alimentary organs of man, taken as a whole, indicate his natural destination for a mixed diet of animal and vegetable food ; but he can support himself in health on either diet exclusively.

But man cannot be regarded as characterized by acuteness of the external senses generally, or by muscular power. In truth, it is considered by Bichat as a rule in our organization, that the development of the organs of taste and smell, is in an inverse ratio to that of the brain, and consequently to the degree of intelligence. In the acuteness of his perception of odors, sound, light, etc., man is surpassed by many other animals ; but in the power of comparing his sensations and of deducing from them conclusions, there is no other that even, in the remotest degree, approximates him.

To man, likewise, pertains the power of adapting himself to varieties in external conditions, so as to be, in a great measure, independent of them. He, especially the inhabitant of our middle latitudes, is truly a cosmopolite, having the capability of sustaining the most opposite extremes of temperature and of atmospheric pressure. On the other hand, the little adaptation of the anthropoid apes, in this respect, affords a striking contrast ; for example, the orang outan is found only in Borneo and Sumatra, and the chimpanzé is restricted to a few of the hottest parts of Africa ; nor can these animals, which approach the nearest to the human form, be kept alive in temperate climates without the aid of artificial heat ; and even under these favorable circumstances, their constitutions undergo speedy deterioration, terminating very soon in death. Here again, as in the case of man sent into the world unarmed, he is an hundred-fold more indebted for the boasted power of accommodating himself to all climates, to the exercise of his reason, than to the pliability of his body ; for, notwithstanding inferior animals are less defenceless, by natural coverings, against extremes of temperature, than man, yet he, by the exercise of his mental endowments, can interpose a thousand barriers against deleterious climatic effects. It is thus seen that man, and other animals, in their terrestrial migrations, set out upon very unequal terms.

A further characteristic of man is manifested in the two laws, that he does not acquire his full stature until he is more than

twenty years old, and that the whole period of his life, in proportion to the size of his body, is the greatest of all mammalia. For example, the greatest age of the ape, called by the natives *Chimpanzé*, and by Blumenbach, *Simia Troglodytes*, which is most human in its form, and equals, when full grown, man in stature, is said to be not more than thirty-five years; and that of the horse, which has a much greater corporeal bulk than man, is perhaps the same. Man, on the other hand, is known not unfrequently to attain a longevity of one hundred years and even upward.

In the category of man's exclusive characteristics, is the use of conventional language, which is one of the most important adjuvants to the use and development of the human mind. That certain modes of communication exist between individuals of many other species, cannot be doubted; but these are comparatively very limited, and bear no analogy to the power of producing articulate sounds. "Man," says Cuvier, "has a particular pre-eminence in his organs of voice: he is the only mammal that can articulate sounds; probably on account of the form of his mouth and the great mobility of his lips. Hence results his most valuable mode of communication; for of all signs that can be conveniently employed for the transmission of ideas, varied sounds are those which can be perceived at the greatest distance, and in most directions simultaneously." The reason why a dog barks, a horse neighs, an ape utters a shrill whistle, or man produces articulate sounds constituting conventional language, must necessarily be found in a difference of organization. "I have been asked," says Sir Charles Bell, "by men of the first education and talents, whether any thing really deficient had been discovered in the organs of the orang outan to prevent him from speaking! \* \* \* The exquisite organization for all this is not visible in the organs of the voice, as they are called: it is to be found in the nerves which combine all these various parts in one simultaneous act. The meshes of the spider's web, or the cordage of a man-of-war, are few and simple compared with the concealed filaments of nerves which move these parts; and if but one be wanting, or its tone of action disturbed in the slightest degree, every body knows how a man will stand with his mouth open, twisting his tongue and lips in vain attempts to utter a word. \* \* \* The ape, therefore, does not articulate. First, because the organs are not perfect to this end; secondly, because the nerves do not associate these organs in that variety

of action which is necessary to speech; and lastly, were all the exterior apparatus perfect, there is no impulse to that act of speaking."

We have thus brought under review the leading peculiarities of man's structure and economy; but he is yet otherwise distinguished by what may be regarded as the essential characteristics of humanity, that is, by those mental endowments which give him the capability of improvement from age to age. As this part of the subject, however, was treated at some length in our former article, a few general remarks must here suffice. It is only during the early period of man's life, when the intellect remains undeveloped, that the instinctive propensities are strongly manifested; and it is psychical endowments like these, that are exhibited by the chimpanzé, in which the exercise of an intelligent will never exceeds that of a human infant two or three years old. As the instincts of no two separate species are precisely alike, judging from the actions and habits which are the outward signs and manifestations of these instincts, and as there are also fixed principles of human action, which may be considered typical of the whole human family, it is here that we must seek the line of distinction between the life of instinctive and of rational agents. In man, for example, among the outward manifestations of that internal agency constituting his distinctive attributes, are, the use of fire and of artificial clothing, the advance of the arts and sciences which enoble and dignify human nature, and more especially the universal, innate tendency to believe in some unseen existence, never wholly absent from any race or nation; and intimately connected with this belief in a spiritual existence, implanted in the human mind by the Creator, is the desire to participate in its unknown glories—a mental phenomenon regarded by philosophers in all ages as one of the leading natural arguments in proof of the immortality of the soul. By these psychological phenomena, and the habitudes of life and action thence resulting, and particularly by the idea of some invisible Power, possessed even by the rudest nations, who endeavor, by sacrifice and other religious observances, to seek its favor or deprecate its wrath, man, in his inward nature, is completely distinguished from the whole life of the lower orders of creation. Hence results the improbability of man, which is manifested both in his mental and corporeal constitution; and this it is that constitutes one of the great lines of demarcation between rational and instinctive

life, inasmuch as the arts peculiar to the latter are limited in each species. There is no proof that any species of the lower animals ever profit by experience, that is, that any improvement or alteration in their condition has ever resulted from the particular adaptation made by an individual, as not unfrequently occurs, of new actions to unusual circumstances. Although the lower animals are endowed with certain powers adapted to certain purposes, in a degree unattainable by man, yet it is not difficult to lay down a line of demarcation between the acts of instinctive and those of rational agents. The difference lies in this, that the energies of all the lower animals, according to different laws impressed on each species, are directed toward the immediate well-being of the individual or of his tribe; and these habits present the most marked uniformity in successive generations. On the other hand, the successive generations of man are characterized by variations in his condition, either tending to improvement, or to alternate periods of improvement, with reverses and retrograde changes. In some of our domesticated species, however, as for instance the dog, characterized by the extent of his rationality, certain modifications in structure and psychical endowments may be induced by circumstances, which may be hereditarily transmitted. That the corporeal structure and psychical endowments of man, through the influence of physical and mental education, continued through successive generations, may be also greatly improved, there is the most abundant testimony; and to this cause, developing the capabilities of man's whole nature, and especially the anterior part of his brain, is to be ascribed, in a great measure, the characteristics of the various races of the human family.

In our previous article, in the number for July last, were brought under notice certain psychological phenomena, just adverted to above, which seem common to the whole human race, and serve to distinguish it from all the lower orders of creation. We refer to the fact that there have been, in all ages of mankind, orders of the sacerdotal and consecrated class, who, in consequence of a sentiment of religion implanted in the breast of *all* the human family, have been respected as the mediators between gods and men. This has been common to the temples both of the Christian and Pagan world—to the Vatican of the Tiber and the shrine of Mecca—to the magnificent pyramids of Egypt, and to those of the central regions of America, called *Teocalli*, which were equally vast and grand.

As regards the ancient and civilized Mexicans, their faith, according to Prescott,\* was more refined in character than that of the ancient Greeks or modern Mahometans, comprehending, as it did, a future state of rewards and punishments. With Judaism and Christianity their religious observances and doctrinal belief presented some singular coincidences. It was with great astonishment that the Catholic ecclesiastic beheld their priests administer the rites of confession and absolution. A ceremony very like that of baptism occurred at the naming of an infant, the head and lips of which were touched with water, while a prayer was offered, "*that the sin that was given to us before the beginning of the world might not visit the child, but that, cleansed by these waters, it might live and be born anew.*" As regards their traditional account of the Deluge, a similar analogy was recognized, not only in the general outline, but in particular details. But there were other remarkable coincidences, as the *worship of the cross*, and the observance of a rite resembling most strikingly the *Christian communion*; and even the lofty morality of the New Testament was approached in some of their religious precepts, as "*he who looks too curiously upon a woman commits adultery with his eyes.*"

"Circumstances," says Cuvier, "more or less favorable, have restrained the social condition within limited degrees, or have promoted its development. The glacial climates of the north of both continents, and the impenetrable forests of America, are still inhabited by the savage hunter or fisherman; the immense sandy or salt plains of Central Asia and Africa are covered with a pastoral people and innumerable herds: these half-civilized hordes assemble at the call of every enthusiastic chief, and overrun the cultivated countries that surround them, in which they establish themselves but to become enervated, and to be subjected in their turn to the next invaders. This is the true cause of that despotism which, in every age, has crushed the industry called forth under the fine climate of Persia, India, and China. Mild climates, soils naturally irrigated and rich in vegetables, are the natural cradles of agriculture and civilization; and when their position is such as to afford shelter from the incursions of barbarians, talents of every

---

\* History of the Conquest of Mexico, with a preliminary View of the Ancient Mexican Civilization, and the Life of the Conqueror, Hernando Cortes. By Wm. H. Prescott, etc.

kind are mutually excited. Such were formerly (the first in Europe) Greece and Italy ; and such is at present nearly all the happy portion of the earth's surface."

That the civilization of countries is likewise greatly influenced by their physical features, and by the relation of the interior to the coast, has been very correctly observed by Professor Ritter. As the Mediterranean coasts have been the great centres of early civilization, Europe has derived the greatest advantage in consequence of the easy communication with the interior by separating gulfs and inland seas. The continent of Africa, on the other hand, exhibits a compact and undivided form, thus cutting off the great regions of the interior by natural barriers from the same influence. It was in the river-system of Egypt alone, that the progress of civilization was favored ; and this corresponds with the view of Cuvier just presented, that the countries in which the savage man was first awakened to a sense of his intellectual powers, were extensive plains or valleys, irrigated by fertilizing streams, and blessed with a mild climate. It is, in truth, in a similar region abounding in the means of subsistence, that ancient centres of population and civilization have been discovered upon our own continent, in which even the American Aboriginal was awakened from the brutal sloth of savage life. Like Africa, Asia also contains vast interior spaces, individually distinct, each of which must depend for culture upon its own impulses. The greater part of Asia, however, and Europe generally, are devoid of these insulated tracts, the inhabitants of which exhibit strongly marked peculiarities of physical character, attributable to their subjection from immemorial ages to the influence of the same external agents. Hence we find the most distant parts of Europe and Asia overspread by the same races of people, brought about chiefly by those repeated migrations of whole communities, just adverted to above, by which the social condition of entire nations was often completely changed. In Greece and Italy, we find geographical features which seem to have destined each of these countries for the abode of a peculiar people, inasmuch as they are accessible on every side, and have a position which enabled them to partake, at an early period, of the advances of civilization made among the nations of the Mediterranean coast.

Now, as man is scattered over the whole face of the earth, under every variety of physical circumstances, in addition to

the influences arising from a moral and intellectual nature, differences of form, stature, features, and color of the skin, are doubtless due, if not wholly, at least in part to these causes; and this opinion is confirmed by the well-observed facts relative to great variations produced by similar causes in domesticated quadrupeds, whose physical organization, it has been seen, does not differ in its nature from that of man. Besides, as varieties of the same species blend imperceptibly into one another, by propagating an intermediate variety, and as the physical causes which gave rise to these original varieties may have undergone modification; or have ceased to act altogether, in consequence of extensive migrations, it follows that the attempt to define the primary races of man, must be attended with many great difficulties. This subject, however, is the great question investigated in our former paper, in which the Mosaic doctrine of the unity of the human race is conclusively established on the basis alone of scientific facts.

In the last place, let us view man in the light of *Palæontology*, which is that branch of zoological science which treats of fossil organic remains, that is, the doctrine of the succession of species of animals upon the earth in reference mainly to such as no longer exist.

#### PALÆONTOLOGY.

Seeing the frequent agitation of the public mind caused by geological disquisitions, as, for instance, in regard to the great antiquity of the earth, it will not be surprising, should some of the readers of the Repository not be prepared for the views now to be presented. That such statements as these should produce alarm and anxiety in the minds of many, as being in direct contradiction to the sacred narrative, is very reasonable; but, as we have shown in our previous writings, that the book of God's works and the book of His word cannot be contradictory, so will it be found on the present occasion. But when we see these opinions pervading the writings of such Christian geologists as Buckland, Pye Smith, Sedgwick, Faber, Chalmers, Conybeare, and our own Hitchcock, there can surely be no impropriety in presenting them to the readers of the Repository. As the "Bridgewater Treatises" are especially devoted to the illustration of "*the power, wisdom, and goodness of God, as manifested in the creation,*" we will here make an extract from the ninth Treatise, written by Mr. Babbage, ex-

pressive of the doctrine now entertained by scientific and Christian writers, relative to the age of the earth.

"In truth, the mass of evidence which combines to prove the great antiquity of the earth itself, is so irresistible and so unshaken by any opposing facts, that none but those who are alike incapable of observing the facts and appreciating the reasoning, can, for a moment, conceive the present state of its surface to have been the result of only 6,000 years of existence. Those observers and philosophers, who have spent their lives in the study of geology, have arrived at the conclusion, that there exists irresistible evidence, that the date of the earth's formation is far anterior to the epoch *supposed* to be assigned to it by Moses; and it is now admitted by all competent persons, that the formation even of those strata which are *nearest the surface*, must have occupied vast periods, probably *millions of years*, in arriving at their present state."

Indeed, turn where we will, new proofs in favor of the great antiquity of the earth, inexhaustible in number, are presented, all bearing in one direction, and embarrassing us only by their multitude and diversity.

In surveying the physical revolutions by which our mountains have been upheaved, thus unfolding page after page of this great book, containing the wondrous records of the changes which our globe has undergone, during a series of periods of long but unknown duration, before it was inhabited by man, the conclusion is obvious, that there exists an inseparable relation between these successive groups of animal and vegetable fossil remains, each unlike all the others, found imbedded at different depths, and the corresponding period of the earth's condition. Change is, in truth, the order of Nature. "The inhabitants of the globe," says Playfair, "like all the other parts of it, are subject to change. It is not only the individual that perishes, but whole species." If we penetrate but a short distance beneath the earth's surface, the empire of a dead kingdom is presented to our view, in which the organic remains bear but slight analogy to the existing orders of living nature. Every regular stratum containing these fossils, though many thousand feet beneath the earth's surface, was once the uppermost rock; and that these secondary strata were formed in succession over one another, is evident from the fact that these fossil organic remains are not confusedly aggregated, and that different genera or species occupy particular strata, or are as-

sociated exclusively with certain genera or species of the same class; in other words, there are certain points at which entire groups both of animals and vegetables cease to exist, being replaced by others of a different character. Besides, as some animal remains, notwithstanding of the most delicate structure, are found perfect and unbroken, there can be but little doubt that the animals lived and died tranquilly near where their fossil remains are now found, and that they have not been transported to their present situations by vast inundations; but, covered up by successive depositions of strata, a new race of living beings, adapted to the physical changes of the earth's surface, arose, flourished, and in like manner left their remains. To those ignorant of the existence of phenomena of this kind, these facts must appear almost incredible; and equally surprising must it be to them to learn, that the very walls of their houses are sometimes made up nearly altogether of comminuted shells, each of which was once the tiny domicil of a microscopic animal at the bottom of ancient seas or lakes. Ay, the very plains on which we tread are often so constituted as to consist almost entirely of the wreck of animal life; and the very mountains stand forth as stupendous monuments of the operations of life and death during countless ages, being, as it were, the great charnel-houses of preceding generations, made up of the fossilized exuviae of extinct races of animals and tribes of vegetables.

We thus possess a geological scale of time, the symbolical notations of which all concur in impressing the mind with ever-growing convictions of the immense antiquity of the earth. But this scale refers merely to the relative dates of geological phenomena; and these intervals of time are often so uncertain, that, in the language of Scripture, a day or a thousand years are the same. It is not then by celestial cycles that the geologist counts his time, but by the index of a long succession of monuments found in the solid framework of the globe itself, each of which may have consumed a thousand ages in its elaboration. These tombs of the ancient inhabitants of the earth, he arranges in chronological order; and tracing backward, through each successive era, its peculiar fashions and strange forms of organic life, he finally reaches a period when these monuments are no longer seen,—thus closing the volume of her ancient records on the dark age of Nature's history.

We cannot refrain here from making the following appro-

priate extract from a recent number of the London Quarterly Review, relative to the extraordinary advances of modern geology :

" Though her conclusions have not the evidence of demonstration, and are opposed to many of our early prejudices, yet they stand before us in the grandeur of *truth*, and have commanded the assent of the most pious and sober-minded of our philosophers. They have lent in fact a new evidence to revealed religion ; they have broken the arms of the skeptic ; and when we ponder over the great events which they proclaim, the mighty revolutions which they indicate, the wrecks of successive creations which they display, and the innumerable cycles of their chronology, the era of man shrinks into contracted dimensions, his proudest and most ancient dynasties wear the aspect of upstart and ephemeral groups ; the fabrics of human power, the gorgeous temple, the monumental bronze, the regal pyramid, sink into insignificance beside the mighty sarcophagi of the brutes that perish. \* \* \* They form, indeed, the key to the hieroglyphics of the ancient world ; they enable us to reckon up its almost countless periods ; to replace its upheaved and dislocated strata ; to replant its forests ; to reconstruct the products of its charnel-house ; to repeople its jungles with their gigantic denizens ; to restore the condors to its atmosphere, and give back to its oceans its mighty Leviathans. And such is the force with which these revivals are presented to our judgment, that we almost see the mammoth, the megatheria, and the mastodon, stalking over the plains or pressing through the thickets ; the giant ostrich leaving its foot-writing on the sands ; the voracious ichthyosaucean swallowing the very meal which its fossil ribs inclose ; the monstrous plesiosaurus paddling through the ocean, and guiding its lizard trunk and rearing its swan neck as if in derision of human wisdom ; and the pterodactyle, that mysterious compound of bird, brute, and bat, asserting its triple claim to the occupancy of earth, ocean, and the atmosphere."

It is thus seen that the geological history of organic creation on the earth's surface proves that *species*, like the *individuals* that compose them, are not immortal. "They must die out," in the emphatic language of Buffon, "because time fights against them." But, though all things visible are subject to change, yet they are the work of one invisible and eternal Being, "the same yesterday, to-day, and forever." Now, the

application of these remarks to the question discussed in this paper—*What is the position of man in the chain of organic creation?*—is the fact that human remains have not been found in or below the diluvial deposits in any part of Europe, nor have they yet been met with in the tertiary strata of any other part of the world; and hence, man, compared with the globe upon which he dwells, is but a creature of yesterday. In the reliquæ of mammalia found in diluvial deposits, most of the genera and some of the species, compared with living tribes, are the same, or have a close approximation; while, in the still more recent accumulation, it is unusual to find an extinct species. “But there is one remarkable exception,” says Phillips, “to this analogy of the tertiary and diluvial fauna, with our present races of mammalia; no remains of man have yet been found in any of these deposits—no trace of his works; and it is yet entirely doubtful, whether the race of man existed at all during what are called the diluvial periods.”

“As geologists,” says Lyell, “we learn that it is not only the present condition of the globe which has been suited to the accommodation of myriads of living creatures, but that many former states also have been adapted to the organization and habits of prior races of beings. The disposition of the seas, continents, and islands, and the climates, have varied; the species likewise have been changed; and yet they have all been so modelled, on types analogous to those of existing plants and animals, as to indicate throughout a perfect harmony of design and unity of purpose. To assume that the evidence of the beginning or end of so vast a scheme lies within the reach of our philosophical inquiries, or even of our speculations, appears to be inconsistent with a just estimate of the relations which subsist between the finite powers of man and the attributes of an Infinite and Eternal Being.”

As we thus see, in every change which the globe has undergone, an established relation between the animal created and the elements surrounding it, we cannot resist, in these facts, the proofs of a beginning, of design, or of a First Cause. We observe that the excellence of form now exhibited by the skeleton of man, pervaded the scheme of animal existence long prior to his formation, and before the earth’s surface was adapted to his physical, his intellectual, and his moral condition. Hence, these fossil bones of the ancient world, in consequence of this similarity of structure, enable the anatomist to reduce the animals to which

they belonged, to their orders, genera, and species. It can thus be demonstrated not only whether their feet were adapted for speed, or for grasping and tearing, or whether they were suited to the solid ground, or the watery element; but, judging of the habits of the animal by these indications, as well as those afforded by the teeth and other parts of the skeleton, a knowledge of the condition of the earth, at the respective periods of their existence, is also supplied.

We must consequently look upon man, as well as many other races of animals which are appointed to live under more limited physical conditions than he, as pertaining peculiarly to the last of several great periods of geological time, each characterized by the creation of peculiar animals and plants. Recent geological researches seem to show that the theory of the successive development of the animal and vegetable world, from the simplest to the most perfect forms, is not well sustained. But even if we admit that man presents the perfection of organic structure, and is of comparatively modern origin, his creation cannot be regarded as the final step in this progressive system; for his superiority depends on intellectual and moral attributes, and not on those which he shares in common with the inferior animals. Indeed, as regards the latter, it is nowise obvious that man has any pre-eminence. Hence, were there even sufficient geological data to establish the theory of progressive development prior to the creation of man, his introduction upon the mundane stage, instead of constituting the last link in this chain, could be regarded only as an era in the *moral* and *intellectual*, and not in the *physical*, world.

Regarding, as we necessarily must, the phenomena of all geological periods, from the most ancient to the most modern epoch, as a *series of natural revolutions pertaining to one grand system*, it follows that the present condition of our globe is not permanent; but that other appointed changes—the result of a predetermined cause—may be expected, from the analogy of the same laws, to ensue. We are thus led almost irresistibly to speculate on the past and future condition of our planet, which has now, in the creation of moral and intellectual man, reached its most magnificent epoch of appointed changes. Looking back to the period when the surface of the earth was the scene of conflicting elements, or to the long intervals of comparative repose when the organic existence of each epoch flourished, what various reflections crowd the mind! But shall intelligent

and moral man share the destiny which awaited the gigantic crocodilian animals who scoured the surface of the deep, or the pterodactyle darting through umbrageous groves of tree-ferns, in search of their prey, thus ruling *their* world? Or shall he meet the fate of the mammoth and mastodon, which, stalking the lords of a succeeding world, perished in the last grand revolution that preceded man's creation? To interpret thus the future phenomena of Nature is, however, beyond the reach of human comprehension. Suffice it to say, that as man alone, of all terrestrial animals, is endowed with faculties which impel him to speculate on the past, to anticipate the future, and to exalt his hopes beyond this visible sphere, his existence here is, indeed, an event not in the calculation which finite reason can make of the effects of such laws. These powers peculiar to man, as before remarked, were regarded even by the philosopher of ancient times, as a proof of his high future destiny; and when the existence of this Immortal Soul, thus inferred from *natural* arguments, is confirmed by the strongest evidence of *revealed* truth, he is encouraged, as the reward of his improvement of the talents here committed to his charge, to aspire to a state of being, in which intelligence, free from the restraints imposed by the corporeal tenement in which it dwells here below, shall then assume the new character of a more intimate communion of mind with mind, and of creatures with their Creator. It is man alone of all animals that has an idea of the future; and to him it is given to paint with a thousand brilliant, flattering hopes, this dark and mysterious *time to come*, and thus "to place, as it were, a crown of glory on the cold brows of death."

What ennobling reflections do the preceding views of the history of the earth and its inhabitants excite! The physical revolutions of the crust of the earth, which have in former ages changed its surface and overwhelmed its inhabitants, seem at first view an anomaly in nature; but when we come to study these phenomena in their results, we behold the most striking evidences of design. Were stratified rocks, for instance, always found in their natural horizontal position, extensive tracts of a country must necessarily have been overspread by the same rock, causing many minerals, now accessible to man, to be beyond his reach. The surface of the earth would thus present a universal plain, devoid of the life and beauty bestowed upon it by the terrible convulsions by which its mountains have been

upheaved; for, as there could be no springs of water, no rivers, no metals for the purpose of tools, or no stone or lime to serve for architecture, and as the atmosphere itself would necessarily be baneful, all animal and vegetable life would languish in its lowest existence. Hence, we behold in the present arrangement of the physical geography of our globe, the operation of that superintending Wisdom, which has so admirably adapted the external world to the moral, intellectual, and physical condition of man. In proportion as any science has attained its highest degree of perfection, has the wisdom of the Creator, as manifested in the adaptation of means to an end, become more obvious. As regards the apparent disorder into which the strata of the earth's surface have been thrown, it has been just now seen that without these inequalities its condition would be incompatible with animal and vegetable life as now existing; and this general principle is more especially true in its application to the deposition of vast beds of coal, and more particularly as regards the distribution of this valuable mineral substance to the higher latitudes. There is thus implied a prospective regard not only so far as the wants of civilized man are concerned, but in reference to the very means calculated to promote his civilization. In fine, in whatever direction the geologist pursues his researches, there are on every hand revealed the clear proofs of a Creative Intelligence, characterized by foresight, power, and wisdom—an agency, not only adapting mechanism to an end, but adjusting, as the physical history of our globe proves, the mechanism to the altered conditions under which it was to exist. How many of these groups have been successively created, or how long a period elapsed between the era of the creation of the earth and that of the formation of man, we know not,—opinions which do not necessarily conflict with the Mosaic account of creation, nor with the devotional homage due to the Creator—

—————“Nor think, though men were none,  
That Heaven would want spectators, God want praise.”

## ARTICLE III.

## THE BIBLICAL ARGUMENT ON SLAVERY.

By Rev. William C. Wisner, Lockport, N. Y.

AMONG other extremes which prevail in the discussion of the slavery question, is the effort of some slaveholders, on the one hand, to prove that the Old Testament Scriptures sustain and justify slavery, and that of some abolitionists, on the other, to prove that slavery did not exist among the Jews in Old Testament times. The fact that we believe these efforts to lie in opposite extremes, and view them as alike incorrect and untenable, has induced us to take up the subject of *Old Testament slavery*, and discuss it in the present form. In pursuing this discussion, we shall have occasion to review in part the pamphlet of T. D. Weld, Esq., entitled, "*The Bible against Slavery.*" This work contains the whole argument of those who maintain that slavery did not exist among the Jews. It has received an unqualified eulogium from almost every abolition paper in the land; and has been triumphantly styled, "*The unanswerable argument.*" That it evinces more than ordinary powers of mind on the part of its talented author, we are willing to admit; and we are just as ready to allow that his argument to show that the Old Testament does not sustain slavery is, when taken by itself, clear, powerful, and conclusive; but when taken in connection with his unsuccessful attempt to prove that slavery did not at that time exist among the Hebrews, it is shorn of half its power to convince, and appears comparatively weak and inconclusive. By attempting to grasp more than the facts in the case will allow, he has prejudiced and darkened the minds of many of his readers in regard to those truths, which, if throughout the whole of his discussion he had kept upon ground perfectly tenable, might have been made to blaze and burn upon the mind with such clearness and power as to have utterly swept away every *Bible refuge* of those who are the advocates of slavery. By raising a fog from the stagnant marshes of error, he has *discolored* and rendered *indistinct* those objects which are surrounded

by the atmosphere of truth. But still, inconclusive as it appears to us, it is admitted by all parties, that he has said all that can be said upon the opposite side of this question. It is therefore proper that, in discussing the subject, we should in a measure review his argument.

The plan of the present article will be the following :

- I. Define *Old Testament Slavery*.
- II. Prove that such slavery had an existence: and,
- III. Show that the fact of its existence gives no warrant, and forms no apology, for slaveholding at the present day.

By Old Testament slavery, I do not mean a slavery that is justified by the Old Testament; for, as I shall show, in its proper place, the Scriptures no more justify slavery than they do polygamy, or the offensive slaughter of nations. But by Old Testament slavery, I mean, that slavery which existed in the church, or which was practised by her members during Old Testament times.

That such slavery did exist, we shall now attempt to prove; and in so doing, inquire,

I. What is slavery? It is the *holding property in man* in such a sense as to give the master entire control of all that the slave is, and all that he has, as well *after* he becomes of age as *before*, so that he can be bought and sold, or disposed of according to the pleasure of his owner, subject always, like other property, to any restrictions the law of the land may see fit to impose.

In order to decide whether an individual is a *slave*, we have no need to inquire *how he became such*. He may have sold himself into perpetual bondage, or he may have been kidnapped and sold by another, or he may have been taken prisoner in war and reduced to a state of bondage by the victor, or he may have been guilty of some crime, and, as a punishment, have been sold by the government into *perpetual slavery*. No matter how he became thus: the simple question is, *Is he held, and can he be disposed of, as property?*

Nor does the question of *voluntary* service decide whether an individual is a *slave*. Mr. Weld has a long article, and to us a very inconclusive one, to prove that the service among the Israelites was *perfectly voluntary*, from which he infers that their servants could not have been *slaves*. But, suppose it could be shown ever so clearly that this service was voluntary, or that their servants labored willingly, it would not disprove that they

were slaves. If it could be shown that the master could make *no disposition* of his servant *without his consent*, this would be conclusive evidence that he was not a slave. But if it be merely shown (which is all our author has attempted to show) that the servant renders a willing service to his master; and even if it be shown that he became a servant in a voluntary manner, it does not prove that he is not a *slave*. Among the ancients a man might sell himself into perpetual slavery, and might ever afterwards delight to serve a kind master; so that the master's will might be said to be his own. The most perfect slave the world ever saw may render willing service to his master.

Again, a man may be a *slave* while his children remain *perfectly free*. Mr. Weld, in proving what no one ever thought of denying, that convicts are not slaves, says, "Convicts cannot be slaves; because *their children are not slaves*." This argument would be conclusive, if the children of slaves were invariably born in bondage. But this is not the case. At the present day there are frequent instances in which the children of slaves are *free*. According to the laws of some of our states which have abolished slavery, all the children of slaves, who were born after a certain date, were declared free; and it so happened, in those days, that there was a whole generation of slaves whose children were free; and yet they continued to be slaves. But this, according to our author, could not be the fact, for the *freedom* of their *children* is a sufficient argument to prove that the *parents* were likewise free. So, at this day, in slaveholding states, the condition of the children is determined by that of the mother; and it sometimes happens that a slave marries a free colored woman; and in that case all his children are free.

The result to which we must come is, that a man may be a slave and affect no one but himself. This bondage may, and it may not, extend to his posterity. If a man is held as *property*, and can be disposed of at the will of a master,—no matter what may be the *condition* of his *children*,—he is a *slave*.

II. Slavery existed among the Hebrews in Old Testament times. This we prove,

1. From the fact that, in those times, maid-servants were bestowed upon daughters at their marriage, who appear to have been held and treated by their mistresses as property:—they certainly were at their disposal, to do with them as they pleased. Such a servant we believe Hagar, Sarai's maid, to have been.

Certainly Sarai disposed of her as she pleased. "And Sarai took Hagar and gave her to her husband Abram to be his wife." Surely this looks as if she was passive in the matter, and the whole affair settled according to the will of her mistress. Again, "Abram said unto Sarai his wife, Behold, thy maid is in thy hand; do to her as it pleaseth thee." Now let me ask, Would a maid be in the hand of her mistress to do to her as she pleased, unless she was her property? Would a husband, in our day, use such language as this to his wife in relation to his hired servant? Once more, "And when Sarai dealt hardly with her, she fled from her face." If she was not her property, but merely in her employ, why flee? Why not tell her mistress that she treated her so, that she could work for her no longer, and leave in an open, fair manner, instead of running away? The truth is, the conduct of Sarai and Hagar cannot be accounted for upon any other principle than that the latter was at the *entire disposal* of her mistress: and if so, she was, to all intents and purposes, a slave.

We find that Rebecca, Isaac's wife, and Leah and Rachel, the wives of Jacob, had maid-servants bestowed upon them, which any unprejudiced reader of the Bible would take to be slaves. I know it is said by Mr. W. that "these maid-servants of wives were themselves regarded as *inferior* wives." But this assertion is made without the least shadow of evidence. If they became inferior wives by virtue of their being handmaids of the superior ones, this relation must have obtained at the time they were given as servants to these wives. But, instead of this being the case, we find they never became wives of an inferior order unless the wives whose servants they were gave them to their husbands in this relation. This was done by Sarai a long time after her marriage, and of course a long time after Hagar came into her possession; and it was not performed by Rachel and Leah until some years after their marriage. Rebecca never gave her maid to be the wife of Isaac, her husband. We are referred by Mr. W. to Gen. 49: 4, and 1 Chron. 5: 1, in support of his assertion. But these passages only prove that, at some period of Jacob's life, the handmaid of one of his wives became his wife, which we have not denied, but have admitted that he married both their maid-servants. These passages have nothing to do with the question, whether they became inferior wives by virtue of their being the servants of the superior.

Again: It is evident that these maids, who were given to be  
SECOND SERIES, VOL. XI. NO. II. 5

wives to the husbands of their mistresses, were servants in such a sense, that their mistresses considered they had a right to claim their children as their own. The children were not treated as slaves, because they belonged to the husband ; but they were considered as the children of the *superior* wife, which were born to her by her *maid-servant*. This was the motive which induced the wives of the patriarchs to give their maids to be wives to their husbands ; not that their maids might be possessed of children, but that they might have children by them ; as will be abundantly evident to those who will take the trouble to examine Gen. 16 : 2, and 30 : 1-13.

I am not ignorant of the fact that Josephus denies that Zilpah and Bilhah were *slaves*. His language is, "Now each of these had handmaids by their father's *donation*. Zilpah was handmaid to Leah, and Bilhah to Rachel ; by *no means slaves*, but, however, subject to their mistresses." I wonder that the author of "*The Bible against Slavery*" did not introduce into his work this quotation from Josephus. It certainly would have been more to his purpose than many passages he has quoted. But he shall not be denied all the benefit this language of the Jewish historian can yield, although he has neglected to weave it into his argument.

In order that we may know what weight to give to this testimony of Josephus, the following things are worthy of notice :

First. He published his *Antiquities* A. D. 75, several centuries after the events here recorded transpired ; and at this late period we cannot conceive of any possible way in which he could determine the situation of these maid-servants, except from the Bible history concerning them. But we have that history as well as Josephus, and are capable of judging for ourselves. As we have seen, the relation goes very far to favor the idea that they were slaves.

Second. That, in this statement, Josephus had another object in view besides a simple, ungarnished narrative of fact, is evident, because he makes this assertion concerning no other servants whom he mentions. When he spake of Hagar, Sarai's maid, why did he not say, she was "*by no means a slave?*" It is certain that Hagar sustained the same relation to her mistress that Zilpah and Bilhah did to theirs ; for the same word is used in both cases to express this relation. How came it to pass, then, that Josephus took no pains to guard the former from being thought a slave, while he was at the trouble of asserting, con-

cerning the last two, that they were "*by no means slaves?*" To answer this question is not difficult. The fact was, a large proportion of the twelve patriarchs descended from these handmaids, and the Jewish historian was fearful that other nations would think the Hebrews were descended from slaves. It was his partiality for his own people, and a desire to show that they were from a *noble ancestry*, that caused this historian to throw over his account such a gloss, and make the bold assertion, without the least shadow of evidence, that the maids of Leah and Rachel were "*by no means slaves.*" If Isaac had been the son of Hagar, we should have found Josephus asserting concerning her, that she was "*by no means a slave.*" But, as she was the mother of Ishmael, who was not, in *any sense*, an ancestor of the Jewish nation, he is perfectly willing that it should be understood that she was a slave.

Third. If we do not greatly mistake, this passage of Josephus contradicts itself. He declares, that "each of these had handmaids by their father's *donation*"—and then, that these handmaids were "*by no means slaves.*" Here I would ask—Can I donate to another that which I do not possess? Must not an object be mine, before I can give it away? Can I give away my hired servant? Can any thing be bestowed as a gift, or be possessed by way of donation, unless it be property? And is a handmaid property, and still not a slave? It does appear to us that here is a gross contradiction, which can only be accounted for upon the supposition that Josephus was very desirous and hardly pushed to prove that his nation was not in part descended from slaves.

But suppose it could be shown, conclusively, that Zilpah and Bilhah were not slaves; still it would be very far from proving that *Old Testament slavery had no existence.*

We think, however, that the above considerations are sufficient to prove, beyond a doubt, that these maid-servants were the *property* of their mistresses; and if this be true, it clearly shows that they *held slaves.*

2. Our second argument is drawn from the fact that, in those days, and among that people, servants were represented as "*bought with money,*" as slaves are at the present day. Gen. 17: 12: "And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man-child in your generations, he that is born in the *house*, or *bought with money* of *any stranger* which is not of thy seed."

Ver. 27 : " And all the men of his house, *born in the house*, and *bought* with *money* of the *stranger*, were circumcised with him."

Levit. 22: 11 : " But if the priest *buy* any soul with his *money*, he shall eat of it, and he that is *born in his house*; they shall eat of it."

Levit. 25: 44-46 : " Both thy bond-men and bond-maids, which thou shalt have, shall be of the heathen that are round about you ; of them shall ye *buy* bond-men and bond-maids. Moreover, of the children of the strangers that do sojourn among you, of them shall ye *buy*, and of their families that are with you, which they begat in your land ; and they shall be your *possession*. And ye shall take them as an *inheritance* for your *children* after you, to *inherit* them for a *possession* ; they shall be your *bond-men for ever*." Other texts might be added, but these are sufficient for our purpose.

The Hebrew word translated *bought*, *buy*, &c., is *רִכְבָּה*. As Mr. W. has very justly remarked, *to buy* is a *secondary* meaning. In a *primary* sense it signifies the obtaining, by *any means whatever*, the *absolute possession* of an object, so that the object shall be under the *entire control* of its possessor. As such possessions were obtained more frequently by purchase than in any other way, this word was made to represent the act of purchasing, and thus came to signify "*to buy*." As far as this word marks the right the buyer has in the thing bought, it is *entire* ; so that he can use it, and dispose of it as he pleases. Wherever we see the obtaining of an object expressed by *רִכְבָּה*, the only idea to be derived from the word itself is that of *entire possession*, bringing along with it *absolute control*. And if this idea is not conveyed to the mind by it, it is not owing to any deficiency in the signification of the word, but to the nature of the object which it governs, or certain legal regulations and enactments concerning that object. In other words, *רִכְבָּה* is never used to express the right which an individual has obtained to a person, or thing, unless it is the greatest possible right of which the *nature* of the object and the *laws of the land* will admit. And here we do not speak of *moral right merely*, but of the right of *force* and *human laws*. In this sense of the term right, if a person has the power to dispose of an article in a certain way, and there are no *legal enactments* to prevent such disposition, no matter how *unrighteous* it may be, he has the *right* so to do. Where a man has obtained the *entire control* of a thing,

without any *legal disabilities*, we have the full and perfect signification of the word. But still it is used where the nature of the thing and legal disabilities forbid this *entire control*, provided the man has purchased *all the right to possess and dispose of it which any individual in his circumstances can have*. Whenever **רָכַב** is used in the sense of purchasing, it signifies that the vender has conveyed *all his right and title* in the thing purchased to the vendee; so that whatever power the former possessed to dispose of it as he pleased, passes over to the latter. I am satisfied that any Hebrew scholar will testify to the correctness of these remarks upon the signification of this word. Let us now put it to the test, by examples:—

**רָכַב**, in a primary sense, is sometimes used to express that possession which parents obtain in their children at their birth. Eve says, “**רָכַב**,” “I am possessed of a child from the Lord.” Therefore she called his name **רֵאשִׁית**. That Adam and Eve had the natural power to dispose of their infant son as they pleased, and that they were under no disabilities from human enactments, must be evident to all. Here, then, we have the perfect signification of this word. So all parents have the entire possession and control of their infant children, except so far as they are restrained by human laws. Here we have the *restricted meaning* of **רָכַב**.

In a *secondary signification*, viz. *to buy*, it is used for the purchase which the Lord is said to make of his people. Isa. 11: 11, “The Lord shall set his hand again to recover (*to buy*) the remnant of his people,”—and so many other passages which might be quoted. Here certainly possession the most absolute is intended.,

It is used for the purchase of all kinds of *goods* and *chattels* and *landed estates*. Gen. 33: 19, “And he (Jacob) bought a parcel of a field, where he had spread his tent, of the children of Hamor, Shechem’s father, for a hundred pieces of money.” Jer. 13: 4, “Take the guide that thou has got (*bought*).” That here it conveys the idea of *property* in the *thing bought*, no one will deny.

It is used for the *obtaining* of *wisdom* and *other mental acquirements*, which are so valuable to their possessor. Prov. 19: 8, “He that getteth (*buyeth*) wisdom, loveth his own soul.” Prov. 16: 16, “How much better it is to get (*buy*) wisdom than gold.” Here the idea conveyed to the mind by **רָכַב** is, that wisdom may be bought and sold like other property, so as to *entirely deprive* the *vender* of so much of the article as he has made over to the

*vendee.* And it is not until we ascertain that the nature of wisdom or understanding is such that, although it may be *bought* and *sold*, as it is every day at our literary institutions, still it cannot be made to pass over to a second individual so as to deprive the *first* of its *benefits*, that we attach to the Hebrew word this secondary sense.

It is used for the purchase of wives, as was the custom among the ancients. Among the ancients (and the *ancient Hebrews* too) daughters were considered as the property of the father, subject to be sold by him without even being consulted. They were *property* in so *absolute* a sense that, according to Horne, "at the death of the father, brothers had the right, in the settlement of the estate, to sell them for *wives*. The question was not whether the young lady was suited—but whether a bargain could be made with the *father*, or, in case of his death, with the *brother*. This is the practice in Turkey and Arabia, and some other countries, at the present day. In Assyria and (according to Mela) in Thrace also, a curious custom prevailed. The young females who were beautiful, and consequently marketable, were put up at public auction and struck off to the highest bidder, and the money thus obtained was bestowed as a *portion* upon unhandsome ladies, whose charms were not sufficient to attract purchasers, in order to *bribe* some person to have them. When we read such facts as these, we need not marvel that the Hebrew word *רָכֶב* (signifying *absolute possession*) should be applied to the *obtaining* of a *wife*. Hence (Ruth 4: 10) Boaz says, "So Ruth the Moabitess, the wife of Mahlon, have I *purchased* to be *my wife*." Hosea says (Hosea 3: 2), "So I *bought* her to me for fifteen pieces of silver, and for a homer of barley, and for a half homer of barley." Mr. W. says (page 18), "If *buying servants* among the Jews shows that they were *property*, then *buying wives* shows that they were *property*." Very true. So far as the word *רָכֶב*, *to buy*, is concerned, when applied to any thing, whether a *wife*, or a servant, or a horse, or a farm, it makes *property* in the *strict* and *most absolute* sense of that term; and the course for us to take is to refer to the law of the land, and see if that makes any difference in the manner in which *wives* and *servants* can be held. If there is no difference made in law, then the fact that *רָכֶב* is applied to both, shows that they are *equally* the *property* of the purchaser; but if there is a difference made in law, then they must be held subject to this difference. We find that among most nations their laws forbid the husband to

sell his wife to another person, and guarantee to her certain privileges. So among the Jews, although a man might put away his wife by giving her a writing of divorce, yet he could not sell her to another; but the law imposed no such *disability* upon the master in regard to his *servant*—it *nowhere forbids* the *sale* of a *bought servant*. The truth then, in regard to this subject, stands as follows: The word *רָכֶב* makes *both* wives and servants, in the *absolute sense*, the *property* of their owners—the law steps in and delivers the wife, in some respects, out of this degraded situation, and bestows upon her certain privileges; but it makes no such provision for the *servant*—it leaves him where *רָכֶב* places him, the *absolute property* of his master *—in slavery.*

In order to show more clearly the fallacy of Mr. W.'s reasoning, we will throw it into the form of propositions.

The Hebrew word *רָכֶב*, *to buy*, is applied to the purchase of *wives* as well as *servants*. If this word marks *servants* as *property* it does *wives*.

Conclusion. *Wives are not, in the absolute sense, property—therefore servants are not.*

Now, by a similar course of reasoning, I will prove that *wives* and *servants* are both *property*, in the *absolute sense*.

The word *רָכֶב* is used to signify the purchase of *goods, chattels, and landed estates*, as well as *wives and servants*.

If this word marks *goods, chattels, &c.*, as *property*, it does *wives and servants*.

Conclusion. *Goods, chattels, &c., are property in the absolute sense—therefore, wives and servants are property in the same sense.* We will leave it to the candid reader, if our argument is not just as conclusive as that of our author. The truth is, as stated above, that *רָכֶב* marks them all as *property*, and they remain such in the *absolute sense*, unless relieved by the law of the land.

This word is used in a few instances, and very properly too, to signify the redemption of individuals *from bondage*. Neh. 5: 8, “We of our ability have *redeemed* (*bought*) our brethren that were *sold* to the heathen.” In order to see the propriety of the application of this word in this place, it will only be necessary to remark,

(a.) These individuals bought from the heathen were held by them as *slaves*. This our author admits. “Here (says he)

*bought* is not applied to persons who were made slaves, but to those *taken out of slavery.*"

(b.) By this purchase Nehemiah and his friends *bought all the right and title* which the heathen had in them.

(c.) The only reason why this purchase *redeemed* them from slavery was, that the purchasers saw fit to give them their liberty; yea, they *bought* them for the *very purpose*, that they *might be freed.*

These remarks will apply with *equal force* to the individual mentioned by our author, when he says, "Under the same roof with the writer is a servant *bought* with *money*—a few weeks since she was a slave—as soon as *bought* she was a slave no longer."

Lastly. This word is applied to the *purchase of servants.* (Take for example those passages already quoted.) The application of this word to servants, shows that they were considered the *property* of their masters, unless we can find something in the Jewish laws which forbid their being held as such. That *something* has not been pointed out by Mr. W. or any other person; nor can it be, for it does not exist. We find certain regulations which provided for the freedom of servants at set periods, but nothing which prevented masters, during their *bondage*, disposing of them at *pleasure*—except in the case of a *brother* who, on account of poverty, should sell himself to his *brother.* In such a case he was to be treated as a *hired servant*, and not as a *bondman.*

In the very same chapter, where they are commanded not to oppress and treat as slaves those of their own nation, the following strong language is used:—"Both thy bond-men and bond-maids, which thou shalt have, shall be of the heathen, that are round about you. Of them shall ye buy bond-men and bond-maids. Moreover, of the children of the strangers, that do sojourn among you, of them shall ye buy, and of the families which are with you, which they begat in your land, and they shall be your possession. And ye shall take them as an *inheritance* for your children after you, to *inherit* them for a possession—they shall be your *bondmen forever.*" Our author has a long argument to show that all this language means to imply is, that the Hebrews should not select their domestics from their *own people*, but should *engage* them from *other nations.* We have not time to follow him through the mazes of his sophisticated

reasoning upon this subject. Nor need we: for his argument is so entirely inconclusive, that if it has convinced a single individual it must be because his organ of gullibility is strikingly developed.

Our author has very sagely defined *bought-servant* to be one who receives from his employer pay *beforehand* for his *permanent services*. He says “*bought-servants* were paid in *advance* (a reason for their being called *bought*).” But where did he obtain his information upon this subject? Certainly not from the application of the word *buy*. It is never used where any thing is paid to another in the sense of wages for services rendered, whether the payment was made *before* or *after* their performance. Nor is it used where the price is paid to an individual for services rendered by *himself*, unless in cases where it is perfectly evident to every candid reader, that the man sold not only his services, but all his right and title to himself; and, by so doing, became a *slave*. Nor is it derived from the application of our English word “*bought*.” Notwithstanding the flourish of trumpets made by our author, to show that, since the time of King James’s translation, the signification of this word has undergone a change, he has entirely failed in the attempt. The truth is, that this word, in its proper signification, always meant, and still continues to mean, the vesting of *property* in an individual; or, the passing an article of property from one individual to another, in consideration of a *paid price*, or *equivalent*. It is never used in the sense of wages paid for services, whether they be paid *before* or *after* the services are rendered.

Mr. W. says (page 19), “Even at this day the word *buy* is used to describe the procuring of servants, where slavery is *abolished*. In the British West Indies, where slaves became apprentices in 1834, they are still *bought*. This is now the current word in the West India newspapers. So, a few years since in New York, Connecticut, Pennsylvania, and even now in New Jersey, servants are *bought* as really as in Virginia. So under the system of legal indenture in Illinois, servants are *bought*. A short time since, hundreds of foreigners who came to this country were *bought annually*. By voluntary contract they engaged to work for their purchasers a given time, to pay for their passage.” Two remarks will be sufficient to show upon which side of this question the argument drawn from the

use of the term *bought* in the above cited instances rests. 1. In every instance, as far as we know, the *price* paid went not to the *bought individual*, but to a *third* person. This certainly was the case under the Apprentice System in the West Indies and Illinois—and we have no doubt that, in every instance where this word was applied, the same thing was true in New York, Connecticut, Pennsylvania, and New Jersey. In the case of that class of men called "*Redemptioners*," who sold themselves to pay their passage, we know that the price paid went to a *third* person, viz. the ship-master or owner. After they had paid their passage, however long they might have been employed, the term *bought* was never applied, and undoubtedly for the simple reason that their subsequent wages went to *themselves*, and not to a *third* person. These cases bear such a marked resemblance to a *bona fide* purchase, that it is no marvel if, by a figure of speech not very strong, the term *bought* should be applied to them. 2. The use of this term, when applied to a *man*, is a dark relic of slavery. It shows conclusively, that at no distant date, slavery has existed among the people where it is used. The phrase "a bought man," would not be suffered to degrade the language of a nation where slavery never had existed—and experience proves that in those countries where it has been abolished, this phrase by common consent has been *expunged*. The truth of this statement can be shown from the language of our author himself. He says "A few years since, in New York, Connecticut, Pennsylvania, and even now in New Jersey, servants are bought as well as in Virginia." But it is only a few years since slavery existed in all those states, and then men were, in the absolute sense of the term, *bought*. If, therefore, for a short time after the abolition of slavery, this term was used in reference to the obtaining of the services of apprentices, etc., it is not at all to be wondered at; and instead of proving that slavery did not exist, it is conclusive evidence that but a short time before men were held as property. Why is it, permit us to ask, that the term *bought* is not now applied to a *man* in New-York, Connecticut, Pennsylvania? Simply because slavery has been abolished a sufficient length of time to have its application in this way go into disuse: And, if it is not already, it will soon be the case in New Jersey. In a short time, if Mr. W. should be called to publish a new and revised edition of his work, (if he does not revise this part of his argument entirely out of

it,) he will have to say of New Jersey, as well as of the other states he has mentioned, "A few years since servants were *bought*," etc.

Upon the latter part of page 19, our author breaks out in the following most eloquent strain : "Alas! for our leading politicians, if buying men makes them chattels. The Whigs say that Benton and Rives were bought by the administration with the surplus revenue; and the other party, that Clay and Webster were bought by the bank. The histories of the Revolution tell us that Benedict Arnold was bought with British gold. Does that make him an article of property?" All this is a fine flourish, and it proves, most conclusively, that words are sometimes used in a figurative, as well as in their literal, signification.

The question then returns, Where did our author learn that *bought-servants* were those who received pay from their employers beforehand, for permanent services? Strange as it may appear, not being able to obtain the desired information in the land of Canaan, he goes searching for it down into Egypt. Surely there must have been a sad famine in Canaan, or he would not have gone to Egypt to *buy* corn to *flesh up his lean* argument. But, since he has gone into that country, we must follow him there also: and no one can blame us if, before we return, we fill our sack from the same storehouse. "The transaction (says Mr. W.) between Joseph and the Egyptians gives a clue to the meaning attached to *buy* and *bought with money*. 'The Egyptians proposed to Joseph to become servants, and that he should *buy* them. When the bargain was closed Joseph said, 'Behold, I have bought you this day'—and yet it is plain that neither of the parties dreamed that the persons bought were in any sense articles of property, but merely that they became thereby obligated to labor for the government on certain conditions, as a compensation for the entire support of themselves and families during the famine. And the idea attached to 'buy us,' and, 'behold, I have bought you,' was merely the procuring of service voluntarily offered, and secured by contract as a return for value received: and not at all that the Egyptians were bereft of their personal ownership, and made articles of property. And this buying of services, (they were to give one-fifth part of their crops to Pharaoh,) is called in Scripture language, 'buying the persons.' This case deserves special notice, as it is the only one where the whole transaction of *buying servants* is detailed —the preliminaries, the process, the mutual acquiescence, and

the permanent relation resulting therefrom. In all other instances the mere fact is stated, without going into particulars. In this case the whole process is laid open. 1. The persons bought sold themselves, and of their own accord. 2. Obtaining permanently the services of a person, or even a portion of them, is called *buying* those persons. The objector, at the outset, assumes that servants were bought of third persons, and thence infers that they were articles of property. This is sheer assumption. Not a single instance is recorded of a servant being sold by any one but himself; not a case, either under the patriarchal or Mosaic systems, in which a master sold his servant."

Upon this long quotation we make the following remarks:—

First. Our author admits that the process of buying servants among the Hebrews is nowhere detailed; but the simple fact of their being bought is stated without explanation. His words are, "This case [that of the Egyptians] deserves special notice, as it is the only one where the whole transaction of buying servants is detailed. In all other instances the mere fact is stated, without entering into particulars." If this be true, how does Mr. W. know that Hebrew servants sold themselves, when the mere fact is stated that they were bought, without entering into particulars? Can he be sure that they were not bought of third persons?

Second. Our author quotes a transaction which occurred among the Egyptians, to show us what the custom was among the Israelites in the land of Canaan. Would testimony like this be received in a court of justice? Would the fact that Richard Roe stole a horse convict John Doe of that crime? Or, if it could be shown clearly that Richard had never been guilty of such an act, would that clear John from an indictment charging it upon him? Such testimony would not be produced by a well-educated lawyer; and, if offered, the court would rule it out.

Third. There is not the least shadow of evidence that the Egyptians did not sell themselves as slaves to Pharaoh. The contrary is "sheer assumption." We cannot help exclaiming with our author in a certain place, "How much might be saved if, in discussion, the thing to be proved were always *assumed*. To beg the question in debate, what economy of midnight oil! What a forestalling of premature wrinkles and grey hairs!" It is here assumed as a fact that the Egyptians did not sell themselves

as *slaves*, "not only in the *absence* of all *proof*, but in the face of evidence to the contrary." The Egyptians did not sell themselves to Pharaoh to be his subjects, for they were such before. Neither did they sell themselves to labor for the support of the government, for they were bound as citizens to support that—and their king as an absolute monarch had the right to exact whatever taxes and labor he pleased. Neither did they sell their services for the building of public works, such as canals, monuments, and the like—for they were not set about that kind of work, but were sent back to till their farms. Now, let me ask, if it was not to defend and support the government, nor to labor in the erection of public works, in what sense could they perform services for the government as such? True, they might till the ground, or work at mechanical arts for the personal benefit of their sovereign; but this would not be services rendered to the government. Besides, (as stated above,) Pharaoh had a right to exact of them, as citizens, all the services that he pleased. It is most evident that, by this transaction, the Egyptians became Pharaoh's in a sense they were not *before*. But how could they become more absolutely his than they were as his subjects, unless they became his *slaves*?

We think the narrative itself also, as contained in Gen. 47, proves conclusively that they sold themselves as *slaves*. It is there stated, that Joseph gave them corn for money, until all the corn in Egypt was spent. Then he gave them corn in exchange for all their cattle. And when their cattle were spent they came to Joseph, and said unto him, "We will not hide it from my lord, how that our money is spent. My lord also hath our herds of cattle: there is nought left in the sight of my lord, but our bodies and our lands. Wherefore shall we die before thine eyes, both we and our land? Buy us and our land for bread, and we and our land will be servants unto Pharaoh: and give us seed, that we may live, and not die, that the land be not desolate." To this proposition Joseph accedes; and we find him saying, verse 23, "Behold, I have *bought* you this day and your land for Pharaoh; lo, here is seed for you, and ye shall sow the land." From this relation it is evident that the Egyptians did not only sell their services, but their bodies themselves. "There is nought left in the sight of my lord, but our bodies [not our services] and our land. *Buy* us and our land," etc.

It is evident, moreover, that the Egyptians sold *themselves* in the same sense that they did their *land*. They and their land

stand coupled together, and the same word *nip*, to *buy*, governs both. If, therefore, they did not sell themselves as property, neither did they their land. But no one doubts that their land became Pharaoh's property ; and hence it follows that they must have become so. Joseph dealt with them as if they were *slaves*, and perfectly at his disposal—"he removed them to cities from one end of the borders of Egypt even unto the other"—thus he shifted them about as he pleased. The reason that they assign, verse 25, for agreeing to be Pharaoh's servants, shows that they were slaves : "And they said, Thou hast *saved* our *lives* ; let us find grace in the eyes of my lord, and we will be Pharaoh's servants." Among the ancients, prisoners taken in war were considered as belonging to the victors in such a sense that they might either slay them, or save their lives and keep them as *slaves*. It was undoubtedly by these government slaves, taken in war, that the ancient pyramids and other monuments of national grandeur were erected. From this custom it became the universal sentiment, that where the life of an individual was in the hands of another, so that he might take or preserve it, if he preserved it he might hold the individual as his *slave*. In the light of this sentiment we can see the force of the language, "Thou hast saved our lives, and we will be Pharaoh's servants." But if this be its import, it goes very far to show that they sold themselves as *slaves*.

Neither does the fact that he set them to tilling the land, and gave them four-fifths of its proceeds, prove that they were not *slaves*. It does show the benevolence of Joseph's heart, but it does not prove that he could not, if he had pleased, have set them about a very different work, and have assigned them a much less portion. If the fact that Joseph gave the people four-fifths of the product of their labor proves that they were *not held as property*, then the fact that he gave them four-fifths of the product of the land proves that it was *not held as property*. As, therefore, our opponents are not prepared to admit the latter, the only alternative left for them is, to grant the former.

Again : Mr. W. says the Egyptians "*sold themselves* of their *own accord*." In one sense this is true; in another it is not. If he means that they preferred servitude to freedom, it is untrue. If he means that they preferred servitude to starvation, it is undoubtedly correct. But is it right on this account to represent them as becoming *slaves voluntarily*? The manner in which the Egyptians were made willing to go into slavery, reminds us

of the course which some slaveholders are *represented* as taking to make their slaves willing to go to Africa, viz., by giving them fifty or one hundred *lashes* on their bare backs. Rather than receive any more, they consent to go to Liberia, and then are represented as voluntary colonists. So with the Egyptians: rather than starve to death, they consent to become slaves; and then our author declares, that they went voluntarily into servitude. Thus we have given this subject the "*special notice*" which our author desired: and the result is, that we find the Egyptians sold themselves as property to Pharaoh:—and if this is to be the rule by which to judge of the condition of *bought-servants* among the Hebrews, then indeed were they *slaves*.

But we have not gathered corn enough yet to be willing to leave Egypt. We have only emptied our author's sack; our own is not full. It would seem to us that Mr. W. could never have read the entire history of Joseph, or he would not have asserted that the case of the Egyptians "is the only one where the whole transaction of buying servants is detailed." Does our author reply that, to find the case of Joseph we have left the Hebrews and gone down into Egypt? He should recollect that we followed him down; and as he has led us into the country, we certainly have a right to all we can find there.

By consulting Gen. 39: 2, 3, we find that Joseph, when quite a youth, was a servant in the house of Potiphar, an Egyptian captain of the guard. The question very naturally arises, How came this beautiful and interesting young man in such a situation? Did he *sell himself* to his master? His previous history affords a full and satisfactory answer to these inquiries. We learn that he was kidnapped by his brethren in Canaan, and sold to Midian merchantmen for *twenty pieces of silver*. These men brought him down into Egypt, and sold him to Potiphar. "And Joseph was brought down into Egypt; and Potiphar, an officer of Pharaoh, captain of the guard, an Egyptian, *bought him* of the hands of the Ishmaelites, which had brought him down thither," Gen. 39: 1. It appears to us that this account is, if any thing, more particular than that of the Egyptians. Here we have the case of an individual who was sold into servitude by *third persons*, and *entirely against his will*. We may learn from this transaction, that "obtaining permanently" property in *persons*, and that from a third party, "is called *buying them in Scripture*." How does this brief and most interesting history accord with the assertion of our author,

that "not a single instance is recorded of a servant being *sold* by any but *himself?*" Here, in the very same country where Mr. Weld found an instance in which individuals sold themselves, we have found one where a servant was sold by a third party. And this account proves conclusively that servants were made merchandise in those countries. If this had not been the case, Joseph's brethren never would have thought of selling him. How absurd for a man to think of selling his fellow-man in England, or in the state of New-York! And if these merchantmen had not known that there was a market for slaves in Egypt, whither they were going, they never would have bought Joseph. And if it had not been the practice of the country, Potiphar would not have purchased him. So much for going to Egypt to prove that the Hebrews never held slaves. "Woe unto them that go down to Egypt for help; to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! Therefore shall the strength of Pharaoh be your *shame*, and the trust in the shadow of Egypt your *confusion*."

Our author, returning to Canaan, makes the following assertion: "Not a case is recorded, either under the patriarchal or Mosaic systems, in which a master sold his servant." For once, at least, he is correct in his statement. But it is equally true, that not a case is recorded under either of those systems, where a servant sold himself. Shall we therefore infer that they were *not sold at all?* But our author replies, "it is evident that servants sold themselves, from Lev. 25: 47: 'If a sojourner or stranger wax rich by thee, and thy brother that dwelleth by him wax poor and sell himself unto the stranger,'" etc.

Again, ver. 39: "And if thy brother that dwelleth by thee be waxen poor and be sold unto thee," etc., which our author says, should have been rendered "and *sold himself* unto thee." Suppose this to be the correct rendering, what do these passages prove? Not that a single individual ever sold himself, but simply that he might if he pleased; and in case an Israelite should do it, they mark out the way in which he was to be treated. We can produce two much stronger passages to show that servants were sold by third persons. Gen. 17: 12, "He that is born in the house, or *bought with money of any stranger*." V. 27, "And all the men of his house, born in the house, and *bought with money of the stranger*," etc. These passages contain no contingencies, such as, *if they should* be bought, or sold, but they present to our notice certain individuals who have been

bought with money ; and bought not of themselves, but of the stranger. Certainly here is a third party. From passages like these it must appear, to any unprejudiced reader, that servants were not only bought with money, but *born in the house*: i. e., they were born into the family as servants, or were servants from their birth.

One remark more and we have done with our second argument. We can find no instance recorded in the Old Testament, where a man sold his horses or camels. Shall we therefore conclude that they were *never sold*, or that they were not held as *property*? We might, with just the same reason that we have for concluding that masters never sold their servants, nor held them as property, because no such sales are recorded. The transfer of property from one to another, was not considered as a circumstance of sufficient importance to be recorded with the history of the church, unless connected with a series of events, which gave it more than ordinary consequence.

3. We think that the distinction which the Bible makes between *bond* or *bought* servants and *hired* servants, shows that the former were *slaves*. Exodus 12: 44, 45: "But every man's servant that is *bought* for *money*, when thou hast circumcised him, then shall he eat thereof. A foreigner and an *hired servant* shall not eat thereof."

Levit. 22: 10, 11: "There shall no stranger eat of the holy thing. But if the priest buy any soul with his money, he shall eat of it, and he that is born in his house; they shall eat of it."

Levit. 25: 39, 40: "And if thy brother that dwelleth by thee be waxen poor, and be sold unto thee, thou shalt not compel him to serve as a *bond-servant*: but as an *hired servant*, and as a sojourner, he shall be with thee, and shall serve thee unto the year of jubilee." In these passages we perceive a distinction made between *bond* or *bought* servants, and those who were *hired*, that would lead any candid man, who had not a purpose to answer, and was not determined to *torture* Scripture texts in order to make them subserve such a purpose, to conclude that the one class were servants *bought* as the *absolute property* of their masters ; and that the other class were *hired* servants, in the sense of *receiving wages for services rendered*. Our author makes the distinction between bought and hired servants to consist in the following things :

(a) "Hired servants were paid daily at the close of their work. Bought servants were paid in advance, (a reason for

their being called *bought*,) and those that went out at the seventh year, received a gratuity at the close of their period of service.”

(b) “The hired servant was paid in money; the bought servant received his gratuity at least in grain, cattle, and the product of the vintage.”

(c) “The hired servant lived by himself in his own family. The bought servant was a part of his master’s family.”

(d) “The hired servant supported his family out of his wages; the bought servant and family were supported by the master besides his wages.”

We are utterly at a loss to find out where our author obtained his information concerning several things contained in the above quotation. Where did he ascertain that bought servants were paid in advance, or paid at all, except in those cases where they sold themselves as slaves? Where did he ascertain that hired servants were paid in money? How does he know but that they received their wages in grain? Where did he ascertain that the hired servant lived by himself, in his own family, and not with the family of his employer, during the time of his engagement? Does he cite us a single text of Scripture in support of these assertions? Not one; nor could he: for no such text can be found. Does he refer us to history, ancient or modern, in proof of these assertions? Not to a single line; nor could he: for, as far as we know, Mr. Weld is the first man, since the days of Father Adam, who has ever mentioned the above particulars as distinguishing characteristics between hired and bought servants.

But let us lay these distinguishing traits mentioned by our author along side of Levit. 25: 39, 40: “If thy brother that dwelleth by thee be waxen poor, and be sold unto thee, thou shalt not compel him to serve as a bond-servant: but as an hired servant, and as a sojourner, shall he be with thee, and shall serve thee unto the year of jubilee;” i. e., ‘If your brother waxes poor, and is compelled to sell himself to you, you shall not treat him as you do your bond-servants, but you shall treat him like an hired servant.’ And, pray, what can this mean, unless it implies that, in whatever respects the hired servant is treated differently from the bond, in *all those respects* the brother shall be treated like the hired, and not like the bond-servant? That is, according to our author, he is not to be paid beforehand, but to receive his wages *daily*. He is to receive his pay in *money*, and not in *produce*, however much he may prefer the latter.

He was to be suffered to live by himself, in his *own family*, instead of forming a part of his master's family. This, we admit, would be a privilege. But the brother was not permitted to enjoy it. For we read, verse 41 of this chapter, "And then (i. e., after the year of jubilee,) shall he depart from thee, both he and his children with him, and shall return unto his *own family*, and unto the possessions of his fathers shall he return." Now, if he was always suffered to *live by himself in his own family*, how could he "*return unto his own family?*" Does not this verse show that, when he sold himself, he and his children went to live with his brother, who was then his master, and formed a part of his family; and when he was released, upon the year of jubilee, he returned to his former place of abode, and re-established his family circle. We leave it for the candid reader to judge. But a brother's crowning privilege, when reduced to be the servant of his brother, is yet to come:—He was to *support his family out of his wages*, and not have them supported by his master, *besides his wages*: i. e., according to Mr. Weld, when a Jew bought a heathen, he was compelled not only to pay him wages, but to support his family besides. But if he bought his brother, because he was his brother and out of pure kindness to him, he was allowed to pay him wages, but prohibited from supporting his family besides. Let him believe this who can: we cannot. But the absurdity of our author will appear, if possible, still more glaring from the following quotations:—"A careful investigation of the condition of *hired* and *bought servants* shows, that the latter were as a class superior to the former, were more trustworthy, had greater privileges, and occupied, in every respect, (other things being equal,) a higher station in society." Again, "None but the lowest class seem to have engaged as *hired servants*." Now let us see to what conclusion this language of our author must drive us. This will appear from just two remarks:

The Jew is commanded, (Levit. 25: 39, 40,) if his brother is compelled to sell himself to him, to treat him not as a *bond-servant*, but as an *hired servant*.

Our author affirms that bond-servants were of a much higher order, and enjoyed far greater privileges, than hired servants, and that the latter were from the lowest class. It follows, therefore, that a Hebrew, when he bought his brother, was to treat him, not as one of the highest and most privileged class of servants, but as one of the lowest and meanest class. Such a com-

clusion as this no one will believe. How much more rational the idea that *bought servants* were *slaves*, belonging as *property* to their masters, and were liable to be treated as such. That *hired servants* were a much more privileged class, who owned themselves and worked for wages, and were not subject to the rigorous treatment which *bought servants* frequently experienced. That, therefore, when a Hebrew held his brother as a *bought servant*, he was commanded to grant him the privileges and bestow upon him the treatment of a *hired servant*.

This view of the subject corresponds with the plain common sense import of the above cited passage of Scripture. Any other view does not. This, too, coincides with the reason assigned by Jehovah himself, why a brother bond-servant should be treated, not like a *bond*, but an *hired servant*. Levit. 25: 43, "Thou shalt not rule over him with *rigor*." As if he had said, "You not unfrequently rule over your bond-servants with rigor, but you are not permitted to treat your hired servants thus: they are not so completely under your control. If, therefore, a brother sell himself unto thee, he is to be treated as an *hired*, and not as a *bond-servant*."

4. We argue that slavery existed among the Hebrews from the fact that they were commanded to let their servants go *free* upon every fiftieth year—the year of jubilee. As its very name implies, it was a season of the greatest joy. In that year new privileges were granted to all; but more especially great benefits were conferred upon the poor, such as previously they had never enjoyed. As the greatest privilege that could possibly be conferred upon their servants, they were set at liberty. But this would not have been considered such a privilege, unless they had been slaves. What a rich blessing it would be to our servants to have a fixed period when all the domestics in the state of New-York should be turned out of employ! Such an event would be dreaded as a scourge, instead of counted as a favor by our servants.

But, if there should be a time fixed when all the *slaves* in America were to be set at *liberty*, and be provided for as they were among the Jews, such a period might well be kept as a *jubilee*, not only by the slaves, but also by this whole nation.

5. We argue that the servants among the Jews were held as *slaves* from the language of Paul in Galatians 4: 1. "Now I say that the heir, so long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all." That is, (as we under-

stand it,) a child is subject to his father in the same sense that a servant is subject to his master, so long as he is a minor, or until he becomes of age. The question then arises, How were children at that age of the world held by their parents? History, both sacred and profane, returns the answer, that they were held as *absolute property*. They were so entirely the property of the parent, that for a long time among the Romans, the father could take the life of his child. And among the Hebrews, although life could not be taken without having the cause brought before the judges, still, in every other respect, children were considered the absolute possession of their parents. They were held so entirely as property, that they might be taken in payment of debts. The Hebrew law made a man's children liable to satisfy the demands of his creditors. This is evident from the following passages of Scripture: 1 Kings 4: 1, "Now their cried a certain woman of the wives of the sons of the prophets unto Elisha, saying, Thy servant my husband is dead, and thou knowest that thy servant did fear the Lord; and the creditor is come to take unto him my two sons to be bond-men." Job 24: 9, "They pluck the fatherless from the breast, and take a pledge of the poor." From these premises we derive the following argument to show that servants were held as slaves:

1. The apostle declares that children, while they were minors, were held by their parents as servants were by their masters.

2. We learn from certain passages of Scripture, which have been quoted, that minor children were considered the *absolute property* of their parents.

It follows, therefore, that masters held their *servants* as *absolute property*. Here some one may feel disposed to ask, Does not the writer make the child, during his minority, a slave? Certainly not. The child is excluded by our broad definition of slavery. We defined slavery to be, the holding property in man in such a manner as to give the master entire control of all that the slave is, and all that he has, as well *after he becomes of age as before*. The fact, therefore, that the child, when he arrived at manhood, was no longer considered the property of his parent, takes him out from under this definition of slavery. We shall close this branch of our argument with a quotation from "Maimonides, who wrote in Egypt about seven hundred years ago, a contemporary with Jarchi, and who stands with him at the head of Jewish writers." As this same quotation is

cited by our author, we are certain its validity will not be questioned. He says, "Whether a servant be born in the power of an Israelite, or whether he be purchased from the heathen, the master is to bring them both into the covenant. But he that is in the house is entered on the eighth day; and he that is bought with money, on the day on which the master receives him, unless the *slave* be unwilling. For if the master receive a grown *slave*, and he be *unwilling*, his master is to bear with him, to seek to win him over by instruction, and by love and kindness, for one year. After which, should he refuse so long, it is prohibited to keep him longer than a year. And the master must send him back to the stranger from whence he came. For the God of Jacob will not accept any other than the worship of a willing heart." If slavery did not exist among the Hebrews, why should this Jewish writer speak as he does about the *slave* of an Israelitish master? Again, if bought servants were simply those who sold their services and received pay beforehand, why send such a servant *back to the stranger*, in case he refused to be circumcised and adopt the Jewish religion? Why not dismiss him from the master's employ, and let him go where he pleased? The truth is, this quotation alone would be sufficient to convince any candid, unprejudiced mind, that slavery did exist among the Hebrews. Here, then, we bring our argument upon this part of the subject to a close; not because it is exhausted, but because we think that more than sufficient has already been said to establish the position that *slavery was practised among the Jews in Old Testament times*.

III. We are to show that the existence of slavery under the old dispensation *affords no apology for slaveholding at the present day, nor is any argument in its favor*.

The simple fact of the existence of any practice at any time does not prove that it is right. If so, there would be no such thing as wrong in this, or any other world. If so, the existence of *theft, robbery, and murder*, proves that they are *righteous acts*.

Nor does the fact that certain practices exist in the church prove that they are blameless. Else it would prove the innocence of deeds which have caused the saints to weep tears of bitterest grief in secret places, and the deep stain of which had to be washed out by the blood of Jesus, before they could be welcomed by angels home to those mansions which Christ had prepared for their reception. The fact that slaveholding was

practiced in Old Testament times does not prove that it *was* or *is right*, unless we can go further and show that the Old Testament *upholds* and *sustains* a system of slavery. This we are bold to affirm never has been, and never can be shown. The argument to the contrary is clear and convincing. In unfolding this argument I would remark :

1. That, at the creation, nothing belonged to man. It was all the property of the Creator, and under his entire control. In fact, as man was the most perfect, so he was the very last of Jehovah's workmanship. When man became a living soul, and first opened his eyes upon the beautiful objects of nature that surrounded him, he had no dominion over the least thing which he beheld. He was but one among the many creatures of God, all subject to his will, but not subject to each other. Man was not created with a sceptre in his hand, in such a sense, that with his very existence he received authority to rule. By nature, he had no more right to rule over the beasts of the field than they had to rule over him. True, he was far above them in the scale of being, but that gave him no right to dominion. If it did, then the fact that angels are far exalted above man gives them a right to dominion over him. The truth is, that all the power which man possesses over any thing on earth must be delegated to him by the Almighty, and that, not by any law of nature, but by *statute law*. It is a well known legal principle that, where powers are delegated in this way, the delegatee is confined to the very words of the statute. He can exercise no *implied* or *inferential* authority, but must be guided, in all his conduct, by the plain letter of the law under which he acts. The question then arises, Is there in the Old Testament any statute delegating to man any authority; and if so, what is it? In Gen. 1: 28, 29, we read, "And God blessed them, (mankind,) and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat." Here, then, we have the general statute delegating certain powers to man. By it the earth was given to him for his farm, the vegetable kingdom for his diet, and he obtained authority over the whole brute creation in such a sense that they became his servants. But such was the strictness

of construction given to this statute that the word ‘*dominion*’ was considered as giving no authority to man over the life of any creature, but was construed in its strictest and most proper signification, that of *rule* or *government*. Hence, for centuries, animals were not slain except by God’s appointment to be offered in sacrifice to himself. This statute remained the same without the least addition until after the flood, when the following clause was added, Gen. 9: 3, 4: “Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things. But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat.” Here we have the whole of the law by which God has delegated general authority to man. There is not another line added in all the Bible. But not a word is said in this statute about any authority which man is to exercise over his fellow man: much less is he empowered by it to hold his fellow as *property*. As, therefore, man has no power over any thing except it be given him by God, and as God in his law delegating authority to man, has given him no power over his fellow-man, it follows that he has none, and of course the Old Testament cannot sustain and encourage the exercise of such power. We are, therefore, bound to conclude that the Old Testament does *not sustain a system of slavery*.

2. There is still another way in which man receives power from God to exercise authority—and power received in this way is to be exercised exclusively over his fellow-man. It is by a direct appointment of Jehovah himself, by which certain and *specified* individuals, or *classes* of individuals, become his *government-officers* to enforce his laws, and execute their penalties. The grant of power previously mentioned is that of the Creator and sole owner giving to man for his use and benefit the *right of property* in the *earth* with its *products*—and in the *brute creation*. The grant now under consideration, is that which the supreme moral Governor of the intelligent universe bestows upon certain portions of the human family, by which they become his *special agents* to enforce the laws he has enacted, and execute the penalties he has pronounced. These special agents act, not by any authority of their own, but by the authority of their Sovereign, and under a commission or warrant made out by him as such. Any official act which they perform is not considered as their act, but as the act of their Ruler, which he performs through them. These officers may be appointed to superintend the general operations of the government in certain

districts; or their power may be *limited* to particular branches; or they may be specially appointed to a specific work—but in the case last mentioned their power always ceases when their work is accomplished. These government agents have nothing to direct them in the exercise of their authority but their commission made out by their Sovereign—and they are not, upon any condition, to exceed the powers granted by the *letter* of that instrument. We have a most perfect illustration of this point in the case of a sheriff. An individual is sentenced to die. Who shall execute the sentence? If done by an unofficial person it is murder. It must be performed by the sheriff; and unless he does it under a government warrant, and at the time, and in the manner therein specified, it is murder in him also. These strict regulations of our statute law are founded in common sense and righteousness, and they undoubtedly obtain in the Divine government. The Scriptures abound with examples of individuals, who were appointed by Jehovah as his government officers. Moses and Samuel and David, and many others, were God's *prime ministers* among the Jews. All lawfully appointed rulers are said in Scripture to be ordained of God to execute his laws and do his pleasure; and whenever they make any laws of their own contrary to those which God has published, they act without authority, and commit sin against the King of kings, from whom they have received their appointment.

Again. The Israelites under Joshua were commissioned to execute God's sentence upon the Canaanites. We may find their warrant contained in Deut. 20: 16 and 17: "But of the cities of these people, which the Lord thy God doth give thee for an inheritance, thou shalt save alive nothing that breatheth: but thou shalt utterly destroy them, viz. the Hittites, and the Amorites, the Canaanites, and the Perizzites, the Hivites, and the Jebusites, as the Lord thy God hath commanded thee." This death-warrant against the inhabitants of Canaan was directed to the *Israelites*, and to them *alone*; and it empowered them, and them only, to execute the sentence. So also the nations intended are *called by name* in as particular a manner as names could possibly be inserted in a death-warrant under our statute law.

Once more. Saul and his army were commissioned to execute the Lord's sentence upon the Amalekites. The commission

is contained in the first three verses of the fifteenth chapter of 1st Samuel. "Samuel also said unto Saul, The Lord sent me to anoint thee to be king over his people, over Israel: now therefore hearken thou unto the voice of the words of the Lord. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, I remember that which Amalek did to Israel, how he laid wait for him in the way when he came up from Egypt. Now go and smite Amalek, and utterly destroy all that they have, and spare them not; but slay both man and woman, infant and sucking, ox and sheep, camel and ass." In so literal a manner did Saul construe this death-warrant against the Amalekites directed to him from the Lord, that, when he went to execute it, he said unto the Kenites who dwelt among the Amalekites, and whose name was not contained in this warrant, "Go, depart, get ye down from among the Amalekites, lest I destroy you with them." And when Saul yielded to temptation, and did not execute his commission to the letter, but saved Agag their king, and certain of their flocks and herds alive, the Lord was wroth with him and rejected him from being king, and Samuel took Agag and hewed him in pieces before the Lord.

Jehovah attaches so much importance to the receiving of a commission duly made out by himself, before any one can lawfully execute a sentence which he has pronounced against a person or people, that in several instances he declares that he will bring up against the nation of Israel a certain monarch to execute his sentence upon them, and that afterwards he would punish this same monarch for his great wickedness in performing this act. The reader is referred to Isaiah, ch. 10, Jeremiah 25: 8-13 inclusive—also the fifty-first chapter of the same book—Daniel 1: 1 and 2, and 5: 30 and 31, in proof of this statement. By a careful perusal of these portions of Scripture it will be perceived,

1. That God pronounced sentence of destruction against Jerusalem and its inhabitants, and named the king of Babylon as the person by whom it should be executed.

2. In his providence he brought up this king, and he did execute this sentence.

3. Because he came up not intending to serve God, but himself, and *without any special warrant*, the Lord considered him as sinning with a high hand, and punished him for it with a dreadful destruction. From which we may learn that, if a people are under sentence from the Lord, and if, in his provi-

dence, he brings up a nation against them to execute this sentence, still, if that nation act without his *special warrant*, he will consider them guilty, and punish them for their conduct.

In the light of these general principles let us examine the only two passages of Scripture which, after we have admitted that slavery did exist in Old Testament times, can be adduced, with the least plausibility, to prove that it is sustained and justified by the Old Testament. The first is contained in Genesis 9 : 24, 25 : "And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his *younger* son had done to him. And he said, Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren." Upon this passage we remark :

First. It was a mere *prophetic* curse, as the blessing contained in the two succeeding verses was a *prophetic* blessing; and as such it does not justify, in the least, any measures adopted by the parties themselves through which it is fulfilled. If so, then the fact that God said to Abraham, "Thy seed shall be in bondage, and they shall afflict them four hundred years," may be plead in justification of the oppressive course pursued by Pharaoh towards the Israelites; and the prediction of God to Rebecca concerning her two sons, "That the elder should serve the younger," justifies the means used by the several parties to bring it about; and the fact that God pronounced his curse upon Jerusalem and her inhabitants, and declared that he would bring the king of Babylon against them, and that he should make their land an utter desolation, proves that the haughty monarch did right, when he marched his armies against the holy city, and fulfilled to the letter the predicted curse: and if so, then God was unjust in wresting from him his sceptre and giving it to the Medo-Persians as a chastisement for that act. The truth is, as stated above, that curses, or blessings, pronounced by the patriarchs upon their children, were merely *prophetic*, and decided nothing as to the lawfulness of the means by which they should be fulfilled.

Second. Those who plead this curse in justification of *negro-slavery* take it for granted,

1. That the prediction refers to the bondage of individuals rather than to the condition of a nation *tributary* to another, and in that sense its servants; whereas, it would seem the latter was intended, judging from the condition of those nations from that time to the present, and from the directions given to Israel in reference to their treatment of those nations of Canaan, which, upon

certain conditions, they were to save alive, as contained in Deut. 20: 10, 11: "And when thou comest nigh unto a city to fight against it, then proclaim peace unto it. And it shall be, that if it make thee an answer of peace and open unto thee, then it shall be, that all the people that is found therein shall be tributaries unto thee, and shall serve thee."

2. They assume it as a fact, that this curse was pronounced upon all the family of Ham, whereas the Bible confines it to Canaan. We know that commentators have labored to prove that it extended to Ham's other sons; and thus they have mystified and wrapped in midnight darkness this portion of Scripture. They have first ascertained that many of the unfortunate inhabitants of Africa, who were descended from other sons of Ham, have been reduced to slavery; and then they have gone back to this prophecy, and endeavored, by every means in their power, to extend its import so as to make it cover this historical fact. If the negro race had never been enslaved, our keen-sighted doctors of divinity would never have seen inserted in the prophecy, "Cursed be Canaan," the names of Mizraim and Cush. These names must have been inserted with ink *invisible*, which can only be made to appear by exposure to the *scorching* rays of *Africa's burning sun*. If the fact that many of the descendants of Cush have been reduced to a state of bondage, proves that they were embodied in this curse, then the fact that many of the descendants of Shem and Japheth have been reduced to bondage, proves that they were embraced in it likewise. Besides, if this curse was pronounced upon all Ham's posterity, it has never been fulfilled. The sons of Ham settled the Egyptian and Assyrian empires; and conjointly with Shem, the Persian; and afterwards, to some extent, the Grecian and Roman. We believe it never was pretended by any one, that the history of these nations affords any verification of this prophecy. But, if our interpretation is given to the passage, and it is confined to the posterity of Canaan, their history, for more than three thousand years, is a record of its fulfilment. "First, they were made tributary by the Israelites. Then Canaan was the servant of Shem. Afterwards, by the Medes and Persians. Then Canaan was the servant of Shem, and, in part, of the other sons of Ham. Afterwards, by the Macedonians, Grecians, and Romans, successively. Then Canaan was the servant of Japheth *mainly*, and *secondarily*, of the other sons of Ham. Finally, they were subjugated by the Ottoman dynasty, under which they yet re-

main. Thus Canaan is now the servant of Shem and Japheth, and the other sons of Ham."

This interpretation makes the passage perfectly plain and easy to be understood. It was Ham, the father of Canaan, that saw the nakedness of his father, during his intoxication, and exposed it. "And when Noah awoke, he knew what his *younger* son had done," his *second* son, Ham. And he said, (probably to Ham,) "Cursed be Canaan," etc. But why pronounce the curse upon Canaan, instead of Ham? For the simple reason that, if it had been pronounced upon Ham, it would have been considered as expanding itself upon all his posterity; and as this was not to be the case, but it was to be confined to his descendants in the line of Canaan, it was, therefore, perfectly proper that the curse should be pronounced upon him, instead of his father. It is as though Noah had said, "My second son Ham, because you have done this wicked act, I am inspired by God to inform you that your descendants in the *line of Canaan* shall be *cursed*—servants of servants shall they be unto their brethren." This plain and obvious rendering dissipates all that mystery which has been thrown around this passage.

But, let us suppose, for the sake of argument, that this curse rests upon the sons of Africa, and marks them as distinctly as their sable complexion: let us suppose that it rests upon them as a sentence from God, which he is executing, and will continue to execute. We would then ask, Have European and American slaveholders been appointed by God, as his *special agents or government officers*, to execute this sentence? If so, where is the instrument of their appointment? We have seen, by an examination of the subject, that whenever God has appointed persons or nations executive officers to inflict the sentence of his wrath upon individuals, he has delivered to them a commission or warrant, which not only contained their appointment, but also marked out, in no equivocal terms, the work they were to perform. Let slaveholders of the present day show their divine warrant, and every mouth will be stopped. But, until they can point us to this instrument, we must think, even if we could read the sentence, "Cursed be Canaan," etc., written in letters of fire upon the forehead of every African, that they have no right to become executioners of Jehovah's will, and attempt, without any warrant from their Sovereign, to inflict his sentence.

But it may be said, that the fact that they are under sentence,

and that slaveholders are executing this sentence, proves that they are appointed so to do. Then the fact that the inhabitants of Jerusalem were under sentence of death and captivity, and that the king of Babylon executed this sentence, proves that he was duly authorized so to do, and God conducted unrighteously when he dashed them to pieces like a potter's vessel.

Again. The whole human family are under sentence of death: "Death has passed upon all men, because all have sinned;" and it is perfectly evident that every murderer executes this sentence upon the murdered individual. Now, according to the foregoing sentiment, the fact that this man was under sentence of death, and that the murderer executed this sentence, shows that he was duly authorized so to do; and of course was not guilty for the act. Away, then, with your gibbets to hang up these high sheriffs of Jehovah's government!

We think, by this time, it must be sufficiently evident to every candid reader, that unless an individual can show a *special warrant* from the Almighty, he has no right to hold his fellow-man in bondage, even if that man is under a divine sentence of *perpetual slavery*.

The last passage to be examined under this head, is contained in Levit. 25: 44-46. "Both thy bond-men, and thy bondmaids, which thou shalt have, shall be of the heathen that are round about you; of them shall ye *buy* bond-men and bondmaids. Moreover of the children of the strangers that do sojourn among you, of them shall ye *buy*, and of their families that are with you, which they begat in your land: and they shall be your possession. And ye shall take them as an inheritance for your children after you, to inherit them for a possession; they shall be your bond-men *for ever*: but over your brethren, the children of Israel, ye shall not rule one over another with rigor." Our own opinion of this passage will appear in a subsequent part of this article.

There are but two views which can make this passage appear, in the least, to sustain slaveholding at the present day. The first is, that it was a special *warrant* directed to the children of Israel, authorizing them to execute the sentence of slavery upon the nations of Canaan who surrounded them. The argument drawn from this view of the passage, thrown into propositions, would stand thus:

(a.) The Canaanites were cursed of God, and sentenced to *perpetual slavery*.

(b.) The Israelites received a *special warrant* from God, and were thereby empowered to execute this sentence and hold them as slaves.

(c.) Hence it follows, that it was lawful for the Israelites to enslave the Canaanites.

(d.) The people of Africa are under sentence of *perpetual slavery*.

(e.) Therefore the other nations of the earth have a right to enslave them and hold them as *property*.

Alas! that the truth will not suffer us to insert a proposition between the fourth and fifth, stating that the nations of the earth have received a special warrant to execute this sentence! Then, if the premises were correct, the argument would be perfectly conclusive. But, as it now stands, there is so deep and broad a chasm between the premises and conclusion, that a man of *any perception* would not dare to leap it.

Let us apply this mode of reasoning to another case, and see how it will hold.

(a.) The Amalekites were under sentence of death from the Lord.

(b.) Saul and his army received a *special warrant* to execute this sentence, and slay that whole nation.

(c.) Hence it was lawful for Saul and his army to put to the sword and utterly destroy that people.

(d.) The inhabitants of Canada are all under sentence of death from the Lord.

(e.) Therefore it would be lawful for us to head an army, march into Canada, and put them all to the sword. Certainly this argument is just as conclusive as the other; and it shows most clearly that this mode of reasoning will not answer: it is entirely false and inconclusive.

The other view of this passage is, that it is not a special warrant to execute a sentence, but a *grant* made by God to the children of Israel, giving them the *privilege to hold the Canaanites as slaves*. But how can this prove that it is right for us, at the present day, to hold slaves? Does a grant given to the Israelites to hold the Canaanites as slaves, make it right for Americans and Europeans, who have NO SUCH GRANT, to hold the Africans as slaves? God gave Israel the title deed of Canaan, and commanded them to go and take possession of it. Does that give us the right, WITHOUT ANY SUCH TITLE DEED, to dispossess our neighbor of his farm?

We perceive, then, that these passages, when taken in their strongest and most unfavorable interpretation, form no argument, and afford no apology, for slavery at the present day.

3. We argue that the Old Testament does not sustain slavery from the fact, that it is evident that God did all he could consistently, in that *dark age* of the world, to meliorate the condition of the slave, and to abolish slavery from his church. We say, *all he could consistently*, for he has always dealt with man, according to his situation, as he was able to bear. The light of truth has been poured in upon the human family with a steady and continual increase, according to the strength of their moral perception, in such a manner as to enlighten their path, without dazzling their vision. God has dealt out the light of truth to the moral man just as he does the light of the sun to the natural man. The daybreak and morning twilight preceded noonday splendor. And how infinitely wise this arrangement! If midnight darkness were succeeded by mid-day brightness, it would pain, enfeeble, and destroy the vision of man. So if the broad blaze of truth had been let in upon the human mind at once, man could not have endured it. Hence the Saviour says to his disciples, "I have many things to say unto you, but you cannot bear them now." When, therefore, we say that *God did all he could consistently*, etc., we mean *consistently* with the *degree of light* which was then bestowed upon the church. When Jehovah had given her all the light that she could then bear, if this amount of light was not sufficient to render it best for him at that time to attempt the removal of certain existing evils, he bore with, or, in Scripture language, *winked at*, those evils, until such time as he could bestow light sufficient to render an effort for their immediate removal consistent. Nor did the practice of those evils by members of the church, under such circumstances, prevent God's taking them into communion with himself, and granting them many spiritual favors. Hence he communed with Abraham, and Jacob, and David, and Solomon, and many other eminent members of the Jewish church, although they practised polygamy and slavery, and were suffered, on account of the *darkness of the age and the hardness of their hearts*, to put away their wives for any cause. If a man stumble, at twilight, with his eyes open to improve every ray that falls upon his path, he should be pitied, raised up, and aided on his journey. But if he shut his eyes against the full blaze of perfect day, and rush upon the brink of a

precipice, he deserves to be punished for his *rashness* and *impiety*. Hence it is written, “The times of this ignorance God winked at, but now he commandeth all men everywhere to repent.”

It is worthy of remark that, in the country where God first established his church, slavery has always existed in a much milder form than in many other countries. Among the Greeks and Romans, the condition of a slave was dreadful beyond description. He was not known in law, but was, if possible, degraded beneath the brute. He was entirely at the disposal of his master, and so perfectly subject to his caprice, that he might nail him to a cross, or put him to death in any other way.

But in the East the condition of slaves was generally much more tolerable. They were frequently treated as companions. They were suffered to sit at the same table with their master, to marry his daughters, and not unfrequently become heirs to his estate. Horne says, “When the Eastern people have no male issue, they frequently marry their daughters to their slaves; and the same practice appears to have obtained among the Hebrews, as we read in 1 Chron. 2: 34, 35: ‘Now Sheshan had no sons, but daughters. And Sheshan had a servant, an Egyptian, whose name was Jarha, and Sheshan gave his daughter to Jarha his servant to wife.’ In Barbary, the rich people, when childless, have been known to purchase young slaves, to educate them in their own faith, and sometimes to adopt them for their own children. The greatest men of the Ottoman empire are well known to have been originally slaves, brought up in the seraglio; and the Mameluke sovereigns of Egypt were originally slaves. Thus the advancement of the Hebrew captive Joseph to be viceroy of Egypt, and of Daniel, another Hebrew captive, to be chief minister of state in Babylon, corresponds with the modern usage of the East.”

Mr. Stephens, who has recently published an account of his travels in Egypt, Arabia Petræa, and the Holy-land, says: “In the East slavery exists now precisely as it did in the days of the patriarchs. The slave is received into the family of a Turk in a relation more confidential and respectable than that of an ordinary domestic—and when liberated, which very often happens, stands upon the same footing with a free man. The curse does not rest upon him forever—he may sit at the same board, dip his hand in the same dish, and, if there are no other impediments, may marry his master’s daughters.” But mild as

slavery was originally in the East, God under the Old Testament dispensation did much to render it still milder, and finally to give the slave his liberty. He commanded that he should be brought within the pale of the covenant, be circumcised, and religiously educated. His rights were guarded by the laws of the land. He was to be treated with humanity, admitted to the Jewish festivals, and suffered to rest upon their holy days: and, if a slave was *maltreated* and *maimed* by his master, he had his *redress at law*. To steal a man was punished with death—and the Hebrews were forbidden to buy slaves of their own people, and were ordered to confine their purchases to those heathen nations which surrounded them. This we suppose to be the whole import of Levit. 25: 44–46. It is as if God had said, “Although, on account of the darkness of the age, I cannot consistently entirely abolish slavery, still I can and will regulate it, so as to prevent the Hebrews from *buying their brethren as slaves*; and I therefore order that, from this time forth as long as slavery shall exist among them, they confine their purchase of slaves to the heathen who surround them, and that they take from them *alone* bondmen for themselves and their children.” If the reader should be dissatisfied with this exposition of the passage, he will please to recollect, that we have previously shown that, with the most unfavorable rendering which can possibly be given, it affords no argument for slavery at the present day. Finally, all the slaves among the Jews were to be liberated every fiftieth year—the *year of Jubilee*. One cannot help remarking the great difference between slavery as it then existed among the Hebrews, and as it now exists in this “*land of the free*”—a difference consisting not in the *tenure by which the slaves are held*, but in the *treatment they often receive*, and the *legal enactments concerning them*.

There are two passages of Scripture in the Old Testament, which in effect *deny* the *right* of man to hold *property* in his fellow-man. One is that which prohibits a Hebrew to return a runaway slave to his master, Deut. 23: 15 and 16: “Thou shalt not deliver unto his master the servant which has escaped from his master unto thee: he shall dwell with thee, even among you in the place which he shall choose, in one of thy gates where it liketh him best: thou shalt not oppress him.” God commanded his people to restore to the lawful owner all lost and strayed property, which they might find, such as oxen, asses, sheep, raiment, etc. Why then did he prohibit the re-

turning of a *runaway slave*? Because Jehovah saw that, if by his authority the escaped servant was to be returned to his master, it would be admitting that the master had a right to hold property in man; and he knew that he had no such right, for he had never granted it to him.

The other is that table of the law, or ten commandments, which was given amid thunderings and lightnings, and fire and smoke, and the sound of a trumpet from Mount Sinai. Without stopping to dwell upon these commands separately as they stand in the decalogue, let us take their *summary* as given by our Saviour. "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and thy neighbor as thyself." Suppose that this law were written upon every heart, so as to become the actuating principle of the life, who doubts but that it would demolish to its foundation the practice of reducing men to a state of slavery and holding them as property? Thus we perceive that the Old Testament is so far from sustaining, that it actually *denies* the right of man to hold property in his fellow-man. Is it still said that the fact that slavery existed in the church in Old Testament times proves that it is right? Then the fact that polygamy, idolatry, and adultery, existed in the church in Old Testament times proves that they are right. The truth is, there is not a single line, word, nor syllable, in the whole Old Testament, when properly understood, that goes to *sustain any system of slavery*.

---

## A R T I C L E IV.

### THE TRAINING OF THE WILL.

By Rev. Pharcellus Church, Rochester, N. Y.

OUR materials of knowledge resolve themselves into two classes—those which relate to the mind itself, and those which relate to subjects extraneous to the mind. The interior life of the mind opens to a universe of thought and investigation. It is a universe which no eye but our own and that of Him with whom we have to do can fully explore. Each mind, like each orb of

immensity, has an isolated existence, being endowed with the power of seclusion from its associate minds, except as it brings out and exposes its accumulations of thought and sentiment, through the channel of language and other means of mental intercommunication. Nor can one lose his interest in these component elements of his own conscious individuality. His language is framed to give them expression ; they beam through his eyes, his gestures, and all his points of physical contact with other beings ; and his set discourses are but the elaborated products of his intellectual and spiritual life.

And yet, strange as it may seem, there exists a general prejudice against making what passes under the eye of our consciousness a subject of investigation and philosophy. How often is it said of one who attempts it, O, he is quite metaphysical ; he deals in what nobody can understand ; he is a dry and pointless reasoner, who would do well to emerge from this murky region into the open daylight of things clear and tangible. Whereas the exercises of our minds are as substantial materials of thought, as the properties of a rock or a tree ; and, provided our modes of reasoning are careful, accurate, and inductive, may be made as clear and as available to the ends of knowledge.

The more refined and exalted a nature, the more valuable are its phenomena as elements of science. The knowledge of vegetable life is more to be prized than that of unorganized matter : the animal economy affords richer contributions still ; but those of mind, as including its moral and immortal tendencies, transcend all others, because they afford the nearest approaches to the Infinite Mind, the source of all being and all truth.

What, therefore, has brought metaphysical science into such disrepute ? Is it not something constrained and unnatural in our modes of investigation ? The facts of consciousness have been abandoned, in order to follow up untenable theories of mental and moral causality, or to settle *a priori* conclusions as to what ought to be the working of the spiritual machine ; the consequence of which has been, the adoption of principles at variance with our experience. These things have produced the impression, to some extent, that, in this department, what is true in theory is false in practice, and what is unanswerable in the abstract is untenable in the concrete. Too much labor has been expended in settling the question of the will's determination, or in ascertaining why a moral cause causes as it does cause, rather

than otherwise, an inquiry which will probably forever elude the present encumbered powers of human scrutiny and investigation. The psychological phenomena, as they actually exist or as we experience them in ourselves, are as fair a subject for analysis as the soils which are favorable to the growth of wheat or other grains. But the question why those phenomena should be as they are rather than otherwise, or why the will should give being to one class of volitions rather than another, is quite as difficult as to determine the ultimate reasons why a given combination of earthy substances should be more favorable to the growth of wheat than any other combination. The actual phenomena in mind as well as matter are the sole material of human science. Till we act on this principle, our attempts in the metaphysics will be like those of certain mechanical geniuses to find out a perpetual motion, spending our noblest efforts to do what cannot be done.

A few particulars in reference to the will itself and its development will occupy our attention in this article. We shall notice,

- I. *The relation of the will to the other faculties.*
- II. *The object of its training; and*
- III. *The manner of its training.*

Though I speak of the *will* as doing this or that, yet I mean the agent exercising his power of will. It is common to speak of what intellect can achieve and the heart can feel, when we mean simply the capacity of the agent as manifested through those faculties. The *training* of the will refers to the education of those powers of our nature which manifest themselves through this faculty.

I. We are to speak of *the relation of the will to the other faculties.*

When we speak of the will, we mean that power of putting forth voluntary actions of which we are conscious. It is the basis of the mind's active causality. There is a broad foundation of distinction between willing and simple sensation or motion. In the one we are conscious of being active and responsible, while in the other we are passive and irresponsible. In the one we produce such and such effects, while in the other we are the subject of effects which spring up spontaneously. Those effects which flow from us in consequence of our willing or choosing them, therefore, we class together and refer them to a distinct faculty which we call the *will*.

We must be careful, however, to distinguish between those effects themselves and their cause. The effects are always manifested through the channel of some faculty of body or mind. Walking, running, looking, listening, handling, smelling, tasting, and the like, are effects of which previous volitions in the mind are the cause. And our intellectual exercises of thinking, remembering, reasoning, judging, imagining, and the like, are to a great extent mere effects which are to be referred to volitions as their cause. The same is also true of desiring, hoping, fearing, loving, hating, envying, and the other exercises of the heart or sensibility. Let any one separate from these exercises all idea of the will in designing, purposing, or willing them, and they sink into simple sensations, like that of a pain in one's tooth, or the sense of seeing from the contact of light with the retina of the eye. To determine the exact point at which a sensation acquires a voluntary character, is perhaps impossible. But still, that our sensations are modified by our volitions, or that they are to a great extent the effect of which the will is the cause, no one can doubt. And it is necessary, in reasoning on this subject, to keep distinctly before our view the theoretical difference between a volition itself, and the forms under which it is manifested in the faculties of the mind and in the organs of the body. This prepares us to observe,

1. *That the will stands related to the other faculties as the cause of their activity.* It is with the other faculties of mind, as it is with our bodily organs, which have no power of activity apart from the will. Those movements in our hands, eyes, and all our organs and muscles, which are necessary in prosecuting the arts and ends of life, in the graceful action of the orator, and in all the beautiful, dignified, and noble attributes of which the human frame is capable, take their rise from this faculty. Obliterate the power of designing from the mind, and nothing of activity will remain in the body above the horrible contortions of a galvanized corpse.

We are equally indebted to the same faculty for the activity of the *mind*. It is true that metaphysicians ascribe to the mind three generical faculties, intellect, sensibility, and will. But in point of fact, the psychological phenomena are reduced to two classes, *sensations* and *volitions*. Of this any one may be convinced by inquiring after the *generical marks* of distinction between these faculties. What then is the mark of intellect? How are we to distinguish it from the other faculties? Mani-

festly intellect is marked by a single characteristic: *it is a percipient*. Take it in any of its developements, still this mark appears. Attention is the percipient faculty directed to a particular thing: reasoning is perceiving the relation and comparison of our ideas; judgment is our perception of the result, real or supposed, of a process of reasoning; memory is the perception of ideas before in the mind, with a recognition of their former presence. This, then, is the only mark of intellect.

A perception taken by itself, what is it but a simple sensation of perceiving? A nature endowed with the power of perceiving necessarily gives being to the effects appropriate to this power, when the circumstances are present which are required for its exercise. The eye necessarily conveys to the mind the sensation of seeing, when light falls upon its retina. No volition is demanded in the premises, nor can the character of the result be changed by any effort of the will. So of the power in the mind to know, to perceive, to understand: it is necessarily exerted under those circumstances wherein it can be exerted at all. Any thing over and above a passive sensation of perceiving comes not from this power itself, but from some other source. Intellect has in itself, as distinguished from the other faculties, neither action nor feeling, any more than a simple power of vision in the eye embodies in itself action or feeling. Action in the eye comes from the voluntary muscles, and feeling from the nerves of sensation. A blind eye still has action and feeling.

So of intellect. When its developements are modified by any thing aside from its character as a percipient, that modification comes, not from itself, but from its associate faculties. Apart from the contributions of those faculties there is nothing of intellect, but a foundation for those sensations included under our idea of perceiving.

The same is true also of the heart or sensibility. When we trace up that faculty to its generical mark, we find nothing but a foundation for the sensations of *feeling* or *emotion*. There is in a simple feeling neither perception nor volition. Take a pain or pleasure, a desire or aversion, a hope or fear, in the abstract, and what can it perceive? what can it do? Our pain furnishes a reason for taking medicine. But can this become to us an object of knowledge, apart from the power of perceiving it? The pains of a man whose power of knowing is paralyzed by a fit or any other cause, do not furnish *to him* a reason for taking medicine. This reason cannot exist in the pain itself or in

the power of feeling it, but in that of *knowing* that he does feel it. And certainly, the action of taking medicine comes neither from the feeling of the pain, nor from the power of knowing that we feel it, but from the will. We take medicine by willing it.

It follows, therefore, that apart from volitions in the mind, nothing remains but simple sensations. They are sensations of perceiving or feeling, and the psychological phenomena are reduced to these two classes, of sensations on the one hand, and volitions on the other. Fruit comes in contact with a man's palate and awakens a pleasurable emotion; that emotion becomes a matter of consciousness to him, or he has the sensation of perceiving it; and by his power of willing, he determines to obtain more of it or to continue eating it. The two first are sensations, the last is a volition.

In point of fact, neither of these faculties can be developed by itself. The phenomena of mind, as they exist in real life, result from the blended operation of the several faculties. These faculties may be likened to the nervous, sanguinary, and osseous organs and fluids in the human body, which exist in union, the bones holding the muscles in tension as the framework within which life is manufactured, the blood supplying nourishment, and the nerves adding sensation and motion. Do digestion and secretion go on? the nerves supply the impetus: does a muscle grow? the blood feeds it: has it power? the bones hold it in tension, and the nerves, or rather, the will through the nerves gives it motion. Thus the ends of the animal economy are attained by the different contributions of various organs and fluids, all united in one harmonious whole.

So of the generical faculties of mind. When the intellect becomes the seat of qualities implying more than a simple sensation of perceiving, such as attention, reason, judgment, memory, and the like, it owes their existence to the will. The exercises of attending, reasoning, judging, and remembering, are as purely voluntary, as handling, looking, listening, tasting, and the like. Can we attend to a thing, conduct a process of reasoning, or perform any other feat of intellect, without willing it? It is equally true of the sensibility, also, that when it becomes the seat of passions and affections involving something over and above a spontaneous feeling or emotion, it is indebted to the will for their existence. Love, desire, hope, fear, anger, malice, revenge, hatred, envy, and all other affections existing

in real life, result from the mind's voluntariness, in holding on to a given class of primary sensations, till they have grown up into these qualities. The *agreeable* emotions awakened by the presence of a person, do not grow up into love for him, till the will has acted, to some extent, in retaining that emotion, by calling up the image of that person or seeking his society. The *disagreeable* emotions awakened by another, must go through the same process, before they can become hatred or malice. Has an infant malice? Whether his nature has not the elementary tendencies to this vice, is not the question; but whether these tendencies can grow up into malice, till there is some exercise of the voluntary agency. We might as well speak of the quality of being learned, as a native endowment of intellect, as to ascribe malice to the heart apart from the action of the will.

It follows, therefore, that the will stands related to the other faculties as the cause of their activity. The agent, by his faculty of will, wields his powers of sensation just as he wields his hands, his feet, and his other voluntary organs and muscles. And those psychological phenomena, which are at the basis of our mental and moral philosophies, and which are so often appealed to in theology, are the result of our voluntary agency, acting through our powers of sensation. Handling can no more exist apart from the will, than it can exist without a hand. A palsied hand cannot handle, nor can a will handle without a hand through which to manifest itself. So of reasoning and all kindred exercises, and so, too, of the passions in all their forms; they are mere manifestations of the will through the powers of perceiving and of feeling.

By losing sight of these facts, we fall into the most absurd modes of psychological, moral, and religious reasonings. To take those exercises which the older writers class together as belonging to the understanding or the heart, and then make them the ultimate principles in our philosophy or theology, is like reasoning about the mixed condiments of a confectioner, as if they were an uncompounded production of nature. Every thing characterized by feeling, is thought to owe its existence to the simple power of feeling. And the existing passions and affections are spoken of as things in which volition has had no agency. Our virtue and vice are said to have their seat in the *heart*, and not in the will; by which it is meant, that they have their seat in our love, hatred, malice, good will, and our affec-

tions in general. And the heart, as made up of involuntary sensations, is spoken of as the only devil in man's nature, a living serpent that took possession of him at the fall, and has been propagated from father to son by a sort of connatural generation. The thing to be done for his reformation, it is supposed, is to kill this serpent and cage in its place a new heart, as a bird of paradise to whistle its sweet notes through the pipes of the will. And as a show of argument for this view of the subject, they quote the saying of our Lord, that vices proceed out of the heart. They forget that the inspired writers never used the term heart, for a faculty distinct from the intellect and will, for the plain reason, that their philosophy had not learned to make this distinction in the mental faculties. Their heart included the whole internal economy, as distinguished from outward conduct. When our Saviour speaks of our hearts as the source of our wickedness, therefore, he means our thoughts, purposes, passions, and whole internal man, as distinguished from what is outward and visible. Hence, whatever the fact may be, his words contain no proof that our wickedness has its existence in something independent of our wills.

2. *The will sustains the relation of cause to whatever is blame- or praise-worthy in the other faculties.* When a hand is put in motion in lifting a piece of steel, what is it that distinguishes the act from that of a magnet in lifting it? The effect in both cases is the same, viz., the elevation of the steel from that state of rest in which it had been held by its own gravity. And yet this action in the hand may be conceived of as *morally* right or wrong. If it be that of a child's hand, whose father had commanded or forbidden it, then the idea of obedience or disobedience, of praise or blame, would attach to it. But no such idea could attach to the action of the magnet. Wherein, therefore, lies the difference? Manifestly in this, that the act of the hand was the effect of choice or intention in the mind, while no such choice is supposable in the case of the magnet. This example will illustrate the relation which the will sustains to all actions, exercises, affections, and states of the heart wherein inheres the quality of blame or of praiseworthiness.

If we turn from the body to the mind itself, and observe its exercises of remembering, imagining, reasoning, and judging, or of loving, hating, desiring, hoping, fearing, and the like, wherein I ask, does their blame- or praise-worthiness consist? Is it in these exercises considered as simple sensations of per-

ceiving or of feeling; or is it in the quality of voluntariness which is supposed to inhere in them? Can involuntary sensations, that come and go like the wind, or like a jumping pain in one's tooth, raise in us the notion of morality? It is the man exercising his power of designing or willing to remember, imagine, reason, and judge; to love, hate, desire, hope, fear, envy, and the like, that constitutes the basis of our ideas of moral good or evil in these phenomena of mind. These phenomena, as we before said, partake of a complex character, owing their existence to the will, as much as to the power of perceiving and of feeling. But it is what the will contributes in the form of choice, design, and intention, and not what the other faculties contribute in the form of simple sensations, that raises in us the notion of praise- or blame-worthiness in these complex exercises.

It is true we impute depravity to states of the heart or affections, which are the effect of no *immediate* act of volition. The man who does wrong from habit, or in whom habit has become so strong that, in the language of the Bible, "he cannot cease from sin," we still regard as a polluted and depraved being. But involuntary moral states of this kind, are conceived of as *remotely* connected with choice as their cause, and this is the foundation of our ideas of their depravity. It is on this principle that the drunkard's and libertine's appetite, though involuntary, are reckoned criminal. We reckon it so, because it is the effect of voluntary indulgence. It is the work of the drunkard and libertine, in willing those repeated acts of gratification, from which arose its ungovernable strength.

Yea, we may extend this thought so as to include *inherited* depravity. The drunkard and libertine, it is said by physiologists, may propagate their moral characteristics with their blood. Still, when we witness the signs of them in their children, even of the tenderest age, we nevertheless consider them as instances of depravity. But, then, it is a depravity that stands related to acts of the will as its cause, inasmuch as it is the result of those remoter volitions which existed in the parent or parents. It is in this way that all men have become sinners in Adam. The voluntary acts of Adam in transgressing the law of God, stand related to the inherited depravity of his posterity as the cause to its effect, the antecedent to its consequent.

The common sense of mankind must, however, make a difference between depravity thus remotely connected with volitions, and that which takes its rise in the acts of the living agent.

The first partakes of the nature of punishment and realizes our idea of judicial hardness of heart and blindness of mind, while the other incorporates in itself that element of voluntariness, which is essential to personal merit or demerit. No matter how much strength an appetite for ardent spirits may have acquired, either from our own previous acts or those of our parents, it cannot be reckoned to us as a crime when we cease to indulge it. And, certainly, the crimes of mankind at large cannot be as great as if each individual had fallen from a state of perfect holiness into his present habits of life. The fact of our having inherited depraved tendencies materially mitigates our guilt, and abates the extent of our demerit.

However we may view these points, one thing is clear, that the acts of choice in the will stand related as cause, immediately or mediately, nearly or remotely, to all those exercises and changes, both of mind and body, to which we attach the idea of praise and blame. It is the intention, choice, volition, that imparts to our mental and physical developments whatever of morality they embody.

3. The will stands related to our other faculties as *the basis of their union in an individual conscious agency*.—As it is the cause of every thing in the intellect and the sensibility, above involuntary sensations, and the cause of all those exercises in these faculties that have a moral character, so it is the bond that unites them in one conscious individuality, or it is the basis of our personality. In reference to a large portion of what passes under the eye of our consciousness, we see that it owes its existence to our willing or choosing it. We will to reason, and we reason ; to think upon this or that subject, and we think upon it ; to love, and we call up the images and considerations calculated to elicit that affection ; to walk, and we walk ; to sit, and we sit ; to look, and we look ; and thus all that goes to make up our active history is held in union, as a part of our personal agency, by our conscious power of willing. And our language is framed to express this union in the will of the effects proceeding from our personal agency. When we say, *I do, think, reason, speak, buy, sell, and get gain, hope, fear, desire, choose, sit, walk, or run*, we always refer to the connexion which these effects have with our power of will.

And those parts of ourselves which do not come from the will, such as involuntary sensations of pain or pleasure in the sensibility, or of perceiving in the intellect, are still connected

with our *conscious* life by means of that faculty. Consciousness, as Cousin clearly shows, involves an act of attention in the mind to what is passing within itself, and such an act cannot exist without our willing it. We will to reflect upon what we feel or think within ourselves, and we do it ; and it is in this way that our internal exercises become matters of consciousness. As soon as we lose this power of attention or of consciousness, we lose all that passes within ourselves, and our existence is practically reduced to the level of a stock or a stone. The will, therefore, is the basis of our personal, conscious, spiritual life.

No matter how various and complicated may be the movements in the machinery of a cotton factory, yet all are united in the one wheel which is propelled by the falling water. That is the emanating point and common centre of the whole. So the will is the emanating point and common centre of motion to every voluntary muscle and organ of the body, and of exercise and direction to the intellect and the sensibility ; or, at least, the whole are so far united in this faculty, that without it they would make no part of our conscious life and agency. The will, therefore, is the basis of those forms of expression in all languages, by which we appropriate to ourselves the facts of our consciousness, and call them *our own*. It is the *I* of the mind, the self, the basis of personality, the nucleus around which the sensations cluster, so as to enter into the component elements of our conscious individuality.

4. Finally, the will stands related to the other faculties as *the governing power*. I am aware that the older metaphysicians reverse the order, and make the sensations the governing power. They say, Can the will act without a motive ? And can a motive exist without a sensation or affection of some sort, inclining us towards the thing to which we are moved ? The passions, affections, appetites, perceptions, judgments, and the like, they make the component elements of motive, and suppose that they stand related to volitions, as cause to an effect. The Edwardean philosophy is built upon this idea of the relation of the sensations to the volitions. It represents the former as connected with the latter, the same as the subject with the predicate of a proposition.

And it is true that the will cannot act apart from the sensations, any more than a king can reign without subjects. Deprived of his subjects, his royal authority becomes an empty pa-

geant, that exists only in name. So the will, apart from the sensations involved in perceiving and feeling, would be an empty name, from which volitions could not flow. But, though a king could not be a king without his subjects, yet when the existence of both is assumed, can there be any doubt as to which belongs the governing power? His royal prerogatives would cease the moment they should govern *him* rather than *he them*. So the will, deprived of its power over the sensations, is no will. Involuntary impulses would, in that case, constitute the sum total of the psychological phenomena. The power of arresting the course of the sensations and of controlling any given order of them that may arise, enters into the very notion of a will. The individual who is necessarily borne away, first by one gust of sensations, then by another, and so by any that may chance to arise from the spontaneity of his inward life, or the impressions of outward nature, as a leaf is driven to and fro in the wind, is as destitute of will as that leaf.

It is true that the will has no power to alter the character of our simple sensations. We cannot will ourselves into ideas of the odor of a pink and of a rose, of a square or of a triangle, of the preferableness of happiness to misery, and all similar things, which are different from those that spontaneously spring up in our minds in view of these objects. But it belongs to the will to determine the nature and degree of influence which our simple sensations shall have over our conduct. They can not *necessitate* any definite action in the will. Sensations, strong even as those awakened in the drunkard by a view of his cups, leave him the power of self-control. He may still exert against them the full force of his will, in denying himself their appropriate gratification. Nor in those cases in which the volitions take the direction of any given class of sensations, do the former sustain to the latter the relation of an effect to its cause. Edwards seems to be aware of this, when he speaks of motives as the occasion of volitions. The will is in no case the *subject* of effects, as the sensorium is in the impressions made upon it. Volitions in the will are not produced by motive, in the same sense that seeing is by the contact of light, or combustion by the application of fire to wood. The will is never the passive tool of the sensations, but always retains the power of a contrary choice.

All *moral* law assumes that there is power in the will to control the sensations. It is a primary object of God's law to

enjoin certain affections and prohibit others. It requires love, good-will, meekness, gentleness, and patience: forbids hatred, ill-will, anger, wrath, malice, and revenge, and thus brings its full force to bear upon the sensations. But how could this be done if there were no power in the will to control the sensations? If there were no such power, then the divine law, in its whole scope and drift, would be as unreasonable as if it commanded us to fly and interdicted our breathing.

Yea, more, it is *a defect of character* to allow the impulses of sensation to govern us. No matter what strength any given appetite or impulsion may acquire, it cannot contain *in itself* the right to control us. Even though it be a *right* impulsion, its *strength* is not the reason for our following it, because it is not the foundation of its rightness. Its rightness comes from its conformity to law; and with the knowledge of such conformity, we should be bound to follow it, if it were the weaker impulse. If *one* impulsion may govern us on the sole ground of its strength, another may do the same; and the plea of the drunkard that he obeys the strongest impulsion, would be a sufficient justification of his conduct. Whether in angels or devils, it alike argues defect of character to be a mere creature of impulse.

Even the exercises of *intellect* or reason contain in themselves no right of control over the will. The intellect may enable us to discover *laws* that ought to control; but those laws do not depend in whole or in part upon our power of discovering them. The appropriateness of any given class of affections, exercises, and conduct, to any specific relation, would be the same if no such relation existed, or no being with power to take cognizance of it. The idea of a parent being such as it is, and that of a child such as it is, and the relations between the two such as they are, the moral obligations belonging to them would be the same, though they were creatures of imagination. Hence those obligations do not depend upon any exercise of our intellectual faculties. All that those faculties can do, is to bring us acquainted with these obligations as they exist on independent grounds, and so impose them upon us, provided we exist in the requisite relations. Neither the sensations of perceiving, therefore, more than those of appetite, passion, or feeling, have in themselves any right to control our wills. A wrong perception or a false idea cannot lose its character because it is our own, and hence can never have the

right to determine our volitions. It is because our wills qualify us to so direct our intellectual powers as to square our ideas to truth and right, that we are responsible for our judgments, our opinions, and our reasonings. So far as the faculties of the mind are related to each other, it belongs to the will to control, rather than to be itself controlled.

II. This view of the position of the will among the mental faculties, prepares us to consider *the object of its training*. This resolves itself into two parts, *power* and *submission*.

As its office is executive, it must have *power* to execute. We begin life with the lowest possible measure of power in this faculty. How limited is the voluntariness of an infant! Acts scarcely distinguishable from sensations, were the starting point in the will of a Cæsar and a Napoleon, which made the world tremble and bow in obsequious submission.

The first distinct manifestation of this faculty, is its effort to control the muscles. Have you never observed the first effort of an infant to pick up a pin? So unpracticed is the little thing in this species of exercise, that at the instant the thumb and finger are about to close upon the pin, they fly open, and the hand is convulsively thrown in an opposite direction. Recovering from the involuntary digression, it returns to the charge with perhaps the same result as before. And it is not till after a long series of desperate efforts, that the will so far asserts its pre-eminence, as to compel the muscles to pick up a pin.

Now, we have in this an exact specimen of the whole process of voluntary training. The object is power in the will to hold the muscles, the feelings, the intellectual faculties, and the whole man, to a definite issue. The want of this leaves the agent the victim of caprice, accident, contingency. We see this in those who have no power to say yes, or no, with any certainty that they will do as they say. Their intention is not to deceive; but they lack the power of saying a thing and abiding by it. Their stakes are all stuck in a fluid basis, so that the next passing wave sweeps them all away. Under excitement they promise to be religious; but as soon as that subsides their wills veer around, and they become more desperate than ever in their worldliness. The idea of making the feelings bend to what stands in the view of the reason and conscience as right and obligatory, and thus holding the whole man to the issues of truth, has no place in their conceptions of duty and obligation.

Indeed, it is a peculiarity of our nation on all subjects, that our wills are educated to *velocity*, but not to *fixedness*. With great action, we have little consistency of character. We are violent without order, changeful without wisdom to guide our evolutions, and for every element of conservativeness we have ten of novelty and change. This is because our voluntariness is not braced up by a staid condition in the general framework of society.

There is no limiting the power to which the will may be raised by training. Take, for example, the movement of the muscles in giving effect to a fine piece of music on the violin. The most subtle, varied, and complicated combinations of sound are thrown out by muscular motion under the direction of the will. What a study for philosophy must have been Paganini's mind, in his most exquisite performances! First, the *preparation* must be taken into account, in which the will had a two-fold direction, the one towards the musical taste through the intellect, and the other towards the muscles through the nerves. What a long course of voluntary effort must it have cost, to give the taste that exquisite finish necessary in the premises! Accuracy of musical judgment, a delicately trained ear, and the harmonious concurrence of all the sympathies in the sentiment to be expressed, must be acquired, so that the whole mental economy, like the muscles in lifting a great weight, might contribute to the required result. And, at the same time, the muscles themselves must be brought to the dexterity and suppleness of acting as the organs of the soul, in pouring forth the full tide of its harmonious conceptions on the strings of the violin.

Now, all the stages of this most subtle preparatory process are conducted by the will, acting on the intellect, the taste, the ear, and the muscles. Nor is one part of the process more a work of the will than another. It is true, we see it more in the muscles than we do in the intellect, the taste, and the changes which the ear undergoes. Reflection and analysis will show, however, that the will was continually active in observing the distinctions of sound addressed to the ear, in reasoning upon the musical scale to ascertain what combinations would be the sweetest and most melodious, in bringing all the internal sentiments into harmony with the loftiest ideal of excellence; and thus that the most subtle parts of the process are just as much

the work of the will, as those which are most tangible and visible.

And when we come to the *actual performance*, this exquisitely finished taste repays the will for its previous efforts, by giving it the right direction, and that in turn conveys the impulse to the muscles, and the muscles act upon the musical chords, in throwing out melody that might entrance angelic ears. How subtle the process! how complicated the movement! how glorious the result! all, too, emanating from the mind's voluntariness.

And were it possible to trace the movements of the will in reaching the highest attainments of the divine life, we should find them still more subtle and extraordinary. As matter for philosophy, nothing can exceed that of the process through which Thomas à Kempis was qualified to write his *Imitation of Christ*, Henry Martyn for his missionary career, John Bunyan for the composition of his *Pilgrim's Progress*, or Whitefield for his extraordinary power of kindling the religious sympathies. It is true, achievements of this kind could never be made apart from the special agency of divine grace. But then, no one supposes that this agency can be exerted, without appropriate efforts in the human will. What agony of prayer, what intensity of Christian meditation, what vigilance of personal circumspection, what promptitude of endeavor to do all the known will of God, and what constancy in holding the mind to the issues of a holy life, persevered in through a course of years, in despite of all opposition from within and from without, must have marked a career which has left the world the brilliant light of such examples! Be not deluded with the notion, that leaving one's self to float with the tide of feeling, religious though it be for the time, will ever lead to achievements thus beneficent and exalted. If it were so, the urgent and oft-repeated commands and exhortations of the Bible, to exert the full force of our voluntary powers, "that we may stand in the evil day, and, having done all, to stand," would be idle and vain.

A very general mistake exists as to what constitutes a good education. It is made to consist too exclusively in bringing foreign materials into the mind. Nor are these to be undervalued. But the real end of an education is, to increase the power of the will over the other faculties. A man is well educated when he has the command of his memory, imagination, intellectual processes, and all his feelings or emotions; and thus,

when the mastery of himself is so complete, as to enable him to concentrate his mental, moral, and physical force upon the end to which he devotes his life. The power of holding the intellect to one thing, till he has reached the utmost possible present limit of the human faculties in that direction, is one of the fruits of a good education. The efficiency of such a man, even if his materials on hand are few, vastly exceeds that of one who abounds in materials, but has little control over his own faculties. The first would grow mentally rich upon a rock, the other would starve among princely libraries.

The same is true of a *moral* education. No matter though the design be an honest or a dishonest one, how can it be accomplished, unless the will has the control of opposing inclinations? To be a pirate, must not a man be able to repress his humane sympathies, his respect for the rights of property, and the pleadings of his conscience for virtue? Still more must a Christian, a minister, or one who aspires at eminent usefulness, have the absolute command of his feelings, that he may concentrate his whole energy upon the work which he has taken in hand. Power of will is the true philosophy of all discipline, the secret of success in our enterprises, and the great end of a good education.

For simple power in this faculty, no example is more in point than that of Napoleon Bonaparte. Over his mental exercises and his feelings he had absolute command. Emergencies did not disconcert him, nor dangers ruffle his serenity, nor reverses conquer his mighty will. Even to the last, amid the petty annoyances of his prison, in his sphere he was absolute as when Europe trembled at his nod. His body was conquered, but the command of himself he never lost. Is it surprising that a will of such power should have given law to nations? Its traces are still visible upon Alpine rocks, upon Egyptian pyramids, amid the snows of Russia, and throughout the civil and social fabric of his own country and of half the world.

But *submission* is another and equally important element in the object of the will's training. He that would rule, must first learn to obey. This may be said of the will. It has its laws and its statute books, to which it is bound to conform. With all its power in Napoleon, it is difficult to conceive a more egregious case of perverted will. It was subordinate to no law but the impulses of his own ambition.

We have seen that the law of the will's action is neither in

the exercises of the intellect, nor in the impulses of the sensibility. There is in *things* a foundation of right, by which we mean, obligation to a definite exercise of our voluntary powers. It cannot change with the mutations of our judgment concerning it. Neither our convictions nor our predilections, except so far as they are conformed to the standard of right in things, can become the law of the will's action. Our honesty in holding a wrong can no more convert it into a right than our errors in civil law can change the statute books of the State.

God reveals the law of the will through various channels. Even apart from all science and all means of moral and religious instruction, we may still learn from our own nature the elementary principles of right. The savage living upon the roots of his native forest, learns the duty of avoiding that root that makes him sick. However tempting to his taste, he feels himself bound to avoid it, out of a regard to the prospective evil which will ensue from his eating it. His active powers are restrained at that point, by considerations addressing themselves to his reason and self-love.

Now, this is the germ of all law. Responsibility is thrown upon the agent exercising will, to restrain one class of tendencies and give place to another. And this responsibility arises, both from the inherent superiority of some of these tendencies over the others, and from his power of will to follow the one and repress the others. No matter what *grounds* of preference might exist in the case, if he had not power to discover them and to act upon them, no responsibility would be imposed. And if he had this power, and no foundation of preference, of right, existed to call it forth, there could be no moral action. The restrictions under which Adam was placed in the garden, were as necessary as his own faculties to the morality of his conduct.

Law being once made known to us, we are laid under obligation to the instant endeavor of keeping it. Yea, we are bound to such endeavors of intellect and conscience, in the use of the moral helps at our command, as will bring us acquainted with the law. And when so acquainted, no obstructions must deter us from abiding by it, as the standard of conduct. Even if we were bound, we must go the length of our chain towards keeping the law, and then wait and pray that the fetter may be broken, to admit of our going the full extent of its demands. Does the law require faith in God and his Gospel? Then we may know, from its being required, that it is something within the compass

of our voluntariness. Faith consists in holding our faculties to the issues of a given truth or class of truths, precisely as the will acts through the muscles of the arm in holding on to a thing. No weakness, therefore, should prevent the instant endeavor after this altitude of our faculties, in reference to God and the Gospel. Is love required? Then, we may be sure, it is not confined to an involuntary sensation. Are we commanded to rejoice in the Lord? Then something within the compass of our voluntariness is to be done, directly or indirectly, to call up the exercise. If we have no direct mode of willing ourselves into the exercise of joy or love, still, by holding on to that class of truths calculated to kindle these affections, and dismissing contrary considerations, by prayer, and in various ways, we may contribute to their growth in our hearts. Of one thing we may be certain: He who knows what is in man, would never enjoin a thing utterly beyond the compass of his voluntariness. Are humility, repentance, patience, hope, or any other affections enjoined, therefore, we must say to ourselves, this grace or this virtue shall be mine. God wills me to have it, and I *must* have it. My compassionate God would not stir me up to the endeavor after an unattainable good. By his grace it shall be my own.

Unfortunately our theories of religion throw us back upon the involuntary sensations, as the sole basis of right action. Until these are excited in a given manner and to a definite pitch of intensity, by causes beyond the scope of the will, it is supposed that no action can take place in that faculty itself, tending towards salvation. An involuntary change in the powers of sensation, is made the basis of a change in the will. Hence, endeavor after the graces of religion, in one who has them not, is deemed utterly vain and useless. And it *would* be vain, had not the gospel come to supply the means of its success. The weakness induced by our sin cannot exceed our strength in Christ. To represent otherwise would be an imputation upon the gospel, as a remedy for our vices and our woes. Is not the provision of Christ's death for the ungodly, an ample offset against their weakness?

And as it is dishonorable to God, to make the gospel unequal to the end for which it is given, viz., the obedience of faith, so it is still more so to turn off our heavenly Father with a religion of involuntary sensations. We have already too much of this kind of religion. Hundreds are waiting in idleness, for some mysterious gale to blow their sensations into a flame of holiness

and heaven. Not a few also suppose themselves favored by it, whose uncorrected pride, avarice, ambition, or worldliness, show, indeed, that so far as they have any religion, it is confined to involuntary sensations. A resolute adherence to what is right, or a fixed purpose of subordinating their whole being to the known will of God, is the farthest imaginable from their thoughts. All their talk on the subject is how I *feel*, and not how I *do*, or how by the grace of God I mean to do.

Ministers must understand this, and, instead of preaching a physical regeneration and a religion of involuntary sensations, they must lay the foundation deep in the mind's voluntariness. An attitude of absolute submission in the will to all that is right, and of unceasing endeavor to carry it out in our lives, is the only religion inculcated in the Bible. Members of our churches, therefore, who complain of their *feelings*, should be subjected to a rigid catechetical training, to know how they live and what they are doing. How do you demean yourself in your family, in your business, and in all the departments of active life? Sir, your feelings cannot be right till your intentions are so. Think not that God can accept occasional intervals of luxuriant emotion. No such intervals can ever be healthy which have not an habitual course of right action in the will for their basis. An attitude of absolute submission in this faculty to all the known will of God, is the least that the divine law can require.

### III. We come, finally, to speak of *the manner of the will's training.*

1. *This faculty acquires power by means of exercise.* It is effort that brings the muscles of an infant under the control of its will. Clearness and force of reasoning, judgment, memory, and imagination, also, all come from exercise. Very few of the ideas obtained in a course of liberal education become the permanent settlers of the mind. Still, the growth of the faculties from the exercise of obtaining them remains. The blacksmith cannot recall one of a thousand blows with his hammer; but the enlargement of his muscles, leaves no mistake as to the nature and extent of his exercise.

So, power in the will is the fruit of exercise and endeavor. We should float into the doing of nothing by the mere impulses of the sensibility; but should hold all the powers of our nature with the taught rein of will, till reason and conscience have decided as to what is right and best. Battling with hard fortune in our younger years, the necessity for physical exertion and

mental endurance, and other circumstances tending to rouse the will to a desperate resistance, are more favorable than luxurious repose to a high order of mental and moral development. As the hold of the forest oak upon the soil is strengthened by contending winds, so whatever inures our wills to hardy exertion fits us for those enterprises in which merit acquires its distinctions.

We should keep constantly on the stretch for the highest order of excellence in every thing. We must leave nothing in the line of virtue and piety unattempted. Nothing within the limit of the human faculties should be labelled with "impossible." The utmost point of tension in the will is the road to excellence. It was this that immortalized the violin of Paganini, the ambition of Napoleon, the piety of Paul, the mathematics of Newton, the generalship of Hannibal, and the metaphysics of Edwards. Yea, this will open the way to every adornment of intellectual and moral character. Does a grace of the heart, or a virtue of the life present itself? we must say at once, it shall be mine, and essay its exercise. Is it weakness under provocation, a chastened spirit in reference to worldly good, or the peace of God that passeth all understanding, then instantly set about making it your own, by prayer, self-denial, and all appropriate means. The command to *let* that peace keep your heart and mind through Christ Jesus, involves ability as well as obligation in the premises. Are you irritable, proud, selfish, say at once, "Here is work for me. My soul's aliment shall not go to feed such a nest of vipers. I will die in the struggle but that I will bring them under."

What is the Christian warfare, but the exertion of will against the particular affections inflamed by Satan's fiery darts? Think not that to complain of our own faults, when we are doing nothing to correct them, can amount to a virtue. No; what God demands is reformation, a thing into which a man never embarks by accident nor prosecutes by naked wishes. Let us not love in word or in tongue, but in deed and in truth.

2. Our wills must be trained by *keeping in view our duties and the motives to their performance.* It is impossible for us to exert our voluntary powers in a given direction, for any length of time, especially if it be in opposition to the strong pleading of contrary desires, without a clear view of the motives for going in that direction. The only survivor from the wreck of the Albion on the coast of Ireland, a few years ago, saved his life

by clinging for many hours to a shelving rock, from which, had the muscles of his arm relaxed a moment, he would have made a hopeless plunge into the surges of the deep sea. Nothing but the motives of a certain death continually present to his mind, could have urged his will to so protracted and desperate an effort through those muscles. One instant of unconsciousness to those motives would have cost him his life.

So, in all cases, where the will meets a powerful resistance, inattention to the reasons for its exercise is sure to prove fatal. How is it with the reformed inebriate? Would not a separation from those sources of influence from which his reformation took its rise, and the presence of old associations and incentives to his vice, be quite sure to bring on a ruinous, perhaps fatal relapse? The principles of our nature on this point are well understood.

God has grafted his measures of reform upon these very principles. From the beginning, he has been unfolding to man his own character of holiness and love, his government and law, his rewards and punishments, and all the motives of infinite mercy and infinite wrath, that these might operate as antagonist influences to the universal corruption of the world. The truths and influences embodied in his kingdom of righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost, are the sole means by which He is aiming to give due direction to man's voluntary agency. His kingdom supplies the powerful stimulant of a hope full of immortality, to stir in us the endeavor of overcoming the world; and it takes us into direct conscious communion with the Father of our spirits, filling us with filial confidence and joy. And it is from this armory of unmixed holiness and truth, that the will is panoplied for its victories over spiritual wickedness in high places. Nor can we ever lose sight of this great provision, without imminent hazard to our virtue and salvation. We shall be "saved, if we *keep in memory* what is preached to us in the gospel, unless we have believed in vain."

3. To endeavor of the will and a view to appropriate motives, we must add a *sense of dependence upon God*. To pray without ceasing is a duty growing out of the necessities of our nature. All right exercises, all virtue comes through endeavor towards it from a view to the reasons for practising it, accompanied by a sense of the impossibility of succeeding, without special help from above. If we essay it in our own strength, we are sure to fail. Prayer raises the intellectual not less than the moral character. To

conceive in ourselves the love of the true, to feel also our incapacity to judge of it, and to be assured not only that all truth is in God, but that he will give liberally to those who ask, is the best of all possible states of mind for exalted intellectual achievement. Pride is a canker upon our faculties. Prayer, therefore, proceeding from a humiliating sense of dependence, and from the faith that God is and is the rewarder of them that diligently seek him, is a most effectual mode for training the will both to power and to submission.

Finally, *the Spirit's indwelling* is the sole basis of continued right action in this faculty. We might purpose to do all that an enlightened intellect would dictate, yet, without that efficiency which in Scripture is called *grace*, we should be borne away by our deranged affections. Virtuous *judgments* cannot supply to the will sufficient strength for a resistance to temptation. Passion as a motive power is much stronger than judgment, and no force can withstand it but that of a contrary passion. A passion for holiness is the only effectual antagonist to a passion for sin. And this the Holy Spirit excites in all that believe. He sheds abroad the love of God in our hearts; and his fruit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faithfulness, meekness, and temperance. Having these, therefore, our wills are braced up to all right volitions, and invigorated for all the ends of a holy life. Thus our virtue is the fruit of divine influence, so concurring with our voluntary agency that no element of accountableness is infringed; and yet we are made to feel that it is God who worketh in us, to will and to do according to his good pleasure.

#### CONCLUSION.

1. Much will be gained in this subject by passing from *names to things*, and from *arbitrary classifications* to the *constitution of nature*.

Those who content themselves with the old distinction of the mental phenomena, into understanding, heart, and will, in their reasoning upon this subject, are like him who builds his house upon the congealed surface of a pond, without considering that its watery basis is already absorbed in the earth or escaped through concealed passages. His castle is built upon the air, while *theirs* rests upon arbitrary distinctions and definitions, whose foundation has already vanished before the searching scrutiny of accurate analysis.

I have seen it stated in a late review\* that the intellect, sensibility, and will, of the later metaphysicians, such as Cousin, Tappan, and others, "was adopted a number of years ago by Dr. Burton of Vermont." This one fact stands connected with a hundred others, in this writer's production, going to show how utterly he fails to enter into the merits of the system which he professes to review. Dr. Burton referred the passions, affections, and appetites, *as they exist in real life*, exclusively to what he called the heart as one of the generical faculties. But these metaphysicians, as I suppose, at least nature and fact, give them a mixed character, and show that in their present form, viz. the form of real life, they are derived from the joint influence of the other faculties. If the sensibility has supplied the web in their formation, the will has added the woof. The passions and affections, and even the appetites to a great extent, are mere manifestations of the will through the sensibility, as handling is a manifestation of the same faculty through the hand.

The same is also true of reason, judgment, and the other phenomena of the intellect. They result from the will acting through that faculty. But this reviewer and others of his stamp seem determined that nobody shall attach any ideas to the *intellect* and *sensibility* as generical faculties of mind, different from what Dr. Burton and writers of that school attached to *their* understanding and heart as generical faculties. Whereas this old theory is a mere incrustation which analysis has deprived of its foundation, leaving it to stand in mid air high above the simpler elements into which mental science has resolved itself.

In strict propriety of speech, there are but two departments in the mental phenomena, *sensations* and *volitions*. The one are produced on the principles of *physical*, and the other of *moral* causation. The sensations, as viewed apart from the volitions, are effects that spring from the constitution of our nature, being such as it is and in such circumstances, just as combustion springs from the contact of fire and powder. But the volitions are a higher order of phenomena, superinduced on the basis of the sensations, and possessing characteristics every way distinct, as we have already shown. They proceed on entirely different laws of causality from those of the sensations. Of the latter, as they spring from the deep fountain of our nature, we cannot think as things that could, under the circumstances, have been differ-

---

\* *Christian Review*, p. 226.

ent. We feel it to be impossible in the nature of things, for us to have any sensation but that of seeing from the contact of light with our eyes, or any different sensation from the figure of a triangle or a square, or of the odor of a pink and a rose, when these things are presented to our minds and our senses. Not so, however, with our volitions. Who can review a wrong volition, but with the conviction that he might have willed differently? How soothing the unction to many an unquiet conscience, to be able to feel that his wicked volitions were in the same sense necessary, that seeing is from the contact of light with his eyes? Even the distinction of natural and moral necessity, among the older metaphysicians, is a full acknowledgment of the broad grounds of distinction between sensations and volitions, between the causation of the will and that of its associate faculties.

The sensations, it is true, are susceptible of various classifications. There are *objective* sensations and sensations of *spontaneity*; and there are also sensations of *perceiving* and sensations of *feeling* or *emotion*. The objective are those which depend upon objects extraneous to the mind, while those of spontaneity are evolved from the mind itself, apart from any foreign agency. How vast an assemblage of our sensations spring from the presentation or contact of objects and things extraneous to the mind! However endlessly combined our ideas, they all have their archetypes somewhere, in the real or unreal universe. Hence, they have not an independent, but a dependent and objective existence, as the shadow exists by virtue of its substance. They terminate in objects extraneous to the faculties of the mind.

But there are, besides, innumerable sensations that evolve themselves from the fervid life of the mind, as heat is evolved from the sun's rays, which no language nor description can reach, but of which every one is conscious in himself. They may not advance to the dignity of ideas or passions, but, like abortions in nature, may die in the conception. For instance, the paternal and filial instincts would doubtless be the seat of their appropriate sensations, even in him who had no means of acquiring a knowledge of the paternal and filial relations. So, also, an instinct to worship manifestly has its appropriate sensations up to a certain extent, even in those who have no idea of a God. Indeed, it is questionable whether the sensations of spontaneity would not lead to the idea of a God and of immortality, even among a race who had no means without themselves for acquiring these ideas. However this may be, it is clear to my mind

that a nature like ours, adapted to receive the impressions of outward objects, will give being from within itself to a thousand sensations—sensations that cannot, from the nature of the case, terminate on an object.

In addition to the foregoing ground of distinction, is that of perceiving or knowing on the one hand, and of feeling or emotion on the other. The first of these classes of sensations covers what is usually called the intellectual faculties, while the other includes the passions, affections, and appetites,—so far as the intellect and sensibility exist apart from the agency of the will. On these we have before said what is perhaps sufficient to show, that these faculties, apart from that agency, are the basis of nothing above a mere sensation, the laws of whose causation are purely physical and not moral.

It devolves on those who attempt to reason on this subject, to break up the incrustation of an old and arbitrary terminology, and descend to the humble basis of nature and truth. If they can show that an activity can exist in the intellect that does not proceed from the will, let them do it. If a simple feeling or emotion can grow up into a virtue or a vice, before the will has acted in retaining or repressing it, it belongs to them to show it, and to prove that a physical cause can produce a moral result. Resorting to the terms wicked heart, depraved nature, or similar phrases, under which lie concealed a vast amount of unanalyzed truth, is only darkening counsel by words without knowledge. Give us the things, one by one, which are included under these terms; things are what we want: words can amount to nothing without them.

2. It may be seen that *many of our theological errors have their foundation in a false anthropology*.—To talk of a change in the sensibility, which is not effected through the intellect and will, is like representing that a murderer may be reformed by a plaster on the arm with which the bloody deed was perpetrated. Or, it is as if a father, whose son refused to hand him a draught of water, should magnetize the boy's hand, and compel it to lift the cup, as a means of bringing him to filial duty. Would any movement communicated to the hand, apart from the intellect and will, amount to obedience? Precisely of the same character are all changes in the involuntary sensations, towards which there had been no previous endeavor, no antecedent in the will. The reduction of such a principle to practice, however, has never been attempted, except by Antinomians of the very straitest sect.

All others ply their efforts to the will, through the presentation of truth to the reason, in their attempts at individual or social reforms.

3. The view we have taken of this subject naturally suggests the inquiry, *Whether the doctrine of necessity, as applied to the will, does not merge that faculty in the sensations?* This doctrine supposes an indissoluble connexion between what it calls the strongest motive and the particular volition which ensues. Motives and sensations are identical. Nothing becomes a motive to us, till it has raised in us a sensation either of perceiving or of feeling. In the words of the elder Edwards, motives consist in a "habitual disposition," "in the strength of inclination," or in "something exhibited to the understanding." Consequently, they resolve themselves into sensations of perceiving and of feeling.

The question of moral necessity, therefore, seems to be merged in one more ultimate: Whether the will is identical with the sensations, or whether it exists as an independent faculty? When we see a football bounding to and fro, we know that the power of motion is not in itself, but in the foot that kicked it. So, when we see what we call the will putting forth this, that, or the other volition, the question arises, Is this power in the will itself, or is it like that of the football, in the antecedent agency that impelled and determined it? The doctrine of moral necessity places it in the antecedent agency. If this doctrine be true, therefore, and the power of the will be resolved into the antecedent agency of the sensations, then we see not how the will itself, as a separate faculty, should not be annihilated. The football is a substance that exists independently of its motion. Motion is simply the accident or condition of its existence. We see it in a state of rest as easily as when it is bounding to and fro. Not so the will. That has no existence, or at least, none which is cognizable to us—none as an element of philosophy, apart from its volitions. Volitions are the sole form of its manifestation as an existing faculty. If the power of volition, therefore, is resolved into the sensations, what place have we for a will? All that is left to us, in that case, are various sensations in the form of perceptions, passions, affections, inclinations, and appetites. It is true they are in conflict, and this constitutes what metaphysicians call opposition or contrariety of motive. In many cases the success of the one is the defeat of the other. Those that lead to temperance, for instance, tend

to extinguish those which lead to intemperance ; those that impel us to speak the truth, are in conflict with those which impel us to speak what is false ; and thus the contrariety of motive, and the conflict of the sensations, are the same idea.

But what is the result ? It is simply that the agent must go one way or another, just like a leaf in the wind. The alternative of not going at all, is not in the option of the mind. Determining not to go, is going in the direction of one class of sensations. Now, the doctrine of moral necessity teaches that that particular class of the sensations which it designates as the strongest, are the ones that in all cases put forth those effects which we call volitions. What is a volition, therefore, but a sensation of such a definite relative strength ? The difference between the sensations and the volitions, in this view of the subject, is not one of *nature*, but of *degree*. Every sensation does not become a volition, no more than every acorn becomes an oak, for the good reason that it is stifled in its birth by opposing sensations. Hence, the volitions are resolved into the sensations, and the power of volition is simply the power of the strongest sensation.

The sensations, in this view of the subject, become the sum total of the psychological phenomena, and the notion of the will as a separate faculty, or a regulating power in the mind to control the sensations, is a mere prejudice that arises from observing the results that follow the conflicts of the sensations. These sensations cannot all triumph, any more than a leaf in the wind can go a dozen ways at the same time. No, the prerogative of triumphing belongs only to the strongest, just as when a dozen forces act upon an elastic ball at the same time, to impel it in different directions, the one whose strength overbalances all the rest will carry the ball in its own direction. Such appears to be Edwards's idea, when he says, " Determining the will is as when we speak of the determination of motion, we mean causing the motion to be such a way, or in such a direction, rather than another." In speaking of the difficulty of going against motives, also, he says, " If a man can surmount ten degrees of difficulty of this kind with twenty degrees of strength, because the degrees of strength are beyond the degrees of difficulty ; yet if the difficulty be increased to thirty degrees, and his strength not also increased, his strength will be wholly insufficient to surmount the difficulty." This case is adduced as an example of moral necessity and impossibility.

When we come to inquire into what constitutes these ten, or these thirty degrees of difficulty, we find them 'motives,' 'biases,' sensations going with that amount of force in a particular direction. And when we analyze the man's twenty degrees of strength for resistance, we find nothing but contrary sensations; for the man's will has no power of going against a definite current of influences, except as it feels the impulsive force of contrary influences. Between these clasping currents of influence or of sensation, therefore, the will comes to just nothing at all. As a faculty it can have no separate existence. All that can be said about it is, that when one current becomes strong enough to master the other, the effect which ensues we are accustomed to call a volition. This volition, however, is merely the name by which we signalize the triumphant sensation.

The doctrine of necessity, therefore, seems to be a virtual reduction of the moral, to a level with the physical government. Sensations in themselves considered are as involuntary as the wind, and as destitute of a moral character. Nor is it possible, without introducing into connexion with them some principle radically different in its character, for moral obligation to result from their exercise. No matter what degree of strength or intensity a sensation might acquire, still it could not give a moral result without the superadded influence of a principle in its nature different and more exalted. That principle is found in the faculty of will. We have only to fix in our minds correct notions of such a faculty, to see how impossible it is that it should become the passive tool of the sensations. Though it cannot exist without them, more than a king can be a king without subjects, as we before said, yet the existence of both being admitted, we have then two distinct classes of powers, as different from each other as morals are from physics, and a virtue from a vice.

There is something in the voluntary powers so peculiar, as to render all reasoning concerning them, which is derived from the analogy of physical cause and effect, extremely doubtful and unsatisfactory. Perhaps some radical element of difference between the *laws* of moral and physical causation may hereafter come to light. At all events, the difficulty which we feel with the doctrine of moral necessity, has been felt by minds of such compass of thought, as to give great weight to their opinions. Says Sir James Mackintosh, "It is impossible for reason to consider occurrences otherwise than as bound together by the con-

nexion of cause and effect ; and in this circumstance consists the strength of the necessitarian system. But conscience, which is equally a constituent part of the mind, has other laws. It is composed of *emotions and desires, which contemplate only those dispositions which depend on the will.*\* Now, it is of the nature of an emotion to withdraw the mind from the contemplation of every idea but that of the object that excites it." "The ear cannot see, nor the eye hear. Why, then, should not the greater powers of reason and conscience have different habitual modes of contemplating voluntary actions ? How strongly do experience and analogy seem to require the arrangement of motive and volition under the classes of causes and effects ? With what irresistible power, on the other hand, do all our moral sentiments remove extrinsic agency from view, and concentrate all feeling in the agent himself ! The one manner of thinking may predominate among the speculative few in their short moments of abstraction ; the other will be that of all other men, and of the speculator himself when he is called upon to act, or when his feelings are powerfully excited by the amiable or odious dispositions of his fellow-men." "It may be well to consider whether the constant success of the advocates of necessity on one ground, and of the partisans of freewill on another, does not seem to indicate that the two parties contemplate the subject from different points of view, that neither habitually sees more than one side of it, and that they look at it through the medium of different states of mind."<sup>†</sup>

4. Our subject shows the *true philosophy of mental and moral discipline.* Discipline consists in giving power to the will over the other faculties to hold them to a definite issue. It is voluntary in its inception, voluntary in its progress, and voluntary in its consummation. Nor can there be mental or moral discipline, where there is not an exertion of will. The occasions and opportunities for it may exist, but they can accomplish nothing, till there is an effort of will in taking advantage of them. The philosophy of discipline in its details is an unoccupied field, upon which needs to be written the ablest work in the English language.

\* This is precisely our idea of the passions, affections, and intellec-tions of real life, as depending on the will

<sup>†</sup> Ethical Philosophy, pp. 393, 396, 397, 398.

5. *It is a mistake to suppose that effort of will to attain the ends of a holy life should diminish a sense of dependence on God.* It has directly the contrary effect. None feel their own inherent incompetency, so much as those who strive most to be holy.

Finally, *it is difficult to conceive a contrast greater than that of a well disciplined and a neglected will.* Compare the will of Carey, holding him to his object through a forty years' exposure to the inhospitable customs and burning suns of India, with that of one of our fashionably educated daughters. He is a being of stern will, an unbending soul, while she is a mere budget of sympathies. To dance, sport, feed her fancy from the delicious pages of the latest novel, go into convulsions over the corpse of her favorite canary, while she is cruel as a vulture towards the real sufferings of her own species, and thus, to make it the end and glory of her life *to be, as well as seem to be,* a mere aggregation of ungovernable feelings, is the height of her ambition. She is not involuntary in it, or she would not be to blame; but she prides herself in merging her voluntariness in her feelings. Who can estimate the difference of the two characters? —

---

## A R T I C L E V.

### THE CHRISTIAN SACRAMENTS.

By Rev. Enosch Pond, D. D., Professor in the Theological Seminary, Bangor, Me.

#### *Signification of the term Sacrament.*

THE word *sacrament* is not found in the New Testament; and in entering upon a consideration of the subject before us, it is important that the proper meaning of this word be ascertained, and the manner of its introduction into the current phraseology of Christians should be pointed out. The word in question is from the Latin *sacramentum*, which in classic use has two significations. First, it denotes the sum of money which each of the parties in a law-suit was required to lay down at the commencement of the trial, and which, being forfeited by the party

beaten, was devoted to public uses.\* Hence it was called *sacramentum*, a sacred deposit. Between this and the *Christian* use of the term, I can discover no obvious affinity. But, secondly, the term was used by the Romans to signify *jurejurandum*, an *oath*; and more especially the oath by which the Roman soldier bound himself “to obey his commander in all things; to attend whenever he ordered his appearance; and never to leave the army but with his consent.” In this sense, the word is continually used by Cicero, Cæsar, Livy, and all the best Latin writers. And many have supposed that the *Christian* use of the term was strongly analogous to this, and in fact borrowed from it; that in receiving the sacraments, the *Christian* binds himself by oath to Christ, as the Roman soldier bound himself to obey his commander. But we have two objections to this supposition. In the first place, there is no evidence that the early Christians regarded themselves as *sworn* into the service of Christ, and bound to him by the solemnity of an oath; or that they ever used the word in question in such a sense.† And, secondly, this supposition is contradicted by another view of the subject which is altogether more probable. The peculiar, *Christian* sense of the word *sacramentum* seems to have been derived, not from either of its classical significations, but from the ancient Latin versions of the Bible. These versions began to be made very early; some of them in the Apostolic age, and others at a later period. And when we look into these versions, we find *sacramentum* used in altogether a peculiar sense. It denotes any thing *secret*, *recondite*, *incomprehensible*.

---

\* Ea pecunia, quæ in judicium venit, in litibus, *sacramentum* dicitur, a sacro. Qui petebat, et qui inficiabatur, de aliis rebus uterque quingentos æris ad Pontificem deponebant: de aliis rebus item certo alio legitimo numero assium. Qui judicio vicerat, suum saeramentum a sacro auferebat: vieti ad ærarium redibat.—Varro.

† Pliny uses the word in this sense, in his celebrated letter to the emperor Trajan. The Christians, he says, “were accustomed to meet together on a stated day, and sing a hymn to Christ as God, and bind themselves (*sacramento*) by an oath to commit no crime,” etc. But Pliny was probably mistaken as to the sense in which the Christians used this term. He had heard of their taking a *sacrament* in their meetings, and supposed, of course, that this meant an *oath*.

sible, and is synonymous with the Greek *μυστήριον*, or mystery. In the sense of these old Latin versions, any thing which might properly be called a mystery, was a sacrament. Thus Nebuchadnezzar's dream, of which we have an account in the second chapter of Daniel, and which was hidden from himself, is, in the Vulgate, repeatedly called a *sacrament*, or *secret*. In place of Paul's language, "Great is the mystery of godliness," we have in this version, "Great is the *sacrament* of godliness." Also, where Paul, speaking of marriage, says, "This is a great mystery; but I speak of Christ and the church;" the Vulgate has it, "This is a great *sacrament*," etc.\* And so in the Revelation, "The mystery of the seven stars" is rendered, "The *sacrament* of the seven stars." Why the early translators of the Bible into Latin adopted this peculiar sense of the word *sacrament* I pretend not to say. Of the fact that they did so, there can be no doubt. Now these Latin translations were the common *Bibles* of the first Latin Fathers, as Tertullian, Cyprian, Ambrose, and others; and these were the men who introduced the word *sacrament* into the phraseology of the church. It was natural, in their circumstances, that they should do so; and the supposition is irresistible, that they would use the word in the sense in which they found it used in their Bibles. Accordingly we find Tertullian, when speaking of the doctrines of the Trinity, and of the incarnation of Christ, calling them alternately (*mysteria et sacramenta*) mysteries and sacraments. Indeed, he and some other of the Latin fathers, use the word *sacrament* to denote the whole *Christian doctrine*;† just as Paul sometime calls the doctrines of religion mysteries. "Let a man so account of us as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the *mysteries of God*." 1 Cor. 4: 1.

The word *sacrament* is used by Tertullian, and by most of the Latin fathers, in reference to baptism and the Lord's supper (*sacramentum aquæ et eucharistæ*). Nor is it difficult to see how these rites came to be denoted by this term, in accordance with the sense which the Fathers gave to it. For in both these rites, there is an outward sign, and a thing signified. There is the *form* of the rite, which is obvious to the sense, and the

\* From this passage, so translated, the Romanists have come to regard marriage as a sacrament.

† Thus Prudentius, "Nolite verba, cum *sacramentum meum erit canendum*, providenter quærere."

*spiritual import*, which is conveyed under it. Of course, there is that which, to the casual observer, the *uninitiated*, is *concealed, secret*, and which, in the common language of the times, would be called *mystery, sacrament*.

But there is another reason why the word *sacrament* was employed to denote these rites, which probably had more influence. The Pagan priests were accustomed to celebrate the more sacred rites of their religion in secret, and to call them *mysteries*. In imitation of this practice, and with a view to render their religion more acceptable to Pagans, the Christian Fathers early began to celebrate baptism and the Lord's supper in private. None were allowed to be present except the initiated, the communicants, and the rites themselves were denominated the Christian *mysteries or sacraments*.

The word *sacrament*, like many others in common use, has undergone some change of signification since the days of Tertullian, Cyprian, Ambrose and Augustine. By all Christians who use the word at all, it has come to be appropriated to the outward *rites and ceremonies* of their religion. To be sure, all Christians do not use it in reference to the same rites; but it is restricted, so far as I know, by all who bear the Christian name, to denote certain *outward ritual observances*. The question arises, therefore, and it is an important one in this discussion, *What is requisite to constitute a rite of our religion, in the sense in which the term is now employed, a sacrament?*

#### *Distinguishing marks of a Sacrament.*

Without particularly noticing every thing which might be brought forward in answer to the above inquiry, it will be sufficient for my present purpose to remark,

1. That in order to constitute a religious rite a sacrament, it must be of *Divine institution*. Neither the wisdom of man, nor the traditions of the elders, nor any mere human device or invention, is sufficient to constitute a Christian sacrament. The observance or rite, which is entitled to this distinction, must be an ordinance of Christ. It must be of Divine institution.

2. A rite, in order to be regarded as a sacrament of Christ, must be characterized by *significancy* and *appropriateness*. It must not be an idle ceremony. It must have a meaning—an important meaning; and this meaning must be sufficiently obvious to be understood. Otherwise, it could hardly be regarded

as an institution of Christ. Who could believe that Christ would appoint an ordinance in his church, that was without meaning; or the meaning of which was so obscure and recondite, as to be calculated rather to puzzle and perplex his people, than to instruct and edify them?

3. An outward observance, in order to be regarded as a sacrament of our religion, must hold an intimate and vital connexion with *the church*. It must be included in the covenant of the church. It must be a rite of the church. The Christian sacraments, according as the phrase is now understood (whether they be few or many), are all of them *church ordinances*. They are tokens, as circumcision was, of the church covenant. Being outward rites, they go to give visibility to the church. They belong to those, and those only, who are embraced in the covenant, and hold some connexion with the church. No rite which is not thus vitally connected with the church, can be regarded as a sacrament of the church, or a Christian sacrament. I add,

4. An outward rite, in order to be a sacrament of the church, must be one of *universal* and *perpetual obligation*. It must not be confined to the Apostolic age, or to any other age. It must not be restricted to the Jews, or to any other people. Christianity was designed, and is adapted, to become the religion of the world. The Christian dispensation is not to give place to any other dispensation, but is to continue to the end of time. Hence, those rites of our religion, which are entitled to be regarded as sacraments, being once instituted, are to remain. They are not to be superseded or done away. They are to be observed whenever and wherever the church of Christ is established. They are to prevail, with the religion of Christ, all over the earth, and continue to the end of the world.

#### *The number of the Sacraments.*

Having mentioned several marks, or characteristics, by which the sacraments are distinguished, it will not be difficult, by the help of these, to determine the number of the sacraments, and to decide which they are.

All Christians, who hold to any outward rites, are agreed in considering baptism and the Lord's supper as sacraments. Protestants believe these to be the only sacraments; while in the church of Rome, five others have been associated with them,

making seven in all, viz. Confirmation, Ordination, Auricular Confession, Extreme Unction, and Marriage.

I may remark, in passing, that there seems to have been no dispute in the church as to the number of the sacraments, or any attempts to define and settle their number, until after the twelfth century. The discussion of this subject commenced among the schoolmen, and was settled, so far as the authority of one man could settle it, by Peter Lombard, in his four books of Sentences. The principal reason why he decided upon seven sacraments, rather than a less or greater number, was, that seven is a *sacred* number, and of course the sacraments must be presumed to be seven. In this decision, as in almost every thing else, he was followed by the principal doctors of the Romish church; but the sacraments were not authoritatively determined to be seven, until the Council of Trent, in the sixteenth century.

But let us try the five additional sacraments of the Romish church by the distinguishing marks that have been laid down, and see if they will bear the test. The first of these is *confirmation*. But this fails at the very threshold. There is no evidence that confirmation, as practised in the Romish and Episcopal churches, is of Divine institution. The passages commonly cited in proof of this point have not the remotest allusion to the subject. The apostles often laid their hands on the new converts, after baptism, and imparted to them the Holy Ghost, in his miraculous influences. In other words, they imparted miraculous gifts, Acts 8 : 17-19. But this was a very different thing from *confirmation*, in the modern sense of that term.

The second of the Romish sacraments to be examined is *ordination*. This is, indeed, a rite of Divine appointment; a significant rite; and one which, I suppose, is to be perpetuated. But does it hold the required connexion with the church? Is it included in the covenant of the church? Does it go to give form and visibility to the church? Does it belong to all those who hold a connexion with the church? All these questions must be answered in the negative. Of course, ordination fails in one of the requisite characteristics of a sacrament. It is a Divinely appointed mode of investing a man with office in the church of Christ, but cannot be considered as a sacrament of the church.

The third of the Romish sacraments proposed to be considered, is that of *auricular confession*; or, as it is sometimes

called, the sacrament of *penance*. This is destitute of each and all of the marks of a sacrament ; but it is enough to say of it, that it has no foundation in the word of God. We are required to repent of our sins ; to confess them to one another, and to God ; and to seek forgiveness at his hands. But we are nowhere required to confess them to a priest, to submit to the penance he enjoins, and to receive his absolution.

Another of the Romish sacraments is that of *extreme unction*. This is founded on a passage in the Epistle of James. “Is any sick among you ? Let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, *anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord* ; and the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up,” etc. James 5: 14. Here is authority for *an unction* of the sick, but not for what is called *extreme unction*. The unction of the Apostle was designed for the *recovery* of the sick ; and, if accompanied with believing prayer, had the promise of recovery. But extreme unction in the Romish church is administered in the last hours of life, and is intended (as the name imports) not so much for the recovery of those who receive it, as to prepare them for approaching death. It is obvious too, as the unction spoken of by the Apostle looked to the performance of a miracle, it must have been limited to the age of miracles, and could not have been designed to be perpetuated in the church.

Still another of the Romish sacraments to be examined, is that of *marriage*. This we acknowledge to be of Divine institution ; and it was designed, without doubt, to be perpetual. Yet it can hardly be said to be a religious rite in any sense, since no form of celebrating it is prescribed in the Bible. Besides, it lacks altogether that connexion with the church which is necessary to constitute it a Christian sacrament.

There is an injunction of Christ, which looks quite as much like instituting a sacrament as either of those which have been considered, and which some Christians have regarded in the light of a sacrament, though the Romanists have passed it over : “If I, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet, *ye also ought to wash one another's feet.*” John 13: 14. Here would seem to be a positive institution, and a very significant one. But then, like marriage, it lacks that vital connexion with the church, without which it cannot be regarded as a sacrament of the church. It is also evident, as we have no account of its being stately practised in the apostolic churches, that it was

not designed to be perpetuated.\* The *spirit* of the injunction, rather than the letter, was intended to be observed. Christians are bound to practise mutual condescension, and to perform for each other, when circumstances demand it, the humblest offices of kindness; but are not bound literally, and at stated seasons, "to wash one another's feet."

We come back, then, from the foregoing examination, upon baptism and the Lord's supper, as alone entitled to be denominated *Christian sacraments*. These alone have all the distinguishing marks of sacraments; and as the Scriptures have nothing to say, in terms, about sacraments, and decide nothing expressly concerning them; it is only by their peculiar distinguishing marks that the sacraments can be known. Both baptism and the Lord's supper are of *Divine institution*. We have the express words of their institution in the Scriptures. Both of them, also, are eminently and obviously *significant*. Both hold the required connexion with *the church*; so that they may strictly be denominated sacraments of the church. And both of them were designed to be *perpetuated*. Of the Lord's supper, it is more than intimated that it is to continue in the church till Christ comes again to judge the world. 1 Cor. 2: 26. While the practice of the apostles and of the church, in all ages, proves that baptism with water is of perpetual obligation. Here, then, we have two sacraments of the church, and two only. And these are to be observed in their primitive simplicity, according to the original institution, divested of all that rubbish of ceremonies which superstition has, at some periods, thrown around them.

#### *Nature, Import, and Meaning of the Sacraments.*

It has been said already, that the sacraments of the New Testament are highly and obviously significant. They have a meaning, and this meaning can be perceived and understood. We inquire, therefore, in the next place, as to the *nature, import, and meaning* of the sacraments. What do they teach us? and what effect were they designed to have upon us?

We are taught by the Romanists, and by some high church Episcopalians, that the sacraments are not so much *signs* of

---

\* The washing spoken of in 1 Tim. 5: 10, was evidently not a sacramental washing, but only an ordinary act of kindness—a rite of hospitality. "If she have washed the saints' feet," etc.

great Scriptural realities, as the realities themselves. Baptism is *regeneration*; or it is accompanied by an influence, when rightly administered, which invariably and instantly produces regeneration. And the celebration of the eucharist involves a literal *sacrifice of Christ*. The elements, after consecration, are transmuted into the body and blood, the soul and divinity of the Lord Jesus Christ. He is literally sacrificed upon the altar; and in partaking of the sacrament, the communicant receives, *ipso facto*, the Lord Jesus. Or if, as some teach, the bread and wine are not strictly changed into the body and blood of Christ, his body and blood are *present in them*, and are actually received by all the communicants.

In remarking upon these strange theories, it will be necessary to consider the two sacraments separately. And first, let us inquire whether baptism is regeneration; or whether, when rightly administered, it is accompanied by an influence which invariably and instantly produces regeneration. And if we will submit to be guided by Scripture, and not by tradition and church authority, this question need not detain us long. The Scriptures represent regeneration as an *internal, spiritual* change; a change of the *affections*, a change of *heart*, effected by the special operations of the Holy Spirit, and standing connected with final salvation. "Make you a new heart and a new spirit, for why will ye die?" "Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God." "According to His mercy He saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost." "Whatsoever is born of God, overcometh the world." If any please to use the term regeneration in a sense of their own, aside from that which the Scriptures have assigned to it, they must. We shall have no dispute with them about words. But until some better definition or description of it shall be given, than that which is given by our Saviour and his apostles, we shall be justified in taking theirs; and shall proceed to inquire whether regeneration, in *their* sense of it, is invariably and instantly effected in baptism.\* That it is not, I argue,

---

\* The idea of regeneration contained in the liturgy of the Episcopal church is a *very Scriptural one*. The subject of it is there said to be *regenerated by the Holy Spirit, made a child of God, and incorporated into his holy church*. He is, moreover, represented as "*being dead unto sin, and living unto*

1. Because adults are always required, in the Scriptures, to repent and believe, (or, which is the same, to be regenerated,) *previous* to baptism. It was those that repented and "gladly received the word," who were baptized on the day of Pentecost. It was not till the Samaritans "*believed* Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom of Christ," that they were admitted by him to baptism. Shortly after, we find Philip imposing the same condition of coming to the ordinance upon the Ethiopian eunuch. "*If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest.*" The Holy Ghost fell upon the family of Cornelius, and satisfied Peter as to their *piety*, before he called for water that they might be baptized. Ananias would not baptize Saul of Tarsus, till a voice from heaven assured him of the *piety* of this then recent persecutor. Indeed, such was the invariable practice of the apostles and their fellow-laborers. Of all adults, (for we say nothing here about infants,) they demanded evidence of piety, and of course of regeneration, *previous* to administering to them the ordinance of baptism. How, then, I ask, could their regeneration be effected *in baptism?* They must be regenerated previously, and the apostles must have good evidence of this, or the sacrament of baptism was withheld.

2. The inspired writers represent *the gospel*, the *truth of God*, and not baptism, as the great instrument of regeneration. "*Of his own will begat he us, with the word of truth.*" "*In Christ Jesus have I begotten you, through the gospel.*" "*Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, which is the word of God.*" Such is the current representation of the Scriptures in regard to this matter. The word of God, the truths and motives of the gospel, constitute the means, the instrumentality, by which impenitent men are born again; which is quite inconsistent with the idea of their being regenerated in baptism. But,

3. The theory of baptismal regeneration is contradicted and refuted by *innumerable facts*. It is a fact, in the first place,

---

*righteousness, being buried with Christ in his death.*" Here, surely, is a *thorough spiritual regeneration*. And yet the subject of this regeneration is the unconscious infant, and the time when it takes place is the *moment of its baptism*—because immediately after baptism the minister is to return thanks that *all this has been done*. See the Baptismal Service for Infants.

that vast numbers of human beings have been regenerated *before* they were baptized. This was the case, as we have seen, with the Ethiopian eunuch, the jailer, the three thousand on the day of Pentecost, and with all those who were baptized, on a profession of their faith, in the age of the apostles. It has been the case with all the proper, duly qualified subjects of adult baptism, from that day to the present. They have all *professed* to be pious, regenerated persons, and if sincere, have been *truly so*, previous to baptism.

Again, it is a fact which will hardly be questioned, that there have been many pious, regenerated persons; not a few of whom are now in heaven; who were *never baptized*. They came to the knowledge of their sins, and repented of them, and had new and holy affections of heart; but were kept back by circumstances from making an open profession of their faith, and sealing it in baptism. Who can doubt that there have been some truly pious, regenerated Quakers? We hope there have been some pious among the heathen. And how often are persons regenerated on beds of sickness, who die without receiving baptism?

But especially is it a fact, that vast multitudes have been baptized—canonically baptized—who never were the subjects of regenerating grace. Of this number were not a few, in the age of the apostles. Such were Simon, the sorcerer, Hymeneus, Alexander, Phygelus, Philetus, Hermogenes, and all those of whom the apostle John speaks, who “went out from us, because they were not of us.” These all had once been professing Christians in good standing; some of them Christian ministers. Of course, they must have been baptized persons, and baptized canonically, under the eye, and, perhaps, by the very hands of the apostles. Yet it seems they were not regenerated; unless it shall be said, in contradiction to the express language of Scripture—and, I may add, of the Articles of the Church of England\*—that the truly regenerate may finally fall away and perish. And when we look out, at the present day, into the nominally Christian world, what vast multitudes do we see, on every

---

\* In article seventeenth, it is said of all those who are “*called*, according to God’s purpose, by his Spirit,” that “they are freely justified; made sons of God by adoption; made like the image of Jesus Christ; walk religiously in good works; and at length *attain to everlasting felicity*.”

hand, who have been baptized—baptized, the most of them, in the Romish and Episcopal churches—who give not the slightest evidence that they have been regenerated; but who, on the contrary, furnish the most painful evidence, all the evidence that depraved and corrupted mortals can furnish, that they are still in their sins.

Such, then, are the obvious, undeniable *facts* of the case;—great numbers regenerated *before* they are baptized; other numbers regenerated, but never baptized; and more than all in the vast number of those who have been baptized, but not regenerated. How, then, can it be pretended, in face of all these facts, that baptism and regeneration are identical; or that an influence invariably accompanies baptism, when rightly administered, which at once regenerates the soul?

But it is time that we turn to the other sacrament, and inquire whether, instead of being a *sign* of the sacrifice of Christ's body and blood, it is the proper *sacrifice itself*; or whether the body and blood of Christ are so *united with it*, and *present in it*, that they are literally received by the communicant. I class these two theories of the sacrament—*transubstantiation* and *consubstantiation*—together, because, though not precisely the same, nor clogged by the same difficulties and absurdities, they amount practically to about the same thing. They are both founded on a too literal interpretation of the words of the institution: *This is my body*; *This is my blood*.

Those who insist on a literal interpretation of these words ought, if consistent, to interpret various other declarations of our Saviour after the same manner. He said, for example, *I am the vine*; *I am the way*; *I am the door*; but who ever thought of giving a literal interpretation to passages such as these?

It accords with the general usage of the Bible, when one thing is to be understood as denoting, symbolizing, signifying another, to employ the connecting verb *to be*, as in the passages now under consideration. Thus, in interpreting Pharaoh's dream, Joseph says, "The seven good kine *are* seven years; and the seven good ears *are* seven years;" i. e., they *denote*, they *signify*, seven years. So the ten horns, in one of Daniel's visions, "*are* ten kings;" and in the Apocalypse, "The seven stars *are* the angels of the seven churches, and the seven candlesticks *are* the seven churches." Moses, speaking of the paschal lamb, says, "*It is* the Lord's passover;" just as our Saviour says of the broken bread, "*This is* my body." This pe-

cular idiom of the Bible, in accordance with which our Saviour's words are to be interpreted, the Jews retain to the present day. Thus, of the unleavened cakes which they use in the celebration of their passover, they are accustomed to say, "This is the bread of poverty and affliction, which our fathers did eat in the land of Egypt."

It is a good rule of interpretation, that the literal sense of a word is not to be dropped, and a figurative one assumed, without necessity; and we are quite willing to abide by this rule in the case before us. For there is a necessity of putting a somewhat figurative sense upon the language of our Saviour;—a necessity as urgent, as violent, as can be conceived of in any case whatever. At the time of using this language, it must be remembered, our Saviour was *alive*, *in the body*, and in the presence of his disciples. And could they understand him as intending to give them that identical body, under the form of bread, which they saw living and breathing before them; and that identical blood, under the form of wine, which was then actually coursing in his veins? But even this is not the worst of it. The body which our Lord symbolically gave them, was a *broken* body; and the blood was *shed* blood. And if we are to suppose the disciples to have understood him literally, then they must have regarded him as giving them his crucified body, before it was crucified; and his shed blood, while as yet his blood had not been shed!! They must have regarded him as giving them a dead body, which was there alive; a broken, mangled, crucified body, which they saw before them well and whole!! They must have believed that he held himself, body and blood, in his own hands; and then passed himself over into their hands; and that while they actually saw him before them, he was literally in their own mouths!! If a supposition so monstrous and self-contradictory does not create a necessity for a somewhat figurative interpretation of the words, then no such necessity ever was created, or can be supposed, under any circumstances, to exist.

But there are other objections to the theory, that the bread and wine, in the act of consecration, are changed into the literal body and blood of the Lord. The bread, subsequent to the act of consecration, is repeatedly and positively declared in the Scriptures to be still bread. Thus, it is said of the disciples, after the Pentecost, that "they continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in *breaking of bread*, and in

prayers." At a later period, they were accustomed to "come together on the first day of the week, to *break bread*." Again : "The *bread* which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ ?" 1 Cor. 10: 16.

It may be further objected to the theory of transubstantiation, which supposes a literal sacrifice of Christ, in every instance of the celebration of the supper, that on this ground he must have been sacrificed, in all probability, millions of times. But it is repeatedly and expressly declared in the Scriptures, that Christ has been sacrificed but once. "Now *once*, in the end of the world, hath Christ appeared, to put away sin, by the sacrifice of himself." "Christ was *once* offered to bear the sins of many." "Christ also hath *once* suffered for sins, the just for the unjust."

But leaving the Scriptures, it is objection enough to the theory under consideration, that it contradicts and subverts the testimony of *all our senses*. Our senses were given us, to make us acquainted with external things and their properties ; to give us a knowledge of the outer world. And this purpose they are admirably adapted to answer. On their testimony we confidently rely, not only in the common affairs of life, but for nearly all our evidence, whether of natural or revealed religion. How do we discover marks of design in the world around us, and consequent evidence of an all-wise Designer, but from the testimony of the senses ? And how did the disciples of Christ know that he performed miracles, or uttered prophecies, but from the same testimony ? And how do we become acquainted with any of the truths and facts of the gospel, but by reading of them in the Scriptures, or hearing of them from the lips of the living teacher ; in other words, from the testimony of the senses ? Certainly, any theory of philosophy or religion, which contradicts the unequivocal testimony of the senses, as transubstantiation confessedly does, is on that account to be rejected. It shakes the very foundations of knowledge, and cannot be received as true.

The foregoing objections lie chiefly against the doctrine of transubstantiation. There are others which lie equally against *consubstantiation*, and are more than sufficient to overthrow it. Both these theories suppose our Saviour's human *body*, his *corporeal, material frame*, to be in thousands of different places at the same instant. The Scriptures positively assure us that it is in heaven ; but the doctrines we are considering place it upon

earth ; and in every part of the earth at once, wherever the sacrament is rightly administered.

Just before the crucifixion, our Lord told his disciples that he was about to *leave* them, and return to his Father in heaven. "It is expedient for you that I go away." "I leave the world, and go to the Father." But, on the theories before us, this language was not true. Christ did not leave the world, in any sense. As he did not leave it spiritually, so he did not leave it *bodily*. His body still remained on the earth, to be sacrificed and eaten, in every celebration of the holy supper.

The Apostle Paul teaches, that while the saints are at home in the body, they are *absent from the Lord*; i. e., absent from his *personal, corporeal* presence. But according to the theories before us, this is not true. Men may be 'at home in the body, and yet *present* with the Lord ; present with his body, soul, and Divinity (i. e., if they can find a priest to give them the sacrament)—present in every sense in which the saints are present with him in heaven.

It is implied in the doctrines before us, not only that our Saviour's body is in thousands of different places, but that it is in exceedingly different and totally opposite *states*, at the same time. It is in a state of glory, at the right hand of God in heaven, and in a state of the deepest humiliation on earth. It is exalted "far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but in that which is to come;" and at the same instant is in the mouths of thousands of communicants, to be there chewed and masticated, and then swallowed and digested !!

But I will not pursue farther these incredible, impossible, monstrous suppositions. It is mortifying to think that any human being should ever have so stultified himself, as to entertain them for a moment. It is distressing to know, that they are not only entertained, but professedly *believed*, at this moment, by millions and millions of our fellow-men.

Nor are the theories on which I have remarked, to be regarded in the light of mere absurdities. They are *dangerous* absurdities; full of hazard, and fraught with ruin, to the interests of erring souls. What can be more dangerous than to persuade *unpraved* and ruined sinner, that by the mere administration of an outward rite, he is *regenerated*; "regenerated by the Holy Spirit," made a "child of God," and an heir of the king-

dom of heaven!\* Will such an one be likely to seek any other regeneration? And yet, if he experiences no other, he will assuredly be lost. It may be said of baptism, what Paul said of its prototype, circumcision: "Neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a *new creature*."

And the false theories of the other sacrament, which have been examined, are even more dangerous, if possible, than that of baptismal regeneration. Transubstantiation, first of all, plunges its votaries into the grossest *idolatry*. The consecrated, transmuted bread and wine, are reverently worshipped. They are adored, on bended knees, as the very Saviour.

The breaden god, having been worshipped, is next eaten. What other class of idolators was ever known to devour their gods? Yet the Romanist literally *eats his god*, so often as he partakes of the consecrated wafer!!

Nor is this the worst of it. The supposed divinity, having been adored and eaten, is then *trusted to*, as an indwelling Saviour. The poor deluded sinner flatters himself that he has *received Christ*. He has literally eaten the flesh of the Son of God, and has eternal life abiding in him. Of course, he is satisfied with what he has done. He knows, he seeks no other salvation. He passes blindly on to death and the judgment, and finds, when it is too late, that he has a lie in his right hand.

But it is time that we turn from these absurd and ruinous theories of the sacraments, and inquire as to their *true import and meaning*.

Almost all Protestants agree, that the sacraments are to be regarded as *signs or symbols*. Under cover of the outward form, *spiritual realities* are set forth; important truths are exhibited. This is true, in the first place, of baptism. As it is by the application of water that the outward man is purified and cleansed, so baptism with water denotes *internal purification*. The great truth or fact of which it is pre-eminently the sign, is *regeneration*, by the special influences of the Holy Spirit. This we learn from the two following considerations: 1. Baptism and regeneration are often placed together in the Scriptures, as tho' there was some important connexion between them. "Except a man be born of *water* and of the *Spirit*, he cannot enter the kingdom of God." "According to his mercy he saved us."

---

\* Such is almost the *very language* of the Episcopal Prayer Book.

by the *washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost.*" 2. The outpouring of the Spirit in regeneration and sanctification is very often, in Scripture, called a *baptism*. It is the *baptism of the Holy Ghost*. I need not quote passages in proof of this point. They will occur to every one who is at all acquainted with the phraseology of the New Testament. Baptism, then, although it teaches indirectly many things, is pre-eminently the sign of regeneration. And this, without doubt, was the reason why it was so early confounded with regeneration. The fathers of the church mistook the sign for the thing signified by it.

That the Lord's supper is a *sign or symbol* we have the most abundant proof; and as to the great fact denoted by it, there can be no doubt. The broken bread is an emblem of our Saviour's bruised, broken body. The wine is an emblem of his blood. In the whole ordinance, taken together, we have set before us, symbolically, *the death of Christ*—the great and only foundation of the sinner's hope. "As oft as ye eat of this bread, and drink of this cup, ye do show forth the *Lord's death*, till he come." 1 Cor. 2: 26.

I have said that nearly all Protestants agree as to the *symbolical* character of the sacraments. Some have insisted that they are *mere symbols*; and that they have no meaning, virtue, or efficacy, beyond this. But such a view of the subject seems to me quite defective and inadequate. The sacraments of the church are to be regarded as not only signs, but *seals*; seals of the *church covenant*—which includes, of course, the covenant of grace. There is an obvious difference between a *sign* and a *seal*. A sign is *significant*, a seal *binds*. As signs, baptism signifies regeneration; and the supper, the death of Christ. As seals, these holy ordinances bind all those who receive them to be faithful to their covenant engagements; and on condition of their fidelity, God condescends to bind himself to fulfil upon them the rich promises of his grace.

As signs, the sacraments are full of rich and glorious meaning, and altogether worthy of their Divine Author. But it is in the character of seals, that their solemnity and importance more especially consist. When an individual receives baptism, he virtually enters into covenant with God, and *binds* himself to fulfil his covenant. Or if he presents his child for baptism, he enters into covenant respecting the child, and binds himself, as before, to fulfil it.

So when an individual goes to the supper of the Lord, he *renews* the covenant into which he had before entered, and by a solemn sealing ordinance binds himself to be faithful. And this covenant is renewed, and the seal repeated, every time the sacrament is received. It is this consideration, pre-eminently, which renders it so solemn a thing to go to the Lord's table; which renders it necessary for a man to "examine himself, and so eat of that bread, and drink of that cup;" which makes it so fearfully true of those who come to the ordinance unworthily, that they "eat and drink judgment (*xopma*) to themselves." It is solemn to enter into covenant with God. It is solemn to renew this covenant. But it is specially solemn to *seal it* upon our consciences and hearts by receiving the emblems of a Saviour's body and blood.

As to the *presence of Christ* in the sacrament of the supper, we have seen in what sense he is not present. He is not present *materially, corporeally*. His presence with his people in this solemn ordinance is altogether of a *spiritual* nature. He is present by the power and influence of his Spirit.

In this sense, Christ is present with his people when they meet together for prayer and praise. "Where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them." In this sense, he is present with them in their closets, in the house of God, whenever they engage in duty, or come together for his worship. But Christ is specially present with his people in the sacraments; and more especially, I think, in that of *the supper*. There are good reasons why it should be so. In this holy ordinance, Christ is brought very specially to the view of his people. He is presented symbolically, not merely to their ears, but to their eyes. They see him, as it were, crucified before them. They have visible, sensible communion with him. He is brought, also, most impressively to their *recollections*. They come to his table, in remembrance of him. They commemorate his bleeding, dying love. And then, as we have seen, they *renew* their covenant engagements to him; and renew upon their souls the solemn seal of these engagements. They bind themselves by new obligations to be the Lord's, and to live to his glory.

Now all these circumstances are calculated and intended to strengthen the faith of God's people, to inspire gratitude, to kindle the flame of love, and to prepare them for a more entire consecration, and a more devoted obedience. And in proportion

as these objects are fulfilled upon them, Christ will be with them by his Spirit, to comfort and to bless them. He will be present with them at his table, to fill their souls with Divine light and love, their hearts with rejoicing, and their lips with praise.

And all this accords, I have no doubt, with the experience of the best and wisest Christians. They enjoy Christ especially in his ordinances. He makes himself known to them in the breaking of bread. They see more of his Divine presence, and feel more of his love, while sitting with him at his table—while leaning on his breast at supper, than in any other situation on this side heaven.

#### *The Efficacy of the Sacraments.*

As to the efficacy of the sacraments, or the manner in which the benefits of them are received, there is a diversity of opinion among those calling themselves Christians. In the church of Rome, two things are set forth as indispensable to the efficacy of the sacraments. The first is, that the *outward administration* be rightly performed. The second, that the *intention* of the priest performing it be rightly directed. Faith on the part of those receiving the sacraments, so far from being made a condition of the blessing, is expressly declared to be of no account. “If any man shall say, that grace is not conferred by the *sacraments themselves*, but that faith alone in the Divine promise is sufficient to obtain the grace, let him be anathema.”\* “Thus,” to use the language of another, “the sacraments are converted into a species of magical charms, which work in some mysterious way, without the concurrence of the patient; the exercise of the intellect and will, of the rational and moral powers in him, being entirely excluded.” On this ground, the sacraments might be as efficacious to a person asleep as to one awake; to an idiot, or to a man bereft of reason, as to one in the full exercise of all his powers; to the unrelenting, hardened malefactor, as to the most pious, devoted Christian.

But not only must the outward ceremonies be rightly performed, the *intention* of the priest must be rightly directed. Else, there is no virtue in the sacrament. The very essence of the thing is wanting. This, obviously, must be a most perplexing condition to the Romanist; since, when he goes to the sacrament, he can never tell whether he has received it or not. The outward ceremonies may all be rightly performed; but as to the

---

\* Canon VIII. Council of Trent.

intention of the priest performing them, who but God can look into his heart, and know for a certainty what this has been ? He may have intended something else, or his thoughts may have wandered, his mind been diverted, and he may have had no particular intention about it ;—in which case, the rite of baptism is no baptism, and the form of the eucharist is a mere empty form. On this ground, there is probably not an individual now in the church of Rome, from the Pope down to the meanest of his servants, who can tell, for a certainty, whether he has ever been baptized ; or whether he has partaken of what he conceives to be the body and blood of Christ, in a single instance.

Let the members of our churches be thankful that they are involved in no such frightful uncertainties. With us, as with the Apostles, the efficacy of the sacraments depends on no mere outward forms—on no dubious intentions of the officiating priest ; but upon *the promised presence and blessing of the Saviour*. The simple condition of our receiving the blessing is *faith* on our own part—*holy saving faith* in the crucified Lamb of God. Without such faith, it is impossible to please him ; but with it, we may be sure of his forgiveness and blessing. If we have faith in Christ, when we approach the sacraments, we *know* that we shall be accepted in them ; Christ will himself meet us at the baptismal font, or around the sacramental board, and grant us the tokens of his favor and love. And in proportion to the strength of our faith, and the ardor of our affection, our blessing will be rich and precious, our souls will be cheered with Divine light and grace, and the cup of our consolation will be full and run over.

#### *The Sacraments for Christians only.*

It follows from much that has been said, that none can approach the Christian sacraments, sincerely or acceptably, without piety. This is true, in the first place, with respect to baptism. We have seen that an adult receiving baptism, enters into and seals a covenant with God, in respect to *himself* ;—a covenant which none but a pious person *can seal*. So, when an individual gives up his child in baptism, he enters into and seals a covenant with God, in respect to his *child* ;—a covenant which none but a pious person *can seal*. No person, I repeat, who is not truly pious, can either receive baptism himself, or claim it for his child, without gross hypocrisy. Accordingly, as we have shown, in all the instances of adult baptism spoken of in the *Scriptures*, evidence of piety was sought and obtained

before the administration of the ordinance. And in each of the instances of household baptism, the same cardinal condition was fulfilled. Lydia believed, and she and her household were baptized straightway. And it is even more evident, if possible, in regard to the other sacrament, that it is intended only for true believers. The very act of feeding upon the symbol of Christ's body, implies that we feed upon him by faith. The very act of drinking the symbol of his blood, implies that our trust is in that blood. The act of visibly communing with Christ and his people, implies that we have *spiritual* communion both with him and with them. "The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? And the bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?"

We have seen, also, that this sacrament, like the other, is the seal of a covenant, into which none can enter without true piety; and that the blessing in this sacrament, like that in the other, is conditioned upon faith.

From all these considerations it is perfectly evident—too evident to admit of dispute, or require proof—that none can approach the supper of the Lord sincerely, consistently, or acceptably, without piety. So, be sure, no person can have a sufficient excuse for neglecting this ordinance, and thus breaking one of the positive injunctions of Christ, more than he can have an excuse for not being pious. Still, no one can possibly make the profession which a person must make in coming to the Lord's table, or seal the engagements which he must thereby seal, or be entitled to the blessing, without which his coming will be worse than vain, without having first given his heart to God, and committed his soul to the keeping of his Saviour.

#### *Benefits of the Sacraments.*

Among the benefits of the sacraments may be noticed, first, the argument which they furnish for the truth of Christianity. That these sacraments now exist, in connexion with the church of Christ, is a plain matter of *fact*. No one can possibly doubt this fact; and it belongs to the infidel, as much as to the Christian, to account for it. The Scriptures inform us as to the institution, origin, and design of the sacraments; but set aside this account, and who can give any other? Reject the Scriptures, and who can so much as conjecture in what manner the sacraments should ever have originated?

This argument is absolutely irresistible, in respect to the ordinance of the supper: for this is a *commemorative* ordinance. It was instituted as a memorial of the sufferings and death of Christ. Admit the story of his sufferings and death, and every thing about the ordinance, its object, its form, its character, its history, all are natural and consistent. But deny this account —reject the Scriptures, and who can tell how the sacrament of the supper could ever have been instituted; or if instituted, how it could have secured so early, and so universally, the observance and the veneration of Christians? If we had no other argument in favor of the truth of our religion, than that drawn from the existence of the sacraments, this alone would be uncontested.

Another important benefit of the sacraments consists in their giving *visibility* to the church of Christ. Without the sacraments, there might be a covenant of grace; but having no visible token, it would be comparatively out of sight and forgotten. There might be Christians—followers of Christ; but having no visible mark as his followers, they might soon be merged and mingled in the world. There might be the form of a society or church; but having nothing positive and palpable to give it visibility, it would, in all probability, be ere long swallowed up.\* Christians little think how much they are indebted, in this view, to the sacraments. Without them, it is hardly likely that the church could have subsisted, as a distinct body, to the present time; or that the forms of religion could have been maintained in the world.

Other important advantages resulting from the sacraments are very obvious, in view of what has been said. As *signs*, they are full of good influences and blessings. The instructions they communicate—the invaluable lessons which they hold forth, might long ago have been lost to the world, had it not been for their significant teachings. Or, if not wholly lost, the *impression* of these truths had been vastly diminished, and their constraining, moving, sanctifying influence had been comparatively taken away.

The *sealing* virtue of the sacraments is, moreover, a great blessing to the people of God; as it furnishes them with the

---

\* Those religious societies which reject the sacraments, are obliged to substitute something else in their place. The Quakers, Shakers, &c., give *visibility* to their societies, by peculiarities of dress, speech, and behavior.

most powerful motives to be faithful to all their covenant engagements. They have *bound* themselves to be faithful by solemn seals; and these seals are renewed, repeated, every time they come to the table of the Lord. They are furnished, also, with new and potent arguments in prayer. They may humbly approach the throne of grace, and plead God's covenant—his *sealed* covenant. They may plead that he would *remember* his own covenant, and out of *respect* to it (though they have been unfaithful) would bestow promised blessings upon themselves and their children.

But the great benefit of the sacraments is that of which I have already spoken;—the *presence of Christ* in them—that rich *blessing* of Christ which always accompanies them, when they are received in a humble, believing manner. In these ordinances of his own appointment, Christ meets his beloved people, smiles upon them, communes with them, and grants them such tokens of his spirit and grace, as they can enjoy no where else. They get a fresh anointing from the Holy One. They receive nourishment and strength, by which to run the Christian race, and overcome the difficulties and enemies which beset them in their pathway to heaven.

It is important that all Christians should be duly sensible of the great value of the sacraments, and of their obligations to bless and praise their Redeemer for them. It is justly matter of gratitude that these ordinances are few and simple; not complicated and burthensome; that they are so highly significant, impressive, and appropriate; and that, to the worthy receiver of them, their influences are all sanctifying and heavenly. Our chief concern should be, to *use* them faithfully—that so all their rich and important benefits may be realized upon our souls.

## ARTICLE VI.

## A HISTORICAL SKETCH OF MEDICAL PHILOSOPHY.

By Samuel Adams, M. D., Professor of Chemistry and Natural History, Illinois College.

THE most accumulated pressure of physical ills has never yet been able to crush the stern spirit of man. "The spirit of a man will sustain his infirmity." The mind of man has rarely ever in this life sunk to a depth of wo so deep and dark that some ray of hope did not still penetrate and cheer its gloom. Man has ever believed in—has ever hoped for—has ever sought a remedy for every ill that flesh is heir to.

Depressed with sorrow, the mind turns instinctively to some source of consolation. Assailed by adversity, hope seeks to retrieve the disappointments of the present, by the promises of the future. And when misfortune has clouded every prospect for this life, hope arches with her bright rainbow the dark valley of the shadow of death, and bids the soul look to the bright regions of a blissful immortality beyond.

In no instance has this strong tendency, this elastic power of the human mind, been more conspicuous than in its struggles to repel or baffle the assaults of disease. Man has ever sought from the beneficent hand of his Creator, a remedy for all the pains and infirmities that fall to the lot of humanity. Through ages and ages of disappointment, hope has animated and cheered on the struggle with the promise of ultimate success.

We purpose to sketch briefly the history of this contest of the human mind with the grim spectre of disease,—to notice in passing the weapons it has used, the difficulties it has encountered,—the defeats it has suffered, and the victories it has won; and, finally, from the history of the past, to derive some practical rules for the guidance of the contest in time to come.

The origin of the medical art furnishes an instructive page in the history of the human mind. Man is impelled by the very constitution of his being, to believe in the existence of supernatural powers; that is, to recognize the being of a God; and he feels himself under the necessity of relying for guidance upon

the powers above, wherever the light of knowledge and reason fails to penetrate. Hence the first efforts of the human mind to penetrate the dark unknown, have ever been a direct appeal to the Deity, to reveal by an especial interposition those secrets which interest our hopes and our fears, or an endeavor to search out some supposed revelation already written by the divine hand, but lying folded among the secret arcana of nature, or perhaps stamped upon the broad face of the starry heavens. Such were the first efforts of the human mind in search of remedies for the maladies that afflict our race. A prey to the frightful ravages of disease, in his ignorance and his weakness, man raised his imploring eyes to heaven, and sought relief from the beneficent powers above. Thus the ministers of religion became the first medical practitioners. History assigns to Egypt the honor of being the birth-place of the medical art; and to the Egyptian priests, that of being the earliest practitioners.

As may be supposed, medicine in the hands of the priesthood consisted rather in the use of mystical rites and ceremonies, than in the rational application of efficient remedies. These self-constituted mediators between God and man, could not fail to be aware of the advantages which they derived from being the supposed channels of communication, through which the divine blessings flowed to the rest of mankind. Thus they contrived to usurp to themselves all the scientific knowledge of the day, to spread over it such a veil of mystery, and so to entwine it with a tissue of magical arts, as effectually to bar it against the approach of the common mind. Hence their pretended applications of remedies to diseases had for their main object the fostering of the confidence of the people in themselves. And if in any instances remedies of real value happened to be administered, they were supposed to derive their efficacy from the mystical ceremonies employed in their preparation, rather than from any inherent powers of their own.

Such was the practice of medicine throughout the world till after the time of Pythagoras, who lived in the sixth century before the Christian era. This extraordinary man, after having availed himself of all the advantages for an education which Greece then afforded, is said to have spent a long time in Egypt and Chaldea, where he succeeded in gaining the confidence of the priests, and through them became learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians. With a mind thus stored he returned to Europe, and finally established himself at Crotona, in Italy.<sup>3</sup> The

labors of Pythagoras in this place, form an important era in the history of the human mind. Instead of forming at Crotona a sacerdotal clique to practise upon the vulgar credulity, he established a public school of philosophy, at which he gave lectures on all the branches of knowledge then extant. It is true, that much of his philosophy was tinged with the mystical hues of its original source. But knowledge was no longer kept a secret as the peculiar privilege of the favored few. Free discussion was at length established. Truth, at last, was allowed to walk in the free air and open day-light, no longer condemned to breathe the mephitic damps of the dark dens of superstition. Thus history assigns to Pythagoras the honor of having done more than any of his predecessors to rescue science from the trammels of superstition, and of having first given to the world a worthy example of that philosophic enlargement of mind, which, stripping truth of its chains and fetters, boldly trusts its safe-keeping to the universal reason of man.

Such an example could not fail to rouse the human mind and embolden its search after truth, wherever the Greek language was known. Great numbers from Italy and Greece flocked to his lectures, who became the future rulers and philosophers of those countries. The art of medicine, (for it could not then be called a science,) received a healthful impulse from this rousing of the Grecian mind. The practice of medicine in Greece had been hitherto confined to the temples of Æsculapius, and all its extant records were concealed within their walls. Men had learned from Pythagoras, that scientific knowledge was not the especial gift of divine inspiration, but the common birthright of every rational mind. Medicine could not plead an exemption from the application of the principles of free inquiry which were abroad. Hippocrates of Cos first responded to the claims of the age, and subjected medical knowledge to the principles of scientific investigation. Himself a favored descendant of Æsculapius, and an inmate of one of his temples, he set the noble example of despising the petty gains of priestly artifice and concealment, and gave to the world in a scientific form all that was then known of medicine, comprising many valuable additions which were the result of the application of his own powerful intellect. Medicine then for the first time became a science. Would that it had ever continued to be cultivated as such! But unfortunately for its subsequent history, the noble example of Hippocrates has not always been followed by the

cultivators of the healing art. It is not difficult at the present day to identify the successors of the ancient priesthood, among the inventors of quack nostrums, as well as among some pompous pretenders styling themselves regular practitioners.

At the time when Hippocrates wrote, medical facts were too scanty, and the philosophy of nature too imperfect, to admit of any complete scientific generalization. Hippocrates, accordingly, though possessing a mind essentially practical, fell into the great error of his age, that of substituting hypotheses for scientific principles based upon facts. The disciples of Hippocrates, however, pushed theory and hypothesis to an extreme which was not at all justified by the example of their master. Thus arose what has been called the dogmatic sect in medicine.

As one extreme usually produces another, there naturally arose an opposing sect, called the empirical. While the dogmatists contended that theory was the only basis of medical knowledge and practice, the empirics maintained that observation and experience were the only safe guides.

It is important to guard against confounding the terms dogmatism and empiricism, as applied to the ancient sects in philosophy, with their use in common language. The former is derived from the Greek word *dogma*, an opinion, that which *seems* true, and applies to the partisans of theory and hypothesis; the latter is from *empeiria*, experience, and applies to those who, discarding theory, profess to limit themselves to the observation of facts.

Out of these two sects there arose a third, styled the methodical, which was a sort of compromise between the other two, and professed to combine the advantages of both, free from their extravagances and errors. The methodics derived their name from their attempt to classify diseases into a methodical arrangement, based upon their observed analogies.

Next arose the sect of the pneumaticists or spiritualists. The spiritualists derived their name from their admitting, in addition to the solids and fluids of the body, the existence of an ethereal element called the spirits, or animal spirits. They supposed that health and disease depended upon the relation and proportion of this hypothetical element to the other elements of the body. Several expressions in common language have grown out of this theory, such as "high spirits," "low spirits," "flow of spirits," &c.

A century or two later sprang up the sect of the calectics, so

called from their attempt to select what was true from each of the preceding systems, and to combine it in a harmonious whole.

This was the last sect that made its appearance before that palsy of the human mind, which characterized the dark ages. The Christian religion had been introduced to the world by the humble and self-denying labors of Jesus and his apostles. Only a few centuries had elapsed, however, before the ministers of this benign religion had degenerated into an ambitious priesthood, who pretended that the benefits of the gospel could alone bless the human race, through the medium of certain rites and ceremonies, which could only be administered by themselves. To establish this monstrous claim, it became necessary, first to mould human opinion to suit their own purposes, and then to stereotype human thought by superinducing a death-like paralysis over the free spirit of man. The priesthood were able to accomplish this, by taking advantage of that "fearful looking for of judgment," which naturally haunts the sinful mind. They accordingly made it an unpardonable offence to think or believe, except in obedience to their own dictation. The pangs of guilt could alone be removed and pardon secured, by the mediation of the priests; and this mediation could only be obtained by the most abject surrender of freedom of thought and opinion to the tyrannical claims of the priesthood. Thus, men were taught, not to fear God, but to dread the wrath of the priests. The result need not be described. Science perished from the earth. Medicine did not escape the universal wreck. The priests became again the dispensers of life and health. Suffering humanity was condemned to seek relief from the pains and infirmities of disease in the dens of monkish superstition. The principal remedies in the hands of the monks, were mystical rites, absurd ceremonies, holy relics, charms, and incantations.

Such was medicine, such was science, during the dark ages; a period so dark, so foul with all that is loathsome in vice, so reeking with the blood of murdered innocence, that the mind is almost tempted to regard its history as a reproach to the providence of God. If it be possible to bring to light the mystery of Providence that lies buried here, it would seem to have been one design of God, to teach, by way of contrast, the great lesson of freedom of thought and tolerance of opinion, and to put to eternal shame all subsequent efforts to chain the human mind.

Some may object to our philosophy of this period of history,

and remind us that the introduction of the dark ages is to be ascribed to the irruption of the northern barbarians upon the south of Europe. But it should be remembered that, so far as the true dignity of man is concerned, there was not much left to be spoiled when this invasion took place. It was but the vulture preying upon the dead carcase, and dismembering what was already rotten and ready to fall to pieces.

While this night of ages was brooding over Europe, the science of medicine was partially revived and cultivated by the Arabians. But medicine can hardly be said to have advanced under the auspices of its new patrons.

The next most important epoch in the history of medicine, is the rise of the chemical sect, early in the fifteenth century. During the middle ages, alchymy was considerably practised by the Arabians, and found some cultivators among the monks. This art consisted in the performance of certain chemical experiments combined with the practice of magic; the whole being concealed under the mysterious veil of a cabalistic nomenclature. Alchymy had for its object the discovery of the philosopher's stone and the elixir of life; the former being supposed to possess the power of converting the baser metals to gold, while in the latter was sought a universal remedy, adapted to cure every disease, to restore age to the bloom of youth, and to prolong life to an indefinite period. Thus avarice and the dread of death, for several successive ages, served the alchymists as a stimulus to invention, and led the way to many useful discoveries in chemistry, though the phantom of which they were in pursuit, ever eluded their grasp.

The numerous chemical facts brought to light by the alchymists, suggested the application of the principles of chemistry to the functions of life, the phenomena of disease, and the administration of remedies. The chemists held that the healthy functions consisted in certain processes of fermentation, that there were but two classes of diseases, the one consisting of a preponderance of acidity in the fluids of the body, the other characterized by an excess of alkali. Thus there could be but two classes of remedies, acids and alkalies, to be administered according to chemical principles. This is the more matured form of the theory.

The chemical sect arose with the revival of learning, when the works of Galen began to be read extensively. As a matter of course, a fierce contest arose between the Galenists and the

chemists. The former considered themselves the regular scientific practitioners, and of course honored the chemists with the title of quacks ; and it must be admitted, that the character of Paracelsus, the originator of the chemical sect, too richly deserved that appellation. Being appointed professor of medicine at the university of Bâle, he made his *début* by publicly burning before his audience the works of Galen and Avicenna, declaring, that what had been written for Greece was not adapted to Germany. To him, however, belongs the honor of having introduced into the *materia medica* several valuable chemical remedies, and, among others, the tartarized antimony. The zeal, however, and influence of the regular practitioners in France against quackery, prevailed in securing an enactment from the government, entirely forbidding the use of this valuable remedy.

With the revival of learning, mathematics began to be cultivated with zeal and success, and soon excited new interest by their application to mechanics. How natural that medicine, yet feeling its weakness, should seek aid from the science then in vogue ! Accordingly, the human body was converted into a machine, and all its functions into mechanical forces. Health was supposed to result from the harmonious action of these forces, and disease to arise from a disturbance of their equilibrium. All remedies were prescribed for overcoming mechanical difficulties or obstructions. Hence arose the terms, deobstruents, inspissants, diluents, etc.

In the mean time, the philosophy of Bacon had begun to exert an influence upon all departments of science. The pursuits of science no longer consisted in deductions from baseless theories, but in the induction of general principles from observed facts. This philosophy communicated to the science of medicine a powerful impulse in the right direction. Human anatomy began to be cultivated, and in process of time has led to the discovery of the circulation of the blood ; the functions of the nervous system ; and, finally, to the improved state of the departments of physiology and pathology as they exist at the present day.

Without attempting to trace further the rise and fall of sects in medicine, it may be well to notice some of the phases of opinion, which have presented themselves from the rise of the mechanical sect, to the present day.

Early in the seventeenth century Van Helmont arose, and though agreeing with the chemists in considering the functions

of the body to consist essentially in chemical changes, yet he held that these changes were subject to the control of an immaterial, ruling principle, which he denominated the Archæus. He considered medical treatment limited to co-operating with the Archæus ; and hence skill in practice resulted from a comprehension of the laws by which the Archæus operated, and in being able to conform to those laws.

At a later period, Stahl promulgated a doctrine, which, though allied to that of Van Helmont, differed essentially from it. He denied that the vital functions bore any analogy to chemical or mechanical phenomena; and maintained that an intelligent soul was the only moving and regulating force in the living body. The object of the practitioner was to aid the soul in overcoming the difficulties with which it was encumbered in a state of disease, or, according to the representations of the opposers of the doctrine, to look on while nature cured the disease.

Up to the time of Cullen, the prevailing opinion of the medical profession fixed upon the fluids of the body as the seat of disease, and as the medium through which remedies exert their curative effects. Cullen located disease in the soft solids, giving to the nervous system a controlling influence over the morbid phenomena. He held that disease consisted in a spasmodic, or atonic state of some of the systems of the organs. Hence the objects to be aimed at in applying remedies was, to relax spasm or to increase the tone of the system.

Thus the medical profession was divided into the two sects of Humoralists and Solidists. There has been much warm discussion of the points in controversy between these two sects, but medical opinion seems to be settling down into a modification and combination of the opinions of both parties.

It would be improper to omit to notice in this place a modification, which the doctrines of Cullen received in the hands of Brown. He reduced all diseases to two classes, sthenic and asthenic, corresponding to Cullen's spasmodic and atonic classes. The system of Brown was more simple and captivating than that of Cullen, as it only recognized the increase or diminution of the energy of the body above or below the healthy standard as constituting all diseases, without attempting to limit the sthenic or asthenic states of the system to any specific manifestation, such as spasm or relaxation. Hence medicines were to be administered for the purpose of increasing or diminishing strength, according as the disease was decided to be one of

debility or of excessive energy. The doctrines of Brown spread extensively over Europe, and for a long time held supreme sway in Italy.

It need only be remarked, that nature would not submit to the simplifying process of the Brunonian theory; and that in spite of a simple nomenclature, disease has obstinately persisted in presenting itself to the eye of observation and experience under all its ancient protean types and forms. Of course, the theory of Brown could not long stand in an age and country where facts were cautiously and extensively observed.

Homœopathy is the last medical theory which has excited much interest in the profession. This doctrine was originated about fifty years since by Hahnemann, a German physician. It places but little value in anatomy, physiology or pathology, but professes to have discovered an infallible rule of practice, based upon mere symptoms. The Homœopathist claims that a disease is to be removed by prescribing a remedy which produces a similar disease in a healthy person. This doctrine has not found very general favor with the profession, though there are homœopathic practitioners in most of the large cities in this country and Europe.

Such are some of the prominent points in the history of medicine from its origin to the present day. This brief sketch, meagre as it is, is rich in instruction to every reflecting mind. We see in it the origin and history of those influences which have retarded or promoted the progress of medical science, down to the present day.

Among the prominent influences, which have exerted a controlling sway over the progress of medical science, may be mentioned, superstition. Nor let it be said that this influence has ceased to operate at the present day. It is true we do not see it in the gross forms in which it prevailed under the practice of the ancient priests and the monks of the middle ages. But it is still true, that the great mass of ignorant people look upon the practice of medicine with a kind of superstitious wonder, and regard a skilful physician as something more than human. And there are not wanting among physicians, those styling themselves regular practitioners, who foster these low prejudices, and, like the ancient priests, seek to wheedle superstition and ignorance into a belief of their own infallibility. The very fact that quackery still exists and finds a liberal public patronage, shows that superstitious credulity and ignorant and shame-

less pretension still live to curse the science of medicine and impede its onward progress.

This point is of sufficient importance to justify a brief analysis of its operation in retarding the progress of medical science. What then is quackery? Quackery or charlatany may be defined to be, the taking advantage of the prejudices or ignorance of a community for the advancement of one's own reputation or interests.

Quackery shows itself under two prominent aspects. In one it is the ignorant boasting pretender, with his pockets full of roots and herbs retailing secret nostrums. This description of quacks finds but little countenance in an intelligent community.

But there is another form of quackery which puts forth high claims to respectability. It assumes a grave, scientific aspect. The quack of this class prides himself upon his regular education, and is ever the first to cry out quack upon every one who has not been regularly installed like himself. He has a great horror for every thing which cannot be substantiated by the book. He resists every innovation; for to admit the possibility of any thing new in medicine, would be to relinquish his own claim to infallibility. He feels himself insulted by the least suggestion from an individual who is not, like himself, equipped with a diploma. He is careful to cast a veil of mystery over his own knowledge, or what he would be thought to know, by parading on all occasions the loftiest phrase of nosological nomenclature. His science, which he holds up as perfectly infallible, is a noble match for Hudibras's religion,

A dark lantern of the spirit,  
Which none see by but those who bear it.

We do not hesitate to declare it as our belief, that this learned quackery has been one of the most influential causes in retarding the progress of medical science. It has often been true of it, that it has taken away the key of knowledge, and refusing to enter itself into the temple of truth, it has maliciously hindered those who would enter in. Thus it has ever happened, that every new addition to the stock of medical knowledge has encountered a fierce conflict with these soi-disant regular practitioners. Thus the useful discoveries of Paracelsus were firmly resisted and finally banished from France by law, through the influence of these learned quacks. It was the same spirit, that for a long time denied Harvey's doctrine of the circulation of

the blood, which is now universally received as a true expression of facts.

A little reflection upon the controversies which have continued to divide the medical profession down to the present day, will show that the spirit of dogmatism, as also that of empiricism, are not yet extinct. Dogmatists as well as empirics are no rare curiosities at the present day. The partisans of theory and the partisans of fact still live and act among us, though less definitely arranged into sects than formerly. The existence of one party creates the necessity for the other, to cultivate a portion of the field of inquiry, which would otherwise be left unoccupied. The one party profess to be able to thread the dark and intricate labyrinths of nature, by the light of general theories, without the drudgery of collecting and carrying along a backload of useless facts. The other party, expressing their contempt for all theories, are content to follow the footsteps of experience through whatever humble walks they may lead.

The advanced state of the inductive logic at the present day enables us to detect the errors of each party, and to combine the elements of truth in both doctrines into a harmonious system, alike commended by reason, and its application to practical purposes. Both the empirics and dogmatists have alike deviated from the true principles of inductive philosophy; but their observations have taken place in opposite directions. This will become plain by a brief analysis of the true philosophical method of questioning nature. This method embraces three essential elements, induction, deduction, and verification; that is, the inferring of general principles from facts, the deducing of specific applications of these principles to untried cases, and the verifying of this application by observation or experiments.

Thus, the observation of facts led to the inference of the law, that all bodies mutually attract each other in the direction of a line uniting their centres of gravity. Newton, in reflecting upon this law, deduced the principle that gravitation is the regulating force which controls the motions of the planets in their orbits. This deduction was verified by those mathematical calculations which proved the identity of the force which retains the moon in its orbit, with that which attracts a falling body to the surface of the earth. This, it will be seen, is a middle course between extreme empiricism on the one hand, and ultra dogmatism on the other. Empiricism, when carried to the extreme, degrades inductive philosophy to the mere drudgery of

picking up facts, permitting, perhaps, a few meagre inferences from the facts. Ultra dogmatism runs wild amid baseless theories, or evaporates into mystical transcendentalism. Empiricism has such a hunger for facts, that it swallows the grossest absurdities as facts. Dogmatism is so enamored with theory, that it cannot stop to collect facts for the frame-work of its structures, but consents to build with the lightest materials that can be drawn from the airy domains of a fertile imagination. Its most substantial and splendid fabrics are often of the lightest gossamer, studded with the dew drops of the morning, doomed to disappear before the blazing sun of truth, or to be swept by the first breath of sound philosophy. Empiricism views nature as an endless multiplicity ; and in the domain of medicine, every disease becomes an individual entity, with its corresponding specific remedy. Dogmatism views nature not only as a unity, but as one and the same with its own baseless theories. In the practice of medicine it aims its remedies at the phantoms of its own creation, and not at the real morbid state of the body ; and fortunate is that patient, who, assailed by disease on the one hand, and by a theoretic quack on the other, does not perish between the two fires.

The analysis of the inductive philosophy, which we have given above, suggests the remedy for the errors of both extremes. Search for facts ; and let your search be limited only by the range of the visible creation, and by the extant records of all time. From facts thus obtained proceed cautiously to the construction of general theories. From these theories deduce principles for your guidance in practice and future research. Then, by a course of careful observation, test the soundness of your deductions. If confirmed by experience, adhere to them as an integral part of science ; if opposed by experience, cast them aside as so much useless lumber.

Under this head it is important to suggest two cautions : first, with regard to the collection of facts to serve as a basis for general theories ; secondly, with regard to the verification of the deductions from theory.

The spirit of empiricism tempts to the adoption of mere delusive appearances as facts, while the pride of dogmatism discredits and sneers at all facts which conflict with its own beloved theories, especially if they happen to be of an extra-professional origin, or may be thought to smell of quackery. What is needed, then, is a close, yet candid scrutiny of every thing which

comes forward with the claim of being a fact. A certain degree of skepticism on this point is necessary, in order to avoid being imposed upon by mere appearances. It is not, however, the skepticism of pride which we would recommend, but that which springs from a sincere love of the truth, and is ever ready candidly to examine all claims, by whomsoever urged. A fact, then, should not be rejected with disdain, because it is brought forward by a homeopathist, a Thomsonian, a quack, or even by a *sage femme*.

The second caution has reference to the verification of deductions from general theories. It has been a great evil in the science of medicine, that the partisans of theory have too often been so much in love with their own generalizations, as to regard not only their theories, but all the deductions from them, as absolute truth. Hence they entirely omit the process of verification, so essential an element in the logic of induction. All the failures in the application of their principles, are attributed to the untoward influence of extraneous circumstances, without their ever having once dreamed that there could be any unsoundness in their theories, or any errors in the principles of practice deduced from them. Does a patient recover,—the recovery is claimed as a triumph of the physician's peculiar mode of practice. Does the patient die,—his death is easily accounted for by the violence of the disease, by some unfortunate exposure, or perhaps by some failure on the part of the patient in carrying out the directions of his physician; while perhaps the partisans of another theory, equally blinded by prejudice, would trace the death directly to the treatment, and would consider every recovery under the practice in question, as a fortunate escape from the most imminent peril.

We have, in the history of the treatment of typhus fever, a striking illustration of the errors in practice, resulting from applying to the treatment of disease hasty theoretical deductions. At the close of the last century, while the doctrines of Cullen and Brown were in vogue, typhus fever, being considered a disease of debility, was treated by the most violent course of stimulation. This practice was at length succeeded by the treatment by cold affusion, introduced by Dr. Currie of Liverpool, 1798, and recommended by the usual array of theoretical speculations and alleged facts. This treatment was speedily supplanted by that copious blood-letting, which was still more short-lived than either of its predecessors. Thus, in the short space of forty years,

three widely different modes of treatment of the same disease gained general prevalence, and were, each in its turn, supplanted by a new aspirant for general favor. It is easy to trace, in this example, the inadvertent application to practice of theoretical principles, and the almost entire neglect at the outset to apply to these principles the logical process of verification.

The remedy for these evils is obvious, viz. a cautious skepticism in verifying the practical principles which are deduced from theory. But let it be here remarked, that in no branch of science is the process of verification so difficult as in that of medicine. The phenomena which fall under the observation of the physician depend upon such a complication of causes, that it is often impossible to assign to any individual circumstance its appropriate share of efficiency in a given case. In the experimental sciences, any theoretical deduction may often be confirmed or refuted by a few experiments, occupying as many hours or perhaps minutes. This cannot be done in medicine. Every principle of humanity, as well as of morality, forbids a course of wanton experimenting on human life. The physician is generally limited to a slow and toilsome course of observation for testing the soundness of his deductions. But the medical profession have been often unjustly reproached with making experiments. There are circumstances in which a physician is justified in making what may in a certain sense be called an experiment. Where the experience of the past furnishes nothing satisfactory in the case, and where a physician, by a careful observation of facts has formed a theory upon the subject, and has logically deduced his principles of practice from his theory, he has a right to test the validity of his principles by applying them to practice. For the only alternative in this case is, between doing nothing and following the course marked out above. The former course has been justly satirized as a meditation on death, the latter course is putting forth the only *rational* effort for the relief of suffering humanity. Never to allow the physician to apply to practice principles which have been logically deduced from well-grounded premises, though he may never before have seen them applied to the treatment of disease, would be to doom the science of medicine to eternal extinction, or to send it back again to the dens of superstition. Such a restriction would have cut off the human race from the untold blessings of the immortal discovery of Jenner, vaccination. The same

is true of the most important principles of medical and surgical practice.

To return again to the brief historical sketch which we have endeavored to present, we are forcibly reminded of the influence of prevailing opinions and passing events upon the current of medical history. At an age when thinking minds were involved in the mazes of an idolatrous superstition, the practice of medicine consisted in the application of mystical rites and ceremonies; and books which treated of astrology and magic were the elementary treatises which constituted a necessary introduction to the practice of the healing art. When the philosophy of Pythagoras arose, this was seized upon as a basis of medical science. When the philosophy of mechanics came into vogue, the human body was forthwith converted into a machine, and all diseases and all remedies became mechanical forces. The chemical discoveries of the alchymists soon transformed the body into a chemical laboratory, and all the phenomena of health and disease were reduced to fermentation and the play of affinities between acids and alkalies. The spiritualism of Van Helmont and Stahl seems to have sprouted up from the fertile soil of scholastic metaphysics. The discoveries of Haller, and particularly his doctrine of irritability and sensibility, laid the foundation for Cullen's doctrine of spasm and atony, and for Brown's sthenic and asthenic pathology. It would not be difficult, if time permitted, to trace the influence upon the science of medicine of many other discoveries and prevailing opinions.

The hungry avidity with which the science of medicine has seized upon every new doctrine and every new discovery which have, from time to time, varied the phases of human opinion, suggests to the mind the image of the genius of famine standing upon the shore of the stream of time, now watching in moody silence its noiseless flow, now clutching with clamorous eagerness any object that may float within its reach, and perhaps soon quitting its hold to grasp at some new floating body that may happen to catch its eye. This, however, is no mere picture of the delusions of the past. Such must, in some sense, be the position of the science of medicine in all ages. Medicine must ever exact contributions from every field of science, and every walk of art. Its search after truth must ever be boundless, yielding, however, to the chastening influence of the inductive logic to curb its erratic tendencies. Every system of medical practice,

which has deserved the name of a system, has embraced within it important truth. Its main error has been its claim of exclusive right to the domain of medicine. The rival doctrines of dogmatism and empiricism were both based upon true and important principles, and the same is true of other opinions which have prevailed in medicine. The human body is indeed a machine of wonderful mechanism, and moved by forces the most subtle and powerful. It is also a chemical laboratory, in which matter is wrought into forms and combined into compounds, which defy the most elaborate processes of art to imitate. It is, moreover, endowed with a distinct vitality, which controls and harmonizes the principles of mechanics and chemistry in subserviency to its own uses. And, above all, it is the theatre of spiritual manifestations, which are dependent upon it for their healthy condition, and exert a controlling influence over all its functions. Thus it will be seen that man is subject to mechanical, chemical, vital, and spiritual laws. Hence a familiar acquaintance with all these laws of our being becomes a necessary qualification for the successful practice of the science of medicine.

If the foregoing remarks have any foundation in truth, the successful cultivation of the science of medicine demands the exercise of the loftiest and best powers of the human mind—the most acute discrimination in scrutinizing nature, and sifting the records of fact—a far-seeing sagacity to penetrate the mists of theoretical error—a far-reaching grasp of intellect to compass the widest range of generalization. It is not pretended that moderate capacities, accompanied with caution and sound judgment, may not be successful in the *practice* of medicine. But it is only to the most gifted minds that we are to look for an enlargement of the boundaries of the science.

Let us say, in conclusion, the profession of medicine should never be sought as a mere means to a livelihood. This would be to degrade a noble science to a mercenary end. The life of a good physician is one of intellectual toil and active beneficence, for which he deserves to reap the rich rewards of an industrious and honorable pursuit. It should ever be the great aim and effort of all the cultivators of medical science, to maintain for their profession this noble, this truly honorable rank. Then will the practice of medicine cease to be a by-word and a jest, and all liberal and enlightened minds will acknowledge it to be fraught with substantial blessings to the human race.

## ARTICLE VII.

## REVIEW OF GRESLEY'S TREATISE ON PREACHING.

*Ecclesiastes Anglicanus: being a Treatise on Preaching, as adapted to a Church of England Congregation; in a series of letters to a young Clergyman.* By the Rev. W. Gresley, M. A., late student of Christ's Church. First American edition, with supplementary notes. By the Rev. Benjamin I. Haight, A. M., Professor in the General Theological Seminary of the Prot. Epis. Church, in the United States.

It is obvious to every one, who has had occasion to make the search, that hitherto very little comparatively has been written upon the art of preaching; and that but a small part of what has been written, is well written. We look in vain for a complete treatise, a thoroughly digested and well arranged system of principles and rules to guide and aid us in our preparations for the pulpit. The Homiletics of Dr. Porter come the nearest to such a system of any thing extant. Had he gone over the whole ground as he himself marked it out, we should have had reason to be very well satisfied with his work. Dr. Porter was a finished and safe, rather than a strong and original man: he had more fact than fancy, more judgment than genius; he did more to mould and guide than to rouse and nerve a young man. Though a pupil in his keeping might not go very fast, he very certainly would not go astray. The work on preaching which, in the English language, stands next to Dr. Porter's for completeness and system, is the treatise of Dr. Campbell on Pulpit Eloquence. He is more profound and philosophical than Dr. Porter, but does not furnish so much that is practical and directly available to the preacher. There are other treatises still less complete, and far less relevant to the preacher's work in our times. Claude's Essay has many good things in it, but it operates too much like a machine: it contributes to make the preacher formal and artificial. Sturtevant's Manual, a modern English work, being based upon Claude, is liable to most of the objections which are valid against Claude. In addition, it is too voluminous—far too bulky for the weight. If the author had given us more principles, and fewer extended, lumbering examples, there might have been reduction in the quantity, which would have greatly improved the quality of the work. Mr.

Gresley's treatise is a decided improvement upon Sturtevant's on the score of bulk; the American edition of the former being a duodecimo of a little more than three hundred pages; the English edition of the latter an octavo of nearly eight hundred pages. Many others have written more or less extensively on the preacher's work: Basil, Chrysostom, Augustine, among the Fathers; Erasmus at the time of the Reformation; Abbé Maury and Fenelon in France; Bishop Wilkins, Gregory, and Fordyce, in England; some in our own country: from the works of these many valuable principles and hints may be derived.

Mr. Gresley's Treatise is in the form of letters, because he "considered it, on the whole, as well suited as any other for an elder person to convey instruction to a young friend." There are in the whole thirty-three letters, with a few pages of supplementary notes corrected and arranged by the American Editor.

After an introductory letter, which opens with the ponderous sentiment, that a minister ought to write his own sermons, a sentiment which in this country we can hardly conceive to be seriously uttered, the author enters upon his work, dividing it into four parts,—the first part consisting of eleven letters on the matter of a sermon; the second part, of seven letters on style; the third part, of ten letters "on the method of composing;" the fourth part, of four letters "on delivery." This general division and arrangement is very well; but the disposition of subordinate topics we cannot in all cases account for. Under the first general division, "the matter of a sermon," five of the eleven letters relate directly to the aim and qualifications of the preacher,—his general character; his frame of mind; his character for goodness; and his character for intellect and good sense. In the third part, "on the method of composing," we have treated, the choice of a subject, exordium, discussion, application, and conclusion, which, as the main parts of a sermon, we think should have been treated by themselves. A prominent fault in the work, as it strikes us, is in the arrangement—the disposition of the material; and this we find to be a leading fault in sermons. The grand beauty of a discourse, or book, is to have every thing in its place. This felicity of arrangement saves repetition,—contributes to clearness, brevity, strength, and progress.

In one of the letters upon gaining the confidence of hearers,

the author goes rather minutely into a consideration of the selection and management of arguments. Under the head of exordium, divisions are discoursed upon somewhat particularly. When upon illustrations, the author runs out upon the subject of authority. There are other similar instances. The writer seems to be easily led off from his main point. Were there fewer digressions, a more rigid holding of the mind to the subject in hand; were there less of loose particularity, and a more thorough canvassing and clear setting forth of the great principles of sermon writing, we should like the book better. As it is, we like it very well, not for its originality, its profoundness, or completeness; for it has not these, nor does the author claim them for his work: we like it for its general good sense, sound views, and its many valuable directions and hints.

Having given a very general outline of the work and taken some exceptions to matters of arrangement, it may be interesting to give a somewhat rapid view of the filling up.

The author takes us over the great field of topics or subjects for the pulpit, thus suggesting to us the great variety of matters upon which it will be proper to preach; in our judgment a rather gratuitous service. In the chapter upon gaining the confidence of the hearers, he shows how the preacher may do it; namely—1, by exhibiting to them his divine commission as teacher; 2, by showing goodness of character; 3, by showing a friendly disposition toward them; 4, by showing ability to instruct them. He speaks, in the next place, of argument, which, as used in sermons, is chiefly derived from scripture assertion and example; and of illustration, by which the truth is made clear, convincing, and adhesive; and then of the methods direct and indirect by which the passions may be moved, showing that a certain copiousness and vividness of description, and appeals to the imagination by lively graphic images, are required to effect this end. He proceeds to speak of style under the common heads of perspicuity, force, and elegance. He would have his readers understand, that “plainness of speech is very different from familiarity or vulgarity.” He would have the preacher avoid “a tone of affected condescension,” and not speak to men in the language of children. He thinks that more embellishment and finish of style are required for the city than the country congregation; for both a simple elegance is preferable to a continual coarseness. He speaks of style “as dependent upon the choice of words,” the rule here being—“to use

specific and appropriate words." He censures Tillotson for having altered the received phraseology, and saying, "Reformation instead of conversion; virtue instead of godliness; vice instead of sin;" and the author of Lectures on Prophecy for employing such uncommon words, as, "extravagate, deletion, excision, correption." He speaks of style "as dependent upon the number of words." Here "two extremes are to be avoided—too great conciseness and excessive prolixity. The two may be sometimes wrought together and reconciled." "If you find you have written a sentence which is somewhat heavy, and which cannot readily be either broken up or omitted, you may correct it, *by adding to the end of it something pithy or concise.*" "A sentence so constructed may be compared to a heavy lance tipped with steel: it has weight at its point." Sometimes a spreading copiousness is both beautiful and forcible, giving opportunity to the excited mind to linger upon a cherished subject or scene. He speaks of style "as dependent on the arrangement of the words:" the principle here is, that the main idea be put in that situation where it will be most prominent and apparent. "Silver and gold have I none." The forms of interrogation, antithesis, and climax, conduce to clearness and force.

Great importance is attached to a skilful use of connectives in sermon writing. The following fine, though in its application, extravagant remark, is quoted from Coleridge: "A close reasoner, and a good writer in general, may be known by the pertinent use of connectives. . . . In your modern books, for the most part, the sentences in a page have the same connexion with each other as marbles in a bag; they touch without adhering."

"On the method of composing" the author gives us some helps for collecting materials; furnishing us somewhat after the plan of Aristotle's "Topics" with sixteen questions, by the use of which, the preacher may conjure up thoughts which otherwise would probably have never appeared. These "Topics" seem to us to be a sort of machine for thinking, and especially useful to those whose thinking power is the feebler part. We fully agree with Dr. Watts, that "persons of any invention or imagination need not go knocking at the door of the topics to help them out of their difficulties." The author treats of the lecture, and the expository sermon: the former being a loose unconnected comment; the latter, being conducted with a view

to some principal point. He introduces "text-sermons," called by Dr. Porter and others textual, by which he means "such as consist mainly in the discussion of a text;"—also subject-sermons, commonly called topical, by which he means those of which the text is little more than a motto. The advantage of the former is that they are more scriptural; of the latter, that they have more unity. Then follow remarks upon the "application and the conclusion." Wherein consists the advantage of separating these two, application and conclusion, which are separated by the author, does not readily appear; because it does not readily appear what there can be beyond a good application. Any thing after this in the way of recapitulation "with something added thereto,"—any thing in the form of prayer or doxology, if at all extended, can only diminish the force of what preceded. It seems to us essentially puerile and enfeebling—not to add ridiculous,—for the preacher, in the use of one of our author's formulas of conclusion, to say in winding off—"Let me beseech you, my beloved brethren, to keep this important point impressed on your hearts to the last day of your lives." About as puerile as it would be for him to beseech his beloved hearers to go home and cry the rest of the day over the pathetic things he has been saying to them. This certainly is very little preferable to the manner of those whom the author speaks of, who invariably end their sermons with "life everlasting,"—a very good end to our earthly probation, not so good an ending for all our sermons.

After disposing of the conclusion, Mr. G. takes up the subjects,—“of the management of the voice,”—“of oratorical action and expression.” He justly attaches great importance to the delivery: recommends that special attention be paid to distinctness of utterance, not mere loudness of sound, as a preacher may bellow and yet not be intelligibly heard,—also, to an erect position in the pulpit; let the face be toward the congregation: finally, to emphasis. The force of a preacher depends very much upon the spirit and style of the emphasis. Earnestness we are told is an indispensable excellence—a varied and natural manner should be sought—rather moderate gesticulation is preferable, with an open animated countenance, a looking and significant eye. The author finally touches briefly on the subject of extemporaneous preaching—on the whole prefers that ministers, as a general thing, write their sermons, and in delivering them dismiss their reading tones, and preach them

with earnestness and freedom. He thinks that extemporaneous preaching is more suitable for remote villages than for the populous town. The preacher will find great advantage in the extemporaneous facility for his lectures and other occasions, and should diligently cultivate it. To aid in the cultivation, a few rules are given ; of which the most valuable is taken from Lord Brougham's advice to a young lawyer. The substance of this advice is, that facility, fluency, be first acquired—and that this be acquired by a habit of easy writing, by talking a great deal in company, and by speaking on every opportunity without much regard to correctness, but at first, sacrificing every thing to fluency ; and when this is acquired by the aforesaid process, then by care and effort in another direction, "convert this kind of easy speaking into chaste eloquence."

The greater part of the ground gone over in the work is of general interest and application. Still it is true, as the author remarks, that the work is intended more especially for preachers in the Episcopal Church or "the Church." There are frequent allusions in it to "the Church," the Litany, the saints, and the festivals, which are of no service to ministers belonging to a church which has no fellowship with these Romish superstitions and peculiarities. Mr. Gresley enjoins his preacher, as a means of gaining the confidence of his hearers, to let them know that he has received a divine commission to teach them ; "to set forth discreetly but boldly the doctrine of apostolic succession." How it is, that insisting upon this doctrine can promote the hearer's confidence in the preacher, it is not very easy to see : for many in every discerning auditory would have but little respect for that man's understanding, who should insist upon a doctrine, in support of which he could bring no valid argument,—which indeed is beyond the possibility of being proved. Whoever has carefully read Archbishop Whately's book of Logic, or his logic in the book he has written upon the "Kingdom of Christ," will be willing to let all such baseless and arrogant assumptions alone. Contempt, rather than confidence, will be administered from many quarters, as the just reward of all labors in that line. The work of Mr. Gresley is, we think, on the whole better adapted to the formation of preachers for the Church of England, than of Congregational or Presbyterian preachers. The treatise reminds us often of a church of England sermon—taken as a whole very good,—sensible, but rather tame, loose, ranging, partaking somewhat

more of the negative than the positive element. It has not compactness, stringency, fervor, boldness, and point enough to construct the thorough and searching orthodox New England preacher.

But we are not prepared to dismiss the work till we have called attention to and remarked upon some of our author's principles and suggestions. It is well said that "a text should be a weighty and important sentence of Scripture." Sometimes we find very solid and good sermons built upon very trivial passages; even upon single words, which may mean nothing or any thing. This extreme economy in the matter of texts, which is sometimes studied, would be more defensible, were there a scarcity in the article of Scripture—were the word of the Lord as precious in our days as in some that have gone before. As it is, we are not straitened in this quarter. However, the opposite is equally to be avoided. "Long texts and short sermons" are not in our judgment the most effective form or apportionment, though our author seems to approve of such an arrangement. While the text should be sententious and weighty, it should be the aim to have the proposition and the sermon equally so. Let the peculiar spirit, point, and force of the text be carried out in the sermon, and pervade and characterize the sermon. Sometimes there is a falling away from the peculiar elevation and energy of the text, so great and sudden, as to be painfully jolting. Something of this sort is experienced in Cooper's sermon, referred to by the author, on the text, "What is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul,"—upon which the preacher raises the proposition, "that the man who, for the sake of worldly happiness, however great, shall lose his own soul, makes a most foolish bargain." Does this proposition arrest or impress us? No. While the text is amazingly forcible, as a sublime unanswered interrogative, the proposition, as a solemnly stated truism, is amazingly feeble,—somewhat like gravely asserting, preparatory to proof, that the earth is indeed greater than a mole-hill. We think the author errs exceedingly in his remark, "that the text as compared with the subject is of secondary importance." The text, unless a mere motto, which it should rarely be, contains the subject—the great idea of the sermon; of course, to say that it is of secondary importance, is a little like saying that God's word is secondary to man's.

Mr. Gresley gives some salutary cautions to young clergy-

men—those who are just from their studies, lest, in the choice of their subjects, they have too much of the abstruse and difficult, to the neglect of the common and the practical. The fact, that their own minds have been prominently employed and deeply interested in profound disquisitions, almost insensibly leads them into this region. They imagine they can interest others with truths of this sort, because they lie fresh and glowing in their own minds. They may think, perhaps, that they shall gain the credit of shedding new light upon points which have puzzled older and stronger heads than theirs. But they mistake ordinarily in both these respects. They fail in exciting the interest or shedding forth the light they anticipated; and the failure is made probable, not to say, inevitable, by the prejudice which is commonly awakened in the audience upon the very announcement of a subject of this difficult character. The people are not willing to hear us on these profound and baffling matters till we have acquired some experience and maturity. The prejudice may be an unreasonable one; still it is not well to encounter it, and have our hearers fear that we are getting beyond our depth, and that it would have been more profitable both for them and us, had we, instead of writing so presumptuously, heeded the good sense embodied in that blunt old stanza—

“ O, Lord, my heart not haughty is,  
Mine eyes not lofty be,  
Nor do I deal in matters great,  
Or things too high for me.”

The author is unquestionably wise in advising his preacher to make his own schemes to his sermons,—advice probably rather hard to be followed in a land so flooded with “ *Horæ Homileticæ*,” and other helps, as is the parent land, and where borrowing is sanctioned by so high authority, and is so reputable. Mr. G. adds, “ I do not say that you are never to avail yourself of such helps. Should you have a large parish under your care, and three or four sermons a week to prepare, or should you arrive at the dignity of an Arch-deacon, and have the care of all the churches upon you daily, then in order to husband your time, you need not scruple to employ such aid.” It is difficult to conceive that the writer is not jesting in this passage: certainly it is a very strange idea, that as a preacher advances in maturity and strength, he may depend more upon these ex-

traneous helps,—may more entirely give himself up to leading strings.

In the part on composing, the author has some good remarks upon leaving out, and *what* is to be left out of the sermon. “A sermon is too short a composition to allow of digressions,” or rubbish of any kind, we may add. “It is a hard task,” says Dean Swift, “but he who wishes to be a forcible preacher must submit to it, viz. to cut off without regret or mercy whatever is superfluous.” It is not only hard, it seems to be really impracticable to some men, they are so exceedingly partial to all they produce: just so sure as a thought comes into their head, it will go down on the paper. There being no culling of the thoughts, of course there are many which serve no other purpose than to debilitate and make intolerably tedious. With some there is an ambition to show how much they can say on every topic of discourse. They do actually say quite too much: and then they favor us with glimpses of what they might say, if time would permit. A very sensible old lady, speaking of the preaching of her minister, who had cultivated oratory more than most ministers, said, “She liked Mr. A——’s sermons very well, but thought she should like them better if he did not *amplify out* so much.”

The author would have the preacher leave out of his sermons, all strained novelties and curious mysteries and speculations,—all unnecessary controversies,—old buried heresies,—all party politics,—for the most part, irony, sarcasm, and witticisms. “*Ne quid nimis,*” let there be nothing in excess, is a capital precept,—no excess in argument, ornament, nor in quantity. Let the preacher never take up time in proving what every hearer admits, or, if not thus admitted, no argument will secure the admission. If the preacher steps aside to fortify, by trains of reasoning, what the mind spontaneously assents to, he loses his hold on the attention, interest flags, and it is labor worse than thrown away. It is not very uncommon for young preachers elaborately to commit this fault, and fail in conviction from an excess of argument. The following is a valuable paragraph on the subject of ornament.

“Let not your metaphors nor illustrations be far-fetched,—like ‘truths which are wrung from the subject;’ but let them ‘flow freely like the juice of the grape from the first pressing of the vintage.’ Do not exhaust your subject: let there not be too many brilliant and sparkling passages; they weary, and

distract the hearer: a striking truth which would have been well remembered and deeply rooted, is driven out, by something equally or more striking immediately following: just as the traveller's mind is overloaded and his admiration wearied by a too rapid succession of novel and striking sights. *It is necessary that there should be repose,*—that is to say, after a burst of brilliant language and ideas, should succeed some plain truth or narrative dressed in the simplest garb: Many eloquent sermons are spoiled by neglect of this rule."

In this chapter on excess, the preacher is counselled to "avoid too hasty and unqualified assertions, as when Paley says, that the scripture which speaks of regeneration, conversion, new birth, means nothing—that is, nothing *to us.*" There is another species of excessive, unqualified statement, into which preachers—more particularly in their early efforts—not unfrequently fall. They throw too much absoluteness into their assertions—too much coloring into their pictures. For example, the declarations which are made respecting the depravity of the natural heart are sometimes so sweeping as to despoil it of every social virtue and amiable sympathy. In the zeal and effort to be faithful, the preacher places before us a demon, and not a fallen man. Again, in speaking of the Christian character, (not as it might be, but as it generally is,) it is clothed with a degree of perfection which is not in accordance with the living reality. There is assigned to it a pureness of motive, a heavenliness of temper and affection, a strength of faith, a brightness and stability of hope, a fervor and prevalence of devotion, an easy triumph in the conflicts of temptation,—all these so free from opposite and debasing ingredients, that the picture has no correspondence in the ordinary realities of religious experience. So in speaking of the joys of piety and the consolations of those who trust in God, they are the high and uniform felicities of a spirit in glory, rather than the varying emotions of one still struggling with sin,—contending against strong and wily foes, occasionally weeping in the anguish of a temporary defeat,—prostrate in the agony of unutterable supplication. Mr. Foster designates this as a fault in the preaching of Rev. Robert Hall.

The design of these unqualified assertions and representations, is probably to come with more power upon the mind, and with deeper impression into the heart. But is this the actual effect—especially in the description of depravity? Certainly not, but

the opposite. Instead of convincing and impressing, the effect is to shut more firmly against the truth some minds, which might have been shaken from their position of unbelief by statements and reasonings so modified as to correspond with, and secure a response from, the feelings and sentiments so universally abiding within. There are some in almost every auditory so captious and unreasonable, that if they can detect any mixture of error in the preacher's message, they will deem the whole error, and reject it accordingly; and in all this, they think they act not as perverse, but as very wise men. On this account there should be caution and exactness in every statement: no matter if it mar the beauty and interrupt the flow of a sentence to throw in the qualifying expletive, or detract from the startling power of an announcement; let the preacher do it, that he may be sure, and others satisfied, that he is within the bounds of truth; and in the end the amount of impression made, of good done, will be greatly increased.

Speaking of style, the author remarks that "it may be too good as well as too bad. . . . The young curate fresh from the honors of his degree has often much to learn as well as to unlearn when he begins 'the simple task of saving souls.' . . . . One of the greatest faults in style is when, from any cause, it catches the attention of the hearers and draws it away from the matter of the discourse. If in coming out of church you hear the congregation say, what beautiful language! what a fine discourse! what talent! what eloquence! you have reason to fear that your sermon has not had the right effect. The people have been admiring *you*, not minding what you said. . . . The problem is to keep the right medium between bad taste and too great refinement. In preachers of the Church of England, there is a tendency to the latter fault: their style is often so smoothed down and polished that nothing impressive and striking is left." It is justly remarked, "that a good essay writer is not necessarily a good sermon-writer—that sermon-writing has a style of its own."

These four traits have occurred to us as deserving the attention of the preacher: he should aim to write in a well fraught style—in a varied style—in a lucid, sober style—and in a close, pungent style.

The preacher should strive for a well fraught style, because the temptation and the tendency in writing for the pulpit is, to write in an empty, barren way. The minister has to write

periodically, in all moods—all states of mind and heart : he has to cover so much paper weekly, or prepare to occupy so much time ; and it is on the one subject of religion. There are certain forms of speech—certain technical or professional phrases, which are in vogue and very familiar. He can use them without much toil of the brain—can frame sentences and paragraphs without much thought. It is hard to task the brain ; it is easy to use the fingers ; so he scribbles on ; discourse after discourse is produced which is hollow, unsubstantial. Ministers should never do so, because the practice weakens the mind, and the product is too flat and tame to do any good upon the souls of men ; whereas the opposite practice, of laboring at origination and bringing up things new and fresh from the deep store-house of the mind, and then cleansing and compacting what is produced, settles soon into a vigorous and fruitful habit, and men hear and heed what comes from such a quarter.

It is of the greatest importance, then, on every account,—his own and the people's, that the minister think when he undertakes to think, that he write when he undertakes to write—that he bring forth good matter when he brings forth any matter—that he use words with significance, to hold thought, not to cover paper—that he cull out the fitting and reject the feeble ; then he will have no hollow bulk of language, but the bulk he rears will be closely inhabited. His discourse will not be, three times out of four, a framed apology of words for the informed, living, executive truth ; never will it be the despicable exhibition of a few gaunt, flaccid ideas, loosely shaking about in a great swelling fabric of language, such as Chalmers would erect for his truly gigantic progeny. The point is that thought and language be commensurate : the tendency in preparing sermons is, to allow the latter to outstrip the former—far more language than thought—words used with a technical vagueness. The discourse when produced is a dead mass, never quick and powerful, cleaving the heart, rousing the conscience, transforming the soul.

When it is said that the preacher should aim to be a varied writer, acquiring flexibility and range of style, it is admitted and expected that every minister have his own style—write and speak in his own characteristic way. For any one to be without a style of his own is proof of great mental imbecility. In that case, he is but one of a Xerxian army, absorbed in the ignoble mass ; destined to die and be buried in the common

heap. By all means, then, is it desirable to have some character in writing, and a style characterized by variety, on account of the great range and variety of subjects the preacher is called upon to handle. If he can meet them with a corresponding variety of language or expression, he will clothe them with an interest and power which cannot pertain to them on any scheme of monotony. Under an even, uniform treatment, they grow stale and profitless. Under a brisk and fitting change of address, ranging from the simple to the adorned, from the calm to the fervid, from the coolly argumentative to the vehemently declamatory, from the precisely narrative to the highly picturesque, according as the topic in hand demands for its true and best effect; under this varying style, we have strength, interest, wakesfulness, a deeper and livelier implanting of truth, and a fairer hope of its legitimate and extended productiveness.

But while there is to be range in the preacher's style, there should be *clearness and soberness*. There are limits to the range and variety. There are styles which have no appropriateness in the pulpit, styles which have no business there at all. We refer not now to the drily philosophical, nor to the extravagantly and secularly adorned; but to a fashion of writing and speaking got up in some quarters, which is out of order, out of taste, and out of sight. While it may be characterized by excess, the transcendent quality is excess of blindness. Milton, without a gloss and a guide, would be confounded on every page. If this be English, Milton's first work, on coming back to life, would be to study English. There is originality, often very considerable power. The style may do in its place; it becomes the occupiers of the pulpit to keep it out of that place. If the preacher chooses to read it, let him beware lest there come from it a tinge and a stain upon his own mind—lest he be caught and carried away, and himself become an admirer and monger of blindness. Just so far will he become disqualified to be a preacher of that truth whose very attribute and name is light. The preacher of this message of light should certainly keep clear-headed, transparent throughout, in thought and language. For purposes of clearness, let him condescend to walk in the established paths of the language, and not affect new phrases, new idioms. The language as Baxter and Bunyan used it, is clear, grave, cogent, and perfectly congenial with the preacher's words of truth and soberness.

The close and *pungent style* which the preacher should be

able to execute, is in some respects like the clear and sober. The Saxon element of our language, which is the simple and intelligible, is also the stringent, the sinewy element. Whenever we wish to be strong, and sharp, and urgent, we call the Saxon to our aid. This pungent style may be called, also, the missile style. We hear often of the arrows of truth; an arrow all wing and no point would accomplish but little. The preacher should be skilled to fabricate for use some arrows, at once well winged and sharply pointed. The truth may also be made into a sword with two edges, and such now and then must be its form or it will not prove "the sword of the Spirit." But some who attempt to construct the instrument, fail to furnish and sharpen it. They form nothing which will reach and enter the heavy minds and encased hearts of men. It is admitted, however, that some go to an extreme here; they narrow down, sharpen, and then drive, every sentiment and sentence through the people. Nothing is done, only as an edge is presented, and somebody is cut by it. This is an abuse of a good thing; an excess in the use of that which some seem not to have the power of using at all. The defect in the last case is an essential one. On account of this alone, a minister may fail of a very large part of the impression and persuasion which he might otherwise have accomplished. The truth is so embarrassed and often buried up, by his way of clothing it, that it cannot come keenly and with execution across the hearts and consciences that chance to be in the way of it. We must be allowed to say, that if a minister does not know how to be pungent, he does not know how to preach.

The following remark of the author as to what should be the predominant strain of the preacher's messages, we refer to as embodying a great principle or law in sacred persuasion.

He says truly, that "men are more easily won by the mercies of God than subdued by his terrors. A congregation, compelled too frequently to hear only the terrors and restraints of religion, will either not listen at all, or listen with hardened apathy and incredulity." It is unquestionably the case, that some who preach the gospel are at fault in this particular: they preach a chilling, coercive, terrible gospel; they load and oppress their hearers, and keep them ground down to the earth in bondage to fear. The main privilege under their ministry, is the privilege of being goaded and lashed. Some preach thus from constitutional temperament. Mr. Rowland Hill was accustomed to say

that "some folks appear as if they had been bathed in crab verjuice in their infancy, which penetrated through their skins, and has made them sour blooded ever since—but this will not do for a messenger of the gospel; as he bears a message of love, so he must manifest a spirit of love." With some, doubtless, it is the misjudgment of their earlier ministrations. At first, they are stern, severe, closely and harshly urgent; they appeal prominently to fear; they press their hearers with the threatenings of the Bible; they speak much of the danger of the present and the woes of the future; but as they advance, it is noticed, they infuse more of tenderness into their appeals; they give more prominence to the benign features of truth. This we are told was the case with that great preacher, Dr. Griffin. "In the earlier part of his ministry," says his biographer, "his mind seems to have been occupied with the severer truths of God's word . . . but in his later days, he was much more disposed to dwell upon the grace and glory of the gospel—the fulness of its provisions, and the freeness of its offers." There was manifestly wisdom in this change; for it brought him into more perfect harmony with the laws of our moral constitution; "I feel myself repelled," says Cecil, "if any thing chills, loads, urges me; this is my nature, and I see it to be very much the nature of other men. But let me hear—'Son of man, thou hast played the harlot with many lovers, yet return again to me, saith the Lord,'—I am melted and subdued." And such is the predominant strain of the gospel; it is good news; its grand announcement is, that Jesus Christ came into the world to seek and to save that which was lost. The original commission was, As ye go, preach, saying, the kingdom of heaven is at hand; the great motive was the Saviour—the provision—the opening reign of mercy. Men were called upon to repent in view of benignant rather than oppressive considerations; and men do, as matter of fact, repent more commonly under such considerations, than under the opposite. Could we look into the cases which occur, we should find that where a soul has been converted, it was an arrow dipped in love, and barbed, on one side at least, with mercy, which smote that heart now beating with the pulsations of a new and happy life.

In holding up the love, the mercy, the full provisions of the gospel, the encouragements of hope, the attractive glories of heaven, the minister is to guard against giving his messages a too selfish cast; he is to beware that he does not make the good

to be gained the ultimate motive ; because, as an ultimate motive, it cannot be productive of the best results. Said one of the most successful of modern preachers to his younger brethren, "take more pains to show your hearers that they have violated obligations, and *ought* to do the things required, than that it will be pleasant and for their interest."

It is not enough to touch the sensibilities merely. There is a style of preaching which produces a great many tears and but little repentance. It is made up prominently of soft, sentimental descriptions ; vivid pictures of a great variety of moving scenes are drawn ; the hearers look at them and weep, and then go away with the same rocky hearts they came with. "I am tired," said one who was an adept in this style—a master in this moral enchantment—"I am tired of this weeping. I want to see the deep-hearted turnings and the substantial fruits of repentance." Bunyan in his *Holy War* very properly represents Mr. Wet-eyes as an unsuccessful agent in the application to Prince Emanuel for pardon. We would say to any one who, by his tender or attractive pictures, has great power over the sensibilities of his hearers, avoid a too free use of that style ; adopt a higher aim, and come to the conscience—in love, in mercy, if you please, but, by all means, come to the conscience. It is said that the lamented Sylvester Larned, by his skill in a certain species of moral painting, had at first a surprising ascendancy over the mere feelings of his audience ; and that he in a measure laid aside this style, under the conviction of its comparative worthlessness, and sought the faculty of an accurate, searching analysis of the sinner's heart, and the power of reaching its deep moral recesses by the fitting truths and motives of the gospel.

But we have extended our remarks upon the style, and the general strain desirable in the sermon, farther than we intended. We will make what compensation we can by coming speedily to a close.

A question presents itself : What profit in a book like this, of rules and questions ? Is there any ? We think there is some : not that they are to be servilely remembered and followed ; not that the preacher is to be thinking of rules when preparing his sermons. In that case, the product would probably be formal and lifeless. Rather, let the great principles of effective address be so laid, yea, wrought in, incorporated into the very substance and texture of the soul, that they shall insensibly influence and

direct the mind to that form, and spirit, and power, the world will recognize and bow to as eloquence. But no books of principles and rules, however carefully studied, will alone ensure the making of good and eloquent sermons. There must be, not only the skill, but the effort. Mr. Gresley does well in urging his preacher to prepare his sermons with painstaking ; to submit to the *limeæ labor*, and so make them as good as he can. It is the opinion of many that it would be better for the cause of truth, if the pulpit would exert a mightier power, if ministers, as a general thing, would erect a higher standard, make fewer sermons, and make them better.

It is very obvious, that the sermon has greatly fallen from the respect which was paid to it by our forefathers. It really quickens the progress of one's blood, to hear how grossly sermons are now defamed. When a person wishes to get out the most vivid idea of irresistible somnolency, the climacteric comparison is, "dull as a sermon." And what is a sermon ? It is a discourse embodying God's amazing revelation ; holding forth considerations of infinite weight and urgency,—filled with truths which take right hold of the life or death of the soul. Let there be a change, a progress in the structure of the instrument ; let such sermons be made, that no being endowed with a soul can hear them with indifference. Let such continue to be made, till they are no longer associated with men's lethargic, but with their waking and working hours, and every recurrence to a sermon make them think of their immortality, and terribly flash upon them the dreadful destiny they are going to. We wish that some were framed of such temper and form, that they would transfix, as with a literal blade, that blasphemer of God's appointed instrument, and keenly pain him for the present, and pierce him anew upon every remembrance till he should go into his grave.

The pulpit has been called "the preacher's throne ;" his position of greatest authority and influence. From that place he addresses the assembled families of his flock ; he addresses them in the name of the Supreme Ruler ; he brings the one message he has prepared to bear upon listening hundreds. How important that he work into it every element of power ; that it be intensely excogitated ; anxiously prayed over ; skilfully adjusted, shedding light upon the mind, sinking conviction into the heart. When God commands his servants, saying, "Preach the preaching I bid thee," he means, preach in a way to feed

the people ; for it is added, " What is the chaff to the wheat ?" A good proportion of wheat in the chaff, it is admitted, makes a very tolerable compound. But when it comes to be all chaff, the people will not bear it ; for they know very well, that they are wronged, and heaven is outraged. We say to every young man, whatever the size of his parish or the press of duty, never consent to be one of these chaff-dealing ministers. Bring forth the wheat ; then good will be done ; the people will be pleased, their souls will thrive, and the parish will grow. Men will come and listen to such a minister ; thinking, intellectual men will gladly hear *hated* truth well preached. Such a minister is respected, and makes religion respected. He exhibits it in its greatness, and majesty, and authoritative claim, so that the unbeliever is afraid to treat it with insolence. Many sweetly bow to it here, and rise at length to its reward in heaven.

---

## ARTICLE VIII.

## SACRED MUSIC.

*Source of the Prevailing Abuses in Cultivation, and the only Practical Remedy.*

By Thomas Hastings, Esq., N. Y.

WHOEVER enters upon a careful examination of the Holy Scriptures in regard to the character and the influence of sacred music, will be convinced that its importance in these modern days is not fully recognized. Once it was cultivated by kings and princes, and teachers of religion ; now it is left with the less influential classes in the community. Once the singing of "psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs," was an exercise as truly and as exclusively religious, as was that of preaching, exhortation, or prayer ; now the same exercise is often little else than an entertainment for the gratification of taste. Once those who were the most spiritual were the most active in the solemn work of praise ; now they are generally the most negligent ; or earnestly engaging as they sometimes consent to do

in the discharge of this duty, they are often seen to decline in spirituality. They appear in religious things as if some strange lethargy had overtaken them; as if some withering hand had dried up within them all the sources of spiritual life. They become other men. They learn by degrees to exercise themselves with the sentimentalities of song, instead of lifting up holy hands and hearts to God in the solemn exercise.

The many painful examples of this nature which have been witnessed in modern times, have awakened the jealousy of good men against the claims of the art; and led many to imagine that it was designed chiefly for the circumstances of other times, while now it is waxing old and ready to vanish away. Why else, they would ask, do we experience so little benefit from the exercise of praise; and why are we so often foiled in our efforts toward rendering it an efficient instrument of edification? The answer to such inquiries will be found in the sequel of these observations.

Sacred music as a divine institution, was not destined, like the ancient Jewish ritual, to decay. It is to stand while time endures, as a lively representation of the worship of the sanctuary above. Nor can we doubt that it will yet be seen to operate more efficiently than ever, in enlivening the devotions of the sincere worshipper. That there is something wrong in the present manner of sustaining it, is freely admitted. Indeed, there is so much which is wrong, that it seems difficult to determine where to begin or to end the recital. But it is not our present object to speak of the number and character of abuses. A more delicate task lies before us, and one which we hope will prove on the whole more beneficial. We shall endeavor to discover to our readers the *principal source* of these abuses, and point out the only sure and practical remedy.

The musical art, if we may venture to believe the accredited decisions of ancient history, was originally confined to purposes of religious worship. As society became more depraved, and religious rites were corrupted, feasting and merriment and idol-worship took place of the serious offerings of praise and prayer; and hence the origin of secular music as a distinct branch of the art. When at times pure religion was reinstated, she received the arts as she found them. Her aim was, not to destroy, but to reform and preserve every thing which was intrinsically valuable. The distinction between sacred and secular music was for a time well defined, so far at least as influ-

ences were concerned ; though afterwards there seems to have been, occasionally, an unhallowed blending. The song at the Red Sea appears to have been an earnest expression of gratitude and holy joy : but that which was uttered by the same people before the idolatrous calf of gold, we may suppose, was of a very different character. A remarkable change of influences was also witnessed in the days of Solomon. So early as at the dedication of the temple, the songs of Zion appeared in their true dignity and beauty as smiled upon by the great Master of assemblies. It was not when the countless sacrifices were burning upon the altar, nor when the ark, that holiest of symbols, was deposited in its place, that the Lord descended into his holy temple. It was just when the singers and the trumpet-ers began to be heard as one, in thanking and praising the Lord for his ever-during mercy, that the divine presence was manifested. Then the whole house was so filled with the glory of God that even the consecrated priests could not stand to minister. But what does Solomon mean when, in the decline of life, bearing testimony against the vices and follies of the world, he says he gat to himself men-singers, women-singers, and instruments of all sorts, so delightful among the sons of men ; and then exclaims, Behold, all is vanity and vexation of spirit ? Surely, at the dedication all was not vanity. We read of no vexation in the music or the singers. But subsequently there was a change of management. The art, in the days of religious declension, had been pursued as a means of luxurious enjoyment. Objects of taste are allowed to mingle with our worship as auxiliaries ; but when we pursue them directly, as the chief sources of enjoyment, it is but right that in this relation we should be made to feel their emptiness and vanity.

In the days of Hezekiah we find again the song of praise with its appropriate influences, as the hosts were about to engage in a victorious battle. But in the days of Uzziah and his successors, when the art was brought to minister to the worldly sensibilities of the indolent, the profane, and the luxurious, how widely different were its results ! The maledictions of Jehovah were uttered against the men who, among other offences, would "chant to the sound of the viol, and invent to *themselves* instruments of music, like David." Such examples as these are full of instruction ; and we may readily infer from them, that sacred music can never be *secularized* or applied to *inferior purposes*,

without leading, in some way or other, to disastrous consequences.

In the days of primitive Christianity, there was little time for the cultivation of the art. Exiled from their homes, despoiled of their possessions, and driven from city to city in peril of their lives, the early Christians employed the art as they found it; and sung the praises of the true God in the common melodies of that day. For the farther purposes of cultivation they had neither leisure nor opportunity. Yet they spent *much time* in the *exercise* of praise, and derived from it great spiritual advantage. They sometimes employed whole nights in this manner; not, indeed, as amateurs at a grand musical festival, but as sincere worshippers of the heart-searching God. No wonder, therefore, that they were greatly edified and comforted.

In process of time, when the churches had rest from persecution, and derived protection and assistance from the arm of civil power, they began to pay more attention to music as an art. This they did, not for purposes of amusement or display, for they had not yet learned to make sacred words serve as a mere excuse for singing. Higher and purer motives still held the predominance, and for a while sacred music continued to be a powerful instrument of edification in public and in private. But as years rolled by, the symptoms of a change were beginning to appear. One of the early fathers speaks of the sweet influences of the songs of praise, with mingled sentiments of gratification and self-distrust. The music melted his heart and caused his tears to flow; and was so attractive as to draw heathen into the assemblies, who would sometimes remain till they learned to worship in sincerity. But at the same time the charms of musical sentimentality required his utmost watchfulness to prevent them from absorbing that measure of attention which ought to be employed with the *subject matter* of the song.

Here was suggested an important principle. The objects of taste, by divine appointment, so sweetly blending with the sentiments of devotion, are, through human infirmity, continually liable to weaken that influence which they are designed and especially adapted to promote. Even the orator in his loftier flights will sometimes lead us thus astray; but when the same sentiments are expressed in sweet poetry, and clothed in beautiful music, the attraction is stronger, and the temptation more difficult to be overcome.

The churches at length became less scrupulous in regard to this important principle. They would allow themselves to sing psalms for the express purpose of "relieving the tedium of other exercises," preventing languor, and preparing the mind by a little *tasteful enjoyment*, to enter with greater alacrity upon subsequent duties of devotion. By a still farther declension in spirituality, it was subsequently declared in the days of Gregory, the reformer of the *canto primo*, that "the chanters" who had also been ministers, should be separated from the regular clergy, on the ground that "singers were to be admired, more on account of their voices, than for their precepts or purity." This decision of the man of sin seems never yet to have been fully abrogated, even among protestants. No further step was needed to complete the declension. Sacred music came to be regarded simply as a fine art, irrespective of personal religious responsibilities. The office of praise was thus degraded for centuries. Sunday evening concerts were blended with religious orations; and the music becoming the chief object of attraction, led the way by easy steps to the cultivation of "*sacred dramas*," so called, which were partly acted and partly sung. At Christmas, for example, would be represented "the play of the *Nativity*," and at Easter, "the play of the *Resurrection!*" In these exhibitions or entertainments, the musicians themselves were not necessarily regarded as worshippers. Though the words which fell from their lips were often such as angels would not utter but with veiled faces, they were here comparatively of little account. The whole subject of devotion was dramatized; and the performers it would seem were chiefly solicitous to act their parts to the public admiration. Choirs of churches, where there was sufficient wealth, were then employed chiefly with reference to talent; and they conducted the music for the most part on the same general basis as here described. The singers were but personators of devotion, like sounding brass or a tinkling cymbal.

This species of management was not confined to the Italian states, nor to a limited period of time. In the reign of Henry the Eighth, choirs were still established in England by public authority, and impressment was as common for this purpose, as it has since been for the military service. The same practice continued in the reign of Elizabeth. Better notions of civil liberty afterwards prevailing, recourse was had, in many instances, to hired professional singers, of whom it might be said

that musical talent was almost their only qualification. Instances of this management have been known in later times ; nor has our own country, even at the present day, been without examples of the same nature. But how very different is all this from the primitive manner and spirit of praise !

The art, meanwhile, had been making unwonted progress in a new direction. In the days of primitive simplicity the music of the church was but an impassioned melodious form of utterance, applied to the consecrated themes for the purpose of enforcing their meaning as by the power of oratory ; but now it began to assume an importance independent of the established themes. The latter were uniformly in the Latin tongue, and this without even the advantages of simultaneous utterance. As many as ten, twenty, thirty, or forty different parts in the harmony would be sung in perpetual canon and fuge, etc., to the perfect annihilation of the language. This style of music prevailed up to the period of the Reformers. The singers were not remarkable for pious intentions ; and they were allowed, it seems, to address their auditors in language unintelligible. The music also was so complicated in its structure, as of itself to make no suitable appeal to the uninitiated listener. To every purpose of edification, therefore, the office of praise had become extinct.

The reformers of the sixteenth century did all that could well have been done, by men in their circumstances, to improve the music of the church. They composed hymns no longer in the Latin tongue, but every where in the native dialect of the people. These they adapted to such familiar melodies as all men of ordinary talent might be able to sing ; and in consequence of this management, the churches once more became vocal in the praises of God, as in primitive days. The songs of Zion were again their delight as a source of spiritual comfort and Christian edification. The reformers had it not in their power to become extensive cultivators. They did what they could in times of danger and perplexity. They set such an example of improvement as opportunities allowed ; and their success was complete in kind, though limited in duration.

The arts are never stationary ; and Christianity has nothing to gain by neglecting them. She can by degrees mould them somewhat to her own liking ; but she cannot be allowed to arrest their progress. Different systems of management succeeded. Some churches, following the precedent of the refor-

ers too literally, confined themselves to the same identical strains, long after their original significance had been lost in the progress of the art. Others following with more propriety the *spirit* of that precedent, invented additional melodies in accordance with the taste of the times. Others still, introduced music into the service which was more elaborate ; and there were not wanting within the pale of the visible church, examples high in influence, which favored the dramatic use of religious themes, irrespective of any direct influences or purposes of devotion. The latter class of individuals, embracing almost every where the members of the musical profession, finally gained the ascendancy as to numbers and influence ; and their maxims and habits for a long time extensively prevailed. We see, however, in the same connexion, the strong evidences of degeneracy as to religious influences ; and we think, also, that we see the cause. Sacred music was no longer cultivated, as in primitive times, with specific and exclusive reference to religious purposes.

Sacred music was intended originally as the handmaid of spiritual influences ; but she reduced the latter to a state of humble vassalage. By this unwarranted act of usurpation, she has been despoiled of her own pristine beauty and significance. She now pleases far less on her own account than when she kept her place as an unostentatious instrument of edification. The present period furnishes striking illustrations of this truth. A portion of the community are laboring with becoming activity for general improvement in sacred music ; and so far as the art itself is concerned, their efforts are attended with gratifying success. But they fail in regard to religious influences. Sacred music, as a fine art, as a human science, as a source of tasteful gratification, is increasing in the public favor ; but sacred music, as a Christian privilege, as a specific instrument of edification, as an expression of devout thanksgiving and praise—sacred music, as a holy, a divinely constituted office, requiring pure motives, and consecrated affections, and hallowed purposes—this we fear is even now sinking into comparative neglect and inefficiency. The maxims and habits and notions and prejudices which have so long been prevalent, have this infallible tendency to deterioration ; and the existing efforts are too feeble and to ill-concerted too counteract it. Nor is sacred music as an art assuming by any means that measure of importance in the eye of the community which it would do if it were attended

with its full, legitimate results. Good men, in immense numbers, will continue to neglect it until its character is reformed.

But we must be more specific in our observations. The more distinguished musicians of our own country recognize two large classes of specimens under the general appellation of sacred music; the one belonging strictly to the church, the other to the concert room or the oratorio. The one class purports to be adapted to religious worship; the other to tasteful amusement or display of talent. The one essays to lead the worshipper in those walks of chaste simplicity which allow him to school his affections, call home his wandering thoughts and fix them upon divine things; the other makes its appeal to the imagination, shows us the worshippers at a distance, and makes us spectators of the scene, delighted, it may be, with the dignity, the more than human rhapsody which seems to animate the throng. In short, the one leads us into the realities of religious worship; the other into the mere personations of religion. The one is real life; the other, imaginative representation.

A single example may sufficiently illustrate our meaning. "To thee cherubim and seraphim continually do cry, 'Holy, holy,'" etc. If I feel myself thus directly addressing the great God in an attitude of religious worship, I shall be filled with awe, and sink in prostration before the divine Majesty as if "my words" were "swallowed up." In proportion as spiritual influences prevail, I shall be inclined like the prophet of old who heard the same theme from angelic worshippers, to cry "woe is me, for I am undone, because I am a man of unclean lips." But if simply enjoyed as in dramatic personation, I strive to paint the raptures of the unseen world, I may break forth in the boldest strains of a celebrated "Te Deum," without at all offending against the *received\** principles of taste. I may be as clamorous and as full of repetition as I choose, except, perhaps, in regard to the single word "*holy*," and no one will complain. The loftiest martial strains of a Haydn or a Beethoven, containing more of earthly joy than of heavenly rapture, will seem most in character with the admiring multitude. Genius overpowers every thing. Taste is gratified. The imagination kindles and burns, but not with holy fire. The emotions are temporarily excited, but the heart remains cold.

---

\* I say *received* principles, because, after all, the principles are not just, even in a dramatic point of view.

Now the question more immediately before us is not whether the same religious themes may or may not with Christian propriety, under different circumstances, be used for each of these specific purposes, but whether they may be consistently used for both purposes at once; or, rather, since there is every where so much want of discrimination, whether the one of these purposes is not continually liable to be frustrated by the ill-timed inconsiderate application of the other. Devotional music in the exhilarating concert-room, for instance, is seldom found to be in keeping with the humor of the place; and concert music must have a still more undesirable influence when heard in the solemn assembly. At the same time, the true character of a piece in these respects is not always readily determined. To this end, we must look beyond the title of the piece, the character of the words, or the reputation of the composer, or we shall be greatly wanting in discrimination.

The most celebrated transatlantic composers and professors, we are sorry to say, have too generally disregarded this distinction. They have not even recognized the entire claims of a *personated* devotion. Surrounded by the imposing splendors of a nominal Christianity, they have mistaken the shadow of religion for the substance. They have ministered to the imagination, rather than to the heart; and even this without the advantage of enlightened discrimination. And what is personation? The least that it can imply is, that the composer and the executant both form right conceptions of characters and things, and execute their allotted tasks under the influence of appropriate emotions. In relation to secular subjects, this is easily done, because the nature of such subjects is open to common observation. Any one who has human sympathies can readily frame right conceptions of the joys and sorrows, hopes and fears, remembrances and anticipations, of a given personage, because these things are, in some important sense, common to all. But in relation to religious subjects the case is far otherwise. Vital religion, though a precious reality to every one who embraces it, is not well understood by those who have never learned its nature by personal experience. And, unfortunately, the great musicians to whom we allude appear to have been too much under the dominion of a worldly spirit to yield themselves up to the effectual influences of a heavenly tuition. This is sufficiently obvious from the details of their history.

We laugh at the simplicity of the painter who, in reference to the passage in the "Te Deum," "continually do cry," represented his angels with tears in their eyes. But a similar mistake is made by the composer, when he paints the peculiar enjoyments of the Christian in a gloomy dress, or represents his sorrows by a smile, his solicitudes by the calm of tranquillity, or his faintest heavenly aspirations by the outbreaks of terrestrial joy. This, in the higher walks of composition, is not unfrequently done. Serious as the accusation is, we need not here apply for testimony to the aggrieved party. No one who attentively reads the "Lives of Haydn and Mozart," will suspect the talented writer of that work of the least taint of religious enthusiasm. He was a man of the world, in the midst of cultivated society, in the heart of Europe; and few could have had better opportunities for critical observation than he enjoyed in regard to the things of which he treats. Speaking of the progress of the Italian style, during the last century, he says that "the music of the church and the theatre became the same. A *gloria in excelsio* was nothing but a lively air, in which a happy lover might very well express his felicity, and a *miserere*, a plaintive strain, full of tender languor. Airs, duets, recitatives, and even sportive rondeaus, were introduced into the prayers!"

The same writer, though a passionate admirer of Haydn, was not wholly blind to the faults of that great man in his treatment of sacred themes. He represents him in general as avoiding the profane lightness of the Italian school, yet allows him to have often exceeded in lightness the limits of propriety. He says also, that his faults were sometimes more positive. He could occasionally introduce comic passages; and even paint the fascinations of sin instead of the penitence of the sinner! No trifling faults, truly.

Such testimony as the above is not easily set aside. We behold in it, not the accusations of an enemy, but the admissions of a friend,—and as the works referred to are before us, we have also the means of ascertaining for ourselves the reality of the things described. Not only are these admissions well founded, but the half is not told. Nor is the celebrated Haydn the only great composer, who often fails in his conception of religious subjects. All the distinguished men of the same school, so far as we have been able to examine their works, appear to have labored under the same infirmity. And if this is true of the highest geniuses of any age or country, what might be ex-

pected from their countless admirers and imitators? And if the men fail thus when composing expressly for the church, how much more might we expect them to fail in the dramatic use of religious themes? These failures are not indeed perpetual; but they are sufficiently frequent to produce many an unconscious abuse, not to say desecration, of religious themes.

It affords us no pleasure to speak thus of the great masters of song. We would not at all depreciate their talents or lessen their reputation. We should as soon think of questioning the genius of a Virgil, a Homer, or a Milton, as to say ought against the high ascendancy these composers have gained in the musical world. Let their works be thoroughly studied, and they will be but the more venerated and admired. Yet, on this very account, it becomes the more necessary to expose the one general characteristic which has such a disastrous tendency on the influence of *religious* music. The public taste in this country is much in favor of that music which is of a high rhapsodic character, because it is tasteful, lively, energetic, and in keeping with the general excitability of an enterprising age: and thus it happens, in many circles, that concert-music, which is very unsuited to the worship of the sanctuary, passes for music which is really devotional.

And what shall be said of the executants of a corresponding rank? We once heard the piety of a preacher called in question, not because he seemed deficient in sensibility, but because he was wont to weep in the wrong places. While discoursing of the Prodigal Son, for instance, he would melt at the thought of feeding upon husks, but be little touched at the scene of paternal recognition, which is of such thrilling interest to the pious heart. But this was nothing in comparison with what is witnessed in the higher walks of professional execution. In the performance of sacred music, they will not even consent to weep in the wrong places. Their sympathies are differently employed. They have a reputation to maintain, a talent to display, and an audience to gratify, at the expense of every thing save the single article of "filthy lucre." Honored exceptions there doubtless have been—but we hazard nothing in saying, that the men whose lives are devoted to the secular drama are not the individuals who, in the oratorio, the sacred concert, the choir, or the organ loft, will enter, even with dramatic propriety, into the sweetness and tender solemnity of religious themes. These are not at all to their liking. They have no true taste

for them, no just conception of their meaning and importance. The same is also true of many a distinguished performer, who, without visiting the theatre, has acquired an *exclusive* taste for *secular* music. How can any one, who is a habitual neglecter of religious themes, be supposed on the spur of the occasion to enter fully into the spirit of them ? The thing is impossible. They must be studied and heartily appreciated before right conceptions will generally be formed.

But let us suppose, for a moment, that the thing is not so : that the worldly-minded can exhort us to lay up treasures in heaven, the skeptical hold forth the language of Christian experience, and the neglecters of religion remind us of Him, who "was despised and rejected of men,"—that all this can be done in such melting tones as to move a heart of marble to tenderness—will this answer the religious ends of sacred music ? We often find passages which assume the affirmative of this question with as much confidence as if it had been established by the soundest arguments, and confirmed by the most undoubted experience. One of the more respected class of dramatical performers, for example, says of his professional friend at an English concert, that "his '*Lord, remember David,*' and his '*O come, let us worship,*' breathed pure religion. No divine from the pulpit, though gifted with the greatest eloquence, could have inspired his auditors with a more perfect sense of duty to their Maker than he did, by his melodious tones and chaste style." Other writers might be quoted much to the same purpose ; while multitudes show, by their management, that the same opinion is entertained. Well, if the question be so decided, if expressive tones, with corresponding sentimentalities, are so easily obtained from the irreligious, and are alone of such wonderful efficacy in religious worship, why, let us at once invite the *prima donnas* into the choir, and all will soon be right. On the same general principle, also, let us invite our Garricks and Keans into the pulpit, and constitute our masters in elocution the sole readers of the liturgy ! This would be acting consistently. It would be treating the equally solemn offices of preaching and prayer and praise alike. But no—we must come back to primitive habits and principles. We must call back the Asaphs, the Hemans, and the Jeduthuns, and others of the same spirit, to shed the right influence upon the undertaking. Then, and not till then, will the legitimate results of religious music be fully restored. \*

We have seen, in the preceding history, that the religious influences of sacred music were the offspring of religious motives, purposes, and affections, in the persons of those who became the successful instruments of edification. We do not assert that what the profession have so long claimed was never in any given instance realized—for even actions which were wrongly intended have sometimes been overruled for good. But we say such things are not to be expected. Religious results are to be sought for only in a religious way. This is the constituted method of obtaining them; and when a different method is substituted, we have no right to look for a blessing upon our exertions.

Here, then, is seen the great source of misdirection from which the countless abuses have arisen. That which claims to be sacred music, among the distinguished cultivators of the art and their countless imitators, is not adapted with sufficient strictness to religious purposes; it is often nothing better than secular music in disguise. Yet, since it has its peculiar attractions, it is adopted more or less by all classes, and executed, almost as a matter of course, in accordance with the design, the motives, and the sentimentalities of the composer.

But before we proceed to speak more specifically of a remedy, we must be allowed to offer a single word on the *dramatic use* of religious subjects. When we consider that in the higher departments of sacred music there is now, and usually has been in modern times, a general absence of religious motives, purposes, and affections, as well as a want of just conception, both in composers and performers, how can we avoid the suspicion that there is something even worse than the negation of religious influences connected with these branches of cultivation? If religious themes are liable to be abused in speech, why not in song? If they are desecrated by furnishing unhallowed quotations in speeches and dialogues, why not by an irreverential utterance in recitations, airs, and choruses? To our own mind, the principle is perfectly plain. The whole system of dramatizing religious subjects, *without any proper recognition of religious responsibility in the parties concerned*, is, in our view, an abuse which ought never to be countenanced in a Christian community. In the expression of this opinion we do not stand alone. It did not even originate with us. To say nothing of our own countrymen, in this relation, the opinion has been supported by the Cowpers, the Newtons, the Cecils, the Richmonds, of

England, some of them, at least, men of refined taste, who lived many years where abundant opportunities of information were enjoyed. There is something in the very history of oratorios which should excite our suspicion. To say nothing of their origin and progress in a Catholic country, the consideration that they have been generally employed in England as a *substitute for other amusements* in the time of Lent, and performed by gay and thoughtless executants, not unfrequently in the theatre, and in immediate connexion with secular songs which were of more than a questionable character, would surely seem sufficient to put good men upon their guard. The power of the music upon the initiated class in community is unquestioned; but is this power rightly applied, and does it really produce legitimate results? Does it reclaim wicked men, and make good men better by promoting their growth in grace? Does it not rather have the opposite tendency? Does it not tend indirectly to lessen the devotional influence of church music? and does it not produce upon a large and respectable portion of the religious community, a strong reaction against the propriety of church music?

These truly are momentous questions, well worthy the attention of the first minds in the community. But however they may be disposed of, one thing is certain, that *sacred subjects*, whether in speech or song, ought always to be treated in a *sacred manner*. From this one decision there can be no appeal. And here we take our stand. With this principle we would begin and end the entire process of cultivation in regard to sacred music. The highest and most important uses to which this department can be applied, are the sincere worship of the heart-searching God, and Christian instruction and edification. Let us, in all our efforts towards improvement, limit its application to these purposes, and be watchful over the attendant influences, with a due sense of our obligations and responsibilities. This, and this alone, will lead effectually to the cure of evils and prevention of abuses.

Pieces for practice, in a period like the present, should be selected with the utmost care and discrimination. This is a task which is not likely to be executed by the press. It must be done by individuals whose influence will be felt. *Concert music* applied to *sacred subjects* should ever be regarded as a misnomer. It is, morally speaking, nothing better than secular music in disguise. A practical test is always at hand. The

sentiments of the words which form the basis of our songs are to be illustrated and enforced, as by the power of impassioned oratory. That music which does this, and that alone, can properly be regarded as sacred. We are not for laying aside the compositions of the great masters. We would employ them in sacred departments just so far as they can be made to answer the purpose required. We would have them treated as the classics in literature are treated. Shakspere and Milton are often quoted with propriety, even in the sacred desk; but this is a different thing from converting the pulpit into a play-house or a chair of rhetoric.

Performers should also remember that, if in sacred music they would become real worshippers, they must diligently seek to cultivate the true *spirit* of praise as well as the right manner of song. Both are essential, and neither can be omitted without serious injury to the cause. The voice of prayer as well as of praise should be heard in our schools and rehearsals. Let the whole effort be fully Christianized, and then we may, with humble confidence, look for the divine blessing.

Secular music has its own specific claims and advantages, and we have no desire to lessen it in the public esteem. As an art, it is worthy being better understood and more extensively patronized. Still it is not without its attendant evils. Among the wealthier class in the community, this branch of the art is almost universally pursued to the neglect of sacred music, properly so called. It is regarded simply as an elegant accomplishment. Time and expense will be devoted to it, year after year, while, perhaps, not a solitary hour is given to the systematic practice of devotional music. If sacred music is occasionally taken in hand, it is usually that of the concert style, as if no other could be worthy of a moment's attention. Persons thus educated, are quite indisposed to the practice of psalms and hymns. They not unfrequently acquire such a disgust for the whole subject of church music, as no strength of religious principle is afterwards sufficient to overcome. Or, if stirred up to duty, and induced to commence in earnest the work of praise, then all their habits and notions are found to be at variance with the prevailing style. One of two extremes they are always prone to pursue. They incline either, on the one hand, to apply secular melody with its light, unhallowed associations to sacred words; or, on the other hand, to discard every appearance of melody, in favor of tunes so chastised in simplicity as

scarcely to retain any measure of interest, save that which is derived from antiquity. Such persons, in the nature of the circumstances, must either exercise a controlling influence upon those around them, or retire altogether from this important field of cultivation. In either case, their course has a tendency which is exceedingly disastrous, especially as the influence of their example is seen to descend through all ranks in society.

Such a course of instruction as we have here been exposing has been extensively pursued, even in Christian families. But it is evidently wrong. It is as if our children were to be so exclusively trained to the fascinations of light reading, as to unfit them for the profitable perusal of the Holy Scriptures. We say, again, the most important objects to which music can be applied, are those of spiritual worship and religious edification. These appliances of the art will never be promoted through secular cultivation. They require specific instructions and practice. The devotional claims of the art are not met in the usual instructions for the parlor. The church must have a system of cultivation of her own, and one which is specifically adapted to her own circumstances. Such a system will never spring up spontaneously. It will never be established by the musical profession as such. It must be planted and nurtured by her own care, and maintained by her own activity and perseverance. When she arises to build with her own hands, and with purposes and affections fully consecrated, the cause will be seen to revive and flourish. Till then, it will continue to languish even in the midst of seeming prosperity.

---

## ARTICLE IX.

## NOTES ON THE SEPTUAGINT VERSION OF PSALMS I. II.

By Josiah W. Gibbs, Professor of Sacred Literature, Yale College, New Haven, Conn.

It is proposed in the following notes on the Septuagint or Alexandrine Greek version, (1) to notice the deviations from the Hebrew text, with their probable reasons; (2) to notice the peculiarities of Greek usage and construction, and to illustrate them from our latest Greek grammarians; and (3) to refer to analogous usages and constructions in the New Testament which may be illustrated from the Septuagint. The Greek text will be exhibited continuously, and will be quoted line by line, as divided on the principles of the Hebrew poetic parallelism.

## PSALM I.

*Verse 1. Μακάριος ἀνήρ,* not a simple declaration, *the man is happy*; or a mere wish, as if in the optative mode, *may the man be blessed*; but an impassioned declaration, as if μακάριος were an interjection, *happy the man!* a fair exhibition of the original Hebrew.—The student should observe here the collocation of μακάριος, which is that of the predicate or attribute adjective in Hebrew, (for a definition of the term see A. Crosby, Gr. Gramm. § 647,) and the peculiar use of ἀνήρ as a determinative pronoun, correlative to the subsequent relative pronoun, (comp. J. C. A. Heyse: deutsche Gramm. p. 533.) Comp. μακάριος ἀνήρ employed in a similar way in N. T. Rom. 4: 8. James 1: 12.

*"Ος οὖν ἐπορεύθη ἐν βουλῇ ἀσεβῶν, who walks not in the counsel of the ungodly,* as in the Hebrew.—The Greek aorist is here used to express habit, where we commonly use the present tense, (see R. Kühner: Gr. Gramm. § 442.) *Walks not in the counsel of the ungodly,* i. e. after the Hebrew idiom, *conducts not himself according to the counsel of the ungodly;* (comp. 2 Chr. 22: 5. Mic. 6: 16; and in N. T. Luke 1: 6. 1 Pet. 4: 3.)—*Πορεύομαι* is here construed with *τί,* as the metaphor is continued.

*Kai ἐν ὁδῷ ἀμαρτωλῶν οὐκ ἔστη, and stands not in the way of sinners, as in Heb.—Stands, i. e. as the connexion requires, literally moves or presses on, but here metaphorically acts or conducts himself. In the way, i. e. after the Hebrew idiom, after the conduct or manner of life, (comp. 1 K. 15 : 26. Prov. 4 : 14; and in N. T. Acts 14 : 16. 2 Pet. 2 : 15. Jude 11.)*

*Kai ἐπὶ χαθέδρᾳ λοιψῶν οὐκ ἐκάθισεν, and sits not on the seat of the impious, for Heb. and sits not in the circle or assembly of the impious, (comp. Ps. 107 : 32.)—Λοιψός here is an adjective, denoting pestilential, wicked, and not a substantive denoting pestilence; comp. 1 Sam. 1 : 16, μὴ δῆς τήν δούλην σου εἰς θυγατέρα λοιψήν, regard not thy handmaid as an impious woman.*

There is no climax in this verse, but the repetition of the thought denotes intensity. Sense of the whole verse: *happy the man who has no sort of intercourse with any class of wicked persons.*

2. *Ἄλλ’ ἡ ἐν τῷ νόμῳ κυρίον τὸ θέλημα αὐτοῦ, but in the law of Jehovah is his delight, as in Heb.—Ἄλλ’ ἡ, for ἄλλα ἡ or ἄλλο ἡ, other than, but; (see Kühner, § 741. 5. Crosby, § 901. 2. Comp. in N. T. Luke 12 : 51. 1 Cor. 3 : 5.) Κύριος is used in the Septuagint for Jehovah, as the translators, according to a superstition of the Jews, read Adonai, “Lord,” for the proper name Jehovah. Τὸ θέλημα αὐτοῦ, his delight, comp. Is. 62 : 4.*

*Καὶ ἐν τῷ νόμῳ αὐτοῦ μελετήσει ἡμέρας καὶ νυκτός, and in his law he meditates day and night, as in Heb.—The future here is the futurum consuetudinis; (see Kühner, § 446. 2.) Ἡμέρας καὶ νυκτός, by day and by night, (see Kühner, § 524. 1. Crosby, § 559. These grammarians seem to regard the genitive of time and place as a sort of substratum for the action, which co-operates for its production.)*

3. *Kai ἔσται ὡς τὸ ξύλον τὸ πεφυτευμένον παρὰ τὰς διεξόδους τῶν ιδάτων, for he shall be like the tree planted by the water-courses, as in Heb.—Kai, here, on account of the connexion, to be rendered for. Ξύλον, after the Hebrew idiom, a tree, (comp. Gen. 2 : 9; also in N. T. Luke 23 : 31. Rev. 2 : 7. 22 : 2, 14. also Lat. *lignum*, Hor. Od. II. 13. 11.) Τὰς διεξόδους τῶν ιδάτων, the water-courses, as it does not appear whether natural or artificial streams are intended.*

*Ο τὸν καρπὸν αὐτοῦ δώσει ἐν καιρῷ αὐτοῦ, which yields its fruit in its season, as in Heb.—The future tense here is the futurum consuetudinis, comp. μελετήσει, verse 2. Καρπον δίδονται,*

after the Hebrew idiom, *to yield fruit*, (comp. Zech. 8 : 12 ; and in N. T. Mat. 13 : 8. Mark 4 : 7, 8.)

*Kai τὸ φύλλον αὐτοῦ οὐκ ἀποδένησεται, and its leaf shall not fail*, as in Heb.

*Kai πάρτα ὄσα ἀν ποιῆ κατενοδωθήσεται, and all things whatsoever he doeth shall prosper*, as in Heb. *Kateneodawthēsētai, shall prosper*, comp. Judg. 18 : 5. Ps. 37 : 7.—In this last clause the metaphor evidently is dropped.

4. *Oὐχ οὐτως οι ἀσεβεῖς, οὐχ οὐτως, not so the ungodly, not so,* as in the Hebrew, except that the words repeated are added by the Greek translator for the sake of emphasis.

*Ἄλλ' η ὡς ὁ χρῶν ὃν ἐκρίπτει ὁ ἀνέμος ἀπὸ προσώπου τῆς γῆς, but they are as the chaff which the wind drives away from the face of the earth*, as in the Hebrew, except that the words *ἀπὸ προσώπου τῆς γῆς* are added by the Greek translator, as if to complete the sentence. These words, however, exhibit the Hebrew idiom, and have the aspect of being a translation.—*Άλλ' η, but*, comp. verse 2. *Ἐκρίπτει, in the present tense in a general proposition, as we should expect.*

5. *Διὰ τοῦτο οὐκ ἀναστήσονται οι ἀσεβεῖς ἐν κρίσει, therefore the ungodly shall not stand in judgment*, as in Heb.—For the sentiment, comp. Job. 5 : 4, *they are crushed in the gate*, i. e. *they cannot stand when tried*. Quere. Can the Greek translator, in using *ἀναστήσονται*, refer to the general judgment?

*Οὐδεὶς ἀμαρτωλὸς ἐν βούλῃ δικαιῶν, nor sinners in the assembly of the righteous*, as in Heb.—*Βούλῃ*, here in the sense of *council, assembly* ; (comp. Ps. 89 : 7. 111 : 1. 1 Mac. 14 : 22.) For the sentiment, comp. Ex. 12 : 19, *that soul shall be cut off from the congregation of Israel*.

6. *Οὐτι γνώσκει κύριος ὁδὸν δικαιῶν, for Jehovah knows the way of the righteous*, as in Heb.—*Knows*, i. e. after the Hebrew idiom, *approves or regards*, (comp. Am. 3 : 2. Nah. 1 : 7 ; and in N. T. John 10 : 14, 15. Rom. 7 : 15. 2 Tim. 2 : 19.) *Οδός, here after the Hebrew idiom, plans, purposes.*

*Kai ὁδὸς ἀσεβῶν ἀπολεῖται, but the way of the ungodly shall perish*, as in Heb.—*The way of the ungodly shall perish*, i. e. after the Hebrew idiom, *the purposes of the ungodly shall be frustrated*.

Sense of the whole verse : *Jehovah knows and approves the purposes of the righteous, therefore they prosper ; but he knows and disapproves the purposes of the ungodly, therefore they shall be frustrated.*

## PSALM II.

Verse 1. *Iwazí ἐφρύαξαν ἔθνη ; why do the nations rage ?* as in the original Hebrew.—*Iwazí* for *īwā zí rýn̄tai*, *that what may be ? why ?* (see Kühner, § 842. 1. Crosby, § 765. a. comp. 1 Mac. 2 : 7, 13 ; and in N. T. Mat. 9 : 4. Acts 4 : 25.) *'Ephrýaξaν*, *rage* ; comp. 2. Mac. 7 : 34. 3 Mac. 2 : 2. *Ēth̄n̄*, *nations*, scil. not Jewish.

*Kai λαοὶ ἐμελέτησαν κενά ; and why do, the peoples meditate vain things ?* as in Heb.

2. *Παρέστησαν οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς ; why do the kings of the earth set themselves ?* as in Heb.

*Kai οἱ ἀρχότες συνήθησαν ἐπιστρέψαντο ; and why are the rulers assembled together ?* for Heb. *why do the rulers take counsel together ?* the Greek translator being led to this rendering of the verb by the word following.

*Kata τοῦ κυρίου καὶ κατὰ τοῦ χριστοῦ αὐτοῦ, against Jehovah and against his anointed*, as in Heb.

3. *Διαρρήξαμεν τοὺς δεσμοὺς αὐτῶν, let us break asunder their bonds*, as in Heb.

*Kai ἀποδόψωμεν ἀφ' ἡμῶν τὸν ζυγὸν αὐτῶν, and let us cast off their yoke from us*, a fair translation of the original Hebrew.

4. *Οἱ κατοικῶν ἐν οὐρανοῖς ἐκγελάσεται αὐτούς, he that dwells in the heavens shall laugh at them*, as in the Hebrew, except that *κατοικῶν* is used for *καθίζων*, to avoid the gross anthropomorphism ; (comp. Ps. 9 : 11 ; and in N. T. Acts 7 : 48. 17 : 24.)—*Ἐν οὐρανοῖς, in the heavens*, plural in imitation of the Hebrew.

*Kai ὁ κύριος ἐκμυκητηρεῖ αὐτούς, and Jehovah shall scoff at them*, as in Heb.

5. *Τότε λαλήσει πρὸς αὐτούς ἐν δργῇ αὐτοῦ, then shall he speak unto them in his wrath*, as in Heb.

*Kai ἐν τῷ θυμῷ αὐτοῦ ταράξει αὐτούς, and he shall vex them in his anger*, as in Heb.

For analogous instances of anthropopathism in N. T. comp. Rom. 2 : 8. 9 : 21. Heb. 3 : 11. 4 : 3. Rev. 15 : 1.

6. *Ἐγὼ δὲ κατεστάθη βασιλεὺς ἵν' αὐτοῦ, but I have been constituted king by him*, for Heb. *but I have anointed my king*, in order to avoid the abrupt change of person in the original.

*Ἐπὶ Σιών ὅρος τὸ ἄγιον αὐτοῦ, upon Mount Sion, his sanctuary*, a fair rendering of the Hebrew without the vowel points.—

**Σιών**, the Greek translator being accustomed to represent the Hebrew Tsade by the Greek Sigma.

7. *Διαγέλλων τὸ πρόσταγμα κνίον κύριος εἶπε πρὸς μί, declaring the decree of Jehovah ; Jehovah has said to me.* Here the participle is employed instead of the finite verb in the Hebrew, on account of the change in the preceding verse ; and the name of the deity is repeated for the sake of perspicuity.

*Τίος μον εἰ σὺ, ἐγὼ σῆμερον γενένηκά σε, thou art my son, this day I have begotten thee,* as in Heb.

8. *Αἴτησας παρ ἐμοῦ, καὶ δῶσω σοι ἔθη τὴν κληρονομίαν σου, ask of me, and I will give thee the nations for thy inheritance,* as in Heb.—*Inheritance.* i. e. after the Hebrew idiom, *portion*, comp. in N. T. Acts 7 : 4. Heb. 11 : 8. *Τὴν κληρονομίαν σου,* for the use of the article here, see Kühner, § 494; Crosby, § 706.

*Καὶ τὴν κατάσχεσίν σου τὰ πέρατα τῆς γῆς, and the ends of the earth for thy possession,* as in Heb.—*Τὴν κατάσχεσίν σου,* for the use of the article, see as above.

9. *Πομακεῖς αὐτὸν ἐν ἄρβιστῳ σιδηρῷ, thou shalt rule them with an iron rod,* for Heb. *thou shalt break them in pieces with an iron rod* ; the Greek translator having read מִלְחָמָה from מַלְכָה to feed or rule, instead of מִלְחָמָה from מַלְכָה to break in pieces ; comp. Rev. 2 : 27. 12 : 5. 19 : 15 ; all of which follow the Septuagint in this respect.

*Ὥς σκενὸς κεραμίως συντρίψεις αὐτούς, as a potter's vessel thou shalt break them in pieces,* as in Heb. comp. in N. T. 2 : 27.

10. *Καὶ τūν βασιλεῖς σύνετε, now therefore, ye kings, be wise,* as in Heb.—*Καὶ τūν, now therefore,* comp. Gen. 11 : 6.

*Παιδεύθητε πάντες οἱ κρίνοντες τὴν γῆν, be instructed, all ye that judge the earth,* as in Heb.

11. *Δουλεύσατε τῷ αὐτῷ ἐν φόβῳ, serve ye Jehovah with fear,* as in Heb.

*Καὶ ἀγαλλιᾶσθε αὐτῷ ἐν τρόμῳ, and rejoice in him with trembling,* as in the Hebrew, except that the dative of the pronoun is very happily supplied ; (comp. Ps. 35 : 9 ; and in N. T. Luke 1 : 47.)—For this softened use of τρόμος, comp. in N. T. 1 Cor. 2 : 3. 2 Cor. 7 : 15. Eph. 6 : 5. Phil. 2 : 12. in all which passages the external sign or exhibition is used for the internal feeling.

12. *Ἄρξασθε παιδείας, μή ποτε δογματῇ κύριος, receive instruction, lest Jehovah be angry,* for Heb. *embrace the son, lest he be angry.*—The translator here appears to have been stumbled by the unusual word בֶן son ; and to have added *Jehovah* from necessity to complete the sense.

*Kai ἀπολεῖσθε ἐξ ὁδοῦ δικαιίας, ὅταν ἐκκανθῆ ἐν τάχι ὁ θυμὸς αὐτοῦ, and ye perish from the righteous way, when his anger shall be suddenly kindled, a fair translation of the Hebrew, except that the word righteous is added to make out the sense.—From the righteous way, i. e. from the way of the righteous, the translator probably having in mind Ps. 1: 6. On the anthropopathism, comp. verse 5.*

*Μακάριοι πάντες οἱ πεποιθότες ἐν αὐτῷ, blessed are all they that put their trust in him, in full accordance with the Hebrew. The pronoun, however, in the Greek version, refers to Jehovah, while in the Hebrew the reference is doubtful.—*Μακάριοι* has the collocation of the predicate adjective, see Ps. 1: 1, above. The participle of the second perfect has the force here of the present, (see Kühner, § 439, Crosby, § 367. comp. in N. T. Heb. 2: 13.)*

## ARTICLE X.

DOMINICI DIODATI, I. C. NEAPOLITANI, DE CHRISTO GRÆCE  
LOQUENTE EXERCITATIO.

Translated by O. T. Dobbin, LL. B. of Trinity College, Dublin.

[CONTINUED FROM PAGE 222.]

§ 15. *The Jewish kings who followed, greatly favored Hellenizers and Hellenism.*

To crown our argument, we are now to show that the Jewish kings themselves who reigned after this period, were enamored of the Greeks and cherished Hellenism with zealous care.

In the first place, John, son of Simon Maccabeus, hired Greek soldiers at his own expense.\* To his Hebrew appellation, John, he added the Greek Hyrcanus ('Ὑρκανός), which gave its name to the tower he built and called Hyrcanium ('Ὑρκάνιος). He first professed the Stoic and afterwards the Epicurean philosophy, by being first a Pharisee, and after that a Sadducee.†

\* Joseph. in Antiq. lib. 13, c. 8, p. 658; De B., l. 1, c. 2, p. 56.

† Joseph. in Antiq. lib. 13, cap. 10, § 6, p. 663.

Aristobulus his son followed, who proved his attachment to the Greeks by so many acts of kindness, that he was commonly styled Philhellene, or, as Josephus words it, *χρηματίσας μὲν φιλέλλην.*\*

In this respect Alexander Jannæus, the son of Aristobulus, differed not from his father. He called the new soldiers, whom he armed with brazen shields, by the Greek name Hecatontomachoi.† Six thousand two hundred Greek soldiers were enrolled among his troops.† He built a beautiful castle at the Jordan, and gave it the Greek name Alexandrium (*Ἀλεξάνδρειον*) from himself. In fine, he was so ardent an admirer of the Greek philosophy, that he treated both Sadducees and Pharisees with the utmost attention during life, and when about to die, gave charge to his wife Alexandra, to allow the Pharisees the disposal of his body, and exacted from her the promise that she would make them the confidants of all her measures.§

Hyrcanus, the son of Alexander, succeeded to his father's throne. Too closely did he follow his parent's example in the patronage he extended to Hellenism, as the following decree, quoted from Josephus, will show :

The Athenians decreed him “a crown of gold, the prize accorded by law, and the erection of a brazen statue in the temple of the people and the graces ; they further decreed him a proclamation in the theatre of Bacchus at the representation of the new tragedies, and at the Gymnic contests. They ordered too, that every thing besides, which could be devised to his honor, should be bestowed upon him for his distinguished kindness to the Greeks.”||

To Hyrcanus succeeded Herod, surnamed, from his exploits, the Great. This monarch favored the Greeks and Hellenism (*Ἑλληνισμόν*) in an extraordinary manner. To the towns and cities which he built he gave Grecian names, and those ¶ which had before Chaldee or Hebrew ones, he changed into Greek, as Samaria into Sebaste, Capharsaba into Antipatris, Betharamphtha into Livia, of which see more below. All the

\* Joseph. ibid. cap. 11, § 3, p. 665.

† Id. ibid. cap. 12, § 5, p. 668.

‡ Id. ibid. cap. 14, § 1, p. 672.

§ Id. ibid. cap. 15, § 5, p. 675.

|| Joseph. lib. 14 Ant. cap. 8, § 8, p. 698

¶ V. Relandum in *Palæstina Illustrata*, tom. 2.

money which he coined bore Greek inscriptions. He established the Olympic games at Jerusalem, built a theatre in the city, and an amphitheatre just without, both remarkable for their magnificence. In these, every five years, games, shows, plays, were exhibited after the manner of the Greeks. This quinquennial celebration he observed with the utmost pomp, despatching embassies to his neighbors, and inviting spectators from every quarter. Athletes flocked from all Greece, play-actors of various lines, and musicians, called in Greek θυμελικοί.\* Hence it came that Herod was vulgarly called by the Jews Agonotheta, or giver of shows. He renewed the Olympic games at Elis, which had been allowed to drop into disuse through the poverty of the Eleans.† So favorable was Herod to the Greeks and to Hellenism (*Ἑλληνισμός*) that Josephus calls him liberal to strangers and harsh to his own people.‡ The posterity of Herod carried themselves much after the same fashion in this matter. The Tetrarch and Agrippa bore the Greeks such good will, that several monuments were raised in Greece with inscriptions in honor of them. Those who would obtain further information on this head, may consult Spon's *Miscellanea*.§

#### § 16. *Summary of the Chapter.*

But here we furl our sails, and review our voyage thus far. We have shown, I. That Alexander reduced Judea into subjection to Macedonian rule, and that some time afterwards the Jews in his army, returning to their native country, took the Greek language back with them. II. That Samaria was filled with Macedonians by the same monarch, the native inhabitants having been expelled. III. That the Jews, to the number of seventy thousand, brought the Greek language with them from Egypt to Judea. IV. That the Jews, who came out of Syria and settled again in their own land in immense numbers, conveyed with them not only the Epocha and general habits of the Greeks, but also their language. V. That Jason the high priest endeavored to win over his fellow-countrymen to the rites of the Greeks, in which he easily succeeded. VI. That Hellenism

\* Joseph. lib. 15 Antiq. cap. 8, p. 766 et seq.

† Id. lib. 16, cap. 5, § 3, p. 798.

‡ Ibid. § 3 et § 4, p. 799.

§ Sponius in *Miscellaneis*, p. 338, alibique.

was extensively prevalent under the pontificate of Menelaus. VII. That Antiochus Epiphanes sought with all his might to establish the Greek language, manners, and laws in Judea. VIII. That Antiochus established Greek military settlements at Jerusalem, which were intended to compel the Jews to embrace Hellenism. IX. That the Samaritans of Sichem, of their own accord, adopted the Greek ritual and customs, and dedicated the temple on Gerizim to a Greek divinity. X. That Antiochus Epiphanes published a decree, that all the Jews should embrace Hellenism to the total abandonment of Judaism, on pain of death. XI. That the same Antiochus removed all pretexts for not adopting Hellenism. XII. That the high priest Alcimus greatly enlarged the dominion of Hellenism in Judea. XIII. That all Judea was covered by Grecian colonies for the term of nineteen years, which constrained the Jews to conform to Grecian usages (*ad Graecissandum*). XIV. That the Jews embraced the Greek philosophy and Grecian sects. XV. That the succeeding Jewish kings greatly favored the Hellenes and Hellenism.

As these points are satisfactorily proved, and it is confessed that the Jews were under the Grecian yoke one hundred and ninety years, is there one who can withstand the conviction, that the Jews universally adopted the Greek language, and allowed their own Chaldaic to drop out of use altogether?

I shall close this part with a quotation from the ingenious and learned Voss, too much to my purpose to be omitted.\* “ Wheresoever, from the times of Alexander the Great, the Greeks obtained dominion, there did the Greek language prevail. It is absurd, therefore, to except from this description Judea alone, since Josephus and the Books of Maccabees sufficiently show how ready the Jews were to fall in with the Grecian customs, the greater part of them preferring to be considered Greeks rather than Jews. Even those of them who disliked the Greeks, were constrained to learn the language of their masters for their own interest’s sake. Thus in Judea, just as in Egypt, Asia, and in the rest of Syria, no other language was heard than Greek.”

#### *An Excursus upon the Hellenists of Acts VI.*

From what has been already advanced may be explained that

---

\* Isaac. Vossius de Sybillinis Oraculis, pag 290.

indescribably vexed passage in the Acts of the Apostles relating to the Hellenists. The words are : 'Ἐν δὲ ταῖς ἡμέραις ταύταις πληθυσόντων τῶν μαθητῶν, ἐγένετο γοργυσμὸς τῶν Ἑλληνιστῶν πρὸς τοὺς Ἐβραίους, ὅτι παρεθετοῦστο εἰ τῷ δακονίᾳ τῇ καθηματιᾷ αἱ χῆραι αὐτῶν' "But in those days, when the number of the disciples was increased, there arose a murmuring of the *Hellenists* against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily distribution."\*

Two controversies of no light importance have taken their origin from this passage, namely, who were the Hellenists whose widows were neglected in the ministrations, and, was there ever a Hellenistic tongue deriving its name from the persons called Hellenists. These we shall now notice in order.

#### I. Who were the Hellenists?

Men of the highest erudition have entered keenly upon this first question, the different opinions upon it being, I. That of Peter de Marca, who supposed the Hellenists to be the Jews of the second dispersion in the Greek provinces, the dispersed of the Gentiles (*gentilium sparsos*) as they are called. II. That of Erasmus, who conceived the term Hellenists to refer to a faction rather than to a nation or tongue. III. That of Lightfoot, who supposed them to be the Jews who lived among the Gentiles, and were ignorant of Hebrew, speaking only the languages of the people among whom they dwelt.† IV. That of Lewis Cappel, who thought the Hellenists were the Heathen. V. That of Isaac Voss, who supposed they were the Jews of the Roman party, or those who received Roman pay.‡ VI. That of Heinsius, (whom Grotius, Selden, and others, follow,) who will have it that by the name of Hellenists are designated Jews born out of Palestine, who used Greek books in their synagogues, and wrote and spake the peculiar dialect called Hellenistic.§ VII. That of Salmasius, differing widely from all these and partly following Beza, that the Hellenists were totally unacquainted with the Hebrew language, that they only spoke Greek, that they were not Jews in any sense, that there never was a Hellenistic language, nor do any traces of it now exist.||

\* Act. Apost. cap. 6, v. 1.

† Lightfoot, Hor. Hebr. in cap. 6 Act. Apost. t. 2. p. 707.

‡ Is. Vossius de Sybill. Oraculis, cap. 16, p. 287.

§ Daniel Heinsius in Exercit. de Ling. Hellen.

|| Salmasius in Com. de Lingua Hellenistica. Sententias

But of these conflicting opinions we may easily dispose by referring to the preceding pages, and attending to the observations which follow.

And, in the first place, it is clear, from what has been already noted in this chapter, that certain families of Greeks, either in the pay of the Jewish kings, or because of advantageous settlements granted them in the country, or because they saw themselves regarded with favor by the ruling powers, fixed themselves in Judea.

In the second place. These Hellenes, who migrated to Judea, did not conform to Jewish customs (*non quidem Judaizabant*), but continued faithful to their Hellenism, observing the manner of life prevailing among the Greeks. Therefore they did not embrace the Jewish religion but retained their own, just as the Jews do now among the Christians, the Greeks among the Latins, the Christians among the Turks, who all observe their respective religions amongst men of another creed. Nor did the children of these Greeks act differently from their parents. They also lived in the observance of the religion and general habits of their ancestors. This is the proper meaning of the words *Ἐλληνίζειν* and *Ἐλληνισμός*, especially among the writers of the church (*apud sacros auctores*). For *Ἐλληνίζειν* does not refer so directly to the use of the language as to the observance of the religious and other customs of Greece, following the analogy of *Ιούδαιζειν*,\* which in the writings of Paul is to follow the Jewish religion, and of *Χριστιανίζειν*, which is to adopt Christianity. Thus Gregory of Nyssa uses the term : *Οὐκοῦν ὅταν πρός τινα Ἐλληνίζοντα ή διαιτήσις ἦ, καλῶς ἀπέρχοι ταύτην ποιεῖσθαι τοῦ λόγου τὴν ἀρχὴν, πότερον εἶναι τὸ θεῖον ὑπείληψε, η τῷ τῶν ἀθέων συμφέρεται δόγματα.* “When, therefore, you dispute with any of the Hellenists, it will be well to begin with this question : does he believe in a God, or is he of the atheists, who believe in none.”† Socrates, in like manner, in his Ecclesiastical History, opposes *Ἐλληνίζειν* to *Χριστιανίζειν*.‡

has omnes suo more exponit doctissimus Fabricius in *Biblioth. Graeca*, lib. 4, cap. 5, p. 225.

\* Paulus, Ep. ad Galat. cap. 2, v. 14.

† Nyssenus, Præfat. in *Orat. Catech. tom. 3*, p. 44. Idem *Oratione eadem*, cap. 3, p. 49.

‡ Socrates, *Hist. Eccles. lib. 1, cap. 22*, p. 185.

Hesychius,\* too, in his Dictionary explains ‘Ελληνίζειν, to live after the manner of the Greeks; and the ancient glosses in like manner render Ελληνίζω by the word Græcisso. Thus Aeschines in Ctesiphon, defining the limited sense in which he would have the word taken, says Ἐλληνίζω τῷ φορῇ, *Hellenizing in speech.* Ελληνισμός, following the same analogy, signifies the profession of the Greek religion, the imitation of Grecian manners; as in the second Book of Maccabees: ‘*Ἡν δὲ οὗτος ἀκμή τις Ἐλληνισμοῦ, καὶ πρόσφατος ἀλλορυθμισμοῦ*’ “Now such was the height of Greek fashions, and increase of heathenish manners, through the exceeding profaneness of Jason, that ungodly wretch, and not high priest.”†

So also in Gregory Nyssene,‡ Chrysostom,§ and frequently in Justin Martyr.|| From the circumstance, then, that these descendants of the Greeks continued to observe the customs of their forefathers, and that they Hellenized (Ελληνίζειν) or clave to their ancestral faith, do I believe that these persons were called Hellenists, i. e. were observers of the Greek religion (sectatores Græcanicæ religionis).

As the effect of professing another creed is to beget different habits, so these Hellenists were on bad terms with the Jewish populace, and especially with the lower orders. The Greeks or Hellenists regarded the Jewish religion as revolting and absurd, and called its votaries barbarians. These, on the other hand, returning like for like, gave the Greeks or Hellenists the opprobrious name of Heathen. Thus burning with mutual rancor they held each other in detestation.

But as soon as the gospel was published in Judea, not only did some of the Jews, but also of the Hellenists and of the proselytes embrace the faith of Christ. Then, after the ascen-

\* Hesychius in Diction. voce Ελληνίζειν.

† Ελληνισμός, imitatio Græc. Theol. Græc. et Apos. posteri Ελληνισμὸν vocarunt τὴν Ελληνίνην παιδεῖαν, i. e. τὴν ἔξωθεν παιδεῖαν, s. τοὺς ἔξωθεν λόγους, opposentes eum τῇ εὐαγγελικῇ παιδείᾳ· quia sc. Græci tum temporis erant Ethnici et a Christiana religione alieni. Steph. Thes. Valp.—Ed.]

‡ Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 4, v. 13.

§ Nyssenus, Præfat. citata pagina 43. [Nazianzenus, Orat. 3, contr. Julian. Ed.]

|| Chrysost. lib. cont. Gent. tom. 1, p. 652, edit. Paris.

Orth. Ib. Resp. ad quæst. 1, Orth. et ad quæst. 24, Orth. Ib. Resp. ad qu. 42 et 74.

sion of the Lord, the new converts began to have all things in common ; as we read in the Acts : " And all that believed were together, and had all things common, and sold their possessions and substance, and divided them to all as each had need."\* So also elsewhere : " And the multitude of them that believed was of one heart and one soul, nor did any say that any thing he possessed was his own, but all were common ; nor was there one among them who lacked ; for as many of them as were possessors of lands or of houses, sold them and brought the prices of the things which they sold and laid them at the feet of the apostles. And division was made thereof to each, as each had need."<sup>t</sup>

But in the course of time, when the number of the disciples increased, although the converted Jews were bound by the closest ties of religion to the converted Hellenists, yet it so happened that, in the distribution of the general funds to the faithful, the widows of the latter class were neglected. To remedy this evil, when the apostles met they appointed seven deacons to preside over the tables of the saints. As these facts just alleged are indisputable, I venture to assert that no body of persons can present any thing like equally valid claims to the title of Hellenists with those just indicated.

1. Those whom Heinsius, Lightfoot, and Peter de Marca patronize, to wit, Jews dwelling among Gentiles, cannot ; for these not only did not adopt the religion of the heathen, (the proper meaning of Ἑλληνιστες) but are even here expressly distinguished from the Hellenists. " There arose a murmuring of the Hellenists against the Hebrews." So also, in two other places in the same book, the Hellenists are distinguished from the Jews.<sup>t</sup> From this it is evident, that those here called Hellenists could not be Jews or Hebrews, which mean the same thing.

2. Nor does this name correctly apply to the heathen at large, as Cappellus has persuaded himself. For although in the wideness of the term, all Gentiles, Greeks, and Hellenists too, among the number, are comprehended under the designation heathen, yet all the heathen are not Hellenists. Those only bear the name correctly, who, dwelling among the Hebrews, *Graecos*

\* Act. Apost. cap. 2, v. 44 et seq.

<sup>t</sup> Ibid. cap. 4, v. 32 ad 35.

<sup>t</sup> Ibid. cap. 9, v. 29 ; et 11, v. 20.

cised, (*Hλληρικος*) and who continued to live after the customs of their Grecian forefathers. In proof further, that the Gentiles at large could not be meant, it may be enough to state that to the other pagans the gospel was not yet preached, nor the church of Christ laid open. Persons of this class, therefore, could not by any possibility be joined at that time to the Christian society at Jerusalem.

3. It is equally clear that this name cannot be appropriated to those Jews who belonged to the Roman party, whom Vossius has called the Hellenists, and this for the same reason; for if, in the Acts, the Jews are distinguished from the Hellenists, nay, opposed to them, it must be evident that Jews or Hebrews never could bear the name.

From all that has been stated it will appear, that Salmasius and those who think with him come *nearest* the truth in my opinion, who say that by Hellenists are here meant, not Jews by birth or descent, but proselytes from the Greeks, (that is, Greeks who had professed the Jewish religion,) or the children of those proselytes who knew only the Greek language, and not Hebrew. These were not called *Hellenes*, for they were not true Greeks; but rather *Hellenists*, from *Ἐλληρικοί*, which also signifies *to speak Greek*. Thus Salmasius comes *nearest* the truth, I repeat, but he has not hit the right nail on the head after all (*rem acu non tetigit*). What he affirms about the Hellenists not being Jews, but Greeks and speaking Greek,

“Is wise—is mine—and smacks of fav’ring Jove.”

But in other points this distinguished writer errs through not allowing the existence of Hellenism, or the use of the Greek language among the Jews; and the further he recedes from this admission, the more does he boggle in his argument.

His first mistake is, to make the Hellenists speak Greek, and the Jews Chaldee, and these parties mutually ignorant of each other’s tongue. But we have just been called to observe Hellenists of this class, born in Judea in the midst of Jews and won to the Christian faith, living along with converted Jews and having all things common. Moreover, in the Acts the Hellenists accost the Jews, and especially in this chapter, wherein they say in the presence of the Jewish multitude, “It is not right to leave the word of God and serve tables, wherefore, etc. etc;” and again, “the saying pleased the whole multitude.” Now, if the things

which Salmasius alleges were true, how did these Jews and Hellenists contrive to live together? what common language did they speak? Nay, it is certain, from the premises, that one and the same language was vernacular to the Jews and common to both. But as this must have been the Hellenistic, as we shall prove below, it follows that this was native to Jews and Hellenists alike, and was that which was used by them in their intercourse with each other.

A second mistake of Salmasius is, that he conceives these parties to have been called Hellenists from their use of the Greek tongue. Now although 'Ελληνίς does signify to speak the language, as well as to observe the religion of Greece, yet here Hellenist refers exclusively to religion, without having any regard to language at all. Were it otherwise, were the name derived from the language rather than from the religion, then the Jews born in Syria and Greece should have been called Hellenists, for these also Hellenized in that sense (*Hλληνιζον*), that is, spoke Greek. But that these latter did not bear the title, has just been demonstrated by Salmasius and myself. If they did, he would thus be environed with the same difficulties he has thrown in the way of Heinsius, and which he has himself so ably refuted in his books about the Hellenists. Yet into this very error has Salmasius fallen in not acknowledging Hellenism (i. e. speaking Greek) among the Jews also. Had he but recognized this, and conceded that Jews and Hellenists both spoke Greek, then assuredly he would never have made the point of difference between them to be a faculty they both possessed in common, namely, the ability to speak that language.

A third mistake of Salmasius is, that he confounds the proselytes with the Hellenists. Yet the true definition of a Hellenist is, a person who lives after the manner of the Greeks and observes their religion. The proselytes, on the contrary, were immigrants from foreign countries, who had embraced the Jewish religion. The Hellenist and proselyte, therefore, differed as much from each other, as the Heathen religion from the Jewish. Besides, the Hellenists were despised by the Jewish people because aliens from the faith of Israel; whereas, on the contrary, the proselytes were so acceptable, that Christ charges the Jews with compassing sea and land to make one proselyte. Of these see more in Maimonides.\* It is not, then, at all probable that the

---

\* Maimonides, *Tract. de Proselytis*, cap. 2 et 3.

widows of such persons would be neglected, as described in the Acts ; but it is highly probable that those of the Hellenists would, because of the old standing grudge between the Hellenists and the Jews. We close, then, this part of our argument by affirming that *those persons were called Hellenists who were born of Greek parents settled in Judea ; that the name was given them because of their retaining the religion of their fathers in the midst of the Jews ; and that to them and to the Jews alike the Greek language was vernacular.*

## II. Was there ever a Hellenistic language ?

Now follows our other question, of equal interest and greater importance, viz. Was there ever a Hellenistic dialect of the kind generally described, as combining Greek words with a Hebrew phraseology ? a hypothesis in which most interpreters of the New Testament have sought a solution of their difficulties.

On this point there could only be two opinions. Daniel Heinsius maintains that there was such a tongue, and that it was called Hellenistic, from Ἑλληνιστής, the Hellenists who used it, a word formed after the same model as ποιητής from ποίησις, and for the same reasons. For as poets have a peculiar style of composition, governing at once words and phrases, and they who use this poetical dialect are called poets, even so are they called Hellenists who use the Hellenistic dialect.

Salmasius, on the other hand, endeavored, in these publications, to prove that it never had existence. As this dialect or language was quite unknown to the ancients, and not so much as named by them, as it could not be adjoined to any known Greek dialect, Ionic, Doric, Æolic, Attic, so did he conclude it never to have existed, but to be a figment of the moderns. All the elucidations, therefore, of the New Testament drawn from that source by Heinsius and other interpreters, he considers as nothing more than learned trifles (pro nugis eruditis habendæ). Besides, adds Salmasius, "that the language should have existence, there must have been some people, some nation, that used it as their native and proper speech."\*

But this difficulty Heinsius will easily get over. For, if the Hellenistic tongue was vernacular to all the Jews from the period of the Maccabees, as we have undertaken to prove, then directly are we furnished with a people who spoke it. For the

---

\* Salmasius in Comm. de Hellen. p. 84. Et in Funere Lingue Hel. pp. 8 et 10.

Jews, who formerly spoke Hebrew, Chaldee, or Syriac, when they learned Greek, under the successors of Alexander, from the Egyptians, Syrians, and Macedonians, would naturally retain many forms of speech from their native tongue; from the Egyptians, Syrians, and Macedonians, too, they would be sure to receive idioms which they would incorporate with their Greek; and out of the mass thus formed, they would carve out this Græco-barbaric tongue. Hence all the Jewish writers from the age of the Maccabees, and the authors of the Septuagint version, have employed this dialect, composed of Hebrew, Chaldee, Syriac, Macedonian, and Egyptian words. And as, shortly afterwards, the Jews received certain Latin words along with the Roman yoke, so the later authors, and especially those of the New Testament, adopt certain Latin idioms in addition. Salmasius has gone so far as to say, in reference to this, "that the Hellenistic of the New Testament is quite another thing from that of the Old, for this latter is quite freed from the Latinisms that appear in the former."\* But in the self-same New Testament, and in the contemporaneous writers of a later age, a variety is found to mark their Hellenism, arising from difference of locality. Matthew, John, Peter, James, who are Galileans, employ a different Hellenistic dialect from Paul of Tarsus and Luke of Antioch. All the writers, in fact, of that age wrote Hellenistically, with the exception of a few—Flavius Josephus in particular, who borrowed from the Greeks their elegance of style and grace of composition.

I am surprised, meanwhile, how a man of such consummate learning as Saumaise could fight tooth and nail (*tanquam pro aris et focis*) against the existence of a language which, with all his efforts to overthrow, he has by his own concessions tended most strongly to support. For, while he owns, as he often does, that the seventy interpreters and the sacred writers of the New Testament used a Grecism (*Græcismo*) exceedingly impure, adulterated with Hebraisms and Syraisms, he confesses in that fact the existence of the Hellenistic and all that Heinsius meant by the term. This is in reality approving what in words he rejects.

But Salmasius meets us here with another objection. He grants, indeed, that the sacred writers used a peculiar idiom, but contends that it has been improperly denominated by Heinsius

---

\* Salmasius in *Ossilegio*, p. 294.

and the learned the Hellenistic *dialect*. "From what we have advanced," he proceeds to say, "it must be clearer than the sun, that a Greek which was never appropriated to any people, and which never had any definite characteristics attached to its words by which it might be distinguished from other dialects, cannot be in the proper sense of the term a *dialect*, nor be defined by such a name."\* On this subject he has expended nearly all his work *De Hellenistis*.

But, with the learned author's leave, this is not to answer, but to evade the argument. The question is not whether this tongue be correctly designated the Hellenistic *dialect*, but whether it ever had an actual existence in our world. Grant that the name is incorrect, and what follows? Shall we deny its existence on account of the inappropriateness of its name? Nay, as Salmasius owns and the learned are satisfied that, however barbarous and unlike the other dialects of Greece, it actually did exist, it is of little use to carp about a single and unimportant point, whether or no it be rightly called a dialect. There is no reason then, we affirm, against believing in the existence of a Hellenistic tongue or dialect, as we shall show at greater length in its proper place.

Meanwhile as regards the name, we may observe that Heinsius conceives it should be called Hellenistic from the Hellenists, whose ordinary speech it was. To Salmasius, however, we must concede that the name is a modern coinage, for to the ancients it was unknown. We will further own that Heinsius was wrong in calling it after the Hellenists. Nevertheless we must maintain that modern critics have, after all, been right in considering it a peculiar dialect, whatever Salmasius may urge to the contrary; for from his own definitions it is evident that the name of a *dialect* may be given to this tongue, since it was peculiar and native to the sacred writers and the whole Jewish nation. But as far as regards the term Hellenistic, I own it does not entirely satisfy me. I had rather call it the Judaic or the Græco-Judaic, inasmuch as it was peculiar to the writers of that country, and scarcely known beyond. But here I pause.

On the whole, then, while in the former controversy we side almost entirely with Salmasius, in the latter we coincide in most respects with Heinsius; since it is unquestionably certain that this Græco-barbaric tongue had existence, even upon the ad-

---

\* *Salmas. Comm. de Hellen.* p. 84.

mission of his opponent. For it was vernacular in Judea, and to all the Jews from the time of the Maccabees, as we shall prove in the ensuing part, and hence the sacred writers came to use it. The knowledge of it, therefore, is of the utmost importance; and those do well who avail themselves of its aid in unravelling the difficulties of the Septuagint version and the New Testament, for without it there can be no certainty in the interpretation of the Sacred Books.

[To be continued.)

---

## ARTICLE XI.

### CRITICAL NOTICES.

- 1.—*Plutarchus de sera Numinis Vindicta: Plutarch on the Delay of the Deity in the Punishment of the Wicked, with notes. By H. B. HACKETT, Professor of Biblical Literature in Newton Theological Institution, Andover.* Published by Allen, Morrill and Wardwell. New York: Mark H. Newman. 1844.

We are pleased to see a new edition of this treatise of Plutarch in our own country, because it indicates an increasing interest in philological studies. Besides, a treatise on a subject which has perplexed every thoughtful Christian, from one occupying the position of the author, a Greek of the latter part of the first and the beginning of the second century of the Christian era, who was without a knowledge of Christianity or even of the Old Testament Scriptures, but learned in all the wisdom of the Grecian schools, cannot fail to be interesting. Plutarch has justly been said to be inferior to no heathen writer, unless it be Plato, in the development of religious sentiments, and he may be considered not as defending his own views merely, but those of a prominent school of Grecian philosophy, the New Platonic; in which "Christianity found its point of nearest approximation." But the value of the volume before us is not confined to the Greek text. We think that Professor Hackett has done much for the cause

of sound learning by his somewhat copious notes. They seem to be of a far higher order than notes upon Greek writers generally. The author shows that he has studied the original thoroughly, and given us the results of his studies, where they were necessary for the elucidation of the text, briefly and accurately. The mere classical scholar cannot fail to be interested and profited by a careful reading of the Greek *with the notes*, and every Theological student and clergyman ought to own the volume as a companion to his Greek Testament. The frequent allusions to the New Testament, both in illustrating the sentiment and the language, which is in some points strikingly like that of the inspired writers, enhance its value; and we are glad to see, not only an index of the difficult words and phrases explained in the notes, but also one of Scripture passages. We most cordially hope that the author of the notes will receive a merited reward, not only in the ready sale of his book, but also in the thanks of those best able to appreciate his labor. We cannot omit to call attention to the beauty of the Greek type, and the accuracy with which the volume is printed. It does honor to the press which issued it.

R.

2.—*History of the Church of Scotland, from the introduction of Christianity to the period of the Disruption in 1843. By the Rev. W. M. HETHERINGTON, A. M. Torphichen, Author of the "Minister's Family," "History of the Westminster Assembly of Divines," etc. etc. etc. Nec tamen consumebatur. First American from the third Edinburgh edition.* New York: Robert Carter. Pittsburg: Thomas Carter. 1844. pp. 500. 8vo.

Mr. Hetherington is already known to us, by his preceding works, as an interesting and accurate author; and we are sure this will add to his reputation. The volume presents us a succinct and truthful history of the origin, advancement, declension, and disruption, of one of the noblest churches on earth. She has always borne a magnanimous testimony to the truth, and the blood of her martyrs has stained her soil and become the seed of the church. Her last struggle has been by no means her least. Bloodless, it is true, but not the less demanding courage and zeal; and most nobly have the friends of independence borne the heat and dust of the strife, and for the sake of principles, sacrificed all but life. God will bless them. The Head of the church will guard them.

The history before us is full of thrilling incidents, will make

us love Scottish religion better, and inspire us with renewed energy in advocating and maintaining the cause of anti-priestocracy. It is timely just now, and we bespeak for it the attention it merits. Presbyterians, at least, every where should read it and store up its facts.

3.—*Emanuel on the Cross and in the Garden.* By the Rev. R. P. BUDDICOM, M. A., F. A. S., Late Fellow of Queen's College, Cambridge. New York: John S. Taylor. 1844. pp. 224. 12mo.

This is a volume of ten chapters, in the form of sermons, and the design of the author is thus expressed: "It is my desire to fix the minds of my readers upon the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, as the blessed centre of all their hopes, and as the point from which the believer may most fitly contemplate the coming glories of that day when He who was once offered to bear the sins of many shall appear to them who look for Him the second time, without sin unto salvation."

The author has selected the several sayings of Christ whilst on the cross as the themes of his several sermons, and has certainly done much toward the fulfilment of his desire. The Christian's mind will certainly be fixed, more or less, on the cross of his Lord and Master, as he reads the varied and spiritual meditations of the author. We are much pleased with the truly evangelical sentiments of the book, and think we can safely recommend it to those who love to contemplate their Redeemer; and those who do not, might be much profited by thus gazing on the cross.

The volume is tastefully got up by Mr. Taylor.

4.—*An Introduction to the Critical Study and Knowledge of the Holy Scriptures.* By THOMAS HARTWELL HORNE, B. D., of Saint John's College, Cambridge; Rector of the United Parishes of Saint Edmund the King and Martyr, and Saint Nicholas Acons, Lombard Street, Prebendary of Saint Paul's. New edition from the eighth London edition, corrected and enlarged. Illustrated with numerous maps and fac-similes of Biblical Manuscripts. New York: Robert Carter. Pittsburgh: Thomas Carter. 2 vols. royal 8vo. 1844. pp. 1159.

This work is too well known to need commendation at this late day. Since its first appearance many a student has pored over its pages with profit and delight, and it will continue to

be the companion of those who love the study of the Bible. Here we find concentrated most of what is valuable in the various departments of biblical learning, tending to illustrate the Scripture in all its various aspects. There are other works on separate subjects, containing more thorough and extended investigations, but perhaps no one extending over so wide a field, and yet containing so much various and important matter.

The present edition is in two large volumes, and printed from the eighth London, which contained Mr. Horne's last improvements. It is to be regretted that it must be published in just the style it is, in order to meet the wants of many brethren in the ministry. The type is small, but it could not have been furnished in a better style without enhancing the price so much, as to render it inaccessible to many who will now enjoy its valuable contributions to the literature of the Bible.

5.—*The Life of James Arminius, D. D.* By NATHAN BANGS, D. D. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1844. pp. 208, 18mo.

This work will, doubtless, be an acceptable present to the members of one of our largest denominations, and, as containing the life of an eminent man in the religious world, must be read with interest by many others. Mr. James Nichol wrote a memoir of Arminius, from which has been derived the principal part of the materials for this "Life." It contains, among other valuable things, Arminius's public Address to the States of Holland, in which his views are fully unfolded, especially on the Five Points of difference between Arminians and Calvinists. These points we consider important, and if they were practically effective, as they are theoretically held by Arminians, we should consider them hurtful in the extreme. But as it is, we rejoice in the diffusion of truth—sound, practical gospel truth, through the ministry of our Methodist brethren. And whilst all who favor spiritualism must at the present day unite in opposition to formalism, we should have been glad to see less of opposition to Calvinism in this book. And yet, regarding it as a monster as too many do, we are not to be surprised that they should arm themselves cap-a-pie, and prepare to do battle on it. But there is a growing sympathy between us, and, as light is diffused, love will be awakened.

- 6.—*The Heart delineated in its State by Nature, and as renewed by Grace.* By HUGH SMITH, D. D., Rector of Saint Peter's Church, New York. New York : Harper & Brothers. 1844. pp. 330, 18mo.

The author of this work has acquired much notoriety recently by his controversy with Bishop Onderdonk in respect to the ordination of Mr. Carey. Of that controversy we are not now to speak, but of the volume before us. This is the second edition, demanded by the entire sale of the first. For ourselves, we like it much. It is written in good style and good spirit, and abounds in appropriate introduction of scriptural language, which always imparts a zest to our relish for a book. The doctrine as to the heart we believe to be correct. He would, indeed, abandon the use of the term "total" in connexion with depravity, but rather on metaphysical grounds, than that he differs from us as to the nature and extent of human corruption.

The book consists of two parts ; the former treating of—The Knowledge of the Heart—The Deceitful Heart—The Deceived Heart—General Depravity of the Human Heart—Degree of Depravity—Evil Heart of Unbelief—Divided Heart—Hardened Heart—Heart of Adamant—Conclusion. Part Second embraces—An Introduction—Honest and Good Heart—Primary Influences—Spiritual Concern—Broken and Contrite Heart—Broken Heart bound up—New Heart—New Man—New Man Maturing for Heaven.

- 7.—*Combination : a Tale founded on Facts.* By CHARLOTTE ELIZABETH. New York : M. W. Dodd. 1844. pp. 209. 18mo.

This is another Tale from the prolific pen of the celebrated authoress, founded on facts. The tale is well constructed, the opinions and sentiments inculcated are of wholesome tendency, and well worth the consideration of those who, too often, rush into foolish combinations against their employers, which not only tend to want, but exert a most unhappy influence on the moral feelings, and often induce habits which terminate in ruin.

- 8.—*A Church without a Bishop. The Apostolical and Primitive Church, popular in its Government, and simple in its Worship.* By LYMAN COLEMAN, author of "*Antiquities of the Christian Church :*" with an Introductory Essay, by Dr. Augustus Neander. Boston : Gould, Kendall, and Lincoln. 1844. pp. 432 ; 12mo.

We are indebted to Mark H. Newman for a copy of this work ; and a beautiful book it is, reflecting great credit on

the enterprising publishers. We took it up with high expectation, having a favorable opinion of the author's qualifications for such a work, and being aware of the superior opportunities he enjoyed in Europe for reaching the sources of knowledge on the subject of which he treats. We have not been disappointed. Mr. Coleman has made thorough work, and merits the lasting thanks of those who love the truth.

Just at the present time, such a work must be greatly sought after. Nothing could be more seasonable. When those among us, who claim for themselves peculiar apostolic offices, are lifting high the banner of prelacy, and calling on the people to enrol themselves under it, a work which enters upon so careful a research into the constitution of the primitive churches, will be effectual in disabusing the public mind of exclusive prelatical notions.

Every thing here is confirmed by authorities the very best, and those who doubt can examine for themselves. Chapters VI, VII, VIII, IX, X, on the "Equality and Identity of Bishops and Presbyters—Rise of Episcopacy—Diocesan Government—Metropolitan Government—Patriarchal and Papal Government"—are full of interest: and the historical argument contained in them decisive as to the non-existence of diocesan bishops in the primitive church. But we defer extended remarks, in hope of a review, more at length, in a future number.

We notice several errors, which it would be well to correct in a second edition, which will, no doubt, be demanded.

9.—*The Mothers of England; their Influence and Responsibility.* By MRS. ELLIS. New York: D. Appleton & Co. Phil.: G. S. Appleton. 1844. pp. 226. 12mo.

It is enough to announce a work from Mrs. Ellis, on such a subject, to secure it a sale. The respected authoress is deservedly one of the most popular among us. Her aims are high: her talents are not wasted in foolish fiction, but devoted to objects of the first importance. We have not yet seen a work from her pen which has not interested us, and from which we have not derived profit. To Mothers, Wives, and Daughters, we consider her last works invaluable. The principles inculcated are wholesome, and her works, if read frequently, must aid in the formation of good female character and habits.

In the volume before us, the mothers of this land, as well as of England, will find the most valuable hints, on all topics

of interest to them. Read: "The natural weakness of the mother's heart is ever tempting her to risk the future good of her child, for the sake of its immediate gratification. It is that little sigh, that appealing look, perhaps through the mist of tears, or, more than all, that sweet spirit of resignation with which the child throws up its game not yet played out, and turns to hang upon the neck of its nurse, which melts the mother's firmness, and makes her determine that, for once at least, its unresisting compliance shall be rewarded by a deviation from the rule. Thus the poor child learns how to appeal another time. Thus, in short, the silken cord is broken, and the pearls lie scattered."

- 10.—*The Church in the Wilderness, and other Fragments, from the Study of a Pastor.* By GARDINER SPRING. New York: John S. Taylor. 1844. pp. 160, 12mo.

These Fragments have been before the public for some time, but are now reissued to meet the call for them. They are certainly written in an interesting style, and are adapted to do good. Fragments of time employed as Dr. Spring has employed those devoted to the preparation of these golden leaves, are well employed: and the leisure moments of ministers might thus become greatly profitable, not only to themselves, but to the church and the world. "The Church in the Wilderness," is a beautiful representation of the trials to which God's people are subject in this vale of tears, and of the strength of that arm on which they lean for support. "The Inquiring Meeting," exhibits graphically some of the phases of feeling through which the sinner passes on his way to Zion. "Letter to a Young Clergyman" is brief, but pointed, on the subject of the ministrations of the pulpit; and Dr. Spring, we think, did well to direct the attention of the young minister to the importance of careful preparation for the sanctuary.

- 11.—*The Young Student; or Ralph and Victor.* By MADAME GUIZOT. From the French, by Samuel Jackson. Three volumes in one. New York: D. Appleton & Co. Philadelphia: George S. Appleton. 1844. pp. 530, 12mo.

We wish all books of this description were as wholesome in their tendency as the "Young Student." The book is designed to illustrate the proper management of children at home, and the principles which should regulate their government when absent from the domestic circle. "While under

Madame Guizot's instructions, the reader imbibes the loftiest principles of Christian moral philosophy; a renewed insight into his own experimental changes; a keener perception of the danger and remorse arising from humane waywardness and vitiosity; and a more astute and enlarged acquaintance with the means by which error and transgression may be rectified; and with the infallibly efficacious method through which young men may be directed to "cleanse their way," and also be enabled to "abstain from the appearance of evil." Perhaps it is occasionally too exciting.

12.—*The Wrongs of Woman.* By CHARLOTTE ELIZABETH. New-York: John S. Taylor. 1844. pp. 302, 12mo.

Mr. Taylor has here bound up several of the little works of Charlotte Elizabeth, in one volume, and in a style to correspond with her other works, published by the same house.

13.—*The Minister's Family; or Hints to those who would make Home Happy.* By MRS. ELLIS. New York: D. Appleton & Co. Philadelphia: Geo. S. Appleton. 1844. pp. 174, 18mo.

This is another of the interesting volumes of Mrs. Ellis. It abounds in graphic description of scenery and delineations of life. The characters we think natural and truthful, and the threads of the story well woven together. And if it be a recommendation of a tale to end well, the "Minister's Family," certainly, is not wanting in that respect. Many have, doubtless, read the book ere this: and to those who have not, we only add, that it contains the story of a minister's family, which had been in the habit of using intoxicating drinks, and had suffered grievously in consequence of it, but finally adopted the total abstinence principle, and thus secured the return of happiness and of joys which had been marred.

14.—*The Adventures of Daniel Boone, the Kentucky Rifleman.* By the author of "Uncle Philip's Conversations." New-York: D. Appleton & Co. Philadelphia: Geo. S. Appleton. 1844. pp. 174, 18mo.

This volume is dedicated, by Uncle Philip, to "His Young Countrymen," and we can promise them many thrilling incidents in its perusal. They may have heard of Daniel Boone.

Here they have his biography. The book tells them how he spent his early life, how he loved hunting in the woods, how early he crossed the mountains and made a settlement in what is now Kentucky, how he dealt with the Indians, what hairbreadth escapes he made, what strange sights he saw, and how, after people began to settle Kentucky, he removed to Missouri, and there died in 1818. He was a singular man, and his biography, as here related, abounds in striking events.

15.—*Invitation to True Happiness, and Motives for becoming a Christian.* By JOEL PARKER, D. D., Pastor of the Clinton-Street Presbyterian Church, Philadelphia. New York: Harper and Brothers. 1844. pp. 157, 18mo.

Dr. Parker is a forceful writer. All that he has published has been acceptable and useful. The present volume bears the impress of his mind. It is lucid and attractive, and eminently successful in impressing the invitation to true happiness. No one can read the book without a conviction that the author is right; and every one who reads, must feel, that "sin is incompatible with present happiness," and that the only basis of real enjoyment is in penitence for sin, faith in Christ, and a consequent religious life. The chapters embrace the following subjects—Desire of Happiness addressed—Man constituted for Happiness—Happiness Attainable—A Leading Motive for Becoming a Christian—Sin Incompatible with Present Happiness—The Unhappy Consequences of Sin—Happiness of a Religious Life—Consequences of a Religious Life—The Wisdom of Promptness.

We wish that every impenitent man would give it a perusal.

16.—*Woman's Worth; or Hints to Raise the Female Character.* First American from the last English edition, with a Recomendatory Notice by Emily Marshall. New York: D. Appleton & Co. Philadelphia: Geo. S. Appleton. 1844. pp. 180, 18mo.

"Woman's Worth,"—what a theme! How has the worth of woman been enhanced by Christianity, and how is it destined yet more to shine, under the expanding and elevating influence of a Christian education! This volume, we think, may do much toward directing the thoughts of woman into a right channel; and as topics of great interest are here treated in a winning and useful manner, we trust it will fall into the hands of thousands of those for whom it is intended.

Such topics as the following occur: "Influence of Woman"—"Society"—"Books"—"Home"—"Dress"—"Trials and Temptations," etc. etc. The mind has indeed thrown off the trammels with which the iron middle ages had bound it, and is now upon the stretch and eager to possess knowledge in some form. It rests with parents and teachers whether they will supply that which is good for food, or that enticing fruit which looks so fair and beautiful, but which, like that fabled to grow upon the Dead Sea's shore, turns to ashes in the mouth." Of Books, the author says: "What a host of romances, and tales, and poems, which work no other effect on the mind than to fill it with fancies and follies!" "If a book is offered to any, which in their conscience they cannot approve, let it be set aside as unworthy of perusal; never let the cleverness of a work be an apology for infidelity. That, which to mention, would call a blush to the cheek, is not fit to be read in secret. Books like these may properly be called the works of an enchantress, who seeks to destroy, by giving a beauty to infidelity and a melody to crime; and all may, if they will, go down to the cave of the wizard, and drink of that draught which fires the imagination and causes those who drink to pant for fresh draughts, though thus to fire the imagination is to shrivel up virtue, and to drink of those draughts is to poison the veins."

17.—*Grace abounding to the chief of Sinners, in a faithful account of the Life and Death of John Bunyan, with additions. From the London Edition.* New York: M. W. Dodd. 1844. pp. 176. 18mo.

"Grace abounding," or the autobiography of Bunyan, will, we think, be acceptable to the Christian public: and more especially now, as Mr. Cheever's Lectures on Bunyan have awakened a new interest in this wonderful monument of grace. It will be a suitable companion for those lectures, and we anticipate for Mr. Dodd a rapid and extensive sale. Many have read the Pilgrim's Progress who have never seen this work: but the one illustrates the other and ought to accompany it.

It will do the soul of any one good to read Bunyan's simple story of his early wickedness, his strong temptations, his deliverances, his mercies, his assumption of the office of preaching, his persecutions, his twelve years' imprisonment, his tried yet trusting feelings, his humility and his joy.

- 18.—*Narrative of the Texan Santa Fé Expedition, comprising a Description of a Tour through Texas and across the great South-western Prairies, the Comanche and Cayuga Hunting Grounds, with an account of the Sufferings from want of Food, Losses from hostile Indians, and final Capture of the Texans, and their March, as Prisoners, to the City of Mexico. With Illustrations and a Map.* By GEO. WILKINS KENDALL. In two volumes. New York: Harper and Brothers. 1844. pp. 811, 12mo.

These volumes are well got up by the Harpers, and are certainly filled with matter of much interest. The title is sufficient, of itself, to give us a pretty good general idea of what is to be expected from a perusal of the book. We all remember the newspaper accounts of the sufferings of some of those poor fellows, whose story is here told. Many were disposed to think that they had foolishly and wickedly exposed themselves to the miseries they endured, by undertaking such an expedition, with the intent to interfere with the rights of Mexico. And however much they sympathized with them in their terrible trials, they could not but feel that they had been rash in their enterprises. Yet, granting that they were thus rash and blameworthy, the cruelties of the Mexicans were outrageous and merit the abhorrence of all civilized society.

Whatever may be said or thought of others, it seems clear that the author of these volumes was innocent of any participation in warlike designs, and accompanied the expedition with far other intentions. He has escaped to tell us a bloody, yet, in some respects, an interesting tale. We should have preferred more recognition of God's providence; but we know this is an uncommon thing at the present day.

- 19.—*Cyclopedia of Biblical Literature.* By JOHN KIRRO, Editor of the "Pictorial Bible." Parts V. VI. New York: Mark H. Newman.

We have already noticed the character of this work, the reputation of its contributors, and the plan. We have only, therefore, to announce the fact of the issue of the fifth and sixth numbers, extending from "Beresh" to "Creation," and comprising exceedingly valuable information. We notice, under "Chronicles," "Corinthians," "Colossians," "Creation," that the articles in this work are, by no means, superficial, but thorough. The first is written by Rev. Samuel Davidson, LL. D.

- 20.—*Memoirs of the Life and Ministry of the Rev. John Summerfield, A. M.* By JOHN HOLLAND. With an Introductory Letter by James Montgomery. Together with Letters and Reminiscences not before published. Sixth edition. New York: D. Mead. 1844. pp. 460. 8mo.

This is a beautiful edition of the Memoirs of Summerfield, and contains 100 pages more of reminiscences, than any preceding edition. Few men have been so universally admired and loved as Summerfield, and we presume the publisher will be compensated for his painstaking in issuing the volume in so attractive a style. We have so recently and so favorably noticed a previous edition, that we shall be excused from further commendation.

- 21.—*History of the Westminster Assembly of Divines.* By the REV. W. A. HETHERINGTON, author of the "History of the Church of Scotland," etc. New York: Mark H. Newman.

The volume is divided into five chapters, with an Appendix. I. Introductory. II. Meeting of the Westminster Assembly. III. The Independent Controversy. IV. The Erastian Controversy. V. Conclusion of the Westminster Assembly. Under these heads is embraced the entire history of this great assembly—certainly one of the greatest ever convened on earth. Mr. Hetherington, in an interesting style, introduces us to this venerable assembly, by a brief recapitulation of the principal events which led to its appointment; then graphically portrays the meeting itself, and recounts, at length, the controversies which occupied its attention, and its final dissolution. Every Presbyterian and every other man, who cares for ecclesiastical history, will desire to read this book, and ought to read it. And who will deny himself the pleasure and profit, when he can now procure it for twenty-five cents?

We believe it to be a faithful history, derived from the best sources—those most to be relied on. We quote a single passage: "Numerous and startling are the coincidences between the period of the Westminster Assembly and the present time. So strong are these that they force upon a reflecting mind the thought that all human events move in revolving circles, one age but reproducing a renewed aspect of the past. In England we see again the dread aspect of Laudean Prelacy, called indeed by a new name, Puseyism, but displaying all the fearful lineaments of its formidable predecessor, the same in its lofty pretensions, in its Popish tendencies, in its supercilious contempt of every other church, and in its persecuting spirit."

- 22.—*The Necessity of the Reformation.* By JOHN CALVIN. To which is appended the Articles of Agreement on the Sacramentarian Question, between the Churches of Zurich and Geneva. Translated, with a Preface, by M. M. Backus. New-York: Published by S. W. Bendict & Co. 1844.

We are indebted to M. H. Newman for a copy of this excellent treatise. It was originally addressed to the Emperor Charles V. and those convened in the Diet of Spires, urging upon that Diet a restoration of the church, and in a most masterly and forceful manner illustrating the whole controversy. It is characterized by Calvin's strength of intellect, and at the present time is well worthy of a place among the multifarious writings which are called forth by the state of the church. Calvin begins with an Introduction, then portrays the Disease—the Remedies—the Application of the Remedies.—The Agreement on the Sacramentarian Question, between Calvin and the Zurichers, forms an appropriate accompaniment of this address.

- 23.—*A Dissertation on the Rule of Faith; delivered at Cincinnati, Ohio, at the Annual Meeting of the American Bible Society, and published at their request.* By GARDINER SPRING, Pastor of the Brick Presbyterian Church, in the City of New York. New York: Leavitt, Trow & Co. 1844. pp. 104.

The design of this Dissertation is, “to compare the fallibility of the Church of Rome with the infallibility of the Sacred Scriptures, as a Rule of Faith;” and it is sufficient to say of it that it is executed in Dr. Spring’s usual masterly manner. The infallibility of Rome must hide itself in shame before the clear shining of the truth as here exhibited.

- 24.—*The Tractarian and Evangelical Systems: considered as developments of the Letter that killeth and the Spirit that giveth Life. A Sermon preached in the Church of Monaghan, before the Lord Bishop of Clogher and the Clergy of his Diocese.* By GEORGE SYDNEY SMITH, D. D., Rector of Aghalurcher—Professor of Biblical Greek, and formerly Fellow of Trinity College, Dublin. Dublin: William Curry, Jun. & Co. London: Seeley, Burnside and Seeley. 1843.

Dr. Smith, who honorably and successfully, as we happen to know, fills the new professorship of Biblical Greek, in the University of Dublin, thus speaks, in the Preface to this

Sermon : "Every day brings unceasing proofs of the urgent importance of the controversy of the times, and of the need of becoming acquainted with it in principles and details. It was with such feelings that I hesitated not to comply with the call made on me by the Bishop of Clogher and Clergy of his Diocese to publish the following discourse."

"The weapon which can be employed with the greatest effect against the Oxford movement, is the great doctrine of *justification by faith alone.*"

This sermon has been not a little vituperated, as well as approved. It is a bold annunciation of that great doctrine, which Luther pronounced the pillar of a standing or falling church, and a lucid exposure of the Romish nature of the system of Oxford. It is highly evangelical, well adapted to do good, and worthy of the call made for its publication by the Bishop and clergy.

25.—*The Study of the History of Christianity, and its adaptation to the present age. A discourse pronounced at Geneva.* By J. H. MERLE D'AUBIGNE, D. D. Translated from the French. New York : Saxton & Miles. 1844.

The author's name will be recommendation sufficient of this Lecture ; but we may add that it is written in his usual style, and was intended to place the study of the history of Christianity on its proper basis—to elevate it to an equal rank with other similar studies.

26.—*The Lives of Pope Alexander VI. and his Son Cæsar Borghia.* By ALEXANDER GORDON, A. M., Author of *Itinerarium Septentrionale.* Philadelphia : James M. Campbell & Co. New York : Saxton & Miles. 1844. pp. 232, 8vo.

Here are Lives of men whose name is a reproach on earth, whose memory is an awful stench from the bottomless pit. They existed and their memoirs have been written, but they are dark pages in the history of human corruption. Would that they could be blotted out ! But they cannot. There they stand : and the only possible good they can accomplish is, that they become evidences of the true delineations of the deep depravity of man contained in the Scripture, and also of the mischievousness of that system of religion which could tolerate them and recognize them as occupants of the highest ecclesiastical offices. They may serve as beacon lights to others, warning them of dangers ahead, if they pursue the same course ; and although the heart is not improved by con-

templating specimens of vicious conduct, there is something so excessively loathsome in these children of the devil—they bear so strongly the image of their father, that most would, perhaps, flee away in disgust, and resolve, at least, to be better than they.

#### ADDITIONAL NOTICES.

*The Apostolical System of the Church defended; in a Reply to Dr. Whately on the Kingdom of Christ.* By SAMUEL BUEL, A. M., Rector of Emmanuel Parish, Cumberland, Md. Philadelphia: H. Hooker. 1844.

We think there is too much here taken for granted, and that it will require more true learning and knowledge derived from the sources, to overthrow Dr. Whately's argument.

*The Hierarchical Despotism. Lectures on the mixture of Civil and Ecclesiastical Power in the Governments of the Middle Ages. In illustration of the Nature and Progress of Despotism in the Romish Church.* By Rev. GEORGE B. CHEEVER. New York: Saxton & Miles. Boston: Saxton, Pierce & Co. 1844.

The argument of these Lectures was called forth by Lectures of Bishop Hughes on the same subject. We need only say that the thing is done up in Mr. Cheever's usual style.

*A Manual of Christian Baptism; Infant Baptism and the Mode; in two discourses.* By the Rev. THOMAS LAPE, A. M. Second edition, corrected and enlarged. New York: Robert Carter.

This manual is by a Lutheran minister of the Gospel, is well adapted to popular reading, and sound in the faith.

*The Path of God.* By the Rev. E. E. ADAMS, M. A., Pastor of the American Church in Havre-de-Grace, France; late Chaplain to Seamen at St. Petersburg. London: Hamilton, Adams & Co. 1844.

This truly eloquent discourse was suggested by disasters at sea. After an Introduction, it considers the path of God as—the path of Light—the path of Order—the path of Power—the path of Life.

## ARTICLE XII.

## LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.

## Germany.

Of new publications we notice: *Handbuch der theol. Literatur, von Dr. G. B. Winer.* Erstes Ergänzungsheft zur dritten Auflage, die Literatur bis zu Ende des Jahres 1841 fortführend.—*Theologische Encyclopädie als System im Zusammenhange mit der Geschichte der theologischen Wissenschaft und ihrer einzelnen Zweige entwickelt von Dr. Ant. Friedr. Ludwig Pelt.*—*Neutestamentliches Handwörterbuch zur Darstellung der christlichen Glaubens- und Sittenlehre für Prediger der evangelischen Kirche.* Von D. Ludw. Aug. Gottl. Krehl.

## Denmark.

—A simple monument to Professor Rask, the celebrated linguist of Copenhagen, who died in 1832, is about to be commenced. Various proverbs will be inscribed on the tablet, in Arabic, Sanscrit, Icelandic, and Danish.

## Belgium.

M. Gachard, when examining the state papers in the royal library at the Hague, discovered a series of letters written by Rubens the painter, whilst on his diplomatic mission to England.—The King has commissioned Simonis, a sculptor of Brussels, to erect an equestrian statue of Godfrey de Bouillon in that city.

## France.

Portions of the bas-reliefs from the ruins of the Parthenon have reached Paris, which, with others to be collected from this temple, by an agent of government sent for the purpose, are to be placed in a gallery to be erected expressly for such fragments.

## Italy.

A curious tomb has recently been discovered on the site of the ancient Veii, of Etruria, the walls of which are beautifully decorated with paintings. It must be anterior to 360 B. C.—The death of Rossellini, the celebrated author of the work on the monuments of Nubia and Egypt, will be felt as a loss to literature and science.

**Greece.**

In consequence of the recent revolution in Greece, all the foreign professors, in the Otho University, were dismissed. Professor Ulrichs soon after died.—Dr. Ross, the distinguished professor of Archæology, has been appointed to the same professorship in the University of Jena, and is to pursue his researches in Greece and Turkey for two years, at the expense of the Prussian government. Many valuable fragments have been discovered in the convents of Mount Athos. Among others, part of the 20th book of Polybius; a work on Greek Syntax, by Gregory of Corinth; an unpublished Grammar by Theodosius of Alexandria; copies of laws; lexicons and grammars; comments on the Greek poets; and other works.

**Egypt.**

Dr. Lepsius has discovered, at Meroë, a copy of the Rosetta Stone, the hieroglyphic portion of which is comparatively perfect.

**Great Britain.**

We see, among new publications, a commentary on the Apocalypse, Critical and Historical; including an examination of the chief prophecies of Daniel, illustrated by an Apocalyptic chart, engravings from medals and other monuments of antiquity, by Rev. E. B. Elliott.—Bunyan's Pilgrim's Progress converted into an Epic Poem.—Fasciculus Inscriptorum Græcarum quas apud sedes Apocalypticas Chartis mandatas, et nunc dueno instauratas, Praesationibusque et Notis instructas, edidit J. K. Bailie.

**United States.**

Professors Beck & Felton have translated "Munk on the Metre of the Greeks and Romans," which will soon be published. A new edition of Homer's Iliad, also, with additional notes by Prof. Felton. The new Arabic Grammar of Dr. Caspari, of Leipsic, is being translated at Andover. Two new editions of Homer's Iliad will soon be published, one edited the Rev. J. J. Owen, the other by Prof. Crosby of Dartmouth College. M. W. Dodd will soon issue a new edition of Legh Richmond.

## INDEX TO VOL. XI

## A.

- Adams, Samuel, M. D.* Historical Sketch of Medical Philosophy 392.  
*Additional Notices*, 237, 472.  
*Adventures of Daniel Boone, the Kentucky Rifleman*, noticed 466.  
*Arminius, the Life of James, D. D.*, by Nathan Bangs, D. D., noticed 462.  
*Apostolical and Primitive Church, popular in its government and simple in its worship*, by Lyman Coleman, noticed 463.

## B

- Bangs, Nathan, D. D.*, Life of James Arminius, D. D., noticed 462.  
*Baptism, Infant*, by Rev. C. A. Holtenbeck 222.  
*Barnes, Rev. Albert, D. D.* Patriarchal Religion as developed in the book of Job 163.  
*Barnes, Albert, Notes on the Epistle to the Hebrews*, noticed 236.  
*Biblical Argument on Slavery*, by Rev. William C. Wisner 302.  
*Boone, Daniel, Adventures of*, noticed 466.  
*Buddicom, Rev. R. P.*, Emanuel on the Cross and in the Garden, noticed 461.  
*Bunyan, John, Life and Death of, or Grace Abounding*, noticed 466.  
*Burnet's History of the English Reformation*, noticed 231.

## C.

- Calvin, John. The Necessity of the Reformation*, noticed 471.  
*Charlotte Elizabeth. Letters from Ireland*, by, noticed 236.

- Charlotte Elizabeth. Floral Biography*, by, noticed 237.  
*Charlotte Elizabeth. Combination: a Tale*, noticed 463.  
*Charlotte Elizabeth. The Wrongs of Women*, noticed 466.  
*Cheever, Rev. George B.* Religion Experience and that of Imitation, 92.  
*Christian Sacraments*, by Rev. Enoch Pond, D. D. 369.  
*Christianity, Study of the History of*, by J. M. Merle D'Aubigné, noticed 472.  
*Church in the Wilderness and other Fragments from the Study of a Pastor*, by Gardiner Spring, D. D. noticed 465.  
*Church, The Apostolical and Primitive*, by Lyman Coleman, noticed 463.  
*Church, Rev. Pharellus. The training of the will* 339.  
*Coleman, Lyman, The Apostolical and Primitive Church, etc.*, noticed 463.  
*Combination, a Tale founded on facts*, by Charlotte Elizabeth, noticed 463.  
*Congregationalism. View of*, noticed 235.  
*Critical Notices*, 234, 459.  
*Cyclopedia of Biblical Literature*, by John Kitto, noticed 470.

## D.

- D'Aubigné's, Voice of the Church one*, noticed 230.  
*Divine Agency and Government together with Human Agency and Freedom*, by Rev. Leonard Woods, D. D., 123. Some go

beyond their strength in philosophical investigation 123. Others unite patient philosophical thinking with devout feeling 124. The government of God 125. Relates to all his works, especially to the moral world 126. God's government consistent with the full exercise of man's powers. Divine control indispensable to a perfect government 127. No limit to the exercise of God's power except what is made known in his word and providence 129. Divine agency and human agency 130. The two agencies co-exist 131. Nothing in the nature or exercise of reason which excludes entire dependence on God 133. Volitions follow the affections, and are governed by them 134. Man is free in all respects in which freedom is desirable 136.

*Diodati Dominici, I. C. Neapolitanus, De Christo Graece Loquente, Exercitatio*, translated by O. T. Dobbin, LL. B. Introductory note 180. Diodati, to the reader 181. Inquiry as to the language which Christ spoke 182. Source of the idea on which the work is founded 183. Synopsis of the treatise 185. Christ was a Hellenist. Basis of the argument, proposition first, the language of conquered nations frequently gives place to that of their conquerors 188. Proposition second, the Egyptians spoke Greek in the time of Ptolemy Lagus 192. Testimony of the coins of the country 193. Inscriptions on buildings and other similar records 190. The Coptic idiom only degenerate Greek 195. It became a distinct dialect after the irruptions of the Arabs into Egypt 198. Proposition third. The Syrians, from Seleucus Nicator, spoke Greek 198. Greek language used by the Syrians in books 200. Otho Sperling's opinion 203. Chap. II. The Jews received the Greek language from the Greeks, Egyptians, and Syrians—Elements of

Hellenism introduced into Judea under Alexander the Great 205. Alexander settles Macedonians in Samaria 206. 70,000 Jews bring the Greek language into Judea 207. Jews returning from Syria introduce Greek 208. Jason attempts to seduce the Jews to adopt Grecian manners 210. Hellenism under Menelaus 212. Antiochus Epiphanes endeavors to establish Hellenism in Judea 213. Jerusalem full of Grecian settlers 214. Samaritans adopt the Grecian customs 215. Antiochus obliges a conformity with Hellenism 216. Removes all preventives 217. Alcimus propagates Hellenism 218. The Jews adopted the Greek philosophy 220.

*Diodati*. Excursus on the Hellenists of Acts VI. 449. Who were the Hellenists? 450. Heinsius, Lightfoot, Peter de Marca, Capellus, wrong 453. Vossius mistaken 454. Salmasius nearest the truth, but mistaken 455. Was there ever a Hellenistic language? 456. Different opinions 457. The Jewish kings who followed favored Hellenizers and Hellenism 446. Summary of the Chapter 448.

## E.

*Egypt and the books of Moses, Hengstenberg's*, noticed 229.

*Egypt, Ancient*, language of, by Rev. R. D. C. Robbins, 137. Four different kinds of writing, hieroglyphic, hieratic, demotic, and coptic 138. Ideographic and phonetic hieroglyphics. Tropical hieroglyphics more frequent than imitative 139. Meaning of ideographic characters—always connected with Phonetic 140. Hieroglyphics a species of picture writing 142. Hieroglyphics to be read in different directions, delineated with different degrees of accuracy 143. Hieratic writing an abridgment of hieroglyphic 144. Demotic, enchorial or epistolographic 145. Writings of the

Egyptians, Chinese, and Mexicans alike in origin 146. Peculiarities of the ancient Egyptian language 148. The substantive verb frequently omitted in ancient Egyptian 151. Account of these discoveries 153. Father Kircher's notions 254. George Zoega 155. The Rosetta inscriptions 156. Cartouche on the temples at Carnac. Bible confirmed and illustrated by these discoveries 162.

*Ellis, Mrs.* Mothers of England, noticed 464.

*Ellis, Mrs.* Hints to those who would make Home Happy, noticed 466.

*Emanuel on the Cross and in the Garden*, by Rev. R. P. Buddicom, noticed 461.

*English Reformers and their Principles*, by John Lord, 65. The moral phenomena in England and Germany differed 66. The English Reformation a preparation for succeeding Reformers 67. Claims of the Popes discussed in the Universities 68. Four things to be accomplished by the Reformation—separation from Rome, removal of abuses, renovation of doctrines and discipline, and religious liberty 69. The Reformation received its first impulse from Henry the Eighth 70. Existence of monasteries an eye-sore to the reformed party 71. Cromwell had the chief hand in their suppression 72. Secession from Rome and suppression of monasteries, the only reform under the reign of Henry the Eighth. Under Edward the Sixth the removal of Romish abuses and settlement of the creed 73. Infamous reign of Mary Queen of Scots 74. The persecuting reign of Mary overruled for the advancement of religion 75. Accession of Elizabeth and restoration of the worship instituted by Cranmer 76. Struggles of the Puritans for religious toleration 77. They advanced

and defended the idea beyond preceding reformers 78. Parker used his power to enforce uniformity 79. Persecutions under Elizabeth's government 80. Controversy about doctrines. *Jure divino* principle established 81. Accession of James and his character 82. Puritans driven to Holland and America 83. The independence 85. Toleration only complete under them 86. Cromwell's charter of liberty 87. Charles the Second. James the Second 89. Toleration act of William and Mary 90.

*Evans, Christmas, Memoirs of*, noticed 233.

#### F.

*Faith, Dissertation on the Rule of*, by Gardiner Spring, D. D., noticed 471.

*Floral Biography*, By Charlotte Elizabeth, noticed 237.

*Ferry, Samuel, M. D.* On the position of man in the scale of Organic Creation 274.

#### G.

*Geological Cosmogony*, noticed 233. *Governmental History of U. S. America*, noticed 234.

*Grace Abounding to the Chief of Sinners, or Life and Death of John Bunyan*, noticed 468. *Gresley's Treatise on Preaching*, Review of 408.

*Guizot, Madame, The Young Student, or Ralph and Victor*, noticed 465.

#### H.

*Hackett, Prof. H. B.* *Plutarchus de sera Numinis vindicta*, noticed 459.

*Haight's Guide and McIlvaine's Solemn Responsibility of Ministers*, reviewed by Rev. J. W. McLane. Samples of two kinds of preaching in the Episcopal Church 1. Is the Bible without note or comment a sufficient

guide? 2. Something more needed 3. What is this to be? Quotation from Irenæus 4. Does not prove the point for which it is adduced 5. Primitive antiquity the guide 7. Trial of this guide 8. Fathers of the Nicene Council 9. Teaching of Bishop McIlvaine on this point 10. Primitive antiquity presented in its fulness and purity in the Book of Common Prayer. Baptismal Regeneration 12. Writings of the fathers important, but not of coördinate authority with inspired writers 13. This shameful union of tradition with divine truth abhorrent 14. Second part of the Guide respects the unity of the church 15. Book of Common Prayer compiled chiefly from the Roman 16. The Puritans rested on the simple basis of the New Testament 17. Three great parties during the Reformation in England 18. Intestate feuds not charged, transferred to distant shores by missionaries 22. How is this lost unity of the church which Mr. Haight deplores to be restored? The Separatists say the Rector must be brought back to our church 23. The Rector's unity not the Bible unity 25. The difficulty is in the externals of religion 26. *Happiness, Invitation to true, and motives for becoming a Christian*, by Joel Parker, D. D., noticed 467. *Heart, The, Delineated in its State of Nature, and as renewed by Grace*, by Hugh Smith, D. D., noticed 463. *Hengstenberg's Egypt and the books of Moses*, noticed 229. *Hetherington Rev. W. M.* History of the Church of Scotland, noticed 460. *Hetherington, Rev. W. A.* History of the Westminster Assembly of Divines, noticed 469. *History Governmental of the U. S. America*, noticed 234.

*Historical Sketch of Medical Philosophy*, by Samuel Adams, M. D. 392.

*Hollenbeck, Rev. C. A.* Infant Baptism 222.

*Homes, Rev. H. H.* Review of Bore's Travels in Turkey and Persia 28.

*Horne, Thomas Hartwell, B. D.*, Introduction to the Critical Study of the Scriptures, noticed 461.

#### I.

*Introduction to the Critical Study of the Holy Scriptures*, by Thomas Hartwell Horne, B. D., noticed 461.

#### J.

*Journal of the American Oriental Society*, noticed 224.

#### K.

*Kendall, George Wilkins.* Narrative of the Santa Fé Expedition, noticed 469.

*Kitto, John.* Cyclopedias of Biblical Literature, noticed 469.

#### L.

*Language of Ancient Egypt*, by Rev. R. D. C. Robbins, 137.

*Letters from Ireland*, by Charlotte Elizabeth, noticed 236.

*Life and Labors of the Rev. Christmas Evans*, noticed 238.

*Life of James Arminius*, D. D., by Nathan Bangs, D. D., noticed 462.

*Lord, John.* The English Reformers and their Principles 65.

*Luther, Martin, Writings of*, by C. E. Stowe, D. D. 241. Select list of the Reformer's writings 241. Luther's impress on the German nation 243. Number and variety of his writings 244. His style—his oratory 246. His writings suited to the exigencies of the times 247. His translation of the Bible 248. Luther's Latin works 251. Complete works of the dear man of God, etc. 252. Luther's complete works by Walch 253.

Luther's German writings by Lomler 254. Luther's works with reference to the wants of the times, by H. L. A. Vent—Luther's works arranged by G. Pfizer 255. Luther's principal writings by Otto von Gerlach—Letters and papers of Luther collected by W. M. L. De Wette 256 Seckendorff's history and defence of Lutheranism—Markeinecke's history of the German Reformation 257. D'Aubigné's History of the Reformation 258. Audin's Life of Luther 259. Mémoirs of Luther written by himself, and edited by Michelet 260. Cursory review of some of Luther's more important writings 261. Luther, a model-man 262. State of the Roman Catholic Church in Luther's times 263. Luther's Reformation Writings 267. Claims of the Pope 268. Luther's ninety-five theses 269. Disputation with Eck 270. His tract on the papacy at Rome—His address to the Emperor and Christian nobility of Germany 271. His sermon on the map—Tract on the Babylonian captivity of the church—Sermon on the freedom of a Christian man 272.

## M.

*Man, position of, in the scale of Organic Creation*, by Samuel Forry, M. D. Distinction between animals and plants 274. Distinctive characters of the Animal Kingdom 276. Vertebrates 277. Vertebrata subdivided into four classes—Characteristics of man 278. Adaptation to the erect position 279. Anatomically illustrated 280. Man's lower extremities 283. The hand 285. Absence of natural weapons of defence—Close approximation of the teeth in each jaw 287. Man a Cosmopolite 288. Period of his life the greatest of all mammalia—

His use of conventional language 289. His mental endowments 290. Sacerdotal orders in all ages 291. Civilization influenced by the physical features of the country 293. Paleontology 294. Great antiquity of the earth 295. Geological scale of time 296. Species not immortal 297. Proofs of a First Cause 298. The present condition of our globe not permanent 299. Reflections 300.

*Manual of Classical Literature*—Fiske's *Eschenberg's*, noticed 228. McLane, Rev. J. W. Review of Haight's Guide, and McIlvaine's Solemn Responsibility of Ministers 1.

*Medical Philosophy, Historical Sketch of*, by Samuel Adams, M. D. 392. Medicine in the hands of the priesthood 393. Pythagoras—Hippocrates 394. Dogmatic and Empirical sects—Methodical—Pneumatical—and Calectic sects 395. Medicine in the dark ages 396. Science of medicine revived by the Arabians—The Chemical sect 397. Anatomy cultivated—Van Helmont 398. Humoralists and Solidists—Brown's system 399. Homeopathy—Influence of superstition on medical science 400. Quackery, two forms of 401. Spirit of dogmatism and of empiricism not yet extinct 402. Remedy for the errors of these extremes 403. Errors from applying hasty theoretical deductions 404. A cautious skepticism necessary in verifying practical principles 405. The science of medicine demands the best powers of the human mind 407.

*Memoirs of the Life and Ministry of the Rev. John Summerfield*, noticed 469.

*Minister's Family, or Hints to those who would make Home happy*, by Mrs. Ellis, noticed 466. *Mothers of England, their Influence and Responsibility*, by Mrs. Ellis, noticed 464.

**Music, Sacred**, by Thomas Hastings, Esq. 425. Jealousy of good men against the claims of the art—The musical art originally confined to purposes of religious worship 426. The song of praise in the days of Hezekiah 427. In the days of primitive Christianity 428. The churches became less scrupulous—Office of praise degraded for centuries—Sacred dramas 429. The Reformers of the 16th century did much to improve church music—Christianity has nothing to gain by neglecting the arts 430. Sacred music originally intended as the handmaid of spiritual influences 431. Two classes of sacred music, the one belonging to the church, the other to the oratorio—Transatlantic composers have not recognized the claims of a personated devotion 433. Would not depreciate the talents of the great masters of song 435. Come back to primitive habits 436. Source from which abuses have arisen—Dramatic use of religious subjects 437. Sacred subjects to be treated in a sacred manner 438. Performers should cultivate the spirit of praise—Secular music has its place and claims 439.

**N.**

*Notes on the Epistle to the Hebrews*, by Albert Barnes, noticed 236.  
*Notes on the Septuagint Version of Psalms I. II.*, by Prof. J. W. Gibbs, 441.

**O.**

*Organic Creation, position of Man in the scale of*, by Samuel Forry, M. D. 274.  
*Oriental Society, Journal of*, noticed 224.

**P.**

*Parker, Joel, D. D.* Invitation to True Happiness, and Motives for becoming a Christian, noticed 467.  
*Patriarchal Religion as developed in the Book of Job*, by Rev. Albert SECOND SERIES, VOL. XI. NO. II.

Barnes, D. D., 163. One supreme God taught in this book 163. The universe created by this one God 164. The moral Governor of all his creatures—Existence of angels asserted 165. The existence of evil spirits believed 167. Man regarded as a fallen being, wholly depraved 168. Necessity of reconciliation with God—the true penitent received into God's favor—man will not live again on earth—what his condition after death 169. A belief that man would live after death 171. The grave not the end of man 172. Belief in future punishment—God to be worshipped by sacrifice and burnt offering 174. Interesting view of the nature and effects of true piety—The religion of that time in its influence on morals and manners 176. Respect for each other—respect for age 177. Hospitality 178. Kindness to the poor, widow, and fatherless 179.

*Plutarchus de sera Numinis vindicta*, by Prof. H. B. Hackett, noticed 459.

*Pond, Rev. Enoch, D. D.* The Christian Sacraments 369.

*Pope of Rome, Trial of the*, noticed 232.

*Preaching, Review of Gresley's treatise on*, 408. In the form of letters 409. Topics or subjects for the pulpit 410. Skilful use of connectives in sermon writing—Method of composing 411. Management of the voice—Oratorical action and expression 412. Remarks on some of our Author's principles and suggestions 414. Cautions to young clergymen 415. On leaving out, and what is to be left out 416. Too much absolute-ness in assertions to be avoided 417. Style 418. Let the minister think when he attempts to think, and write when he undertakes to write—Variety in style 419. Clearness and soberness—Close and pungent style 420. What should be the predominant

- strain of the preacher's messages 421. Not enough to touch the sensibilities merely 423. The sermon has fallen from the respect paid to it by our fathers—The pulpit the preacher's throne 424.  
*Profit and Honor*, by Mrs. Copley, noticed 235.  
*Protestant Memorial*, by T. Horne, noticed 234.  
*Psalms I. II. Notes on the Septuagint Version of*, by Prof. J. W. Gibbs, notice (1) Deviations from the Hebrew text, with their reasons; (2) Peculiarities of Greek usage and construction; (3) Refer to analogous usages and constructions in the New Testament —Psalm I., 441. Psalm II., 444.  
*Punchard, George*. View of Congregationalism by, noticed 235.
- losophy of the age 110. Sixth cause, neglect of the doctrine of justification by faith 113. Luther strongly affected by it 115. Royal road to heaven 116. Missionary spirit the foundation of individual power 118. Self-culture and self-discipline important 120. Youth a germinating period 121.  
*Review of Haight's Guide and McIlvaine's Solemn Responsibility of Ministers*, by Rev. J. W. McLane, 1.  
*Review of Bord's Travels in Turkey and Persia*, by Rev. H. A. Homes 28.  
*Review of Gresley's Treatise on Preaching* 408.  
*Robbins, Rev. R. D. C.* Language of Ancient Egypt 137.

## S

- R.**
- Reformation, Burnet's History of the English*, noticed 231.  
*Reformation, The Necessity of the*, by John Calvin, noticed 472.  
*Religion of Experience and that of Imitation*, by Rev. George B. Cheever 92. Religion of imitation, churchianity; religion of experience, christianity 93. Religious characteristic of this age rather than of imitation than of experience 94. Causes of this—want of the habit of living in and upon God's word 97. A new baptism from heaven needed 98. Power of God's word to be realized 99. Second cause, prevalence of low and indistinct views of divine Inspiration 100. Consequence, false philosophy intermingling with the scriptures 101. Third cause, desertion of the Bible as the only rule of faith and practice 102. Fourth cause, deference to human authority 103. Advance in theology only by experience 106. Right of private judgment to be maintained 108. Fifth cause, prevalence of a philosophical system unfavorable to faith 108. Theology always influenced by the speculative phi-
- Sacraments, The Christian*, by Rev. Enoch Pond, D. D. 369. Signification of the term sacrament 370. How used by Tertullian 371. Distinguishing marks of a sacrament 372. The number of the sacraments 373. The five additional sacraments of the Romish church, confirmation, ordination, auricular confession 374. Extreme unction, marriage 375. Baptism and the Lord's Supper alone entitled to be called Christian sacraments. Nature, import and meaning of the Sacraments 376. Regeneration not effected in baptism, proofs 378. Is the sacrament of the Lord's Supper a proper sacrifice? 380. Objections to the theory of the literal change of the bread and wine 381. Objections against con-substantiation 382. Nearly all protestants agree that the sacraments are signs or symbols 384. Christ's presence is of a spiritual nature 386. Efficacy of the sacraments 387. The sacraments for Christians only 388. Benefits of the sacraments 389. The great benefit the presence of Christ 391.  
*Santa Fé Expedition, Narrative of*,

- by George Wilkins Kendall, noticed 469.
- Scotland, History of the Church of*, by Rev. W. M. Hetherington, noticed 460.
- Sherman, Henry. Governmental History of the U. S. America*, by, noticed 234.
- Slavery, Biblical Argument on*, by Rev. William C. Wisner—T. D. Wells, "Bible against Slavery" 302. Plan of the present Article—What is Slavery? 303. Slavery existed among the Hebrews in Old Testament times 304. Maidservants held as property 305. Their mistresses claimed their children as their own—Testimony of Josephus 306. Servants bought with money 307. Meaning of the word *to buy* 308. Mr. Wells's definition of bought servants 313. Objections to it 316. Case of Joseph 319. Distinction in the Bible between bought and hired servants; the former slaves 321. Hebrews commanded to free their servants every fiftieth year—Language of Paul in Galatians 4. 1 324. Existence of slavery under the old dispensation no apology for slave-holding at the present day 326. The Old Testament does not uphold nor sustain a system of slavery—proofs 327. S. Q. Case of the Canaanites—Saul and the Amalekites 329. Examination of Genesis 9. 24, 25—A prophetic curse 331. This curse confined to Canaan 332. No right to enslave a fellow man without a special warrant from the Almighty 334. God did all he could consistently in that dark age to meliorate the condition of the slave 336. Condition of slaves in the East mild 337.
- Smith, Hugh, D. D.*, Heart delineated, etc., noticed 463.
- Smith, George Sydney, D. D.*, Tractarian and Evangelical Systems, noticed 471.
- Spring, Gardiner, D. D.*, The Church in the Wilderness, and other Fragments from the Study of a Pastor, noticed 465.
- Spring, Gardiner, D. D.*, Dissertation on the Rule of Faith, noticed 471.
- Stowe, Prof. C. E., D. D.* Writings of Martin Luther 241.
- Student, The Young, or Ralph and Victor*, by Madame Guizot. From the French by Samuel Jackson, noticed 465.
- Summerfield, Rev. John*, Memoirs of the Life and Ministry of, by John Holland, noticed 469
- T.
- Tractarian and Evangelical Systems*, by George Sydney Smith, D D, noticed 471.
- Training of the Will*, by Rev. Pharcellus Church 339.
- Travels in Turkey and Persia*, Boré's, reviewed by Rev. H. A. Homes. M. Boré's education and purpose 28. His studies at Constantinople 29. His journey—Designs of the Romanists on the Armenians 30. Plan for converting them to the Romish faith 31. State of the Nestorian church 33. False charges against American missionaries 34. Who are trying to gain the Nestorians by means of money 37. Grounds of complaint by M. Boré against the Oriental churches 38. Celibacy of the clergy 40. M. Boré's views on the national origin of the Nestorians 41. Facts confirming those views 42. The Nestorians still retain the name of Chaldean 43. Still living in the proper country of the Chaldeans 44. Their language also claims to be Chaldean 45. Their physiognomy Chaldean 47. M. Boré's melancholy lucubrations 50. Strong prejudices against gospel truth 54. Romish schemes for seizing on the Oriental churches 56. The Lazarists 58. Love of French glory 63.
- Trial of the Pope of Rome*, noticed 232.

## U.

*Uncle Barnaby*, noticed 235.

## V.

*View of Congregationalism*, noticed 235.

*Voice of the Church one, D'Avigné's*, noticed 230.

## W.

*Westminster Assembly, History of the*, by Rev. W. A. Hetherington, noticed 469.

*Will, Training of*, by Rev. Pharcellus Church 339. What has brought Metaphysical Science into disrepute 340. Relation of the will to the other faculties 341. Related to them as the cause of their activity—Psychological reduced to sensations and volitions 342. The heart a foundation for the sensations of feeling 343. Apart from volitions in the mind, nothing remains but simple sensations 344. The will is related as cause to whatever is blame or praiseworthy in the other faculties 346. Related to our other faculties as the basis of their union in an individual conscious agency 348. Related as the governing power 349. The will has no power to alter the character of our simple sensations 350. The exercises of intellect contain in themselves no right of control over the will 351. The object of the will's training 252. Our wills educated to velocity but not to fixedness 353. Gen-

eral mistake as to what constitutes a good education 354. Submission an important element in the will's training 355. The manner of the will's training—It requires power by exercise 358. By keeping in view our duties and the motives to their performance 359. A sense of dependence on God 360. The spirit's indwelling the sole basis of continued right action in the will—Much to be gained by passing from names to things 361. Strictly speaking but two departments of mental phenomena—sensations and volitions 362. Objective sensations and sensations of spontaneity 363. Many theological errors founded in a false anthropology 364. Does not the doctrine of necessity, as applied to the will, merge it in the sensations? 365. The doctrine of necessity a virtual reduction of the moral, to a level with the physical government 367. The true philosophy of mental and moral discipline 368. Contrast between a well-disciplined and a neglected will 369.

*Wisner, Rev. William C.* Biblical Argument on Slavery 302.

*Woman's Worth; or Hints to raise the female character*, with a notice, by Emily Marshall, noticed 467.

*Women, The Wrongs of*, by Charlotte Elizabeth, noticed 466.

*Woods, Rev. Leonard, D. D.* Divine Agency and Government together with Human Agency and Government, 23.

THE  
AMERICAN  
BIBLICAL REPOSITORY,

DEVOTED TO

Biblical and General Literature, Theological Discussion, the History  
of Theological Opinions, &c.

EDITED BY  
JOHN HOLMES AGNEW.

SECOND SERIES.  
VOLUME XI. NO. XXII.—WHOLE NO. LIV.

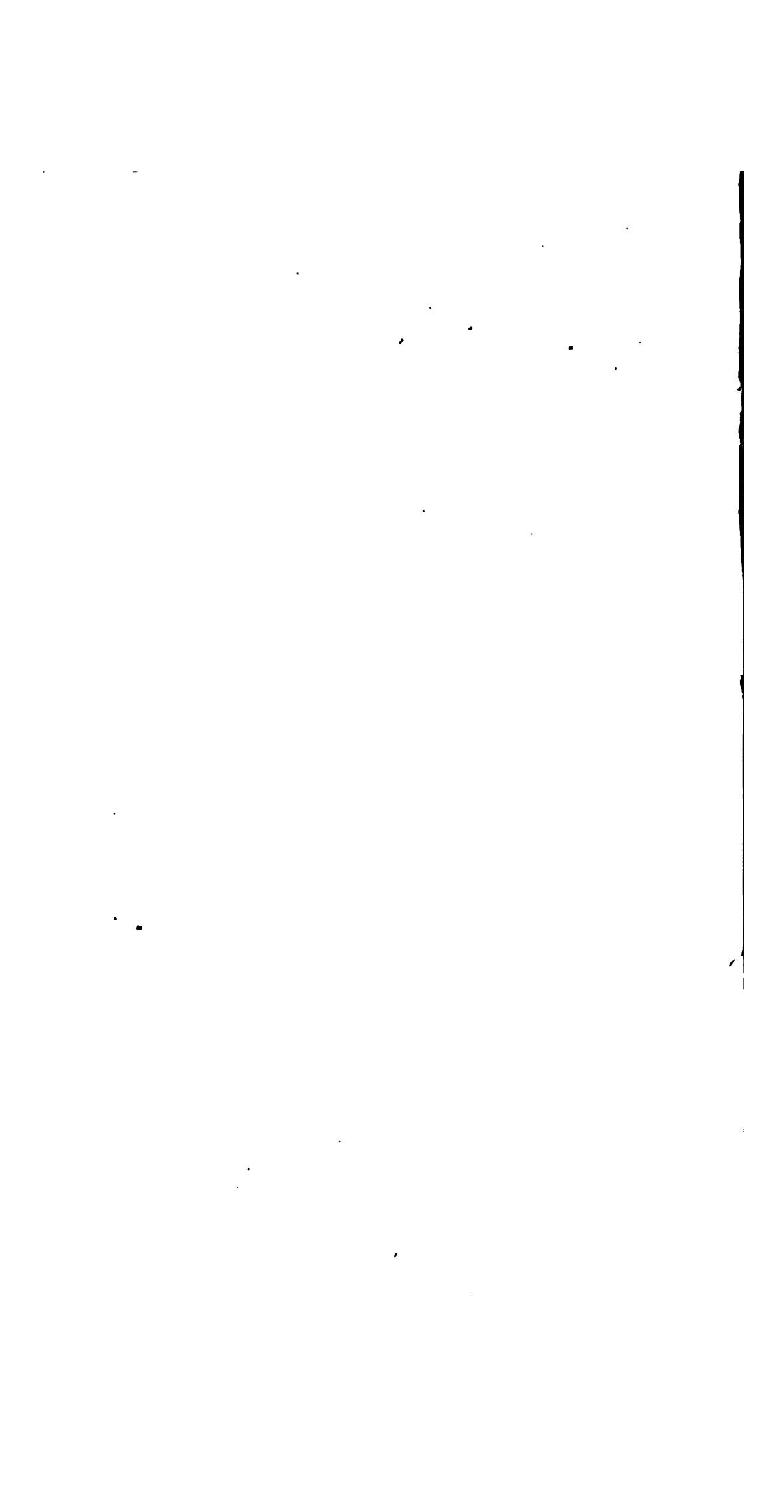
APRIL, 1844.

NEW-YORK:  
PUBLISHED BY LEAVITT, TROW, & CO.  
No. 194 BROADWAY.

BOSTON:  
GATSON, PIERCE & CO. 131 WASHINGTON STREET.  
LONDON:  
WILEY AND PUTNAM. IN PATERNOSTER ROW.

1844.

2 dollars.—Postage, under 100 miles, 12 cents; over 100 miles, 20 cents.





## BOOK FOR EVERY MINISTER.

WILLEN'S HISTORY OF THE LANGUAGE OF THE NEW TESTAMENT, WITH A CRITICAL EXPOSITION. Translated by J. H. Agnew and O. G. Ebbell. Former price \$2.50—now offered for \$2.50. Highly recommended by Professors Stuart, McClelland, Hodge, Sears, etc., etc.

"WILLEN is distinguished by his constant comparison of the common with the rabbinic idiom, and the large body of references and citations in his grammar makes it indispensable to the scholar."—O. T. DOBBIE, LL.B., Trinity College, Dublin.  
"There is nothing like it."—PROF. STUART.  
"Nothing of the kind in the English language."—PROF. MCLELLAND.  
"A work of the highest authority, and greatest practical usefulness."—PROF. HODGE.  
"A work which every man needs who studies the N.T. critically."—"The best kind of commentary."—"The translation is lucid, concise, accurate."—PROF. STOWE.  
To be had at 194 Broadway, New-York.

## AMERICAN BIBLICAL REPOSITORY.

Published in Nos. of 250 pages or more, on the first days of January, April, July, and October. Price, FIVE DOLLARS for the Octavo, and THREE DOLLARS for the Duodecimo edition.

## THE ECLECTIC MAGAZINE

OF

## FOREIGN LITERATURE, SCIENCE, AND ART.

This work is published monthly, each number containing 144 pages of an unusually large octavo size, equal to an ordinary five volumes of 400 pages. It will furnish more matter than is embraced in the Edinburgh Quarterly, Foreign Quarterly, and Westminster Reviews, combined.

It is well known that the English Reviews are the channels of communication with the public, for the best writers of the day, as well statesmen as philosophers, poets, critics, and others; and as these are known to be the medium through which they can most speedily, extensively, and effectually impress their views on the public mind, it is here we find the choicer articles on all topics of interest. We are happy therefore to make them accessible, on as reasonable terms as we do in our Eclectic Magazine.

We feel sure assurance that families will find this one of the very best publications of the day. It will embrace all the articles from the four British Quartos, which are really valuable, together with a sufficient quantity of the more imaginative and entertaining, to adapt it to the various tastes around the same fireside. The lighter reading will be such as to correspond with a good standard of taste and morale, and whilst it may win the attention of the young, may also afford a seasonable relaxation to the severer wisdom of the old.

Published by LEATHES, TROW, & CO., 194 Broadway, New-York, and 128 Chestnut-street, Philadelphia.

Price, SIX DOLLARS a year, payable in advance, or FORTY EIGHTS a single number.  
Four volumes of the American Eclectic have been published, of more than 600 pages each. These four volumes can be bought now at \$5 in numbers—and \$2.50 handsomely bound.

JOHN P. TROW & CO., PRINTERS.

THE  
AMERICAN  
BIBLICAL REPOSITORY,

DEVOTED TO

BIBLICAL AND GENERAL LITERATURE, THEOLOGICAL DISCUSSION, THE  
HISTORY OF THEOLOGICAL OPINIONS, ETC.

CONDUCTED BY

JOHN HOLMES AGNEW.

*Second Series.*

VOL. XII. NOS. XXIII., XXIV.—WHOLE NOS. LV., LVI.

NEW-YORK:  
PUBLISHED BY LEAVITT, TROW, & CO.  
No. 194 BROADWAY.

BOSTON:  
SAXTON & PIERCE, 133½ WASHINGTON-STREET.  
LONDON:  
WILEY & PUTNAM, 35 PATERNOSTER ROW.

1844.

ENTERED according to Act of Congress, in the year 1844, by  
J. H. A G N E W,  
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court for the Southern  
District of New-York,

JOHN F. TROW & CO., PRINTERS,  
33 ANN-STREET, NEW YORK.

## C O N T E N T S O F V O L . X I I

---

### No. XXIII.

<b>ART. I. WRITINGS OF MARTIN LUTHER.</b> By Professor C. E. Stowe, D. D., of Lane Seminary, Cincinnati. -	1		
<b>ART. II. THE WORKS OF SAMUEL PARK, LL. D., REVIEWED.</b> By Rev Calvin E. Park, Waterville, Me. -	39		
<b>ART. III. THE IDEAL OF A PERFECT PULPIT DISCOURSE.</b> By Professor Henry N. Day, Western Reserve College, Hudson, Ohio. -	85		
<b>ART. IV. NATURAL HISTORY OF MAN IN HIS SPIRITUAL RELATIONS.</b> By Professor Samuel Adams, Illinois College, Ill. -	111		
<b>ART. V. EXTREMES OF CREDULITY AND SKEPTICISM IN HISTORY.</b> By Professor E. D. Sanborn, Dartmouth College, N. H. -	131		
<b>ART. VI. EXPOSITION OF MATTHEW, VII. 6.</b> By Rev. E. Ballantine, Pineoe Edward, Va. -	158		
<b>ART. VII. COLERIDGE'S VIEW OF ATONEMENT.</b> By Rev. Lemuel Grosvenor. -	177		
<b>ART. VII. ESSAYS ON THE MORAL SUSCEPTIBILITIES, MORAL ACTION, AND MORAL CHARACTER.</b> -	189		
<b>ART. IX. THE AMERICAN COLPORTEUR SYSTEM.</b> By Professor J. M. Sturtevant, Illinois College. -	214		
<b>ART. X. CRITICAL NOTICES.</b>			
		1. Prof. Woolsey's <i>Gorgias of Plato</i> , -	243
		2. Blunt's <i>Posthumous Sermons</i> , -	246
		3. Dick's <i>Lectures on the Acts</i> , -	247
		4. Winslow's <i>Christian Doctrines</i> , -	248
		5. Boardman's <i>Apostolical Succession</i> , -	248
		6. Barstow's <i>Biblical Dictionary</i> , -	249
		7. Spring's <i>Obligations of the World to the Bible</i> , -	250
		8. Sears's <i>Ciceronian</i> , -	250
		9. Smith's <i>Book that will suit you</i> , -	250
		10. Goodrich's <i>Pictorial History of the United States</i> , -	251
		11. Grimshawe's <i>Memoir of Leigh Richmond</i> , -	251
		12. Mrs. Ellis's <i>Mothers of England</i> , -	252
		13. Bradley's <i>Sermons</i> , -	252
		14. Wisner's <i>Prelacy and Parity</i> , -	252
		15. Doddridge's <i>Family Expositor</i> , -	253
		16. Rupp's <i>History of Religious Denominations</i> , -	253
		17. Hyponoia, -	254
		18. Crosby's <i>Xenophon's Anabasis</i> , -	255
		19. Crosby's <i>Greek Grammar</i> , -	256
		<b>ART. XI. LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.</b> -	<b>256</b>

## No. XXIV.

<b>ART. I. THE PRINCIPLES OF PRESBYTERIANISM, AND REASONS FOR UPHOLDING THEM.</b> By C. E. Stowe, D. D., Prof. Bib. Literature, Lane Seminary, Cincinnati - 257	<b>1. Charlotte Elizabeth's Works,</b> - 476
<b>ART. II. EVIDENCE FROM NATURE FOR THE IMMORTALITY OF THE SOUL.</b> By Rev. T. M. Post, Prof. in Illinois College. - 294	<b>2. Foster's Essays from the Eclectic Review,</b> - 477
<b>ART. III. REVIEW OF CARLYLE'S PAST AND PRESENT.</b> By Prof. J. T. Smith of Newton Theo. Institution, Mass. 319	<b>3. Gurley's Life and Eloquence of Larned,</b> - 477
<b>ART. IV. THE NATURAL HISTORY OF MAN IN HIS SPIRITUAL RELATIONS.</b> (Continued from 130.) By Samuel Adams, M. D. Prof. of Chemistry and Natural History, Illinois College. - 353	<b>4. Knowles's Elocutionist,</b> - 478
<b>ART. V. THE WORKS OF JONATHAN EDWARDS REVIEWED.</b> By Enoch Pond, D. D. Prof. in Theo. Seminary, Bangor, Me. - 373	<b>5. Tappan's Elements of Logic,</b> - 478
<b>ART. VI. SOUTH'S SERMONS REVIEWED.</b> By Prof. Shephard, D. D. Bangor, Me. - 392	<b>6. Howe's Theological Education,</b> - 479
<b>ART. VII. DIVINE AGENCY AND GOVERNMENT, TOGETHER WITH HUMAN AGENCY AND FREEDOM.</b> By Rev. Leonard Woods, D. D. Andover, Mass. - 410	<b>7. Old Humphrey's Country Strolls,</b> - 479
<b>ART. VIII. SKETCHES IN GREEK PHILOSOPHY.</b> By Rev. William S. Tyler, Prof. in Amherst College, Mass. 425	<b>8. Burns's Christian Fragments,</b> - 480
<b>ART. IX. DOMINICI DIOBATI, DE CHRISTO GRÆCÆ LOQUENTE EXERCITATIO.</b> Translated by O. T. Dobbin, D. D. of Exeter, Eng. (Continued from p. 222, Vol. XI.) - 455	<b>9. Smith's History of Missions,</b> - 480
<b>ART. X. CRITICAL NOTICES.</b>	<b>10. Tyler's Memoir of Netleton,</b> - 480
	<b>11. Durbin's Observations in Europe,</b> - 481
	<b>12. Kuhner's Greek Grammar,</b> - 482
	<b>13. Anthon's Greek Grammar,</b> - 483
	<b>14. Keith's Land of Israel,</b> - 483
	<b>15. Schiller's Poems and Ballads,</b> - 484
	<b>16. Adams's Peter,</b> - 484
	<b>17. Greenhill's Ezekiel,</b> - 484
	<b>18. Burrough's Hosea,</b> - 484
	<b>19. Manton's James,</b> - 484
	<b>20. Jenkyn's Jude,</b> - 484
	<b>21. Daille's Philippians and Colossians,</b> - 484
	<b>22. Bush's Hierophant,</b> - 485
	<b>23. " Valley of Vision,</b> - 486
	<b>24. " Notes on Joshua and Judges,</b> - 487
	<b>25. Bush's Daniel,</b> - 487
	<b>26. Baird's Religion in America,</b> - 488
	<b>27. Additional Notices,</b> - 488
	<b>ART. XI. LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.</b> - 488

THE  
AMERICAN  
BIBLICAL REPOSITORY.  
JULY, 1844.

---

SECOND SERIES NO. XXIII. WHOLE NO. LV.

---

ARTICLE I.

WRITINGS OF MARTIN LUTHER.

By C. E. Stowe, D. D., Professor of Biblical Literature, Lane Seminary, Cincinnati.

We have already given a brief review of the writings of Luther during the first three years of the Reformation, from 1517 to 1520. We now propose to pass by entirely that period of most thrilling interest, the Diet at Worms, and the events and writings connected with it; because this part of the reformer's career is so fully delineated by d'Aubigné in his popular and useful work, that it would seem superfluous for us at this time to go over the same ground. We prefer to pass on to a period that has not yet been reached by the Genevan historian. The materials are so ample that there is no occasion for repeating what d'Aubigné has already written so well; and without further remark we proceed to the Augsburg Confession, and the events and writings connected with it. This was the earliest of the Protestant formulas of faith, and indeed the first doctrinal symbol (except the so-called Athanasian creed) that obtained any considerable circulation and influence subsequent to the celebrated Nicæno-Constantinopolitan creed, which was published in the year 381.

SECOND SERIES, VOL. XII. NO. I.

## HISTORY OF THE AUGSBURG CONFESION.

In May, 1525, Frederick the Wise, elector of Saxony, died, and was succeeded by his brother John. The death of Frederick was a great loss to the cause of the Reformation, and contributed much to embolden its enemies. The elector of Saxony and the young landgrave of Hesse were the only princes of much political consideration, who had till then espoused the interests of Luther; and their dominions were in the vicinity of violent and embittered enemies, particularly duke George of Saxony and the elector Joachim of Brandenburg. The latter had urged with great vehemence, during the diet at Worms, that the imperial word ought to be broken, and Luther put to death there; and he actually drew his sword on the elector palatine Lewis for opposing this perfidious counsel. Subsequently, Elizabeth, the wife of Joachim, embraced the doctrines of the Reformation, and so uncontrollable was his rage that he gave orders to have her built up in a wall with brick and mortar, and there left miserably to perish; but she found means to escape, and fled to Wittenberg, where she took refuge in the family of Luther. This violent and cruel papist entered into a league with George duke of Saxony, Henry duke of Brunswick, and Albert electoral archbishop of Mainz, to assault by surprise the elector of Saxony, and the landgrave of Hesse, and divide their dominions among themselves, unless they withdrew from Luther their protection.

The elector and landgrave, on discovering this conspiracy, consulted with Luther whether it would be right for them to take up arms against these princes. He answered most decidedly in the negative, exhorting them to do violence to no man, to stand firmly for the right, and repose unwavering trust in God. His two brief, but eloquent and most Christianlike papers on this occasion are given entire by Von Gerlach, Vol. IX. p. 160-4. This was Luther's uniform course; he never would permit the name of God to be defended by an appeal to arms; but he subsequently addressed letters to duke George and the cardinal Albert, which were sharper than swords, and more piercing than bayonets. These two specimens of masterly and well-merited invective are given by Lomler, Vol. II. p. 213-33, and 498-503. It would give me great pleasure to present all four of these pieces to the readers of the Repository in a

translation, but the limits of a periodical, necessarily embracing a variety of topics in every number, will not allow it.

The emperor Charles had been obliged at first to be lenient towards Luther, for he greatly needed the aid of the princes who desired reformation, especially the elector of Saxony in the cabinet, and the landgrave of Hesse in the field. His plans of ambition were very extensive; he was surrounded by jealous rivals and enemies; and the Turks were pressing fearfully on the eastern borders of his empire. In 1529 they actually besieged Vienna, made a furious assault upon the city, and were with very great difficulty repelled. The princes favorable to reformation, therefore, though few in number, it was important for him to conciliate. Accordingly, though to satisfy the papists he issued an edict against Luther, and put him to the ban of the empire, immediately after the diet at Worms he withdrew to Spain, and left the edict to execute itself.

The emperor's plans for a while were very successful. At the battle of Pavia he defeated his rival Francis I. of France, took him prisoner, carried him to Madrid, and dictated to him peace on his own terms. The pope, attempting to check the progress of Charles in Italy, the imperial troops, under the constable Bourbon, took the city of Rome by storm, ravaged and pillaged it in the most thoroughgoing manner, shut up the pope and cardinals as prisoners in the castle of St. Angelo, and treated the old men so savagely as to make their situation very uncomfortable. When Charles heard that the pope was a prisoner, he affected the most pious horror at such sacrilege, ordered the public rejoicings for the birth of his son Philip to be suspended, and directed prayers to be offered in all the churches for the immediate release of his holiness and the holy college; seeming to forget that the smallest bit of paper signed with his name would be more effective towards setting the pope at liberty than all the prayers of all the papal priests in Christendom. However, he let the pope be prayed for long enough to make full proof of the efficacy of papal prayers, and then dictated to him such terms of peace as he had to Francis. When Charles saw that every thing was arranged just to his mind, then there came a wonderful answer to the prayers of the faithful, and the pope regained his freedom.

In his arrangements with the pope, Charles on his part agreed to put down the heretics, and exterminate them, if need be, with fire and sword. This he was fully disposed to do, and

so far as human means were concerned, he had abundant power to accomplish it. He was of a very haughty spirit, and could not endure that any body in his dominions should presume to think for themselves without asking his leave. The despotic character and gloomy magnificence of the Romish religion suited well the tenor of his mind ; and, moreover, he had made a compromise with conscience, and intended by the strictness of his catholicity to make amends for the total want of moral principle which he manifested in all his political dealings. He was free from degrading vices ; he was not intemperate, lewd, or cruel ; he had a fine person and a commanding air ; he was always very becomingly dressed, and his manners were such as became a mighty prince ; and such was the whole impression made by his person, station, and character, that even the vehement Luther always spoke of him with the greatest respect, and manifested toward him a high degree of affection. This respect of Luther Charles fully reciprocated ; but as to the affection, he had little capacity of feeling any for any one except himself. With all his magnificence, his soul was cold, dark, and selfish. Never was there a more perfect contrast than was exhibited in the characters of Charles and Luther.

Under these circumstances, when the imperial legislature assembled at Spire in 1529, the papal princes, knowing the determination of the emperor, and having a decided preponderance in numbers, wealth, and military power, assumed a very confident tone, and carried matters with a high hand. Frederick the Wise had been four years dead, and his successor John had neither the tact nor the influence of his elder brother. The reformers were already divided on the sacramental controversy, and a most painful schism was created by the obstinacy of Luther in making his opinion on that point a condition of communion. Had it not been for the clear-sightedness, the decision, and the firmness of the landgrave of Hesse at this crisis, it seems as if the hopes of the reformers would have been entirely wrecked.

The diet at Spire by a large majority passed an edict, that the reformed religion should not be extended beyond the places in which it was already established, that, not only should the reformed princes have no power to extend the reformation even in their own territories, but they must allow the papal priests full power to celebrate their worship and make proselytes wherever they chose. When this edict was passed, the minor-

ity, (twenty out of about two hundred,) on the 19th of April, 1529, entered a solemn protest against it, and demanded that their protest should be placed on the records of the diet. The protest took the ground that in matters of conscience the majority should not bind the minority, that they had equal rights with the papal princes, and could not give them up ; and, moreover, it had been agreed upon in the diet at Worms, that all religious differences should be referred to an impartial general council, which had not yet been called together. On the 25th of April they issued an appeal from the decision of the diet to the emperor, and to a national or general council, and to all impartial Christians. The signers of this protest and appeal were referred to in the debates of the diet as the *protestants*, and hence the origin of the name. They were the following, namely, John elector of Saxony, George margrave of Brandenburg, Ernest and Francis dukes of Lüneburg, Philip landgrave of Hesse, Wolfgang prince of Anhalt, and the deputies from Strasburg, Ulm, Nuremberg, Constance, Reutlingen, Windsheim, Memmingen, Lindau, Kempten, Heilbronn, Isny, Weissenburg, Nordlingen, and St. Gall. A brief but clear account of this momentous transaction, and two striking letters of Luther in reference to it, are given in Von Gerlach, Vol. IX. p. 177-190.

The diet refused to put the protest and appeal on record, whereupon the Protestants sent a deputation of three of their number to present the papers to the emperor, who, having just completed his league with the pope, was then at Placentia in Italy. Charles met the deputies with a frown, and because they importuned him from day to day and insisted that he should receive their papers, he at length, on the 13th of October, put them all under arrest. But he did not then fully understand the men with whom he had to deal. The imprisoned deputies found means to issue a protest against their unlawful imprisonment by the emperor, and they appealed from him to a free Christian council. Charles, after holding them in durance seventeen days, and finding that he gained nothing by it, at last set them at liberty. It was now plain that the emperor meditated violence, and the Protestant princes, though feeble and divided, began again to think of defending themselves by arms. But this Luther now, as he had always done before, decidedly opposed, and such was his influence that no religious war broke out till after his death. The letter which he wrote to the elector on this occasion is given by Von Gerlach, Vol. XIV. p. 208-

12. It was one of the wonderful things in Luther's conduct, that with all his ardor and fearless courage, and vehement indignation against wrong, he always on principle resisted every appeal to arms in the cause of religion.

But whence did Luther look for help? This may be seen from a little book which he published a short time after this, a commentary on Psalm cxviii., (see particularly verses 5-15,) in the preface to which he says, "I have returned to my estate, and taken before me my dear psalm, the beautiful cxviii., and have now put my thoughts upon it on paper, because I am sitting here in solitude, and must sometimes relieve my head, and intermit the toil of translating the Hebrew prophets, which, nevertheless, I hope to have completed very soon. This, I say, is my psalm, for I love it; for although the whole psalter and all the Holy Bible is dear to me, and is, indeed, my only comfort and life, yet I am especially indebted to this psalm; so that it must be called mine and be mine, for it has often done me very great service, and has helped me out of many and great difficulties, so as no emperor, king, sage, saint, or prudent man could help me, and it is dearer to me than all the honor, wealth, and power of pope, Turk, emperor, and all the world, so that I would not exchange this one psalm for them all. If any one thinks it strange that I should boast of this psalm as my psalm, when it belongs to all the world, let such an one know that when I make this psalm mine, I do not take it away from any body else. Christ is mine, and yet the same Christ belongs to all the saints besides. I will not be stingy with my psalm, I will be very generous. Would God that all the world might lay claim to this psalm as well as I; that would be a glorious, lovely litigation, such that no harmony or peace were worthy to be compared with it." (See Lomler II. p. 441-43.) These were the feelings which sustained Luther. The word of God was to him in place of all other weapons whether of offence or defence, and this weapon, the sword of the Spirit, though not carnal, was mighty through God; and the world looked on in perfect amazement at the skill and power with which he wielded it.

January 21st, 1530, the emperor summoned a new diet to meet at Augsburg on the 8th of April following. Here it was expected and affirmed that definite measures would be taken for the final adjustment of all religious difficulties. The Protestants looked forward to the time with the greatest anxiety.—

During the diet at Spire, Luther, at the request of the elector, had sketched the heads of a remonstrance, which the princes were to draw up in form and present to the legislature and the emperor. Considering all the circumstances under which it was composed, it is one of the noblest documents ever written. It is inserted entire in Von Gerlach, Vol. IX. p. 183-86. It is too condensed to admit of abridgment, too closely woven together to allow of selections, and too long to be copied entire into this article. Let the reader peruse it just as Luther wrote it, and see how calmly, dispassionately, I may even say, sweetly, this great man would speak, and yet with the most unwavering decision, at a time when every thing he valued was in imminent peril, and he was exposed without human aid to the vengeance of the mightiest monarch of the age.

February 24th, 1530, Charles was crowned by the pope at Bologna, and though all the subsequent German emperors were Roman Catholics, this was the last time the ceremony of the coronation was performed by the pope.

The elector of Saxony was earnestly advised not to attend the diet at Augsburg, but he had no intention of showing the white feather on such an occasion. On the 14th of March, he sent to Luther to draw up a creed to be presented to the diet as the Protestant confession of faith. Luther immediately composed seventeen articles, which, having been received by the elector in the city of Torgau, are known by the name of the Torgau articles. These seventeen articles are the groundwork on which the famous Augsburg confession was afterwards constructed. They may be found in the Leipsic edition of Luther's works, Vol. XX. p. 1-3.

On the 3d of April, the elector set out for Augsburg, taking with him, besides a large company of nobles and lawyers, the theologians, Luther, Melancthon, Spalatin, and Justus Jonas. At every place where they stopped long enough to admit of it, Luther preached to immense congregations, which were always ready to concentrate on any point where it was supposed his voice might be heard. They at length arrived at Cobourg, a small city with an old fortified castle on the northern frontier of Saxony. Here the elector was determined that Luther should remain, and not hazard his person in Augsburg. As an outlaw, he had no legal protection, and at Augsburg there were thousands of papists who would think they were doing God service by assassinating him. Luther remonstrated, but the

elector was inexorable. He assigned him a small but strong room in the third story of the castle, promised that he would keep him constantly informed of all that was going on at Augsburg, and take no important step without his advice: and then ordering the garrison to keep a guard of at least twelve armed horsemen constantly, day and night, in the yard before Luther's apartment, he took his departure.

Luther again found himself a prisoner, as he had been in the Wartburg. He filled up his time with writing, and turned off new works with almost superhuman rapidity. But the confinement preyed upon his health and spirits; he suffered extremely from pains in his head and breast, and was so afflicted with nervous depression, that, thinking he must soon die, he selected a spot in the castle ground where he desired to be buried. As was usually the case when he was most depressed, his disposition to fun and drollery was most irrepressibly active. It was at this time that he threw off those unique specimens of wit and humor, the *letter to his messmates in Wittemberg, and to his dear little son Jacky*, then about four years old. They are both given by Lomler, Vol. II. p. 496 and 505, and Von Gerlach promises them in the last volume of his collection, which I have not yet seen.

The elector reached Augsburg on the 2d of May, and though the city was then full of nobles, ecclesiastics, and military men in attendance on the diet, the emperor had not yet arrived. The elector immediately employed Melancthon to draw up from the seventeen articles of Torgau a Protestant confession of faith, and that distinguished theologian then made the first draft of the afterwards so celebrated Augsburg confession. On the 11th of May, the elector sent a copy to Luther, for his revision, who returned it unaltered, saying it was as good as it could be, and he had no corrections to make. Luther had not a particle of jealousy or envy in his composition, and whatever any one did well, pleased him quite as much as if he had done it himself. But though Luther was satisfied, Melancthon was not; for, on looking it over a second time, he made a great number of changes, and sent it again to Luther, who again returned it unchanged, with the remark that it was good enough before, and better still now, and that he was not capable of improving it.

The Protestant princes all brought their preachers with them, and they had divine service in some of the city churches every

Sunday, on the reformed model. This was a great eyesore to the papists, and they were exerting all their influence with the emperor to get it prohibited; but the landgrave of Hesse avowed his determination to have Protestant preaching at the point of the sword, if he could get it in no other way. On these and other topics the elector kept up a constant correspondence with Luther, and nothing gives the image and body of the time like those letters, none of which, so far as I know, have ever yet appeared in English. They may be found in Von Gerlach, Vol. X. p. 60-66.

On the 1st of June, Luther published what he had written the April preceding, *an admonition to all the clergy assembled at the diet in Augsburg*, one of his most eloquent and effective productions. He here depicts the oppressiveness, the corruptions, and the abuses of the Romish church in colors so lively and yet so true, and demonstrates so forcibly the necessity of reformation, that the papists dared not attempt a reply to it. It was read with avidity by the imperial court at Inspruck, and the bishop of Augsburg even took it into an assembly of the Romish clergy, and read it there. "The Romish church (says Seckendorf, Lib. II. p. 188) is here so truly and so vividly painted, that it were to be wished that the *admonition* might be read by all the world,"—a wish, I am sure, which every friend of morals and religion, who reads it, will heartily reciprocate. There is a deep, solemn earnestness in its style, a crystal-like clearness in its statements, a full-hearted, glowing sincerity in its tone, that makes you love Luther with an overflowing love, and brings the warm tears to your eyes, at almost every page. It may all be read in Von Gerlach, Vol. X. p. 8-60.

On the 14th of June, while the emperor was waiting at Inspruck, his high chancellor Mercurius Gattinara died. This was a sad blow to the Protestants, for Gattinara was a wise and prudent man; he had great influence with Charles, and notwithstanding the feebleness of his health, he had determined to accompany the emperor to Augsburg for the express purpose of preventing any violent measures against the reformers. The cause of the Reformation, to human appearance, was now desperate. Charles, a powerful and politic prince, brought up under the strictest papal influences, and constitutionally inclined to superstition, flushed with his successes against his most powerful rival, the king of France, and his recent victory over the pope himself, was now inclined to put forth all his power to

compel religious uniformity ; while the Protestants were numerically weak and divided by controversy. Melancthon was timid, and inclined to make almost any concession for the sake of peace ; and every thing seemed to depend on the confidence and energy of Luther and the unflinching steadfastness of his two principal friends, the elector of Saxony and the landgrave of Hesse.

It had been cunningly arranged that the emperor should make his public entry into Augsburg on the 15th of June, Corpus Christi day, a festival on which such ceremonies would be performed, that it would be almost impossible for the Protestant princes to attend to their official duties about the imperial person, without seeming to countenance by their presence the most idolatrous portion of the Romish ritual. The elector of Saxony and the landgrave of Hesse made up their minds beforehand, that, whatever it might cost them, all the world should see that they no longer had any connexion with the Romish superstitions.

At about six o'clock in the afternoon, the emperor, in company with his brother Ferdinand, king of Hungary, was met with great ceremony by the princes and ecclesiastics belonging to the diet, on the bridge outside of the city, the elector of Saxony, as grand marshal of the empire, bearing the naked sword before him. Joachim, elector of Brandenburg, addressed the emperor in a Latin speech, "because (says Spalatin) none of the bishops understood Latin well enough to attempt the task." Within the walls his imperial majesty was received by the bishop of Augsburg and his assembled clergy. The procession then proceeded to the Cathedral, where the bishop pronounced the benediction on the emperor, who went directly afterwards to the great altar, knelt before it for some time in silent prayer, then arose from his knees and took his seat in the choir. The *Te Deum* was then sung and high mass celebrated. When they came to the passage in which the ritual requires all to kneel, Charles, to show his devotion and set a good example to others, rejected the embroidered cushion which had been provided for him, and placed his royal knees directly on the hard brick floor, which, besides being cold and damp, was probably none of the cleanest. But the elector of Saxony and the landgrave of Hesse would take no hints, not even from the emperor, and kept to their feet, notwithstanding that George, duke of Saxony, already on his knees in the extremities of devotion, enforced the imperial example by nodding and shaking his fist at his brother with

great energy. George, margrave of Brandenburg, a younger brother of Joachim, and a sincere and whole-hearted Protestant, under the influence of long habit and the circumstances of the occasion, at first knelt with the rest ; but happening to raise his eyes and observe the tall, majestic form of the elector of Saxony, as calmly erect as one of the pillars of the cathedral itself, and the fierce little landgrave of Hesse stiffly upright and looking defiance at all the world, he also sprang to his feet as if the floor burnt his knees ; and these three princes, of all the great lords of Germany, were the only ones who dared to stand during that ceremony.

When the ceremony was over the archbishop of Salzburg, as it was his duty to do, began to pronounce the benediction ; but the papal legate came bustling up, exclaiming, "It is not for you to pronounce the blessing. that belongs to me," and taking the words out of the archbishop's mouth, finished the benediction himself. During this scene, the landgrave of Hesse, to show that he had neither part nor lot in the matter, set himself down behind one of the wax candles. The emperor bore every thing with exemplary patience, and seemed to take no notice of these little incoherences.

It was ten o'clock at night before he retired to his lodgings in the palace of the bishop of Augsburg ; and notwithstanding the lateness of the hour, and the fatigues of the day, he summoned the princes of the empire to meet him there immediately. Here king Ferdinand, in the name of his brother, peremptorily ordered the Protestant princes to put an end to Protestant preaching in the city, and to join in the procession to be formed the next Lord's day, in honor of the sacrament of the body of Christ. They respectfully, but decidedly, refused to do either the one or the other. The margrave George of Brandenburg, the youngest of the princes, standing directly before the emperor, said to him, "Before I will thus deny my God, I will kneel'down here before your imperial majesty and let my head be taken off," at the same time stooping forward and drawing the edge of his hand across the back of his neck. Charles blushed and smiled, and said in reply, "No, my dear prince, no heads off, no heads off, I hope." The emperor gave them time till next morning for consideration ; but that very night, before he retired to rest, he issued a positive order that they should do as his brother had commanded.

The citizens of Augsburg were strongly Protestant, and but

very few of them still adhered to the Romish church. They sent a deputation to Charles with an honorary present, which he received very graciously; and with great appearance of devotion he begged an interest in their prayers, both for himself and his brother Ferdinand. "Pray (said he) to Almighty God for me a poor sinner, that He may grant me His Holy Spirit, to instruct me, and lead me in the right way, that these great matters may be settled in a satisfactory and Christian manner, and that God's wrath may not be excited against us."

The next day the elector of Saxony was sick and unable to wait on the emperor, but the other princes appeared before him, and in their name George, margrave of Brandenburg, reiterated their determination neither to discontinue the Protestant preaching nor attend the Corpus Christi procession. "So far are we (said the margrave to the emperor) from being willing to sanction by our presence and example usages so manifestly contrary to the word of God and the commands of Christ, that we hereby avow our determination to banish, so far as in us lies, all such ungodly human abuses entirely out of the church of Christ, that the pure and sound members of the church be not corrupted and destroyed by the deadly poison. Let not your imperial majesty be angry with us; for in a matter which pertains to God and our own consciences we shall stand firm, whatever dangers may threaten us; for it is written, we ought to obey God rather than man. In this matter, therefore, which I know to be eternal truth, and the voice of the Son of God, I am ready to die if need be; for I hear that death is threatened to all who persist in the profession of the truth." As to the preaching, they affirmed they would no more dispense with that than with their daily food, nor did they think it right that the word of God should be bound. In this they went further than Luther advised. Charles for the present made no reply, but hastened to prepare himself for the great procession which was to take place that very day.

The host was carried by the archbishop of Mainz, and followed by an immense multitude in most splendid array, consisting of the princes who had come to attend the diet and their military followers; but all the Protestants absented themselves, and of the citizens of Augsburg (says Spalatin) not a hundred were present. So great had been the influence of the Reformation in that city. Of all that numerous procession no one seemed so pious and devout as Charles. He followed directly after the host in his heavy imperial mantle, bareheaded, and with the

burning sun beating directly into his face, and holding a large wax candle in his hands, and so continued during the whole morning till the clock struck one.

The emperor, finding that the Protestants were not to be shaken from their purpose, issued by his herald the following proclamation in the public streets. "Hear ye, hear ye, hear ye, what the Roman imperial majesty now ordains; that no preacher here in Augsburg, be he who he may, henceforward preach, except those whom his imperial majesty himself shall appoint, as they would avoid the highest displeasure and severity of his imperial majesty." Accordingly there could be no preaching during the session of the diet by either Protestants or Catholics; and till further orders public worship must be celebrated by prayers, church music, and reading the Scriptures only. In this arrangement, on account of its apparent impartiality, the Protestants silently acquiesced; determined, however, that if any papist ventured to preach they would preach also. Charles sent his Spanish secretary to Melancthon to obtain from him a brief summary of the Protestant doctrines for his private use. On this occasion the secretary told Melancthon, that the Spaniards generally supposed the Lutherans to be complete atheists, and that to kill a Lutheran was doing God a greater service than even to kill a Turk.

On Sunday, the 20th of June, the emperor summoned all the princes to his lodgings to attend him to church and hear solemn mass before the opening of the diet. The elector of Saxony replied that he would attend the emperor with the drawn sword as grand marshal of the empire, but that he should not recognize the mass at all, nor join in any of the rites of worship. Similar declarations were made by all the Protestant princes. With this understanding they all attended as officers of the empire, but were careful to do nothing that could be construed into a recognition of the religious services of the occasion.

Monday, June 21st, the elector of Saxony shut himself up in his room and spent the entire day in fasting, prayer, and reading the Scriptures, particularly the Psalms, in reference to the difficulties and dangers which now pressed so hard on him and the whole Protestant cause. In the evening he called all the Protestant princes and theologians to his lodgings, and with great anxiety and many tears they deliberated as to what they ought to do, and with earnest prayer committed their whole cause to God. Melancthon in his anxiety and timidity was

willing to make great concessions for the sake of peace; but the elector, true to his promise, would take no important step without first writing to Luther and getting his advice. When Luther's answers came, they always thundered away all Melanthon's concessions, and scattered them to the four winds. In all this there was no interruption of friendship between these two great and noble men. Melanthon still venerated Luther next to Jesus Christ, and almost worshipped him; and Luther loved Melanthon more than any other human being except his own wife and children. All this is manifest from their correspondence and their whole intercourse with each other.

Luther, in his seclusion at Coburg, was very busy with his commentaries on Daniel, Ezekiel, the Psalms, and other parts of Scripture; he was writing on schools, composing school books, and refuting the papists; and his correspondence alone seemed enough to take the whole time of several men. June 20th, 1529, he writes, "Every morning the letters pour in upon me up to my neck; and here they lie, my table, my chairs, my footstools, my writing desk, the very floor itself covered with them." He preached continually, and administered the sacrament of the Lord's supper every alternate Sabbath. He spent much time in prayer, he read the Bible much for devotional purposes, and sang many hymns, especially his own magnificent psalm which he had lately written and set to music:

"Ein veste Burg ist unsrer Gott,  
Ein gute Wehr und Waffer.  
A tower of strength, our God is still  
A good defence and weapon."

An idea of his habits and feelings at this time may be formed from a letter written to Melanthon by Veit Dietrich, a young man who was studying theology with Melanthon, and who remained with Luther in the capacity of personal attendant during the whole of his stay at the castle of Coburg. "I can never sufficiently admire (says Dietrich in his letter) Luther's exceeding steadfastness, joy, faith, and hope, in these distressing times. This feeling he augments every day by a diligent use of the word of God. Not a day passes in which he does not spend at least three hours, and those the best for study, in prayer. I sometimes have the good fortune to overhear his prayers. My God! what a spirit, what faith there is in his

words; he prays so devotionally, as one who is speaking with God, and yet with such confidence and faith, as one who is talking with his father. ‘I know (said he in his prayer) that thou art our dear God and Father, and therefore I am certain that thou wilt bring our persecutors to naught. If thou doest it not, the danger is thine as well as ours; the whole cause is thine; what we have done we were obliged to do; and therefore, dear Father, thou wilt protect thine own cause.’ When I heard him from a distance praying in such words, with his clear sonorous voice, my heart burnt in my body for joy, because I heard him speaking so devotionally and so lovingly with God; but especially because he urged so hard the promises in the Psalms, as if he were certain that what he asked for must be granted. Therefore I doubt not that his prayers will be a great help to us in this (to human appearance) desperate cause, which is now in discussion before the diet.”

With this knowledge of the devotional habits of Luther, we can easily account for the style and tone of the letters which he wrote at this time to his friends in Augsburg. For more than two months he wrote nearly every day, and every letter breathes the same spirit which Dietrich describes as pervading his devotions. These letters would make a volume of intense interest, illustrating the power of faith and a good conscience more vividly perhaps than any thing else that ever proceeded from an uninspired pen. We can give only a few extracts as specimens, like a broken stone or two from an edifice such as Solomon’s temple. In a letter to Brueck, chancellor to the elector of Saxony, dated August 5th, 1530, he says, “Some of our friends are anxious and desponding as if God had forgotten us; but He cannot forget us, He must forget himself first. Otherwise, our cause were not His cause, nor our doctrine His word. But if we are certain and without doubt that this is His cause and His word, then our prayer is certainly heard, and help for us is already resolved upon and prepared; and we shall be helped, and there can be no failure. For He says, ‘Can a woman forget her infant, that she should have no feeling for the fruit of her body? Yes, she may forget, yet will I not forget thee; behold, I have engraven thee on the palms of my hands.’”

“I have lately seen two wonders: First, I was looking out of my window at night, and saw the stars in the heavens, and God’s great beautiful arch over my head, but I could not see any pillars on which the builder had fixed this arch; and yet

the heavens fell not, and this arch stood firm. Still there were some who were seeking for the pillars, and were longing to touch them and feel of them. And because they could not do this, they stood quivering and trembling, as if the heavens would certainly fall, and for no other reason than because they could not see and feel the pillars which held them up. If they could only grasp the pillars, then the heavens would stand fast.

"Secondly, I saw great thick clouds sweeping over us, of such weight and burden that they might be compared to a mighty sea ; but there was no floor for these clouds to rest upon, and no barrels to barrel them up ; yet they did not fall upon us, but saluted us with a scowling visage and fled away. And when they had gone, then both the floor and our roof, which had held them up, shone down upon us, the beautiful rainbow. Yet that was so small, thin, weak a floor and roof, that it disappeared in the clouds, and seemed more like a shadow, like an image in a painted glass, than such a strong floor, so that one might well be in doubt whether such a floor could bear up so great a weight of water. Yet, in point of fact, the waters were borne up and we were protected ; still some will be feeling to see what holds the waters up, and because they cannot find it, are in dread of an eternal flood.

"Such a work as God by his grace has given us to do, He will by His Spirit prosper and advance : and the way and time and place to help us will come right, and will be neither forgotten nor delayed."

In a letter to Melanthon, dated June 29th, 1530, he writes : "I hate from the heart your great anxiety about which you write ; it is not the great perils of the cause, it is your own great unbelief which distresses you. There was far greater peril in the time of John Huss, and at many other times, than in our times. And though the peril may be great, yet He whose the cause is (for it is not ours) is also great ; He hath begun it, and He will carry it through. Why give yourself such constant trouble ? If the cause be not a good one, why, then, let us give it up ; but if it be a good one, why should we make God a liar in so many and great promises which He has given us that we may be quiet and content ? *Cast thy care upon the Lord*, Ps. 55 : 23, 1 Pet. 5 : 9. 'The Lord is nigh to all that call upon him,' Ps. 34 : 19, 145 : 18. Think you that He speaks such words to the wind, that He casts such pearls before swine ?

I sometimes have fears, but not all the time. It is your philosophy and not theology that plagues you so.—What can the devil do more than put us to death ?

"I pray you for God's sake take up arms against yourself, for you are your own worst enemy and give the devil all the weapons he can use against you.

"Christ has died unto sin once for all, but to righteousness and truth he never dies, but lives and reigns. If this be true, why should we fear for the truth while he reigns? Yes, you reply, but by God's wrath is the truth cast down. Then let it be cast down by God's wrath, and not by our cowardice. He is our Father, and He will be the Father of our children.

"I pray for you constantly, and am troubled because your anxiety, greedy as a horse-leech, sucks out all your blood and makes my prayers powerless. So far as the cause is concerned, I have no anxiety, (whether from stupidity or from the Spirit my Lord Christ knoweth.) God can raise the dead; He can maintain His cause although it fall; He can raise it up, He can make it prosper; if we are not fit for the work He can do it by others. If we cannot have confidence in His promises, who in the world is there that can? But of this more another time, though I am but carrying water to the ocean. May Christ himself comfort, strengthen, and teach you by His Spirit. Amen.

"If matters go ill with you, I shall scarcely any longer be able to refrain myself from hurrying to you, that I may see how terrible the devil's teeth look round about, as the Scripture saith in Job xli."

In another letter to Melanthon of the 27th of June, he expresses himself as follows: "I am occupied with our cause day and night; I think it through, examine it, dismiss it, search throughout the whole Scripture; and I become more and more convinced every day that it is the cause of truth; and this confidence, by God's help, no man can ever take from me, let things go as they will."—"The father of lies hath sworn to be the death of me, that I know well; he will give himself no rest till he have swallowed me up. Very well, let him swallow me—by God's will, he will then get a stomach-ache and a purging such as he never had before."—"If Christ be not with us, where in the whole world shall we look for him? If we are not the church, or at least a part of the church, where then is the church? Is the duke of Bavaria, the pope, the Turk, and the like of them, the church? If we have not the word of God, who is it then that has it? And if God be for us, who can be against us?"

In another letter to Melanthon, of June 30th, he says, "If it be a lie, that God spared not his own Son, etc., Rom. 8: 32,

then the devil may be a man in my place : but if it be true, then what do we with our empty care, fear, trembling, and sorrow, as if He would not stand by us in those little matters when He has given his own Son to die for us, or as if the devil were stronger than God?"

"I pray you for Christ's sake, cast not to the winds the divine promises and comforts, as when He says, '*Cast thy cares upon the Lord*,' Ps. 55: 23. '*Wait on the Lord, and be of good comfort*,' Ps. 22: 14 ; and such like passages, of which the Psalms and the Gospels are full. As for example, John 16: 33, '*Be of good cheer, I have overcome the world*.' That Christ has overcome the world, I know full well ; and why should I fear a conquered world as if it were the conqueror ? Were we obliged to go on our knees to Rome or Jerusalem for such promises, we should value them ; but now we have them so numerous and so near at hand, we regard them not. This is not good. I know well that it comes from the weakness of our faith. Let us pray with the apostles, '*Lord, increase our faith*,' Luke 17: 5."

"As to my own salvation, I sometimes have doubts ; but as to the great cause, I never have any. You say that you can at any time hazard your life, but your fears are for the great cause. You fear for the cause as I for my own salvation ; and I have no fear for the cause, as you have none for your salvation. As to the cause itself, I am quite at ease and content ; for I know it is the cause of truth and righteousness, and, what is more, the cause of God and Christ. If with such a cause we fall, then Christ falls with us, Christ the ruler of the universe. And should Christ fall, then would I far rather fall with Christ than stand with the emperor. To tell the truth, the cause depends not on us ; yet I stand by you with prayers and tears. Would God I could be with you in bodily presence."

"I have not undertaken this work on my own account ; I have sought neither honor nor profit in it. This the Spirit testifies to me ; and my own course shows it to the world, and will continue to show it more and more to the end."

But we must not indulge ourselves with further extracts. The whole correspondence may be read in the Leipsic edition of Luther's Works, vol. XX. p. 171-196. A part of it is given by Von Gerlach, vol. X. p. 60-85, and Marheinecke, vol. II. p. 450-511. Vol. III. 1-80. We now resume our narrative of the proceedings of the diet, with respect to the Protestants.

On the 21st of June, Charles gave orders that the Protestants must have their confession ready to present to the diet by the 24th. This put Melancthon into a great tremor, for he thought he could not possibly revise it and get it all right by that time; but the elector told him he must have it ready by the morning of the 23d, and then it must be read article by article before all the Protestant princes and theologians before it was presented to the diet. Melancthon and his associates immediately set themselves to work, and labored day and night till the morning of the 23d, when, at the general meeting for consultation, with some few verbal corrections, it was unanimously approved. They all agreed to stand by it to the last, and on the morning of the 24th it was ready for public presentation.

The diet was held in the city hall; the number of the princes was forty-two, besides the deputies from the free cities. Charles was seated upon the imperial throne hung with golden embroidery, his brother king Ferdinand sat over against him, and Frederick elector palatine of the Rhine opened the sessions with a brief address to the princes and deputies.

When the diet was opened on the morning of the 24th, cardinal Campeggio the papal legate had his audience with the emperor, who rose with all the princes and went to meet the legate at the steps of the hall. The cardinal made a flowery Latin speech on the heresies which distracted Germany, praised pope Clement, and eulogized the emperor Charles, but said not a word about calling a general council or reforming the abuses of the clergy. Albert archbishop of Mainz, the primate of Germany, replied in much the same strain. The evangelical princes now thought it a good time to present their confession; but the emperor said he must first give audience to the Austrian ambassadors, who had come to speak to him respecting the war with the Turks. When this was through, the emperor said it was then too late to hear the confession that day, but they might hand it to him and he would read it over by himself. But the Protestants had been very much slandered, their doctrines were misrepresented and distorted in every possible way, their views and purposes were very generally misunderstood. Accordingly, it was their wish that the confession should be read publicly, and they feared if it now got into the emperor's hands he could easily contrive to keep it out of the legislature altogether; for their enemies were as anxious to suppress it as they were to publish it. They, therefore, strenuously urged that it should be read the next day. To this Charles at length

assented, but requested, nevertheless, that the copy might be given him to look over that evening. They did not wish to trust him even so far, and excused themselves by saying (what indeed was very true) that it was so interlined and blotted he would find it very difficult to read it, but they would have a fair copy made for him the next morning. With this the session of the day closed and the Protestants went to their lodgings, rejoicing and feeling encouraged that they had got on so well, and that as yet they had lost nothing. They were determined that their confession should be publicly read before the emperor and the diet, and as many of the people as could be brought together; for they knew that this was the only way to secure for it a fair hearing, to refute slander and overcome prejudice. Charles's papal counsellors were well aware of the same thing, and therefore used all their art to prevent a public hearing.

Saturday morning, June 25th, the Protestants were ready with two fair copies of the confession, one in German, the other in Latin. As a public hearing could not now be prevented, the papists persuaded Charles to summon the diet to meet, not in the city hall, the usual place of meeting, but in his own private chapel in the palace of the bishop of Augsburg, which could scarcely contain two hundred persons. In their zeal many spectators crowded into the chapel, but Charles ordered all to withdraw who were not members of the diet, or entitled to a seat with them. He then directed the chancellor of the elector of Saxony, Dr. Christian Bayer, to read the Latin copy. The elector immediately arose and observed that they stood on German soil, that they were assembled as a German legislature, and he hoped the German language would be heard. Charles coldly assented. It was 3 o'clock in the afternoon, an immense crowd had assembled in the yard before the palace, it was oppressively warm, the chapel windows were necessarily thrown open; and Dr. Bayer commenced reading the Augsburg confession in German, with a voice so clear and penetrating that every word was distinctly heard, not only by the members of the diet, but also by the crowd without, who all maintained a breathless silence during the entire two hours that were occupied in the reading. It was heard by many more than could have heard it, had it been read in the city hall. Thus providence overruled the arts of the papists to their own confusion. It produced a tremendous effect. People had no idea that Protestantism was such a noble system of doctrines and records,

or that Protestants could quote such Scripture or adduce such reasons for their faith. Charles himself was deeply affected. He rested his head upon his hand, and never removed his eyes from the chancellor all the time he was reading. When the reading was finished and the chancellor was about to hand the copy to the imperial secretary, the emperor reached out his hand and took it himself; and when the other copy was offered to the secretary, he took that also. The German copy he then gave with his own hand to Albert archbishop of Mainz, the primate of Germany, and retained the Latin one himself.

That very night the confession was translated into Italian, French, Portuguese, and English, and sent off immediately to the pope and to the kings of England, France, and Portugal, by the ambassadors of those several potentates. It was a proud day for Protestants; they had had a public hearing before the emperor and the legislature of Germany and the ambassadors of the European sovereigns; they had told what their faith was; slander was silenced, prejudice was allayed; the mouths of gain-sayers were stopped.

Luther was immediately informed of the whole transaction by the elector of Saxony, and the following paragraphs are extracts from his reply.

"The adversaries thought they had managed wonderfully well when they induced his imperial majesty to prohibit the preaching; but they never imagined, the poor fellows, that by means of this written confession more preaching was actually done than ten preachers could have accomplished. It is a piece of wisdom and wonderful wit that Mr. Eisleben and a few others are made to keep silence, when, instead of them, here come the elector of Saxony and the other princes with their written confession and preach to the imperial majesty itself and the whole empire, under their very noses, and they must hear it, and can have nothing to say against it. They would not allow their servants to hear the preachers, but now they themselves must hear it still worse (as they would say) from the great lords, and be silent. Christ is not silent at the diet, even though they go mad, and they must hear more from the confession than they would have heard in a year from the preachers. So it goes, as St. Paul says God's words will not be bound. When it is forbidden in the pulpit, it must be heard in palaces. When the poor preachers are silenced, then the great lords and princes preach. In short, when every mouth is stopped the stones cry out, as Christ declared."

"If they decide on this matter without the Scripture, or will that their decision be received without the Scripture, then will their own mouths condemn them, for they would claim to be Christian princes without Christ, which is worse than a land-holder without land, a rich man without wealth, a scholar without learning."

"Let your grace be of good comfort. Christ will honor your grace before his Father, since your grace has honored him before an evil generation; for he says, him that honoreth me, I will honor. The same Lord who hath begun will carry it through, Amen. I pray for your grace with all diligence and earnestness, and would do more if I could. The favor of God be with your grace as heretofore, and abound more and more."

As to the light in which this transaction was viewed at the time, and the effect it produced, we will take the testimony of Spalatin, chaplain to the elector of Saxony, who was present on the occasion, and wrote his account on the spot a few hours after the confession was read.

"Last Saturday the greatest work was done at this diet of Augsburg that ever was done on earth; for on that day in the afternoon my gracious lord, the elector of Saxony, duke John, margrave George of Brandenburg, duke John Frederick of Saxony, duke Ernest of Brunswick and Lüneburg, landgrave Philip of Hesse, duke Francis of Brunswick and Lüneburg, prince Wolfgang of Anhalt, and the two cities of Nuremberg and Reutlingen, caused to be read article by article, not only before all the electors, princes, estates, bishops, and counsellors there present, but also before the imperial majesty itself and its brother king Ferdinand, openly and with fine Christian comforting courage and heart, the confession of their faith and of the whole Christian doctrine, which is preached in their principalities, countries, and cities. The lord chancellor, Dr. Christianus, read it, and he read it exceeding well, so loud and clear that not only every body in the hall heard it distinctly, but also without, in the court, that is, the yard of the bishop of Augsburg's palace, where his imperial majesty has his lodgings."

"The confession is written both in Latin and German, with such sure Scripture proof, and so solidly and clearly, that no such confession has been made, not only these thousand years, but never since the world stood. The like cannot be found in any history, nor in any of the old fathers or doctors."

"The imperial majesty and king Ferdinand, the dukes of

Bavaria, and some of the bishops, listened with very earnest attention. You may be sure that they had never, all their lives long, heard so much of this doctrine; for his imperial majesty, the king, and many princes and bishops considered us real Mamelukes, without God or faith. When the chancellor was reading, in the confession, that, some four hundred years ago, the pope prohibited marriage to the priests in Germany, and the then archbishop of Mainz published the decree, and endeavored to compel submission to it, and his clergy revolted, and he lost his life in the disturbance—on hearing this, king Ferdinand turns round to the archbishop of Mainz and asks, “*Is this true?*” Whereupon Mainz replies, “*Yea, it is true.*”

“Therefore let us hope in God, and may God grant us more grace, that we, in all our churches and sermons, may, with all earnestness, seasonably and with diligent prayer, seek God, that God himself may conduct this business to a blessed termination, that we may abide by God’s word and maintain good peace. Let us all pray for it seasonably and in earnest. For, should this thing turn out prosperously for us, then in God’s fear we can go on the further; but should it terminate adversely, then there will be great destruction to land and people; perhaps not only with loss of body and goods, wife and children, but also with loss of the eternal goods: from which evils may God defend us.”

“May God help us in all our remaining business with all grace and mercy. Amen.”

Notwithstanding all the efforts of the papists to prevent it, the Protestant confession had now been publicly read, and the reading of it had produced a strong and decided impression in favor of the Protestants. The emperor felt that something must be done to counteract this impression. He accordingly selected nineteen of the ablest papal theologians present to write a confutation of the confession. Among these were some of Luther’s earliest and most distinguished antagonists, such as Eck, Wimpina, Cochlaeus, Faber, and others. Charles gave them a strict charge to avoid all passion and reproach, and confine themselves strictly to a calm, dignified, theological, and scriptural refutation of the statements of the confession. “This document (he said) is written in a dignified, unreproachful, candid style, and the answer to it, to be effectual, must bear the same character.” The emperor probably was not aware how exceedingly difficult a task it must be to write such an answer to such a document as the Augsburg confession.

Faber, Eck, and their associates, set themselves diligently to work, and, after the lapse of some weeks, presented the result of their labors to the emperor. Charles looked it over, and found it to contain so much of abuse and so little of argument, that he immediately handed it back to them, and told them they must do better than that—the confutation must be entirely re-written. They resumed their labors with the best grace they could, and, after a few days, presented him with a revised copy containing two hundred and eighty leaves. The emperor took it and began to read; but soon coming to a passage which displeased him, he tore out the leaf and threw it down. He read on a while longer, and then tore out another leaf with great show of dissatisfaction. Faber and Eck, who had done the most in writing the confutation, seeing the reception it met with, soon grew as angry as the emperor, but nobody spoke a word. Charles kept on reading, and every few seconds tearing a leaf out of the book, and Drs. Eck and Faber stood by growing very red in the face, all in marvellous silence, till at last, when the reading was through, of the two hundred and eighty leaves with which Charles had begun there were only a dozen left—two hundred and sixty-eight he had torn out and thrown on the floor. The dozen leaves he handed to Dr. Eck and told him to make something decent out of them. It was written over five times before the emperor would accept it, and in this labor six weeks passed away.

When the confutation was ready, it was publicly read before the diet, and the Protestants requested a copy of it; but this was refused, except on those conditions to which they would by no means submit. These were, first, that they should write no answer to it; second, that they should not print it, nor in any way cause it to come before the public; and, third, that they should submit to the emperor and the papal princes, and agree to the sentiments of the confutation. These conditions very plainly expose the opinion which the papists themselves had of the confutation, considered as an argument, when compared with the confession. Nothing was so much desired by the Protestants as the fullest publicity, both to their opinions and their arguments—nothing so much dreaded by the papists.

Notwithstanding this refusal, Melancthon began to write a reply to the confutation from such notes as could be taken by his friends, particularly Camerarius, during the public reading of it. Those notes were necessarily imperfect, and the defence

of course incomplete; but, incomplete as it was, the elector of Saxony was determined it should be presented to the diet. Accordingly his chancellor, in presence of the emperor, handed it to the count palatine of the Rhine, the proper officer to receive it. The emperor saw what was going on, whispered to his brother king Ferdinand, who sat by him, and then beckoned to the count palatine to give the paper back to the Saxon chancellor. Thus the emperor refused to receive a defence, the writing of which he had prohibited. This, however, happened very well, for, before the diet broke up, Melancthon by some means (Eck says, *furtim et fraudulenter*) got possession of a complete copy of the confutation. With this he was delighted, as if it were the richest prize in the world; and hastening to Altenburg with it, he there, in the house of Spalatin, wrote that celebrated apology for the Augsburg confession which the Lutherans have ever since received as one of their symbolic books. In this composition he had the presence and advice of Luther. With such zeal did he labor day and night on this work that his friends became alarmed for his health. Luther, who was never afraid of labor himself, at this period sometimes actually went to Melancthon's room, and, without ceremony dispossessing him of pen, ink, and paper, compelled him to allow himself a little relaxation. The apology was completed and published about the middle of April, 1531.

In 1540, Melancthon, on his own responsibility, published a revised edition of the confession, with some important changes, evidently with the intention of making the statement of the doctrines in some instances more clear, and taking away, so far as possible, the obstacles to a closer union among Protestants. The tenth article which originally read, "De Cœna Domini docent, quod corpus et sanguis Christi vere adsint et distribuantur vescientibus in Cœna Domini; et improbant secus docentes"—was changed so as to read thus: "De Cœna Domini docent, quod cum pane et vino vere exhibeantur corpus et sanguis Christi vescientibus in Cœna Domini." Luther had been exceedingly tenacious on this point, and yet it is remarkable that in regard to these changes made by Melancthon he preserved the most profound silence. A great clamor was raised against Melancthon, and he was accused before the elector of departing from the original ground of the confession; and Luther wrote to the elector most affectionately and earnestly in defence of his friend, and even then said nothing about the alterations. "I beseech your grace (said he) not to write hard to master Philip and our

friends, lest he grieve himself to death ; for they do hold fast to our dear confession, and they will abide firm and pure thereto though every thing should fail." If Luther had manifested the same moderation on this point ten years earlier, it would have averted a vast amount of evil from the Protestant cause.

Calvin expressed himself perfectly satisfied with the confession as published in 1540. Writing to M. Schalling in 1557, he says ; " Non vero Augustanam confessionem repudio, cui pridem volens ac libens subscripsi, sicut eam auctor ipse interpretatus est."

It is on the basis of this confession that the king of Prussia has recently formed an alliance with the church of England for the establishment of the bishopric of Jerusalem and the protection of Protestant missionaries against the assaults of the papal governments. Would that all true Protestants might unite on the same basis. How it would rejoice the spirit of Melancthon, the amiable writer of this admirable formula of doctrine, even now in the heavenly world ! While on earth he always labored to heal the divisions among Protestants, and in a letter to one of his friends he thus expresses himself on this point : " Oro te propter Christum, ut cogites, sananda esse potius quam exacerbanda hæc dissidia. Mibi illa fulmina anathematum nunquam placebant, etiamsi quid in aliquibus desiderabam—nec me pœnitet mei consilii, quod hactenus ab his rixis omnino fere abstinui."

The materials for the preceding narrative have been drawn principally from the Leipsic edition of Luther's Works, vol. XX., Marheinecke's Geschichte der deutchen Reformation, vol. II. and III., Seckendorf de Lutheranismo, Kœllner's Symbolik aller christlichen Confessionen, Vol. I., and the editions of Luther (so frequently referred to) by Lomler and Von Gerlach.

The diet at Augsburg at length broke up without accomplishing any thing for the security of the Protestants, but even leaving them in more imminent and immediate danger than they had ever been before. Luther then wrote and published his *Warning to his dear Germans*, a piece no less eloquent and effective than the *Admonition*, with which he had approached the diet at its commencement. The tone of the *Warning* is plaintive and even melancholy, full of the eloquence of grief and disappointed patriotism ; yet magnanimous, courageous, and spirit-stirring, as the notes of a trumpet. No one with the feelings of a Protestant or a Christian can read it without being alternately melted to tears and roused to indignation, without feeling at one moment like calling upon God in the agony of his soul to

have mercy on his poor, feeble, persecuted church, and at the next seizing the sword of the Spirit to annihilate at a blow all God's enemies on earth and in hell. It is inserted by Von Gerlach, vol. X. p. 85-120.

#### LUTHER'S PRINCIPAL GERMAN WRITINGS.

One great object I have in view in preparing these articles, is to direct the attention of the many who are now studying the German language in this country, to the writings of Luther. They are not obsolete, most of them are as good now as ever they were, and admirably adapted to the state of theological discussion at this time both in England and the United States. To give some idea of the number and variety of topics which engaged his pen, a condensed bill of fare to the student who would feast upon his works, I here subjoin, in chronological order, a select list of his principal German writings. The complete catalogue of all his works, Latin and German, comprises twenty-four large folio pages, closely printed in double columns in the appendix to Seckendorf.

#### 1517 and 18.

1. Sermon on Indulgences and Grace.
2. Defence of the Sermon.
3. The Seven Penitential Psalms, with a Commentary.
4. Exposition of the Lord's Prayer.
5. Sermon on Penitence.
6. Exposition of the 110th Psalm.

#### 1519.

7. A brief Guide to Confession.
8. Sermon on Usury.
9. Sermon on the Sacrament of the body of Christ, (advocating the use of the cup for the laity.)
10. Sermon on Excommunication.
11. Sermon on Marriage.
12. Instruction respecting certain articles alleged against him by his opponents.
13. Sermon on Prayer and the Procession.
14. Sermon preached at the Castle in Leipsic.
15. Sermon on Preparation for Death.
16. Another Sermon on Usury.

#### 1520.

17. Address to the Christian Nobility of the German Nation.
18. Sermon on the Mass.
19. On the Freedom of a Christian Man.
20. Exposition of certain Articles in the Sermon on the Sacrament of the body of Christ.
21. Protest and Appeal.
22. Answer to a paper published under the seal of the Official at Stolpen.
23. On Good Works.
24. On the Papacy of Rome.

25. On Eck's new Bulls and Lies. 26. Against the Bulls of Anti-Christ. 27. Why the Pope and his Disciples have burnt Dr. Martin Luther's Books. 28. Ground and Reason of all the Articles which are unjustly condemned by the Romish Bulls. 29. A short Exposition of the holy Lord's Prayer, before and behind, (that is, what is expressed and implied.) 30. A brief Form of the Decalogue, the Creed, and the Lord's Prayer.

## 1521.

31. Instruction to Penitents respecting the prohibited Books of Dr. Martin Luther. 32. Sermon respecting the Kingdom of Christ and the Kingdom of Herod, preached on Three Kings' Day. 33. The Sufferings of Christ and Anti-Christ illustrated in 26 engravings by Cranach the elder. 34. Sermon on the worthy receiving of the Sacrament of the true Body of Christ, preached at Wittenberg before his Serene Highness the Prince and Margrave of Bradenburg. 35. Sermon preached at Erfurt on the Journey to Worms. 36. Sermon on a threefold good Life, to instruct the Conscience. 37. Instruction how men are rightly and understandingly to be baptized into the Christian Faith. 38-41. Four Tracts in answer to Bok and Emser and Murner in respect to the Leipsic Discussion. 42. Whether the Pope has Power to require Confession. 43. The 119th Psalm in German, to aid in useful Prayer, and to exalt God's Word against its greatest enemies, the Pope and the Doctrines of Men. 44. The 37th Psalm of David, to teach and comfort a Christian man against the Plots of the wicked and malicious Hypocrites. 45. German Exposition of the 68th Psalm for Easter, Ascension, and Pentecost. 46. The Magnifical (Luke i. 46-55,) translated and expounded. 47. Gospel of the ten Lepers (Luke xvii. 11-19) translated and expounded. 48. Judgment of the Paris Theologians on the Doctrine of Dr. Luther, and Dr. Luther's Anti-Judgment. 49. Dr. Martin Luther's Letter to the Diet at Worms, after his departure therefrom, sent from Friedberg.

## 1522.

50. Exhortation to all Christians to keep themselves from Uproar and Rebellion. 51. Eight Sermons preached at Wittenberg, (against all violent measures in promoting reformation, among the most eloquent of all Luther's productions.) 52. On the Abuses of the Mass. 53. The Bull *in Cœna Domini* of his Holiness the Pope, translated into German by Dr. Martin Luther,

with King David's Commentary on this Bull in Psalm 10th. 54. Treatise against Dr. Carlstadt's Innovations at Wittenberg. 55. Dr. Martin Luther's Opinion on receiving the Sacrament in both Kinds. 56. On shunning the Doctrines of Man. 57. Answer to the Texts quoted to strengthen the Doctrines of Men. 58. Sermon on the future Coming of Christ. 59. On the Sufferings of Christ. 60. Sermon on John xvi. 61. Against the spiritual State falsely so called of the Pope and Bishops. 62. German Answer of Martin Luther to the Book of King Henry of England. I fear not the Truth—Lies touch me not. 63. German Translation of the New Testament, with a Preface. 64. Exposition of the Epistles and Gospels which are read in the Church from Advent to Christmas. 65. The same, from Christmas to Sunday after Epiphany. 66. On Married Life. 67. A Christian Sermon preached at Erfurt, for the Reformation of every Christian man. 68. Do. on Faith and Works. 69. Reflections and Instructions on Monasteries and all spiritual Vows. 70. Exhortation, Warning, and Retrospection. 71. A Missive to all who are suffering Persecution for the Word of God, comfortingly written by Dr. Martin Luther to the noble and steadfast Hartmuth von Cronenberg. 72. To the Bohemian Legislators assembled at Prague.

## 1523.

73. On the Obedience due to the civil Magistrate. 74. On the Order of Divine Service in the Church. 75. On the Order of a common Treasury. 76. Sermon on the Birth of Christ. 77. Explanation of two abominable Figures of the Ass-pope and the Calf-monk, set forth by Melanthon, with Luther's Amen. 78. Exhortation to the German Clergy to abandon false Chastity, and hasten to the right connubial Chastity. 79. Reason and Answer why the Nuns may in a godly sort forsake the Nunneries. 80. That Jesus Christ was born a Jew. 81. Manual of Baptism in German. 82. Ground and Reason out of the Scripture that a Christian Congregation or Church have the Right and Power to judge of Doctrine, to call their Teachers, and to install and dismiss them. 83. Instruction and Proof that the Profession of the evangelical Doctrine in Word and Deed, and the reception of the Sacrament in both Kinds, cannot with good conscience be dispensed with through fear of Man. 84. Christ's Indulgence. 85. Poem on the two Martyrs of Christ, who were burnt at Brussels by the Sophists of Louvaine. 86.

Letter to the Prebendary of Wittenberg to put an end to the Disorders in Public Worship. 87. Exhortation to all the Christians in Worms to hold fast the Gospel-Doctrine they had received. 88. To the dear, elect Friends of God, all the Christians in Riga, Reval and Dorpat in Livonia. 89. A Letter of Comfort to the Christians of Augsburg. 90. Exposition of the seventh Chapter of the First of Corinthians. 91. The Epistle of Peter preached and explained. 92. Translation of the five Books of Moses with a Preface. 93. A Writing of two Kinds of Men who hold themselves in the Faith, and what that is. 94. An Advice that Princes should not take Arms against the Sovereign on account of Persecution for the Faith. 95. Answer and Supplication on the request of the Elector of Saxony, that he would abstain from severity in Writing. 96. A papal Brief against Luther to the Council of Bamberg, with Luther's Notes.

## 1524.

97. To the Councillors of all the Cities of Germany that they should establish and maintain Christian Schools. 98. Sermon on the Circumcision, Luke ii. 21. 99. Brief Exposition of John i. 29-34. 100. A History how God helped an honorable Nun, Florantina of Upper Weimar, with a Letter to the Counts of Mansfeld. 101. A Christian Letter of Comfort to the Miltenbergers, and how they should avenge themselves on their Enemies, out of Psalm cxx. 102. Exposition of Psalm cxxvii. for the Christians of Riga in Livonia. 103. The Epistle of Jude and the Second of Peter preached and explained. 104. Two Imperial Edicts, inconsistent and contradictory, against Luther, with Luther's Preface and Postscript. 105. A Writing against the blind and mad Condemnation of the Seventeen Articles by the miserable and shameful University of Ingolstadt. 106. Advice that Parents should neither force nor hinder the Marriage of their Children, and that Children should not make Matrimonial Engagements without the Consent of their Parents. 107. A Writing against the new Idol and old Devil, which is said to be raised at Meissen, (on the canonization of Benno, an old Bishop of Meissen.) 108. A Letter to the Princes Frederick and John of Saxony, on the Rebellious Spirit. 109. Reflexion whether we should decide by the Mosaic or the Imperial Code. 110. Reflection whether a Man should abstain from Marriage on account of the Poverty of his Family. 111. On Trade and

Usury. 112. On the Sum of God's Law, and the Use and Abuse of the Law, from 1 Tim. i. 3. 113. The Abominations of the Silent Mass. 114. Prefaces to Job, Proverbs, and Ecclesiastes. 115. The Psalter in German, after the manner of the Hebrew language. 116. Several Sermons. 117. Luther's Correspondence with Wolfgang of Saalhausen. 118. On the Use and Profession of Christian Freedom. 119. To the Chapter of Wittenberg to put away the Ungodly Ceremonies. 120. To a Gentleman in Austria instructed in the Christian Doctrine.

## 1525.

121. Against the Heavenly Prophets on the Images and Sacraments. 122. Martyrdom of B. Henry, burnt in Diedmar, with an Exposition of Psalm ix. 123. Two Bulls of Pope Clement VII. on the Papal Romish Jubilee, translated into German with a Preface and Notes. 124. A Lecture against Rebels, on 1 Tim. i. 18–20. 125. An Address to be read before receiving the Sacrament. 126. A Warning to all the Christians in Strasburg to be on their Guard against the Fanaticism of Dr. Carlsstadt. 127. An Exhortation to Peace, (to the Swabian Peasants.) 128. Against the Thievish and Murderous Peasants. 129. A Letter respecting the severe Books against the Peasants. 130. A dreadful History and Judgment of God on Thomas Muenzer. 131. Two Sermons on the Death of Frederick, Elector of Saxony, from 1 Thess. iv. 13–18. 132. Sermon on Psalm xxvi. 133. A Christian Exhortation respecting the externals of Public Worship and Uniformity therein, to the Christians of Livonia. 134. Exposition of the Epistles and Gospel for the Feast of the Three Kings, and from Advent to Easter. 135. Preface to John Walter's Psalm-tunes set to four Parts. 136. Various Sermons. 137. Exhortation to Wolfgang Reissenbusch, to betake himself to the married state. 138. A Letter to Cardinal Albert, Archbishop of Mainz, advising him to get married.

## 1526.

139. The German Mass and Order of Public Worship. 140. The Papacy and its Members depicted and described. 141. To all the Christians of Reutlingen. 142. Against Oecolampadius. 143. Sermon on the Body and Blood of Christ, against the Fanatics. 144. The cxiiith Psalm of David, on the Wealth, Honor, and Pleasure, which the Godly use well and the Ungodly

abuse. 145. Two Sermons on Acts xv. and xvi. 146. Answer to Passages quoted from Scripture in favor of Monastic Vows. 147. The Prophet Habakkuk expounded. 148. A good Sermon of Dr. Luther's on the text, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God. 149. Four comforting Psalms expounded to the Queen of Hungary. 150. Instruction and Warning against the right rebellious and treacherous Council of the whole Clergy of Mainz. 151. Dr. Luther's Advice to the Saxon Chancellor Brueck, as to what the Elector should do against the Confederacy in Mainz. 152. Explanation of certain Chapters in Exodus. 153. Certain Reflexions on subjects connected with Marriage.

## 1527.

154. That these Words, *this is my Body*, stand fast against the Fanatics. 155. Whether a Man may flee through fear of Death, (written when the Plague raged at Wittenberg.) 156. Whether Soldiers can be in a condition of Salvation. 157. Sermon on Matt. xi. 25—30. 158. Answer to the King of England's blasphemous Title. 159. Consolation to the Christians of Halle on the Death of their Preacher. 160. Various Sermons. 161. The Predictions of John Lichtenberger, in German. 162. Blessed History of Leonhard Kaiser, who was burnt in Bavaria for the Gospel's sake. 163. Sermon on Christ's Kingdom and Christian Freedom. 164. Reflexions on a Case of Matrimony. 165. A faithful Warning and Exhortation to all the pious Christians of Erfurt to beware of false Doctrine, and hold fast the true. 165. On the first Book of Moses, with an Instruction how Moses is to be read. 166. Five Reflexions of Luther to certain of the Nobility.

## 1528.

167. On the Lord's Supper. 168. A new Fable of Æsop, of the Lion and the Ass, lately found and translated into German, (a humorous satire on certain would-be Poets.) 169. The Prophet Zechariah expounded. 170. On Anabaptism. 171 and 172. Two Treatises on the Sacrament in both kinds. 173. A beautiful Christian Letter of Consolation to a considerable person in Lower Saxony, who was burdened with various Thoughts concerning God's Providence. 174. On the false, mendicant Roguery. 175. On the marriage of the worthy Priest S. Klingbeil, to the Bishop of Camin. 176. Exposition of the Decalogue. 177. Brief Exhortation to Confession.

## 1529.

178. On private and stolen Letters, together with an exposition of a Psalm, against George Duke of Saxony. 179. A small Catechism for common Pastors and Preachers. 180. The German Catechism. 181. Sermon on the Lies against the Holy Ghost. 182. The Wisdom of Solomon, to Tyrants, translated into German. 183. To the high-born Princess, the Lady Sibyl, Duchess of Saxony, on Christian Housekeeping. 184. Sermons to the Suffering, from John xviii. xix. and xx. 185. War Sermon against the Turks. 186. A Writing to John, Elector of Saxony, respecting defensive War. 187. A Writing of Comfort to a person in great Temptation, with the addition of Psalm cxlii.

## 1530.

188. Admonition to the Clergy assembled at the Diet of Augsburg. 189. Description of a Court Life in Venice. 190. Certain Fables of Æsop, translated into German. 191. A Sermon that men should keep their Children at School. 192. A Letter on Translation (defending his version of Romans iii. 28.) 193. A Warning to his dear Germans. 194. On Marriage. 195. A short and clear Instruction how the secret Revelation of John is to be understood and interpreted, very useful and consoling for those Times. 196. The Prophet Daniel, in German. 197. The Prophecy concerning Gog in Ezekiel xxviii. and xxxix. 198. Select and beautiful Passages of the Holy Scripture, wherewith Dr. Luther comforted himself in great Temptations. 199. A Writing to the Landgrave of Hesse. 200. The beautiful cxviiith Psalm. 201. Certain Reflexions on controverted Articles laid before the Diet at Augsburg. 202. Answer to Questions proposed to Dr. Luther by two Persons of high Rank. 203. Martin Luther's Revelation respecting Purgatory, to all Posterity. 204. Exposition of Psalms cxvii, and lxxxii. 205. On the Keys. 206. Exhortation to the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of our Lord. 207. Exposition of the cxith Psalm. 208. Prefaces to the Apocryphal Books of the Old Testament. 209. Instruction to two Preachers whether they should leave their Churches, and give way to the Enemies of the Gospel. 210. Brief Exposition of the first Twenty-five Psalms. 211. Do. of the vi. vii. and xvii. ch. of John. 212. Nine Sermons preached at Coburg, during the Diet at Augsburg. 213. A Confession of the Christian Doctrine and Faith in Seventeen Ar-

ticles. 214. Answer to the Clamor of certain Papists against the Seventeen Articles. 215. Fine Christian Thoughts of the holy Fathers and Doctors, that a Christian should bear every Cross with Patience. 216. Advice to a Pastor how a Jewess should be baptized. 217. Answer to five Questions proposed by a Person of Quality, on the right Use of the Sacrament. 218. On the Intercession of the Saints.

## 1531.

219. On the pretended Imperial Edict issued after the Diet of 1530. 220. Letter to Spengler, whether Man may resist the Emperor. 221. Letter to a Citizen of Nuremberg, whether Men with a good Conscience may enter into combination against the unrighteous and violent attempts of the Emperor. 222. To the Citizens of Frauenstein. 223. Against the Assassins at Dresden. 224. Sermon on the Cross and Sufferings, and how a Man should behave himself under them. 225. A Sermon on John xx. respecting Mary Magdalene. 226. Instruction and Warning to the Christians of N., near Freiberg, to receive the Sacrament in both Kinds. 227. A Writing that Christian Preachers, by their Office, are bound to reprove the People for their Sins. 228. How Christians should act in affairs of Matrimony. 229. Prefaces to the Psalter, Jeremiah, and the minor Prophets. 230. Summaries of the Psalms, and Reasons for translating. 231. Sermon on the Destruction of Jerusalem, from Luke xix. 41. 232. Sermon on the Angels. 233. A Marriage Sermon, from Hebrews, xiii. 4. 234. Advice as to what a faithful Preacher of the Word should do when his Office is despised and he is persecuted. 235. Comfort to an afflicted Person of Quality.

## 1532.

236. Exposition of Matthew, v., vi., and vii. 237. Do. of Psalm cxlvii. 238. To the Council and nine Monks of Herford. 239. How the Law and the Gospel may be right solidly distinguished, and what Christ and his Kingdom are. 240. Exposition of the Benediction pronounced in the Mass. 241. Letters to the Elector John of Saxony. 242. Letter to Albert Margrave of Brandenburg, against certain rebellious Spirits. 243. Letter against Sneaks and secret Preachers. 244. Two Sermons at the Funeral of John Elector of Saxony. 245. Letter of Consolation to a Nobleman. 246. Do. to the expelled Leipsicrs. 247. A comforting Sermon on the Coming of

Christ and the promised Signs of the Last Day. 248. A Prophecy of Dr. Martin Luther, after the Death of the Elector John.

## 1533.

249. To the Christians of Oschatz. 250. Answer and Instructions to the Leipsic Protestants expelled by Duke George. 251. Sermon on Jesus Christ, preached before the Electoral Court of Torgau. 252. Some fine Sermons on Christian love, from the first Epistle of John. 253. Form of the Christian life, from St. Paul, 1 Tim. i. 254. To the Christians of Frankfurt on the Maine. 255. Four Reflexions of Luther and his Colleagues on a Council. 256. To the Council of the Imperial City of Augsburg. 257. Answer to the Uproar of Duke George, and a Letter of Comfort to the Christians wickedly expelled by him from Leipsic. 258. A little Answer to Duke George's last Book. 259. Three Sermons on good and bad Angels. 260. On private Masses and Consecration to the Priesthood. 261. Letter to a good Friend on the Book respecting private Masses. 262. Dr. Martin Luther's Catalogue of all the Books published by him, from 1518 to 1533, with a Preface.

## 1534.

263. Exposition of Psalms lxxv. and ci. 264. Reflexions to the Elector John Frederick. 265. Four Letters of Comfort to a Person in private Rank in bodily and mental Distress. 266. Comfort to a Person afflicted with Melancholy and Gloom. 267. On the Resurrection from the Dead, 1 Cor. xv. 268. Counsel and Warning to an offended Person to avoid avenging himself. 269. Reflexions on fleeing from Solitude. 270. Comforting Instructions how we may resist bodily Weakness, Pusillanimity, and other Temptations of the Devil. 271. Prayer for the Hour of Death. 272. Preface to the Acts of the Apostles.

## 1535.

273. Reflexions whether a Christian who is well instructed in Divine Truth can attend idolatrous Worship without violating his Conscience. 274. Sermons on Baptism. 275. Reflexions whether it is lawful to marry a deceased Wife's Sister. 276. Reflexions whether the Holy Sacrament in both kinds may be administered in a private house. 277. A simple Guide to Prayer for a good Friend. 278. Reflexions whether a Christian with a good Conscience can be present at the Consecration of a

papal Bishop. 279. A comforting Writing for Christians banished for the sake of the Gospel. 280. The last and earnest Letter of reproof to Cardinal Albert, Archbishop of Mainz. 281. Reflexions on two Cases of nuptial Desertion. 282. Convocation of a free Christian Council.

## 1536.

283. Marriage Sermon on Ephesians, v. 22-33. 284. Instruction that the Spiritual and Temporal Authority should be carefully distinguished. 285. Reflexions on the Sins of the Elect. 286. Severe Reproof and Warning to the Cardinal Albert, Archbishop of Mainz.

## 1537.

287. Complaint of the Birds to Luther against his Servant, W. Siebergem (a humorous reproof of the Servant for his fondness for ensnaring and caging Birds). 288. Exposition of the Christian Faith, preached at Smalkalden. 289. Comforting Letter to a person who was fearful and sad in sickness. 290. Twenty-one Sermons. 291. Letter to Jezeln, a Jew of Rosheim.

## 1538.

292. On the Value of History. 293. Articles to be discussed at the Council of Mantua, and what we on our part can give or take. 294. Letter to a good Friend against the Sabbatarians. 295. Reflexions on the Expedition against the Turks. 296. Program against the Epigrams of Lemnius. 297. The three Confessions of the Christian Faith used harmoniously in the Churches. 298. The glorious Mandate of Christ, *Go ye into all the World, and preach the Gospel to every Creature.* 299. The expression of Paul, *Christ hath given Himself for our Sins*, wholesomely and comfortingly explained to all troubled and anxious Consciences. 300. Writing to Count Albert of Mansfeld.

## 1539.

301. On the Councils and Churches. 302. Against the Bishop of Magdeburg. 303. Letter to a Pastor respecting taking Arms against the Emperor, if he should attack the Protestants. 304. To the Council of Nuremberg, respecting general and special Absolution. 305. Writing respecting holy Water and the Pope's Agnus Dei. 306. Writing to Margrave Joachim II. of Brandenburg, respecting the Order of the Churches. 307. Letter to

the Provost of Berlin respecting certain Ceremonies in Divine Worship. 308. Answer to Landgrave Philip of Hesse respecting his Bigamy. 309. Report on Mr. Eisleben's false Doctrine and shameful Conduct, and Answer to his insignificant and groundless Complaints against Luther.

## 1540.

310. Exhortation to Pastors to preach against Usury. 311. Warning to a good Friend, not to withdraw himself from the Lord's Supper on account of a Lawsuit.

## 1541.

312. Against Hans Worst. 313. Exhortation to Prayer against the Turks. 314. Thoughts on Religious Peace. 315. Collation Speech on Transubstantiation. 316. Another Letter to a Person of high Rank respecting Transubstantiation.

## 1542.

317. Example of the Consecration of a right Christian Bishop, as it took place at Nuremberg in 1542. 318. Preface to the Latin and German burial Hymns. 319. German Translation of Richard's Refutation of the Koran. 320. Owl's Looking-glass and Alcoran of the barefaced Monks. 321. Exhortation to Peace, to the Elector John Frederick and Duke Maurice of Saxony. 322. Letter of Consolation to the Widow of Cellarius on her Husband's happy Death. 323. Letter to Prince George of Anhalt respecting the Elevation of the Host. 324. Comfort to pious Women who are unfortunate in Child-birth. 325. Lady Music (a poem). 326. On the Jews and their Lies. 327. Earnest Writing that a faithful Pastor should not be deposed because he had severely reproved Vice. 328. On the Genealogy of Christ. 329. On the last Words of David. 330. Reflexions on the Re-establishment of the papal Ceremonies. 331. Earnest Exhortation to the Students at Wittemberg to keep themselves from Prostitutes. 332. Comforting Letter to W. Heinzen, Organist at Halle. 333. Exposition of the Epistles and Gospels for a Year.

## 1544.

334. Short Confession respecting the holy Sacrament. 335. Comforting Letter to Jerome Baumgartner's Wife respecting her Husband's Imprisonment. 336. Comforting Letter to pious

Parents whose Son had died at the University. 337. Family Sermons.

## 1545.

338. On the Use of Picture Books in religious Instruction. 339. Letter to the Elector of Saxony and Landgrave of Hesse respecting the Imprisonment of the Duke of Brunswick. 340. Representation to the Elector of Saxony against secret matrimonial Engagements. 341. Against the Roman Papacy established by the Devil. 342. An Italian lying Letter, published at Rome, respecting Luther's Death, with Notes. 343. Sermon on the Kingdom of Christ, from the viiiith Psalm. 344. Luther's Dialogue with Dr. George Major.

## 1546.

345. A little Book for simple Pastors. 346. Letter to the Congregation at Pensa. 347-52. Several Sermons. 353. Sermon on Matt. xi. 25-30, (preached two days before Luther's death—the last he ever preached).

The preceding list is but a selection from the German writings of Luther, and the four folios of Latin works are entirely omitted. It is exceedingly interesting and instructive to the philosophic mind to run over the titles of these several publications in the order of their production, and with reference to the times and circumstances which called them forth. Some of the titles we have considerably abridged, but have endeavored to retain, so far as possible, their spirit and meaning. I hope the reader will not neglect to give this register at least one perusal, and I am sure it must suggest to his mind many reflexions respecting the causes and progress of the Reformation, and the agency of Luther in it, that had not before occurred to him. Every one of these works was read with avidity all over Europe as soon as it was out of the press.

Many important branches of our subject still remain untouched, especially *Luther's services as a hymnologist and composer of Church music.* This is a topic of such deep interest that we must draw still further on the patience of our readers, and make it the subject of a separate communication.

(To be continued.)

## ARTICLE II.

THE WORKS OF SAMUEL PARR, LL. D., WITH MEMOIRS OF HIS  
LIFE AND WRITINGS. LONDON.

By Rev. CALVIN E. PARK, Waterville, Me.

THE works of Dr. Samuel Parr, styled by his contemporaries the best schoolmaster that ever existed, and the profoundest scholar of his age, are in eight octavo volumes. The first contains his life by Dr. Edward Johnston; the second contains several sermons, among which is the famous Spital sermon with its wonderfully copious notes; the third and fourth are filled with various moral, political, and philological tracts; the fifth and sixth with sermons; and the seventh and eighth with selections from his correspondence. The object of this article is to sketch briefly the life of Dr. Parr, and to estimate the nature and value of the services which he rendered to literature and religion.

He was born at Harrow on the Hill, in the year 1747. His father, whose name he bore, was a surgeon of considerable eminence in his profession; distinguished for his strong common sense and the correctness of his taste in the Latin and English languages; the stern rectitude of his principles and the manly and dignified independence of his spirit; qualities which were inherited in no slight degree by his more eminent son. The same ardor in the pursuit of knowledge, by which Dr. Parr was so remarkably characterized in his riper years, manifested itself in his earliest childhood. When only four years of age, he was placed at the public school in Harrow, and at fourteen he was pronounced the head boy in the school. Among his school-fellows was that prodigy of scholarship, Sir William Jones. A very close friendship was formed between him and Parr. Their literary activity was not confined to the regular business of the school. The leisure, which the other boys spent in amusement, Parr and Jones devoted to serious intellectual labor. They acquired together the art of logic, disputing with each other, sometimes on subjects connected with natural science, and at others on points suggested by reading the French translation of Plato's Dialogues; they wrote tragedies founded on the stories

which caught their attention in the course of their studies ; and accustomed themselves to imitations of the more elegant English writers, for their own improvement in composition. The crudeness, which is apt to be seen in juvenile efforts of this sort, was doubtless perceptible in these exercises of Parr and Jones ; but the happy influence of them on their intellectual character cannot be disputed.

Ten years were spent in this school, and at the end of this period, he was taken home to be employed in the business of his father. The progress which he had made in his studies while at school, and the habits of application which he had formed, enabled him to devote what leisure he could command to literary pursuits with characteristic ardor and with eminent success. He earnestly applied himself to those philological inquiries, which afterwards engaged so much of his attention ; at the same time, indulging his fondness for metaphysical investigations, and improving himself by incessant practice in English composition.

Memorials of Parr's childhood do not seem to be very copious. He was always fond of whatever belonged to the church ; and long before he was of sufficient age to be ordained, he was used to equip himself with wig, beaver, and the other paraphernalia of the highest prelatical dignity. His grave and somewhat heavy features were well suited to the character he was so apt to assume. He would frequently read the church service to as many auditors as he could collect, and, when twelve years of age, he composed a sermon for a Christmas occasion, which was shown to the Vicar of Harrow, and pronounced by him to be so good and appropriate a sermon, that no clergyman could be ashamed to deliver it. He discovered such a decided predilection for the clerical profession, that his father at length determined to gratify it, although it would have been more in accordance with his views that his son should follow his own business. Amusing anecdotes are told of the premature seriousness of deportment which this designation led the youth to assume. He would sit on the churchyard gate at Harrow, looking most grave and serious, while his school-fellows were playing around ; and when asked, why he did not join in their sports, would answer in a very solemn tone, Do you not know, sir, that I am to be a parson ? This anxious culture of outward propriety of manners, and zeal and energy in the pursuit of learning, seem to have been all the qualifications which he thought necessary for the sacred office.

In the autumn of 1765 he was entered as a pensioner at Emanuel College, Cambridge. He seems to have been unusually qualified to be benefited by a residence at the University. He had habits of intense application to study. He was a genuine lover of learning; already had he made uncommon attainments in classical erudition; and with his superior native talents and the facilities for their successful culture, which were now placed within his reach, one might suppose that no degree of professional eminence was unattainable. To us, however, who are not used to see young men beginning the business of preparation for the ministry, without furnishing any proof of personal religion, it is painful to observe that Parr's character was apparently deficient in this indispensable feature. We do not learn, indeed, that he was addicted to any vicious practices; he seems to have been of an affectionate temper, and we have already adverted to the seriousness which he evinced in his childhood. But these traits of character do not appear to have been the offspring of spiritual religion; nor, so far as can be gathered from the memoirs, did either he or his biographers ever suspect that the *natural man*, unaltered except by the necessary influence of academical pursuits, was not perfectly qualified to occupy the station of an ambassador of God.

Parr left Cambridge after a residence of one year. The narrowness of his circumstances was one inducement to this removal. The whole of his worldly wealth was but three pounds and seventeen shillings. His father had died not long after his entrance into the University, and he had lost his mother three years before. He suspected that his straitened circumstances were imputable to the avarice of his step-mother, who had engrossed a disproportionate share of his father's property. There was also a suspicion, either well founded or imaginary, of ill-treatment from one of the tutors. This tutor was Dr. Richard Farmer, the celebrated commentator on Shakspeare. Parr complains that he was neglected by him on account of his poverty; but, according to the testimony of a common friend, Farmer neglected every body. He was a man of such singular indolence as to neglect the usual duties of his office, as tutor of a college, in sending the young men's accounts; and he is supposed to have burnt large sums of money, by putting into the fire unopened letters, containing remittances, accompanied by remonstrances and requiring answers. Parr embraced an offer from Dr. Sumner, the head-master of the school at Harrow, to

become one of his assistants. He occupied this post for five years. It was one in which he was well qualified to win applause. He had been always noted for the ascendancy, which he managed to gain over the minds of his companions, and for the didactic tone even of his earliest epistolary performances. His classical acquisitions were certainly adequate to the duties of the place. He was admitted into clerical orders in 1769, and immediately became curate of two parishes in the neighborhood of Harrow.

In the correspondence, we find a letter from David Roderick, who was also assistant at Harrow and quite intimate with Parr, which narrates many pleasant particulars of his character and habits. This was the period in which the controversy between the House of Commons and Mr. Wilkes was at its height. Parr espoused the popular cause with his usual strength of feeling. His friend once went with him to Brentford for the purpose of voting for Wilkes. It was with difficulty that he escaped the violence of the mob, notwithstanding his person was profusely decorated with election labels, with the motto "Wilkes and liberty." The populace could not believe that an adherent of Wilkes would wear so clerical an attire. On this occasion, as on some others, Parr sacrificed his personal interests to his political predilections.

The next year, Parr's happiness was interrupted by the death of his cousin, Francis Parr, Fellow of King's College, Cambridge. His character is exhibited in a very favorable light, by his friendship for this young man. Three letters are preserved, written to his cousin in view of the certainty of his speedy death. We shall transcribe a single paragraph, which evinces great affection for his relative, mingled with strong and sincere, if not entirely correct, religious feeling. "I know not how it came about; last Saturday, my dear friend, I went to London with a full resolution to open my bosom and to talk with you, both seriously and copiously, about the concerns of another life. Such a conversation would certainly have been not inconsistent with my clerical character. It would have been not improper from one, who has that earnest hearty affection for all your interests that I pay to yours. It would not have been offensive to a man of your sound understanding and firm faith. Yet my unwillingness to deject you got the better of all my determinations, and I kept the secrets fast within my bosom which have now found their way into this letter. In a word, my dear fellow-

Christian, let me beg of you to think earnestly of another state. If it is at hand, such thoughts are peculiarly seasonable ; if it be far distant, they yet become your present situation. These are moments in which I cannot stoop to trifle or dissemble with you. I should disdain to dissemble myself. I should be angry, if in such circumstances, you from benevolence should wish to deceive me. If you are unfit for another life, it is high time to rouse you from your lethargy ; if you are fit it is the only prospect that ought to employ your attention, because the only one that can deserve it. Oh, my friend, address your prayers to Almighty God, in the name of His Son ; beg His mercy to all the follies and irregularities of your youth.

*"Without sorrow you cannot repent. Without repentance you cannot be saved. With repentance you will have comfort here and joy hereafter.* I beg of you, again and again, approach in thought and prayer that God, before whom it may be our lot to appear very soon. But why should we be shocked ? Christianity unfolds futurity in every cheering, every delightful representation : it shows the mercy of our God, and the love of our Saviour. It shows that, through the Gospel covenant, our imperfect services shall be accepted, and our numberless sins forgiven. It shows us that you and I, with all our follies and with all our faults, may, I trust, humbly trust, shall meet in Heaven, never, never to be separated."

Dr. Sumner, in the autumn of 1771, was carried off by an apoplexy, and Parr was the person naturally pointed out as his successor. He accordingly applied for the vacant mastership, but fruitlessly. The Governors, partly on account of the youth of the applicant,—he was then but twenty-five,—but more perhaps on account of the superior qualifications of Dr. Benjamin Heath, then assistant at Eaton, elected the latter. Parr acknowledged afterwards that Heath was a very good scholar, and by his personal merit justified his election. Yet the disappointment greatly angered him. "It was impossible," he said, "to describe the anguish of his honest and ingenuous mind, when he was thus forcibly driven away from the place, where he had drawn his first breath, in which he had formed the most endearing connexions, and in which he had faithfully discharged the most important duties. His friends had flattered him with hopes of success. Bennet, afterwards Bishop of Cloyne, told him that the genius of the school waited for his resolves in silence ; that nature and reason looked upon him as the only person that could

prevent Harrow from sinking into the lowest contempt. He believed, also, it was Sumner's wish that he should be chosen. Every boy in the school signed a petition in his favor, but in vain. The reason of his ill success, as he afterwards asserted, was the vote he had given for Wilkes; and a suspicion that his independent spirit would lead him to govern the school according to his own notions. The consequence was, that Parr indignantly resigned his place as assistant. The scholars shared in his feelings, and more than forty of them abruptly quitted Harrow; and when their former assistant established a rival school at Stanmore, they joined it.

This disappointment is considered by Parr's biographers as the crisis of his fate. He was deprived of a situation which would have yielded him a revenue adequate to all his reasonable wishes, and wherein his extraordinary stock of erudition and his ardent thirst for learning might have been fully displayed. He was placed in a situation in which he long felt the miseries of dependence, and in which his vast accumulations of knowledge were rendered comparatively useless. Yet he found in these disheartening circumstances friends who cheered him with their sympathy, and discharged offices of more substantial advantage. From the relatives of the late principal he received large accommodations of money. From the heavy expenses he was obliged to incur in the establishment of his school, this aid was peculiarly welcome.

At Stanmore the number of his pupils was not large, never exceeding sixty. Among them, however, were several names which subsequently became eminent in the state or in literature. Yet his situation was by no means enviable. The school at Harrow was too near, and the influence in its favor too mighty to allow the rival establishment to meet with an extensive patronage. He fell into a quarrel with the rector of the parish, who, when Parr came to Stanmore, was one of the warmest of his friends. The quarrel grew from a slight coolness, produced by an assumption of superiority on the part of the rector, which such a spirit as Parr's was not at all inclined to brook, into a total interruption of intercourse. The rector was a man of great abilities, and had been brought up at Litchfield with Johnson and Garrick; and being possessed of wit, which he was wont to display with little regard to the feelings of his friends, the rupture between him and Parr ceases to be wonderful. Irritated by this circumstance, and by the disappointment he had met

with at Harrow, and provoked and chagrined by the decline of his school, in the spring of 1777 he forsook Stanmore and took up his residence at Colchester.

Every one who has heard of Parr has heard of his inveterate habit of smoking. The best likeness we have seen of him represents him seated in his arm chair, enveloped in his study gown, with pipe in hand. Robert Hall, who, when settled at Cambridge, was somewhat in his society, according to his own statement, was obliged to take up smoking in self-defence. "To smoke, talk Greek, and talk politics," were his three favorite amusements. The most valuable gift which Mr. Fox thought he could offer him was a superb Turkish tobacco-pipe, six feet in length. He began the practice of smoking at Harrow, but the contentment of his mind and his constant employment gave him little time for such an indulgence. What time he could then spare from his school was devoted to reading and the preparation of sermons; but, at Stanmore, he abandoned himself to the practice without restraint. His favorite beverage was port wine and water; and one of his friends testifies—a testimony which we should think ought to have been entirely superfluous, considering the clerical character of Parr—that he never knew him to transgress the bounds of the strictest sobriety. He brought upon himself the ridicule of the people of Stanmore by frequently riding through the streets in high prelatical pomp, on a black saddle, bearing in his hand a long cane which was meant to resemble a bishop's crosier: at other times he would inconsistently suffer himself to walk through the same streets in a dirty striped morning gown.

Parr, as we have said, went to reside at Colchester, in the spring of 1777. He was received with open arms by his friend Dr. Nathanael Forster, and "that exquisite scholar, the Rev. Thomas Twining." Here he resumed his intention of taking priest's orders, in which he had been frustrated at the time he left Harrow, in consequence of an unfounded report of his having stimulated the scholars to rebel at the election of Dr. Heath. He was now ordained by Bishop Lowth. His curacies were the two churches in Colchester where his friend Dr. Forster was the incumbent. Though his efforts to establish a school were not very successful, his residence in Colchester was in many respects advantageous to him. It established his reputation as an instructor, and above all confirmed the friendship of the two eminent men whose names have just been mentioned. The latter

of these is well known to scholars by his translation of Aristotle's Poetics. The conversation of Dr. Forster was peculiarly agreeable to Parr, from the depth and clearness of his views on metaphysical subjects; nor was their friendship ever disturbed by their opposite political sentiments; Parr being as hostile to Lord North's administration and as friendly to the Americans, as Forster was inimical to the Americans and in favor of Lord North; though Forster was a fearless speaker of his thoughts, and Parr certainly was not less so.

Parr always reverted to his residence at Colchester, as to a time when he enjoyed much, in spite of many circumstances that conspired to embitter his happiness. Here he had a considerable addition to the number of his scholars; and being at a greater distance from Harrow, his spirits were revived and refreshed by better hopes and fairer prospects. His friends had the highest ideas of his learning and taste and manner of teaching. "I have never met with such a man yet," says one of the most acute and accomplished of these, "in the shape of a schoolmaster. How he is in point of discipline and severity, I cannot pretend to say: I have been told that he flogs too much; but I doubt those from whom I heard it think any use of punishment too much. In conversing with him, I have heard him disapprove of beating children. I have heard him say, that words were his worst rod: that what all his boys most dreaded was his talking to them and shaming them before the whole school." His society was highly prized. "I heartily wished for you last Friday," says Mr. Twining, "when Mr. Parr and the Forsters were here. The day passed most pleasantly. The party was well assorted, and Mr. Parr in high *εὐθύμια*, as he himself said, and full of that social and convivial spirit, that is so charming a thing to me, when it animates a cultivated and well-stocked mind, and sets sense, fancy, and knowledge a flowing; and so melancholy a thing when it produces nothing but barren jollity and laughter without humor; when it makes no other difference in a man, but that his talk is louder and his face redder than at another time."

As usual, it was not long ere Parr was in a quarrel. His foes were the Trustees of the school, and the subject of dispute was a lease. He drew up a pamphlet which he was dissuaded from publishing. The advice that Sir William Jones gave him, on this occasion, deserves to be quoted. "Oh, my friend! remember and emulate Newton, who once entered into a philosophical

contest, but soon found, he said, that he was parting with his peace of mind for a shadow. Surely the elegance of ancient Poetry and Rhetoric, the contemplation of God's works and God's ways, the respectable task of making boys learned and men virtuous, may employ the forty or fifty years you have to live, more serenely, more laudably, and more profitably than the vain warfare of controversial divinity, or the dark mines and countermines of uncertain metaphysics." This pamphlet was marked, to an amusing degree, by all the peculiarities of its author's style ; its frequent antitheses and copious illustrations and splendid imagery ; all in most ludicrous contrast with the frivolous nature of the occasion. Don Quixotte himself could not have declaimed more magniloquently. " When I first entered the lists against these hardy combatants, I determined to throw away the scabbard ; and firmly as I confided in the strength of my cause, I imagined that my antagonists would not yield me the *dulcem sine pulvere palmam*, that they would dispute every inch of ground with me, and at least save their credit by retreating with their weapons in their hands. But my expectations were disappointed ; instead of the fury of a contest we had not even the mockery of a skirmish ; not one threat was denounced, not one argument was produced, nor was any allusion dropped upon the offensive topic of the agreement."

The head-mastership of the Norwich school became vacant in 1778. Parr had many agreeable connexions in Norfolk. Robert, the brother of Francis Parr, resided in Norwich, to whom he was fervently attached. He was induced to become a candidate for the vacant situation. He succeeded in being elected, and removed thither in January 1779. He was indebted for his success to the recommendation of Dr. Johnson. The corporation of Norwich applied to Johnson to point out to them a proper master, and he suggested to them the name of Parr.

The next year he appeared, for the first time, before the public as an author. He had intended, it seems, when at Colchester, to publish a sermon which he preached there ; but he had never done it. Jones begs him to send the manuscript to him. " You may rely," he says, " on my sincerity, as well as on my attention ; but in the name of the muses, let it be written in a legible hand ; for to speak plainly with you, your English and Latin characters are so ill-formed, that I have infinite difficulty to read your letters, and have abandoned all hopes of deciphering many of them. I will speak with the sincerity which you like ; either

you can write better or you cannot ; if you can, you ought to write better ; if not, you ought to learn." This was not the only rebuke nor the severest, which Parr received, for his abominable penmanship. " My dear and respected friend," said Lord Tamworth to him, " pray do make some one write for you ; for I really cannot decipher your Greek characters. You told me that you was only, only once flogged for bad writing ; how often have you not deserved it ? " " I know you are a great casuist," Archdale livelily said to him. " Do tell me which is the worse of the two, he who never writes, or he who writes so as never to be read." Jeremy Bentham besought him to employ some hand other than his own, if he wished whatever he wrote to be read by any body ; otherwise, what he wrote might as well be in the language of the moon, as in what seemed to him to be English. Mr. Bentham's advice would have been appropriate to his own works, but for a greater reason. " If the handwriting on the wall was like yours," Twining said to him, " Daniel was a clever fellow. I thought myself a tolerable adept in the art of *scotographia*, but I give you the wall." The rebukes and the jeasts of his friends were, however, useless. His chirography remained a perfect scrawl.

We have been drawn a great way aside. We resume our narration. Parr was invited by the mayor of Norwich, in his official capacity, to publish two sermons which he had pronounced in that city. The first of these sermons is from Paul's words : But when the fulness of time was come, God sent forth his Son. We are tempted to give our readers a somewhat lengthened account of this sermon, as one of the best of Parr's pulpit performances.

In the introduction it is observed, that in an age in which the authoity of prescription is openly disavowed, and inquiry carried on with a spirit of incredulity which may be called rigorous to excess, it is to be expected, that Christianity should attract the attention of speculative men. But as the abilities displayed in the defence of the Gospel, bear no dishonorable proportion to the exertions of those by whom it has been secretly undermined or openly assaulted, the most pious ought not to be alarmed. Among the topics which are now very commonly discussed, may be placed the late appearance of Christianity, its partial propagation, and its imperfect efficacy.

The validity of the principles, by which objections drawn from these topics, may be shown to be unphilosophical as well

as irreligious, is first established ; and the separate objections are then examined.

In the physical and moral constitution of the world, the schemes of God are often found to be progressive in their execution ; and the scheme of redemption, in particular, extends back to the first design of God in creating this system, and stretches forward to the eternal interests of many beings who are ordained to act in it. But in so wide and complicated a scheme, some parts may be expected totally to escape our observation, and others to be imperfectly understood. We cannot catch more than a faint and scanty glimmering of His purposes. As it is impossible, therefore, that the scheme of redemption should, in general, be otherwise than imperfectly comprehended, the obscurity attendant upon particular parts of it, should not lead to universal skepticism. It should be borne in mind, too, that Christianity is, in general, supported by evidences on the force of which our reason may decide. And if the difficulties which attend Christianity impede our assent, the evidences of its divinity should, to an equal degree, engage our belief. The conviction, which is built on dispassionate inquiry into what can be known, ought not to be shaken by imaginary and unknown possibilities. The objections made against Christianity are often rested upon arguments a priori, which are equally delusive in matters of religion and of science. Upon religious subjects, also, the opinions of men take a coloring from their wishes, from their prepossessions, and from peculiar casts of temper. Their opinions, consequently, are very likely to be erroneous.

The first objection particularly alluded to, is that drawn from the late publication of Christianity. The propriety, however, of supposing in the divine mind the distinctions of past, present, and future, may be safely denied. The objection is equally applicable to the creation and the redemption of men. [This remark, however, cannot be allowed to be correct ; for, through the delay of our creation, no positive suffering was occasioned ; through the delay of our redemption, great suffering was occasioned.] It is said that Christianity is a perfect scheme, and essentially necessary to the salvation of mankind ; but how can that scheme be called necessary, which is not made known to those to whom it is asserted to be necessary, before their probationary state is brought to a period, or perfect, which does not include the spiritual interests of all the world ? But necessity

and perfection are relative terms, to be understood with restrictions, when applied to the divine government ; and it may safely be affirmed that, whatever God has done, it was necessary should be done, and whatever is left undone, is omitted because it is not necessary ; and the schemes, which may seem imperfectly adapted to gain some ends, are perfectly fitted to gain *the end*, which Jehovah proposed. It is impossible, moreover, to answer the question, why moral evil exists. But, if the attributes of God can be vindicated in the permission of the existence of sin, they may be vindicated in its gradual instead of its instantaneous removal. So long a time, too, may elapse between the advent of Christ and the end of the world, that the time which elapsed before the former event, in comparison with what shall elapse after it, may be reduced to a very trifling amount. Mankind may advance so far in knowledge and holiness, in consequence of the publication of Christianity, that, instead of wondering its publication was delayed so long, they will be disposed to thank God that he interposed so early, and afforded to mankind a sufficient length of time for such signal improvement.

A second objection is that drawn from the partial propagation of the Gospel. But those, to whom the scheme of Christianity has been disclosed, can be certain that they have received such a disclosure, from the intrinsic force of the evidences by which it is attended. They ought not, then, to reject a gift which has been conferred on them, because it has been withheld from others. We ought not to turn scornfully from our own abundance to the wants of others, and make these wants an excuse for our own ingratitude. And it may be no more inconsistent with the attributes of God, to bestow the light of Christianity on some and not on others, than to distribute the gift of reason only to a portion, and to favor some men with stronger faculties than others. [This is true, unless the distinction made among men occasion positive suffering ; in which case it does not seem to be a conclusive answer to the objection.] Again, if limitation in point of time be not a solid objection to the rectitude of the divine government in this matter, limitation in point of space may be an objection no more weighty. There might have existed several beings, possessed of exactly the same nature as Jesus Christ, and so the universal diffusion of Christianity might at once have been effected. But such a procedure would not have been proper, on account of the state of the world when Christianity was proclaimed. The Gospel was progressively

communicated to those to whom it was first made known; so to the world at large, and with equal propriety may there be a progressive communication. Besides, the propagation of the Gospel is intrusted to human agency; and it has become a part of our trial, whether we will faithfully discharge this trust.

A third objection is that derived from the imperfect efficacy of the Gospel. This objection may be met on analogical grounds. No remedy for physical disorders has as complete an efficacy, as its intrinsic qualities might give ground for predicting. The edge of the objection may be blunted by recurring to the actual efficacy of the Gospel. But to this topic, the irreligion and luxury of the age may be opposed. But the salutary influence of the Gospel is seen in the increased eagerness of infidels. The vigorous and skilful preparations of the enemies of Christianity, are imputable to well-founded apprehensions of its growing strength. As good springs from evil, so every accession of good tends, incidentally, to the production of evil, and of evil, too, which, in malignity, bears some proportion to that good by which itself is meant to be counteracted.

The subject of the second sermon is the education of the poor. The author aims to exhibit the importance of education, and refute the objections which are sometimes urged against the general diffusion of knowledge. A most generous philanthropy breathes throughout this discourse. "It is urged," he says, "that where numbers are associated together, the lewd inflame the lewd, and the audacious harden the audacious. But this objection extends equally to all seminaries. Will it be pleaded that there is a delicacy of sentiment peculiar to noble minds? Virtue is not, like fortune and title, hereditary. The love of virtue sometimes finds a place in the bosom of the poor, and it may be encouraged in those schools where the poor are from their infancy habituated to the desire of praise and the dread of infamy. But if there be something coarse in the texture of their minds, something illiberal in their manners, something violent in their tempers, will these evils be eradicated by the mere want of company? May not their excess, at least, be corrected in scenes where a decent behavior meets with applause, and an irregular behavior with punishment? Schools, therefore, in which many of these children are permitted to meet together, are not always hurtful to their morals upon that account, and frequently upon the same account are useful to their understanding. The powers of the human mind do not often expand in

solitude. Emulation is not entirely a stranger to the breasts of these little ones. It may be awakened even amidst the humbler studies, which they are directed to pursue ; it is to be kept alive only by repeated comparison, and the effects of it are both salutary and permanent."

Parr's literary friends were loud in their applause of these sermons. Sir William Jones said, that he read them with no less eagerness than pleasure. You call for censure, he adds ; I have none to send you, nor have I time to give them their due praises. Forster cavilled somewhat at the first of the sermons, but yet he affirmed, that they were beyond all praises of his.

Parr published, in 1785, another discourse on education, and on the plans pursued in charity schools, which was meant as a sequel to the last of the sermons just alluded to. This is

The Education Sermon *rather long,*  
By Dr. Parr, all in the *vulgar tongue* ;

which had to bear the lash of Matthias's quiet but severe criticism in the *Pursuits of Literature*. Its length might well be found fault with, for it occupies in the Works no less than one hundred and seventy-four pages. The Rev. Mr. Kettledrumble, we are told, could preach "two mortal hours at a breathing," but Parr fairly outstrips him. He says in the preface, and we believe him, that for the unusual length of the sermon he is unable to make any satisfactory apology. He also says, that he had studiously preserved a plain style, and professed only to deliver such common and useful observations, as are adapted to the apprehension of common and well-disposed readers. Yet no one of his sermons is so deficient in simplicity and clearness of thought, no one is embellished with such a profusion of imagery, the diction of no one is more turgid and further removed from the purity and plainness of the Saxon idiom. We selected a page at random, and were at the pains to count the words. There were, in all, two hundred and seventy-two. Of these, one hundred and twenty-two are nouns, adjectives, verbs, or participles ; fifty-one of which are of Latin origin ; the rest are either French or Saxon. An analysis of few pages, except those of Johnson, would show a similar result. Never, surely, did an attempt to be simple and intelligible, more completely fail.

In the interval between these publications, Parr had given to the world, *A Discourse of the Late Fast*, by Phileleutherus Norfolciensis, printed in 1781. This discourse was published, as

will be seen from the date, after the fate of our revolutionary struggle had been decided ; and its topics were meant to be adapted to the state of public feeling which had been occasioned by that event. Its general subject is the liableness of nations to punishment, on account of the vices which prevail among them. It is an honest and fearless exposition of the author's views. We know of little finer declamation, united with just sentiment, than the following passage :

" War, though it be undertaken according to popular opinions and popular language, with justice, and prosecuted with success, is a most awful calamity : it generally finds men sinners, or makes them such ; for so great is usually the disproportion between the provocation and the punishment, between the evil inflicted or suffered and the good obtained or even proposed, that a serious man cannot reconcile the very frequent rise, and the very long continuance, of hostilities, to reason or to humanity. Upon whom, too, do the severities of war fall most heavily ? In many cases, they by whom contention is begun or cherished feel their influence extended, their dependants multiplied, and their wealth, in the regular and fair course of public business, increased. While fields are laid waste and cities depopulated, the persons by whose command such miseries take place, are often wantoning in luxurious excess, or slumbering in a state of unfeeling and lazy repose. The peaceful citizen is in the mean time crushed under the weight of exactions, to which, for conscience' sake, he submits ; the industrious merchant is impoverished by unforeseen and undeserved losses ; and the artless husbandman is dragged away from those who are nearest and dearest to him, in order to shed the blood of beings as innocent and as wretched as himself, to repel injuries which he never felt or suspected, and to procure advantages which he may never understand or enjoy. Such are the aggravating circumstances belonging to war, when it is carried on against a foreign enemy, and though it be disarmed of many terrors which accompanied it in less enlightened and less civilized ages. But our situation is attended with yet heavier distresses. We are engaged in a contest where the most sacred ties are torn asunder, the fondest affections alienated, the most useful attachments disregarded ; where every warrior points his sword against the bosom of a fellow-citizen, and every conqueror may stain it with the blood of a friend."

Unfortunate for Parr's peace of mind and for his success in life, was the ardor with which he rushed into the political contests of the day. Porson said of him that he would have been a great man, but for three things—his trade, his wife, and his *politics*. He had, already, as we have seen, lost an honorable and lucrative post by voting for Mr. Wilkes ; and so cordial is

our detestation of the character of this demagogue, though we are no strangers to the benefits which his conduct was the indirect means of producing, that we cannot feel much pity in view of misfortunes which were occasioned by pertinacious attachment to his cause. Parr's political zeal equally misbecame his literary vocation and his clerical character. A clergyman parading the streets on days of election, in his official dress, decorated with election labels, and having to skulk over fences and through by-paths to escape the fury of a mob, is a spectacle, we are glad to say, which, in this country, we must wait to see.

When he went to Norwich, he became curate to one of the clergymen of the city, but he found the duties of the station too arduous, and resigned it in a few months. In the spring of 1780, he was presented, by the mother of one of his pupils, to the living of Asterby; and when he gave this up in 1783, he was presented, by the same lady, to the perpetual curacy of Hatton, in Warwickshire. His clear income from Asterby was but £36. What his income from the school was, we are nowhere informed; but it could not have been great. The curacy of Hatton was worth £80 per annum. We take a few sentences from a letter written in 1782, to illustrate the struggles he had to make with poverty. "You desire my confidence, and I therefore add, that the little progress I have made in worldly matters, the heavy losses I have sustained by the war, the inconsiderable advantages I have gained by a laborious and irksome employment, and the mortifying discouragements I have met in my clerical profession, have all combined to depress my spirits and undermine my constitution. I was content to give up ecclesiastical preferment, while I had a prospect of making some comfortable provision for my old age, in my business as a teacher; but the best of my years have now elapsed, and I am, through a most vexatious and trying series of events, not a shilling richer than when I went to Stanmore; I have, this very week, closed an account on which I stood indebted near £2000, which I was obliged to borrow when I went into active life. My house at Stanmore, I sold, literally, for less money than I expended on the repairs only. To this loss of more than a thousand pounds, I am to add near £700 which I may lose entirely, and must lose in a great measure, by the reduction of St. Vincent and St. Kitts. My patience, so far as religion prescribes it, is sufficient to support me under this severity of moral trial; but the hour is past, in which I might hope to secure a

comfortable independency, and I am now laboring under the gloomy prospect of toiling with exhausted strength, for a scanty subsistence to myself and my family." Yet his friends were not sparing in their efforts to assist him; but they were not always successful. Thurlow, who was then Chancellor, was asked to give him a prebend. His surly reply was, No; accompanied, of course, with an oath. The issue of an application to Bishop Lowth was more favorable. A prebend in St. Paul's was granted. This appointment was the instrument of present independence and of future affluence. The value of it was about £250, and the only duty was a sermon every year.

It was in 1786, that Dr. Parr,—for he had been created Doctor of Laws by the University of Cambridge five years previously—went to reside at Hatton. The motive, which prompted to this change, is not known. Hatton is an obscure hamlet in Warwickshire. The church, which is buried under a clump of trees, will hold only twenty families. According to his description, the people of Hatton were poor, ignorant, dissolute, insolent, and ungrateful, beyond all example, and lamentably defective in ideas of decorum and civilization; yet though not learned, he says they could distinguish between sense and nonsense. His authority among them was without limits. He employed it for the benevolent purpose of healing their differences, and advising them in all their little concerns. Before he left Norwich, he had made an effort to be placed in the commission of the peace, that he might be more extensively useful: but the effort failed. Some years after, when a new commission was issued, he wrote to the Lord Lieutenant of the county, complaining, with considerable warmth, that his name was left out. We will quote his lordship's significant reply:

"SIR—

"I apprehend that the proper answer to the letter which I have just received from you, is, that I do not consider myself as responsible to any individual for the motives of my conduct when acting in the discharge of my public duty."

He was in the habit, instead of preaching his own sermons, of taking into the pulpit a volume of Barrow or Tillotson. He would give some account of the author, and translate the hard words into more intelligible English. We hope he did not fail to do this when he delivered his own compositions; for none

ever stood in greater need of such a service. He exerted himself with commendable zeal for the benefit of his parishioners, though he seems to have mistaken the means which were best adapted to that end. Among other measures which he thought would be extremely useful in bringing his parishioners to the place of worship, and impressing them with ideas of decorum and civilization, was the decoration of his church. He expended large sums for this object. One year, with the aid of his pupils, he gave a chandelier; and he afterwards had a handsome painted window put up over the communion place, to defray the expense of which, he levied contributions on his friends. There is a sermon in the Works, on the occasion of the opening of this window. This reminds us of the religious solemnities observed by the Romans, on the occasion of driving a nail in the capitol.

The dwelling-house at Hatton was not large. It contained no room of sufficient size for his library, and he was obliged, at his own expense, to erect one for this purpose. His library, as we shall afterwards see, was quite famous in bibliothecal history. Though his income was now somewhat enlarged, he still had to take measures for its increase;—he received a small number of pupils, at an advanced price.

One of the most remarkable of Dr. Parr's productions, was his Latin preface to a work entitled, *De tribus luminibus Romanorum*, by William Bellenden, a Scotch writer, who flourished about the beginning of the seventeenth century. He resided many years at Paris, and is said to have been a professor in the university. Among other literary labors, he composed three Latin treatises, which were received with the unanimous approbation of the learned. These he designed afterwards to have published as one work. But his hopes were blasted by a very singular accident. The vessel in which the whole impression had been placed, to be carried to England, was overtaken by a storm and lost, with every thing on board. A few copies of the great work, and some of the separate treatises, seem to have been preserved. He now conceived the idea of the work *De tribus luminibus Romanorum*, in which he designed to have examined the characters of Cicero, Seneca, and the elder Pliny. He lived only to finish the character of the first. To this work Conyers Middleton is said to have been greatly indebted in the composition of his life of Cicero. Henry Homer, one of Parr's literary friends, and a diligent searcher after curious books, found

the three treatises in the British Museum; and the plan was at once formed to publish them. Parr accordingly drew up a Latin preface, dedicating it to the three most distinguished Englishmen of his time—*tria Lumina Anglorum*—Lord North, Mr. Fox, and Mr. Burke. It was published in 1787. It embodied a most violent attack on the ministry; but this intemperate assault on Pitt, and equally intemperate adulâtion of Fox and Burke, while they exasperated the former, failed to secure him the preferments which he anticipated from the latter. But the literary execution of the preface attracted great applause. Burke assured the author, that it gave him no small pride and pleasure, to find his name perpetuated in the works of a man of the most extensive and classical erudition, and who would have held that rank when there were more who distinguished themselves in that line, than we enjoy at present in any part of Europe. Its Latinity was pronounced to be unrivalled. The Doctor's own sense of the merit of its execution is ludicrously exhibited in the following sentences addressed to his coadjutor. “What shall I say myself, of myself? It is now ten o'clock at night, and *I am smoking a quiet pipe*, after a most vehement, and, *I think*, a most splendid effort of composition—an effort, it was indeed a mighty and a glorious effort.” This may be palliated on the ground of its being written to a very intimate friend; but after all deductions, Parr's vanity was most childish and absurd.

Dr. Parr's literary transactions with Rev. Joseph White will, we think, interest our readers. White was Arabic Professor in the University of Oxford. In the year 1784, he was appointed to deliver the Bampton Lectures before the University. These Lectures have been republished in this country, and have been admired, we believe, as a masterly comparison of the religion of Christ with that of Mahomet. In their composition he was assisted to a great extent by Dr. Parr. He seems to have been a man of considerable learning, but his general character was a very bad one. “I believe him to be,” says a correspondent of Parr's, “as little restrained, either by feeling or principle, as any man I have known; he looks with equal indifference upon the pains and losses of other men. He is not even influenced by the fears of resentment or hostility. His levity and giddiness, on the one hand, and on the other, the callousness, occasioned by long habits of parasitical and fraudulent deception, have secured him from all those ordinary means which regulate the mind

and manners of common men." He lived in constant poverty and insolvency; three times his debts had been paid by his friends; once to the amount of £1200. Parr had been warned by his Oxford friends to beware of him; but it was some time before he credited their representations. He had been much in the habit of asking literary favors, which Parr was always disposed to grant. We think our readers will be as much amused as we have been, by the frequency and the coolness with which these favors are solicited. They will see an apt illustration of the way in which "one man may labor, and another enter into his labors." "Mr. White presents his most respectful compliments to Dr. Parr, and requests the favor of two or three lines from him on the subject of a proper introduction to the characters of Christ and Mahomet." "If you would be so good as to throw in a brilliant passage or two, particularly a few sentences at the end, it would be esteemed a very great obligation." He begs for a sermon for Whitehall. "It may be on any subject," he says; "I wish it were tolerably legible." It appears, too, that White used to forget to return, and sometimes lost, the sermons which were lent him by Parr. This piece of literary history is not, we believe, without its parallel in our own country. The Doctor rendered his assistance with much freedom and good nature, and according to the preacher's own confessions, it was very valuable; for one of White's friends told him, after the publication of the lectures, that he heard from all parts accounts of their masterly elegance. "That elegance," White adds in a letter to Dr. Parr, "is wholly yours." He was overwhelmed with the flattering approbation of the University on account of his lectures; and though he acknowledged to Parr that this chiefly belonged to him, he does not appear to have made a similar acknowledgment to the public; but to have feasted on the admiration he received, with as much satisfaction as if the works which gained it were the offspring of his own mind. But while White was so deeply indebted to Dr. Parr for aid in his lectures, his obligations to another were if any thing more extensive. White wishes this friend, Mr. Badcock, to undertake lectures first, seventh, and eighth. In another letter he devolves on him the whole business, merely suggesting the importance of having the style of the lectures correspond as nearly as possible to his own printed sermons. All this time he was continually asking for help from Dr. Parr, and concealing from him the fact that he was deriving assistance from any other source; leaving to

Dr. Parr the comparatively dishonorable task of amending some passages, and adding a few others. This disingenuousness roused the Doctor's indignation. He declared he was the only man who possessed the confidence of White, and was acquainted with the secret of the composition. When the secret of White's connection with Mr. Badcock transpired, innumerable reflections were cast upon Dr. Parr. His claims to a share in the composition of the lectures were depreciated as of no importance, although, on a minute investigation, it was found that more than a fifth part had been written by him. Angry at the bad treatment which he had received, he intended to revenge himself on his calumniators by an "Expostulation with Dr. White." Mr. Burke's advice prevented the execution of this design. But White's dark manœuvres were at length fully developed, and the laurel placed upon those brows which deserved to wear it.

It must be confessed that warfare and contention were favorite employments with Dr. Parr. He could hardly say, with reference to his controversial writings, what John Owen says of his motives in undertaking a polemical treatise. "I will assure thee, it is not the least thirst in my affections to be drinking of the waters of Meribah, nor the least desire to have a share in Ishmael's portion, to have my hand against others and theirs against me, that puts me upon this task. I never like myself worse than when faced with a vizard of disputing in controversies. What invitation there can be, in itself, for any one to lodge, much less abide, in this quarrelsome and scrambling territory, where, as Tertullian says of Pontus, no wind blows but what is sharp and keen, I know not." Parr directed his next attack against Bishop Hurd, the friend of Warburton. Dr. Jortin had published "Six Dissertations on different subjects," in the last of which he had criticised with severity some of Warburton's favorite opinions; particularly his interpretation of the Sixth Book of the *Æneid*, as a description of the initiation into the Eleusinian mysteries. Bishop Hurd, in 1755, wrote a Tract called *The Delicacy of Friendship*, a seventh Dissertation, addressed to the Author of the sixth. This was an ironical attack on Dr. Jortin, for the freedom with which he had presumed to assault Warburton. This Tract had almost gone out of print, but Dr. Parr had preserved a copy in manuscript, and seems, for several years, to have meditated the use which he afterwards made of it. An occasion for such a use was furnished in 1788,

when a new edition of Warburton's works was published, under the care of Hurd. Certain pieces, which had been written by Warburton in his youth, were omitted, being considered as unworthy of his matured talents. These pieces were his Translations in prose and verse from Roman Poets, Orators, and Historians, and his Critical and Philosophical Inquiry into the causes of prodigies and miracles. This omission was immediately seized by Dr. Parr, as an occasion for an attack on Bishop Hurd, and on the memory of Warburton. Early in 1789, he published "Tracts by Warburton and a Warburtonian, not admitted into the collection of their respective works." The Warburtonian was Bishop Hurd, and the Tracts, ascribed to him, were the Delicacy of Friendship, and a letter to Leland, Professor of Rhetoric in Trinity College, Dublin; who had refuted one of Warburton's paradoxes,—mentioned in The Doctrine of Grace,—that the barbarism of the style of the New Testament was one certain mark of a divine original. The whole work was preceded by a Dedication and a Preface by the Editor. For such a furious attack on Hurd, as is contained in the Dedication, there does not appear to have been a sufficient provocation. But warfare, as we have observed, was congenial with Parr's temper. Furthermore, he enjoyed the patronage of Bishop Lowth, and the controversy between him and Warburton is well remembered. When Parr removed to Hatton, Hurd becomes his Diocesan. The latter could not have been expected to treat the friend of Lowth with much respect. He manifested towards him, when on a visit at his seat at Hartlebury, the utmost coldness. It had been reported, too, that he spoke slightly of some of Parr's performances. By these affronts the anger of Parr was aroused, and he gave utterance to it, in these Tracts, against both master and disciple.

Neither the moral nor the literary character of Warburton is worthy of any applause. Without any genuine love of truth, he had no aim, throughout his career as a writer, but to maintain paradoxes; the more startling and insusceptible of just defence, the better suited to his purposes; or to direct the most brutal and contemptuous assaults against those who ventured to dispute his opinions. And Hurd seems to have been perfectly contented to serve as his armor-bearer; to utter indiscriminate flattery to his patron, and to decry and insult his antagonists. The fate of those hardy combatants, who presumed to assail the whimsical paradoxes and errors of Warburton and his disciples,

brings to our mind what Dr. South has said of the dangers of administering reproofs to passionate and self-willed dispositions. "We may observe of brambles, that they always grow crooked; for by reason of their briers and thorns, no hand can touch them, so as to bend them straight. And so it is of some dispositions. They grow into a settled, confirmed obliquity, because their sharpness makes them unfit to be handled by discipline or admonition. They are a terror and a grievance to those that they converse with; and to attempt to advise them out of their irregularities, is as if a chirurgeon should offer to dress a wounded lion; he must look to perish in the address, and to be torn in pieces for his pains." Violent and sometimes abusive as Parr's language is, we believe that he rendered no more than fair retributive justice. Yet, in saying this, we would not be understood to approve the temper in which he executed his task. "The fervent reprehender" of the wrong is not always a consistent practicer of the right. We cannot better express our own views than in the words of Mr. D'Israeli. "The Dedication by Parr stands unrivalled for comparative criticism. It is the eruption of a volcano. It sparkles, it blazes and scatters light and destruction. How deeply ought we to regret, that this Nazarite suffered his strength to be shorn by the Delilahs of a spurious fame. Never did this man, with his gifted strength, grasp the pillars of a temple to shake its atoms over Philistines, but pleased the childlike simplicity of his mind; by pulling down houses over the heads of their unlucky inhabitants." Yet, that Parr, like Johnson, was not always consistent with himself, and honored in his heart those whom he sometimes affected to despise, is clear from the subjoined excerpt from a conversation between George the Fourth, when Prince of Wales, and himself. The conversation was on the comparative merit of Markham and Hurd, who had been the prince's tutors. "Have you not changed your opinion of Dr. Hurd?" exclaimed the prince. I have read a work (alluding to the Tracts) in which you attacked him fiercely. Sir, replied Parr, I attacked Hurd on one point, which I thought important to letters, and I summoned the whole force of my mind, and took every possible pains to do it well; for I consider Hurd to be a great man. He is celebrated as such by foreign critics, who appreciate justly his wonderful acuteness, sagacity, and dexterity, in doing what he has done with so small a stock of learning."

The applause which the Tracts elicited was loud and enthu-

siastic; and so far as it referred to their character as compositions, it was not unmerited. In spite of a degree of mannerism, from which our author's writing was never free, they are distinguished by a masterly elegance of style, and a more than usual share of clearness and force. Its elegance is, indeed, sometimes hurt by an exuberance of metaphor, and its force occasionally degenerates into harsh and virulent invective. But there are few of the metaphors which are not beautiful and illustrative, and little of the invective which was not deserved. We think we shall delight our readers if we set down a few passages. In the dedication, he thus addresses Hurd: "Of the reputation, my lord, which you have so long and, they say, so deservedly enjoyed, a large part is to be ascribed to your insatiable love of novelty; and yet a larger, it may be, to your matchless dexterity in the defence of theories, at once fantastic and methodical—fantastic I mean without the brilliancy of invention, and methodical without the solidity of logic. It is not quite forgotten by men of letters, that in the earlier stages of your literary and ecclesiastical career, you did not disdain to wield your pen, whether offensively or defensively, in favor of Bishop Warburton. While bigots were pouring forth their complaints, and witlings were levelling their pleasantries against this formidable innovator; while answerers trembled and readers stared; while dunces were lost in the mazes of his arguments, and scholars were confounded at the hardness of his assertions, you, my lord, stood forth, with an avowed determination to share alike his danger and his disgrace. You affected to despise, even while you were endeavoring to repress the clamors of the unenlightened herd, who saw, or pretended to see, absurdity in his criticisms, heterodoxy in his tenets, and brutality in his invectives. You made great paradoxes less incredible, by exciting our wonder at the greater, which were started by yourself. You taught us to set a just value upon the eccentricities of impetuous and untutored genius, by giving us an opportunity to compare them with the trickeries of cold and systematic refinement. You tempted us, almost, to forget and forgive whatever was offensive in noisy and boisterous reproaches, by turning aside our attention to the more grating sounds of quaint and sarcastic sneers." He thus delineates the character of Warburton, and contrasts it by implication with Bishop Hurd's. "The Bishop of Gloucester, amidst all his fooleries in criticism and all his outrages in controversy, certainly united

a most vigorous and comprehensive intellect with an open and a generous heart. As a friend, he was what your lordship experienced—zealous and constant; and as an enemy, he properly describes himself to have been choleric, but not implacable. He, my lord, threw a cloud over no man's brighter prospects of prosperity or honors, by dark and portentous whispers in the ear of the powerful. He, in private company, blasted no man's good name, by shedding over it the cold and deadly mildews of insinuation. He was too magnanimous to undermine, when his duty or his honor prompted him to overthrow. He was too sincere, to disguise the natural haughtiness and irritability of his temper, under a specious veil of humility and meekness. He never thought it expedient to save appearances, by shaking off the shackles of consistency; to soften the hideous aspect of certain uncourtly opinions, by a calm and progressive apostacy; to expiate the artless and animated effusions of his youth, by the example of a temporizing and obsequious old age. He began not his course as others have done, with speculative republicanism, nor did he end, as the same persons are now doing, with practical toryism. He was a churchman without bigotry,—he was a politician without duplicity—he was a loyalist without servility."

The character of Dr. Jortin is powerfully delineated in the Preface. "As to Jortin, whether I look back to his verse, to his prose, to his critical, or to his theological works, there are few authors to whom I am so much indebted for rational entertainment, or for solid instruction. Learned he was, without pedantry. He was ingenious, without the affectation of singularity. He was a lover of truth, without hovering over the gloomy abyss of skepticism, and a friend to free inquiry, without running into the dreary and pathless wilds of latitudinarianism. He had a heart which never disgraced the powers of his understanding. With a lively imagination, an elegant taste, and a judgment most masculine and most correct, he united the artless and amiable negligence of a school-boy. Wit, without ill-nature, and sense, without effort, he could at will scatter upon every effort; and in every book the writer presents us with a near and distinct view of the real man."

But we must put an end to our quotations. The commendations which this work received are, in our opinion, hardly exaggerated. In many respects it is, in truth, one of the most striking monuments of English literature. The younger Warton—

no incompetent judge—said, that if he were called upon to point out some of the finest sentences in English prose, he should quote Parr's Preface and Dedication of the Warburtonian Tracts. Yet no one can help regretting, that the powers of Parr's mind were wasted on performances of this kind. Warburton's paradoxes excited but a brief attention. They produced but a momentary change in the public mind, on any important subject in literature or religion. The labors of his followers and defenders had an influence equally short-lived. It was better that they should be left to themselves. Opposition was the strength of their cause. And the decorum of the attack on Hurd was more questionable than its utility. Such virulent invective, against a dignified ecclesiastic of unblemished morals and eminent scholarship, demanded a better apology than could be derived from a supposed or real personal affront. Why did not Parr copy the example of Jortin, which himself not more highly than deservedly eulogizes, and “never grasp at the shadowy and fleeting reputation, which is sometimes gained by the petty frolics of literary vanity, or the mischievous struggles of controversial rage ?” The antagonist of shadows, though successful, gains but an empty glory.

The remainder of Parr's life was more barren of incident than the part which we have already gone over; and we suppose we shall better entertain our readers by quitting the exact chronological order which we have hitherto observed. His last removal was from Norwich to Hatton, and in this latter situation was passed the most quiet and happy, and, of course, to the historian, the least interesting portion of his life. His parochial duties must have consumed but a small amount of his time. He took in, indeed, a few scholars; but these engagements must have left him much leisure. Not a little of this leisure he gave up to political exertions. The public mind was now agitated by the Regency question. Dr. Parr sided, of course, with Mr. Fox in favor of the Prince of Wales. His correspondence abounds with allusions to this subject, evincing the same inconsiderate warmth which hitherto he had not been able to restrain, even by a judicious regard to his own personal interest. He seems, too, to have harbored confident expectations ...at his interest would be signally promoted, if the views which he held on the Regency question should prevail. He had always aspired to a seat on the Bench of Bishops. He once made personal application for the see of St. Asaph; and he thought that his

wishes were now likely to be gratified. But they were destined to a speedy disappointment, as the king's illness was not lasting.

In the efforts which were made to procure a repeal of the Test act, Dr. Parr took no part but that of opposition. "In the earlier part of my life," he says, "I thought the Test act oppressive, but in the year 1782, I very carefully and very seriously re-examined the subject, and changed my opinion. In 1790, I strenuously opposed the attempt to procure a repeal, and yet, I cannot help indulging the confident hope, that in the progress of intellectual and moral improvement, religious animosities will, at last, subside; and that the restraint, for which I have contended, and do now contend, will no longer be thought necessary for the public safety by the heads of that Church, which I have never deserted, and the members of that Legislature, which I have never disobeyed." Like Swift, he was a Whig in politics, but a Tory in religion. He linked himself with the High Church party, in opposition to the repeal of the Act; and we find in the memoirs a long string of resolutions, declaratory of his opinions on this subject, which he caused to be adopted at a county meeting.

When the French Revolution broke out, it was not to be expected, either that Parr would wholly suppress his convictions, or that he would be at much pains to check the freedom and vehemence, with which his native temperament would prompt him to utter them. And when we remember, how deeply the mind of Robert Hall was excited by the events which were then occurring, and with what fervent zeal he espoused the popular side, we can hardly reproach Parr for professional indecorum, in the course which he pursued; and if his political wisdom is to be called in question, the reflexion how gallantly Sir James Mackintosh broke a lance in defence of French principles, will convince us that he erred in honorable company. But he did not meet with that lenity from his contemporaries which posterity will cheerfully award him. He was a prominent butt for the shafts of party malignity; he was traduced as a Jacobin, and vilified as disloyal in the public papers. At the time of the Birmingham riots in 1791, his house was threatened; and his library, for its security from a supposed danger of destruction, was removed to Oxford. It was at this time that the letter from Irenopolis to the inhabitants of Eleutheropolis, was written. Its object was to dissuade the Dissenters of Birmingham from holding a second meeting, to commemorate the

French Revolution. The first meeting had been seized by the rioters as an occasion for their tumultuous proceedings ; it was resolved to hold another in defiance. Parr's dissuasive, however, was effectual, and the project was given up. This letter is one of the best of our author's productions. It is expressed not less eloquently than forcibly, and is free from some of the peculiar vices of his style.

Parr's political activity was incessant. He exerted himself to obtain votes for his Whig friends, in every quarter in which he had an influence. He was absent from no election, at which he was authorized to vote. He neglected all consideration of distance of place and length of time, of trouble and expense. He brought upon himself the most violent obloquy by his political zeal. The Pursuits of Literature, whose notice of his Education Sermon has been already alluded to, aimed its severest satire at him. The satire in some respects was perfectly just. "I really think," says the author, "it is impossible to point out any man of learning and ability, who has hitherto wasted his powers and attainments in such a desultory, wild, unconnected and useless manner as Dr. Parr. It would be ridiculous, indeed, to compare the Birmingham Doctor with Dr. Samuel Johnson. What has Dr. Parr written ? A sermon or two rather long ; a Latin preface to Bellendenus rather long too ; another preface to some English tracts, and two or three English pamphlets about his own private quarrels ; and this is the man to be compared with Dr. Samuel Johnson !"

Not the least famous of our author's publications was a sermon which he gave to the world in the year 1800. This was the Spital sermon, delivered by the appointment of the Lord Mayor of London. We undertook to prepare an analysis of this celebrated production ; but soon found that our skill in this kind of labor was likely to meet with too severe a task, and we abandoned the attempt. We will, however, try to give our readers some conception of the manner in which Dr. Parr was used to address a popular audience. The general aim of the discourse is to oppose the unholy speculations of Mr. Godwin on the subject of universal benevolence. These speculations were zealously propagated at this time, and we have no doubt threatened the extinction of true virtue. They should have been resisted in a way that promised to be successful. Let us see whether Dr. Parr's efforts bade fair to be very serviceable.

"The errors of ingenious men," he remarks in the Introduction,

"in their attempts to unfold the most familiar operations of the human mind, may well humble our pride and awaken our caution. The talents of men have been strangely misemployed in tracing the motives by which we are impelled to do good, and in adjusting the extent to which we are capable of doing it. The Epicureans contended that the ultimate design of every action, was either to procure for ourselves pleasure, or to avert pain from ourselves. The schoolmen represented a direct regard to our own happiness, as the sole motive by which our wills are determined. These theories were revived in the seventeenth century with new modifications, and gradually assumed a more formidable aspect. The influence of speculation is, indeed, inferior to that of common reason and humanity. The doctrine that we are never conscious of a disinterested desire of doing good, has not probably wrought any important change in the sentiments or habits of the people. Yet the novelty of such an opinion gives it a temporary popularity. It ought, therefore, to be resisted. The selfish system has consequently been combated by men of high reputation for the soundness of their judgment and the precision of their reasoning. The opinions which they have advanced will not very soon be disturbed, by the restlessness of innovation, or the craftiness of skepticism. The danger we have to apprehend, proceeds from a different quarter. Certain romantic and even pernicious notions have been recently started in France, upon the powers which are furnished and the obligations by which we are bounden, to promote, by direct aims, the universal good of the species. This new doctrine of universal philanthropy has found its way to our own country. In comparing the selfish with the philanthropic system, it will be seen that the one has never occasioned so much mischief as it seemed to threaten, and the other will be productive of less good than it promises, accompanied by a long and portentous train of evils. The selfish system, on its first approach, scares us with the sternness of its appearance; the philanthropic wears a more engaging form.

"It is then proposed to examine how far, by the constitution of human nature, and the circumstances of human life, the principles of universal and particular benevolence are compatible.

"The strongest barriers oppose the union of our species into one community. When we speak of the community of mankind, we use the language rather of rhetorical ornament, than philosophical precision. Our benevolent affections, consequent-

ly, if attempted to be diffused to all people and nations and languages, would become weak and almost imperceptible. Our moral obligations cannot extend beyond our physical powers. In what sense, then, can we be required to do good unto all men?

"The elements of our benevolent affections are originally called into action, by events which immediately interest ourselves, which produce our own pleasure or remove our own pain. When these affections have been repeatedly exercised on their appropriate objects, we become conscious of a calm desire, that the same causes which have produced our own happiness or removed our own pain, should operate on the condition of others. But this calm desire of universal good cannot, in accordance with the limited nature of our physical powers, and with the circumstances in which we are placed, be followed by any efforts at all correspondent to its boundlessness. The obligation to cherish this calm desire of universal good, and to exemplify it, whenever our circumstances will permit, is fortified by the representations of the New Testament. We are enjoined by our Lord to consider every man as our neighbor. We are directed, also, so far to form ourselves into a likeness of character with our Maker, as to indulge a promiscuous benevolence. Universal benevolence, then, is to be approved as a sentiment of which general happiness is the cause; but, according to the common order of human affairs, general happiness cannot often be its practicable object.

"The theory which inculcates a different notion is pregnant with the most serious mischiefs. When these dazzling phantoms of universal philanthropy have gained one's attention, the objects that formerly engaged it, shrink and fade. All considerations of kindred, friends, and countrymen, drop from the mind during the struggles it makes to grasp the collective interests of the species. On the other hand, the calm desire of general happiness, contenting itself with the exercise of pity towards the needy and distressed, when they are situated beyond the scope of our physical powers, and sure that, if they were related to us more intimately, it would express itself in active measures of relief, is productive of the most benignant effects; it guards us against the silent encroachments of self-love, quells the fury of our malignant passions, and raises us above the narrow and sordid aims of our selfish affections. He, who thus conducts himself, is a better moralist, than they who would turn aside the

stream of our benevolent affections from its wonted course, scatter it abroad over a wide and trackless expanse of surface, where it could never nourish nor even penetrate the soil; or force it up into thin and fleeting vapors of refinement, from which it seldom would descend in soft and gentle dews of beneficence to refresh the weary.

"We are, then, as Christians bound to wish for the good of all men, and to labor for it as we have opportunity; but we should be cautious lest we waste that strength in visionary schemes for the immediate good of the whole race, which might be expended more judiciously, in those duties to which our particular affections give rise."

Though the views expressed in this sermon must be admitted to be correct, and the exigencies of the times such as demanded they should be earnestly set forth, it may be justly apprehended that this sermon did little towards arresting the progress of French opinions. Hannah More's little story of Mr. Fantom must have been a thousand-fold more serviceable. There is such a lack of lucid arrangement, such an elevation of style, the topics introduced, always of so abstract a nature as to be grasped only with difficulty, are so imperfectly illustrated, that the practical influence of the sermon must have been completely neutralized. One of his friends expresses the fear that he had entered on subjects too recondite for his auditors; but says, strangely enough, that he found, on reading the sermon, his fears were without foundation.

The most amusing feature belonging to this production, is its huge mass of notes. The sermon occupies fifty not very closely printed pages. It was ridiculed for its excessive length, and Parr's biographers are at a good deal of pains to vindicate it from this imputation. It is not, indeed, so long as a sermon of Dr. Barrow's, by one hour. And it fell short by five hours, of the sermons with which the Long Parliament were in the habit of being entertained. Nevertheless it cannot be denied that the sermon was "rather long." But the notes occupy two hundred and thirteen pages, they touch on every variety of subject, and quote an innumerable multitude of authors. Our readers will be diverted with Parr's account of their preparation, and his own opinion of their merit. "I am still in a state of incubation over my notes," he writes to D. Maltby. "A month ago, not one was written. I have had three scribes or amanuenses, one expert, one slow, and a third most irregular and provoking.

The notes will be very numerous. They are very important, and in three places the composition equals, in one I think it surpasses, any thing that my mind, in its happiest moments, ever produced. They will repay the public for delay and expectation; they will do credit to my real principles; they will do service to the State and to the Church; they will provoke a rabble of miscreants whom I disdain to propitiate. I was half frantic with ecstasy, three times, [in writing the three notes, we presume, whose composition is so superlatively excellent.] Such are the labors of an unpreferred, calumniated, half-starving country parson." And such too is the unworthy and silly vanity of a weak minded pedant.

He thus speaks of President Edwards. "About eight years ago, I read Mr. Edwards's Inquiry into the modern prevailing notions of the Freedom of the Will. Charmed as I was with the metaphysical acuteness and the fervent piety of the writer, I became very desirous to read his Dissertations concerning the end for which God created the World, and on the Nature of true Virtue. I found in them the same romantic imagination, the same keen discernment, the same logical subtlety, and the same unextinguishable ardor. Mr. Edwards is a writer who exercises our minds even where he does not satisfy them, who interests where he does not persuade, and improves us where he does not ultimately convince." The object of the note, from which we quote these sentences, is to vindicate the Dissertation on the Nature of Virtue, from the charge of symbolizing with the views of Mr. Godwin.

He pays a merited tribute to the older divines of the Church of England. "Without any attempt to preserve the peculiar forms of philosophical investigation; without any habit of employing the technical language of it; without any immediate consciousness of intention to exhibit their opinions in what is called a philosophical point of view; their incidental representations of man, in all the varieties of his moral powers and his social relations, have so much depth, so much precision, so much comprehension as would have procured for them the name of philosophers, if they had not borne the different and not less honorable name of Christian teachers. In their professional writings I have often seen the germ of thoughts, which have been expanded into fuller luxuriance and decked with brighter colors in the more popular productions of later times."

One of the most interesting of the notes is on the comparative

mischief of atheism and superstition, in answer to the remark of Lord Bacon, that “atheism doth not perturb states.” The downfall of atheism in France is thus described. “In a neighboring country it has already sunk into decay. There it wanted alike the simplicity of nature and the graces of art. It was bulky without solidity, elaborate without symmetry, and lofty without magnificence. It seized, indeed, the attention of a spectator by the vastness of its dimensions and the novelty of its form, and it impressed him with momentary awe because it stood upon ruins; but it had no foundation in the common sense of men, no superstructure from their general habits, no cement from their nobler affections, no embellishments from their unperverted imaginations, nor pillars from their social virtues. It started up but to vanish, it towered but to fall, and it has fallen, I sincerely hope, to rise no more.” This, we take it, is one of the passages, in view of which, when he had finished writing it, he was half frantic with ecstasy.

The Spital sermon was not suffered to pass without severe animadversions. Mr. Godwin was, of course, drawn out in defence of his own views. He had been a personal friend of Dr. Parr. In 1794 he visited Hatton, and avowed that he never spent a week with higher personal pleasure. He seems to have thought Parr was inclined to favor his sentiments on the nature of benevolence and the structure of society. In his reply to the Spital sermon he insinuates, quite broadly, the charge of apostacy and tergiversation. Their correspondence was henceforth discontinued, on the ground of a supposed affront from Parr.

The record of Dr. Parr’s correspondence and friendships forms one of the most interesting passages in his history. His hospitality was unbounded. The scholar and the politician were alike welcome to the parsonage. Foxites and Whigs were, of course, received with the most enthusiasm, but Tories and Pittites were not excluded. Hither Porson—who shared with Parr and Charles Burney, the son of the historian of music, the distinction of unrivalled eminence in Greek learning among English scholars—was wont to repair, to enrich his mind with the stores of Parr’s library and conversation. His personal habits were very singular, and we judge not very agreeable. He was used to rise late, and rarely walked out, spending his whole time until dinner in the library, reading, and taking notes. He was very silent, seldom speaking to any one except Parr;

yet there were times when his sullen manners and gloomy countenance were relaxed. After dinner or at night, he would collect the young men of the family around him, and, if Parr and the ladies were absent, he would pour forth from the fountains of his memory torrents of various literature. The charms of his society during these hours are said to have been irresistible. But at length he became so disagreeable to the doctor's wife that she could not restrain her impatience. He never repeated his visits, though there was no open breach of friendship.

Sir James Mackintosh was first introduced to Parr's friendship by his reply to Mr. Burke's work on the French revolution, and he often honored Halton with his visits. That touching letter which he wrote to Parr on the death of his first wife, ranking among the finest specimens of epistolary composition in the language, and not inferior to Swift's celebrated letter to Lord Oxford on the death of his daughter, bespeaks the warm affection which subsisted between them. Parr eulogizes his noble friend most highly, in the notes to the Spital sermon, but not more highly than was deserved. An alienation of feeling, imputable to some causeless misunderstanding, subsequently took place; but after Mackintosh's return from India their ancient friendship was revived.

Dr. Parr was for many years the ardent admirer and confidential friend of Charles James Fox. Their letters to each other, of which many are preserved, present the character of that eminent statesman in a very attractive light—a strange one, possibly, in the estimation of those who have been used to consider him as a mere politician. His love of elegant letters was not displaced by his political zeal. "I, like most other men who live much in the world," he remarks in one of his letters, "have neglected the study of Greek literature far more than I wish I had done for my own pleasure and satisfaction; for, though no great scholar, I have as eager a love and even thirst for literature, as most men who are not very young; and indeed it is a favorite project with me to give up some time in the summer to perfecting myself in Greek, very much with a view to the Greek tragedies, and still more with reference to Demosthenes, of whom I have read but little, but whom that little has taught me to admire to the highest possible degree. I do not mention Homer, because I can still read him with tolerable ease." It is memorable to relate, that he, who was

styled in his day the most Demosthenian of all orators except Demosthenes, yet preferred Cicero to him. "I am flattered," he says to Parr, "as you may suppose I must be, by your comparison [of me] with Demosthenes, whom as a speaker I had much rather resemble, almost with any degree of inferiority, than Cicero or any other. But though as a speaker he appears to me to have been far above all others, I own I have the bad taste to have more pleasure in reading Cicero's orations than his; so very different, in my judgment, is that which is good to be heard from that which is good to be read. And for this reason, among others, I have always hated the thoughts of any of my speeches being published." There is another letter from Fox, which it would be interesting to quote if there were space, evincing the correctness of his taste in English composition, and how well he appreciated the niceties of verbal criticism.

At the funeral of his illustrious friend, Parr mingled, by invitation, with the long train of mourners—of the highest consideration for rank, genius, and learning in the kingdom—which followed the hearse. The body of Fox lies within a span of Pitt's. The fierceness of political contention did not extend its influence to the grave. The design was long cherished by Parr of writing the biography of Mr. Fox, but he never accomplished it. We have, however, an elaborately drawn character of him in a tract entitled *Philopatris Varvicensis*, and another immense body of notes.

Among the literary projects which he never executed was a life of Dr. Johnson. His intimacy with Johnson was never close. If no other circumstance had prevented, the similarity of their characters would have been a sufficient obstacle in the way of a very cordial friendship. In a letter to Mr. Crodock, his intercourse with Johnson is thus described:—"For many years I spent a month's holidays in London, and never failed to call upon Johnson. I was not only admitted but welcomed. I conversed with him upon numberless subjects, of learning, politics, and common life. I traversed the whole compass of his understanding, and, by the acknowledgement of Burke and Reynolds, I distinctly understood the peculiar and transcendental properties of his mighty and virtuous mind. I intended to write his life, and laid by sixty or seventy volumes for the purpose of writing it in such a manner as would do no discredit to myself. I intended to spread my thoughts over two

volumes quarto, and if I had filled three pages the rest would have followed. Often have I lamented my ill fortune in not building this monument to the fame of Johnson, and let me not be accused of arrogance when I add, *my own.*" In 1780 he spent an evening with Johnson at the house of their common friend, Bennet Langton. Mr. Langton says that Johnson was highly pleased with the conversation of that learned gentleman, and after he was gone, said to Mr. Langton, "Sir, I am obliged to you for having asked me this evening. Parr is a fair man. I do not know when I have had an occasion of such free controversy. It is remarkable how much of a man's life may pass without meeting with any instance of this kind of open discussion." The committee of subscribers to Dr. Johnson's monument requested Parr to write the inscription. After much solicitation he was induced to comply with the request.

The seventh and eighth volumes of Parr's works are filled with selections from his correspondence. The extent of this correspondence was remarkable. Three years before his death, he employed himself, for several days, in arranging his letters, which had been accumulating for fifty-seven years; their number considerably exceeded eight thousand. They relate to various subjects of taste, verbal criticism, ethics, politics, theology, metaphysics, and the business of private life. The number of his correspondents was above fifteen hundred. There is scarcely any one of his contemporaries of any note whose name we do not find in the list. Princes of the blood, archbishops, dukes, earls, knights, the most eminent statesmen, and the profoundest scholars maintained, apparently, the most familiar and friendly intercourse with the curate of Hatton. Many of the letters are, of course, of very little value, except as they illustrate the character of him to whom they were addressed. It is Southey, we believe, who somewhere remarks, that one may form a pretty good idea of his own character by the letters which are addressed to him. If this criterion be a just one, certain modern biographers have exhibited their subjects to the view of the public in no very favorable aspect. One cannot peruse the letters which Hannah More was in the habit of receiving, without suspecting either that vanity was a most prominent feature of her disposition, or that she must have been angered with her correspondents for the flattery, "enough to make the vainest sick," which they poured forth so profusely. The unfavorable part of this inference must be drawn, we fear,

with respect to the subject of our present remarks; for his self-judgment, as often expressed in his letters to others, is scarcely less laudatory than the flattering opinions which were uttered by his friends.

We have alluded to Parr's library, as quite celebrated in Bibliothecal history. It numbered about ten thousand volumes. The catalogue of it is a royal octavo of more than seven hundred pages. To one who considers the narrowness of his income, it appears astonishing that such a library could have been collected by him. Not a few of the books, we must suppose, were presents. Like Johnson, he is said to have been indifferent to the external appearance of the volumes. Rarity and intrinsic value were all the qualities which he coveted. "I am content," he said, "with half bindings and old bindings. I hunt not after black-letter nor principes editiones, nor large paper copies; I buy that I may read like a man of letters, not that I may write like a German, nor display my treasures like a collector. To be sure, though a country parson, I have taken care, with a scanty purse, that there should be no want of number and no want of variety in my books; and if you were to spend two or three days among them, you would find them adapted to the mind and pursuits of their owner." On his library he placed a very high value. He was very anxious that it should not be scattered after his death, but should remain together, that the world might see what sort of a collection of books had been made by a country parson. The editor of his works justly remarks that this library, founded by himself, is alone a monument of the intellectual courage and ability of Parr. It was begun when he was a boy at college, and when the price of a book deprived him of some other need or comfort; it continued to accumulate when he was bowed down by penury and opposition. Whatever else he wanted, he always found money to buy books; and the sums he expended in the year 1824, when his life was waning, show that his ardor in the cause of letters was inextinguishable.

Dr. Parr's domestic life was not free from trouble. His struggles with poverty have been already recounted. He had other and severer trials. His first wife, though her character is well spoken of by some of his friends, he obtained, somewhat in the way that "the judicious Hooker" obtained his; and he suffered the usual consequences of such a choice. His domestic happiness was often diminished by her ungovernable temper

In the judgment of Porson she was one of the three insurmountable obstacles to her husband's greatness. Many of the members of Parr's family fell victims to disease during his life. The conduct of others was scarcely less painful than their death would have been. He was twice married, but he survived all his children.

We cannot dwell, at the length we should be glad to do, on Parr's private character and personal habits. There was much affection and good nature belonging to his character; though that could by no means be affirmed of him which was said of Mackintosh; that the gall bladder was entirely omitted in his composition. He was of a hasty temper, irritable, and most impatient of contradiction. He was now and then the tyrant of the fireside. His Dedication of the Tracts of a Warburtonian, shows no weak propensity to vilify and abuse those against whom he entertained a pique. He did not live long enough to learn the value of Byron's advice to his friend Harness: "You are censorious, child; when you are a little older, you will learn to dislike every body, but to abuse nobody." Of benevolence and compassion he had a large share. In his own parish, almost every individual is said to have been considered as a member of his family, and the necessitous were daily relieved from his table. Money was regularly placed in the hands of the servants, for the relief of beggars. His heart was especially compassionate toward poor and intelligent youth. At all the places in which he taught, he was in the habit of receiving many boys into his school for smaller stipends; and to some their tuition was a gratuity: in this, imitating the conduct of Bernard Gilpin, the Northern apostle, who, in his rides round Houghton le Spring, if he met a poor boy, would make trial of his capacity by a few questions, and if he found it such as pleased him, would provide for his education in his own school.

Of indomitable energy Parr gave the most decisive tokens. When he quitted the university, he was not worth four pounds; yet before he died he had reached comparative affluence. He had collected a library of ten thousand volumes, and arrived at an eminence in scholarship, which was not shared by more than two or three of his contemporaries. Had he taken pains to quench his political zeal, and addicted himself with more constancy to his proper pursuits, he would have been without a rival. It is to be regretted, indeed, that so many literary pro-

jects were suggested to him, which he never executed. How much should we have prized a life of Johnson from his pen! He would have written an invaluable life of Fox, if political heat would have suffered him to be impartial. Matthias entreated him to publish observations on the works of the Poet Gray; assuring him that nothing could have so great an effect on the world of letters, revive the drooping attention of great scholars, and stimulate the industry of the rising youth of this learned country, as for him to produce such a work. But the entreaty was unavailing. Parr's energy and scholarship were undoubtedly; but that intensity and fixedness of purpose, which are essential to the completion of great designs, he did not possess. In proportion to his other endowments, he had little talent, in the sense in which it is defined by Sir James Mackintosh; power formed and directed by habit to one sort of exertion. His celebrity as a linguist was fully justified by the extent and accuracy of his knowledge in that department of letters. His correspondence with Dr. Bloomfield, the editor of Thucydides, and with Dr. Copleston, and Richard Payne Knight, is sufficient proof of this statement. Yet he has left behind him no work, of a magnitude and importance at all correspondent to his powers and acquisitions.

He had many peculiarities, some of them whimsical and harmless, while others must obviously be set down as positive faults. Among these, not the least prominent, was his unbounded self-esteem. We have already given some diverting proofs of this. Like the Spanish nobleman, who never alluded to himself without taking off his hat, Parr scarcely ever has occasion to mention his own name, without carefully affixing the title of Doctor. He was in the habit of writing sentences on the flyleaves of the books in his library. In these he invariably calls himself Dr. Parr. Moses Greenboy, Esq., *if you please*, was not more solicitous that his title should be remembered. He was fondly addicted to the pleasures of the table; a fault which his biographer mildly describes by saying that he had a good appetite, and ate heartily, and from the necessities of his pedagogic life, hastily. His gastronomic propensities were reviled by his enemies; and not altogether without reason. His friends, too, must have given him credit for a considerable degree of fondness for luxurious eating, if one may judge from the number and value of the contributions which were sent in on his birth days. There were sent him, accord-

ing to his own account, on one of these occasions, four pheasants, six partridges, a gigantic turkey, a stupendous wild goose, a codfish, the jaws of which were capacious enough to swallow a child three years old, two large luxurious pies, and two barrels of oysters. Yet, sad to narrate, Parr was sick at this time, and was compelled to fast while others feasted. The partialities of literary men are often entirely unaccountable. Parr had a violent passion for ringing bells, and was at a good deal of expense to procure a full set for the Hatton steeple, with which to amuse himself. Another of his favorite employments was that of killing oxen. Twining, whose jests on his "sko-teinography" have been recorded, exhorts him also to indulge his φιλοτανφοκοπία without restraint.

Of Dr. Parr's religious character and theological sentiments it is somewhat difficult to speak with confidence, on account of the scanty information which can be gleaned, either from the memoirs or the works. But the imperfect notices which are afforded, do not present his character, with respect to these points, in a very favorable light. Of piety, considering this term as significant of a class of affections, of which God is the peculiar object, we can discern in his history no satisfactory evidence. We are aware that public opinion in Great Britain, especially in the latter half of the last century, permitted a looseness both of religious sentiment and practice, in those who aspired to the sacred profession, which would never be tolerated in our own country, at least by any denomination whose creed is scriptural. And we may be reminded, that it is not right to subject the character of an English clergyman to the same test that is ordinarily applied to the ministry here. But we cannot regard our own rule of judgment as too severe. We doubt if any who cannot sustain its application should ever venture into the ministry. That door must be too wide which allowed the entrance of such men as Scott and Grimshawe and Richmond. The character of these men was, indeed, eventually changed, and they became brilliant examples of ministerial usefulness: but the change should have preceded their assumption of the clerical office. The deficiency in Dr. Parr's character was of a negative description. His eccentricities, his impatient and vehement temper, his disagreeable personal habits, his pedantry and tumid style of composition, would, under any circumstances, have been impediments in the way of his extensive usefulness as a preacher; but these unfortunate peculiarities would probably have been soft-

ened down, had he felt the force of those motives, which ought to hold the ascendancy in the heart of a clergyman. His character was not stained by those positive vices, which have disgraced the name of so many ministers of the English church. He was not a profane swearer, like Swift, nor a drunkard, like Ford, nor a hanger on of the theatres, like Churchill: we do not know that he wrote plays, or hunted foxes, or visited Ascot and Newmarket. But his character should have been something more than faultless. A development is now and then made, indeed, which astonishes a New-Englander. "I shall send you to-morrow," he writes to the President of one of the Oxford colleges, "a dozen of good claret, and in the same hamper will also come another for Mr. Barker of Christ-Church College. I packed it up with my own hands, so as to have aching loins, and a vertiginous forehead, and straining eyeballs, and hands most dirty. I cannot boast much of my skill in packing, for I am not used to the cramming of treasonable books."

The opinions which he occasionally allows himself to express, with regard to the peculiarities of spiritual religion, furnish painful indication of his habitual style of feeling. Godly conversation, in his view, is a vague term, and implies only the absence of profaneness, or infidelity, or immorality. "Methodism," and we well know the meaning of this word in the mouth of an Englishman, he says, "is astonishingly prevalent here. Divine grace is exalted beyond all bounds, and man represented as a mere machine." His opposition to Methodism and Calvinism was in truth most strenuous: it sometimes bordered upon virulence. "Calvinism," he observes, "is a wild and cheerless system. Its founder was a haughty and choleric reformer, who dragged the supposed heretic to the stake, not merely with the insolence of a champion who had conquered his antagonist, but with the more horrid deliberation of the self-applauding enthusiast, who boasts of doing God service, when he at once, at one effectual blow, cuts off the offender from existence here, and hurries him into the torments thought to be reserved for him hereafter." Nor would he always refrain from misrepresentation. "The Calvinists," he says, "suppose that by an irresistible and irreversible decree, a portion of mankind are disabled from obeying the will of God, that they are compelled to disobey it, and that for such disobedience they are to be punished for ever. The effect of this system is to produce hatred towards God, irrevoca-

ble and invincible. Its influence upon the affections which we bear to our fellow-men, is still more disastrous. The love of our neighbor is peculiarly endangered by the Calvinistic system. In its adherents pride too often predominates over piety, in their reflexions upon beings whom they consider as graceless, hopeless outcasts from heaven, and rebels against God. If, in the course of his agency, the Calvinist should despise, should hate, should oppress the reprobates, if he should deride their saint and feeble attempts to do right, if he should exaggerate their guilt when they do amiss, how can his own salvation be affected; for the call is indisputable, the decree is irreversible, the assurance is infallible." We, of course, are not going to detain our readers by pointing out the palpable mistakes which these sentences contain. We do not believe that Dr. Parr ever fairly studied the system which he condemns so roundly. If he never did, his guilt is but slightly mitigated for allowing himself in such gross misrepresentations. We find in the correspondence two sets of directions for study to a student in divinity. There is not a single work alluded to in these directions, from which a student could derive any thing like an accurate idea of the theology of Calvin. There are many which would be likely to impart the most unfair and distorted views.

Dr. Parr's religious opinions were not, we very willingly acknowledge, of the loosest sort. They approach more nearly to the Scriptural type, than those of the denomination generally with whose views his own have been supposed to coincide. His notions of the Trinity, he was used to say, corresponded precisely to those of the profound Bishop of Durham. "Christ," he remarks in one of his sermons, "before his incarnation, was in the form of God. He was united to the Father by a principle of union utterly incomprehensible. He partook of God's glory and God's perfections." He adverts, in another passage, to the distinction between the divine and human natures of Christ, though he nowhere informs us in what he conceived the distinction to lie. "I hold," he observes, "that works do not of themselves expiate sins, for that expiation is effected by the mercy of God, announced to us by Jesus Christ." This assertion, however, is easily reconcilable with the denial of the doctrine of the atonement. We have been delighted, also, with the distinctness and strength with which he enforces the thought, that unless works are performed, forgiveness will not be granted; and that it is only an unsullied and holy life of which heaven

is the recompense. There are many members of sects, far stricter than that to which Parr belonged, into whose mind some of these notions might very advantageously be transfused.

His character, as a parish priest, was in many respects commendable. He emulated, as he said, the Good Parson at least in one thing—

I've taught the Gospel rather than the law,  
And forced myself to drive, but loved to draw.

He exerted himself to become acquainted with every individual in the parish, and he was generally on good terms with them all. There were but two exceptions, and the existence of these is quite justifiable: he was frequently angry with the churlish and the avaricious. He visited his parishioners universally, and made a point of attending their clubs. Robert Hall was in the habit of carrying in his pocket his own tea and sugar, when he visited the dwellings of the poor; and in the course of one afternoon would drink thirty-six cups of his favorite beverage. Dr. Parr was used to carry his pipe and tobacco, and smoke with the meanest of his parishioners, we presume, not less often. He was faithful in reproving the faults of his auditors. In some cases he would mention the name of the offender from the pulpit, and the fault that had been committed. His public and private instructions were characterized by affectionateness, and were as familiar and as well adapted to the meanest capacity, as it was, perhaps, possible for him to make them.

It has already appeared, we think, that the sermons of Dr. Parr were but poorly fitted to subserve the purposes of pulpit instruction. If, as was sometimes the fact, he selected topics which were interesting and profitable, his vicious style and the obscurity of his arrangement, must have effectually prevented any distinct impression from being made upon the hearers. It has astonished many that Bishop Butler should have read from the pulpit, such abstruse metaphysical disquisitions as are found among his sermons. Almost all of Dr. Parr's sermons were equally obscure and unsuited to the character of his auditors. The last of his three discourses on the Paralytic, may very properly rank with the Sermons on Human Nature. Yet there are a few whose style is comparatively plain and perspicuous, and whose influence, if they had been attended to, must have been salutary. One in particular, delivered on Good Friday,

from the words, “Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus;” for its simple and unaffected pathos, its transparent style, and its beautifully drawn portrait of the Saviour’s character, merits the warmest praise.

Dr. Parr’s excellences and faults as a writer very nearly balance each other. His vocabulary was extensive, but it was deficient in the best class of words. That clear and inartificial diction, for which the prose of Dryden, and Pope, and Addison, and Berkeley is so much admired, of which we find such charming specimens in Pilgrim’s Progress and in Grace Abounding to the Chief of Sinners, which is consistent with the utmost elegance, and the greatest vehemence, which is so perfectly adapted to all the purposes of the poet, the orator, and especially the preacher, displaying rather than enveloping the thought, Dr. Parr never attained. He was too much of a pedant to reach such an excellence. Yet his sins in this respect were somewhat against his own convictions. He once stopped the press to have the clause, “I confess, with sorrow,” changed into, “I must confess, then, with sorrow.” “You see,” he says, “the alteration includes but two words, *must* and *then*. I am fond of these particles, and I am sure that Voltaire and Marmontel in French, and Johnson in English, neglected them too much. But with me it is not so, nor with other writers. I feel the anxiety of Addison, who would cancel a sheet to alter the position of a common particle; and it was by this parental care of his words, that they put forth such beautiful blossoms and such beautiful fruits.” His sentences are never carelessly constructed, but their rhythm and melody are often produced by a faulty redundancy of words and clauses. His style is never lacking in energy; there is not seldom an excessive vehemence. His quotations are often pertinent and beautiful; but they are too numerous: his figures and illustrations are often aptly introduced, and drawn from sources of sufficient dignity, and their applicability is sufficiently obvious; they are as frequently employed merely for their beauty and magnificence, and not their utility, and their relation to the subject is very obscure. The viciousness of his style is imputable, in some measure, to his habitual disregard of the rule implied in the remark of Pope: “I believe no one qualification is so likely to make a good writer as the power of rejecting one’s own thoughts.” His feeling was rather that of Churchill, who remarked concerning correction, that it was like cutting away one’s flesh. It was not that Parr was averse to the labors of revision. He was willing to be a

slow composer like Buffon, who strove in solitude to give his ideas all the neatness and precision and elegance of which they were capable, and to the end of his life, was every day learning the art of writing ; who wrote the *Epoque de la Nature* at the age of seventy, and copied it eighteen times. There was enough of revision and enough of labor ; but the labor was not judiciously laid out. He dreaded to handle the knife.

The vices of Parr's style were the vices of his age. A contemporary critic has observed, that the last half of the last century may be looked upon as the Augustan age of English writing. We doubt the correctness of this opinion. The pernicious influence of Johnson's style was at that time everywhere predominant. We see the traces of this influence in Robertson, whose prose is generally so attractive. Robert Hall, in the early part of his life, avowedly imitated Johnson. He once remarked to Dr. Gregory, "I aped Johnson, and I preached Johnson, but it was youthful folly, and it was very great folly. I might as well have attempted to dance a hornpipe in the cumbrous costume of Gog and Magog. My puny thoughts could not sustain the load of words in which I tried to clothe them." Dr. Parr was charged with the same fault, and in spite of the efforts of his admirers to throw off the imputation, it is easily substantiated. Yet there must be great merit in that writing, which could elicit such praises as Parr's composition often received. Witness these words of Dugald Stewart :— "Your character of Mr. Fox has afforded me more pleasure and instruction, than any book which I have read for years." What Mr. Addison says of the writings of Plato and Cicero, may with equal truth be applied to this Tract ; "that it is impossible to read a page of them without being a greater and a better man for it." Commendation equally flattering we have already quoted from judges not less competent. His excellence, however, in English composition would have been still greater, had he formed his style into a more perfect correspondence to his own precept, when speaking of the Epitaph on Johnson's monument. "The words should be so plain, that every sciolist might understand them ; the construction so plain, that every school-boy might hope to imitate it ; the topics so plain, that every gazetteer would give himself credit for selecting them ; and the whole so plain, that he who runs might read, he who reads might think that he understands, and he that understands be disposed to condemn."

We have said so much of the faults of Dr. Parr's style, that we conceive it to be just to give our readers a single specimen, which combines as many of the qualities of good writing as any passage that we recollect in the language.

"Our blessed Lord's family was poor, and his birth very obscure ; he associated with men not distinguished by fortune or desert, by intellectual attainments or elevated situation. With respect to himself he appeared in a character scarcely raised above the contempt of a giddy misguided world. So far was he from feeling any passion for riches and honors, that he lamented the infatuation of those who were dazzled by their glare. He professed in the strongest terms, their utter emptiness and insignificance ; he lamented the dangers to which they expose a weak understanding, or a corrupt heart ; and he inveighed with the most alarming severity against the follies, and the vices of those, whose superficial greatness the giddy multitude revered, and whose supposed happiness the generality of their inferiors were too much disposed to envy. He never affected to conceal his own poverty ; he never shunned the inconveniences to which it exposed him, but submitted without a murmur to the scoffs of the proud, and the insults of the vulgar. From the poor he chose out the companions of his labors, and the partners of his sufferings. To the poor he preached the Gospel, and insisted, too, on this very circumstance as the most solid proof of its authenticity—the most distinguishing mark of its excellence—the most eminent instance of its utility. The admiration, the gratitude of his hearers, sometimes led them to load him with the highest commendations, and to force upon him the most illustrious honors ; but he studiously declined all their intended favors ; he artfully drew off the attention of his hearers from his own works to that piety which they owed to God, and professedly referred the praise of every pious precept, every holy action, every benevolent miracle, to the glory of Him by whom he was sent into the world. Such was his condescension in those public scenes, where his example was likely to have more extensive influence ; and if we attend him in his hours of privacy and retirement, we shall find him engaged in the same acts of humiliation, and influenced by the same lowliness of heart. Every proud thought, every aspiring wish, that arose in the breasts of his disciples, he instantly suppressed. Though their acknowledged Master, he vouchsafed to become their servant ; he repeatedly pronounced that servant to be the greatest in heaven, who had made himself the least on earth ; he founded his own claims to their respect, on actions which seemed most to forbid it ; and in spite of the modest refusal, the well-meant opposition of the disciples, he stooped down to wash their feet. Shall we then listen to the scoffs of infidels, who make the meanness of our Master's situation on earth, an objection to the truth of his claims ; who call his condescension meanness, and who dare to brand his meekness by the ignominious title of cowardice?"

But we must bring our sketch to a close. The final scene only remains to be described. In the summer of 1824, Parr's

strength visibly declined, his appetite failed, and his spirits sank. He was attacked by his last sickness in January of the following year; it was a fever, accompanied with erysipelas. To the latter affection he had been subject for many years; but it now broke out with uncontrollable violence. Almost from the beginning he was under the influence of delirium, without any lucid interval of much length. Yet he once became sufficiently self-conscious to refer to his present state, and to avow his trust in God through Christ, for the pardon of his sins. Fifty days of helplessness and suffering, sometimes very acute, did he pass, during which his patience and magnanimity must have been drawn upon to the utmost, yet no murmuring accent ever escaped him. He died on Sunday, the 6th of March, 1825, being seventy-eight years of age.

As we take our last view of the life and character which we have undertaken to delineate, we are involuntarily reminded of those half sportive but solemn verses of Cowper, in which he computes the value of a day's conversation, as too justly descriptive of the real worth of Dr. Parr's life and labors.

Collect at evening what the day brought forth,  
Compress the sum into its solid worth;  
And if it weigh the importance of a fly,  
The scales are false, or algebra a lie.

---

### ARTICLE III.

#### THE IDEAL OF A PERFECT PULPIT DISCOURSE.

By Rev. HENRY N. DAY, Professor of Sacred Rhetoric, Western Reserve College, Hudson, Ohio.

We shall not be chargeable with extravagance or presumption, if we assume that pulpit oratory belongs to the highest grade in eloquence. Whether we consider its designs, its materials, or its occasions, we are constrained to claim for it an equal rank, at least, with any other species whatever.

That the eloquence of the pulpit has actually risen to the highest excellence of which it is capable, may, perhaps, be a matter of doubt. We have, indeed, in our numerous collections

of sermons, beautiful specimens of composition ; we have brilliant effusions of genius and great richness of learning ; we have, what is more perhaps, unsurpassed efforts in argumentation and persuasion. But where shall we look, in sacred eloquence, for those perfect models which we find in secular oratory ? where is the preacher in whom stands forth embodied the idea of a perfect orator ? Have we yet, indeed, attained a conception of a perfect standard of pulpit discourse ? Where, in all our treatises on the homiletic art—where, in all our systems of æsthetics, is it presented in any such light as to show that the idea has been fully, distinctly, self-consciously grasped ? Where is the living teacher, in our numerous schools of sacred rhetoric, who succeeds in infusing this idea into the minds of his disciples, so that they go forth fully possessed of it,—inventing, composing, speaking, under the control of it,—impressing it more or less completely in all their discourses ? Has the mind any where been distinctly turned on this point,—the possibility of conceiving a perfect discourse ? Has the question been agitated, Can there be in sacred eloquence, as in sculpture, in painting, in the drama, a development of the essential idea of perfection ? of the *beau ideal* in pulpit oratory ?—does æsthetical science embrace this field, also, in her domain, and can she establish here any firm, intelligible, and trustworthy principles ?

Distinguishing, then, as we may, between the theoretical and the empirical—between what is ideally practicable in pulpit eloquence and what has already been attained, we may assume that there is here room for indefinite progress and improvement. But while in any art there may be tendency towards perfection without any distinct apprehension of the essential idea of the art, by which, as a perfect standard, every product of the art may be tried, so, until that idea is grasped and the standard ascertained, it is clear that tendency must be irregular, slow and fitful. Even if that perfect idea is not fully realized, if only approximations to that standard are attained, still, unless essential error be embraced, that imperfect standard will not be without its value in inspiring and directing effort.

In the hope, therefore, of contributing something to the improvement of that most important art—pulpit oratory—we propose, at the present time, to attempt the development of the *essential idea of a perfect pulpit discourse.*

Before entering directly on this design, it will be of use to indicate and justify the ground that is taken in the discussion, as well as more clearly and distinctly to define our object.

It must have been observed, in what has already been said, that we regard pulpit eloquence as an *art*; and not merely an art in that more general sense in which none would deny it to be an art, a product of human skill, but in that stricter, more specific sense, in which it implies a definite aim or end, with a reference to which the whole product of the art is contrived and shaped. For the same may be said of eloquence which has been said with so much truth and beauty of the sister art of poetry. "There is an art, the child of a joyous nature, which sings from a mere inability to do aught but sing. Its song, as has been well said, is the voice of nature—the spontaneous outburst of its own and the national feeling. Very different is her sister art, which selects and considers, has views and follows aims; *art, self-conscious of art.*" There is an eloquence which merely overflows; which issues at no prompting of reason, and follows no guidance of reason; which flows out spontaneously because the fountain is full, and falls, it knows not, it cares not where. Such eloquence is rational only inasmuch as it proceeds from a rational soul, all whose motions are tinged with rationality. Reason, however, in the exercise of its own proper prerogative, exerts upon it no control. This eloquence we sometimes meet with. There are those who court it. The uncontrolled outpourings of a feeling soul, the unchecked rovings of a restless imagination are with them the highest effusions of eloquence. Such effusions—they cannot be called productions—are sometimes poured from the pulpit. They constitute, it is supposed, nature's pure eloquence uncorrupted by art. This kind of eloquence, which is mere expression without further object or aim, is not oratory. For oratory, in its essential import, is *address*, and necessarily implies an end out of itself. Such eloquence, therefore, is excluded from the comprehension of art in our notion of the term.

Art, in its stricter sense, necessarily implies the control of the reason; and reason never acts without an aim. Nothing, therefore, is worthy of the name of art in which there is not a definite end or aim proposed and pursued. Art is highest in its nature when the noblest aim is proposed. It is most perfect in degree, when that aim is most strictly and perfectly pursued.

We shall not stop here, from these almost self-evident propositions, to establish for pulpit oratory the highest rank among the arts; or to demonstrate the erroneousness of that opinion which regards the attentive study of the peculiar aim of sacred

eloquence and of the means of accomplishing it, together with all systematic training in the use of these means, as worthless or absolutely injurious, because it cramps the free movement of the spirit ; or to expose the folly, we may say the criminality of those, who, to their preparations for the pulpit, apply no severe effort of reason, but leave all to passion, fancy, and a purely spontaneous intellect. But it seems necessary to dwell, one moment longer here, in defining and vindicating the ground from which the development of the essential idea of the art of eloquence must proceed, in order to throw in an illustration or two for the preventing of misapprehension.

It is certain that different minds move very differently in the process of artistic construction. We may distinguish, particularly, two great classes, in this respect, not separated from each other in regard to the individuals which compose them by any well defined line, but represented rather by the extremes to which the one or the other of the individuals more or less approximates. In the one class, we observe *the subject* taking a firm and controlling hold of the producing mind, and, although working even in subordination to the final end or aim, yet seeming to proceed only from its own peculiar grounds, as if irrespective of any such end. In the other class, it is *the end* which seems to control ; and the subject seems to be merely an instrument to that end, although never managed in violation of its own nature. We may easily perceive how minds from both these classes might produce, from the same subject and with the same end, essentially the same perfect result, when we consider the matter from this point of view,—that truth in reference to a designated end admits, theoretically, of but one perfect development ; and that a particular end to be accomplished by a specified truth can be perfectly attained only in one particular way, and these forms, being in the one case a development, in the other a process, are coincident. We could not desire happier exemplifications of this distinction than are furnished to us in the two great poets of Germany, contemporaries and intimates. Schiller is the representative of the first class. In him the subject seems the great thing. Every where we discover the earnestness which characterizes one wholly possessed of his idea which labors within him struggling for expression, and never resting till it has fully developed itself in objective reality. What that shall be, it seems little anxious. With him art is a travail, and its product is a birth. Goethe is the opposite of all

this. It is the end which always seems uppermost in his mind. He seems to stand aloof from the subject, in respect to which he appears to be perfectly indifferent, and uses it only as a tool to the accomplishment of his object. With him art appears under the image of a sculptor, with the perfect form of an Apollo in his eye, taking almost with indifference his block of marble, and, under the controlling guidance of that ideal form, fracturing and chiseling till his idea is realized. Schiller's birth, it is however to be carefully remarked, is no shapeless monster, although living, nor is Goethe's product mere form without life. The birth and the product are identical. The mistake which we wish to correct or prevent is, that Schiller is not equally under the control of art as Goethe. The difference between them lies not here; but in the different manner in which art influences them. In both cases, there is a perfect conception of what art requires—of the definite end, and of the means of attaining it. In both there is a perfect observance of the end and adherence to the principles of art for its attainment. In the one case, art plants itself on the subject; in the other, upon the end or aim. In both it equally controls the production. Schiller's eloquence is the farthest possible removed from the so-called eloquence of nature.

It would be idle to inquire which method implies the greater mental power; as to inquire whether perfection does not involve a blending of the two. It is evident that in oratory the end and the subject, for they must correspond to each other,—the nature of a given subject determining the end, and a given end determining the character of the subject,—may, each, or both, determine which method shall predominate. In explanation, thus, the method of proceeding must be deduced from the nature of the subject. In persuasion, on the contrary, the method evidently must be more objective.

Regarding, then, sacred eloquence as an art in the stricter sense of the word, "art, self-conscious of art," a perfect product of this art, that is, a perfect pulpit discourse, must be strictly conformed throughout to the great end of all pulpit oratory. Not only must the end be seen and aimed at, but it must be undeviatingly pursued in every part of the discourse. It will be unnecessary for our present purpose to go into any exact determination of the essential idea of the art of sacred eloquence generally.\* It will be sufficient to take the popular notion of a

---

\* This point has been discussed at great length by Professor

sermon simply modified by the view we have taken of it as the product of an art, and, therefore, implying a definite end that is undeviatingly pursued throughout the discourse. This popular notion may be set forth in the following terms: a portion of scriptural text expressing some important truth, which, defined and modified according to the design or occasion of the discourse in the preacher's own language, is then developed and applied to the minds of the hearers with specific reference to the instruction or conviction of their intellects, the correction and excitation of their feelings, or the right direction of their wills, and always in subordination to the great end of all preaching, viz. the promotion of practical godliness.\* This idea of a pulpit dis-

---

Schott of Jena, in his "Philosophische und religiose Begründung der Rhetorik und Homilitik." As the result of some hundred pages of discussion, he gives the following as the fundamental principle of a theory of Eloquence: "So work through a continuous expression of thy inner life upon the feelings of men, that they, as free moral beings, shall unite their efforts in one and the same direction with thine; or, in other words, so work through the unity of thy own efforts, represented in continuous discourse on the feelings of men, that their wills shall unite themselves with thine in a direction which consists with the general strife after the ideal of perfect humanity." p. 443. Leipzig Ed.

\* We are aware that the propriety of regarding the text as a constituent part of a discourse has been questioned. But we can perceive no good reason for this. Certainly it is not a sufficient reason that it is not in the preacher's language. For on this ground we must reject all quotations as not properly belonging to the discourse. On the other hand, it seems to us essential. For is that preaching, in the common apprehension of the word, which is not founded on some portion of Scripture? Does not the text, at least ought not the text to enter into the discourse, and modify all its parts? Is it not part of the preacher's task to find for himself a text, to determine how much of Scripture shall be taken for the purpose? Is not, in other words, a part of the preacher's labor in invention to be expended here? The circumstance that it usually precedes and stands distinct from the discourse is a merely accidental one. It might with perfect propriety be placed after the introduction, as is sometimes done.

It might be thought, at a first glance, that the description of a public discourse given in the text does not include ex-

course may be symbolized thus: a scriptural seed germinated in the preacher's mind and developed in the form of a perfect tree, every part of which shall be determined in its character by the germinated seed.

If we analyze now this general description, we shall detect several particulars which enter into it as essential constituents, and which may be distinctly considered. One of these is *scriptural authority*. What we mean is, that unless there be authority derived from revelation for the particular sentiment developed and applied in the discourse, there is wanting an essential feature of a proper pulpit discourse. There is much, we are aware, that goes by the name of preaching, which contains nothing of this ingredient. The text is often regarded as a mere motto of a sermon; or as furnishing an occasion for saying something; or as supplying some suggestion which may be conveniently made the theme of a discourse; or as a mere formal appendage, the use of which is to be justified only on the ground of custom. We are aware that many preachers never dream of endeavoring to found the truth which they propose on any authority of revelation furnished in the text. It is enough if the proposition is in accordance with Scripture. The remotest allusion even in words is sufficient to justify, in their minds, the use of a particular passage. Some even degrade themselves and their calling by the pitiful attempt to show their skill in extorting some strange doctrine from a passage as foreign to it as possible, by applying an unwarrantable force to a word or an allusion that it may happen to contain. We can only say of such, that they utterly misconceive the nature of preaching. If in any thing preaching differs from other species of discourse, it is in this: that the sentiment—the proposition—is scriptural, clearly founded in revelation. If the use of a text can be vindicated on any ground, it is on this: that it conveys the authority of God to the sentiment and its application in the discourse. If it fail to do this, it is obnoxious to all the objections of Voltaire. It is worse than useless; and the custom of prefixing it to pulpit discourses, in our view, is far more honored in the breach than the observance.

---

getical discourse. It may not every variety of this species of discourse *in form*; but, yet, as we apprehend, it does in substance. The preacher's own apprehension of the truth is not always presented in a single proposition or in one single view, but it always must appear somewhere, even if in parts.

We regard, then, the office of the text, and from this we deduce the principle of selection and use to be this: to convey divine authority to the discourse. Herein it is distinguished from a mere motto, as well as from the motion which presents the subject of discussion at the bar or in the deliberative assembly. It enters into the very life of the discourse;—rather is the source from which life is derived, and the vehicle by which it is communicated, as the seed is the source of vitality to the tree. It is an essential part of the duty of the preacher to elaborate this vital principle of the text, and through the appropriate organs transmit it to the proposition, in which it is to appear again modified by the soil in which it has germinated, as the trunk from which the branch, foliage, and fruit of the entire discourse shall be derived. Since, moreover, preaching loses its essential character whenever it loses this divine authority from its inculcations, or, what in the present case is tantamount to this, whenever it *appears* to the hearer to lose this authority, it becomes necessary that the sentiment of the discourse not only be in fact revealed in the word of God, but also be clearly *shown* to be thus revealed by means of a lucid exposition. It must be made to appear to the comprehension of the popular mind, that the sentiment is the “mind of the will of God” in the particular passage of Scripture on which the discourse is founded:—not merely that it is a possible sentiment which the passage may convey, but *the sentiment*; otherwise, obviously, no positive authority from inspiration is derived to the discourse.

Inasmuch, however, as a discourse is a development of a truth in the mind of the preacher, it is evident that this divinely authorized sentiment must enter into his mind and partake of its forms of thought and feeling. In other words, it is essential to the perfect development of truth in a discourse, that *it be embodied in the forms of the individual mind*. Until this take place, it is foreign to that mind. The mind cannot enter into it and quicken it with its own life. The development, if possible, must be one in which there is no life. It must be in modes wholly independent of the laws of the preacher’s mind. It cannot possess the characteristics of his creative spirit. It is not, strictly, of his paternity.

This impress of the preacher’s mind, must, of course, be after the present state of the mind, as determined not only by natural idiosyncracies, by education and habit, but, also, by the particular circumstances, occasion, and design of the discourse. All

these enter into the soil in which the divine seed of truth is germinated, and determine the character of its development. Thus, while we retain for preaching its essential character—divine authority derived from the Scriptures, we yet provide for the fullest activity of the preacher's creative spirit. Thus the objection of Voltaire to the use of a text, that it imposes on the preacher the toilsome labor of regulating a whole discourse by a single line, is obviated; for no such shackles as are implied in the objection are laid on freedom of invention. The scriptural text is but the occasion of suggesting truth, which, as conatural to mind, must find in it a free reception, neither constraining nor constrained. As food, rather, in the process of assimilation in order to a new form of appearance, it quickens, refreshes, and strengthens. Nor, further, is there any necessary limitation placed on the preacher's power to adapt truth to the particular circumstances of the case. If all preaching, in order to be such, must be founded ultimately on the word of God; if the preacher can never, in compatibility with his distinctive character, desire to go out of that divine record for fundamental truth, the widest liberty is allowed that the nature of the case allows. For although specific applications of truth are not made in the word of God to all the varying circumstances of individual minds, still the general principles are there laid down which are required for any conceivable exigency of human life. Nor, on the other hand, is the view we have given justly liable to the charge of dangerous latitudinarianism, as sanctioning a too free use of scriptural truth. For while the sentiment of a discourse, in accordance with the foregoing principles, may sometimes be given in the original scriptural form, never, however, except when that is coincident with the form of the preacher's mind, yet, even when transformed and colored by his peculiar modes of view, it can never, by the correct application of those principles, go beyond the word of God; but must ever, as still retaining the authority of inspiration, remain circumscribed within it. This constitutes the very calling and function of the preacher as set apart to the "ministry of the word;"—that he not only select that truth of inspiration which the occasion requires,—rightly divide the word—but that he make the actual application to the minds and hearts of his hearers, in specific exhortations or reproofs, encouragements or warnings, doctrines or duties, which their peculiar condition demands. This ministry of the word must unquestionably be in the use of that language which he, as an individual, has learned to use

In other words, the truth of God must be clothed in that form of language in which alone it can appear to him to be truth in its particular bearings and applications.

It is involved in all that has been said, that a perfect discourse must proceed from truth as its gem. It becomes necessary here to determine more strictly what is implied in this statement; especially, as it would seem, vague notions are entertained in regard to what truth is when considered as the germ of a discourse. It is not enough, then, that the terms employed to express what is regarded as the sentiment of the discourse, properly correspond to the particular ideas intended to be expressed. The phrase, thus, "the righteousness of God," is correctly employed to denote certain ideas, or a certain complex idea. But, as we shall see, properly speaking it expresses no truth. Nor is it enough that the ideas thus denoted have their corresponding objects, either possible or actual. There may be a "God" and a "righteousness," or, more correctly, there may be a righteousness which is divine, and yet no truth be expressed in the phrase. For nothing is yet affirmed or denied. It is not asserted that there is "a righteousness of God;" nor that "God is righteous;" nor yet that the righteousness of God possesses certain characteristics, or is exercised in certain ways, or is manifested in certain modes. In short, there is no truth which can be regarded as a germ of a discourse until there is a proposition expressed or implied; until, in logical terms, there is a subject, predicate and copula. Without this, there can be no life in a theme of discourse which can give it development. Without this, it is impossible for the mind to proceed one step in invention. Paradoxical as this may appear at first to some, we are confident that they have only to understand fully what is meant by it, in order to be fully satisfied of its correctness. It is not meant, then, that a single term denoting a single idea may not be the cause or occasion of a thousand suggestions. The "sovereignty of God," or the divine sovereignty distinctly apprehended, may put the mind on an innumerable variety of views and apprehensions. It may lead to thoughts on God, his infinite nature, his perfections; and the mind may go off into any one of these various particular views, and follow one after another without end. But this is nothing but idle musing—empty reverie. There is no development of truth here; no invention in the proper sense. It is not till the mind conceives a proposition; as "God is a Sovereign," that it has any hold upon the subject for applying its inventive powers.

It is to be remarked, moreover, that it is not essential that the theme of a discourse should be actually presented in the form of a logical proposition. In many cases it would defeat in a great measure the very object of a discourse thus to state it. In all discourses, in fact, in which the design is not to prove, or to persuade, but to inform or excite, it would be very difficult to gather the subject into the compact form of a logical proposition. If, for example, it were the object of the preacher to enumerate the particulars which enter into the complex idea of the "divine sovereignty"—to describe it, or to vindicate the particular exercises of it; or to set forth the occasions on which it is exercised, or the like, it might be difficult to gather together into one single proposition all the various items of thought. This is, however, not at all at variance with what we have laid down. In all these cases there is a virtual copula, which makes the discourse, in each, one single discourse, having one vital principle diffusing itself into all the members. The distinction between a mere title and a thesis is thus apparent. A title determines nothing. It simply points to a particular road, along which somewhere the mind of the hearer or reader will find the subject. A proposition defines the exact field within which the view is confined. The title "History of France" thus tells us nothing as to what is to be the subject of the work. It may be a disquisition on the necessary ideas which make up this complex notion; what, in other words, is meant by the term "history," and what country is meant by the term "France." It may be a critique on some history that has appeared. It may be designed only to indicate the necessary sources from which a history of France must be derived. It is not till we pass to the proposition, "the History of France is so and so," that we get the proper thesis. So also in that part of the composition of a discourse which is called invention, it is not until the mind has planted itself on this *copula*—this *is*, that it can do any thing in its work. It is precisely here, we imagine, that the great difficulty of composing, particularly in young writers, lies. They have no idea of what they are to do, because their subject has not passed into the form of a proposition. The subject may be ever so familiar to them; they may be at no loss for words; but still the mind refuses to work. Let the theme be, for illustration, "hope." It is evident that they cannot move a step until they have determined what they are to do with their subject; whether show that there is such a feeling in the human

breast as hope ; or describe in what hope consists, or distinguish it from other affections ; or enumerate the objects or conditions of hope. This determination must be made at the outset ; and when it is made, the subject has assumed the nature of a logical proposition.

It is in the copula, we apprehend, that we are to seek the outermost limits of unity in a discourse. We say outermost limits. For, although it always must circumscribe and include every subject of which rhetorical unity can be predicated ; yet it does not always coincide with the precise limits of such unity. It is merely an *ultra quem non* boundary ; by no means, always a *citra quem non*. That is, unity is not always preserved when the subject can be presented in the form of a logical proposition. For instance, in a discourse on the "passion of Christ," in which the design is to exhibit the peculiarities which characterize it, unity will not be preserved, unless the discourse throughout be managed so as to accomplish one definite purpose in the hearer's mind—either inform his understanding merely, or, including this as a subordinate end, aim to excite his feelings, as of gratitude, confidence, love. With the latter design in view, unity would be violated, if instruction of the intellect were made any where any thing more than a mere subordinate object. This information of the understanding may be necessary, in order to the excitation of the feelings ; it may constitute a great part of the discourse. It must, nevertheless, be colored throughout by the *pathetic* character of the ultimate design of the discourse. It must not follow exclusively and independently the laws of the mere didactic. Those laws, on the other hand, must throughout bend to the higher authority of pathetic discourse, and be interpreted and applied accordingly. Much that would be demanded for a mere intellectual apprehension of the subject, must be passed over. Circumstances unimportant to such an apprehension, will need to be dealt upon, explained, and set forth at length, amplified and elevated by a suitable verbal expression. All discourse, thus centering as to its object, in the mind of the hearer, we must find the determining limits of unity there, and not in the subject merely. It still remains true, that not only does this unity of object frequently coincide with the proper unity of subject, as perhaps generally in didactic and argumentative discourse, but always this objective unity falls within the copula of a logical proposition.

We have thought proper to speak in this excursive and unmethodical manner, of that logical unity in a discourse which is founded on the copula, not merely because it is sometimes convenient to make use of this more genuine test, in judging of the unity of a discourse; nor merely that we might more fully indicate how far we coincide in opinion with those who find here the determination of unity in all discourse; but, also, because, in the actual construction of a discourse, it is in this that the speaker must find his first limits; from within these limits he is at liberty to draw supplies at his will; this field he must thoroughly survey, or he cannot know that all the essential means, or even the best means within his reach, are actually employed to accomplish his end. Indeed, for one great part of his work—logical invention—this is his only unity. In pure didactics, as in systems of science, in narrative and explanatory discourse, where the information of the understanding is aimed at, as well as in argumentation, as has been before intimated, this is the only unity, unless the discourse be regarded as constructed for particular minds, with partial or erroneous views. Where, however, the feelings are to be aroused, or the will is to be moved,\* the boundaries of unity become contracted. We proceed now to point out more distinctly and fully the precise nature of this unity, and to show the grounds of its necessity in a perfect discourse. We shall confine ourselves mainly to a purely dialectic consideration of the subject, deriving our illustrations from the definitions we have already presented.

The position before indicated, that the true unity of a discourse must be sought in the object to be effected in the hearer's mind, is sustained by the consideration that a discourse is a product of art, and must submit to all the æsthetic principles of art. Now it enters into the essence of an art, that it have a definite end, which is pursued by a regular method. Art, as critical or æsthetic, fixes its eye at this proposed end as at a focal point, and every ray that comes from the subject, which is not concentrated there, it excludes, as not within its prescribed method. It takes in that focal point the single beam

---

\* We leave out of the enumeration the imagination, because it can never be a lawful object with the preacher to aim merely or chiefly at the gratification of that department of the mind. The imagination is to be pleased only with a view to an ulterior end.

that is collected upon it, and so much of the radiant as furnishes that beam, and nothing more. All besides is extraneous to it, and is rejected. Here is the entire outline of that form, beyond which it does not look, and within which it requires there should be perfect fulness. It is evident, now, that it is the end which determines and limits every thing. The end determines the quantity of material, and the method in which it is disposed. It is true that certain limitations exist in the material. A sculptor would be accounted mad, who should undertake to chisel a Venus from a block of granite; as would be a preacher, who should aim to awaken a feeling of holy confidence in God from the history of Judas. So, also, the development of the subject towards a given end must, as proceeding from the subject, be governed in some measure by it. Still, it is clear, that the subject does not, in the first place, absolutely determine the particular end; and, in the next place, while the development must proceed naturally, that is, in a manner corresponding to the character of the subject, there is nothing in that to determine the direction. It is the end in view that at last comes in and directs the whole. Until that end appear, art evidently can judge nothing respecting the development. It might as well attempt to pass criticism on a pile of brick and mortar, while still ignorant of the purpose for which it was thrown together. It is true, brick and mortar would be very unfit materials for an obelisk. It is true, that brick and mortar must be laid together somewhat differently from blocks of granite, or wood of Lebanon. But, after all, art has nothing to do with the structure till the end or design is determined. Now, the very nature of the discourse fixes that end in the mind of the hearer. For wherefore does a man speak, but to enlighten, convince, please, arouse, or persuade; in short, effect some change in the mind of another. And these ends of instruction, conviction, and the rest, are essentially distinct, and must be sought by essentially different means. We are driven to the conclusion thus, that the unity of discourse must be found in the end to be effected, in the understanding, imagination, passions, or will of the hearer.

The necessity of this unity in a perfect discourse, is still further shown, from a consideration of the nature of method. Method is involved in the very idea of art. As art implies an end, so it implies a way to that end; and method is but that way. There are two things which relatively to each other

determine the law of method. These are the subject and the end proposed. If the end be conviction, then a perfect method requires that all in the subject fitted to produce conviction in the mind addressed, or at least so much as in the circumstances can best be brought forward to effect that purpose, be applied in a manner according with the laws of conviction on the mind of the hearer. There may be much in the subject fitted to instruct. There may be much addressed to gratify the imagination ; much to move the passions ; but all this must be separated and set aside, and left behind, and nothing but what is suited to convince be taken. It must be borne in mind, however, at the time, that the soul is not a mere bundle of separate faculties and susceptibilities ; but that it is essentially one ; and no department of its nature is influenced independently of the rest. To convince effectually, you must often work on the feelings, amuse the fancy, inform the intellect. Still, a perfect method requires that these aims be always strictly subordinate. So, also, what of the subject is thus taken must be borne directly forward to the proposed end—conviction. The argument may be clothed, no matter how richly, with the dress of the imagination ; it may be animated, no matter how thoroughly, with passion ; provided, always, that the hearer be only the more disposed thereby to admit it and feel its force. Whatever is done aside from this, especially whatever tends to lessen the force of argument, or to divert its aim from the mind of the hearer, is a deviation from the law of a perfect method.

The same argument in proof of the necessity of unity in a perfect discourse, a unity determined by the object to be effected in the hearer's mind, may be presented in another form, as derived from the idea of a discourse. We mean, when we speak of a *discourse*, certainly not two or more discourses. We mean *one* discourse. Now, what gives unity to a discourse ? How do we distinguish, here, between unity and plurality ? Is it enough that all be contained in a single volume ? Is it enough that all can be delivered in the space of an hour, less or more ? Is unity determined by volume or time ? Is it determined by the unity of the occasion ; so that if a preacher in the first half hour speak on the subject of faith, and in the second of the millennium, his discourse is one ; but if he present to-day one part of his argument in proof of the divine sovereignty, and the other the next week, his discourses are two ? Is it determined by the unity of the subject ; so that the discourse is perfectly one, if a

man, discoursing on the cross of Christ, should devote one half of his time to the question whether Christ bore his cross all the way to Calvary, and the other to an enumeration of the blessings purchased by his death? What determines a discourse to be one, unless it be a single end pursued steadily from the beginning of it to the close?

We are fully aware that contradictions to this idea may seem to abound on all sides around us. Perhaps a great part of the discourses that we hear, and a great part of those that we find in books, may seem to contradict this representation of unity in discourse. Preachers have not regarded unity as lying here. But is it not possible that the fullest and clearest convictions of the reason may be violated in practice? At all events, is it not possible that habits and customs may prevail for a long time in the community, which not a member of that community, when the matter is clearly presented to his mind, but will admit to be in violation of reason? But we must not suppose that there has been so much ignorance and mistake. We need carefully to distinguish, here, between a merely *verbal* and a strictly *logical* unity. A preacher who should announce his subject in the forms of the following partition: "I shall speak, first, of the nature of evangelical repentance; in the second place, show it to be a scriptural duty; and, in the third place, present some motives for the immediate performance of this duty," merely violates verbal unity. While, undoubtedly, it would be far better to make the verbal form in all respects perfect, and while a skilful artist would carefully avoid any such deformities and discrepancies in his work, still, so far as the development of the truth is concerned, the above partition does not offend against the law of unity. In order to induce men to repentance, which may be the high object in the supposed discourse, it may be necessary to explain the nature of repentance, and to show that it is enjoined in the word of God. If these particular objects were strictly subordinated to this ultimate end, unity would have been preserved.

It might seem at first sight, too, that the appending of inferences, remarks, observations, and the like, so customary throughout Christendom, would be in violation of strict unity. Doubtless unity is, in this usage, frequently violated, but by no means necessarily. The ultimate end in all preaching is, as we have before said, practical goodness; in other words, the direction and confirmation of the will in the way of holiness. But, in order

to move the will, it is necessary to arouse the feelings, to convince the judgment, or enlighten the understanding. So, in order to move the affections, it is necessary to convince of the reality of the object towards which they are to be excited, and to exhibit what in it is fitted to attract them. Explanation of the terms of a proposition is likewise necessary to a conviction of its truth : still further, the conviction of a general truth does not necessarily secure an actual assent to all the particulars comprehended in it. Hence, consistently with a regard to the strictest unity, the subject may be carried forward from one general truth to various particulars involved in it ; from explanation to conviction, and from conviction or explanation to the excitement of the feelings, and from either to appeals to the controlling principle of the soul. But it is equally clear that the reverse process cannot be adopted, as is, in fact, often done, without destroying unity. To turn from appeals to the affections back to argumentation or explanation is, so to speak, advancing backwards ; a new course is taken, and unity of method is lost.

There is, moreover, what is called the *topical* method of preaching, which it may appear difficult to vindicate with this view of unity in a discourse, and which yet we find adopted by the most celebrated and most successful preachers. The distinctive characteristic of this kind of preaching is, that the subject is distributed into several propositions, which are discussed each by itself, and with little or no reference to each other, or to any one final end. Sometimes, indeed, it may happen that a complex subject may be treated topically, as it is termed, without any necessary violation of unity. In an exegetical discourse, founded on any passage of Scripture, the most direct method may sometimes be that which is indicated by the several logical phrases of the text. So also in other kinds of discourse, what is called the topical method may happen to coincide with that which the just development of the subject may require. But these coincidences are merely accidental ; and, in truth, this topical method, regarded as a distinct species, is founded on no correct idea of proper method, and can be justified on no principle whatever. Indeed, the very phrase, topical method, involves contradiction and absurdity, and the propriety of using it can be supported only in indulgence to human weakness and error ; for, if method implies any thing necessarily, it implies unity, and a topical method is a method which has no proper unity. At least, if we may judge from the examples that are given to

illustrate this kind of method, there is no unity, as determined by the end proposed to be attained in the hearer's mind.

It was, we apprehend, this false method which occasioned Fenelon's\* rejection of divisions in a discourse. It is plain that he did not condemn what sometimes goes under the name of division. He recommends thus, in opposition to what he calls "our [the French] method of dividing," the practice of Demosthenes and Tully. And these men, he says, in these very words, "pointed out carefully all those things that ought to be distinguished; to each of them they assigned its proper place." Fenelon, then, at the very time when discarding division, distinctly recognized the necessity of *distinguishing* the parts of a subject, and, moreover, the necessity of *arrangement*, which presupposes what may without impropriety be denominated division. But it may be profitable to endeavor to get a still more clear and distinct notion of Fenelon's idea of that division which he so utterly repudiates as irreconcilable with all true eloquence. He every where regards the ancients as true models in oratory. If any one of the ancient orators could be singled out as exemplifying more exactly than any other his idea of a perfect method, free from all that false division which offends him so much, it would be, without doubt, Demosthenes, every one of whose orations, he expressly says, "is a close chain of reasoning." Let us examine for a moment, then, one of his perfect models. We will take that first of all oratorical performances, the oration for Ctesiphon. The apparent subject in this oration was the alleged illegality of a certain decree proposed by Ctesiphon in the senate of Athens. The only issue that could be made from the charge against Ctesiphon was this of illegality; and the only points to be considered were, Are the allegations in the decree of Ctesiphon true, as the law requires? Was Demosthenes, as an officer of the state, debarred by law from the privilege of receiving a crown? And were the time and place of the proposed coronation in accordance with the laws of Athens providing for such matters? These questions arise at once from the three counts of Æschines' indictment. But it is evident that neither Æschines nor Demosthenes regarded this as the main issue of the case. Æschines, indeed, most earnestly insists that Demosthenes should be confined to this issue of illegality; but, at the same time, he shows that he did not

---

\* Dialogues on Eloquence.

regard this as the great question, and directs his efforts toward quite another issue, involving that of illegality, indeed, but otherwise widely to be distinguished from it. The true issue of the case was between Demosthenes and Æschines as personal rivals, and representing two great political parties and systems of administration. The decision involved the triumph of one party and the overthrow of the other. These two systems of policy were not, indeed, viewed on their own exclusive merits. With the utmost art all the personal qualities and acts of the two great representatives of those adverse systems were wrought up into the comparison. The true parties in the trial were not Ctesiphon and the state, but Demosthenes and Æschines. It was, therefore, but a small thing with either advocate to secure the condemnation or acquittal of Ctesiphon. The great and single object proposed by each was to produce in the minds of the judges a conviction that in all their relations to the state, in a just comparison of their personal characters and civil conduct, himself was deserving of approbation and his adversary of condemnation. At this one object Demosthenes aims the whole of his oration. Starting from the position in which the case lay in the minds of the judges, after the oration of Æschines, he proceeds undeviatingly forward, clearing his way as he advances, adapting himself in his thoughts, his feelings, his language, all along strictly to the stage of his progress; at first modestly, as if in doubt of his reception by his judges; then more confidently; and, finally, with the most commanding assurance of triumph, till he fastens his cause firmly on the convictions of his judges. Here we find, indeed, Fenelon's "close chain of reasoning." In one sense there is nothing broken. Certainly there is progress every where—no halting, no retrogression, no digression. There is, strictly, no repetition. His work at the time is thoroughly done, and he has no occasion to turn back to supply a defect. All, indeed, is perfect, admirable, divine. But is there no division? If it be essential to division that the parts should be designated numerically—as first, secondly, etc.—then there is no division. If it be essential to division that all the topics which are to be introduced be distinctly announced at the outset, then we find no such division here. But we do find parts; we find also express intimations of transition from one part to another; we find even a logical distribution of most of the parts of his oration formally given in the beginning. Demosthenes' eloquence is not the eloquence of Chatham—a storm-cloud of

passion, dazzling, indeed, with electric flashes of thought, yet wild, orderless, except in the wild order of stormy passion. It is more like the tropical sun—mild and gentle at its first rising, kindling with brighter light and intenser heat with regular progress, till every thing that comes under its path lies scorched, withered, and prostrate under its mid-day beams. Every where there is aim, progress, order. Its effects are not transient, like the eloquence in which passion predominates over reason—in which reason only so far is admitted as is necessary to communicate passion; for even passion participates in a rational soul, and must be addressed in a rational way. In Demosthenes, passion is ever but a subordinate—an auxiliary. Intellect ever predominates and rules and directs every thing. His method, consequently, is method in its true sense—ever progressive towards a definite end which is never lost sight of. While passion is not wanting—while intellect is ever fired with passion, we may still trace the progress; may even measure off the several stages. He never forgot that his judges were men; and with perfect art he allows them from time to time periods of repose from the exhaustion of strained attention. More than this, he places along his way the mile-stones which might indicate to them the fact and the degree of their progress. In this respect it would seem as if Fenelon's precepts had been at the helm of all his movements. Indeed, we cannot better illustrate the method of Demosthenes in this oration, or Fenelon's idea of a perfect plan of a discourse, than by quoting his language, and then comparing with it the actual course adopted by Demosthenes. "We ought at first," says Fenelon,\* "to give a general view of our subject, and endeavor to gain the favor of the audience by a modest and insinuating introduction, and the genuine marks of candor and probity. Then we should establish those principles on which we design to argue; and in a clear, easy, sensible manner propose the principal facts, dwelling on the circumstances which we intend to make use of afterwards. From these principles and facts we must draw just consequences, and argue in such a clear and well-connected manner, that all our proofs may support each other; and so be the more easily remembered. Every step we advance, our discourse ought to grow stronger, so that the bearers may feel more and more the force of the truth; and

---

\* *Dialogue II. on Eloquence.* We have followed mainly the translation of Mr. Stevenson.

then we ought to display it in such lively images and movements as are proper to excite the passions." Such is the method, in every feature enumerated, pursued by Demosthenes. We have "the modest and insinuating introduction;" the "general view of the subject," with the mode of handling it; the "facts" and "circumstances" constituting the technical "narration;" then the particular statement of the proposition with the mode of defending it, so far as it could with propriety be made, and then the argument presented in "such a clear and well-connected manner, that all the proofs support one another." What is to be particularly observed is, that these several parts of division are all indicated by the orator as he passes from one to another. Such a division, then, as this is not what Fenelon condemns. But there is something more to be remarked on the method of this oration; for we have not yet indicated its entire plan and scope. We have before said that the defence of Ctesiphon was not the main object of the oration. Were this the case, the orator would have stopped with the defence of the illegality; with the vindication of the impeached allegations in the decree that Demosthenes was worthy to receive a crown; the proof that no law prohibited his receiving it, and the defence of the time and place of the coronation. This defence occupies less than one half of the oration. When this is completed, this defence of "the illegality," to which Aeschines was so anxious to confine him, he has accomplished but a small part of his design, although an indispensable part. From this point his manner and tone are wholly changed, indicating an important change in the course of his argument. Now he becomes the assailant; and now, instead of the warrior behind his shield, coolly protecting himself against the arrows of a distant enemy, we find the hot combatant in the onset and charge, bearing down his foe, able no longer to assail, but satisfied to defend, with all the force of argument and invective. Here lies the unity of this master-piece of oratory. Here is seen the perfectness of its method. All this Fenelon fully approves. Yet here is division—all that can be meant by division in a discourse. What then is that division which drew forth so severe denunciations from this able critic? If we turn to the pulpit eloquence of France, we shall see at once that it was not a division of the one subject in a discourse; but, in strict language, a division of the discourse into two or more subjects. We shall find what some at least have described as the *topical* method. Even the very first of

French preachers, worthy to be ranked among the first orators of the world, are not free from what we, perhaps presumptuously but yet, we think, supported by the authority of Fenelon, firmly believe to be a serious defect and fault. We may open a volume of their sermons almost at random for an exemplification. We will take the sermon of Massillon "for the day of the Epiphany."<sup>\*</sup> His text is Matt. 2: 2, "We have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him." His plan is thus proposed. "Let us collect these three characters indicated in our gospel, which may instruct us in all our duties in respect to the truth: truth received, truth dissembled, truth persecuted." We discover here, indeed, certain propositions finely balanced against each other, all sustaining some relation to a centre truth—three graces dancing together around a common throne. But we fail to see any vital connexion between them; any oneness of object pursued in them; any thing worthy of the name of method observed in the discussion of them. We might read or hear the discourse with deep interest. We might leave it deeply impressed. But no one thought has been fixed in our convictions. All is vague and indefinite. In fact we have three different discourses instead of one.

Perhaps no one of the French preachers has exerted a more powerful and extensive influence on the character of our preaching than Saurin. We find in him every where the same characteristic in regard to the plan of his discourses. It matters little where we open the volume. 'The sermon "on the little success of Christ's ministry" will fairly exemplify the character of his discourses in the particular we are considering. It is founded on Rom. 9: 21, "All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people." He thus lays out his plan. "I design, first, to show you the unsuccessfulness of Christ's ministry as a prodigy, as an eternal opprobrium to that nation in which he exercised it. And I intend, secondly, to remove your astonishment, after I have excited it; and by making a few reflections on you, yourselves, to produce in you a conviction, yea, perhaps, a preservation of a certain uniformity of corruption, which we cannot help attributing to all places and to all times."<sup>†</sup>

---

\* Œuvres de Massillon, Tom. I. p. 102. Paris Ed. 1835.

† Sermons translated by R. Robinson, Vol. III. p. 129. Lond. Ed. 1796.

These specimens will suffice to show how far Fenelon was justified in his criticism on French preaching. "There remains no true unity after such divisions, seeing they make two or three different discourses, which are joined into one only by an arbitrary connexion." They will, also, we think, suffice to show that what is called the topical method, in so far as it is to be distinguished from other species of method, is necessarily destructive of unity, and is unworthy, except in the loosest use of language, to receive the name of method.

We have hitherto confined ourselves, in endeavoring to show the indispensableness of unity to a perfect discourse, to the merely dialectic argument—to that which is derived from the very idea of a discourse, as being a product of art, and therefore necessarily implying a definite end, and a regular method which ever aims at one, and, also, implying unity of design in the very denomination—a discourse. But we may be met here by the objection, that names are of little account; if preaching may effect its object, as it would seem to be admitted it may, without this nice attention to the principles of art, it is idle to shackle one's self by endeavoring to observe them: it is wiser and better to leave genius to its own course, unbridled and unfettered. It would be enough to say, in answer to this, that the terms we have used denote, we believe, ideas that agree with their objects; and only so far as there is this accordance, is there any force in the argument we have presented. Hence, unless human reason is unworthy of confidence where, if any where, it is entitled to it, in the construction of language, such an argument, in its nature, is the most conclusive of all arguments. But we may take other ground. We may maintain that even genius cannot prosecute its flight so happily and so successfully in any other way; that preaching cannot, in any other way, accomplish so well its object.

Genius has its laws of working. It is but a property of the reason, and is subject to the laws of reason. It is in the highest degree absurd, to suppose that it can soar as well out of its element as in it; that it can pursue its divine work of creation as successfully against the very principles of its rational nature, as in accordance with them. When is genius successful in its work? Is it when it is aimless? What is a perfect product of genius? Is it not necessarily one that has form, regularity, design; in short, oneness in its object? But, in fact, when is the creative work of genius most happily accomplished? When,

judging from experience, does the mind invent most easily, most happily? We answer, with unhesitating confidence, never but when there is unity in its aim. It is even to this that Massillon owes his brilliant success as a pulpit orator. He aimed ever and only at the heart of his hearer. He never sought at the same time to amuse the fancy, to convince the judgment, to instruct even the intellect, as predominant or co-ordinate objects. He seized the richest and boldest images, he wielded the strongest arguments, he concentrated upon his subject the intensest light of illustration, only that he might more effectually reach the heart. He failed only in not having pursued a strict unity in thus reaching the heart. There are emotions of a mutually opposing nature in the human soul; they cannot co-exist in their most vehement exercises; and when accidentally existing at the same time, they strive each to master and exterminate the other. He, therefore, who endeavors to awaken such contrary emotions at the same time in the bosom, and excite them to their highest degrees of exercise, must necessarily fail of his object. Even where the emotions are not thus directly opposed to each other, it is not always the case that the soul will burn most deeply when the fuel is divided and fed out to different sensibilities. It is an undisputed law of the human mind, that its convictions and its passions go out farthest when but a single direction is opened to them; that its impressions are strongest and deepest when the tie is single and unchanged. Thus in both ways does unity of object perfect the discourse. It facilitates invention in the speaker, and deepens impression in the hearer.

We have dwelt thus long on the nature of unity, and its necessity in a perfect discourse, because this is fundamental. For it is the condition of all life in eloquence, as well as in every thing else; and without it, there is no such thing as development possible or conceivable. Even when a speaker impresses to some degree without observing it in its strictness, there is a partial observance. In fact, in every such case, there are unities corresponding with the number of objects pursued. Each of these may have its life, and so far its impressiveness. We are ever reminded, in such case, however, of the poverty of the soil, which, instead of sending up to heaven a tall majestic tree, with its stately trunk and wide expanded branches, its exuberant foliage and perfect fruit, can produce only sorry shrub oaks, numerous it may be, but worthless. The distinct conception of

the essential unity of a discourse, as defined by the particular object in the hearer's mind, brings with it, by their necessary connexion, every other idea that enters into the discourse. It affords the only stand-point of criticism from which the excellence of a discourse can be judged.

It remains only, in order to complete our representation of the ideal of a perfect discourse, to consider this essential unity as developed, according to the nature of the germ or the subject, as conceived in the speaker's mind. Now, from the very nature of truth and its correspondence with the laws of mind, this natural development must be symmetrical. It is not more certain that the material particles which constitute any of the various crystallized substances of the earth will, if unimpeded from without, arrange themselves into the perfect form of a crystal, than that truth, brooded over and warmed into life by the contemplating intellect, will shoot forth, as in a growth, and expand itself in perfect symmetry and order. Doubtless, there is a great diversity in mental operations. Doubtless, the same truth, objectively considered, will expand itself variously in various minds. The same grain-seed would develope itself very differently in different soils. Moreover, the same proposition, as proposed from without, becomes greatly modified in the particular mind; and derives a hue from the peculiar color which constitutional temperament, habit, and the circumstances of the moment may impart. Still all mind, as the first great creation of perfect wisdom and order, the very image of its creator, in its unconstrained, unperverted workings, proceeds in accordance with the principles of order. As even, although the soil be feeble, the germ will still send forth a stalk, a head, a seed, ever proper to its kind; so the feeble intellect will develope truth in accordance with the peculiar nature of the truth, unless perverted by false taste and corrupt habits. As truth thus ever admits and demands this symmetrical development, so the mind, to be addressed, is most happily and successfully reached and impressed, when the truth is presented in this its natural symmetry and order.

The living unity of the thought which constitutes the subject of the discourse, as defined by the object, must, moreover, if it be preserved, maintain its own peculiar characteristics throughout the development. The oak develops itself ever under one general law. It impresses its own nobility not only on the trunk, the bark, the boughs, but also on the foliage and bloom.

In every part you detect the peculiar properties of the oak. It is not more unnatural for the peach to ripen on the bough of a sycamore, or the rich bloom of the magnolia to unfold itself on the chestnut, than warm appeals to the passions to be scattered along the path of cold narration or philosophical exposition; for the branches to unite themselves to the trunk by the twigs and leaves, than argumentative inference and explanatory remark to follow urgent exhortation. The mind is subject to its own laws in all its operations, and stubbornly resists every effort to move it in contradiction to those laws. Truth that is unfolded discordantly with these laws cannot meet with a ready entrance. Persuasion cannot thus be made to precede conviction; nor excitement of the feelings, intellectual apprehension. The mind refuses to believe before it understands, and to be turned off from the warm sunny regions of the fancy or of the feelings to the icy sterility of pure argumentation. It equally refuses, when it would feel strongly, or think clearly and vigorously, to put itself at the beck of mere caprice, and follow the motions of an ignis fatuus. Not only is it repugnant to taste, but hostile to intellectual apprehension and conviction, as well as to strong feeling and decision, to mingle species with genus, and genus with species; to blend together in the same discourse heterogeneous views, even although they may have some coherence with the general subject; to make oaks, in short, spring from corn seed, or twig and leaf from the root or trunk instead of from the bough and branch.

Every living germ, finally, seeks *complete* and *perfect* development. Nature, unobstructed from without, never stops short of what is perfect in its kind. One-sided developments, truncated, or dismembered shapes, prove that her work has been interfered with.

It is the undertaking of perfect art, to give nature a free and full development, unimpeded by any foreign force. It can never deem its work completed, until the development be carried forward in all its parts, to the suspending of the last leaf and the coloring of the last flower.

Such is the conception of a perfect work of art in eloquence; a single germ of thought germinated in a congenial soil, expanded in natural symmetry, unity of character to completeness in every limb, leaf, and fibre.

Our discussion has been so far extended, that we shall forego obviating some objections that may be raised to the view we

have presented. We entertain a firm conviction that the view presented is founded in truth ; and that, if we have succeeded in giving a proper representation of it as it lies in our own mind, it will commend itself to the convictions of others. If it be correct, it certainly is of the highest importance to the pulpit orator that he thoroughly possess himself of this idea of a perfect discourse. Not only will it enable him to render each particular effort more effective on the minds of his hearers, but it will also enable him to secure a richer variety to his preaching ; for every particular discourse will have its own particular mode of development. It will likewise, as we have had occasion to remark, contribute greatly to fertility of invention, and not less to the culture of taste ; for every new effort in composition will afford a fresh occasion for the exercise of taste. It will, moreover, save him from that fatal mental condition into which the regular pastor, who, Sabbath after Sabbath, for years and years of a laborious life, must come before his people with the prepared word of exhortation and instruction, is so liable to fall : the habit of regarding the preparation for the pulpit a mere drudgery—as mechanical a thing as the treading of the furrow by the ploughman, calling for no effort of creative power, and consequently giving no spring or life to any mental faculty.

#### ARTICLE IV.

##### THE NATURAL HISTORY OF MAN IN HIS SPIRITUAL RELATIONS.

*By SAMUEL ADAMS, M. D., Professor of Chemistry and Natural History, Illinois College.*

Und was die innere Stimme spricht,  
Das täuscht die hoffende Seele nicht.

SCHILLER.

##### *Introduction.*

ALL sentient beings are subject to wants. That is, they are so constituted as to render the attainment of certain ends necessary to their very existence. Each animal is gifted with certain powers of activity, and subjected to certain instinctive desires or vital appetences. To find a sphere for the exertion of its powers,—to attain the objects of its desires, is a necessity of its

being. When all its powers find their appropriate sphere of action, and its sentient nature meets the objects towards which it aspires, *then* it is that the animal may be said to *live and enjoy*. To fail of either of these ends involves imperfection, disorder, decay, or death. No animal is a fit representative of his species, which is not allowed to move in the sphere assigned to it by its Creator. That is not the *real eagle* that is trained up within the confines of a cage. If you would see the royal bird in all the sublimity and perfection of his nature, you must view him with giant wing sporting upon the dark bosom of the storm, and listen to his wild scream, shrilling above the roar of the tempest. The *real lion* is not reared within the limits of bars and grates. You may see him now crouching beneath the dark jungles of the East, and now darting with terrific fury upon the huge boar of the forest.

Thus it will be seen that every animal is organized for a peculiar destiny. To reach that destiny is its good, but to fail of that object is to lose the great end of its existence. Happily, however, the countless millions of living beings that inhabit our earth are not doomed to this disappointment. Sentient nature, as it is displayed around us, exhibits one vast system of harmonious relations. We see, on the one hand, every variety of active powers, each moving in a sphere of delightful activity; on the other, every appetite and desire enjoying in full fruition all its objects of gratification. The eye is adapted to the light, and to receive through it the impressions of the pleasing variety of form and color of the objects and scenes around us. The wing finds delightful exertion in cleaving the buoyant air,—the webbed foot and fin in gliding through the liquid wave. No want is unsupplied; no desire unsatisfied. Each sentient existence awakes to the enjoyment of its season of delightful activity, and finds every longing satisfied, till at length it gently sinks to its last repose on the kindly bosom of nature.

These are no speculations of a vain philosophy, but the sober deductions of an enlightened reason. It is a principle of universal belief, that there is somewhere in nature a supply for every want, a scope for the free exercise of every living power; and this conviction is confirmed by the observation and experience of all time. Some may be disposed to maintain that there exists an exception to this principle in the history and present condition of the human race. We admit the existence of an *apparent* exception here; and it is one object of this discussion to

set aside this apparent exception, and to show that all the wants of human nature have been provided for, and that man is placed within the reach of a satisfactory good.

All will admit the truth of the principle above stated, in its application to the inferior animals. The known adaptations of the animal organs and instincts to each other and to external nature, form the basis of a most interesting class of deductions from geological phenomena. On this principle, a skillful naturalist is able to deduce from a single bone of an unknown animal the forms and connexions of the other parts, as well as the instincts and habits of the animal to which it belonged. The illustrious Cuvier, by a profound study of natural history, arrived at such a knowledge of the great principles of harmony and adaptation which run through the anatomical structure of animals, that he was able to construct from single bones models of entire skeletons of extinct species; and subsequent discoveries of whole skeletons proved that he had not mistaken the plan of the great Architect of nature. From the organic remains found imbedded in the crust of the earth, geologists have inferred the forms, sizes, habits, and instincts of its primeval inhabitants. Thus they are able to calculate, with some degree of certainty, the states in which our globe has existed in past periods of time, as well as the changes that have swept over its surface during the lapse of ages. The argument runs thus: "This bone belongs to a skeleton, whose joints admit of a certain range and variety of motions. These motions must have been performed by a corresponding muscular apparatus, and connected with a peculiar organization of the great central organs of life, and of all those parts of the body subservient to them. Such an organization must have destined the animal to a given mode of life, and imposed upon it peculiar instincts and habits. At the time when this animal existed, the earth must have afforded it scope for the exercise of its powers of activity, and yielded it the means of satisfying the cravings of its nature. That is, the earth must have been in a given state at the period when this animal lived."

Thus it may be seen how the human mind, starting from so small a hint as a single bone of an extinct animal, presumes to trace back the path of Providence through the lapse of unknown ages, through changes and revolutions too vast for the conception of finite intellects. At first view, the mind is startled at the boldness of such gigantic conclusions from premises apparently

so insignificant. But admit that natural history is a science—that it is a principle of this science that all the races of animated existences are provided with an ample sphere of activity and enjoyment; and the conclusion is bound to the premises with the very chain of destiny itself. Deny this principle, and you not only invalidate the above deductions from geological phenomena, but you sweep away the foundations of the science of natural history itself. Science is but the expression of the permanent relations and adjustments of nature. But if this principle is not true, there is nothing permanent in the relations of sentient beings. Deny this principle, and the golden chain of being is broken. The boasted harmony and order of nature become wild discord and inextricable confusion. All the generations of past ages, together with existing races, are but the abortions of chance, without meaning in the system of nature, without definite character or fixed relations. Indeed, if this principle be denied, the supposed organic remains found imbedded in the crust of the earth, are no longer any evidence even of the existence of ancient species of animals, now extinct; much less of a former condition of the surface of the earth corresponding to their natures. We might as well adopt the views of some of the earlier opposers of geological speculations, and contend that these supposed bones and shells of animals are only the accidental forms which matter assumed at its original formation; if, indeed, absolute and universal skepticism were not a more rational conclusion from such premises. This principle, then, must stand, or we must cease to talk of the order of nature—the harmonious adjustments and consentient relations of universal being.

We have dwelt with some detail upon the above illustration, because we wish to present clearly to the mind of the reader the principle which it involves, and because we intend, on this principle, to argue from the nature of man to his relations and destiny, from his moral powers and spiritual wants to his spiritual relations. It may, however, seem superfluous to expend so much labor upon this point, inasmuch as the universal application of the principle at which it aims is admitted, even by those who are most skeptical in matters of religion. Nay, the skeptic himself has eagerly appealed to this very principle, when he has imagined that it would arm him with a weapon of attack against the divine authority of the Bible. In this way an attempt has been made to invalidate the Mosaic account of the

creation. From the organic remains imbedded in the crust of the earth, it has been argued, that the history of our globe goes back to an antiquity far more remote, than the period fixed in the book of Genesis. We shall not stop to clear up this difficulty, but will simply remark, that this argument derives its main support from this very principle, for which we are contending; viz. that nature supplies to all the races of animated existences a sphere for the exertion of their powers, and objects to satisfy their wants. The principle is true. We grant to the skeptic its full benefit, and all the conclusions *logically* deduced from it. We claim the advantage of the same principle in investigating the spiritual relations and destiny of man.

Before entering upon the main subject, it is desirable to remove a prejudice which may exist in the minds of some, against the principle which we have attempted to illustrate, growing out of the scene of disorder presented by the human race. Admit that man is a moral being, and we have a solution of the moral disorder in which the race is involved, without invalidating the principle which runs through all the inferior ranks of sentient existence. That a moral being, like man, should for a long time fail to reap the good, that lies along the path of his existence, is no proof that a satisfying good nowhere exists for him. The *possibility* of going wrong is a necessary element in the relations of a moral being. The possibility of attaining a satisfying good is not only a necessary element in the relations of a moral being, but a *claim* of all animated existence upon the bounteous goodness of nature. The lower animals are chained, as it were, to their destiny by the force of impelling and regulating instincts. They have only physical wants to be provided for. Man is gifted with the powers of reason and deliberate choice. He has intellectual and moral, as well as physical wants. Man may fail to attain a satisfying portion by preferring the transient to the permanent, the present to the future, the lower to the higher good. With the brute there is no conflict between the momentary and the enduring, the present and the future. With him there is no lower, no higher good. The present is to him fraught with an overflowing fullness of enjoyment, and the future is secured to him without his care or concern. He has no intellectual and moral cravings—no conscience to rebuke his entire abandonment to the allurements of sense and the gratifications of the moment.

If it be admitted, then, that man does sometimes or frequently

fail of a satisfying good, his condition is still reconciled to the harmony of nature; if it is also admitted that a real good exists for him, and is attainable in the struggle of moral probation to which he is called, especially is this true, if we consider that his very feeling of want and desolation is a providential means of detaching him from the pursuit of unsatisfying objects, and of leading him to the fountains of true happiness. There is, therefore, no reason to blame the moral government that is over us, so long as man is conscious of his errors and failures, and a voice within prompts him to aspire towards the true good of his being, and to struggle on to its attainment.

We come, next, to inquire, What are the spontaneous movements and aspirations of the human mind? What are the inherent powers and instinctive wants of human nature? These questions being answered, we are led with unerring certainty to the existence of corresponding exterior relations, an appropriate sphere of action, and satisfying objects. If it be not so, man is an absurdity in the system of nature. The existence of such an absurdity cannot be admitted, unless it be absolutely demonstrated, that the objects which can satisfy the wants of human nature, do not lie within the reach of the human faculties.

As this inquiry is to be conducted purely upon the principles which are admitted in the investigations of Natural History, it might be supposed that the Bible should be excluded from the discussion. But there is one aspect, in which it may be viewed in this inquiry without violating the principles which we have prescribed to ourselves. The Bible, so far as it relates to superior powers and intelligences and man's relations to them, can, as we apprehend, be consistently viewed in only one of two aspects. It must be received as a revelation from heaven to man, or as a record of human thought and feeling—as the expression of the mind of God, or as showing the workings of the human mind with regard to its supposed unseen relations. In this latter aspect, we will consent to view the Bible in this discussion. It is not necessary for the purposes of this argument to claim for it even historical accuracy, much less divine inspiration. We will consent to view it, where the skeptic places it, on the same level with the pagan mythologies. We hope, however, in the course of this discussion, to be able by logical argument, to raise it from that degradation to the high elevation which it occupies in the mind of the true believer.

In investigating the wants and tendencies of human nature, we shall endeavor to penetrate into the secret chambers of consciousness, and elicit her testimony on the subject ; not by rack and torture, but by calm questionings and patient and silent waiting for her deliberate answers. As far as the limits which we have prescribed to ourselves will permit, we shall endeavor to trace the windings of human thought and feeling on the page of the historian, in the song of the poet, in the harangue of the orator, in the mazes of mythology, and in the sacred books of the Hebrew and the Christian. We shall endeavor to catch the still small voice of humanity amid the rage and din of fanaticism, and to distinguish the pure gushings of religious emotion amidst the muddy waters of superstition. We shall not be very particular to inquire what have been the *musings* of theological dreamers, or what the *theories* of cold speculatists, who would endeavor, by square and rule, to frame a system of the universe suited to the scale of their own narrow views. But the question is, How does the common mind *feel* amidst the great spectacle of nature ? How does the great soul of humanity respond to the impression made upon it by the universe in which it moves ?

#### *The Reality of Spiritual Existences.*

In attempting to investigate the wants and tendencies of human nature, the mind is at once struck with the uniformity with which man, in all ages, has pushed his hopes and his fears beyond the visible and the finite, and has sought for objects to satisfy the longings of his soul, for a sphere for the exercise of his powers, in the mysterious unseen and future. In other words, man has ever recognized the unsatisfactory nature of a mere world of sense, and has sought relief for the unsatisfied aspirations of his nature, in his *belief* in an unseen world of spiritual existences. The mind is not satisfied with merely being able to imagine such a world and such beings. It must *believe* in them, and live in reference to them, in order to feel that it lives worthily. Upon this belief, and acting with reference to it, rest the true happiness, the real dignity of man. This last point might be substantiated by an extensive appeal to facts. But the reader's own observation and experience will bear ample testimony to its truth. Is there, then, no spiritual world ? Are there no higher existences than man ? Is there no nobler destiny for

him than to pine through life with unsatisfied longings, and then to rot in everlasting forgetfulness? Is the vital food of the soul a lie?—a lie, too, which, if its real nature were discovered, would prove its death poison? Does a tolerably comfortable existence in this life, depend upon the mind's being able to impose upon itself all sorts of mockeries and delusions? Or have we here, in analogy with the whole range of animated existence beside, the instincts of nature aspiring toward their real objects, toward the true destiny of man? This must be admitted, or Natural History is no longer a science.

Thus the existence of the spiritual instincts of human nature, proves the existence of the spiritual objects toward which they move. To determine the direction and scope of these instincts, is to determine the nature of the spiritual world to which man stands related, the character of those spiritual beings to whom he is allied, and his relations to them. This is the task upon which we now enter.

#### *The Being of a God.*

Man finds himself in the midst of powers over which he exercises no control. He is borne along by a current, which he can neither curb nor direct. In other words, man is compelled to feel that he is a dependent being;—the sport of chance,—a prey to malignant powers,—or the child of rational, omnipotent Beneficence. The latter conviction is that alone in which the mind can rest and feel satisfied. The existence of an omnipotent, benevolent Deity, is a want of the human soul. Hence, at the first sober glance at this subject, the idea of a God rises in awful sublimity before the mind, as the *one thought* which has ruled the destinies of mankind from the earliest records of fabulous antiquity down to the present moment. If our design were limited to the demonstration of the existence of a God we might stop here, and rest our argument upon an appeal to the universal conviction and feelings of the human race. We might show, that the only rational account of these convictions is found in the admission of the Divine Existence. But we propose to give the Natural History of the idea and belief of a God; to trace them from their first dawning in the infant mind to their full splendor in the maturity of reason, to show that the mind is so constituted that in the midst of the great spectacle of the universe it necessarily finds a God.

What then is the origin and history of this idea and belief? The first step towards answering this question consists of an analysis of the idea. Our true notions of a Deity consist not in the conception of any sensible form, though this may incidentally arise in most minds in connexion with the name of God. The idea of a God and the belief in his existence, recognize the attribute of infinite power, wisdom, goodness, justice, etc., as embodied in the nature and character of an invisible being. How then does this idea spring up in the mind? The idea must have a foundation for its existence in nature, otherwise it could not exist. This foundation must consist of the phenomena of the world without and the world within conspiring together to engender the idea. A belief in a corresponding reality is forced upon the mind, together with the idea. This will appear evident if we consider, that the idea of a God is made up of elements, which have arisen in the mind in its converse with the world; and that these elementary ideas have been forced upon the mind, together with a belief in their corresponding realities. It is impossible for the ideas of power, wisdom, or goodness, ever to arise in the mind apart from the belief that power, wisdom, and goodness, are realities. The reality, therefore, of the divine attributes is forced upon our belief. But the embodying of these attributes into a person, that is, the forming of an idea of God, must have a foundation in nature. What, then, is this foundation? Is it to be found in the wayward sports of a truant fancy, or in the combining power of the mind, under the strong direction of impelling principles, which will not let it rest short of the idea of a God and belief in his existence? The universality of the idea and the belief does not countenance the notion that they spring from the caprices of a prurient fancy. We are left then to the conclusion, that the idea of a God and belief in his existence are the results of the action of the mind amid the circumstances of this world. The attributes of Deity are forced upon the mind as realities. The mind is impelled by its very constitution to combine these attributes into the idea of a God, and to repose its faith on that idea, as the representative of a reality. Hence, it follows, that the *idea* of a God, and *belief* in his existence, rest upon the same foundation; viz. the spontaneous workings of the human mind amid the spectacle of the universe. It is, moreover, proper to remark, that some, if not all of the attributes specified above, are *personal* attributes, and cannot be conceived of apart from a

person. Hence the reality of the attribute necessarily carries along with it the reality of the person to whom it belongs.

But we come to inquire a little more specifically into the origin in the human mind of the idea of a God and belief of his existence. Observe, that we are not inquiring how the being of a God may be demonstrated, but how the human mind in the process of its unfolding actually arrives at those convictions on the subject which it carries through life.

Some have endeavored to trace the origin of the idea of a God to our feeling of dependence : which feeling, as they suppose, has stimulated the mind to create for itself, in the notion of Deity, an object on which it may repose its own weakness with trustful reliance. Our feeling of dependence, it may be remarked, recognizes the fact, that we have an interest in a power above us, which is not subject to our control. This feeling rather proves, that we already have some idea of Deity, than constitutes the medium through which we arrive at the idea. Indeed, this feeling is the basis of Cousin's à priori argument for the being of a God. But the expression may be changed ; and it may be alleged, that our feeling of *want* originates the idea of a God. Hunger never originated the idea of food. It *does*, however, constitute that state of the physical sensibilities, which renders food necessary to animal enjoyment and health. Food is first recognized as such, when it actually satisfies hunger. The conscious wants of the human soul constitute that state of the moral sensibilities, which renders the recognized existence of an omnipotent, benevolent Deity necessary to spiritual enjoyment and health. But mere want is blind. The mind must seek beyond itself for the objects which can satisfy its desires. Man can never find in the sterile waste of his own unsatisfied longings the objects toward which the soul aspires. Hence the mind can never arrive at a recognition of Deity, unless a God is made known in nature, or by direct revelation. The constitutional wants and appetences of the mind may lead to the recognition of a Deity, when one is presented to it by impressions from without upon the inner consciousness of the soul.

Again, it has been supposed that the idea of a God originates in a process of à posteriori reasoning. It is true that the *existence* of a God may be proved by such a process of reasoning. But let it be remembered, that this process of reasoning must always start with the *idea* of a God. Hence the *idea* must have

had some other origin. What other origin can it have, than the spontaneous, intuitive, or instinctive recognition of Deity through nature? This we believe to be the origin of the idea; and shall now proceed to offer some proof of the truth of this hypothesis.

The mind, we say then, is not obliged to go through the argument from effect to cause, from design to a designer, in order to arrive at the idea of a God. The mind *feels*, if we may so express ourselves, the presence and operation of the divine attributes in the midst of the grand and moving spectacles of nature. There is not a phenomenon in nature, which is capable of exciting an emotion of beauty, grandeur, or sublimity, that does not breathe with the divine presence, and dispose the mind as it were to worship.

On this point, let the appeal be made to consciousness.

\* \* \* \* "When lightning fires  
The arch of heaven, and thunders rock the ground ;  
When furious whirlwinds rend the howling air,  
And Ocean, groaning from his lowest bed,  
Heaves his tempestuous billows to the skies,"

is it the mere flitting and dancing of images across the retina of the eye, or the striking of the aerial undulations upon the organ of hearing, that rouses the mind to the loftiest emotion of sublimity, or is it the spiritual recognition of vast power, not residing in nature, but above nature, and controlling its course? When nature presents herself in her more gentle and winning aspects, it is not the simple distribution of light and shade that chains the soul in silent, sweet admiration, as it contemplates, but the conscious presence of the *spirit of beauty* pervading and harmonizing the scene. But this point will be better illustrated by bringing forward a few examples familiar to the experience of all.

Go forth and bury yourself in the bosom of the lonely forest, or skirt along its borders, in one of those rare moments of the hushed silence of nature, which frequently precedes the most frightful storms of thunder. Not a sound breaks upon the solemn stillness. Not a breath of air is in motion. "Not a leaf has leave to stir." Look and listen. There is no motion, but it is not the stillness of death. There is no audible sound. Yet listen again. Silence itself has found a voice, which seems to steal upon the ear, as it were a tone from the spirit-land, awak-

ening in the soul responsive echoes, undying longings and aspirations. In scenes like this, the soul does not feel itself alone. It recognizes a living presence and power in the scene, before which it stands in silent adoration. This thought is beautifully expressed in the following sublimest passage ever written by Lord Byron, descriptive of a night scene near Geneva Lake:

"All heaven and earth are still, though not in sleep,  
But breathless as we grow, when feeling most,  
And silent as we stand in thoughts too deep :—  
All heaven and earth are still. From the high host  
Of stars, to the lulled lake and mountain coast,  
All is concentrated in a life intense,  
Where not a beam, nor air, nor leaf is lost,  
But hath a part of being and a sense  
Of that, which is of all Creator and defence!"

These are the genuine breathings of a poetic soul, giving utterance to the deep responses of the inner spirit to the spirit of nature. Such, in some degree, are the feelings of every uncorrupted child of nature, when holding communion with her in her deep solitudes.

"Then stirs the *feeling infinite*, so felt  
In solitude, where we are *least alone*."

But let us contemplate the same scene, as its "concentrated life intense" awakes into perceptible voice and action. Hark!

"There seems a floating whisper on the hill."

List yet again, and feel your soul pervaded with the deep voice of the night-wind, as with booming swell and solemn cadence it breathes through the dark forest. Is it a slight tremor of the tympanum of the ear, or the recognition of a living, spiritual presence, which fills the soul with such unutterable sublimity on an occasion like this? Go forth on some calm sunny morning, when the stern visage and rough voice of winter are just giving place to the kindly greetings of spring. As your mind

"drinks at every pore  
The spirit of the season,"

nature will seem pervaded with the spirit of beneficence, and to respond in gentle sympathy to your own grateful emotions. You will feel that

"There is a blessing in the air  
That seems a sense of joy to yield  
To the bare trees, and mountains bare,  
And grass in the green field."

Go, stand upon the trembling verge of the mighty cataract of Niagara, and contemplate it in all its mingled elements of sublimity and beauty,—its deep, awful plunge,—its robe of glittering spray,—its rainbow diadem,—its “voice of many waters”—and you will feel that you are in the presence—nay, within the grasp of a power that is the pervading, ruling, and harmonizing spirit of the scene.

It is not to be supposed that this appeal to the inner consciousness will be appreciated by those in whom the frosts of selfishness

“Have frozen the genial current of the soul,”

and severed the continuity of their existence, cutting them off from sympathy with those emotions which this appeal is designed to recall. And yet, if the cold worldling could only live again in the memory of childhood, he too would know what it is to sympathize with the unseen power that rules in nature. He too could say,

“There was a time when meadow, grove, and stream,  
The earth, and every common sight,  
To me did seem  
Apparelled in celestial light,  
The glory and the freshness of a dream.”

Childhood is the period when sympathy with nature is the quickest and freshest,—when the light of the Invisible beams purest upon the soul. Said a child six years old, on starting for a place of worship one pleasant Sabbath morning, “It seems as if the wind knew that it was Sabbath day, and that that is why it blows so gently.” Childhood is the birth-time of sublime thoughts, which reason in its mature strength can never improve.

It is not claimed that the mind, in its converse with nature, is always impressed with a distinct notion of Deity. It is, however, maintained, that communion with nature gives rise to those impressions and awakens those feelings, which are essential elements in the idea of a God, and necessarily grow up into such an idea very early in the history of the mind. The mind may *feel* the presence of Deity in nature, without forming a distinct notion of an objective reality corresponding to the feeling.

2. That such is the feeling of the mind in its intercourse with nature we argue, in the second place, from the existence in all languages of the rhetorical figure of personification. The philosophic rhetorician supposes this figure of speech to have origi-

nated in the mind's fondness for life and animated beings, in preference to inanimate objects. But a mere *fondness* for conscious life can never produce the feeling of its presence in the world around us. Mere fondness for a thing does not impel us to call other things by its name, unless there be something in the latter calculated to suggest the former to the mind. Fondness for life cannot induce the mind to invest inanimate objects with life, if there be not in the objects themselves that which awakens a *feeling* of the presence of conscious life. Grant that the mind *feels* a living presence in all those objects and scenes which deeply interest its emotions, and we have a rational basis for the figure of personification. The language of personification gives utterance to this feeling, and is prompted by it. This figure of speech, however, would be the barest absurdity, and would excite disgust, rather than pleasure, did not the mind spontaneously invest with conscious life the things personified. Is this feeling a pleasant delusion merely, or the response of the spirit of man to the all-pervading, living Spirit of the universe?

Dr. Blair supposes that the heathen divinities may have originated in "that impression of life which is made upon us by the more magnificent and striking objects of nature." True it is, that, in polytheistic nations, every object and every scene capable of exciting the emotions has its ruling deity. The ardent-minded Greek had placed every mountain, island, and stream, under the protection of some guardian divinity. He could listen to the voice of the deity of the waters in the dull roar of the ocean, and hear the chanting of the wood-nymphs in the sigh of the midnight gale. Polytheism seems to be the bringing out into distinct conceptions those feelings and impressions which are dimly shadowed forth in personification.

3. In the third place, it may be argued, that the mind naturally finds for itself a Deity in its converse with nature, from the expressions of poets and orators on the subject, and the universal response of the human mind to those expressions. The passage already quoted from Byron is strongly illustrative of this point. And how much more sublime the idea there presented, of an omnipresent Deity, the Creator and defence of all, than any conception of him merely as the God of the storm, though we view him riding upon the whirlwind over Alpine heights, his red right hand armed with the lightnings of heaven, while in his train

“far along  
From peak to peak the rattling crags among  
Leaps the live thunder.”

The mind views Deity here in but one aspect, and is agitated, but not filled—thrilled, but not satisfied. God, in all the majesty and sublimity of his attributes, is not in the “great and strong wind, though it rend the mountains, and break in pieces the rocks. Neither is he in the earthquake nor in the fire.” But he speaks to the soul in a “still small voice” drawn from the harmonies of nature.

The following passage from Byron recognizes the fact which we are endeavoring to illustrate :

“There is a pleasure in the pathless woods,  
There is a rapture in the lonely shore,  
There is society where none intrudes  
By the deep sea, and music in its roar.”

Yes, there is *society*. The mind does not feel alone in the midst of scenes like these. A living, spiritual presence meets the true poet, wherever he walks the fields of nature. And whenever and wherever he gives utterance to the feelings thus inspired, millions of hearts respond, and throb in unison to the strain.

None will suspect Byron of too strong a religious bias to be trusted on this point. Much less is Shelley liable to this suspicion. And yet poor Shelley, atheist as he was, could not but cling to the fond *feeling* (we do not say *belief*) that his destiny was ruled by an omnipresent being, who could respond to his ardent aspirations, and sympathize with his struggles and trials. The personification which runs through his “Hymn to Intellectual Beauty” is without meaning, unless it be interpreted as the outflow of such a feeling. In the first lines of that production, we have this remarkable expression :

“The awful shadow of some unseen power  
Floats, though unseen, among us.”

Here, as frequently elsewhere, he does homage to the God whom he denies, while he gives utterance to those feelings and aspirations of the human heart, which are only satisfied in the realization of an omnipotent, omnipresent, sympathizing Deity.

All the poets that deserve the name, both ancient and modern, might be successfully appealed to on this point. But we have preferred to limit our references to a few of the most

unpromising cases, leaving it to be inferred that, if these sustain our views, our point is gained.

The ancient dramatic poets and the ancient orators, those masters of the human heart, never failed, on all suitable occasions, to appeal to the universal belief in a Deity. They might not themselves theoretically believe in the existence of a God. But they knew what would move their hearers. The skeptic will certainly allow us to appeal to the writings of the Hebrew bards and seers, as expressions of human thought and feeling with regard to a God. It is unnecessary to quote from the Bible on this point. It is full of Deity, and if not a revelation from God, it is at least a revelation of the undying aspirations of the human soul after a supposed divinity, to which it may cling and be satisfied. It is at least a revelation of what is in man, and what will satisfy the cravings of his nature.

We are now prepared to state a little more specifically our view of the origin of the idea of a God, and the belief in his existence. The mind is so constituted, that when it is in harmony with itself it is in harmony with external nature. In our intercourse with nature, we spontaneously recognize in it unfathomable wisdom and unwearied beneficence. The idea and belief of an all-embracing benevolence seems to rise in the mind of childhood, in view of the milder aspects of nature, as spontaneously as the maternal smile awakens a responsive emotion in the bosom of infancy. These manifestations of power, wisdom, and benevolence, are perceived, or rather *felt*, to harmonize together in the system of nature, and are instinctively attributed to a living, conscious being, who is believed to rule the universe. Thus a God is distinctly recognized.

This recognition of a God seems to be a *feeling* rather than a *belief*, an *intuition* rather than a *demonstrative conviction*. The belief in the existence of a God is therefore inevitable. Even atheists unconsciously recognize the existence of a God, as may be shown by a philosophical analysis of their writings. Does it then require a process of argumentation to prove that a God exists? The design of a demonstration is to bring the mind to a necessary unalterable conviction. Such a necessary unalterable conviction of the existence of a God arises spontaneously in the mind of every rational being. Here then we rest. The existence of a God is bound up in our own existence and that of external nature. We need no arguments to prove it, and skepticism cannot invalidate the conviction. Skepticism

may indeed bewilder the mind by confusing the language in which we unfold and express our ideas of Deity. Yet even atheism itself recognizes the existence of an overruling, omnipotent, omniscient benevolence, in its personifications of Nature, Destiny, and the "Divine Laws of human nature." We may be said, therefore, to have an intuitive knowledge of the existence of a God.

We have foreseen an objection, which will be likely to arise in the minds of some of our readers, to the view which we have taken of the origin of the idea of a God. It may be alleged that this view is imperfect, inasmuch as it leaves out of the question the influence of tradition, the force of custom, the power of education, in giving currency to these very ideas, which we have attempted to derive from the pure instincts of human nature. A traditional belief in the existence of a God is admitted, then, to exist. How did the ideas embodied in the tradition originate? They must have originated in an especial revelation, or in the manner we have described. But those who urge this objection are the same that deny the existence of an especial revelation. This denial being admitted, we must account for the original rise of the tradition in the manner in which we have attempted to account for the origin of the belief in a God, in each individual mind. If then the idea of a God must, on the skeptic's own principles, have first originated in the manner we have attempted to unfold, may it not, in the case of each individual, spring up in the same way? Indeed, it is inconceivable how God *could* reveal himself in any other way than the one which we have endeavored to trace. "No man hath seen God at any time." All that can be known of him are the attributes which he may choose to disclose to the human mind. The name of God is only a general term for all that we know of infinite power, wisdom, and goodness, and the other divine attributes as belonging to an invisible being. Without such a display of the divine attributes, all language designed to reveal a God would be unintelligible. When the child first begins to lisp the oft repeated inquiry, "Who made?"—and receives for answer, "God"—that mysterious word conveys to his mind no new revelation; but only supplies him with a name by which he may designate and personify the power, wisdom, and goodness, which already fill his little soul with wonder and reverence. The name may be useful in enabling the child to acquire a consistent notion

of Deity, by assisting him to generalize, systematize, and reduce to unity the successive revelations of nature. But, apart from the display of the divine attributes in the works and providence of God, language could never reveal him to man. No more can a miracle reveal a God, if nature be silent on the subject. A miracle can be nothing more than an extraordinary manifestation of the same attributes, which find a more appropriate and harmonious expression in the undisturbed order of nature. The parent in endeavoring to impress the idea of a God upon the mind of his child is forced continually to appeal to the manifestation of Deity in nature. If the mind were not so constituted as to receive the idea of a Supreme Being from nature, it is impossible to conceive how language could be so framed as to suggest it. The mind must, in a certain sense, be brought into the attitude of worship in order to be prepared to comprehend the language of a verbal revelation of Deity.—“Whom ye ignorantly worship, Him declare I unto you—the God that made the heavens and the earth.” It must be admitted, then, that the universal recognition of a Supreme Being by the human race, is the spontaneous growth of human nature, warmed into life, unfolded, and matured, by the radiance of truth beaming in upon the soul from the vast universe in which it moves. It is the response of the *divine* in man to the *divine* in nature.

If we have succeeded in proving that man intuitively recognizes the existence of a Supreme Being, no further proof of that existence is needed. That intuitive recognition is the last point to which every argument for the existence of a God aims to bring the mind. It may not be inappropriate, however, to apply to this case, by way of analogy, the principle which we have deduced from Natural History. We say, then, there exist objects to supply every want of every sentient being. Man is a dependent being. His nature demands a God, whom he may adore, and in whom he may repose with confidence and trust. Nature reveals such a Being. Therefore, a God must exist as a correlate to the wants, aspirations, and convictions of the human mind.

At this point an interesting inquiry naturally arises, with regard to the testimony of human nature on the subject of Pantheism. Do the wants of the human soul demand a Universe-God—the God of the pantheist—or a personal, conscious, sympathizing Deity? It is sufficient to remark, here, that the structure of all languages, the universal prevalence of the rhetorical

figure of personification, the language of Polytheism, the universal cravings of human sympathy, all testify that a living personal Deity alone can satisfy the wants of human nature. Even the Pantheist, in his frequent application of personification to Deity, shows that his *feelings* are with the rest of mankind, though at variance with his intellect. Pantheism is the offspring of philosophical refinement, and not the genuine expression of the spontaneous convictions of the human mind. "For a very long time," says Coleridge,\* "I could not reconcile personality with infinity; and my *head* was with Spinoza, though my *whole heart* remained with Paul and John." So it is. However the *head* may become bewildered by delusive theories, the *heart* ever clings to a conscious, sympathizing Deity. The *head* may be allured into the swamps of error, by the ignes fatui of false philosophy that dance along their slimy surface, but vice alone can turn away the heart from the pole-star of its affection, and seduce it from its attachment to the idea of a living, personal God. But vice even cannot efface such an idea from the mind, though it may clothe it with terror, and thus create a motive to seek refuge in Pantheism or Atheism.

Thus we have endeavored to show that the belief in a God is necessary as a harmonizing principle of the human mind,—that the soul can only rest satisfied in the recognition of a living, personal Deity. We have attempted to sketch the manner in which the mind actually arrives at the recognition of a God, not by an *à posteriori* process of reasoning, but by the involuntary response of the reason of man to the display of the divine attributes in nature and providence. This mode of recognition constantly presents Deity in an attitude to claim our adoration, a state of mind in which we rest from our questionings with regard to the divine nature, and an obtrusive curiosity is awed into silence before that majesty which it cannot fully comprehend. The common *à posteriori* argument, on the contrary, is necessarily microscopic, and for the time narrows our view from the general to particulars, and presents Deity before the mind rather as a skilful workman, than as the "high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity." The maker of the eye, the artificer of the ear, the mere architect, may excite our *admiration*, but the omnipotent, all-sustaining, all-harmonizing Spirit alone can claim our *worship*. A mind that truly worships and adores

\* *Biographia Literaria, chap. x.*

is not liable to puzzle itself in search of the *last link* in the chain of causation, or to lose itself in the mazes of an infinite series. It is not in tracing minute and delicate mechanical adjustments, that the mind is disposed to that reverential awe in which all inquiries with regard to Deity should end, but in contemplating the divine attributes as displayed on a scale of inconceivable vastness and magnificence.

Having shown that the recognition of the existence of a Supreme Being is one of the primary intuitions of reason, it follows that the existence cannot be denied without unsettling the foundations of all belief, and plunging the mind into the gulf of universal skepticism. Admitting, then, the existence of a God, the order of nature becomes but the expression of his will. He it is who has adjusted the relations of all sentient beings. He has endowed the animal creation with instincts and capacities, which bind each individual species to its appropriate sphere of life. He has subjected sentient beings to wants; and his bounteous goodness is pledged to supply those wants. This is the great law of God's providence toward the beings which he has created: "Thou openest thine hand and satisfiest the desire of every living thing." Whatever real wants, therefore, of human nature may be proved to exist, we may consider the divine goodness pledged for their supply.

In the subsequent course of this discussion, we shall consider the moral condition of the human race, the wants and aspirations of the soul, the hopes and the fears which alternately illuminate and darken its prospects; and from these data we shall attempt to derive a solution of the relations and destiny of man. This course of inquiry will lead us to investigate the question of an especial revelation. In this investigation we hope to place the Bible upon the sure foundation of faith, on which it rests in the minds of all true Christians.

## ARTICLE V.

## EXTREMES OF CREDULITY AND SKEPTICISM IN HISTORY.

By E. D. SANBORN, Professor of the Latin Language and Literature, Dartmouth College, N. H.

EARLY historians believed too much. They seldom knew a doubt. Tradition was to them a god, whose oracles it was their duty to record with reverence. It was their privilege to seek the response, not to question its truth. They recorded, with unhesitating confidence, both what they *saw* and what they *heard*. They could not discredit the evidence of their own senses, and they saw no reason why they should question what others asserted. This credulity resulted from their artless simplicity of character and from a superstitious veneration for the marvels of an early age. In modern times historians are passing to the extreme of disbelief. They question every thing old. In their view the antiquity of a writer is presumptive evidence against him. If he comes from a region of darkness he is, of course, incompetent to testify in a court of modern illuminati. Living upon the confines of a fabulous age, he must himself partake of its characteristics. Not only do the records of antiquity become fables, poems, or myths, in the hands of these erudite critics, but the writers themselves are converted into allegories or poetical creations. Philosophers are always prone to believe too little or too much. They must differ from other men, else they gain no celebrity. Pride of opinion or love of novelty often gives birth to new theories and new systems of philosophy and criticism. An opinion would not excite attention unless it were *new* or *extravagant*. With some men *doubting* is a proof of *wisdom*. If a man with great gravity affects to dissent from the multitude, he is at once presumed to have good reasons for so doing. He is admired for his independence and reverenced for the deep mystery which shrouds his speculations. "What one can see and cannot see over," says a distinguished writer, "is as good as infinite." But few individuals have the time or ability to seek out the sources of historic truth for themselves. They must receive the declarations of others on trust. It is an easy matter, therefore, for a man of profound

learning to disturb the fountains of human belief. Thus a few leading minds will sometimes give direction to the popular faith of the age. Hence we have revolutions in history and philosophy as well as in politics. Epochs of doubt and confidence alternate. In some ages it is fashionable to believe, and historic faith becomes a common characteristic of the times; in others it is equally fashionable to doubt, and men by general consent become skeptical. There is also an obvious and intimate connexion between religious and historic faith. When men begin to doubt they lose their reverence for things sacred. The Bible becomes, to the doubting critic of ancient history, only a collection of myths, legends, and allegories. When once the human mind swings from its moorings and abandons the only true chart of human belief, it is tossed "by every wind of doctrine" upon the shoreless sea of infidelity. Human passions are ever ready to lead the popular will when the restraints of education and religion are removed. It was so at the Reformation, when the human mind broke the shackles of ignorance and superstition and asserted its independence; it was so on the restoration of Charles II. to his throne, after the checks which Puritanism had laid upon licentiousness and skepticism were removed; it was so in France after the death of Louis XIV. "This monarch, in his old age," says Macaulay, "became religious, and determined that his subjects should be religious too—shrugged his shoulders and knitted his brows if he observed, at his levee or near his dinner-table, any gentleman who neglected the duties enjoined by the church, and rewarded piety with blue ribands, invitations to Marli, governments, pensions, and regiments. Forthwith Versailles became, in every thing but dress, a convent. The pulpits and confessionals were surrounded by swords and embroidery; the marshals of France were much in prayer; and there was hardly one among the dukes and peers who did not carry good little books in his pocket, fast during Lent, and communicate at Easter. Madame de Maintenon, who had a great share in the blessed work, boasted that devotion had become quite the fashion. A fashion, indeed, it was, and like a fashion it passed away. No sooner had the old king been carried to St. Denis than the whole court unmasked; every man hastened to indemnify himself, by the excess of licentiousness and impudence, for years of mortification. The same persons who, a few months before, with meek voices and degnure looks, had consulted divines about the state of their souls, now

surrounded the midnight table, where, amidst the bounding of champagne corks, a drunken prince, enthroned between Dubois and Madame de Parabère, hiccupped out atheistical arguments and obscene jests." Similar scenes were enacted in England during the reign of Charles II. They had their origin in similar causes. Baxter, speaking of that period, says, "The impieties and shameless debaucheries of the court spread through all orders of society. Drunkenness and impiety were the honored badges of loyalty. Not only seriousness, but even temperance and chastity were signs of nonconformity and prognostics of rebellion; and the nation, in spite of God's judgments, seemed ripening for the doom of Sodom." If the opinions of a particular age are so intimately connected with the morals and prosperity of the people, it becomes the duty of the philanthropist and patriot to regulate public opinion, if possible, and prevent excesses. Misbelief is as bad as disbelief, and hypocrisy is worse than either. The hypocritical courtiers of Louis XIV. added to their secret crimes the guilt of open deception. In our own times men are exceedingly fond of *new opinions*. There is a tendency in the public mind to entertain them. But few men now "stand in the ways and ask for the old paths." In history, philosophy, politics, and religion, men are disposed to "heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears." The united testimony of ages weighs not against the bold speculations of the hour. Reason is deified, while History and Revelation are dishonored. The human mind seems now to be near the aphelion of its revolution. It has wandered from the true source of light into the cold and cheerless regions of doubt. In history it is better to believe *too much* than *too little*—to believe every thing rather than nothing. I have said that the early historians were credulous. This credulity is certainly more lovely than skepticism. They were unsuspecting; they had not learned that critical art which plucks the grave-clothes from the buried past, and leaves it an object of universal disgust and abhorrence. They venerated even the incredible wonders of hoary antiquity. From early traditions they selected their materials without discrimination, and, giving loose rein to fancy, they drew beautiful pictures of living men and society, marked with all the playfulness and simplicity of childhood. Such were the historians who preceded Herodotus, whose works are now lost. They were the connecting links between fable and history, between poetry and prose. Their works possessed the

characteristics of both. Herodotus is supposed to have been indebted to them for some portions of his own delightful narrative. Though he is the acknowledged "father of history," yet he is the child of a poetic age. He wears his swaddling-clothes even in the meridian of life. He ever loves the marvels of childhood. "He reminds us," says an eminent critic, "of a delightful child. His animation, his simple-hearted tenderness, his wonderful talent for description and dialogue, and the pure, sweet flow of his language, place him at the head of narrators. There is a grace beyond the reach of affectation in his awkwardness, a malice in his innocence, an intelligence in his nonsense, an insinuating eloquence in his lisp. We know of no writer who makes such an interest for himself and his book in the heart of the reader. He has written an incomparable book." If we consider the strange medley of materials from which he derived his information, the character of the age, and the people for whom he wrote, we shall rather admire the *truthfulness* of his history than carp at its *blemishes*. He wrote for a people lively, fickle, inquisitive, and fond of novelty. He adapted his history to the wants of his age, and very fortunately chose a style of narrative so true to nature, so artless, and pleasing, that it is suited to any age or people. To be sure he has not rejected all the marvels of the hoary past. The infancy of society abounded in wild adventure, in hercic exploits, and fabled monsters. Tradition exaggerated the deeds of the fathers, and poetry flung her veil of many hues about them. It was impossible for the most acute mind to separate truth from falsehood. Herodotus, the child of a new epoch, looking with filial reverence upon all that was old, did not desire to do it. He looked upon men as they lived and moved about him. He listened to their narratives and recorded them; he consulted the records and traditions of earlier days, and wrote down the responses they uttered. He recorded many things which to us seem improbable and unnatural. To him they undoubtedly wore the aspect of truth. They accorded with the common faith of those for whom he wrote. They corresponded with the general current of traditions which had come down from early times. While he recorded these pleasing fables, he believed. His contemporaries were equally confiding. He seemed to them to speak under the guidance and inspiration of the Muses. They honored him as the herald of their nation's glory. It does not appear that they questioned any of his "specious wonders." By bring-

ing the hoarded treasures of the world's history to the Greeks he became their benefactor, and as such they loved and honored him. At a subsequent period men began to doubt and to censure. Strabo accuses him of recording trifles and corrupting history with incredible tales. Plutarch accuses him of malicious misrepresentations respecting his countrymen, the Boeotians; but such censures were soon forgotten; the authors of them were regarded as *prejudiced* critics, and their voice was drowned in the acclamations of praise which confounding ages raised to the memory of "the father of history." The same is substantially true of Livy, the most illustrious of Roman historians. His authority was little questioned till a comparatively recent age. While the Romish church bore undisputed sway throughout Christendom, historical faith was as sound and unvarying as religious faith. Men who could credit the saintly legends and pretended miracles of monkish biography were prepared to believe the less marvellous stories of Greek and Roman history. Historical criticism was unknown. For some time after the revival of literature in Europe so extravagant was the admiration—I might say, perhaps, *veneration*—of scholars for the learning of antiquity, that no one thought of questioning the credibility of an ancient historian any more than the authority of the church. Ancient authors ruled the *understandings*, the church the *consciences*, of men. Had any reckless critic presumed to question the infallibility of either, the attempt would have been regarded as an act of atrocious presumption. The object of compilers was to combine what was written into one whole, notwithstanding discrepancies and contradictions, and to yield an unhesitating faith to all its integral parts though they virtually neutralized each other. Hence, in the circle of ancient history, every thing was *believed* and nothing *certainly known*. Fable was not distinguished from fact, nor truth from falsehood. Credulity, however, declined as the Reformation advanced. When the right of private judgment began to be advocated, and to some extent acknowledged in religion, it was also boldly maintained in history. Men passed suddenly from the extreme of mental dependence to mental freedom, and they soon became as ready to doubt and disbelieve as they were before to trust and obey. The Jesuits also contributed not a little to the general skepticism by their attacks upon the fidelity and correctness of existing records. This arose in part from their hostility to other religious orders, particularly the Benedictines, who were much

employed in chronicling the history of the dark ages. The Jesuits examined with critical acumen their numerous productions, exposed their errors and puerile inventions, and in this way aided in destroying the public confidence in all written records. However, they meant it not so: they intended to promote their own private plans and the advancement of the church. But the weapons they put into the hands of the people for the destruction of their personal enemies were soon turned against themselves. They summoned a spirit to their aid which would not down at their bidding. The most reckless of these innovators was the Jesuit, Hardouin, born in 1646, whose literary career is very aptly described in the following epitaph, written by Jacob Vernet of Geneva:—

*Hic jacet hominum paradoxatos,  
Orbis literati portentum,  
Venerandæ antiquitatis cultor et depredator,  
Docte febricitans,  
Somnia et inaudita commenta vigilans edidit,  
Scepticum pie egit,  
Credulitate puer,  
Audac in juvenia,  
Delirii senex.*

He maintained the extraordinary paradox that most of the Greek and Roman classics were spurious productions of the thirteenth century. He excepted the works of Cicero and Pliny with some portions of the works ascribed to Horace and Virgil. He attempts to prove the spuriousness of the *Aeneid* with arguments so ingenious as to shake the faith of the unlearned and afford a very agreeable recreation to the scholar. He maintains that Horace and Virgil are allegorical writers, representing Christianity and its founders under assumed names. These acute and learned speculations may afford a salutary admonition to those who are disposed to yield an unhesitating confidence to more recent sophists. When a sober contemporary reproached Hardouin for his devotion to absurd hypotheses, he answered suddenly, "Do you suppose, my good friend, that I rise every morning, both in summer and winter, to write common-place remarks?" This love of notoriety may be one of the secret sources of many of the paradoxical theories and systems of more recent times. The Germans have been most active in breaking up the old foundations of popular belief and destroying the confi-

dence of men in the truth of all past history.\* Every ancient author is subjected to the fiery ordeal of philosophic criticism. All writers both sacred and profane are treated with the same severity. Not content with guarding the entrance to the temple of truth, they have entered her innermost sanctuary and demolished many an idol which pious hands had set up. Some of these historical reformers fall appropriately under the appellation of *destructives*. In their esteem, the world has been one vast theatre of literary delusion. What is denominated history is a base fabrication. Writers have conspired to cheat posterity by false records. History must be re-written and made what it ought to be, and what it would have been had it not been composed by quacks and impostors. Their appropriate motto would be :

“ Of old things all are over old,  
Of new things none are new enough ;  
We'll show them, we can help to frame  
A world of other stuff.”

In the absence of all written records, these “rapt seers” pour forth improvisatory effusions concerning the past, and, by a species of *ex post facto* inspiration, form a poetic history of forgotten eras. Like the student of comparative anatomy, who is enabled from the existence of a single bone to describe the form, size, and habits of the animal, these reproducers of ancient records, from the existence of a few poetic fragments, are enabled to restore the lost history of a people. When old writers are submitted to their examination, they can decide intuitively upon their credibility. When authorities clash, their merits are weighed, and their respective claims are decided by judicial sentence. The rejected author is thereby presumed to be annihilated. When old writers doubt, they dogmatize. Thus by their inventions, disjudications, dogmatisms, and alterations, they create a new history, and from their oracular records the world learns what it ought to have been, and what, according to philosophic criticism, it *probably* has been. During the last century, England gave birth to one of these literary reformers. John Richardson

---

\* Menzel speaking of the historical skepticism of the Germans says : “What they did not understand they denied away. The celebrated historical skepticism which was brought into fashion by Schlozer, Rühs, and others, went so far as to reject as stupid fable every thing which did not appear rational and natural to their comprehension.”

prefixed to a dictionary of Persian, Arabic, and English, an elaborate dissertation upon Persian history, in which he attempts to prove the utter falsity of all that Herodotus has written respecting that nation. The history of the war between Persia and Greece is, in his view, a work of pure fancy. No such war ever occurred. This is evident to him from a comparison of the existing histories of Persia, written by natives, with the fictions of Herodotus. In the former, we find no Cyrus, no Crœsus, no Cambyses, nor any of the numerous monarchs and heroes that figure in the romance of the "father of history." "Not a vestige," says he, "is to be discovered of the famous battles of Marathon, Plateæ, Thermopylæ, Salamis, and Mycale; nor of that prodigious force of Xerxes, led out of the Persian empire to overwhelm the states of Greece." In fine, the whole history of the Persian wars is a fable from beginning to end, because the Persians themselves know of no such events. He goes into a labored argument to show that they must have been familiar with these wars, had they ever occurred, from the fact that they are exceedingly careful in preserving all existing records and perpetuating traditions. But one fact, which is essential to the right decision of this question, this veracious critic forgot to mention. It is said that all Persian history was carefully destroyed by the Arabs when they overran that country, and that whatever history they now possess has been written since the eighth century. Moreover, the frequent changes that have taken place in the government and inhabitants of that country since the days of Herodotus, must have disturbed the current of tradition so as to render this a very uncertain test of truth. Such special pleading respecting an old writer is exceedingly unfair, if not disingenuous. The authority of Herodotus has been often attacked, but never destroyed. Indeed, it seems now in the ascendant. The recent discoveries in Egypt, from the interpretation of the hieroglyphics, have given new and undoubted confirmation to his history of that country. An accurate comparison of the works of Wilkinson and Roselini\* with the account Herodotus has given of the

\* The researches of archæologists also prove that the "Homeric poems" described real men and manners. "Professor Roselini said that he looked upon Homer as the most correct of historians, and that it was the tombs of Egypt which had taught him to think so." *Tour to the Sepulchres of Etruria*, p. 358.

manners and customs of the Egyptians, will show that he has fewer errors by far, than modern English travellers who describe American manners and customs, and that he is far less prejudiced and envious. It is true he is sometimes mistaken and sometimes imposed upon by artful men. Sometimes he is led from motives of vanity or patriotism to exalt his countrymen and their deeds above their real deserts. It is possible that the power of Xerxes and the number of his army may have been exaggerated for the same reason. It is possible that Mount Athos was never cut through to make a passage for his ships, or the Hellespont bridged for the convenience of his army. Still neither of these exploits is incredible, and it is impossible, at this late day, for critics to determine what was or was not done by the Persian monarch. The fact that no traces of the canal through the mountain are now visible, is no proof that the work was not executed. We might as well deny that the Egyptians were drowned in the Red Sea, because none of Pharaoh's chariot wheels are found upon its bottom or shores. It cannot be supposed that Herodotus, living so near the time of the events he describes, could fill his narrative with gross fictions and palm them upon an intelligent people for truth. The Persian war must have been a reality, however much the circumstances attending it may have been embellished by the poetic fancy, the vanity, or patriotism of the historian. When these modern critics leave the field of authentic history and pass into the domains of tradition and poetry, their contests become more fierce and protracted. Their zeal increases as the importance of their subjects diminishes. Homer has been made, by different commentators, every thing, any thing, and nothing, by turns. The Greeks disputed about the true import of the religious machinery of his poems, but they did not presume to question the existence of the poet or the facts he recorded. In the age of Herodotus, full credence was given to the theology of Homer. He is supposed, by that historian, to have given form and consistency to the popular belief respecting the gods. At a subsequent period, when atheists began to scoff at the creations of the poets, and to blaspheme the great gods because they were but deified men, the hierophants of heathen worship were obliged to give the narratives of Homer a moral or physical interpretation. They gave the poetic theology a symbolic meaning, and the inhabitants of Olympus were converted into elements, as fire, air, water, etc., or into moral virtues or attributes. After

the priests came the philosophers, who attempted to turn these poetic fictions into allegories. Anaxagoras found in the mythology of Homer a perfect system of ethics. Heraclides Ponticus made of the same fables a system of physics; Proclus regarded them as a collection of physical, ethical, and spiritual allegories. Other philosophers rejected them entirely, as mere creations of the poet, derogatory to the dignity and purity of celestial beings. On this account Plato excludes Homer from his ideal republic. He thinks that his exposure of the frailties of the inhabitants of Olympus, would give the youth low and unworthy ideas of the gods. In more recent times, men have turned from *the fables to the facts*. Learned treatises have been written, not only to show that Troy and the war of Troy are fictions, but that "the blind old bard," who for ages was thought to have sung of these sublime themes, *never had a being*. Jacob Bryant and Le Bossu, with an array of erudition and authorities which might frighten an ordinary scholar from the field, have attempted to prove that the whole story of the Trojan war is a fable, without the least support from facts. Learned treatises have been written by Mr. Wakefield, Mr. Dallaway, and M. Chevalier, in reply. A second Trojan war has been waged, prosecuted, and *ended*. The sound of the contest has extended to the very ends of the earth. The heroes have been covered with "no inglorious dust," and the matter which caused the dispute, has been left *precisely as it was*. The plains of Ilium have not been identified, and yet men still cling to the notion, that "Troy was." In speaking of this controversy, Dr. Good remarks: "When a man of erudition once entertains an opinion different from that of the world at large, it is curious to observe, with what facility he can muster up the whole phalanx of his learning, in demonstration of the fancy for which he means to contend." Nothing could be more appropriate than this criticism to the learned Doctor's own favorite "fancy," in defending the character and doctrines of Epicurus. This he has done at large in his edition of Lucretius, and his "Book of Nature." In the 17th century, an eminent English scholar, Joshua Barnes, published an edition of Homer; and, as an appropriate accompaniment, a long English poem, in which he ascribes the Iliad and Odyssey to the pen of Solomon, with a view, it has been suspected, to induce his wife to assist the more willingly in defraying the expense of the publication." *The identity of Homer and Solomon, is argued from*

the similarity of the letters composing the two names. Homeros read backwards is Soremo ; exchanging r for l, we have Solemo, which, by a slight creative effort of the imagination, becomes Solomon. Here we have the author's name in disguise prefixed to the poem. Whether this was a mere *ruse*, to impose upon the credulity of his wife, who admired both the wisdom of Solomon and the learning of her husband, or the result of sober conviction, we cannot tell. But it is affirmed that a similar hypothesis has been recently propounded, with all sincerity and earnestness, by the Rev. John Williams, Archdeacon of Cardigan, England. He regards the Iliad and Odyssey as translations of Jewish works written by Moses. Agamemnon is made the representative of Joshua; Helen, of Rahab; Nestor, of Abraham; and Penelope, of Sarah. All the characters of Homer find their prototypes in the Pentateuch. Although the whole range of universal history does not furnish two nations so completely dissimilar as the Hebrews and Greeks, yet this scholar and divine attempts to draw a perfect parallel between them. Certainly, he must have confirmed his faith by the celebrated apothegm of one of the early fathers of the church : "Credo quia impossibile est." In proving the existence or non-existence of Homer, different theorists have referred to the signification of his name, for very different purposes. At one time it is an *epithet* descriptive of the man. "*Oυρανος*, in some connexions, means "blind;" hence the name of the poet: in other connexions, it means "joined together," or perhaps one who joins together; hence, "a compiler" or collector. In this sense it is used to prove the *non-existence* of the poet, though it might have been the appellation of a man. At another time, as we have seen above, it has been spelled backwards, like a wizard's incantation, to evoke some mighty spirit from the shades. If such interpretation of names be allowed, any absurdity may be proved. Shakspeare may have been only a skilful joustier at the tournament, whose chief glory it was to brandish the spear. The name of the Hebrew lawgiver may be made the symbol of the Nile's fertility, or the representative of an Egyptian deity; for both the slime which fertilizes their soil, and the crocodile which they worshipped, might, with the utmost propriety, be said to be "drawn out of the water." Occasionally we meet with a critic of a confiding temper, who uses such absurd illustrations and etymologies, as the Catholic priests do their pious frauds, to promote a good cause. They enter the

lists as the champions of orthodox opinions. They intend to support truth. Regarding divine revelation as the source of all truth, they seek to find all history as well as theology in the Bible. Every tradition, name, and fable, of the heathen world must be traced to its source. They are all mere corruptions or perversions of genuine truths and real names. With them, Noah and his descendants seem not only to have been lords of the land, but to have taken undisputed possession of the empire of fancy and fiction. Jacob Bryant is the great hierophant of this school of critics. The ark is made the centre and source of all the mythologies of the old world. The vocabularies of oriental and occidental nations, were enriched by numerous terms relating to the ark and the persons preserved in it. Noah and his sons are made the prototypes of all the most important deities of the whole idolatrous world. Noah was regarded as a god, and the ark as a goddess, the common parent of all things. Hence, says this sagacious critic, originated the fable of Venus rising from the flood; hence she acquired the name of *Δημητη*, or, according to the Chaldeans, Da-Mater, "the Mother" of gods and men; hence, again, the worship of Isis and Osiris, and the ceremony among the Egyptians of the mystic enshrinement of the latter, a mere personification of Noah, in an ark or vessel, which was carried in solemn procession through the streets, amid the adorations of the multitude; hence, too, the Xuth or Zuth of the Babylonians, and the Dagon of the Canaanites, were represented with the body of a man and the tail of a fish. The form of the ark was also reverenced. Every crescent-shaped object was sacred. Hence the worship of the moon, of cows and bulls, from the crescent curvature of their horns. The element also, on which the ark floated, became an object of worship. Hence, the worship of the Nile and Ganges, and the river-gods of Greece and Rome. In a word, this critic can find the ark any where he chooses. The same is true of Noah and his sons. The Greek word, *Navis*, the proper name "Da-Naus," and the Latin *Navis*, is but the name of the patriarch misspelled. The existence of one or two letters in the name of a place or a god, in common with one of the names of the survivors of the deluge, is sufficient to determine its etymological descent, and prove its legitimate origin. If the name of a particular god do not correspond with that of the deified restorer of our race, the true relationship may be discovered in his offices. "Noah, among the Chaldeans,

passes under the appellation of Thoth, Theut, or Theuth; or, as written by Herodotus, Xuth. Hence, Theut, or Tuisto, is a father or progenitor in old German to the present day; hence, the Taaatus of Phœnicia, and the Tentates of the Celts. Noah, thus deified, became the chief divinity of Greece and Rome: from Theuth or Xuth, they obtained Zeus, or Jupiter; from Thoth, Theos, Dios and Deus: from Zeus, Zea, which was a title of Venus, or Aphrodite Demeter, under the character of Diana." Noah is also made the prototype of Chronos or Saturn, Prometheus, Deucalion, and many others. But it is in vain to pursue this subject further. We cannot enumerate all the wonderful discoveries of this profound critic, without copying his entire work. It is full of learning, and full of absurdities. No attempt to systematize the various mythologies of different ages and nations ever has or ever will prove successful. They cannot be traced to a single source. They are as heterogeneous and diverse as lawless fancy could make them. We might as well attempt to reduce the ravings of bedlam to a system, or extract the principles of universal grammar from the confused voices of Babel, as to seek for the golden thread of unity which will combine, in one harmonious whole, the various systems of idolatry which men, who "did not like to retain God in their knowledge," have invented. Some of these fables or myths are undoubtedly perverted truths, detached from the real history of the human race. Some of them are perhaps the distorted representatives of the truths of a primitive revelation, or of Scripture history, exaggerated by tradition, embellished by poetry, or altered by designing priests. In mythological traditions, where there are no settled principles of interpretation, and where certain knowledge is impossible, it matters little what theories are proposed, or what opinions advocated. The same questions are ever recurring, but the answers must always vary with the tastes and opinions of authors. In history it is not so. He who corrects the errors of history, is the world's benefactor; but he who disturbs these fountains of human belief, from motives of vanity, or love of learned display, commits a grievous wrong. When a distinguished scholar has re-written the history of a particular period or nation, after a careful examination of existing records and monuments, the presumption is, that he has corrected the errors of his predecessors, and presented to the world plain facts, upon which they may rely. But if he has covertly inserted his own opinions, instead of facts, or

colored by his prejudices or partisan views, what would otherwise be a plain and simple narrative, who shall arraign the critic, convict him of misrepresentation, and expose him to the public scorn? Who will dare to impugn his motives, or charge him with treason to truth? Not one in a thousand, perhaps, possesses the same means of investigation, or the accurate knowledge and habits of research, which the writer possessed. He may have devoted a whole life of labor to the work. How can one decide upon its merits, upon a cursory examination? Most men would prefer to *seem* learned and agree with the author rather than hazard their reputation by ill-timed objections. History cannot be learned without great labor. It requires extended research and profound study. It is easier to take the dicta of learned men than to attempt original investigation ourselves; for

— “there are secrets which who knows not now  
Must, ere he reach them, climb the heapy Alps  
Of science ; and devote seven years to toil.”

Thucydides complained that “the search after truth was considered by many people as an intolerable labor, and that, therefore, they adopted such accounts as were at hand, merely to save themselves trouble.” If a writer is reputed honest, the presumption is always in his favor. If he makes marked alterations in received traditions, and gives an entirely new account of old institutions, he is supposed to have good reasons for so doing. The public will tolerate his innovations, if his talents and research command their respect. They see no motives for his falsifying old records; of course they admit his conclusions. It becomes a grave question, therefore, how much indulgence shall be granted to learned men in these matters. They certainly are not infallible. They are not free from the common sympathies and antipathies to which other men are subject. The inference is plain. *They must be watched.* When love of novelty is the passion of the age, it will not answer to take any man’s opinions on trust. Every new theory must be subjected to careful criticism; truth is not safe without it. But it will be asked, Who is competent to the task? Who will presume to speak, authoritatively, of the conclusions of Niebuhr, who devoted all the energies of his gigantic intellect, for a whole life, to history? No man can fully appreciate his emendations of the received traditions unless he resorts to the original

sources of evidence, from which he drew his materials ; and but few men possess such keen discernment, nice discrimination, and intuitive perception of historic truth as he. Not one in a thousand possesses a memory like his, and but few exhibit such enthusiasm in any pursuit. Those who have neither the time nor requisite qualifications for original investigation, must be content to judge of his work by such tests as are available to them. We have "Roman history," as it has been re-written and re-constructed by the learned critic, and we have most of the authors whose authority he has so confidently destroyed. A modicum of common sense will enable us to form a tolerably correct estimate of their respective merits. That he possessed qualifications which eminently fitted him for the work he assumed is universally admitted. The powers of his memory were almost miraculous. It is said of him, that he was enabled to restore from memory whole pages of a bank ledger, which had been injured by carelessness or fraud. He was acquainted with twenty different languages, many of them he could speak and write with ease. His history furnishes the strongest internal evidence of his eminent qualifications for historical investigation and analysis. 1. It shows *profound research*. Every page is replete with proofs of it. His reading was extensive. Every ancient author, whose works might be supposed to throw any light upon Roman manners and institutions, was consulted. Every existing monument and relic of the past was examined. Writing from Rome to a friend, he remarks : " Doubt not that I have constantly in view my most sacred vocation—my history. During all my journey, I have studied with great attention, and made numberless inquiries about the country—the various scenes, the customs, the usages, and constantly confirmed my opinion that most travellers trouble themselves little about things of the greatest importance, and see and hear little better than nothing. Terni has been to me peculiarly interesting and instructive. In this city I have found at least fifty old Roman houses unaltered. I have found the old art of the division of land still in practical operation ; the ancient mode of preparing wine, so exactly surviving, that it is quite clear to me. I would undertake fully to explain the whole mystery of Roman wines." Thus interested, excited, and *devoted* to his work, he could not fail to acquire the information he needed. 2. His work shows that he possessed an extensive and minute acquaintance with the political institutions of the world. So accu-

rate was his knowledge of European politics, that he actually predicted many of the most important political events in France and Germany before they occurred. The horrors of the French revolution did not surprise him, because he had anticipated such developments. He saw in prospect and mourned over the terrible calamities which attended Napoleon's career, long before they fell upon the nations. He exhibited equal sagacity in estimating the institutions of nations that have long since disappeared from the earth. He has revived the history of many almost forgotten tribes that inhabited Italy before the "eternal city" had a name. He has gathered all the scattered rays of tradition and history which fall upon the buried Etrurians, and has, to a considerable extent, restored their government, laws, and manners, and presented them to the reading world, as a great, powerful, and independent people. In the course of his investigations he constantly compares the municipal, senatorial, judicial, and executive functions and relations of ancient and modern governments, and points out the peculiarities and differences of each with the technical accuracy of a philosophic statesman. He lays the whole world, ancient and modern, under contribution, to furnish materials for the confirmation of his opinions.

3. His history shows that he well understood the *Roman constitution and laws*. His elucidation of the relation of patron and client; his account of the origin of the senate, the rise of the plebeians, the true character of the agrarian laws, and the progress of liberty in Rome, are, by all, admitted to be decided *improvements* upon existing records. Some of his deductions carry with them an irresistible conviction of their correctness. Our judgment at once acquits the writer of wrong doing. The qualities which we have thus far noticed, commend the historian to our esteem and confidence. Let us now inquire whether there is any thing in the character of the author, or in his work, to which we may reasonably object.

1. *In early life his mind was deeply imbued with the skeptical tendencies of his age and nation.* He says in one of his letters, "My intellectual tendency was altogether skeptical, inclined to the real and historical, eager to comprehend and to get to the bottom of every thing." He brought this spirit to the study of the Sacred Scriptures. He read them entirely in a critical spirit, as he would a portion of profane history. He recognized no prophecies in the Old Testament, and thought himself able "to explain away all the cited texts" in the New Testament.

It must be admitted, however, that he afterwards acquired a more confiding spirit, and, at least, admitted the historical value and accuracy of the Bible. But such a doubting temper is not a safe guide in estimating ancient records. When the mind loses its reverence for history, *especially for inspired history*, it is apt to become *too independent* in its judgments, and to decide capriciously upon the merits of ancient authors. Our historian never doubts his ability to decide any question respecting the past, and he seems not to expect that any one will presume to question his verdicts. Self-distrust was not a fault of his. In relation to some unfriendly reviews of his work, which appeared in Germany, he writes to a friend, "They do not touch my history; its truth and soundness will remain unshaken, though you all turn your backs upon me. If it were possible that an ancient Roman should rise from the dead, to give his testimony, he would swear to its soundness." In this spirit of self-confidence, he arraigns the ancients, one by one, before his bar, and condemns and approves just what and whom he pleases. He has no favorites, and tolerates no rivals. "He will allow no brother near the throne." He gives the *results* of his own investigations, but omits the *processes*. The reader may receive or reject them at his pleasure; but if he rejects them he must do it at the hazard of his reputation for sound judgment and enlightened criticism. He is conscious of the dignity of his mission. He looks upon himself as an agent of Providence, raised up for this very purpose. Like Mohammed, he alone is commissioned to a divine work, and he gives himself no rest till it is performed. Knowing these traits in his character, we are not surprised at the many arbitrary decisions and arrogant assumptions which disfigure his history. This leads me to another objection.

2. *His work exhibits great dogmatism.* He assumes the right of judging of the character of ancient writers without calling in witnesses. Whatever seems to him *probable* is pronounced *true*, the remainder is rejected. Can we judge, at this remote period, what might have happened in ancient Rome even before its written history commences? When early writers disagree, can we determine confidently, from internal evidence, which is right? If we may reject history because it is contradictory, because authors differ in their narratives, or because the same author is sometimes inconsistent with himself, we may as well renounce all confidence in written records at once, and depend

on learned men to reconstruct the world's true history. In receiving human testimony, slight discrepancies are thought to confirm the veracity of the witnesses. They show an absence of collusion on the part of those who testify. The judge arrives at the true state of the case, by a comparison of conflicting testimony, and not by rejecting that which contradicts his preconceived opinion. So should the critic decide. But our author treats the ancients with the utmost contempt. "It is not worth while," says he, "to speak of the rhetorician Dionysius as a critical investigating historian. *I may, at once, reject Livy as authority* for the views taken, on account of his inconsistencies and contradictions which are so frequently censured in this history." He styles Appian, "an author of very little weight; spiritless, ignorant, and superficial, to whom we should, in general, only then have recourse, when necessity impels us to gather roots and herbs to satisfy our hunger." He does not regard Tacitus as "an authority on which we can credit what is extremely improbable," though he does not tell us how it is possible to determine, with certainty, what would be considered "extremely improbable," in an age so remote, and under an order of civilization so different from our own. However much critics may have questioned the genius or doubted the talents of Tacitus, few have had the hardihood to accuse him of dishonesty; for, as Montaigne remarks, "*He was a great man, upright and bold.*" In his ability to estimate the character and weigh the motives of men, he is *unrivalled*. It is not probable that any of the ancient historians studied archaeology with the zeal and critical acumen of a German antiquary. Still, considering that they lived much nearer the times which they describe than we do, and possessed sources of information which are now closed, their authority should not be lightly rejected. Niebuhr speaks also of the "weak judgment" and "scanty information" of Plutarch, as though these were commonly admitted defects of that author. "The invalidity of Plutarch's information," says Niebuhr, "is discoverable on mere examination; of which indeed the ignorance of a Greek sophist is scarcely deserving." In ordinary writers such a sweeping condemnation of respectable authorities would be regarded as the dictate of presumptuous arrogance, and even in the "learned Dane" they seem to be little better than a species of "erudite effrontery."

3. The reconstructed history of Rome shows that the author

*was fond of paradoxes and violent innovations.* Whatever opposes his hypothesis is pronounced *spurious*. He frequently resorts to conjectural emendations of ancient authors in order to secure their testimony. Unfavorable passages are often rejected as interpolations. If such liberties be allowed with the text of old authors, any hypothesis may be proved or disproved at pleasure. Our author frequently appeals to the etymology of words to confirm his opinions. Such evidence must be acknowledged to be very suspicious, to say the least ; and so it is regarded by the critic himself, when old writers appeal to it. "Names of countries," says he, "were always formed in antiquity, as by the Germans afterward, from the name of the people ; and Italia means nothing else than the land of the Itali. Nor is it to be explained, except from that unspeakable spirit of absurdity which always came over even the most sagacious Greeks and Romans the moment they meddled with etymology, how any one could stumble on the notion of interpreting that name immediately out of itself, because, in the Tyrrhenian or ancient Greek, '*italos*,' or '*itulos*,' meant an ox." Thus it seems he regards the resort to etymological evidence as a prerogative entirely his own. He uses it without compunction, whenever it accords with his purpose to do so. That portion of this modern "History of Rome," which some men most admire as the strongest proof of the critical skill and acumen of the author, is by others regarded as the greatest paradox of all. He represents the entire history of the kings as *a poem*, or at least highly *poetical*. He often speaks of "the purely epic times of the kings," and of the "poetical and unhistorical accounts" of their reigns. Some of these kings he regards as purely mythological persons, and others he admits may have had a real existence. How he could determine, with so much confidence, which of the kings were once living, substantial beings, and which mere phantoms, he does not inform us ; nor has he given us any other proof of the existence of a large amount of national ballads, songs, and epics, in early Rome, whence the history of Livy was derived, than the well known fact that the infancy of every people abounds in rude poetry.

Primitive history was *oral*. The early history of all uncultivated nations is necessarily *oral*. The deeds of the fathers are transmitted by tradition. A thousand varying influences modify these simple stories of a childlike age. Among them, poetry appears to adorn and embellish the deeds of the fathers. In

this way facts are converted into fable, tradition into mythology. Some mythological narratives have a foundation in facts; others are the creation of the poet's fancy. Such are those which relate to the actions and attributes of the gods. Historical myths, such as relate to the origin of nations, the founding of colonies, the building of cities, and the wars of the primitive inhabitants of a country, should not be rashly rejected as utterly worthless. Besides mythological narratives and historical legends, there are other important sources of early history, such as genealogical tables, pontifical annals, chronicles of royal births and deaths, and catalogues of kings. Existing monuments and inscriptions commemorative of past events, and in ruder ages, mounds of earth, heaps of stones, altars, religious rites and festivals, all furnish to the historian collateral evidence respecting the occurrence of past events and the origin of early institutions. These sources of information, with many others now unknown, were certainly open to the great writers of Roman history, even if we admit that the public records were destroyed by the Gauls three hundred and sixty years after the date ordinarily assigned for the foundation of the city. But if the war of Porsena be a mere poetic flourish, having but slight support from facts, why may we not pronounce the invasion of the Gauls, under Brennus, a myth or an epic fragment, and thus, by a stroke of the pen, save the public records of Rome? Since the publication of Niebuhr's Roman History, it has become fashionable among scholars to talk of *the poetic character of the early Roman history*. It seems to be taken for granted that a vast amount of poetry, songs, lays, ballads, and epics existed in early Rome. Though these poems are now lost, and are admitted to have been lost in Livy's time, yet these sagacious critics know precisely what they contained, and are as familiar with their contents as though they were now lying upon their tables for reference. They can run over the pages of Livy and Dionysius, and select with the utmost confidence every "lay," "ballad," and fragment of epic poetry, which these historians carelessly incorporated with their facts. Macaulay, who has given us more genuine poetry, in his "*Lays of ancient Rome*," than was ever known in ancient Rome itself, remarks as follows: "The early history of Rome is indeed far more poetical than any thing else in Latin literature. The loves of the Vestal and the God of War, the cradle laid among the reeds of Tiber, the fig tree, the she wolf, the shepherd's cabin, the recognition, the

fratricide, the rape of the Sabines, the death of Tarpeia, the fall of Hostius Hostilius, the struggle of Mettius Curtius through the marsh, the women rushing with torn raiment and dishevelled hair between their fathers and their husbands, the nightly meetings of Numa and the Nymph by the well in the sacred grove, the fight of the three Romans and the three Albans, the purchase of the Sybilline books, the crime of Tullia, the simulated madness of Brutus, the ambiguous reply of the Delphian oracle to the Tarquins, the wrongs of Lucretia, the heroic actions of Horatius Cocles, of Scævola, and Cicelia, the battle of Regillus, won by the aid of Castor and Pollux, the fall of Cremera, the touching story of Coriolanus, the still more touching story of Virginia, the wild legend about the draining of the Alban lake,\* the combat between Valerius Corvus and the gigantic Gaul, are among the many instances which will at once suggest themselves to every reader." It must be admitted that these events would furnish admirable themes for the poet. But the poetic character of these narratives does not prove the actors in them to have been "mere mythological personages," nor that the events themselves had no real existence. If we make suitable allowance for those blemishes and inaccuracies which are common to the best writers ; ——" maculis, quas aut incuria fudit ; Aut humana cavit natura ;" if we take into consideration the influence of superstition and exaggerated traditions in corrupting the early history of all ancient nations, we shall rather wonder that Livy has incorporated so few ineradicable stories in his history, and admire its general verisimilitude, than charge him with gross negligence and unpardonable credulity and ignorance. The assertion that "the early history of Greece and Rome is deserving of no credit whatever," proves too much. Early poetry must have contained historic truth to give it currency. The fact that events were celebrated in song, does not rob them entirely of reality. The

\* "There is a tunnel through the hill on which Castel Gandolfo stands, two miles in length, made by the Romans, but the architecture is Etrusean, and not unlike the Cloaca Maxima at Rome. It has never been repaired since the days of Camillus, and perfectly attained its end. It is more than one hundred feet below the ancient level of the lake ; and since it was finished, the lake of Alba has never reached the sea." *Tour to the Sepulchres of Etruria*, p. 113. See also *Livy*, B. 5: 15, where this "wild legend" is recorded.

early history of every nation is poetic to a considerable extent. What is true of Greece and Rome is equally true of England and Germany, and, with a few unimportant exceptions, there is as much reason for asserting the fictitious character of Anglo-Saxon as of Roman history. No one supposes that the story of the miraculous birth and deification of Romulus, or the intercourse of Numa with the nymph Egeria, is true history. These incredible appendages of Roman tradition only prove the superstitious character of the age in which they originated. They do not necessarily prove that Romulus and Numa are "mere mythological personages," any more than the fictions of "the round table" prove the non-existence of Arthur, or the ten thousand fictions of the monkish chroniclers of the dark ages prove that the distinguished actors in those stirring times never existed. Niebuhr admits "that there is no rational ground for doubting the personal existence of Tullus Hostilius;" and "that the lay of Tullus Hostilius is followed by the narrative of a course of events *without any marvellous circumstances or poetic coloring.*" And what proof is there of all this but his assertion? We have the same authority for believing in the personal existence of Romulus as of Tullus Hostilius. And we have no reason for believing that the history of the one is *wholly true* and of the other *wholly false*, but the unqualified declaration of the critic. Rome certainly had a beginning, and Roman institutions were originated by some designer. The founder of Rome may, for aught we know, have been called Romulus; and since tradition uniformly asserts the existence of such a man, there is no absurdity in presuming that the city took its name from him. If we deny the truth of the formerly received traditions, we only cast ourselves upon the boundless ocean of conjecture. We have gained nothing by our skepticism. The origin of Rome and its institutions remains an everlasting enigma, whose solution must be given up to heartless skeptics and theorizing critics. It may not be improper here to ask for the evidence of the existence of a large mass of poetic productions in early Rome. The Romans were an agricultural and warlike people; they were a stately, unbending, dignified people. They were rather *practical* than speculative in their habits of thinking. They possessed little of the gracefulness and vivacity of the Greeks. They were, in general, unimaginative, and, of course, unpoetic. In the palmy days of their literature they were little more than imitators and translators of the Greeks. Even Macaulay, who

finds so much poetry, *lost poetry too*, in the early ages of Rome, finds no *original literature* in the Augustan age. "The Latin literature," says he, "consists almost exclusively of works fashioned on Greek models. The Latin metres, heroic, elegaic, lyric, and dramatic, are of Greek origin. The best Latin epic poetry is the feeble echo of the Iliad and Odyssey. The best Latin eclogues are imitations of Theocritus. The plan of the most finished didactic poem in the Latin tongue was taken from Hesiod. The Latin tragedies are bad copies of the master-pieces of Sophocles and Euripides. The Latin comedies are free translations of Demophilus, Menander, and Apollodorus. The Latin philosophy was borrowed, without alteration, from the Portico and the Academy; and the great Latin orators constantly proposed to themselves, as patterns, the speeches of Demosthenes and Lysias." Still this same author, in accordance with the views of Niebuhr, confidently believes that this borrowing, imitating, translating, dependent people, notwithstanding their utter destitution of poetic spirit and the power of invention, once possessed numerous national ballads, lays, and songs, nay more, "a grand and complete Epopee, commencing with the accession of Tarquinius Priscus, and ending with the battle of Regillus." And what astonishes us still more, all these compositions were lost at a comparatively early period of Roman history. Why should they have been lost? How could they have been lost? Did the bards and writers all die? Did this love of poetry, this marvellous devotion to fiction, suddenly disappear, and leave the people a stiff, stern, unimaginative race, as we find them in the fourth and fifth centuries of their existence? Critics, who have a theory to support, tell us that "the Homeric poems," as they are now called, (since Homer is no more,) existed for centuries before the art of writing was known in Greece. They were preserved, like oral traditions, by recitation and frequent repetition. Why could not Roman epics and lays have been preserved in the same way? A mother would as soon forget her nursing child as a youthful people forget the songs that celebrate the heroic deeds of their ancestors and the origin of their race. For the first four centuries of Rome, we have no evidence of the existence of any thing like an extensive body of poetic compositions. The history of Roman literature refers us to the existence of a few rude songs, such as the hymn sung by the "Frates Arvales," a college of priests instituted by Romulus, of the "Saturnian verses" prescribed by Nu-

ma, to be chanted by Salian priests, of the unpolished Fescennine verses, which grew out of the extempore doggerels of peasants at their "harvest homes." "There were also songs of triumph, in rude measure, which were sung by the soldiers at the ovations of their leaders." Beyond these rude attempts at poetry, there is nothing certain. The proof of the existence of "ballads," "lays," and "epics," lies chiefly in the imagination of critics. Even the first books of Livy's History, which are supposed to embody the substance of these poems, are the least interesting portions of the whole work. Either the description of the bloodless victory of the Samnites at the Candine forks, or the capture and burning of the Carthaginian camp, or Hannibal's passage of the Alps, has more graphic description, more of the genuine poetic spirit, the true "*vivida vis animi*" of the inspired bard, more real Homeric fire, than can be found in the whole history of the first four hundred years of Rome. It must be admitted that the first books of Livy furnish many delightful pictures, many poetic themes and characters, but in general the narrative is highly *prosaic*. It possesses less animation of style and fewer picturesque and striking descriptions than other portions of his history. This may be called mere assertion. But this I believe is admitted, that students are always less interested in reading the first books of Livy than in *many other* portions of the same author. The early history of Rome is, without doubt, uncertain, and, to some extent, *fabulous*. So is the history of most of the nations of the earth. We must be contented not to know some things, and to gain but an imperfect knowledge of others. To reject the history of the past, because it is in some respects contradictory or improbable, is to shut ourselves out from the benefit of the world's experience. The history of our own ancestors cannot be relied on, if we adopt such a test. An English historian, speaking of the early history of his own country, remarks, "The resemblance is very striking between the heroic age of Greece and the early Anglo-Saxon period of Britain. In both, the form of government is regal and confined to particular families, *who derived their lineage from the deities worshipped by the people*; for if the Grecian Basileus traced his pedigree up to Zeus, the Saxon king drew his down from Woden, (Odin,) the monarch of the northern heaven. The same qualities of mind and body were required in the sovereigns of both people. The king was the source of law and the administrator of justice, in Britain and in

Greece; and if in one country he was aided by a Bulé, or senate, composed of the nobles and chieftains of his realm, the same appearance is presented by the other in its Witena-gemot, or great council." What then is the conclusion of the whole matter? Whom shall we trust, ancient historians or modern critics? Both have their prejudices and partialities, and both abound in paradoxes. Is it not better to leave Roman history where Tacitus left the old German traditions, when he says, "quæ' neque confirmare argumentis, neque refellere in animo est: ex ingenio suo quisque demat, vel addat fidem"?\* Or shall we yield an undoubting confidence to the bold assertions of Niebuhr? Is there no danger that men of feeble vision may be blinded by excess of light? or that timid minds may be overawed by authority? It must be remembered that we have had already two recensions of Niebuhr's Roman History, the second containing important *alterations and emendations*; and, if the writer had lived, we might have had a succession of splendid hypotheses respecting the mythic and poetic age of "the eternal city." When we read the strong affirmations and cumulative arguments of this profound scholar, we would fain yield assent to all his theory; but when we turn from the written record, "a strange suspicion haunts us that all is not right." We wonder that the whole course of Roman history should have gone wrong for hundreds, yea, thousands of years, and yet a critic in the nineteenth century, detect the grand mistake. Our understanding revolts from the supposition. We seek for the causes which have given birth to this theory. We inquire whether the spirit of the age does not harmonize with the spirit of the critic. We find that this is not a solitary instance of historic skepticism. The learned public have grown familiar with *doubt*. Every thing old is suspected. It is popular to talk of *myths, legends, lays, ballads, epics, and fables*. It is considered *scholarlike and wise* to renounce old authorities and exercise an independent judgment. Some men even doubt their own existence, and like Des Cartes attempt to prove themselves alive by logic, and though the philosopher's enthymeme, "cogito, ergo sum," proves their own existence, it renders nothing certain prior to their own advent upon the earth. The past history of nations must be reviewed, dissected, and reconstructed. The early his-

---

\* *Germania, III.*

torians were children, enthusiasts, bigots. They believed every thing. They never attained to the sublime heights of Pyrrhonism. They knew nothing of the pleasures of this ethereal state. They lived in the reign of superstition and "old night." Their credulity has corrupted every page of the world's history. The early records must be expurgated or *re-written*. Livy, in the esteem of modern savans, was dreamy, poetic, and credulous. He collected old epics, absurd legends, and fabulous traditions, and gave to them the signature of truth. He lacked discrimination and research. He overlooked existing materials which lay within his reach, and chose, instead, the wild and fantastic fictions of a fabulous age. He must be rejected as *authority*, says the autocrat of modern criticism. Shall we do it? When we reflect upon the fate of this friend of our childhood, we do not thank the learned professor for this literary assassination. We love the "milky sweetness" of the good, gentle, and artless Livy. We cannot willingly consent to his death till we weigh the evidence and ask after the fate of his companions. Dionysius, Plutarch, Appian, and Tacitus have all fallen under the same condemnation. And what says "the spirit of the age" to the authority of the pleasing, story-telling Herodotus? Oh, he is a tolerable narrator of what he *saw*, but he does not know men. He dreams; he doats; he knows nothing certainly. He is loquacious, and his loquacity betrays him into folly and error;

"For who talks much, must talk in vain."

He is credulous, too; he listens and believes. He follows quacks and impostors, and writes down their shallow fabrications. He has little judgment and less acumen. He cannot distinguish an Egyptian god from a crocodile. Hieroglyphics he could not interpret. It is a wonder he had not passed the pyramids unnoticed, or mistaken lake Mœris for a frog-pond. He cannot be trusted. He falsifies his own records to please his countrymen. He multiplies the numbers and exploits of their foes, in order to magnify Grecian prowess and glory. In a word his history is mere romance. Let us turn to Homer. What says modern criticism of

"The blind old bard of Scio's rocky isle"?

What reply comes from the sacred tripod? The return is, "non est inventus." He never had a being. His very name is a lie. His honors are all fraudulently obtained. A hundred birds of

song have plucked away his borrowed plumage, and left him the object of universal scorn. This phantom has ruled on Parnassus too long. He must be cast down to the world of shades. He has deceived the nations almost as long as Apollyon. Let him now be bound for a thousand years, and we shall then have a literary millennium. But there remains one historian still more ancient, whose authority must now pass the ordeal of criticism. It is he who recorded events which occurred before Jove took his seat upon Olympus; before Neptune raised his trident in the *Aegean*, or Orpheus charmed the grisly monsters of Pluto's realm. It is he who wrote of themes of lofty import—of creation's birth—of man's disobedience—of a coming Saviour. What says modern criticism to his claims? Ah! he too is an impostor;—he is the child of fable; perhaps himself a mythological personage, or, at best, but the representative of a creed or system. The authority of Moses is no better than that of Herodotus or Livy. Such is the goal to which modern skepticism tends. It is in vain to deny the connexion between historic and religious doubts. They are both the offspring of the spirit of the times. They are the legitimate offspring of that widely extended system of German rationalism which retains the names and forms of religious faith, and yet denies its power and substance. A personal God is merged in a blind energy of nature, and becomes a mere *anima mundi*, or, what is still more refined, “the ever streaming immanence of the spirit in matter.” The incarnation of the Son of God is but the manifestation of this universal principle in Jesus, the Jewish moralist, and *in every man*, in an endless succession. The soul's immortality is the immortality of the race; individuals die, the race never. Thus the Old Testament becomes, in the hands of historical reformers, a collection of myths, songs, and apothegms, and the evangelical history a mere allegory or fable, till, at length, the full-fledged philosopher “knows no other God than him who, in the human race, is constantly becoming man. He knows no Christ but the Jewish rabbi, who made his confession of sin to John the Baptist, and no Heaven but that which speculative philosophy reveals for our enjoyment, on the little planet we now inhabit.”

## ARTICLE VI.

## EXPOSITION OF MATTHEW 7: 6.

By the Rev. E. BALLINTINE, Prince Edward, Virginia.

*Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine: lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.*

THESE words of Christ contain a practical precept—a rule of conduct for his Church. The passage is a metaphor:—its terms have therefore a literal and a metaphoric signification; and the whole has a literal meaning, which is, however, only the envelope of the higher and the true. What is the precept? what does Christ forbid his Church to do?

We will examine the terms of the text in detail, and then endeavor to elicit its meaning.

By “*that which is holy*” (*τὸ ἅγιον*), said of something which might be thrown to the dogs, a Jewish hearer would naturally have understood something which had been consecrated and offered to God, and which also could be eaten.\* Every thing offered to God was *holy* (*ἅγιον, ὁσιόν*), and he that violated the sacredness of a holy thing was by the law guilty in the sight of God.

Now, by this term, the Saviour, when addressing his disciples and his Church, must intend something which belongs to the Gospel, which is holy, and which may in some way or other be “given” and (figuratively) “cast” to men. We cannot as yet be more definite than this. If that is holy which is connected with God’s name, honor, cause, worship, and will; then the Gospel itself, the Church, its doctrines and instructions, its worship and ordinances, citizenship in its community, its rights and privileges, and its eternal blessings, are all holy.

“*Pearls*” are very valuable, and therefore have always been

---

\* I pass over without remark the interpretation *ear-ring*, as being based upon a baseless hypothesis, now acknowledged to be such. See Tholuck, *Bergpredigt*, on the text.

the symbol of that which is very costly and precious. So Job 28: 18. The Gospel with every thing that belongs to it is also *precious*. The Saviour, in Matt. 13: 45, 46, applies the term to himself and the blessings of his kingdom. As before, we must stop for the present at the general idea. We must survey all the parts of the text before we can judge in what way they are connected with each other.

The dispositions and habits of "*swine*" have made them to be always and every where the symbol of the morally polluted and vile of men.

"Dogs" are rabid animals, and may attack and tear. They were (and are) numerous in Eastern cities, roving about without masters, hungry, howling, ravenous. In this character perhaps they are figuratively introduced in that interesting passage Ps. 22: 16, 20, to represent the enemies and murderers of Christ.

But dogs, like swine, have been universally made rather *the symbol of the morally polluted and unclean*. (See Gesenius's Hebrew Lexicon, Article זָבֵב; Robinson's Lexicon of the New Testament, Art. *Kiōw*; and especially Winer's Realwörterbuch, Art. *Hund*.) They were unclean by the law, were held in disgust and abhorrence, and well deserve from their dispositions and habits to be the type of the wicked and abominable. The Jewish name of foreigners, "Gentile dogs," David's calling himself "a dead dog" in reference to Saul, and Hazael's words, "Is thy servant a dog?" are illustrations of this usage.

Thus dogs and swine are used, as symbols, quite alike—and they are often united. Peter cites the proverb, "The dog has returned to his own vomit again, and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire." Instances from the classics may be seen in Tholuck, *Bergpredigt*, p. 475.

Yet we must remember that both dogs and swine, especially in a half-wild state, are fierce and dangerous as well as filthy and abominable. And their fierceness is an element of their vileness. They are fierce in their filthiness—dangerous in their abomination. To gratify their vile propensities, they will assail whatever promises gratification or stands in their way. This then is probably the very mode in which they are metaphorically employed in the text. Even in Ps. 22: 16, 20, this may be the idea.

We must endeavor now to fix as definitely as possible the moral meaning and application of these terms in the passage

under consideration. As the love and enjoyment of what is low and filthy is the point of comparison between the animals and the men in question, those who have the characteristic doubtless have also the name. If so, a large class is designated by these terms; they comprehend *all those who*, whatever may have been their past, and whatever may be their future character, *have and indulge, at present, unholiness and impure propensities, and who do this with deliberate preference and headstrong purpose.* Let us remember, then, that the reign of worldly, wicked, vicious propensities in the heart and life, is the characteristic of those who are called by these names.

A few words here on the construction of the whole sentence. If, as we have seen, swine are fierce and dangerous as well as dogs, it will not be necessary to consider the passage as a case of the ἐπάροδος or ὑστέρησις, or, to use the words of Jebb, Horne, and Barnes, of the Introverted Parallelism.\* In the New Testament—in prose—in a practical discourse—in a rule for conduct, we should not expect a rhetorical and poetic construction which belonged, so far at least as Matthew knew any thing of it, to the Hebrew language, and which even in that is rare in the highest kinds of prose and even in poetry. If then this construction is not necessary, if it is not absolutely certain, it is not to be adopted. But the natural construction which would refer the last two clauses to the swine is favored by the circumstances of the case. It is more than doubtful, indeed, whether the word ἀρραγέτες (turning again) can be taken here as expressing the swine's method of attack. The peculiar manner of a boar in dealing a blow by a sudden side-movement is often noticed in classic writers, and is in Greek expressed by this very word (see Poli Synopsis and Tholuck's Bergpredigt on the place); but here it seems rather to express the simple idea of a turning from trampling to assailing. The circumstances to my mind in favor of the natural construction are, first, the style of composition to which the passage belongs;

---

\* These terms indicate a construction by which the fourth clause would be connected in sense with the first, and the third with the second; as if it were written, Give not that which is holy to the dogs, lest they turn again and rend you; and cast not your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet.

secondly, that the assailing *may*, as we have seen, be as properly understood of the swine as of the dogs; and thirdly, that as the "holy thing" supposed to be thrown to the dogs is apparently something edible and relished by them, while the pearls thrown to the swine only disappoint and provoke them, we should expect the swine and not the dogs to turn and rend their tantalizers.

The only leading terms of the precept itself which remain are "give" and "cast" (*δῶιε, βάλλεται*). We shall find, I think, that the whole meaning and bearing of the passage turns upon them. We shall first mention a particular interpretation of them and examine the meaning of the passage which results from it, and then turn directly to the investigation of the import of the terms and to the search after the true sense of the text.

These words "give," "cast," have almost universally, and apparently without hesitation or reflexion, been understood in the sense of *exhibiting, making known, offering*. One meaning of the passage which results from this explanation is as follows: *There are men so wicked and depraved, that the truths and offers of the Gospel, if laid before them and urged upon their acceptance, would only provoke their contempt and excite their hostility:—therefore, out of regard to the sacredness and preciousness of the Gospel, and the safety of its preachers and friends, Christ commands that to such the Gospel is not to be presented, but that it is to be carefully protected from their observation and contact.\** This is the common interpretation.

Some in ancient times went so far as to think that the whole Gospel was to be withheld from *all* unbelievers. Tholuck, in his note on the passage, quotes from an ancient book, in which a Christian, on being asked whether he is a Christian, is made to answer, Yes; but when asked what Christianity is, replies, "To say that I am a servant of Christ is my duty; but to tell you what Christianity is, is unsafe till I know who he is who asks the question, lest I be giving that which is holy to the dogs, and casting my pearls before swine." Others of the ancients imitated the heathen in making some of the *doctrines* and

---

\* Barnes gives the meaning thus: "Do not offer your doctrine to those violent and abusive men, who would growl and curse you; nor to those peculiarly debased and profligate, who would not perceive its value, would trample it down and abuse you."

ordinances of the Gospel, as they termed them, *sacred mysteries*, a sort of freemasonry, which was not to be divulged to the world. By some moderns, the *spiritual precepts* of the Gospel have been supposed to be the holy and precious things which were not to be made known to the wicked; by others, the *spiritual meaning* of the Bible; and by others still, the doctrines of *atonement for sin* and *pardon* through Christ; i. e., the very kernel of the Gospel itself. Grotius, Vitringa, Olshausen, are among these. See Tholuck.

Now, if any one of all these interpretations expresses the meaning of the Saviour, we have here a most singular injunction. Our remarks apply directly to the interpretation first given. The others either fall with it or of themselves.

1. The Saviour has not elsewhere manifested such an anxiety to save his Gospel from reproach and contempt. Ezekiel was commanded to deliver his message to the people, “whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear.” Is the Gospel message to be pressed less earnestly? Let Paul answer: “We preach Christ crucified, to the Jews a stumbling-block, and to the Greeks *foolishness*, but to them that are saved, Christ the wisdom of God and the power of God.” They “mocked” him at Athens, yet he preached Jesus and the resurrection (Acts 17: 18, 19). Christ preached in the midst of revilers, John 7th; and the last words which the disciples were to utter, when leaving a city which rejected them, were, “Notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.” But here I am forbidden to expose the Gospel to the contempt of scoffers and blasphemers!

2. The Saviour has not elsewhere commanded his followers to be so careful of their own safety. “Lest they turn again and rend you.” When he sent out his disciples to preach the Gospel, commanding them to publish it as widely as possible, and foretelling the dangers they would incur, he adds (Matt. 10: 28), “And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him who is able to destroy both body and soul in hell.” And the Apostles understood and obeyed their Master. Look at Peter and John and Stephen before the Sanhedrim (Acts 4 and 6 and 7), and Paul at Lystra (Acts 14: 19), and before the enraged Jews (Acts 22). Peter and John doubtless express the true principle (Acts 4: 19, 20): “Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye; for we cannot but speak the

things which we have seen and heard." The prayer of the Apostles (v. 29) was doubtless acceptable: "And now, Lord, behold their threatenings; and grant unto thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak thy word." No, Stephen did not do wrong when he preached to the maddened Sanhedrim, nor Paul when he plead so eloquently before the taunting Festus and Agrippa and the supine Felix; nor the martyrs, from these men and their companions down to the apostolic Williams, when exposing and sacrificing their lives for the Gospel's sake. But if the text has the sense now under review it would be hard to justify them.

3. Christ has not enabled nor elsewhere commanded his people and his ministers to decide who will and who will not be benefited by the Gospel. To presume to do so, is to assume a fearful responsibility. It is a judging of others which may be erroneous, and therefore wicked. See v. 1 of the chapter. How can I decide that such a one, my fellow-creature, is beyond repentance and mercy? Shall I not be liable to measure God's mercy by my severity, his grace by my indifference, his love by my prejudice or hatred, and his power by my weakness? Do I feel as Paul did (1 Tim. 1: 15, 16), that since God has had mercy on me, the worst sinners may perhaps be saved? How then can I act upon this sense of the text in reference to a particular individual?

It is in this very application of the text that its abuse consists. And the abuse of this text is the practical every-day sin of the Church and of Christians. We conceal our light—we lay aside or cover up our piety—we make no efforts for the salvation of those around us—and then we quote this text by way of making the Saviour justify us. We make our neighbors and friends and every-day associates dogs and swine, for whom the Gospel is too holy and too precious.

4. The difficulty in the way of these interpretations is increased by the fact that thousands out of the very worst and most hopeless classes of men have been hopefully converted and finally saved. And many of these cases have been the result of a blessing on the use of means. At the head of this multitude we may place that woman "who was a sinner" (Luke 7: 36-50), who, the Pharisee thought, should have been rejected by the Saviour:—then the thief on the cross—and Saul the persecutor—and, as the representative of the whole class, the prodigal son. Ancient tradition tells us of an abandoned apostate and

robber, who was sought out in the mountains, and reclaimed by the beloved disciple in his extreme old age. The conversion of the miners under Whitefield, of thousands of wicked sailors and beastly drunkards, of Hottentots, Bechwanas, Karens, and South Sea Islanders—a work, by the blessing of God, going on with new power and demonstration every day—serves to show the falsity and peril of this explanation of our passage in continually stronger light. O, how many there are now in heaven who once seemed vessels of wrath fitted for destruction! John Newton is another striking example of our remark. “God’s thoughts are not as our thoughts, neither are his ways our ways.” “He is able to do exceeding abundantly, above all that we ask or think.” The hardest case, by the Saviour’s own showing, is that of a rich man (Luke 18: 24–25): and yet salvation came to the house of the rich Zaccheus—for, says the Saviour, “The things that are impossible with men are possible with God.” May we not then at least use the means, in hope that *some* of the wicked may be saved?

5. And with these *facts* agree the general and special *commands* and *directions* given by Christ to his ministers. But before we quote these, let us look closely at the real character of the doctrine we are opposing. No one, even tolerably orthodox, would think of offering the blessing of the Gospel to any unconverted men as they are, but only on the condition of repentance: much less would he offer them to the openly wicked and profane without this condition. The only offers then which we need speak of are *all conditional*—are made to men upon the condition of repentance. Then, according to the interpretation under review, Christ in the text says that to some the offers of the Gospel are not to be made; *that is*, as we see, *even on the condition of their repenting and believing*. The meaning is, Invite them not to repentance;—Do not even say, as John did to the generation of vipers in his day, “Bring forth fruits meet for repentance, and, so flee from the wrath to come.” But does the Saviour mean to say such a thing? Let us look at what he does say: “Go ye into all the world, and preach the Gospel to every creature.” “What I tell you in darkness that speak ye in light, and what ye hear in the ear that preach ye upon the housetops.” “I came not to *call* the righteous, but *sinners* to repentance.” “Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find bid to the marriage.” The Gospel is *tidings*—the glad tidings—the good *news*, which may not

stop till it has reached every ear. He misunderstands and violates the very genius of the Gospel who thinks that it is to be withheld from any.

All will not indeed receive the Gospel—to some it will remain “hid,” though a Paul preach it, and they will be “lost.” Yet he who faithfully presents and urges the Gospel is “to God a sweet savor of Christ, both in them that are saved and in them that perish.” The Gospel preached to many shall be only “a testimony against them.” There is danger then, every way, in refraining, lest we limit the Holy One of Israel, and be unfaithful “stewards of the *manifold grace* of God! There is infinitely more danger of stopping short of our duty than of going too far. When we see the sword coming we *must* give warning, lest the blood of souls be required at our hands. But, if there are some men so wicked that the Saviour forbids me to offer the Gospel to them, I know not how I can safely distribute Bibles and tracts among the outcasts of society, or even continue to preach the Gospel to my congregation—for, alas, some there are among my hearers who have long treated my message with contempt. Must I refrain from beseeching such to be reconciled to God, hardened as they seem to be? I know there are some ministers and Christians who thus apply this and other parts of Scripture and Scripture doctrine—some to whom all “aggressive movements” of Christian effort upon the lost of this lost world are an offence; but it is matter of joy that there are those who cherish different views and act on different principles.

Great and good men have felt the difficulties which have been mentioned. Well understanding the genius, and largely partaking of the spirit of the Gospel, they could not adopt a view which so far shut the door which Christ had opened, and restricted so fearfully their commission to preach the Gospel. Yet, taking the same general view of the text as those already noticed, they have felt it necessary to find *some place* for the prohibition—*some* men to whom it would be wrong to offer the Gospel:—that is, they agree to give the rule place, being a rule of Christ, and yet they have tried to give it as *small* a place as possible—to assign it an exceedingly narrow sphere of operation. Zuinglie, Luther, Calvin, Tholuck, and Henry, agree substantially in explaining the meaning of Christ thus: “It cannot indeed be known beforehand, even of the most abandoned, that they belong to the dogs and swine in Christ’s sense of those terms; for from the depths of the most abandoned soul, the prayer, Lord, re-

member me, may be breathed, as was the case with the dying thief. *The manner in which men treat the Gospel when offered to them, must show whether divine truths are to be further imparted;* or whether the impenitent and hardened wretches are to be given up to judicial blindness.” In illustration of such cases they refer to Matt. 10: 12–14, Acts 13: 46, Tit. 3: 10, 11.

This is far better—as it opens the door wider, and *almost as wide* as it can be opened, for offering the Gospel. But,

1. As to the cases referred to in Matthew and Acts, we must remember that the Apostles were inspired men, and specially commissioned by the Saviour to proceed as they did; and, that those thus dealt with were Jews, to many, perhaps the most of whom, the coming of “the Son” was the last offer of mercy from God, the rejection of which was the filling up of their measure of iniquity. Ministers now do not and dare not imitate the Apostles in this course. The case in Titus supports a very different interpretation of the passage—it certainly has nothing to do with the *offering* of the Gospel.

2. It seems clear to me that the Saviour in the text and these interpreters in their explanation are speaking about different things. For, first, by “dogs” and “swine” *they* mean the finally hardened, those given up of God; whereas in Bible usage, and also, we have no reason to doubt, in the text, they represent all those who are devoted to sin and vice. Second, the *reasons* given by the Saviour are not the reasons why these men would refrain from offering the Gospel even to such. Not concern for the sacredness of the Gospel or for their own safety would deter them, but the simple fact that the wretches will not hear. The Saviour’s reasons have little or no pertinency to the case—the cases then and the reasons being different, the rules themselves are different.

3. The very observance of the rule thus interpreted, will not prevent but produce the evils against which it designs to guard us. “The manner in which men treat the Gospel *when offered to them, must show whether it is to be further imparted.*” Says Henry, “We must not condemn any as dogs and swine *till after trial and upon full evidence.* . . . We must take heed of calling the bad desperate.” So then we must go on subjecting the Gospel to continual profanation, and ourselves to repeated “rendings,” until we get “full evidence” that the subjects of our efforts will *always* profane the Gospel and injure us. Then at length we must desist. But,

4. It will be impossible to apply the rule; for I have shown that from among the worst some are saved. There are brands plucked out of the fire—eleventh hour converts. Of whom, or what particular man, would such men as Tholuck and Barnes say that God has certainly given them up, and that Christ had forbidden them in the text to present the Gospel to them any more. If a man under the gallows or on his death-bed should spend his latest breath in horrid blasphemies, they might indeed be still, filled with awe and horror. But,

5. For these few and extreme cases I think I may without impropriety say, the rule is unnecessary. Without it a Christian minister would feel quite justified in maintaining silence. The irrelevancy of the Saviour's reasons to these cases is glaring.

We have then examined the rule as thus explained. We have found it to run counter to the whole tenor and spirit of the Gospel. Even in the strongest cases, and within the very narrowest possible sphere of operation, we see that it would be defective, wrong, and useless. We feel warranted in rejecting this interpretation as erroneous.\*

If now, in our embarrassment, we turn to the text itself, we shall see that Christ does not speak of *showing* or *offering* the holy things and the pearls to the dogs and swine, which they are to receive if they lay aside their peculiar character, and become, for instance, lambs:—but he speaks of *throwing them down to them as they are*, and in such a manner that the pearls and holy things are in their power, are in fact theirs, and are treated by them as they please, and as dogs and swine are sure to do. There is no contemplation, in the supposed act, of a change in the animals, but the very reverse. The case supposed by the Saviour, is that of a man's throwing pearls and sacrifices to dogs and swine, as such. The interpretations we have been opposing, then, are not only wrong otherwise, but they cannot be derived from the text. They disagree with the metaphor in two respects. First, they make the “*giving*” to be only an “*offering*;” and second, even this *offering* contemplates a change of the character of the persons addressed, before it be carried out. Now, our Saviour's figures and illustrations are characterized by

---

\* I have dwelt the longer on these views of the text, because they are so common, and because of the importance of the practical points which they involve.

a strictness of propriety, nay, by a *severity of appropriateness*, which have made them to be the admiration of the world. The true interpretation of the metaphor must then have these two features: First, the giving must be absolute; and second, it must be carried out and completed upon the men in question, *remaining as they are*, in their wickedness and vileness. Let us now put the words together:—"Confer not the holy and precious things of my kingdom upon unholy and vicious men"—*Make not wicked and unworthy men sharers with you in the blessings and privileges of the Gospel.*

I understand the rule as applying, *first*, to the *visible church*. *The Saviour in these words forbids his ministers and his people to receive into membership in his church those who live devoted to indulgence of their carnal and unholy appetites.* He commands not to place these among the children—not to bestow upon them the children's privileges. The church is no place for the unholy and impure.

We have, then, in the text, the criterion laid down by Christ, of fitness, or rather of unfitness, for membership in his church. We have *his rule of admission*. Every rule and principle of admission inconsistent with this is condemned. Consequently, every church organization and all church practice, which interposes no bar in fact to the reception of the worldly and the wicked, is contrary to the rule before us.

But the words of Christ have also a more extended meaning. The visible church is a type of the invisible. Its high vocation is to represent the invisible church before the world. It *ought* to represent it exactly—to be identical with it. It is frequently spoken of therefore in the Bible as actually identical with it. Professing Christians are addressed as real Christians—as filling the place, doing the duties, and having before them the blessed destiny of real Christians. "How shall we who are dead to sin live any longer therein?" "Ye are the light of the world . . . the salt of the earth." "Know ye not that ye are the temple of the living God?" "Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular"—(i. e. *individually*, Robinson Lex.) There is "one God and Father of all, who is above all and through all and *in you all*." The intimate connexion between the visible and the invisible church is the foundation of this kind of language. It follows, therefore, that reception into the visible church is *the type of reception into the invisible*. Nor is it merely a type. If done as Christ commands, and on proper

grounds, it is the external representation of the invisible *reality*. "I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven." "Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven." Now, in the exercise of this power of reception into the visible church, which is typical and declarative of reception into the invisible, Christ in the text forbids his people to make unholy and wicked men typically and declaratively members of the invisible church. Such practice involves the error that such men are meet for heaven, and, without a change, in fact are or may be members of the kingdom of Christ. It is therefore wrong. Then this error itself, and every form of doctrine which involves it—universalism, and antinomianism of all kinds—are condemned in the words before us.

Such we take to be the bearing and scope of the Saviour's words. But we must subject our interpretation to a rigid testing. The results of such a testing, as far as I am able to make it, are as follows:

1. This interpretation gives their natural and proper force to the figurative acts of "giving" and "casting" in the text. It was these words which in fact first suggested the explanation. On this point enough has been said already.
2. It assigns to the "dogs" and "swine" their true symbolic meaning as found in Bible usage. It makes them, namely, to represent the actually depraved and vicious. Nor does it suppose or contemplate a change in the persons thus designated before the "holy" and "precious" things are given; but their receiving and possessing them as they are, unholy and vicious still. It neither warps nor narrows down the sense of these metaphorical terms, but gives them their broad and natural application.
3. The same may be said in regard to the symbolic "holy things" and "pearls." They are made to designate, in general, those sacred and precious things, both typical and spiritual, temporal and eternal, to which none but true believers have a title, and which ultimately none but true believers shall possess. There is here no violence, no arbitrary limitation or application of the terms to some single thing.\*

---

\* It cannot with any justice be said that by this interpretation the "holy thing" and "the pearls" are in fact made to mean nothing but the Lord's Supper. That ordinance may indeed appear to the carnal eye to be the only privilege ex-

4. By this interpretation of the rule, the reasons annexed to it by the Saviour acquire a striking and peculiar force. ‘Make not wicked men sharers with you in the privileges and blessings

---

clusively enjoyed by church members. But this is to take a very narrow view indeed of the church and a place in it. Can it be a member of the church who knows so little what is comprehended in his citizenship? But suppose that participation in the Lord’s Supper be the privilege primarily intended. What does the Lord’s Supper-mean? and what does partaking of it mean? The actual blessings of the kingdom of Heaven, and the sharing in them. Our application of these terms, then, is not a narrow one.

I will extend this note in order to set aside another possible mistake. It might occur to some one, that if the “giving” and “casting” are rightly understood of absolute conferring, inasmuch as there is no gift conferrable by men so entirely absolute and irrevocable as imparted knowledge, church-membership at least necessarily yielding to it in this quality; therefore the holy things and pearls might well be interpreted of *instruction in Gospel truth*, whence a meaning of the whole would result in amount the same as that first considered. Gospel truth has certainly both sacredness and value. Besides, as Tholuck observes, p. 477, instructions and discourses and books considered specially valuable are in the East very commonly denominated pearls. See d’Herbelot’s *Bibliotheque Orientale* (Paris, 1597), Articles *Loulou* and *Moroug*. Tholuck’s remark might have been extended to the West—witness the quaint titles to many of the devotional works of a century or two since. But I reply that the knowledge of the Gospel cannot be intended by the “holy thing” and the “pearls” of the text for two reasons: 1. The doctrine of the text would then be, that to the wicked Gospel truth may not be imparted: a doctrine which would imply the absurdity that Christ means and expects bad men to become good before the very means of reformation which he has appointed are used. Now it is as clear as day that Christ’s “words of grace” may be carried where he went, among publicans and sinners. “The whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.” 2. The knowledge of Gospel truths is only the *apprehension* of them by the mind, the *understanding* of the offers made by the Gospel to men on the conditions of repentance and faith:—so that this supposed *absolute* gift of knowledge is only the perception of the offers of the Gospel after all. This explanation, therefore, resolves itself

of my kingdom :’ for (1.) *They will trample them under their feet*, and (2.) *They will turn again and rend you*.

No other words could in so short a compass so *truly* and so *fully* describe the evils of a disregard of this rule. That we may see and feel this, let us refer to history.

The rule has been almost universally disregarded by those who, for eighteen hundred years, have had the administration of the church. To a great extent the world has been let into the church in mass. Whole nations of heathen have been baptized at once without instruction. The church has been brought into unholy alliance with the state, and has received every citizen and subject as a member. Men have been *born* members of the church ; and pastors have been bound to administer to them the holiest rites, at the peril of a suit at law, and even of their offices and lives. Or, some little restraint of outward indecencies at certain seasons has been made a requisite ; or perhaps external morality. In some churches, again, some understanding of the doctrines of religion is required, for which, however, the bare repetition of the Commandments, the Creed, and perhaps the Catechism, is extensively substituted. Some seriousness of character is often required, but satisfactory evidence of piety is the acknowledged standard of admission in few churches, and in those how negligently applied ! Thus the net of the church has indeed gathered of every kind. In proportion to the laxness of principle in this respect, has been the degree in which foolish virgins have been mingled with the wise in the community of professed disciples. Have now the evils which the Saviour points out in the text been experienced, and are they now felt ?

If the foreknowledge and infallibility of the Saviour are tried by this test, the result is most decisive. Never were truer words spoken—never was prophecy more strikingly fulfilled.

---

into the one already rejected, and falls with it. This remark also clears up another matter. Bibles and Tracts are absolutely given—the paper and ink are absolute gifts ; but these are only the means of *presenting* and *proposing* to the mind the truths and offers of the Bible : and this, as we have proved, is abundantly commanded, but forbidden neither in this text nor any where else. There is, no doubt, a sacredness and preciousness in the volume of the Scriptures itself ; but the Saviour has not seen it necessary to give any special rules for its protection.

History offers illustrations to an indefinite extent. We shall refer to a few only.

The Roman church has, since the days of the first degeneracy, violated the rule of Christ. What a congregation of wicked men (with doubtless many good) has that communion always exhibited! Think of the mass of the Irish, French, Spanish, Portuguese, and Italians, as members in full communion of the Church of Christ! Does any one know of a man whose moral character is too bad for membership in that church? She who claims to be keeper of the keys of heaven itself, has not scrupled to admit into it the vilest of mankind without the least evidence of genuine repentance. She sells salvation for money! The first consequence is profanation—the worship of God has been transferred to a woman, the Lord's Supper has been half of it cut away, and the rest substituted for the “one” offering of Christ; and what was left of holy and sacred has been overrun and trodden by the polluted and profane. The second is the rending of the church—the good and pious within the pale or within reach of that communion have been regularly and systematically persecuted for centuries; inquisitorial power and art and secrecy, holding commission from Rome, have been plying their instruments of torture and of death, and thousands who feared God more than man have been butchered in cold blood. If we look at the established *Protestant* churches, all which, as a matter of course, violate the rule, we shall also see that “profanation” of the church and “rending” of its members have gone hand in hand. The systematic persecutions and oppressions of Nonconformists in England and Scotland for two hundred years, together with the worldliness and godlessness, and open, infamous vice of many of those in office and power in the church, afford, again, abundant illustration of our Saviour's words. And the late “rending” of the Scotch church finds its whole (genetic) history embodied in this oracular text.

But to come nearer home.—In those “free churches,” which profess to receive members on principles in accordance with the command, we can still find, with the sin, the words of Christ as to the results of the sin amply verified. There may be found also in these churches men who, though morally blameless, give no evidence in their lives of vital piety—*worldly men*, whose “portions” and whose hearts are “in this life,”—*gay and giddy youth*, whose principle it is never to be serious—*enemies of the cross of Christ*, lovers of fashion and “conformed to the world”—

*Sabbath-breakers*, who cannot spare to God and their own souls one day in seven—*liars*, habitually taking the advantage of others in their business—nay, even such as are *profane* and *slaves of vice*. What are the consequences?—Why, is it not a profanation when such men, with hearts and hands defiled with sin not repented of, engage as the people of God, nay, perhaps as ministers of the Gospel, in the holy duties and the holy ordinances of religion?—when such bear the name and represent the cause and honor of Christ before the world? And “ whence come wars and fightings among you ?” Who, coming in “ unawares,” embrace false doctrine and bring in “ damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them ?”—Witness the history of the New England churches for the last thirty or forty years; and the rending asunder of the churches of the Pilgrims. Whose character and life lie as an incubus upon the piety of a church? Read the history of Edwards and the Northampton church. Who are the tempters of the unstable, and stumbling-blocks to the world? And who are Achans in the camp, causing God to be displeased and Israel to fall before his enemies? The answer is plain. It is unconverted, worldly, ungodly, and vicious church-members. Could the Saviour have told more solemn truths, or found truer and stronger language than he has used here?

For these evils there is no complete antidote in this world of imperfection. The church has always suffered from them, and always will suffer. Regular discipline can reach only flagrant cases, like that mentioned Tit. 3: 10, 11. It is unwieldy, and, when the evil has obtained ascendancy, impracticable. Unconstitutional exclusion is, or ought to be, out of the question. To retire, as our Scotch brethren have done, is often the sad but only alternative for throwing off the responsibility of that which cannot be remedied.

Therefore, says the great Head and Lawgiver of the church, when about to set it up upon the Corner-Stone of Calvary, and causing his words, by being here recorded, to sound down the long line of the future generations of his people—‘ GUARD THE ENTRANCE OF MY HOUSE—RECEIVE NOT THE UNHOLY AND IMPURE.’ Could command and reasons be more mutually appropriate?

We think that all the terms and all the parts of the text find, in this interpretation of it, a simple and natural signification, a pertinency and a mutual fitness which strongly support its claims as the true one.

But if this be the meaning of the text, it will have no connexion with the preceding verses. True; and the next verse will have no connexion with this, interpret as you may. Why may not v. 6 be the commencement of a new subject as well as v. 7? Neither of them has a connecting particle. Calvin and Tholuck both remark that this part of the Sermon on the Mount, is made up of miscellaneous instructions and directions. Those who suppose a connexion, and understand by the "holy thing" and "pearls" *reproofs*, slide insensibly into the interpretation *offers* before they are done.

But why has not this exposition, if in fact so simple, natural, and true, been discovered before? I answer, Henry and Scott both give it, though only incidentally and in a single sentence, while the rest of their remarks are of a different character. They appear to have seen the truth by a sort of intuition, (and this is a good proof of its correctness,) though indistinctly, and without perceiving its claims and reasons, or its inconsistency with the exposition which they make their own. Henry says, "The rule here given is applicable to the distinguishing sealing ordinances of the Gospel; which must not be prostituted to those who are openly wicked and profane, lest holy things be thereby rendered contemptible, and unholy persons be thereby hardened. It is not meet (says he) to take the children's bread and to cast it to dogs." Scott remarks that this precept has been much and grievously violated by the admission of ungodly persons into the Christian church, and the Christian ministry.\* I have not met with this interpretation elsewhere, and have not the means of an extensive search. Neither Poli Synopsis nor the extended commentary of Tholuck, so often referred to, contains a hint of it; unless indeed the slight historical notice by the latter of those ancients who made *mysteries* out of the Lord's Supper be such a hint. Doubtless, however, it has been held and is held by many. But a very good and plain reason I think can be given why this text has been so long and so gen-

---

\* This last hint of the "judicious Scott," deserves to have been made more prominent in the preceding remarks. Let me just say here, that of all the evils brought upon the church by ungodly members, by far the most awful profanations, and the most dreadful renderings have been perpetrated by ungodly ministers. But on this important part of the subject, I can now say no more.

erally misunderstood: The actual administration of the church has, in all ages, presented such a glaring violation of the precept. Individuals may have seen and may have felt the right; but the mass have acted, and so have interpreted, differently. The true interpretation was too high and holy for actual application: another meaning was sought, and, though opposed as we have seen to the very spirit of the Gospel, was embraced, established, and stereotyped. The wrong administration and the wrong interpretation became old, venerable, and *right* together; and thus the latter forced itself even upon the good, and has remained unquestioned even while its sister evil has by the blessing of God experienced some little check and correction. A Calvin, a Scott, and a Tholuck, may deplore the corrupt state of their respective churches, and still, by the unconscious influence of the existing state of things, fail to see the means appointed by the Head of the Church for a partial prevention of the evil.

A few miscellaneous remarks and we shall be done.

Unless we are entirely mistaken, we have relieved one of the most precious doctrines of the Gospel, as well as one of the first duties of Christians, from the pressure and restraint of a misinterpreted text. The words of Christ, if we understand them, have nothing to do with the offering of the Gospel; but leave this, as the grace of God has fixed it, with the widest, freest scope, limited only by the number and the wants of souls. "And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him come and take of the water of life freely." Yes, such is the freeness of the Gospel offer. The Bible does not and man must not limit or alter it. Let us then beware of limiting this freeness of the Gospel—1. By our doctrines and interpretations of Scripture; and 2. In practice, by neglecting to press its truths and blessings upon our fellow-men. We must love *all* men—we must love their souls—desire their salvation, pray and labor for their eternal good.

But is there, then, no limit to the duty of presenting and urging religious truth upon others? Is it my duty to do it at all times and in all circumstances? Common sense and warm Christian faith and feeling, guided by the word of God, will easily give a right answer to this question. "Let your light so shine before men that they may see your good works and glorify your Father." "Holding forth the word of life." See

also 1 Pet. 3: 1, 2. The influence of the example should be perpetual wherever a Christian is; and words might far oftener be employed with blessed effect than they are. See Matt. 10: 16, Eccl. 8: 5, Prov. 15: 23.

But, if we have taken away the choice phylactery from the cloak of the heartless and inactive Christian, leaving him no Scripture-phrased excuse for his neglect of duty, we have also gained a text, a "*locus classicus*," *an express rule* from Christ himself, for a most important part of the administration of the church. Of the type it may also be said as well as of the heavenly antitype, "There shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie; but they that are written in the Lamb's book of life."

We see, also, that it is a solemn thing to be a church member. The church is holy ground. "Holiness becometh thine house, O Lord, for ever." "We have an altar whereof they have no right to eat who serve the tabernacle." "If any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; every man's work shall be made manifest, for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; for the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is."

We see the importance, difficulty, and responsibility of their office who receive members into the church. To them directly the rule of the text is given. Nay, on them in part will rest the guilt of profanation.

Lastly, we see that the church has most to fear from those within itself. When she began, small, without human countenance, nay, opposed, persecuted, familiar with confiscations, imprisonment, torture, exile, and martyrdom, but comparatively pure within, she grew and spread herself over the world. But then, grown powerful, she was sought unto by the worldly and unholly; she admitted their advances; was corrupted, profaned, weakened, rent, and deprived to a great extent of all spiritual life; and to that extent became a putrid carcass, intolerable to men and offensive to God.

## ARTICLE VII.

## COLERIDGE'S VIEW OF ATONEMENT.

By Rev. LEMUEL GROSVENOR.

By those who have denied the divinity of our Lord, the doctrine of a vicarious atonement has been very generally denied. But on the other hand, those who admit the divinity of Christ almost universally admit the truth of this doctrine; and admit it too, we think, with the same consistency as those reject it who deny his divinity. Yet there are some who admit the divinity of Christ, who nevertheless deny the doctrine of vicarious atonement. Such are *some* of the followers of Coleridge; though we are bound to say that we believe the *majority* of the disciples of this philosopher differ from him in his views on this particular subject. Having sometimes disputed with the "most straitest" sort of Coleridgians, about the *orthodoxy* of these views, we have been led also to converse with Socinians on the subject; and have always found them ready to assent to the views of Coleridge, so far as they relate to the question of the vicariousness of the sacrifice, and the objects of the death of Christ.

It is our design now to show—

1st. That, so far as relates to the question of vicariousness, the doctrine of Atonement as held by Coleridge is consistent with the Socinian view of the same doctrine.

2d. That the doctrine of Atonement as held by Coleridge is absurd.

3d. That it is inconsistent with itself.

4th. That it is inconsistent with the Bible.

1st. *It is consistent with Socinianism.*

In affirming that the doctrine of Coleridge is Socinian, we by no means affirm that his whole scheme is consistent with that of the Socinians. The Socinian view of Atonement, like their whole scheme of religious doctrines, is, we think, consistent *with itself*, while that of Coleridge is not so, as we are hereafter to endeavor to show. The Socinian first denies the divinity of Christ, and then he denies the necessity of any sacrifice to compensate for the violation of God's law; for the very good reason, among a great many poor ones, that the denial of Christ's divinity leaves no possible provision for a sacrifice sufficient to expiate the sins of a world. So he denies the person-

ality of the Holy Ghost, and then denies the necessity of any special influences of the Holy Ghost, for the very good reason that he has "not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost." The Socinian doctrines hang together like the links of a chain cable; break one—tenth or ten thousandth—and you break the whole chain. And the same may be said of the doctrines of the Atheistical Materialist; but it cannot be said of the doctrines of Coleridge; and when we say that Coleridge's view of atonement is consistent with that of the Socinians, we only mean that it is so, so far as relates to the question of the *vicariousness* (i. e., in our mind, the *genuineness*) of the atonement.

Coleridge insists that there was no such thing as a literal *atonement* or *sacrifice* made to satisfy the demands of God's law. He says these words are mere *metaphors*, and complains that Christians understand them literally, and "infer the identity of the causes from a resemblance in the effects," and adds, that he believes the view or scheme of redemption founded on these metaphors to be altogether unscriptural—i. e., the scheme which represents the sacrifice of Christ as a literal sacrifice for sin, and made to satisfy the demands of the law, is altogether unscriptural.

Now every one who is conversant with Socinian writings knows that they construe these passages in the same way. Yet Coleridge and the Socinians all admit that *somehow*, on account of Christ's death, our sins are forgiven.

One of the ablest Socinian writers upon the Atonement (Worcester) says, "I wish it to be understood that I freely admit that the Messiah actually suffered for sinners, and for the purpose of saving them from sin and misery." Again he says, "A great object of the atoning sacrifice was to reconcile sinners with God." And again: "If by Christ's suffering as a substitute for sinners, were meant no more than that he actually suffered to save us from sin and suffering, I should readily acquiesce."

Another Socinian writer (Chr. Exam. Vol. I.) says, "If it were only required to believe and hold what Dr. Murdock has very justly said to be sufficient for salvation, that we know and believe firmly the Scripture truth that there is forgiveness with God for the penitent believer on account of something which Christ has done or suffered, there would not be a dissenting voice." And Coleridge, in equally plain language, admits that

the *consequences* of Christ's death are the same as those of the sacrificial atonement made by the priest for the transgressor of the Mosaic law—to wit, the *forgiveness of sins*.

Coleridge says, "The causative act (i. e., the act which procured man's redemption, to wit, Christ's death) is a spiritual and transcendent mystery, which passeth all understanding." It was not a real sacrifice or atonement, but a mystery. We confess our inability to comprehend just how much or how little Coleridge intends to express by the formula of words above quoted—but we do understand perfectly that he does not mean to say that Christ died in man's stead. Worcester has a parallel passage. "I am willing," he says, "to admit that the atoning sacrifice may have influence on salvation in ways which are not revealed, and which are of course unknown," and if this influence be not revealed, but unknown, it is, if it exist at all, a *mysterious influence*.

Again, Coleridge urges the old threadbare objection of Socinians against the *justice* of a vicarious sacrifice. Speaking of the words *debt*, *satisfaction*, etc., he says, "As your whole theory is founded on a notion of justice, I ask you, is this justice a *moral* attribute? I may with all right and reason put the case as between man and man. For if it be found irreconcilable with the justice which the light of reason, made law in the conscience, dictates to *man*, how much more must it be incongruous with the all-perfect justice of God!"

We shall doubtless be willingly spared by the reader the labor of transcribing a parallel passage from Worcester or any other Socinian writer.

Coleridge proceeds to illustrate the *insufficiency* of a substitute in moral cases by supposing one James to be the profligate son of a most worthy and affectionate mother—but a generous friend, named Matthew, interferes, and performs all the duties of the neglectful son. "Will this," asks Coleridge, "satisfy the mother's claims on James?" "If, indeed," he afterwards adds, "by the force of Matthew's *example*, by *persuasion*, or by additional and more mysterious influences, or by an inward co-agency compatible with the existence of a personal will, James should be *led to repent*; if through admiration and love of this great goodness, gradually assimilating his mind to the mind of his benefactor, he should in his own person become a dutiful and grateful child, then doubtless the mother would be wholly satisfied."

This illustration is Socinian in all its parts. Coleridge seems to forget the dignity of the Redeemer, and makes Matthew, a mere man, stand in the place of Jesus Christ—a man no better than James he makes the substitute for James—the obedience of Matthew equivalent to the obedience of Christ. The illustration seems to show also that Coleridge's views of the *requirements* of God's law are such as Socinians maintain. The *repentance* of the sinner seems to be all that he considers necessary. James must become a dutiful son for the future, by Matthew's example, persuasion, or mysterious influence, and then the mother will be fully satisfied.

Throughout Coleridge's whole discussion, there is no consideration of the necessity of maintaining the holiness and justice of God's moral government, by demanding reparation for past breaches of his law, or any intimation that in the sacrifice of Christ, God's attribute of *justice* was at all displayed. But we think we have shown that the Coleridgian and Socinian schemes sail along harmoniously together, like two ships under the same convoy and propelled by the same breeze.

## 2. *Coleridge's view of Atonement is absurd.*

He argues that all the different terms used in Scripture on the subject of redemption (such as atonement, sacrifice, sin-offering, ransom, redemption, etc.) are mere *metaphors*, used, not to express realities themselves, but the consequences of some reality unexpressed, for which, of course, we must look elsewhere. When the Bible speaks of sacrifice, atonement, etc., it does not mean sacrifice, etc., but something else. We must then give up nearly the whole of the epistle to the Hebrews as a metaphor, and many passages in almost every book of the Bible. When the Jews offered sacrifices for their sins they offered metaphors, for the purpose of foreshadowing that greater metaphor which was offered for the sins of the world. Or, if Coleridge allows that the Jewish sacrifices were *real* sacrifices, then they offered real sacrifices to foreshadow a metaphor yet to come. We have not yet come to the reality; we are floating on a sea of rhetorical figures, and cannot touch bottom. We have submitted ourselves to the pilotage of the philosopher, and must go where he guides. He offers us at last a resting-place in the third chapter of John. Here at length then is the long sought *reality*. He says that "John the beloved disciple enunciates the *fact itself*, to the full extent in which it is enunciable for the human mind, *simply*, and without

any metaphor, by identifying it in kind, with a fact of hourly occurrence. It is *regeneration*—a birth, a spiritual seed impregnated and evolved.” Here then we have the meaning of all these metaphors, “sacrifice, atonement, propitiation,” etc.—and that meaning is *regeneration!* “Christ gave himself a regeneration for our sins.” “This man, after he had offered one regeneration for sins, for ever sat down at the right hand of God.” It follows, then, that when Christ gave himself for the world, the world was regenerated, and the atonement means, “simply and without any metaphor,” the regeneration of all men. “John enunciates the fact simply, and without any metaphor!” Is not the word regeneration, *born again*, a metaphor? [We maintain that John uses the metaphor *born again* only to express the consequences of the redemptive act, just as Coleridge says all other Scripture writers use all other terms.] So after all we have not yet come to the reality. The ground we thought we had touched proves a quicksand, and we are again afloat on the rhetorical billows. We have only discovered that the Scripture writers use a great variety of metaphors to illustrate another metaphor, which needs illustration more than all the others. With notions like these on the subject of metaphors, we marvel not that Coleridge complained of confusion. If the word *sacrifice* be a metaphor, we see no reason why we should consider *Jesus* a reality—if one be a metaphor, so is the other.

### 3. *Coleridge's view of Atonement is inconsistent with itself.*

“Respecting the redemptive act,” says Coleridge, “we know from revelation that it was necessary that the Eternal Word should be made flesh, and so suffer and so die for us, as in dying to conquer death for as many as should receive him.”

Here Coleridge starts with a truly scriptural proposition. It *was* necessary, as he says, that God should take our nature and die for us. But we ask, and we have a right to ask, why this necessity? Revelation tells us so, says Coleridge. And we admit the full force of the reason. When revelation tells us any thing, and gives us no reason, we will receive it with all humility, and believe and cherish it. But revelation always gives us a reason for every thing which is comprehensible by human reason. There are no mysteries in the Bible, except such as must be mysteries from the nature of the human mind. When revelation tells us that God and man became united in one person, it does not tell us *how* it was done, because we could not compre-

hend it. When it tells us God worketh all things after the counsel of his own will, evil as well as good, it does not go on to tell us how he could do so consistently with our notions of "justice, as between man and man," because his reason is above our reason, and we cannot judge God by ourselves. But when, for instance, it tells us God will laugh at the calamity of the sinner and mock when his fear cometh, it gives us a *reason*, because we *can* comprehend it. And when it tells us God could be just, and the justifier of the believer in Jesus, it tells us also the simple, plain way; and reason instantly assents and responds to its grandeur and beauty. And surely there are mysteries enough in our holy religion, without zealously searching for more. It is an impeachment of God's goodness to say that he has given us the Bible to puzzle our brains with mysteries. Let us not shut the blinds, and drop the curtains, and resolutely close our eyes or draw over them the veil of mysticism, when God's bright sun is warming the whole world without, and striving to pour its cheering rays into the windows of our hearts.

We come back again, then, and demand why this "necessity" that God should take our nature and die? Why would not Paul or an angel answer the same purpose? Coleridge gives us no reply, save that revelation says so. Then if revelation had told us that a condemned *thief* or a *bullock* must die for us, the answer would have been equally satisfactory. Tell us why revelation did *not* tell us that a *lamb*, and that too not without spot or blemish, but the miserable starveling of the flock, would suffice to take away the sins of the world. Is this a "*mystery*" also? The *Socinian* denies the existence of the Eternal Word, or that any such person ever came here and died, and common sense tells him that *no man could* compensate for the sins of a world—and therefore he denies, *consistently*, that any such compensation has been made. But Coleridge maintains the *necessity* that the Eternal Word should come and die, but can give us no reason, because he denies that Christ suffered as a substitute for the world, or offered any satisfaction for injury done to the law of God. Is not Socinianism much more self-consistent?

But Coleridge says again, "Nevertheless the fact having been assured to us by revelation, (viz., that Christ's death procures our salvation,) it is not impossible, by steadfast meditation, for the mind to satisfy itself that the redemptive act supposes, and that our redemption is negatively conceivable only on the supposition of an agent who can at once act on the will as an exciting

cause"—(i. e., in plain English, our redemption is conceivable only on the supposition of a Redeemer who is Divine.) Here is sound doctrine, but held, we think, most inconsistently. We are obliged again to ask the *reason* why the Redeemer must be *divine*. It may be from sheer, asinine stupidity on our part, but we must confess that after some "meditation" on the subject, we are just as much in the dark as ever.

We appeal to the reader. Suppose I were to tell you that in order to the forgiveness of your sins, and the sins of a world of sinners like you, it was necessary that some one should suffer *in your stead*. You ask my reason for the assertion, and I tell you revelation says so. You ask, who it is that must suffer in your place, and I reply that is "a mystery that passeth all understanding." You then try to imagine who there is of sufficient dignity and worth to enable him to take away the sins of a world by suffering in the world's stead. You can think of no one on earth, and in your distress you look to heaven. You can conceive, perhaps, that if Christ were to take our nature and die, he might be a sufficient sacrifice, but revelation gives you no intimation that he will come, or rather it tells you distinctly he will not come, to die in your stead. Yet some one must come, or you are eternally ruined. What sort of satisfaction would my information give you? How distressful your uncertainty! How low your opinion of the fulness and worth of that revelation! The dreadful sentence hangs over your head by a hair, but you know not how to avert it. But just so much satisfaction can I obtain from all that Coleridge tells me. I see the holiness and justice of God's law, in which I read that the soul that sinneth it shall die. I see no way in which I can escape the penalty due to me as a sinner, unless some being, able and willing, "pay the rigid satisfaction, death for death." I see clearly that God could be just and justify me through the sacrifice of Jesus, but I can see no other plan by which he could maintain the holiness and justice of his law, and yet pardon my sins. But Coleridge tells me I can have no hope from that quarter—Jesus will not die in my stead, or suffer one pang of the suffering due to me. I imagine myself at Calvary, and the dreadful tragedy enacted there passes before my eyes. I ask the bystanders (Coleridge among the rest) the *reason* of all this. I ask if he is dying in my stead. No—he is *not* bearing my sins in his own body on that tree. All this inexplicable agony he endures, yet he has made no provision to satisfy the demands of that outstanding law against me. I de-

mand, why not bring up your bloated drunkard and crucify him? Why not bring a bullock already chained for the slaughter, and spare this innocent victim? and they only tell me they do not know why—it is “a transcendent mystery that passeth all understanding,” but more *meditation* on the subject may convince me that this Divine sacrifice is necessary!

4. *Coleridge's view of Atonement is inconsistent with the Bible.*

Coleridge was quite right, as we have said before, when he maintained, though without giving us any reason, that it was necessary that the eternal Son of God should die for us. Revelation assures us of the fact, but it also gives us a *reason* free from all metaphysical subtlety, involved in no mystical mist of words; a reason which a child may comprehend and feel. It is the reason given in the third chapter of Romans, twenty-sixth verse. God could not be *just* and justify the believer in Jesus, unless Jesus had been set forth as a *propitiation* for the remission of sins that are past. A *propitiation* means something that shall cause the judge to accept it as a sufficient ground for the pardon of the offender. The *sufficiency* of a sacrifice for such a purpose depends of course entirely on the inherent value of the sacrifice. And what must be the inherent value of a sacrifice, to render it sufficient to atone for the sins of a world against an infinite and holy God? Who *could* compensate, by the shedding of his blood, for the violations of God's holy law? Who but he, who having offered himself once for all a sacrifice for sin, shall come once more without sin to judge us all? But we are told that the sacrifice of Christ was not a *literal* sacrifice for sin. What was it then? If you tell us it was no sacrifice, but a mystery, you leave no more impression on our mind than if you were to repeat to us those incredible tales of Eastern genii and fairies. Tell us plainly that he died only as a martyr to the truth, or as an example to others, and then we can understand, though we may not believe.

If the sacrifice of Jesus was not a real sacrifice, why so much efficacy attributed to his *blood*? Blood is no metaphor, but the very essence of the atonement. “Without blood there is no remission,” says the Apostle. But he says, also, that it is impossible that the blood of bulls and goats should take away sin. This then must signify that *some* blood could take it away, or the Apostle was speaking at random—if he did not mean that *some* blood could take away sin, his remark about the blood of

bulls and goats was just as sensible and forcible as if we were gravely to assure you that a glass of water could not suffice to cleanse the Augean stables. Some blood could take away sin, or else there is no remission, no forgiveness, and so all men are hopelessly lost. But whose blood could take it away? Could not David's—the man after God's own heart? He was a *sinner*, and to pardon sin by accepting the sacrifice of a sinner, could have no effect to show forth the holiness and justice of God and God's law;—or had David been entirely spotless, his sacrifice could only be an equivalent for one man, like himself—his blood could not expiate the guilt of millions dead, of millions yet unborn. But could not the angel Gabriel, who never sinned, have taken our nature, and suffered and died, "the just for the unjust?" No. Gabriel is a mere creature, the insect of a day. And though the whole glorious host of angels had offered themselves as one grand holocaust, (and doubtless those who now rejoice over one sinner that repented, would willingly have died for the millions that needed repentance,) had they all come and suffered, it would have been unavailing—for no number of finites can equal an infinite, and nothing less than an infinite was worth a world. The blood of *Jesus Christ* alone cleanseth from all sin. Not a mere man, not an angel, not ten thousands of angels, but a *God*.

Yet by his illustration, the philosopher would convince me that *this* sacrifice would be no compensation to God for my violations of his law. Matthew's obedience, he says, could be no compensation for James's disobedience. He would have me believe that *my* repentance is of more value in God's sight than the obedience unto death of God's own Son!

For the class of readers whom I now address, it is unnecessary here to go into the commonly urged and never answered arguments from Scripture, in proof of a vicarious atonement, but I desire to use one arrow from the quiver of the enemy. In war, men often find the captured guns of the enemy more serviceable than their own. The lawyer rightly esteems it a great advantage when he can turn the testimony of an opposing witness in his own favor, for such testimony weighs more in his behalf, than a cloud of witnesses brought to the stand by himself.

We proceed to show the course which has been sometimes taken to be rid of the doctrine of vicarious atonement. The book of Hebrews is so full and clear on this subject, that the

writer of an article in the Christian Examiner (Review of Stuart on Hebrews) endeavors to do away its force by maintaining that neither Paul nor any other apostle was its author, and that it is not canonical. He handles the writer to the Hebrews "without gloves." If he could make out that the writer was what he calls him, "a man whose imaginary conceptions are blended with his opinions,"—a man, "the conceptions of whose fancy are presented with so much vividness and with such an air of reality that they are likely to be mistaken for his distinct apprehensions of what he believes to be the truth"—if he could make out all this, we say, with a few other things equally feasible, then indeed he had turned the hard and high-walled field of the "Hebrews" into an open common, and thus cleared his way into the other epistles and the gospels, where he might throw out the troublesome rocks of sound doctrine at his leisure, and raise a rank crop of cockle and tares amidst the wheat and barley of God's truth.

"There seems to have been," he says, "in the mind of the writer (to the Hebrews) an obscure and mysterious grandeur thrown around the conception of Jesus Christ as a high priest, which he was unwilling to dispel. His imaginations appear to have become in some measure blended with his belief. He seems to have gazed on the glorious image before him, till his eyes were dazzled and his sight unsteady, and he could not distinguish clearly between realities and figures."<sup>\*</sup>

He proceeds—"The writer to the Hebrews taking advantage of the obvious metaphor of a sacrifice, institutes an elaborate comparison between the death of our Lord and the Levitical sacrifices. He insists on this mode of representation as something essential to his purpose. In representing the death of Christ as a sacrifice, the writer to the Hebrews, for the most part, though not always, conceives of it as a sin-offering. In following out this conception, he represents it, to the imagination at least, as having in consequence an intrinsic efficacy to remove the sins of the people. His representation is, likewise,

---

\* Verily, the contrast is striking between the weak, visionary, and rhapsodical author of Hebrews, and the solid craniological formation of the author of this article in the Christian Examiner. "How stupid that lion looks, and how short he wears his ears!" said the ass to the bear. "He wears his teeth middling long though," replied Bruin.

that by this great and only necessary sacrifice, the use of all other sacrifices was taken away."

He says, moreover, that "the writer's representations are those into which he was led by his earnestness to discover analogies between the old and new dispensations, and to represent Christianity as the sublime antitype of Judaism."

We have no occasion to attempt any improvement upon the very decisive language of this Socinian writer, as to the bearing which the epistle to the Hebrews has on the priesthood of Christ, the literalness of the sacrifice, its immense importance, and the analogy between the vicarious sacrifices of the old dispensation and "the great and only necessary" sacrifice of the new.

In quoting from this writer, let it not be inferred that we would charge Coleridge with holding such views as to the authorship of the epistle, or the meaning of the contents. We adduce it merely as showing the belief of one Socinian, at least, as to the real consequences of receiving this epistle as inspired.

In conclusion, we would say that our objection to Coleridge's view of atonement is not so much on account of any bad influence which it had on his own mind, as on account of the effect it *may* have on others. The philosopher was, no doubt, a Christian. Indeed, passages in his writings on other subjects, would seem to contradict some of his positions and illustrations upon this subject of atonement. But if he really held that Christ's death had any connexion with the *justice* of God, it is certainly not brought out in the chapter which seems intended to be a full exposition of his views upon the subject of atonement—on the contrary, he explicitly denies it. We have studied the views in this chapter, and have endeavored to give our opinions upon them plainly and with perfect fairness. To learn his views of the Atonement, one must, of course, take the views presented in the portion of his writings where that subject is treated of specifically and fully. It is no part of a reader's business to search *elsewhere*, to strive to discover passages which might possibly modify or even contradict his plain statements and arguments as they stand in the place where he intends to bring them out fully. One might take a Socinian book and select detached passages which would prove the writer orthodox on all the Bible doctrines; and we deny not that many a sound orthodox work may be proved to be Socinian in the same way. We must consider the writer's main object.

Coleridge, we understand to maintain, that God could be just and the justifier of the believer in Jesus, without any propitiatory sacrifice to the demands of God's law, simply on the repentance of the sinner. When he says redemption is a mystery, he does not mean simply that it is a mystery *how* God could be just, and still justify the believer in consequence of the sacrifice of Christ ; but he means that God could be just and do this *without* any such sacrifice. He does not mean to say that it is a mystery *how* this combination of justice and mercy in the Atonement works our redemption, but he denies that there *is* any such combination in the mystery of redemption—herein joining issue with the apostle, as we think. To our mind, the word *mystery*, as he uses it, has no signification whatever. We can see very clearly what he does *not* mean by the word ;—but what he does mean is—a mystery.

After thus animadverting upon Coleridge's view of atonement, we take the liberty to express our gratititude for the benefit we have received from his writings. The prejudice we imbibed against him from *hearsay* evidence, we have found melting away as our personal acquaintance with him has increased. We have entirely recovered from the alarm we experienced on first beholding an outlandish and barbarous jargon of "words, words, words,"—and we do believe that if many who are now strongly prejudiced against him, would seriously study, and *try* to comprehend him, they would acknowledge him to be an original thinker, and a "myriad minded" man ; and would sometimes, amidst a mass of strange speculations, and under what seems a hard and useless crust of words, find a diamond of exquisite purity and value.

#### ARTICLE VIII.

##### AN ESSAY ON THE MORAL SUSCEPTIBILITIES, MORAL ACTION, AND MORAL CHARACTER.\*

THE word *moral* is used in its broadest sense, to signify that which is influenced to activity by motives. Thus the physical and moral world are contrasted, the one being moved to activity by physical causes, and the other by motives. In a more limited sense, the word *moral* has reference to mental action as either right or wrong. It is in this restricted sense, that we speak of the *moral susceptibilities* or *moral sense*; and in this article it is proposed to discuss the question as to what right and wrong is, and what are the constitutional susceptibilities which influence or move intelligent minds to do right and avoid wrong.

It is needful, first, to settle the question as to the meaning of the terms *right* and *wrong*.

The term *right* in its most generic sense signifies *that which is fitted to accomplish the object of a design*. Thus a watch is right when it shows the time of the day, a medicine is the right one when it tends to cure; and thus whatever tends to secure the object of a design, either in matter or mind, is called right, and the opposite is called wrong.

In an inquiry, then, respecting the right moral action of mind, it is manifest that it cannot be settled until we first ascertain *the object which mind is created to secure*; for when we have gained this, any volition is right which tends to secure it, and wrong when it tends to contravene it.

In seeking the answer to this inquiry, we appeal first to reason, and then to revelation. The principle from which we reason is, that *the nature of a contrivance shows what is the design of its author*. It will, therefore, be first shown, that the object of the Creator, in the formation of mind, is the production of the *greatest amount of happiness*.

In attempting this, it is needful to show, not merely that mind is designed for the production of happiness in certain degrees, more or less, so that if any degree is attained the end is accomplished, but that it was designed to secure the *greatest amount of happiness*.

---

\* The author's name is withheld for special reasons.

To illustrate this, we may mention certain examples.

If a physician is prescribing to secure health, his object is not gained till entire and perfect health is attained. If a mariner is aiming to shun a certain shoal and reach a certain port, his object is not attained by *nearly* shunning one and *nearly* reaching the other. If a man is seeking to produce great speed of motion, his aim is not secured while impediments remain that can readily be removed. If, therefore, we can prove that the object of creating mind is to produce happiness, we do in fact prove that the object is to promote the *greatest amount* of it. Otherwise the absurdity is involved of supposing a designer to plan a thing, and then to put in, as a part, impediments and hinderances to the accomplishment of this plan, or to leave out certain particulars needful to secure it. We can make only two suppositions. Allowing that the design of creation is the production of happiness; one is, that the Creator planned to secure the greatest amount, the other is, that he planned happiness as the grand aim of all his contrivances, and then put in certain particulars to mar and diminish the result which he aimed to secure. This is absurd; we therefore assume that proving that God designed happiness by creating minds, is, in fact, proving that he designed the *greatest amount* of happiness.

We proceed now to present some of the evidence to prove that the object of the creation of mind is the production of the greatest amount of happiness.

We shall attempt this, by showing the nature of mind, the nature of the circumstances in which it is placed, and the declarations of the Creator of mind on the subject.

The first particular in the nature of mind which indicates its design is, that never ceasing desire for happiness and fear of all that destroys it, which are the main principles of all mental activity. A mind that is in its natural state, never will act, except to make some happiness, or to escape some evil. Of course its author designed that it should act for this end. We can conceive that a mind might be so constituted as to act always to produce only pain to itself and to others; in this case, we should justly infer that the object of its Creator was to produce pain.

Another particular is, that the simple exercise of those powers of mind which are involuntary, and result solely from its constitution, is a cause of happiness. The succession of concep-

tions and emotions according to the laws of association, and the new combinations of the imagination, are both sources of enjoyment. Still more so are those acts of mind which are indirectly controlled by volition, such as the exercise of mind in acquiring knowledge; in combining, contriving, and arranging; and the various exercises of taste, the exercise of the reasoning powers, and the exercise of physical power: these are all enjoyments secured by constitutional powers of mind.

Nor is evidence of the same design less manifest in the constitution of mind in its relation to other minds. The highest and purest happiness results from these *mutual relations*. From this springs the pleasure found in the discovery of noble intellectual and moral traits in other minds, from the power of giving and receiving affection, from sympathy, and from the practice of benevolence towards others. And it is interesting to discover that our minds are so constituted, that what one mind desires and enjoys, it is a source of happiness in another to bestow: thus, while one is pleased with the discovery of traits of worth and loveliness, the other is as much gratified at being understood and appreciated; while one seeks affection, the other rejoices to bestow it; while one seeks to gratify curiosity, the other delights to impart information; while one rejoices to bestow good, the other is delighted to receive it; while one delights to exercise and exhibit virtue, the other is delighted in beholding it. What bursts of rapturous applause have followed the exhibition of virtuous self-sacrifice, from bosoms that rejoice in this display, as they would in the exercise of this goodness!

But it is that peculiar constitution of man referred to as his *moral nature* or *moral susceptibilities*, which especially exhibit the design of the Creator in forming mind, and therefore these will be more distinctly exhibited. By the moral nature of man, we intend those constitutional principles, which operate as *motives* or *moving powers*, in influencing him to choose what is right; that is, to act not for personal gratification, but for the *greatest general happiness*. The following are presented as the principal ones.

The first is, a susceptibility of pleasure at being the cause of good, and of pain at being the cause of evil, either voluntary or involuntary. All mankind, both young and old, are pleased when they are told that they have done some great good to others, even when they had no idea or intention of accomplish-

ing it. Thus if, by mere accident, without any thought of the result, an act is done which saves the valuable life of the father of a helpless family, no spectator can enjoy what is felt by the author of this act. So, also, if by accident a person kill or wound another, however unintentional the evil, the author suffers far more distress than any other person. But the pain and pleasure are greatly enhanced if the good or evil are *voluntary* acts. The emotions of remorse for the commission of voluntary crimes are probably more agonizing than any other the mind can endure; while the enjoyment resulting from the voluntary creation of happiness is unsurpassed by any other.

A second susceptibility, is that which is excited to desire evil to the cause of evil, and good to the cause of good, whether voluntary or involuntary. This principle is exhibited in the youngest child, who bites or strikes whatever gives it pain, without regard to whether it is intentional or not. It is as marked in many adults, who, following their impulses, inflict blows on animals or persons who have perpetrated some accidental and unintentional mischief. So the involuntary cause of good is regarded with complacency, and the impulse of the mind is to make compensating returns. But in cases where the good and evil have resulted from voluntary agency, with premeditated design, these impulses are not only called forth more powerfully, but they become perpetuated principles of action. Where the evil done is involuntary and unintentional, the impulse to retaliate often is changed to pity for the unfortunate author of the evil. But the author of voluntary and intentional evil is followed by the continued execration of all who suffer or witness it; and it is sometimes the case, that the desire for retributive inflictions becomes so strong in a community as to amount almost to a mania.

And so, in reference to the voluntary author of great good, the impulse to reward is not transient, but perpetuated. This is seen often in the enthusiasm of delight which greets a public benefactor, and the abundant rewards so joyfully bestowed.

The next moral susceptibility, is that which demands a certain relative proportion in the rewards and penalties for good and evil actions. This principle can be seen in very young children, who instinctively revolt at the infliction of severe punishment for some trifling act of forgetfulness, but who are satisfied if the same penalty is awarded for some heinous act of injury. It is still more clearly developed in the mature mind, which demands

still more accuracy in the appropriate adjustment of rewards and penalties. This is the principle which ordinarily is named *the sense of justice*.

The next susceptibility is, that which is pained by seeing intentional evil inflicted on a benefactor, or even the want of indication of grateful emotions in the recipient of favors. If we ourselves have conferred benefits, the return of evil for the good inflicts a much severer pang than if no such favors had been bestowed. And ingratitude witnessed toward other benefactors, often awakens intense feelings of indignation and disgust; while demonstrations of gratitude are always regarded with complacency.

The next susceptibility is, that which is pained by seeing the comfort and enjoyment of one person sacrificed to increase the enjoyment of others. If one who has power robs the feeble of his earnings to spend them on increasing his own luxuries, every mind revolts from the deed. If one class of persons conspire to strip another class of their possessions to increase their own indulgences, still greater indignation is felt. The system of slavery is a flagrant and well known violation of this moral sentiment.

Another of the moral susceptibilities is, that which demands that laws enforced by penalties be applied only where there is the power of obedience. To require a man to see when he has no eyes, or to walk when he has no feet, or to love what is disgusting to his natural taste, or to perform any act which he has no power to perform, and then to punish him for not obeying, is what every mind revolts from as cruel and unjust.

So also it is demanded that a *knowledge of the law and penalties, and an understanding of the evil perpetrated*, should be taken into account in modifying penalties. In family government, a child is not to be punished with reference merely to the extent of the mischief done. The breaking of a splendid and expensive machine, and the destruction of a cheap article of crockery may both result from an act of equal heedlessness in two children, and if the parent punish solely with reference to the value, and let one escape with a slight reproof and inflict protracted and painful retribution on the other, who was unconscious of the value of what he destroyed, this principle of the mind revolts from such conduct as manifest injustice. In cases, too, where evils are done through ignorance, the penalties are to be modified by the question as to the nature of this

ignorance, as innocent and unavoidable, or voluntary and consequent on wilful neglect. When the evil results from ignorance that is blamable, a penalty is felt to be right, from which this principle of mind would revolt, if the ignorance was unavoidable.

The next susceptibility is, that which is pained by a violation of confidence.

If a stranger go to the hut of a savage, and in confidence commit himself unarmed to repose, this confidence appeals to the most barbarous of minds, and imposes obligations not felt, when no such confidence is exhibited. Confidence in a man's word, or in his honesty, imposes a similar obligation; and the violation of such confidence always revolts the moral sense of mankind.

Another susceptibility is, that which requires that the generation of a certain relative amount of incidental evil shall not be allowed to prevent the accomplishment of a certain relative amount of good. Mind is so constituted that it instinctively weighs or compares good and evil, so that a given amount of good is considered as compensating for a given amount of evil. Whenever this balance is struck, and there is a decidedly additional amount of good to be gained, this principle demands that the good be secured, even if it involve the incident evil. Thus, in the case of a surgical operation on a young child. The parent knows that the comfort of a whole life will be secured by this operation, and yet that it will involve momentary agony to the child. And every mind demands that this good be secured to the child, whether he consent or not, and in spite of the involved evil. So a man, in deciding to enter the family state, foresees that many evils will inevitably arise that would not exist if he remained single. And yet the anticipated benefits to all concerned, he sees to be so great, as to satisfy his moral sense in calling such inevitable evils into existence.

So, in forming laws for a state. It is foreseen that in many cases these laws will bear heavily on individuals, and cause great suffering, but the good to be gained is deemed so great as to compensate for the incident evils. In some of these cases, the incident evil not only secures great good, but saves from greater evils. In the case of the man who decides to rear a family, he cannot suppose that he is preventing greater evils, so that his remaining without a family will cause as much suffering to himself as will be endured by all whom he may call

into existence. He merely foresees that the good gained, together with the evils escaped, will compensate for all the incident evils involved.

The next moral susceptibility is one which is pleased when, to avert greater suffering from others, another person *voluntarily* undergoes a less amount of suffering, but which equally revolts from any *compulsory* sacrifice of this kind. For example, we read in history of the self-sacrifice of Regulus, of Quintus Curtius, for the salvation of their country; and every person who has read these stories, has admired this patriotic devotion. But had their fellow-citizens taken them against their will and forced them to the sacrifice, every mind would revolt from the deed.

Another susceptibility to be noticed is, that which is affected by the acknowledgment of a fault, and the feeling and expression of contrition. This course of conduct and feeling affects both the offender and the one injured. The injured party is placated, and the desire of retaliation is abated. The guilty person, to a certain extent, is relieved from the pangs of remorse. Still more is this the case if full reparation is made. And every mind feels complacency in a person who has the magnanimity to acknowledge a fault, and to try to repair it.

Another susceptibility to be observed is, that which is affected by the infliction of penalties on one who has done evil. This is perhaps included as a specific case under another more general head, but deserves to be distinctively considered. In all the history of our guilty race, we find that the author of evil feels that he deserves punishment, and that when it is inflicted, his remorse to a certain extent is relieved. Thus, those who have gone through a long course of suffering, at the close of life not unfrequently found their hope of future happiness on these sufferings, as available to save them from penalties for the sins of a past life. So strong is this principle in some minds that, under its influence, a criminal will voluntarily give himself up to justice, that, by suffering appropriate penalties, he may lessen the pangs of remorse. This susceptibility is affected also in persons who witness evil perpetrated by others, or who are themselves injured by others. When a penalty is inflicted on the offender commensurate with his crime, this principle is satisfied, and the desire for farther retribution ceases. It is the supposed existence of this principle in God, and in the heathen deities, which has given rise to sacri-

fices and the self-infliction of penalties. There is an universal belief in all nations, that there are invisible beings who have power over human happiness, and that opposing their will involves a liability to their wrathful inflictions.

To avert this wrath, costly offerings are sometimes made, and, in other cases, where men are cruel and brutified, and frame gods like themselves, they strive to pacify them by cruelties inflicted on prisoners, or helpless children offered in sacrifice. In cases where the mind is tormented with a sense of guilt, others will cut and mangle their own bodies to pacify the malignant gods they imagine they have offended. The Old Testament ritual, which requires so many peace-offerings and sacrifices, has reference to this principle. It was a system of external forms, accommodated to this principle of mind, and designed to keep constantly before every worshipper of the true God, the fact that the invisible Lawgiver and Judge of that nation, was a Being displeased with sin, and one who would inflict retributive justice upon all the guilty. It also involved the principle of *vicarious atonement*, which will be referred to at another time and place.

The last susceptibility to be noticed is, that which is pleased with a course of voluntary action for the promotion of the *greatest* general happiness, and is displeased by the opposite course. And the approbation is proportioned to the good generated or evil averted, and also to the degree of self-sacrifice involved in securing it.

This is the basis of the maxims of democratic governments, which legislate to secure the greatest amount of good to the greatest number of persons. This also is the principle which secures all those domestic and civil regulations that involve the sacrifice of individual convenience, for the general welfare of the family or state.

This is the only moral susceptibility which seems to depend on the exercise of reason. All the others seem to be instinctive, and never to be based on any calculation of general tendencies or future results. And it is a principle which is as much violated, when, from any temporary and immediate gratification, we do what tends to destroy our own highest good, as it is when we sacrifice the general good for selfish enjoyment. No man can take a course which destroys his own prospects of happiness, or which is contrary to the general welfare, without violating this principle of his moral nature.

The pleasure which results from obedience to this principle, is proportioned to the degree of good to be gained or evil escaped, and also to the amount of self-denial involved in this course of obedience. The man who regulates all his appetites and propensities by the law of reason, so as never to sacrifice his best good to the impulses of passion, has a source of elevated enjoyment in the self-respect and self-approbation which result from this principle. While he who sinks by vicious indulgences to the character of the brutes, suffers the pangs which the violation of this principle of his mind never fails to inflict.

In promoting the general welfare of others, too, the degree of reward received from the estimation of others and from the approbation of our own mind is proportionate to the self-denial involved in the effort. A benefactor who undergoes great personal sacrifices to purchase benefit for others, awakens far higher emotions of gratitude and admiration than one who, in bestowing benefits, practises no such self-denial. The highest conceivable idea of goodness and benevolence is involved in the voluntary sacrifice of life to purchase benefits for others, or to save them from suffering.

The proof of the existence of this principle, as an *universal* attribute of our race, is found in the fact that, in all ages, and among all nations, acts of self-denial for one's own highest good, and acts of self-sacrifice for the general good, are admired and applauded, and are called *good*, *virtuous*, and *right*. So the sacrifice of our own highest good to passion, and the sacrifice of the general good for selfish gratification, is called *base*, *evil*, and *wrong*.

Thus we perceive that the moral nature of man consists of susceptibilities, which make it agreeable to do what the welfare of all demands, and painful to take a contrary course. It is plain that it is for the general welfare that every mind should act to make happiness, and not to destroy it; that punishment should be inflicted on evil doers, to deter them and others from repeating the wrong; that reward should be given for promoting happiness, in order to stimulate all to do it; that these retributive returns should be proportioned to the good and evil done; that gratitude should be manifested and ingratitude repressed; that the robbery of some to increase the enjoyment of others should not be practised; that penalties and laws should have reference to ability to obey and opportunities of knowledge; that confidence should not be violated,—that self-denial should be practised for our own good, and self-sacrifice for the good of others; that repentance, confession, and reparation should

alleviate remorse, and lessen the desire of retributive inflictions; that punishment, also, should have a similar influence; and finally, that every mind should act for the *greatest* good of the whole. And it thus appears that, while the Creator formed mind so that it can only act from the desire of happiness and the fear of pain, he has given susceptibilities that make it painful to do what tends to destroy the general good, and pleasurable to promote it. What higher proof could be imagined that the design of the Creator in forming mind is the production of happiness?

Our susceptibilities of suffering are not the least indication that mind was formed for happiness; for it is the fear of suffering which is the most powerful restraint in deterring one mind from destroying the happiness of others. There are no contrivances, either in matter or mind, the sole aim of which is to cause pain, while almost all sources of pain are found to be indispensable methods for preserving the general welfare of all. Were mind so formed that no evil would result to itself from destroying the happiness of others, the experience of the world, in cases where no penalties follow crimes, shows that all kinds of evils would be perpetrated. Mind, therefore, is formed with susceptibilities of pain, and so placed that destroying the happiness of others will cause pain to the author of the evil. Thus our susceptibilities of pain are made the means of preserving happiness.

The circumstances in which mind is placed, the constitution of the body, and the surrounding material world, are another manifestation of the same design. In examining the body we inhabit, so nicely adjusted, so perfectly adapted to our necessities, so beautifully and harmoniously arranged, so "fearfully and wonderfully made," it is almost beyond the power of numbers, to express the multiplied contrivances for convenience, comfort and delight. We daily pursue our business and pleasure, thoughtless of the thousand operations which are going on within, and the busy mechanism employed in securing the objects we desire. The warm and life-giving current, flowing from the centre to the extremities, and then returning to be again purified and sent forth; the myriads of branching nerves, those sensitive discriminators of good and ill; the numerous muscles and tendons, which are contracting and expanding in all parts of our frame; the curiously adjusted joints, and bands, and ligaments, which direct and support; the perpetual contraction

and expansion of the vital organ ; the thousand hidden processes of assimilation and expulsion, which are quietly and safely engendering comfort and strength ;—all these are ceaselessly administering enjoyment to the conscious spirit dwelling within.

Nor is the outer world less busy in performing its part of the great Creator's design. The light of suns and stars is traversing the ethereal expanse, in search of those for whom it was created ; and for them it gilds the scenes of earth, and is reflected in ten thousand forms of beauty and of skill. The trembling air is waiting to minister its aid, fanning with cool breezes, or yielding the warmth of spring ; sustaining the functions of life, and bearing on its light wing the breathings of affection from mind to mind. For this design, the earth is sending forth her exuberance, the waters are yielding their stores, and the clouds pouring forth their treasures. All nature is busy with its offerings of fruits and flowers, its wandering incense, its garnished beauty, and its varied songs. Within, without, above, beneath, and around, the same Almighty Beneficence has scattered the evidences of his design to promote the happiness of the minds, which he formed forever to desire and pursue this boon.

No position is capable of higher proof, by a course of reasoning, than the truth that the object of the Creator in forming mind was the promotion of happiness. This deduction of reason is as plainly established in the revelation of His will. In examining those sacred pages, we ever find the language of Jehovah that of a Being intensely interested in the happiness of his creatures ; who sees their powers perverted to sin, and consequent suffering, with sympathy and pity ; and who sincerely desires, and constantly is seeking their highest happiness. If we examine that brief, but comprehensive expression which he has given as *his law*, requiring supreme love to the Creator and impartial love to all his creatures, and all the more minute directions of the Gospel, which are but expansions of this law, we shall discover that perfect obedience to it by all our race, would secure every mode of enjoyment of which mind is capable, and exclude almost every kind of suffering. The details exhibiting this cannot here be presented, but it is believed that this position could be fully sustained ; so that it may be claimed, that the full intent of this requisition of God to his creatures is truly exhibited in this paraphrase, "Be ye happy." Thus, the nature of mind, the circumstances in which it is placed, and

the revealed word of its Creator, all go to establish the position that the object designed in the formation of mind is the production of happiness.

We now return to the question as to the meaning of the terms right and wrong, when applied to the moral action, or the volitions of mind. If it is conceded that the object of the creation of mind is the production of the greatest *amount* of happiness, then any volition is right which tends to promote the highest general good, and wrong when it has the contrary tendency.

But in reference to voluntary actions, a very important distinction is needful, between actions viewed only in reference to their operation on the general happiness, or viewed only in relation to the *design or intention* of the agent. The *design, motive, or ultimate aim* of a volition is, that object of desire which is sought *for itself*, and not as the *means* for securing another object. For example, when money is given to relieve suffering, and for no other purpose, then the relief of suffering is the object of desire, or ultimate aim, or motive. But when the money is given to relieve suffering in order to gain applause and admiration, or to secure some favor from another in return, then the ultimate aim is not to relieve suffering, but to secure some enjoyment for self. When a *cause* is asked for any volition, the meaning is, what was the *ultimate aim* of the volition?

It has been shown that the moral constitution is such, as clearly to indicate the *design and intention* of the Creator in forming mind. Mankind, therefore, cannot help perceiving and feeling this design. They understand the law, which, as the Apostle says, is "written in their hearts," and whatever violates it is felt to be *wrong*; that is, contrary to the design and intention of their nature, and contrary to the will of the Creator.

Whenever, therefore, it is perceived that the attainment of any object will violate any of these moral feelings, all men understand and feel that it is wrong to seek it. And when the attainment of an object is seen to be consistent with these principles, they feel that it is right to secure it.

No one will maintain that it is right for any mind to act contrary to its own moral convictions, and do what is believed to be wrong. Yet it has been shown, that it is one of these moral principles that the lesser good of individuals should be given

up to serve the greater good of the whole community, of which the individual is a part. And it might be shown, were this the time and place, that such is the constitution of things, that acting for the general good does in fact always, in the end, secure the highest individual good of every mind which thus acts. So that the law and providence of the Creator never demand that one being should really sacrifice his own permanent well-being to promote the higher general welfare. But it is often the case, that the judgment of men as to what is good for themselves or good for the community is incorrect, so that an action may in fact be wrong in the abstract, as tending to produce more evil than good, and yet be regarded as right by the person performing it. In this case, there are two relations in which the action is to be judged. In one relation it is wrong, and in another right—wrong as tending to destroy the general good, and right as conformed to the judgment and moral sense of the agent. It is very important to bear this distinction in mind in all moral questions, or else there is constant confusion.

In regard to actions whose character is decided abstractly, without reference to the motive of the agent, it is important to recognize three general classes.

First, actions are right in the abstract, as tending to promote happiness, which merely secure present gratification and have no connexion with future results. These are right, because they produce certain degrees of happiness, and involve no consequent evil. Thus, it is right to inhale perfume, to gaze at the beauties of nature, or to gratify any taste or propensity, provided no evil is involved, and no greater good sacrificed.

Another class of actions, are those which secure some immediate good, and, so far as can be seen, involve no evil to any one directly, yet are violations of a *general rule*, which the general happiness requires every mind to regard as inviolable. For example, there are cases when a man can take the property of another, where it would not be used or misused, and when he might use it to do good. Still the action would be wrong, for it violates the rule requiring us never to use the property of others without evidence of their willingness. So, too, there are cases when lying or deceit will secure benefits, and save from evils, without seeming to do any immediate harm to any one. And yet nothing is more important to the general welfare, than sustaining the rule that men are *never* to lie or deceive in order to secure any benefits to themselves or to others. And the

temporary good gained by giving up this rule to meet specific cases, never would compensate for the vast inroads of evil that would result from leaving the law of honesty and veracity to be regulated by the private judgment and limited views of each individual.

Another class of actions are those which, in themselves considered, and as practised by individuals, do some good and no perceptible harm; and yet experience shows that they can never be *generally* indulged in without leading to evils and excesses which make the public evil much greater than the individual good. For example, a man finds that he can indulge himself and his family in certain practices which, with his own habits of self-control and his strong family discipline, secure much enjoyment to them without any evil. But he perceives that his neighbors have less self-control and less ability to govern their children, and that his example leads them into excesses which engender vice, and waste, and disorder. In such a case as this, an action, which, were it not connected with probabilities of perversion by others, would be right, becomes wrong on account of its tendencies. A large portion of actions that men differ about in regard to their moral character, are of this description. The traffic in ardent spirits, and the patronage of certain amusements, are specific examples of this class.

If these distinctions were clearly borne in mind in questions of right and wrong, much needless discussion would be saved. For it not unfrequently happens, that on one side the act is called right in relation to the motives of the actors, in which relation it is right; while on the other side it is called wrong in reference to its general influence on the public welfare, in which relation it is wrong. So, also, a practice is judged of, on one side, solely with reference to the individual, or to immediate results; while, on the other side, reference is had to general rules, or to the general tendencies of such actions, if universally practised. And for want of such distinctions many discussions are needlessly protracted.

These views enable us to discern the causes of the difficulties which embarrass most writers on ethical science. Such writers may be thus classed. The first class consists of those who are the most vague and indiscriminating in their use of definitions. They indeed attempt to define the terms right and wrong, but it is in such sort of modes as these: *Right* is that

which is fit; *right* is that which conforms to the nature of things; *right* is that which excites a sympathetic moral feeling. This is about as discriminating as to say, that a chronometer is something on board a ship; or a bird is something that has a head.

Another class teach that "*right* is that which is conformed to the will of God." It is true that whatever is right is conformed to the will of God, for God wills the right action of all his creatures. But this agreement is not the distinctive peculiarity which makes an action right. For if God should now choose to have any one of his creatures act malignantly and selfishly, the agreement of the action with his will would not make it right. If two men were both sent to London, and were both in the road to London, and it were said that one was right because he was going the same way as the other, it would be a parallel case of *non causa pro causa*. If his companion is right, his agreement with him shows that he is right, *but* it is not the reason why he is so.

Another class (among whom are Butler, Stewart, and Wayland) maintain that right is a simple idea, which can be defined only by mentioning the circumstances in which it occurs to the mind. Thus, when a son abuses a kind parent, every mind feels that this action has a certain quality, and to this quality the name *wrong* is given. So, when a man sacrifices his private interest for the public good, there is a quality to this action which all agree in calling *right* or *virtuous*. According to these philosophers, there is no rule for deciding what actions are right or wrong but this instinctive judgment of mankind. And when they are pressed with the fact that this judgment is conflicting, some men calling an action right which others call wrong, they resort to the fact that the moral sense of mankind often is perverted, so that what is right is felt to be wrong, and *vice versa*. But if it is the instinctive judgment of men which decides what actions are right and what are wrong, and these judgments contradict each other, how shall it be decided which is the true, and which the perverted judgment? And in all those cases where the character of actions is decided, not by individual experience, but by their *general tendencies* as exhibited in communities, how could an argument be held by these philosophers, to prove that an action was right or wrong? In all such cases, they are obliged to concede that whatever tends to the greatest general good is right, and whatever interferes

with it is wrong, and that there is no other test for determining the character of actions. For the moral sense of mankind can be no guide until the experiment is made, and men learn what are the tendencies or effects of given practices. Such often refer to revelation as the guide for deciding; but revelation does not decide many very important specific questions of right and wrong.

Another class, of whom Bentham is the representative, teach that *right* is that which tends to promote the greatest general happiness, and so far they seem to be correct. But they seem to inculcate the principle, that in every case a man is to inquire whether the *specific act* will do most good or harm, and trust entirely to his own judgment for the answer. The facts, that certain general rules must be sustained, and that on many questions the Bible alone is the only sure standard of right and wrong, are not properly recognized.

Another class maintain, that *right* is that which tends to promote the greatest general happiness, and that the Revealed Will of God furnishes general rules which are the only sure guide as to what actions will secure it. But this class have often embarrassed themselves by not recognizing the fact, that the moral sense is, in some degree, a guide to decide what is right and what is wrong. They have endeavored to sustain the position that *in all cases* an action is felt to be wrong because it is *perceived* that such actions tend to injure the public welfare. Thus, when young children hear the tale of the Babes in the Wood, and shed tears of joy when they learn that the wicked uncle was punished, such will maintain that it is perceiving that the general good requires that such cruelty should be punished, which causes these expressions of pleasure. They have embarrassed their position by not recognizing the fact, that mind is so constituted as to revolt from certain actions as wrong, without any perception of their general tendencies, or consideration of the general good.

The defects of these various ethical writers may be illustrated by the case of a watch when the question is asked, Why is a watch right? or, What do we mean when we say a watch is right? The class of vague definers reply it is right, "because it is fit," or "because it agrees with the nature of mechanical contrivances," or "because mankind sympathize together in feeling it to be right." Another class say it is right, "because it conforms to the nature of watches." Another class, like

Paley, say it is right, "because it is conformed to the will or design of the maker." Another class, like Stewart and Wayland, say it is right, "because men in general *feel* that it is right, and when they differ in opinion, one or the other have perverted feelings on the subject, and we must go to the watchmaker to know which is right."

Bentham would say, the watch was right because it conformed to its design and pointed out the real time of day, and yet that each man must judge for himself, without sun or star to guide, whether the watch was correct or not.

The preceding portion of this article relates to the question of right and wrong in reference to the character of certain *actions* of mind. But it also involves the question of the *moral character of mind itself*.

*Character*, in its widest sense, is that, in matter or mind, which is the foundation for calculation as to future phenomena. Thus, in regard to material bodies, such for example as fire and water, their character consists of those particulars which enable us to anticipate what their future actions will be. Water, in past experience, has run down hill, and fire has consumed combustibles, and therefore it is the character of one to flow and the other to burn. So, in regard to mind, we have learned by experience how it will act in given circumstances, and this is the foundation of our calculations for the future, and is what is called its character.

The *moral character* of mind is, all those peculiarities which experience has afforded as the ground of calculation in regard to the nature of its future *volitions*. The grand distinction between matter and mind is, that matter, in given circumstances, *invariably* presents the same phenomena, so that in those circumstances, it has power to act only in one way, and no power to refrain from thus acting. On the contrary, mind, in given circumstances, has power to choose in either of two ways. And the nature of mind is such that it never can, like matter, be *twice* placed in precisely similar circumstances. For it is always gaining new experience, new knowledge of nature, and new force of habit, so that there is no such invariableness of antecedence and sequence in the action of mind as there is in material phenomena.

Still, experience has led to the discovery of certain general laws, in regard to volition, which will be pointed out at another time and place, which are in some cases the foundation of al-

most as much certainty as to the future, as we ever feel in regard to the future action of matter. But there are many cases, in which the future volitions of mind can be predicted only by approximation, or by a calculation of probabilities. To exhibit this, it is useful to refer to one important phenomenon of mind. It is found that whenever a strong desire is excited for some good, which is seen to be inconsistent with our moral sense, there is a mental struggle similar to the effort made when we exert our muscles to overcome an opposing force. And the stronger the desire, and the more decided the opposition of our moral nature to it, the more painful and difficult is the struggle. In describing this, we use the same terms as we employ in regard to physical efforts. We say that it is "hard," or that it is "difficult" to decide, and we understand the terms thus employed, as readily as we do when we say it is hard or difficult to lift a weight. In both cases the terms express a simple idea, which can be gained only by experience. We must feel the difficulty of lifting a weight, or of opposing conscience to desire, before we can understand what "hard and difficult" mean in either use. A certain volition, then, is easy or difficult just in proportion to the struggle between conflicting principles of mind. And the probabilities in regard to future volitions depend very much upon circumstances which decide how severe this struggle shall be.

*Moral character*, it has been said, consists of all those particulars afforded by experience as grounds of calculation in regard to the nature of future volitions. We must then appeal to past experience to learn what are the *causes of volition*, or the *reasons* why volitions are one way and not another. In the sense of *efficient cause*, mind itself is the only cause of its own volitions. Motives are therefore considered as *occasional* and not as efficient causes. There are only four particulars which are ever called the *causes* or *reasons* why volitions are one way and not another.

The first is, some constitutional susceptibility existing or wanting. To illustrate: take the case of two men presented with intoxicating liquor, where neither supposes it injurious; the one has a constitutional love, and the other a constitutional aversion to it. In this case the cause, or reason, why one chooses to drink and the other does not, is the nature of their constitutional susceptibilities. And these, when known, are the data for predicting their future volitions in such cases.

The next particular is, the existence of some habit, or else the want of it. Suppose a similar case to the above, except that both the persons are very fond of the liquor, and both believe it injurious. But one has formed habits of temperance and self-control, and the other has not. In this case, the cause or reason why one chooses to drink and the other does not, is the existence or non-existence of a habit, and this is the ground for predicting their future volitions in similar circumstances.

The next particular is, the *knowledge of motives*. Suppose the same offer made to two persons of precisely similar tastes and habits, and the only difference is, that one knows the evils that result from such drinks and the other does not. The reason why one chooses to drink and the other chooses not to do so, is the knowledge or want of knowledge of motive; and this is data for predicting their future volitions.

The last particular is, the existence of a *generic governing purpose or choice*. Suppose in the above case the two men both are fond of the drink, both know its evil effects, and both are alike as to habits of self-control. But one of them has formed the purpose never to taste such drink in any circumstances, or the still more general purpose, always to do *what is right*; and the other has formed no such purpose. Then the reason why one drinks, and the other does not, is the existence or non-existence of a governing volition or principle; and when this is known, it is the ground for predicting future volitions.

Of all these four general causes of volition it may be remarked, that they are *permanent* principles of action. A man's susceptibilities, his habits of mind, the knowledge he has gained, which operates as motive, and the determinations or principles of action he has formed, are fixed and abiding causes of mental action, and furnish data for calculating his future volitions, as much so as do the powers and principles of matter in predicting its future phenomena. Not that the causes which control mind are *necessary* causes, which make it impossible for mind to choose otherwise, but they are causes which make it *certain*, in some cases, that volitions will be one way and not another. By *certain* is here signified that which *will* be, but not a *necessary* certainty.

It may also be remarked, that these are the *only* causes which are ever assigned by man or by God as the reasons why a volition is one way and not another. If a cause or reason is asked for any voluntary course of conduct, the answer is, either be-

cause the person had such and such *tastes or susceptibilities*, or because he had such and such *habits*, or because he had the *knowledge* of such and such *motives*, or because he had formed such and such *principles or determinations*. It is true that the more *remote causes* are often spoken of as producing voluntary action. Thus, parents are said to make their children choose in a certain direction, and one man makes another choose a certain course, and God "worketh in us to will and to do." But when it is asked *how* these more remote causes operate, it is always the case that the reply is, that it is either by affecting the susceptibilities, or by forming the habits, or by communicating a knowledge of motives that will secure a given specific volition, or originate some generic governing purpose or principle. Neither God nor man is ever spoken of as causing volitions by any other methods, nor can we conceive of any other modes of securing a given volition to be one way rather than another.

It has previously been shown that the *probabilities* of a given volition or course of action are calculated by taking into view all those things which make such a volition or course of action "hard or difficult." If a man has very strong susceptibilities to anger, it is more difficult and therefore less probable that he will be meek under provocation than if he possessed a phlegmatic temperament. If a man has formed habits of self-control, it is as much easier to govern his temper, and more probable that he will do it, than if he had formed no such habits. If a man, by reading and intercourse with men, has gained a knowledge of the evils of angry ebullitions, and the shame and other ill results that come from it, it is much easier to govern himself than if no such knowledge of motives were gained. And if a man has made a firm determination always to suppress the manifestations of this passion, it is easier to do it, and therefore more probable that he will do it, than if no such purpose had been formed.

We find that mankind always *estimate character* by the *probabilities* resulting from the existence of these causes. Why is a man said to have a character for honesty? Because experience has shown that he possesses such susceptibilities, habits, opinions, and purposes, that in all ordinary circumstances of temptation he acts honestly, and from this it is inferred that he will continue to do so.

And there are different standards of honesty, and characters of all degrees of conformity to these standards. So also in regard

to veracity, to industry, to temperance, and all the practical virtues of life, men are regarded as having some fixed characters, according as experience develops their susceptibilities, habits, opinions, and purposes of action. And these are the data for predicting their future volitions, in circumstances of temptation.

And in all respects where character is to be observed, we find there are all degrees and shades of difference, from the highest to the lowest degree of conformity to the highest or lowest standards. And yet mankind are always dividing their fellow creatures into two opposing classes or characters; as the honest and dishonest, the truthful and the mendacious, the temperate and the intemperate, the industrious and the indolent, the virtuous and the vicious. And Revelation does the same. In it we find all divided into two classes, the righteous and the wicked, the good and the evil, the holy and the unholy, the saints and the sinners, the children of the world and the children of God, the heirs of Heaven and the children of perdition.

We are now prepared for the inquiry, What is *the character* which will secure the object for which mind was created?—or, What is the *right* character, that is, what is the character which will *act* to secure the greatest amount of happiness? It has been maintained that mind is not like matter, in being acted on by causes that are *necessary*, so that a certainty of future voluntary action is made by having mind placed in such circumstances that it has *no power* to choose except in one direction. For this destroys the idea of *free agency* or *voluntary action*, which consists in the power of choosing either to gratify or not to gratify any given desire; or, in other words, in the power to yield or not to yield to any particular motives. The moment this power does not exist in a mind, it is *no longer a mind*; it has lost the distinctive peculiarity which constitutes mind. Of course, the certainty of the right future action of mind, is not made by causes which take away the power to act wrong. As there is always, therefore, a power to act wrong in all minds, what is the foundation for predicting with certainty, that any mind will *continue* in a perpetuated course of *voluntary* right action? For, of the causes which constitute character, one is a *generic governing purpose or volition*, and this *can* be changed, and therefore it *may* be at some future time.

We therefore reply that, from the nature of the case, there can, to finite minds, be no certainty of future character, except

what is gained from Him who sees the end from the beginning ; who has power over our susceptibilities, and power to regulate all circumstances of temptation, and can thus foresee all future results. Has he then pointed out *what character* will secure the object for which mind is created ? It is claimed that he has done this, in the Revelation of his will.

But to ascertain what this character is, we must bear in mind that the Bible is not a collection of *metaphysical* writings, but that it is addressed to common people, and is written in the popular language of common life. The main law of interpretation is, therefore, to be adopted, viz., "language is to have that meaning given to it, which the speaker or writer knew was the sense in which it would be received by those to whom it is addressed." We therefore take this rule for our guide in going to the Bible ; and in investigating this subject, we find, first, that the terms *death, destruction, loss of the soul, sin, the carnal mind, eternal banishment from God*, are (with other similar expressions) used interchangeably to express the great general truth, that those whose *characters* are sinful, wicked, or unholy, will live for ever in dreadful misery ; and that those who are righteous or holy characters, will live for ever in perfect happiness. And we find that Jesus Christ came into this world to save mankind from this death, and to secure this life to them. And this is the declaration of the mode whereby we are to be thus saved : " Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved"—and, " he that believeth not shall be damned." What then is intended by the faith in Jesus Christ, which is indispensable to salvation ? Directed by the above rule, we inquire, what in the ordinary use of language do the common people understand by believing on, or having faith in, a person ? In regard to mere *theories* which have no bearing on personal enjoyment or general welfare, all the evidence of faith or belief is an internal conviction produced by evidence, which is known only by *introspection* or *testimony*. But in practical matters, where belief will affect feelings and actions, it is the exhibition of the feelings and conduct, which is the main evidence of faith or belief. In the case of Paul in the shipwreck, he charged all not to get into the boats, but to remain with the ship, and they would be saved. Now, whatever professions of faith in Paul might be made by the crew, if a part went into the boats, and a part remained with the ship, all common men would decide alike, as to which were those who be-

lieved in Paul, or had faith in him. Let a man declare that he does not believe in witches or ghosts, and yet let him carefully keep a horse-shoe nailed to his door-sill, and seem troubled when it is removed ; let him also show by his looks and actions that he fears the appearance of departed spirits ; and all common men would say he believed in witches and ghosts. So let a dreadful pestilence appear, and a physician comes along and offers to cure all who will come to him and obey his prescriptions. A man and his family are seized with the disorder, and he either does not send for him, or neglects all his prescriptions when obtained. All would say he had no faith in him. Another, in similar circumstances, gets his prescriptions, which perhaps are multiplied and difficult to obey, so that he sometimes forgets, and sometimes makes mistakes, and sometimes yields to indolence, yet in the main he diligently strives to obey all the directions he receives, and is sorry whenever he fails. All would say he has faith in this physician ; and the degree of his faith would be measured by the diligence and faithfulness of his obedience, and his trouble and regret whenever he forgot or made mistakes. According then to popular use, the terms to *have faith in*, or to *believe in*, include the following particulars :—First, such a knowledge of evidence as secures intellectual conviction of a truth. Thus the man, in order to go to the physician, must first have evidence that he is sick of a dangerous disorder, and that the physician has power to cure him. Next, he must form a determination, or generic volition, to get his prescriptions, and to obey them. Next, and in consequence of this evidence and this determination, he feels confidence in him, affection toward him, gratitude, and hope of a cure. Lastly, he carries out his determination by all the specific acts of obedience to his directions. The last is the only satisfactory proof or evidence of his faith. For, if he profess to trust in him, get his prescriptions, and determine to obey them, and yet never does follow his orders, no one would say he had faith in him.

According to this, we can readily ascertain what is meant by the inspired declaration addressed to all men, and in the common language of life : “ Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved.” It involves the following particulars : first, an intellectual conviction or belief, produced by evidence, of our danger, and of the truth that Christ can save us, if we follow his directions. Next, receiving his directions as contained in the Gospel, and forming a generic purpose or determina-

tion to obey them all. Next, and as the natural result of the preceding acts, are feelings of trust, confidence, gratitude, and love. Lastly, actual obedience to his directions in the specific duties required. These are the four particulars which constitute that faith in Jesus Christ, which saves the soul from eternal misery and secures eternal happiness. And the Bible teaches, in the most decided terms, that all who have this faith at death, will be for ever happy ; and those who do not, will be for ever miserable. But it may here be objected, that the directions of Jesus Christ include *perfect obedience* to all the rules of rectitude ; that he requires of us, "Be ye perfect, even as your Father who is in heaven is perfect." Does faith include *perfect* obedience to all his commands, as the indispensable ground of salvation ? Who then can be saved ?

In reply to this, we again refer to the common use of language, and the illustration employed above. Suppose, in the case of the pestilence, the prescriptions of the physician required forethought, self-denial, industry, perseverance, and a long round of daily observances. Now, according to the common use of language, is it necessary for a patient to be absolutely *perfect* in obedience to every specific direction, in order to have it said that he has faith in him ? No ; it only requires that the patient should determine to obey the physician in all things, and set himself about it in earnest, with the sincere purpose to do exactly as he directs ; and if this is the case, he will in the main accomplish what he aims at. The fact that he sometimes misreads his directions, or, from other cares, sometimes forgets ; or, from occasional indolence or passion, sometimes disobeys ; does not prove that he has not faith in the physician, so long as his purpose to obey him continues, and ordinarily is carried out in action. And the degree of his faith is always measured by the earnestness with which he strives to obey, and the regret manifested when he forgets or disobeys.

And the faith described as saving the Old Testament saints, is precisely of the same character as that required in the Gospel. In the chapter on faith, in Hebrews, they are described as "looking for a city whose builder and maker is God," as "seeing the promises afar off, and were persuaded of them and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims upon earth." And they "declared plainly," that they sought "a better country, even a heavenly one," "wherefore God was not ashamed to be called their God." And in the

narration of what was wrought by faith, we perceive that the Scriptural use is exactly the popular use of the term. Christ, when he appeared visibly to the patriarchs, instructed them in his will, and taught them that they must "live as seeing Him who is invisible;" that they must obey him, even when it involved the loss of all things; and that they must look forward to a heavenly country for their reward. They believed his teachings, and determined to live according to his directions; and though many of them did wrong things, in the main they did obey him, and lived for eternity and not for time. All these are said to have obeyed Christ, to have had faith in Christ, and to have been saved by Christ, because the Being who instructed, guided, and saved them, was the Messenger of the Covenant, the Lord Jesus Christ. Thus, it is said that Moses "esteemed the *reproach of Christ* greater than all the treasures of Egypt;" and of Him who led the Israelites, it is said, "and that Rock was Christ."

There is no point which is urged by the Apostles with more earnestness, than the fact that mankind are to be saved, not by an exact and strict obedience to every precept of law, but by faith in Jesus Christ. If we could secure eternal happiness only by exact and strict conformity to all the rules Christ has laid down as our duty, no hope would exist for any of our sinful race. Instead of this, we are taught that the sincere and earnest purpose to obey all the commands of Christ, carried out into every-day practice, will, by means of the motives made known by the Saviour, and by the supernatural assistance promised to all who thus engage, eventually secure eternal life. This is the distinction between being *saved by faith* and being *saved by works*, so much insisted on by Paul in his Epistles to the Romans and Galatians.

But it may be inquired, If faith in Jesus Christ include *intellectual belief* of evidence, which must necessarily be in different degrees according to evidence presented; and *certain emotions*, which depend on the views presented to the intellect; and on a *generic purpose or determination*, which also must be induced by the motives presented to the intellect; and on *specific acts of obedience*, which also depend on the generic purpose and on additional constantly recurring motives; then there must be very different degrees of faith in Jesus Christ: is there any rule to enable us to decide how far short we can fall, and yet be saved? It is in vain to go to the Bible for any such

information. Jesus Christ and his Apostles lay down the strict rules of self-denying benevolence, and set before us the motives that appeal to fear, hope, love, and gratitude; and then we are told: "He that believeth shall be saved, and he that believeth not shall be damned;" and there the matter is left.

It can readily be perceived that the topics here discussed, involve many of the most important points, both of ethics and theology. When we ascertain what is the object of a design, then we have data for deciding when its *action* is right, what its *character* is, whether it is *perfect* or *imperfect*, *in order* or *depraved*.

If, therefore, we have, in these pages, established the position, that the object of the Creator in forming mind, was *the production of the greatest amount of happiness*, then we have data for deciding the following questions: What is a perfect mind? In what particulars is the mind of man imperfect? What is a *totally depraved* mind? What is the nature of the change, from a depraved to a perfect mind? Is this change progressive or instantaneous; or is it complex—a part being progressive, and a part instantaneous? What are the agents or causes of this change? How do these causes or agents operate? What influence has education in securing the object for which mind is created?

These questions are presented for the consideration of those who may read this article, with the hope that, if it is correct, they may trace out the results that naturally flow from it; and if not, that its mistakes may be pointed out.

---

## ARTICLE VIII.

### THE AMERICAN COLPORTEUR SYSTEM.

*By Prof. J. M. STURTEVANT, Illinois College, Jacksonville, Ill.*

THE Western American States are certainly attracting to themselves a very flattering share of the attention of the civilized world. Not only are their vast unappropriated resources alluring the unfortunate, the destitute, and the adventurous of every clime and language, but it is here, also, that nearly every system, whether of government or religion, to be found in the

civilized world, is anticipating a soil favorable to its growth, and an ample field for its expansion. The fact is, to a considerable extent, appreciated by the thinking minds of the age, to whatever moral or political system attached, that an empire may here be founded in a single generation, of sufficient moral power to render it a preponderating weight in the scale of human destiny. There are, on the Mississippi and its branches, physical resources enough to sustain nearly the whole present population of Europe. The remotest portions of this vast region may be reached by the tax-burdened, half starving population of Europe, or by the bold and aspiring adventurer of either hemisphere, in a period of from one to two months, and at a cost comparatively trifling. And yet, its present population does not much exceed 7,000,000. What wonder, then, if reflecting minds all over Christendom look with absorbing interest to the question, What is to be the political, social, and religious character of this growing empire? What are to be the systems of religion and government here established, and under which these countless millions are to exist for time, and to form their character for eternity? What wonder, if the old and decaying secular despotisms of Europe look to the great valley of the West with mingled fear and hope—fear, lest a power should be evolved from the heart of this gigantic empire, to hasten their downfall and seal their doom—with hope, that the means may here be discovered of renewing their age, and repairing their decaying vigor? What wonder, if the old papal tyranny feels a fresh revival of hope, as it sees its faithful minions entering by millions into the possession of this mighty inheritance, and begins again to exult in the prospect of regaining the undisputed supremacy which it enjoyed in by-gone ages of darkness? What wonder, too, if the friends and advocates of civil and religious freedom, and the pure doctrines of the cross of Christ, sometimes indulge the thought, that perhaps their warfare is nearly accomplished—that the time is near when the “meek shall inherit the earth”—and that the mighty West is to be the inheritance of freedom and evangelical truth? And what wonder, if all these various systems should be seen making efforts for the moral empire of this vast region, corresponding with the magnitude of the prize to be lost or won, and with a zeal such as the vital question only can arouse? Such is the spectacle which the “great valley” actually presents to the reflecting mind at the present moment. And, though it

be ever true, as asserted by our Saviour, that "the children of this world are wiser in their generation than the children of light," it is yet matter of devout gratitude to God, that in this instance the friends of the Redeemer are not wholly blind to the magnitude of the question which is about to be decided on these fertile plains, not only for our country, but for the world.

But while it is pretty generally acknowledged and felt by evangelical Christians throughout the nation, that a great effort is demanded, and that speedily, to fill the new States and Territories of the West with Christian institutions and Christian sentiments, is it not still true, that there may have been in some instances considerable failure in the choice of wise and appropriate means for the securing of so great an end? Even now, would it not be quite reasonable to inquire, whether our system of religious effort for the destitute in our own land, is one which can at all points be defended, as judicious, wise, and economical? Has it been formed by a careful analysis of our existing intellectual and moral condition, and a thorough examination of all the circumstances which must modify its results? Is it at all points founded on principles, which are clearly seen, and may be easily defended? Is it *symmetrical*, bearing every where the indications of the handy-work of a wise master-builder? Has it not rather been often constructed hastily and impulsively, with little of that careful and patient study of character, which is needful in order rightly to estimate the resistance of the medium, in which our moral machinery is to act? Have not our efforts for the West, particularly, often been the result of a blind impulse—a vivid feeling that we *must* do something, while, had we confessed to ourselves the truth, we should have been distinctly conscious, that we knew not what to do? And are not our efforts in this great and good cause still marked, to a considerable extent, by the same impulsive character? We trust, therefore, that our readers will bear with us patiently, while we proceed to examine the position at present occupied by that portion of the American Tract Society's operations, commonly called the "Colporteur System."

This branch of benevolent effort is at present attracting to itself no small share of the sympathy, the confidence, and the contributions of the Christian public. It is, therefore, highly important that the views and principles upon which it proceeds, should be thoroughly understood in the light of a careful and candid examination. To such an examination all our systems

of benevolent effort ought to be most freely subjected. They ought, all of them, and at all times, to be "ready to give an answer to every man that asketh them a reason of the hope that is in them, with meekness and fear." If their principles are sound, and their views just, such an examination can only result in giving them a stronger hold of the confidence and the affections of the pious; but if they are founded on false principles, it surely can never be unsuitable or unseasonable to expose the error. We think our various associations for religious and benevolent purposes, have perhaps sometimes been more averse to this sort of examination of their principles and claims, than they should have been. There is, indeed, sacredness in the great end at which they all aim—the evangelization of the world; but that sacredness does not necessarily attach to every particular system of means which may have been adopted for gaining that end. Such a system of means can have no claim to respect, any further than it can be shown to have been wisely chosen, and to be necessary to the attainment of the result desired. We should, therefore, encourage our brethren to approach the question, whether this or that specific plan of doing good is wisely laid, with the utmost freedom of inquiry. It is thus only that our system of benevolent effort can be expected permanently to enjoy the confidence of the Christian public.

The nature and design of the "American Colporteur system" are so well understood by the reading public, that little need be said by us in explanation. It is an effort of the American Tract Society, to "supply" the "destitute" portions of our country with its publications, by the labors of a class of men called "Colporteurs." It is expected of this class of laborers, that they direct their efforts mainly to two points, viz. First, to the circulation of the publications of the Society, by sale where there is ability to purchase, or by gratuitous distribution where individuals or families are found unable to buy them; and, second, to engage in personal efforts, where opportunity presents itself, to bring men of every grade and description to Christ. They are the travelling booksellers of the Society—and yet not confining their attention to the sale or distribution of books, but making it a prominent object of their labors, to induce people to read the books, and to embrace the Saviour whom they are intended to set forth.

Fortunately for our present inquiry, there are certain points of the subject about which there is no danger of any controversy. Such are the following, viz. :

1. The general excellence of the publications of the American Tract Society. It cannot but be matter of devout gratitude to God, in the estimation of every intelligent Christian, not only that there is in our mother tongue so rich a religious literature as is found in these publications—rich both in evangelical sentiment and in the gifted genius with which God has endowed his servants, to set forth those sentiments to the men of their day and generation—but also, that that literature is embodied in a form at once cheap and attractive.

2. The desirableness of giving a wide circulation to this religious literature, in order to bring it in contact, as widely as possible, with the national mind and heart, and the propriety of employing, within proper limits and with a due regard to the habits and circumstances of society, a class of agents to labor for its circulation.

3. Just as little may we doubt the utility of personal effort in public and in private, with individuals and from house to house, in the highways, in the streets and in the market places, to impress the truths of religion upon the mind, the conscience, and the heart. We repeat it, these are not matters of controversy. Neither are we slow to feel or reluctant to acknowledge the disinterested zeal, the fervent charity, the unfeigned piety, with which the American Tract Society is prosecuting this work for the whole country, and especially for the comparatively destitute West and South.

Still, there are questions which may be propounded in reference to this enterprise, which seem to us not well understood, and therefore to require further investigation. Such questions are the following:—Is not the Colporteur system made to occupy a place relatively too prominent in our system of evangelical effort for the West? Are not the public encouraged to expect from it results which it can never produce? Are not advantages claimed for it over other modes of benevolent action at the West which it does not possess, and which it cannot be supposed to possess without leading to serious practical error? Is it not so exhibited as to disparage those other instrumentalities—the organized Church, and the educated and pious ministry, which ever must be the very pillars of Protestant Christian Society? In order to set these questions in a clear light, we shall exhibit the claims of the system in the language of the Society's own publications, and endeavour, with whatever of candor we are able, to examine their validity.

We have before us a pamphlet published by the American

Tract Society, entitled the "AMERICAN COLPORTEUR SYSTEM;" the design of which is to set forth to the public the claims and advantages of this mode of effort. We have examined it with some care, and shall use it freely in the pages which follow, as well as the report of the Society for 1843. One of the most definite impressions made on the mind by examining these documents is, that there is supposed to be at the present time a great "emergency" in our moral and religious condition, which this system is almost exclusively adapted to meet. Neither Home Missions nor our educational efforts can meet it—they are too slow—while the eye rests on them, the heart sickens with despondency—but as we turn to Colportage, hope revives. Here we are taught to look for an agency adequate to meet the fearful crisis, and raise us from impending ruin. That we may not be suspected of misstatement, we shall here quote a few passages in proof of these assertions, from the pamphlet above referred to :

\* \* \* "Oh, how does the heart tremble and bleed, as all the interests, temporal and eternal, of the millions of foreigners on our shores come like ocean surges over the intelligent, observing mind! And when searching in vain, among the accustomed agencies for diffusing the gospel, for those that are adequate to the present and prospective emergency, the mind turns, with gratitude to God, to this system, combining as it does the chief instrumentalities at present available, on any considerable scale, for this vast and neglected population."—Page 12, Am. Col. Sys.

\* \* \* "The heart that has been ready to faint, as cloud after cloud has arisen on our political horizon—as the elements of national ruin gain strength by foreign immigration—as the designs of popery are more and more developed, and as the insufficiency of present means of evangelization are painfully apparent—may take courage in the hope and confidence, that a system which, in its infancy, could spread the gospel over all Europe in spite of popes, emperors, and kings, has elements of power, which, if fully developed in subserviency to, and co-operation with, all other legitimate means of evangelization, may, under God, avert threatened dangers and scatter untold blessings, by giving timely ubiquity to that Gospel which alone saves men and nations."—Page 20, Am. Col. System.

We have not failed to notice the fact, that in the passage last extracted, there is an admission that the Colporteur System should be "in subserviency to, and co-operation with, all other legitimate means of evangelization." But what are the other legitimate means of evangelization here available? Not the regular ministry; for it is contended that this is impossible to be extended to meet the wants of our growing population.

\* \* \* There is no homogeneousness, and no possibility of sustaining the ministry of a particular order in the midst of prejudice or carelessness. Thousands and tens of thousands of families are thus circumstanced ; and so long as millions of acres of cheap government-lands tempt the hardy pioneer to a western home, such must be the condition of multitudes of our fellow countrymen.

But shall these scattered families be left to grow up in ignorance of the great salvation, or degenerate into barbarism, because the favorite method of Gospel instruction cannot convey its blessings to them?"—Page 7, Am. Col. Sys.

On page 12 of the pamphlet already referred to, after a soul-stirring recital of the religious destitution of some portions of our country, among which is the fact, "that a district of country one hundred miles in breadth and five hundred miles in length, containing half a million of souls, has not a single educated preacher so far as is known ; and that half of this population seldom if ever hear a sermon of any kind, and enjoy almost no other religious privileges," we find this inquiry : "Is there not a vast neglected field to be occupied for a season by the Colporteur, with his oral and printed messages, if occupied at all?"

In each of the passages here extracted, it is plain that the results of the system, if it produce any, must be independent of the labors of the stated ministry ; for the destitution of the stated ministry, is urged, not as an argument for raising up and sustaining ministers, but for helping forward Colportage to take their place and do their work. Equally evident is it, that the results of this system are anticipated independently of the means of education.

"In this view the accumulation of means of instruction in a few favored states, to the neglect of the million, is sheer folly and madness ; and the effects of this policy have led an ultra royalist historian of England, and an ultra democratic reviewer in America, to sneer at the idea of a people attempting to govern themselves, and to pronounce our government in this respect a failure. That such must be the issue with such a mass of ignorance as is indicated by our last census, (700,000 white persons over the age of twenty who cannot read,) and with the accumulation of foreign immigrants, and the increasing power of Rome, we have reason to fear, unless speedy and well adapted means are employed to carry light to the hitherto neglected classes. Primary schools must be every where established ; colleges, academies, and seminaries of learning, must pour out knowledge ; ministers must be multiplied ; but all these require time—too much time, we fear, to be seasonable ; and even if they were in operation, it would by no means supersede the necessity and desirableness of an agency that is truly republican—going as the Colporteur does,

to all the people, and first of all to those to whom no one else goes, with the means of light and salvation. If we would ignite a mass of anthracite, we must place the kindling at the bottom: if we would kindle the fire of knowledge and piety, we must commence at the lowest point of social being."—Page 8, Am. Col. Sys.

True, if you would ignite a mass of anthracite, you must place the kindling at the bottom. But does it hence follow, that if you would elevate and enlighten "700,000 white persons over the age of twenty who cannot read," you must begin by selling them books? So it seems; and that because it will take too much time to establish schools and teach them to read: you must therefore take a shorter road, send them an agent to sell them good books, and if they cannot or will not buy, why let him give them gratuitously.

Now we feel constrained to say, that this reasoning is to our minds utterly fallacious, and the expectations of happy results founded upon it, quite unreasonable and extravagant. What is this "emergency" for which we are called to provide? It is that of a mighty confederacy of nations rising up with a rapidity unparalleled in all the former history of colonization, composed of all the heterogeneous elements which can be drawn together from both hemispheres by the dread of despotism and the love of freedom, by the fear of starvation and the reasonable prospect of plenty and even affluence. From almost every portion of Christendom you here find the agriculturist in search of rich and cheap land—the mechanic, of high wages and plenty of work—the capitalist, of high interest or a profitable speculation—the lawyer, of clients—the physician, of patients—and the political aspirant, of rapid advancement to place and power. Here are the ministers of every religious creed in Christendom, not only seeking but actually finding disciples, and anticipating a harvest each for his own favorite system, as abundant as our virgin soil yields to the labors of the husbandman. Society of course we have none, but only the fermenting, effervescent materials of which it is to be composed. Those firm and compact masses of human beings, which we call societies, are not formed by the mere juxtaposition of individuals: whoever analyzes them will always find them crystalline in their structure, and that they are the result of the mutual action of heterogeneous elements. Such an experiment in moral chemistry is now going on in the newly settled portions of our country, on a scale the most magnificent ever witnessed by man. Incipient

religious organizations we have without number; but they are all intimately mingled in the effervescent mass, and it would defy the keenest sagacity to discover, in reference to each or any one of them, whether it is to be the nucleus of crystallization, or itself to yield, refractory as it may be, to the power of the solvent in which it is immersed, and to contribute its elements to those new and possibly better forms of society, which perchance are yet to be. Convictions of the importance of education we have; but systems of education we either have none at all, or else, for the want of homogeneity of prejudice or sentiment, those which we have are left, like many an architectural structure which meets the eye of the traveller, to decay in the weather without roof or clapboards. We have public funds amply sufficient to provide for the education of the whole people, at a trifling cost to the individual; and yet, for the want of wisdom and unity in our plans and efforts, those funds are producing little benefit to any, and children are growing up by tens of thousands without being able to read or write their mother tongue. And yet, to such a people is committed the sacred trust of republican liberty—the solemn legacy bequeathed to us by our fathers of the Revolution! On such a people is thrown the solemn responsibility of self-government. By the hardy pioneers of society in these critical and trying circumstances, are to be erected those social structures, beneath which a people, more numerous than the present swarming millions of Europe, are, at no distant day, to have their birth and exert their influence on the destiny of the great human family, and pass their own probation for eternity.

Such then is a mere glance at the emergency, especially as it presents itself in the new States of the West. And how is such an emergency to be met? First let us say that as we approach this question we seem to hear a voice saying to us, "Put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy." There is something majestic and awful in these stately footsteps of Divine Providence. Here are grand movements of God, mighty moral causes, which, like the great laws of nature, man may yield to and obey, and by obeying find them subservient to his own moral and spiritual welfare; but which he cannot resist or control. And as in the natural so in the moral world; would we co-operate with God we must diligently and solemnly study the laws of action which he has prescribed. This is no time and no place for superficial views

of society—patent medicines for its diseases—the day dreams of perpetual motion to accomplish its moral results, or a bustling activity unguided by any wise discernment of the work we have to accomplish. Of these we have had enough, and more than enough, in the past history of benevolent effort for the West. Let the scattered fragments and bleaching skeletons of abortive schemes and abandoned enterprises of benevolence, admonish us to proceed with caution, and patiently examine the bearing of all those great moral causes which, originating in the providence of God, are beyond mortal control, and are yet bearing forward American, and especially Western society, toward some point which is perhaps distinctly laid down on the chart of no moral geographer. Let us so study the laws of moral climate, that we may not commit the folly of sowing in harvest with the vain hope of reaping at the dead of winter. Such laws there are—great designs which God has in view in the mighty movements of his providence, in reference to our country: we must approach them with reverence, and study them with candor and prayer.

What then is the system of effort which will meet such an emergency as we have described, and such as every intelligent man knows exists at the West? Can we flatter ourselves that Colportage can meet it, without deceiving ourselves and our readers? Western society is without religious organization. Can Colportage organize it, or be a substitute for such organization? It is deplorably destitute of an enlightened Christian ministry. Can Colportage provide such a ministry, or supply its place in its absence? It is destitute of schools and colleges. Can Colportage establish those schools and found those colleges, or produce a desirable state of society without them? Can the great emergency be in any sense met, while we are still deplorably destitute of all these great foundation-stones and main pillars of the social fabric? Is it right then in any sense to represent Colportage as peculiarly adapted to meet the present emergency? Is it not obvious that in *no sense* can it meet it? It can only be of any value as an humble auxiliary in the hands of a much more efficient agency. That agency is the organized Church with the regular ministry.

But we prefer to take a still broader view of the subject. Is it not obvious that no amount of the mere circulation of books, or the itinerant labors of men who form no part of the framework of society itself, can materially modify the character and

destiny of such a people as we have been describing ? First, look at the probable influence of the books themselves. *Seven hundred thousand white adults cannot read them.* But this is but a small part of the difficulty. Of all those who, when asked if they can read, will answer in the affirmative, how few do read ; or, if they read at all, read any thing more than a village newspaper ? Probably there is not on the face of the earth, a people so intelligent as those of the Western States who read so little. If any one doubts this assertion, let him ask the booksellers of any of the Western cities, the state of the trade, and he will obtain an answer which will dissipate his doubts. The active, busy, migratory habits of Western people, the fewness and badness of their schools, and the universal prevalence of public speaking, or what may be called stump-oratory, as the chief means of affecting public opinion on all questions, whether secular or religious, are causes which have conspired to place Western character mainly under other influences than those of books. A Western audience will not listen to you while you *read* to them your own thoughts, much less will they be at the trouble of reading them themselves.

Nor is the scarcity of books the chief reason why Western people read so little. On the contrary, the fact that they read so little is the reason why they have so few books. You may find Lowell domestics, Havana coffee, and New Orleans sugar, in almost every cabin in the West ; and if we were a reading people, we should find it equally easy for us to gratify our taste for books. Does then this feature of Western society point out the circulation of books as the readiest and most available mode of reaching Western mind, and forming Western religious character ? We think not : we are sure that any expectations which may be entertained of a general movement in such a community, effected mainly by books, will prove utterly fallacious.

He who should infer from the views just presented that the population of our Western States are a stupid people, without ideas and without mental activity, would greatly err in his conclusions. The mental activity of the West is intense. In no part of our country are questions of trade, politics, and religion, more universally discussed, or with a more intense mental activity than at the West. Nowhere is eloquence more highly appreciated, or more sure to attract crowds of eager listeners. The popular disclaimer on the currency or the tariff, on the

nature and mode of baptism, or any other of the great political or religious questions which agitate the public mind, will be sure to find himself followed by crowds of auditors wherever he goes. But the main instrument of calling forth this mental activity is, and for a long time must be, the *living speaker*. Politicians understand too well this trait of Western character, to trust the fate of the next election mainly to the printed page, however ably composed, or widely circulated. They know that the only moral force which can be relied on with safety is, the voice of the living speaker; and hence the candidate for popular favor must do his utmost to address with his own voice every voter. Again we ask, Can the circulation of books be the most available mode of reaching such a people?

But we take a still broader position. In *no case* is the press available as an instrument of agitation and reform, except on questions on which the public mind is already excited and deeply interested. The great mass of mankind will only read on questions in relation to which they already feel an interest. Hence, you may circulate the printed page to any conceivable extent, even though that printed page be the book of God, and unless there is that in the state of the public mind to awaken attention, and excite a disposition to read and study, no perceptible effect will be produced on society. In this respect we think serious errors have been committed by some good men in their reasonings about colportage.

"Here lies the secret of that amazing moral reformation, unprecedented for its rapidity and power. It was not that Luther and his compeers wrote so much and so ably, but that *a suitable instrumentality was employed for giving ubiquity* to their stirring appeals and overwhelming arguments, that enables the historian now to say, "The arrival of the doctor of Wittenberg's writings, every where forms the first page in the history of the Reformation." Page 1, Am. Col. Sys.

"A system which nearly revolutionized France, and the progress of which was stayed only by dragoons and fire and faggot, is revived there after the lapse of 300 years, in an age when the public sentiment of the world will not allow of its being suppressed by the *ultima ratio* of kings and popes." Page 2, Am. Col. Sys.

"The history of *colportage* on the continent of Europe within the past few years is familiar to the reader, and requires no further remark. It holds out almost the only ray of hope for

the millions who are held in the bondage of superstition, and under the control of a corrupt priesthood." Page 3, Am. Col. Sys.

Now we do not think it necessary for us to deny that colportage is "the secret of that amazing reformation." We hear much in our day about "men of one idea," and it really does seem to us that something of this sort is pretty clearly indicated in the passages which we have just presented to our readers. The real secret of that amazing reformation lay in the fact, that Europe had been groaning for a thousand years under the iron yoke of papal despotism, and the set time of her deliverance was come. And God raised up Luther and his associates to give utterance to those truths, which the discipline of his providence had prepared the nations to receive. They brought forth from the storehouse of God's word, that spiritual food for which millions felt that they were starving. Hence it was that the historian is enabled to say, that "the arrival of the doctor of Wittemberg's writings, every where forms the first page in the history of the Reformation." Let it be shown that a similar relation subsists between the state of mind now existing in the millions of our population, and the publications of the American Tract Society, to that which subsisted between the mind of Europe in the sixteenth century and the writings of Luther, and we will then admit that they are the great lever by which we are to act upon the nation—nay, then would there be no time for such admissions. There would be little need of colporteurs in that case. They would form an article of merchandise as universal as Merrimac prints or Havana coffee. Every steamboat and railroad car in the nation would be freighted with them. But while it continues true that those publications, excellent as they are, sustain no peculiar relation to the present cravings of the national mind, they cannot be available as leading instruments of popular movement and enlightenment.

It is not, to speak our mind in a word, Baxter's writings we mainly need; it is Baxter's *self*. There is no hope for us as a people, and peculiarly and pre-eminently for us at the West, but in the wise, learned, and holy men, whom God may permit to live, to write, to speak, to labor, and die with us, as the Baxters and Luthers of other times lived, and labored, and died with their respective generations. We want among us the men who can discern the signs of the times, who can appreciate the longings of the national mind, and draw forth from the deep and fervent

experience of their own soul, those utterances of God's truth, for the want of which our own age is perishing—holy men standing on their watchtower, and as the cry comes up in the midst of surrounding darkness, "Watchman, what of the night?" sending forth the welcome assurance that the morning cometh. The circumstances of our age and country are new and peculiar; it has its own errors, its own excitements, its own controversies. And it is not the writings of the men of another age, however evangelical, however resplendent with genius and learning, however glowing with pious fervor, than can meet our necessities as a people, and supply that intellectual and moral nutriment which as a nation we chiefly need. That work can only be done by the free, bold, untrammelled utterance of individual men, living in the midst of us, feeling, by constant sympathy, each pulsation of the national heart, and communing with God before this people, as Richard Baxter did before the men of his generation. To such men we may hope God will vouchsafe the utterance of those words of power, by which these dry bones shall live. And except such men abide among us, we may multiply Bibles and tracts, and works of devotion without a limit, and still this people cannot be saved.

But is it said the Society does not rely on books alone, but on the personal labors of its colporteurs? We readily grant that men of a truly Christian spirit may in this way do much good, in connexion with other means of grace, and occasionally carry the blessings of salvation to families, which were not likely soon to have been reached by the regular ministrations of the word. Is then this great work, for which the emergency calls, likely to be accomplished by the itinerant colporteur, having for his field of labor a "district of 50,000 or 75,000 inhabitants," and returning "on his track once in one, two, or three years?" Are men thus employed in the active labors of a travelling bookseller, even granting that they had in the outset all the intellectual furniture needed, likely to perform the mental labor required of the pioneers of religious society in our new States? It is no mean task these same pioneers have to perform, and they should be—they *must* be—men of learning, men of intense thought and laborious study. They should be men who combine, in an eminent degree, knowledge of men and knowledge of books, with profound original reflection. Is the colporteur system likely to bring such men into the field? Is it likely to cultivate such mental habits in the men whom it employs in its

labors? We leave it to the wise to answer such questions as these.

But again, if the colporteur carried with him all those intellectual and moral qualifications, which we have shown to be indispensable in meeting the emergency, still his position with reference to society would be a fatal barrier to his accomplishing the needed work. He is an itinerant. He should be a man at home, living among the people, and preparing them to be gathered to his fathers; identified with those permanent living fountains of influence, the organized church, or the literary or theological institution, and acting thus directly on the heart of society, and feeling all its pulsations. This the colporteur, or even the itinerant preacher, can never be. He is a stranger—a transient person. He is an ambassador representing to society the system that sends him, not himself sustaining a vital relation to the body politic. We must content ourselves with barely suggesting this thought, although it is one on which it would not be uninteresting to enlarge.

But it is claimed that these reasonings of ours are contradicted by facts. It is said that, in France, colportage is actually at this day the most efficient instrument of evangelization. We have looked with much interest on the struggle which seems to be coming on apace in that country between spiritual Christianity and the abominations of the papacy, and we have rejoiced much in the smiles of the Head of the Church on the labors of the colporteur. Still, colportage has not reformed France. For every Protestant at this day to be found in that kingdom, there are twenty Catholics. Out of 30,000,000 of her population only 1,500,000 are reckoned Protestants, and of these very many are Rationalists, Socinians, and Universalists. True, colportage is at present the most efficient instrument of evangelization. But why? Because it is the only mode of effort which is *free*. The church and the ministry—yes, the Protestant (?) church and the Protestant (?) ministry are the *creatures of the government*, and that too a government which, from policy and a consciousness of its own weakness, is notoriously subservient to the papacy. So far as they have done any thing in the shape of independence, it is only an empty name. The consistory, which is the controlling ecclesiastical influence in the Reformed Church of France, is a miserable *Ecclesiastical Aristocracy*, and worse still, an aristocracy founded on *wealth*. These assertions are made on the authority of the French correspondent of the New-

York Observer, M. De Felice. We reluctantly forbear transcribing in this place some passages from an article of his in the number of that paper for Feb. 10, 1844, entitled, "Statistical details of Protestantism in France." We beg leave earnestly to solicit the attention of all our readers to the details of that article. They have filled our hearts with emotions which we have no power to describe, and we think they have a most important bearing on the point before us. Because French Protestants, with the church and the ministry under a vassalage to the State, such as the despotic genius of Napoleon could invent, when he would restore religion as an instrument of government —because, we say, with such a church and such a ministry as Napoleon would grant them, they can wield no more powerful instrument of evangelization than colportage; does it hence follow that this must be relied on as *our* main instrumentality in Republican America, with our *free* church and *free* ministry?

But France itself must have more powerful instruments—she must have God's own instruments, a free church and a free ministry, or she never will and never can be a reformed country. Her Protestantism must be rendered truly Protestant too—it must be divested of those ideas of "legal existence," of regulating all things by ecclesiastical power, and producing uniformity of belief and practice by a consolidated system of church courts, which seem to have taken so strong a hold of the very pious and generally intelligent writer just referred to; and go forth to the work trusting more in the word and Spirit of God, and less in human legislation, whether secular or ecclesiastical. Then a time will come when the Catholic priesthood will fear the influence of truly Protestant churches, and a truly Protestant ministry, more than they do that of the colporteur. Till that time does come, we predict France will be, in main, a Catholic country. And we think these are considerations of the utmost importance, to be borne in mind by American Christians, when they labor and pray for the evangelization of France.

The utter inadequacy of the colporteur system to meet the great emergency which has arisen in the new States, will perhaps appear more clearly in another point of view. The destitution of the ordinary and stated means of grace which exists, has been already alluded to, and to all those who wish to see it portrayed with truthfulness and power, we cordially recommend the eighteenth annual report of the American Tract

Society. What then is the extent of the remedy which the system under consideration proposes for these enormous and growing destitutions ? It is, to employ one colporteur "for every district of 50,000 or 75,000 inhabitants," "to return on his track once in one, two, or three years, strengthen the things that remain," (if he can find any to strengthen,) "and meet the increasing population with the means of grace." Now, let it be borne in mind, that the question is not as to the utility of such a system, in connexion with the permanent institutions of religion, but as to its efficacy in *meeting our great emergency*—"in meeting the increasing population with the means of grace"? In this view of it, we too ask, "What is a single colporteur for a great State like North Carolina or Arkansas"? Nay, more, What is a single colporteur for a district containing 50,000 or 75,000 inhabitants, and doubling once in ten years? If any one has made himself believe that such a system can meet such a crisis, or by itself, without the aid of the great permanent institutions of a free Protestant community, materially modify the destiny of such a people as that which is springing up in the West, we are not surprised that he should have said of it that "*the colporteur enterprise is in morals what steam is in mechanics.*"\* But we do wonder that the enlightened and pious men who guide the American Tract Society should have endorsed the sentiment. We think it a temporary outbreak of enthusiasm, which ill comports with the conservative sobriety of their general character. We take it for granted that these good brethren, after all, agree with us in the belief that the world is to be evangelized, not by the invention of new and more effective machinery, but by the application of the full power of Christian truth and love to moral machinery which was in full use in the days of Paul and Silas, and James and John; or at least that a new moving power in morals, like steam in mechanics, the world is never to know. Truth and love form the only possible moral force to be employed in the work of evangelization, and that force was fully evolved eighteen hundred years ago by Christ and his apostles.

In reply to all this, it is however claimed that other agencies—the school—the college—and the missionary, are too slow in their operations to be relied on to do the work which needs to

---

\* *American Colporteur System, page 21.*

be done now. We are ready to admit that the children of this world are wiser in their generation than the children of light—that it is, indeed, heart-sickening to observe how slow the progress of moral and religious enterprises, when compared with those which have for their object the goods of earth. Still we must claim that in their action on forming society in this country, no mode of effort has been or can be productive of so much *immediate* good, independently of their remote bearings, as our efforts for education and Home Missions. Nor is it possible that the colporteur system can in this respect hold any reasonable comparison with them. The proof of this assertion lies, of course, in the considerations on which we have just been insisting. It may also be found in the actual forming efficacy of our missionary and educational enterprises, as attested by fact, under the personal observation of multitudes of living witnesses. The founding of a college, for example, looks indeed to ultimate and remote results of great magnitude and importance: but it is not therefore unproductive of immediate results. Personal delicacy would perhaps on such a point enjoin on us silence—but abundant personal observation impels us to speak freely. Such an enterprise forms a most attractive rallying point, around which enlightened piety and philanthropy are concentrated and organized—it awakens the popular mind to the interests of education—it calls the attention of the statesmen and men of influence to the intellectual wants of the people—it excites a strong desire for knowledge in the young, and calls forth thought, discussion, and enterprise, on the great subject of education, through a widely extended community. It places in prominent and influential stations men who have thought much on that great interest, as well as on the still higher interest of religion, and whose influence in the formation of society is felt in every member of the body politic—an influence, too, which is not remote and prospective, but immediate and obvious to the most superficial observer. It is felt, both in forming the present opinions and sentiments of the people, and in moulding the permanent institutions of society.

Neither are Home Missionary efforts mainly remote in their results, though they do aim at founding that institution of society, which has the promise of God that the gates of hell shall never prevail against it. Their results are *immediate*, both in converting sinners to God, and in modifying the entire religious condition of the people. The man who is fit to be a Home

Missionary, is a man whose influence cannot be hemmed in by the lines of his parish, or circumscribed, we will add, by any sectarian boundary. He is the present living ambassador of God to the people, "rightly dividing the word of truth" and giving to every one his portion in due season. His influence will be and is felt far and near, and by the adherents of every religious sect around him; almost equally by those who oppose as by those who favor his labors. He may preach to a church of some particular denomination, because he there finds a congregation who appreciate his views, and co-operate in his labors. He may be ecclesiastically connected with some religious denomination, and we learn from the documents before us that colporteurs are so also. But he feels that his field is the world, and his church the universal brotherhood of Christian faith and love. Regarding, as we ever have done, this as the truly catholic ground on which our Home Missionary and educational efforts stand, we were not exactly prepared to feel the force and propriety of language like the following: "The sole object of the Society's publications, and of the colporteurs who circulate them, being to exalt Christ and him crucified as the only hope of lost man, all that tends to excite sectarian prejudice or divide the church of God is left to other hands; and the simple Gospel message comes, as from the lips of the Saviour, directly to the conscience. While all men can be better addressed in this spirit, some men, and especially errorists, can be approached in none other. They are thus reached at their homes, not with a spirit of proselytism or partisanship, but by a spiritual Christian bearing a Gospel message *for them*, which must be received or rejected, on *its own merits*, and not because of prejudiced associations with it. The advantages possessed by this system, in this view, are immense. It combines some of the most powerful elements of influence known to the world, in a way so simple, direct, and effective, that it can make its way through the closed ranks of error and delusion, 'piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit.'" Page 5, Am. Col. Sys.

That there are "immense advantages" in prosecuting our religious enterprises in a "catholic spirit," we certainly admit, and much more than admit. The advantage lies chiefly in this: that religious enterprises so prosecuted are *Christian* enterprises; while those which are not so prosecuted are *not Christian at all*. They may carry along with them the forms of Christianity, but of its soul and essence they are destitute.

This is a principle which must be recognized by our entire system of evangelism, or it cannot be pleasing to God. But we are not aware that this advantage pertains, in any peculiar sense, to the American Tract Society, or to the colporteur system. Cannot the living minister of Christ be as catholic in his spirit as the colporteur? Must he necessarily go "with a spirit of proselytism and partisanship?" Cannot the living actions and the spoken discourses of the missionary of the cross be as unsectarian as his printed writings? Or cannot the living minister of Christ be as truly catholic in his spirit as Doddridge and Baxter? We go further still—we solemnly assert, that there are no possible circumstances in which a Christian can be placed, in these United States, which tend with so much power to fill his mind with an enlarged charity, and raise him far above the narrowness and exclusiveness of sect, as the condition of a missionary in our new settlements at the West. If he have an intelligent head and a Christian heart, (and if he has not, he is not fit for a missionary,) he will see and feel, at every step, that a sectarian spirit is the bane and the curse of the church of Christ; and watchfully and prayerfully avoid it, as he would avoid all the other works of the flesh. Indeed, we have sometimes thought that if the leaders of the church in the older States had served a sort of apprenticeship in this work, it would have been well for the peace of our American Zion. Wherein, therefore, consist the "immense advantages" of the colporteur system, on the score of a "*catholic spirit*," we are unable to see. We rejoice to believe that, in common with kindred religious efforts, it is prosecuted in such a spirit; and we reiterate the assertion, that if it or any other religious enterprise is prosecuted in any other spirit, it ceases to be Christian—Christ will no longer own it. The new States at least have no need of any aid from the old ones, in propagating a sectarian spirit, or in building up sectarian walls. We have enough, and more than enough, among ourselves, who are engaged in that work; and they have talent, learning, and other resources, quite sufficient for such an enterprise. If our brethren aid us at all, which we hope, let it be in a single-hearted effort to bring men to Christ. Any system of effort in which this principle is not *fundamental* can be of no real service to us.

But the claim is put forth that this system is peculiarly "republican"—"democratic"—and therefore peculiarly adapted to our country. In a passage, which we have already quoted, after

admitting the importance of schools, academies, and seminaries of learning, and the multiplication of ministers, we are told that "if all these were in operation it would by no means supersede the necessity and desirableness of an agency which is truly republican," etc. We may have, then, schools and colleges and churches in full operation, and yet an agency which is "truly republican" may remain a desideratum in our system. We were not prepared for this sentiment. We are not, even now, quite prepared to say to the missionary of the cross, with whatever sect connected, who has endured the toils and privations of a frontier life for the sake of preaching the Gospel to the poor, to those to whom "no one else goes," and planting in the wilderness the garden of God, You have done very well, to be sure, but it is a pity you had not some agency which is "truly republican." Nor are we quite sure that it is right to hold similar language to the men who have devoted their lives and their energies, both of mind and body, to founding the institutions of education on the borders of civilization, and opening that arterial system of a free community, through which the life blood of Christianized knowledge may flow to the remotest member of the body politic. We are of the opinion that both these classes of laborers are quite familiar with an "agency which is truly republican." You might as well represent the travelling pedler as more democratic than the regular merchant, as to talk of any thing peculiarly republican in the labors of the colporteur, as compared with other branches of Christian effort.

Indeed it is time we had done with so narrow a view of the subject. There is but one thing which is either respectable or permanent in modern democracy, and that it derives from the Christian religion. It is the grand peculiarity of the times of Christ that to the poor the Gospel is preached. Christianity is a system which cares for man *as man*—as an individual subject to the government of God; it cares therefore as much for the poor as for the rich—it has a heart of sympathy for human want and human woe, in whatever condition found. Out of this feature of the Gospel grows the great foundation-principle of democracy: and wherever the Christian religion goes in its purity, there will be a constant tendency to this true democracy. Away, then, with all pretended systems, whether of Christianity or democracy, which do not recognize and carry into practice this principle. However specious, they are but an empty

name. If any portion of our religious system is not in this only respectable sense truly republican, let us forthwith abandon it, for it is not of Christ. But if the various parts of our system of benevolent effort be founded on this great common principle of the Gospel and of republicanism, as their very life, then let not one part boast itself over another as being "truly republican." Enlightened Christianity is the life of true republicanism; and every system which tends to fill our land with that freedom wherewith Christ doth make his people free, is *truly republican*.

But again, it is claimed that this system is peculiarly—yes, *exclusively* adapted to meet the various classes of errorists, which are rapidly springing up and multiplying in our country. "But whatever view may be entertained of these statements, it is plain that by no other system can *prevailing errors and delusions* be dispelled, and the saving truths of the gospel be commended to their reception with the hope of their conversion to God."<sup>\*</sup> We are aware that there are certain districts of our country, to which, for reasons in perfect harmony with all which we have thus far stated, this mode of labor is peculiarly adapted. Such are the foreign Catholic population of our cities. They are strangers among us—they know nothing of our religion or our people—they are ignorant of our language, and consequently unable to receive benefit from attending our places of worship, if they were not prejudiced against doing so. If, now, a man who speaks their own language—especially if he has once been a Catholic, and understands all their prejudices, sits down at their fireside, and enters into familiar religious conversation with them, he may remove their prejudices, and find an access to their hearts. If then he has a pious book in their own tongue to give them, he leaves them with a reasonable prospect of doing them good. If this visit can be repeated after a few days, to the same individual, and soon again renewed, it rapidly wins on the man's affections and his confidence. In such circumstances this is too promising a mode of doing good to these strangers and sojourners amongst us to be neglected by American Christians without guilt. But even here, if the same individual can receive such a visit only once in one, two, or three years, the prospect of much good will not be flattering.

---

\* Am. Col. Sys. page 17.

Our soil is very rich, and produces weeds very luxuriantly. A Western garden wants a thorough hoeing out, oftener than once in "one, two, or three years." Such a field as this requires rather the labors of the city missionary, accompanied by a corps of lay-helpers who are full of the spirit that preaches the gospel to the poor, than such a system as colportage. Still, the colporteur system is capable of adapting itself to this sort of labor. How extensively then may circumstances analogous to these be found, calling for these reasons for the application of the system! We think our Eastern friends are sometimes greatly in error, in their ideas of the prevalence of Romanism at the West. They seem to imagine it is necessary for colporteurs to traverse the length and breadth of our valley, in constant close combat with "the beast." This is a great mistake. A man may travel hundreds of miles together, and never meet either a Catholic, or a foreigner, who cannot speak the English language. Foreigners are not spread over the surface of our country—they are grouped together in particular locations, of limited extent, chiefly in the vicinity of the large cities. The limits, therefore, to which the colporteur system is demanded, for these reasons are very narrow. We have lived fifteen years at the West, and travelled much, both by public and private conveyances, and we have never met but two Romish priests, and scarcely above a dozen Romanists in the whole time.

But as to errorists generally at the West, who speak the language of the country, and are daily mingling in the stream of conversation, and feeling all the excitements of the passing scene, we deny utterly that colportage has any special adaptation to meet their case. Indeed, to us, the idea of counteracting the almost innumerable forms of religious error, which are contending for the moral empire of the West, by such a system, seems exceedingly preposterous—almost too unreasonable to be reasoned with. If errorism in the West were old, decaying, and rotten—if the minds of its adherents were in that state of stupid inactivity, which characterizes a system of error after the fervor of that fanaticism which gave it birth has expired, there would be some reasonable hope, that even an itinerant colporteur, with his bundle of books, might throw a new element into the mass, and perhaps awaken the mind to a new and salutary thought. The passions of such a people are asleep on religious questions; and if the intellect and conscience can be called into action, the happiest results may follow. Such is, to some ex-

tent, the condition of our German Catholic population. But the religious systems which pervade the West are not in this condition. However old and spiritless they may have been in their native beds, when once transferred to our soil they speedily feel its stimulating influence, and manifest those tendencies to growth and expansion which characterize every thing Western. They imbibe the spirit of restless aggression and proselytism. Such must be the condition of Romanism itself in all classes of our population so soon as they are able to mingle freely in the current of American society. But the adherents of a proselyting system are always characterized by an intense mental activity. On such a population, we are certainly warranted in asserting that the itinerant colporteur can expect to exert little influence. If he discusses in his intercourse with them the merits of their favorite systems, he has little chance of telling them any thing new. If he does not, they feel little interest in what he says—and they will treat his books in like manner.

The religious systems of the West must be regarded as so many separate hosts in battle array and engaged in mortal conflict. It has often reminded us of Daniel's vision, in which the four winds of heaven were striving upon the great sea. That conflict must go on till truth triumphs and error is defeated—and its course or its ultimate issue is not likely to be much affected by the momentary presence of the passing stranger. It must also be borne in mind, that this conflict is not a succession of skirmishes in the open field. It is a war of fortresses. It is mostly waged in defence of what each party esteems to be the permanent institutions of society, and yet so as to draw into the conflict every great principle of the gospel. Now we appeal to any man of tolerable acquaintance with the state of religion at the West for the truth of this picture; and granting it to be true, we refer the question to the sober judgment of every reader, whether, in such circumstances, colportage is adapted to counteract and dispel the various forms of religious error. Must not our main reliance be on a regular soldiery, well equipped, and enlisted for life? Will not any other reliance lead to miserable disappointment? Need we suggest to the reader, in view of such a condition of society, that efficient effort in founding the permanent institutions of education and religion upon true principles, affords the only reasonable hope of our salvation.

But perhaps we shall hear it said, in reply to all this, that

colportage is the only available system, because it is the only one which, in our present circumstances, can be applied. We are told "there is no homogeneity, and no possibility of sustaining the ministry of a particular order in the midst of prejudice or carelessness." Why may we not with just as much propriety say, "there is no homogeneity, and no possibility of sustaining" a *colporteur*, &c. True, the American Tract Society may, if it has the means, sustain a colporteur "in the midst of prejudice or carelessness." And why not the Home missionary Society, if it has the means, equally well sustain a missionary? The one is just as practicable as the other; and the only question is, Which is the most economical expenditure of funds? if indeed we can have but one, as it seems to be here implied.

But it is said missionaries cannot be found in sufficient numbers. How is this known? Who will venture to assert, that if American Christians address themselves in good solemn earnest to the work of providing a preached gospel for our entire population, God will not pour out his Spirit on our churches and our seminaries of learning, and raise up a sufficient number of regular soldiers, enlisted for life, to occupy every post and man every fortress? "Bring ye all the tithes into the store-house, that there may be meat in my house, and prove me now herewith, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it." One thing at least is certain—the Church should support the missionaries she has, before she begins to doubt the willingness of God to raise up in answer to her prayers as many as she needs. While we see around us so many excellent ministers of Christ, struggling with the accumulated difficulties which grow out of inadequate support, without books and periodicals, and so harassed with worldly cares and perplexities as to have neither time nor mental energy for those studies which the real necessities of the people daily call for at their hands, we shall not think the time has yet come for us to despair of God's willingness to raise up as many missionaries as we are willing to support. Let the Church show, by her faithfulness to her missionaries, that the youth who devotes his life to the missionary work may depend on enjoying the privilege of wearing out in the appropriate labors of the Christian ministry, with such means of prosecuting religious study as the condition of society really demands of him, and it will then be time

enough to complain that missionaries cannot be found in sufficient numbers. For our own part, we should anticipate no difficulty of this sort.

But then the "economy of the system." What then is the comparative economy of the system? The average annual cost of a colporteur to the Tract Society is as follows, viz.: salary \$150; books, gratuitously distributed, average \$175; travelling expenses, which we estimate at \$75. These sums added together show the total annual average expense of a colporteur to the Society that employs him, to be about \$400. This is fully twice the annual average cost to the Home Missionary Society of each of its missionaries. Where then is the peculiar economy of this system? It seems to lie simply in this, that it costs as much to sustain one colporteur in the field as to sustain two missionaries. And even this result is on the assumption that the American Tract Society can obtain as valuable services for \$150 as the Home Missionary Society can for \$200, with the addition of whatever may be contributed by the people with whom the missionary labors. The question of economy, as compared with Home Missions, is therefore reduced to this—Is one colporteur worth two missionaries? To this question we think a satisfactory answer has already been given.

We have already extended our remarks to what will perhaps be considered a very unreasonable length. But there is yet another view of the subject, which we feel constrained to examine before we close. It is found in the following paragraph: "There is another respect in which the colporteur system has special adaptation to our country, viz., *the ease and rapidity with which it can be indefinitely extended*. The population, already numbering 18,000,000, is increasing with a rapidity which outstrips all present efforts to give it the Gospel. The supply of well qualified ministers is altogether inadequate; and even if the men and the means for their education were now provided, nearly one-half of the present generation would pass into eternity, and the character of the next generation be essentially moulded, and perhaps the destiny of the country forever decided, before they could be brought into effective service. But to rely alone on an educated ministry, leaving undeveloped and unemployed the energies of the followers of Christ—not merely in giving but in doing—not as a thing by the way, but, if need be, in an *exclusive* consecration of their time and talents to works of benevolence, is not only an error which may be fatal, but it is econom-

ically as unwise as it would be to leave a great battle to be fought by the *generals* in command on one side, against a mighty opposing force." Am. Col. Sys., p. 19.

We have never been of the number of those who are in favor of leaving the "battle to be fought by the generals in command on one side, against a mighty opposing force." If by *generals* be meant, as would seem from the connexion, educated ministers, the providence of God has placed this matter far beyond human control. A pious and intelligent layman was employed, in the year 1843, to inquire into the moral and religious condition of a district of country embracing some twenty counties, in one of the Northwestern States, and that a district in which there are probably as few "educated ministers" as in any other portion of the non-slaveholding States. In that district he found a minister of some sort, professing to preach the Gospel, for every three hundred souls, and about every fifth person, in a population of 112,000, a professor of religion. An examination equally thorough, we suppose, would disclose a very similar state of things in other portions of the West. Surely then there is no great danger that the whole battle will be left to "the *generals*." God has not (and we recognize the fact, we trust, with something of gratitude)—God has not left it dependent, either on the colporteur or the educated ministry, whether or not the great mass of our population shall in some sort have the Gospel. They have it, and they will have it. There is, indeed, a mighty work to be done, if we would fill the present and coming millions of our population with the knowledge of God, turn back the thick hosts of error and infidelity, and organize over all our vast territory a free, enlightened, and Christian community. So great indeed is this work, that we have long been accustomed to regard every true Christian, whose lot God has cast here, as being a *missionary*; as truly such as though he had been sent by the American Board to India or China. But God has in his good providence introduced into this work a division of labor. It is not needful to provide through our organized systems of effort, for sending a messenger to every cabin in the land, lest its inmates should never hear of a Saviour. God has provided instrumentalities which will with comparatively few exceptions carry the first lessons of the Gospel there before us. This is not the work to which our benevolent societies are mainly called. Their work is chiefly that of *religious enlightenment and religious organization*; to found those permanent

Christian institutions, which may be the fountains of religious knowledge, and the bulwarks of religious truth to a great and free people. In such a work we should undoubtedly aim mainly to employ the resources which God gives us, in thoroughly qualifying men for such a service, sustaining those who are thus qualified in the field, and furnishing them with all the munitions of moral warfare. Among these munitions, doubtless, religious books and tracts occupy an important place.

If it be objected that this system of effort is too slow, we answer, first, that if it is slow, the fault is not ours, but belongs to the providence of God; second, that it is more efficient in *immediate* results than any other which has been or can be devised; and third, that, taken in connexion with the other great moral causes with which it is to co-operate, the ubiquity of the Bible and of some sort of preaching, as well as of other kindred influences, and especially with the intense activity of the public mind on religious questions, *it will not be slow*, unless it is prosecuted without energy and without prayer. Never was a system better devised for speedily accomplishing a given moral result in given circumstances. We are well aware that it will effect no sudden revolutions, and that its results will be very hard to represent in statistical tables. But limited as our efforts have been through this system in times past, it is even now an every where present moral force, constantly bearing society upward in the scale of knowledge and piety. And he who supposes it possible to do any thing better for western society, than to place it on such an ascending inclined plane of progressive improvement, knows not whereof he affirms.

We are indeed tired of hearing and writing, as we have done in the foregoing pages, about the "emergency" and the "crisis." We deceive ourselves if we imagine that any such convulsive and superficial efforts for immediate effect, as the great Sabbath school effort of 1830 and 1831, or as the colporteur system in the attitude which it is now assuming, designed to save our country from impending ruin by a single skilful manœuvre, can ever succeed. They cannot; they are founded on erroneous views of our character and condition. In such a sense as they assume, *we never can be in a crisis or an emergency.* Our safety depends on great permanent moral causes, as unchangeable in their general course as the father of waters. And, we can co-operate with God, in providing for the spiritual welfare of this people, only by a patient effort to render these established moral

currents subservient to the Gospel, by making them waft on their bosom the saving influences of evangelical truth.

As we admitted, in the outset of this discussion, the propriety, within certain limits, of a system of colportage, we may reasonably be asked to define what those limits are. In reply to such an inquiry we should say, let it cease entirely to talk of emergencies and crises. Let it cease to represent schools and seminaries of learning and an educated ministry as too slow in their operation to accomplish, *in season*, a deliverance for our country, which itself is adapted to work out *immediately*. Let it acknowledge that the only difficulty which hinders the establishment of schools and academies and seminaries of learning and an educated ministry *every where*, is precisely the same which hinders the American Tract Society from sending colporteurs "every where"—*the want of means*; and, therefore, that the question is not which of the two *can be done*, but which really meets, not the *emergency*, but the great *permanent wants of society*. Let it cease to urge the destitution of our country, of the permanent institutions of education and religion, not as an argument for founding them *immediately and every where*, but for a superficial and spasmodic effort, which can never supply their place, or do their work. We shall then cease to have any controversy with it: nay, we shall most cordially welcome it to a place in the great brotherhood of Christian benevolence. There is a noble field for it to occupy, in seeking out the neglected, the ignorant, and the ungodly; impressing on them the first lessons of Christian truth, leading the father and the mother to the long-neglected sanctuary, and their children to the day school and the Sabbath school, and calling the attention of the thoughtless, the worldling, and the skeptic, to the writings of those gifted servants of God, whether living or dead, who have been guided by the divine Spirit, to present the Christian argument with unwonted convincing power, or to pour forth the pure stream of evangelical devotion with unwonted purity and fervor.

We shall here submit the subject to the candid judgment of the Christian public. We have spoken plainly and freely, because we believe the principles involved in this discussion to be of infinite importance to our country. We have no personal acquaintance with the great and good men who guide the operations of the American Tract Society. But we have much respect and much kindly affection for them; and are sincerely sorry to dissent from their views. We entreat them, however,

not to indulge the thought, that any thing we have said can do a real injury to the cause in which we are all engaged. If our reasonings are fallacious, it will be easy to detect and expose the fallacy: if sound, it is surely time they were spread before the public.

---

## ARTICLE X.

## CRITICAL NOTICES.

- 1.—*The Gorgias of Plato, with Notes, by Theodore D. Woolsey, Professor of Greek in Yale College.* Boston: James Munroe & Co.

THIS beautiful edition, with its excellent notes, has tempted us to reperuse the *Gorgias*, and we cannot forbear a word in its praise. It is one of the most scholarlike editions of the Greek classics that has appeared in our country, whether we speak of the accuracy and learning of the notes, the precision and terseness of the style, or the elucidation of the text by a comparison of parallel passages. The editor has prepared himself for his task, with characteristic zeal and industry. He has compassed the whole circle of Greek literature, and read the entire works of Plato, with reference to the illustration of this dialogue. Plato is thus made to interpret himself. His meaning is often happily explained by a citation of kindred passages, collected with much care from the other dialogues. The advantages of this plan are obvious. Mutual light is cast by a comparison of parallel expressions. Especially is this true of a philosophical writer like Plato, who analyzes and defines with microscopic acuteness, and whose nice distinctions will often fail to be apprehended, unless explained by similar clauses in other connexions. Plato evinces remarkable power of discrimination between things that differ, and it is by this analytic definition that he continually detects the fallacy of his opponent.

The text of Stallbaum is the basis of this edition, with some emendations of the editor, adopted after a revision of the various readings, as given by Ast, and a comparison of the standard German editions. The introduction contains a lucid

and summary analysis and critique of the argument, which will materially conduce to the true understanding of the text, while it is not open to the objections of a translation. A body of notes is appended to the dialogue. They evince signal industry, learning and discrimination, and although exceedingly condensed, contain a great amount of valuable matter. They are no hasty gleanings from scholiasts and commentators. The editor has evidently kept pace with the rapid advances of German philology, and is at home in the higher range of classical studies. He has concentrated in these notes the product of much learning and study. His opinions are obviously the result of an extensive and protracted course of personal investigation. His exposition of the niceties of construction, and the peculiarities of idiom, will be appreciated by all who remember to what extent the Greek abounds in anomalous words and phrases, dialectic forms, and elliptical expressions. The grammatical principles of the language are illustrated by original remarks, and frequent references to Matthiae's and Sophocles's grammars—an admirable mode of familiarizing the student with the intricacies of the language. We have been highly pleased with the explanation of the meaning and use of the particles, especially their force in determining the signification of the different moods and tenses, and the structure of sentences. These particles, the use of which in Greek is very various and sometimes difficult, are often carelessly slurred over, as pleonastic, although they furnish the key to the beauty and expressiveness of the Greek classics, to the delicate shades of thought and nicer coloring of those Attic models of taste and purity of style. The import of whole clauses frequently turns upon their use, when they pass as redundant expletives without notice.

No classic needs a commentator more than Plato. The abstruseness of his subject, the occasional obscurity of his language, and the lofty rhythm and poetic cadences of his prose, are enough to perplex and dishearten the unaided learner. Plato blinds imagination with his reasoning; there is a frequent union of the poetic with the philosophic spirit, and at the same time an entire want of methodical arrangement, which renders it difficult to understand his principles and combine them in a consistent system. In making this imaginative philosopher accessible to students in so inviting a form, and with such admirable illustrations of the difficulties of the text, Professor Woolsey has rendered an eminent service to the cause of Greek literature in our country. Plato

has been but little studied in our colleges, partly on account of the want of good editions. We hope Professor Woolsey will supply this deficiency, and introduce the other works of Plato to the American public. They are especially worthy of attention at the present time. Plato has reappeared among the Germans, and, through them, to some extent among us. His philosophy contains the germ of Transcendentalism, which is undeniably becoming a prevalent and influential system in certain quarters. The enthusiasm with which it is beginning to be received by many ardent youth of our country, may be early explained by reference to the "spiritual" and "elevating" tone which "Critical Idealism" is made to assume, and the flattering dignity and "divinity" with which it professes to clothe the attributes of the human mind. Those who would intelligently oppose a system fraught with such alluring error, should be able to trace it to Platonism, its strong-hold and original source.

Of all the classics, Plato is now the centre of attraction with the higher order of scholars in Europe. The writings of no ancient author, probably, are exerting so wide and manifold an influence. Victor Cousin, who long made Plato his study, has recently translated his works into the French, with an introduction to each dialogue. A volume containing his life, and a complete exposition of his system, is promised from the same distinguished author. Schleiermacher, to whom the new ardor for the study of Plato is mainly owing, translated him into the German. Ast has since edited a superior edition with a new translation. Tenneman produced a masterly work on his life\* and system of philosophy. But to mention the writers on Plato, would be only to enumerate some of the most distinguished scholars of Germany. His works are extensively read in the German, and familiarly studied in the original. Lectures are given in the universities upon his life and writings, especially by the learned Augustus Boeckh of Berlin, whose course appears to attract particular attention.

We only allude to a few facts of this sort, which are enough to suggest the contrast between us and the Germans, in regard to the study and appreciation of Plato, and to show the want of such an American edition as Professor Woolsey has commenced. We repeat our wish that he will go on in the work so happily begun. We should be especially pleased to see an edition of *Phaedo* from his hand.

---

\* Tenneman's Life of Plato has been translated by Professor Edwards.

Plato deserves the attention of the scholar for the excellence of his moral sentiments, the purity and elevation of his principles. His argument for the doctrine of the immortality of the soul, which forms the noble conclusion of the *Gorgias*, and is fully developed in the *Phaedo*, is a monument of the highest reach of ancient philosophy on that subject. He advocates the belief in future rewards and punishments, which are urged with great force, as motives to right conduct. His views of the remedial efficacy of punishment, probably suggested the doctrine of purgatory to some of the Christian Fathers. Indeed, Platonism sustains an important relation to the early history of Christianity. Many of the Christian Fathers belonged to the school of Neo-Platonists, and engrafted the principles of their favorite system upon the doctrines of the New Religion. But it would require a distinct essay, to exhibit the claims of Plato upon the attention of the American scholar, and we will only add the testimony of Robert Hall, who, in the most active period of his ministry, devoted several hours in a day, for a number of years, to the study of the classics, and used to refer to Plato in terms of most servid eulogy, and express his astonishment at the prevailing neglect of the writings of that philosopher.

2.—*Posthumous Sermons.* By the Rev. Henry Blunt, A. M., late Rector of Streatham; and formerly Fellow of Pembroke College, Cambridge. First American Edition. Philadelphia: Herman Hooker. 1844. pp. 190, 12mo.

Mr. Blunt, before his death, had instructed and delighted many a heart by his lectures on the Pentateuch, Lives, and Sermons, which were reprinted and widely circulated in this country; and we now have before us a beautiful posthumous memorial of the man.

We select a passage from the sermon on the text, "Go forward." "You, also, established Christians, have a duty to perform, and we say to you, 'Go forward,' gratefully, cheerfully, joyfully. Prove to those around you that religion is not the dull, and stagnant, and cheerless service which the worldling thinks it. Demonstrate that, while all your motives, and all your aims, and all your hopes are higher, infinitely higher, than his can ever be, your comforts, also, and your peace, your cheerfulness, and your resignation, and your happiness, are all of them equally above and superior to any which he can dream of. That as you advance in years, that period when the hope of the hypocrite fails, when the temper

of the mere worldling becomes too often irritable and querulous, your enjoyments are but heightening, your prospects becoming less clouded and more serene ; that the glorious anticipation before you is throwing many a beam of light into nature's darkest hour and over her most wintry day ; and that you are able, humbly yet confidently, seriously yet cheerfully, to go forward from strength to strength, assured that there is one, who, when your heart and your flesh fail, will be (because he has promised to be) 'the strength of your heart and your portion for ever.'

After reading this, it will be apparent that the editor is not far wrong when he says, "These sermons are distinguished for their rich but simple eloquence, the brilliant but chastened imagination which pervades them, combined with a plain perspicuity of language that commends them to persons of all ranks and of all ages."

3.—*Lectures on the Acts of the Apostles.* By the late John Dick, D. D., Professor of Theology of the United Secession Church, Glasgow, Author of "Lectures on Theology," etc. First American from the second Glasgow edition. New-York : Robert Carter. Pittsburg : Thomas Carter. 1844. pp. 407, 8vo.

We have been exceedingly interested in reading these Lectures. The passages selected as the ground of the remarks, are, in themselves, striking, most of them having respect to the Apostle Paul ; the structure of the sentences is chaste and graceful ; the topics treated are such as to secure attention and profit ; and, indeed, the Lectures may serve as good models for this kind of preaching, which, by the way, we think one of the very best for the edification of the people.

Among other subjects, we have here—The Day of Pentecost—Ananias and Sapphira—The Institution of Deacons—The Martyrdom of Stephen—The Conversion of Paul—Herod and Peter—The Council of Jerusalem—Paul in Lystra, in Thessalonica, and Berea, in Athens, Corinth, Ephesus, Jerusalem ; before the Council, before Felix, Festus, and Agrippa, etc. Passages of great beauty might be selected from many of these Lectures, but we rather refer our readers to the volume itself, not doubting that they will be richly repaid in the perusal, for the cost of the book, and the expenditure of time necessary.

- 4.—*The Christian Doctrines.* By Rev. Hubbard Winslow, of Boston, author of "Young Man's Aid," "Woman as she should be," etc. Boston: Crocker & Brewster. 1844. pp. 360, 12mo.

Mr. Winslow is known as a good writer, and his previously published works have exerted a very wholesome influence. "Woman as she should be" ought to be in the hands of every woman who can read it understandingly; and the "Young Man's Aid" might save many a one from the assaults of the tempter, and guide him to the foot of the cross.

The present volume is well digested, lucidly written, and adapted, as designed, to do good. We must not forget now, in the demand for attention to the modes and forms of the church, that, after all, her doctrines are much the weightier matters. Unless the church be well indoctrinated, we shall suffer a multitude of evils: the enemy will come unawares and sow tares with an unsparing hand. We have, for a few years past, been reaping what we sowed—the unwholesome fruits of inattention to indoctrination of church members. We agree with the author, that the great "cause of the evils which we suffer in our Zion and our country, is the want of that intelligent, deep-toned, experimental piety, which results from early and intimate communion with the Christian doctrines. Let the minds of our children be brought under the power of these doctrines, and all our dearest interests will be ultimately saved: let them fail of this, and all will be ultimately lost."

We take pleasure in recommending the work, as a clear and satisfactory exhibition of the Christian doctrines.

- 5.—*The Prelatical Doctrine of the Apostolical Succession examined; with a Delineation of the High-Church System.* By H. A. Boardman, Pastor of the Tenth Presbyterian Church, Philadelphia. Philadelphia: William S. Martien. New-York: Robert Carter. Boston: Crocker & Brewster. 1844. pp. 348, 18mo.

The day has certainly arrived, when it has become necessary for those who maintain the parity of the clergy and the validity of the ordinances administered by others than those whose heads have been touched by the hands of a prelatical bishop, to stand up in defence of their rights and of the truth. We, Presbyterians, have been so very charitable and unsectarian, that we have yielded almost every thing to harmony among the different branches of Zion; but, meanwhile, other sects have been taking advantage of our indifference to our own denominational interests, and have been building them-

selves up at our expense. We have sacrificed all: they, nothing. It ought not so to be. We rest on a basis of truth, and that we should strengthen.

The providence of God has, at length, aroused us from our slumbers, and bid us valiantly defend the citadel. Hence many are burnishing their weapons and preparing to meet the assaults of the enemy. The claims of the Episcopacy have become so intolerably arrogant in certain quarters, her assumptions and professions so high, that to permit them to pass unnoticed, were rather to desert the faith than to exercise the charity of the Gospel.

Mr. Boardman has, doubtless, so thought, and therefore felt it incumbent on him to prepare this manual. The work is written in a good spirit, and in a chaste style. It presents the Presbyterian, and, we think, the Scriptural view of the ministry and ordinances, and upsets the vain pretensions to apostolical succession and peculiar sanctity. Among others, the following topics are treated: The Argument from Scripture—The Historical Argument—The True Succession—The Church put in Christ's place—Intolerance of the System—Its Schismatical Tendency.

6.—*A Biblical Dictionary; being a comprehensive Digest of the History and Antiquities of the Jews and neighboring Nations; the Natural History, Geography, and Literature of the Sacred Writings: with Pronouncing and Chronological Appendices.* By Rev. J. A. Bastow. Bradford: B. Walker. London: W. Strange. 1844.

We are indebted to the politeness of the editor for the first three parts of this Dictionary, reaching from A to Egy. The work evinces learning and research, and will be found to be, when completed, we presume, one of the very best of Biblical Dictionaries. Frequent use has been made of the Biblical Repository, in the preparation of many of the articles. Under Baptism, we notice, that the author has acknowledged his indebtedness to our articles from the pen of Dr. E. Beecher, and has condensed and rearranged the argument of those articles.

It is intended to make the work a Digest of the literature of the Bible. It will illustrate thousands of difficult passages in Scripture, will furnish a complete index of those passages, and will contain a general introduction and a list of the authors referred to, together with their works. Thus will it offer a convenient hand-book to the Bible.

We like the plan, on the whole, and are pleased with the execution thus far.

- 7.—*The Obligations of the World to the Bible; A Series of Lectures to Young Men.* By Gardiner Spring. New York: John S. Taylor & Co. 1844. pp. 404, 12mo.

We are glad to find that Mr. Taylor is encouraged to issue a new edition of this excellent book. It first appeared in 1839, and was then highly recommended by the press generally, and we hope extensively sold. Dr. Spring is one of our best and most useful authors, and this we consider one of his best works.

Young men and others, who will read these lectures, will find that the Bible is, indeed, a precious and peculiar book, and could have had no other than a divine origin.

The author, in fourteen lectures, exhibits the literary merit of the Scripture—obligations of law to the Bible—its friendliness to civil liberty—its influence upon social institutions— influence of the Bible upon human happiness, etc., etc.

- 8.—*The Ciceronian; or the Prussian method of teaching the elements of the Latin Language. Adapted to the use of American Schools.* By B. Sears. Boston: Gould, Kendall & Lincoln. 1844. pp. 184, 12mo.

We have received from M. H. Newman, this excellent contribution to our classical school-books. Professor Sears is one of our ripest scholars; and we scarcely know a work accomplished by him, more important than the preparation of this little volume. The only fear we have about it is, that it will not be appreciated, that teachers—ease-loving teachers—will still prefer the old way with which they are familiar. So very few instructors are willing to take pains and spend time with their scholars. The fact is, *very few* who hold the office, are at all fit for it. The method explained in the Ciceronian is unquestionably the very best method of making effective Latin scholars. Would that it were commenced and pursued in all our schools.

- 9.—*The Book that will Suit You; or a Word for Every One.* By the Rev. James Smith. New York: M. W. Dodd. 1844. pp. 349.

At all events, the author was right in respect to ourselves. The book suits us well; and, we think, will suit every Christian. See if this will not suit the afflicted saint: "The love of Jesus does not prevent sickness; nay, sometimes it sends it. Lazarus was beloved, but Lazarus was sick. Sickness

may be sent for instruction: we often learn more during a short illness, than we do in months and years of health. Then we get nearer to our God, become more detached from the world, and enjoy divine things with a double relish. Surely this is love. Does the mother love her child the less, because she sees it necessary to give it bitter medicine? Or does a father love his son the less, because he must chastise him to prevent his ruin? Is it unkind to teach a pupil the most valuable and important lessons, even if it require confinement and close application for a time? If so, Jesus is unkind in sending sickness; but instead thereof, it is love and kindness that afflicts us."

10.—*A Pictorial History of the United States, with Notices of other portions of America.* By S. G. Goodrich, author of *Peter Parley's Tales.* For the use of Schools. Philadelphia: Samuel Agnew, H. Hooker. 1844. pp. 354, 12mo.

The embellishments of this volume are appropriate, and superior to those of the Pictorial History of France, by the same author. Of the latter, we heard a teacher say, that it was the only book he had ever put into the hands of a certain class of boys, in which they seemed to be absorbed. We think the present volume decidedly better than the other, in style and in interest; and we entertain the opinion that, if instructors and heads of families were to make themselves acquainted with it, it would be preferred to any other history of the United States for children and youth. We gladly recommend it to the attention of School-Committees and Superintendents; and as a good school-book on this subject is needed, we hope it will meet the acceptance to which its merits entitle it.

11.—*A Memoir of the Rev. Legh Richmond, A. M.* By the Rev. T. S. Grimshawe, A. M. Seventh American, from the last London edition. New York: M. W. Dodd. 1844. pp. 362, 12mo.

This is a re-issue, by Mr. Dodd, of a memoir which some years ago attracted the marked attention of the Christian community. We remember to have read it with great delight, and to have heard others speak of it as one of the most interesting memoirs ever written. Legh Richmond can never be forgotten; and we gladly recommend the present volume to all who have not read it.

- 12.—*The Mothers of England; their Influence and Responsibility.* By Mrs. Ellis. New York: D. Appleton & Co. Phil.: G. S. Appleton. 1844. pp. 226.

To say that Mrs. Ellis has written a book for Mothers, is sufficient to secure for it a reading. The works, addressed to her own sex, have been deservedly popular in this country. We consider them wholesome in their principles, and tending to the very highest improvement of woman, in all the relations of life. To mothers she gives some admirable lessons, and we can only wish that these lessons were read, and pondered, and practised.

- 13.—*Sermons, preached at Glasbury, Brecknockshire, and in St. James's Chapel, Clapham, Surrey.* By the Rev. Charles Bradley. First American from the seventh London Edition. New York: D. Appleton & Co. Phil.: George S. Appleton. 1844. pp. 232, large 8vo.

This is a beautiful book of sermons. It is printed in double column, on a fine, rich paper, and with good letter, evincing taste in the publishers, and confidence, on their part, in the taste of the reading public. These sermons have been highly commended by evangelical men in England, and well spoken of by such reviews as the Eclectic and Christian Observer. They are certainly well adapted to family-reading, being written in a plain, lucid, chaste style. The sentences are short and pithy, and the matter practical, judicious, and devout.

- 14.—*Prelacy and Parity, discussed in several Lectures: comprising a Review of Rev. Lloyd Windsor's argument on the Ministerial Commission.* By Rev. William C. Wisner, Bishop of the First Presbyterian Church, Lockport, N. Y. New York: Leavitt, Trow, & Co. 1844. pp. 180, 12mo.

We think Mr. Wisner has here furnished his own and other churches, with a most excellent manual on Prelacy and Parity. The essential parts of the argument are here compressed into a small space, and presented in a lucid and forcible manner. We rather think the Rev. L. Windsor is pretty well shown up, and along with him, the high Episcopal argument. We have not space now to enter upon a more extended notice of the work, but cannot but hope that it will illuminate many minds.

- 15.—*The Family Expositor ; or a Paraphrase and Version of the New Testament ; with critical Notes, and a practical improvement to each section.* By Philip Doddridge, D. D. American edition. With a Memoir of the author, by N. W. Fiske, Professor of Greek and Belles Lettres in Amherst College ; and an introductory essay, by Moses Stuart, Professor of Sacred Literature in the Theological Seminary at Andover. With a Portrait, engraved from an original picture in Wymondley House. Amherst : J. S. & C. Adams. 1844. pp. 1006, 8vo.

This celebrated Family Expositor is offered to the public, by Messrs. Adams, in one volume, well bound, and at a cheap rate. The work is too well known, and too highly appreciated, to need any commendation from us. Whilst Philip Doddridge has immortalized himself by his "Rise and Progress," he has, also, illuminated many minds and refreshed many hearts by his Expositor of the New Testament. He was a man of good, perhaps of rare scholarship, for his day, and with leisure to pursue his studies, might have made one of the best critical expounders of the word of God ; but he chose rather to prepare a commentary for the family-circle, than for the critical student of the Bible. In this he has succeeded well, and, although sometimes rather verbose, is, on the whole, one of the very best of popular commentators. We commend the enterprise of the publishers.

- 16.—*An Original History of the Religious Denominations at present existing in the United States, containing authentic accounts of their rise, progress, statistics, and doctrines.* Written expressly for the work, by eminent theological Professors, Ministers, and Lay-members, of the respective denominations. Projected, compiled, and arranged by J. David Rupp, of Lancaster, Pa., author of "Der Maertyrer Geschichte," etc. etc. Phil: J. S. Humphreys. Harrisburgh : Clyde & Williams. 1844. pp. 734, 8vo.

We consider this a useful book, presenting in one volume the several histories of the various religious denominations in our country. The principle upon which the projector has proceeded is a good one—that of intrusting the history of each denomination to some prominent member of that branch of Zion. Still, its value will depend much on the qualifications of those selected, and their recognized authority to write for their several organizations. We presume the ability

of most of the writers of this volume would be granted, and probably most, if not all of the churches, would be satisfied with the representations made. We looked, very naturally, at the view of the Episcopal Church here given; and we confess that we ourselves are, on the whole, gratified to find that the article has abstained from those assumptions of superiority, which have been, of late, so manifest in some high dignitaries. No doubt, however, the article would have been more acceptable to some of the writer's own church, if he had represented it as *the church of the United States*, and not as the "Protestant Episcopal Church in these United States." He does, indeed, speak of the "doctrines of the church," but we presume he there intended the emphasis to be laid, not on *the church*, but on *doctrines*, meaning, by the church, that of which he had been speaking, and not it as the sole and only church.

The work is got up in a neat and substantial style.

17.—*Hyponoia: or Thoughts on a Spiritual Understanding (ὑπόνοια πνευματική) of the Apocalypse, or Book of Revelation: with some Remarks upon the Parousia, or Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ: and an Appendix on the Man of Sin.* New-York: Leavitt, Trow & Co. 1844. pp. 707, 8vo.

This is a curious book, by a layman, as we presume.—Whoever the author may be—and we divine that his name is revealed on the blank side of the title page, "entered, etc., John R. Hurd"—he certainly evinces industry, and somewhat extended reading; but whether his reading and industry, as here developed, will be of much profit to the world, we very much question. We are glad that our friends, the publishers, seem not to have invested much of the "needful" in the issue of it. This responsibility appears to belong to the author; and we very much fear that he will not be greatly encouraged to publish more of like description, by the sale of the present work.

The writer announces, in his first sentence, "that a design is attributed to the book of Revelation essentially different from that usually ascribed to it." "It is taken to be an unveiling of the mysterious truths of Christian doctrine—an intellectual manifestation, corresponding with what is apprehended to be the Scripture purport of the *Second Coming of the Son of Man.*"

Hence we find, from beginning to end, a system of spiritualizing equal, almost, to Origen's, the counterpart of the too great literalism of the present day. We confess that we have not the hyponoia to penetrate this "Hyponoia;" that we must have better microscopic eyes than those we now possess, be-

fore we can see all that our author sees in the words of this book. We expect for it an early death, and should regret that any of the ministerial brethren, who need to husband their resources, as most do, should be induced to expend for it the sum necessary to buy it.

- 18.—*A Narrative of the Expedition of Cyrus, the Younger, and of the Retreat of the Ten Thousand.* By Xenophon of Athens. Edited by Alpheus Crosby, Prof., etc. Boston: James Monroe & Co. 1844. pp. 282. 12mo.
- 19.—*A Grammar of the Greek Language. Part First. A Practical Grammar of the Attic and Common Dialects: with the elements of General Grammar.* By Alpheus Crosby, Professor of the Greek Language and Literature in Dartmouth College. Boston: James Monroe & Co. 1844. pp. 487, 12mo.

We have placed these books together, not so much because they are by the same author, as because they illustrate each other, and are intended to be companions. The edition of Xenophon is founded on that of Ludwig Dindorf, which is considered, by scholars, decidedly the best; although now, we think, Prof. Crosby may lay claim to have given the public a better than even Dindorf's. It comes from the Cambridge press, and is, of course, well executed; and we approve highly the style of typography in which the editor has directed it to be done. An Appendix points to the passages of the *Anabasis* illustrated in Prof. Crosby's Grammar, and thus presents the student with one of the very best of commentaries; one which he, in a measure, makes himself, and therefore will prize more highly, and will, consequently, be much more benefited.

The Editor is, also, preparing a "Companion to the *Anabasis*," which is to contain "a map, a life of the author, a vocabulary, notes, and exercises in translation from English into Greek." All of this we like, except the "vocabulary." This seems to us uncalled for in this case, and generally hurtful to scholars. If "notes" are given, we hope they will be few, and only such as will lead the student to investigate for himself, not labor-saving machinery, as they too frequently are. *Tantum sufficit.*

The "Grammar" of Professor Crosby is one of the best companions to his *Anabasis* he could have given us; and, at the same time, an admirable companion to all the rest of our Greek school-books. It exhibits good scholarship, discriminating philology, and deep research. We can cheerfully recommend it to all who desire a correct knowledge of Greek Orthography, Etymology, and Syntax.

## ARTICLE XI.

## LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.

## Germany.

By the royal munificence of the King of Bavaria, the funds for sustaining the State Library of Munich have been increased to 23,000 florins.—Professor Schaffei's History of Portugal is nearly completed.—Dr. Herm. Lotze and Dr. Wilh. Roscher, have been appointed ordinary Professors of Philosophy at Göttingen.—W. A. Passow has published a volume of his father, F. Passow's Miscellaneous Writings.—A practical Commentary on the Prophets of the Old Testament, with practical and critical remarks, 3d vol.—Ezekiel, by F. W. Umbreit.—A new edition (the 4th) of Ewald's Hebrew Grammar is about to be issued.—Dr. F. K. Theiss has issued a "Vollständiges Wörterbuch zu Zenophones Anabasis, mit besonderer Rücksicht auf Namen u. Sack-Erklärung."

## Belgium.

Normal schools are to be instituted in all the districts of the kingdom.—An iron church is talked of in the common of Hornu.

## France.

M. Thiers's "History of the Consulate and the Empire" is completed, for which he is to receive 500,000 francs. For his "History of the Revolution," he received 100,000 francs.—The French Government is publishing La Place's works.—Among the acquisitions with which M. Mynas has enriched the Bibliothèque Royale, is a manuscript copy of "Æsop's Fables," in Choliambics, written by Babbrias, containing several thousand lines unknown before. It is in the press of Didot.

## Italy.

In 1843, there were 5807 volumes published, principally translations.—The Pope, in person, has consecrated as bishops, four of the cardinals; the first time in one hundred and fifty years.—Two letters from Henry IV. of France, to Clement VIII., with the replies, have been recently discovered. They relate to his submission to the holy see, and are dated Nov. 6th, 7th, 1595.

## Great Britain.

Socrates's History of the Church, in seven books, translated from the Greek, with some account of his life and writings, has been recently published.—Mitchell's Philoctetes of Sophocles, with notes.—Dr. W. Smith's Dictionary of Greek and Roman Biography and Mythology. Parts V. and VI.—Historical and critical comments on the History of Herodotus. From the French of Larcher.

## United States.

The second number of the "Bibliotheca Sacra and Theological Review," has appeared, containing valuable articles by some of our best scholars. The public will, ere long, be favored with Professor Stuart's work on the Apocalypse.

THE  
AMERICAN  
BIBLICAL REPOSITORY.

OCTOBER, 1844.

---

SECOND SERIES, NO. XXIV. WHOLE NO. LVI.

---

ARTICLE I.

THE PRINCIPLES OF PRESBYTERIANISM, AND REASONS FOR UPHOLDING THEM.

By C. E. Stowe, D. D., Professor of Biblical Literature, Lane Seminary, Cincinnati.

NOTWITHSTANDING all the claims and assumptions of Romanism and high church prelacy, it still continues to be the opinion of the most profound and candid biblical scholars, that the Christian church at first was presbyterially organized. *Presbyterian* I mean in a large and liberal sense, as opposed to hierarchical despotism on the one hand and laic anarchy on the other, and not in that narrow and exclusive sense in which some explain the term; for as there is bigotry every where, as it is the vice of individual idiosyncrasy, and not the peculiarity of any particular sect, so there is no lack of it among some who belong to the great Presbyterian family. Indeed, I suppose that no existing church is now modelled exactly on the apostolic or scriptural pattern; nor do I suppose it necessary, or even desirable that this should be the case; for had it not been intended that forms of church order should, to some extent, have capacity to vary and adapt themselves to changes of circumstances, forms of

SECOND SERIES, VOL. XII. NO. II.

17

government, climate, intellectual condition, etc., the model would have been as rigidly laid down in the New Testament as in the Old, which last was restricted to one territory, to one people, to one set of circumstances. Archbishop Whately shrewdly observes (*Essay on Omissions*), that there are some things which the writers of the New Testament were divinely inspired *not to record*, and among them are, a creed, a catechism, a form of church government, and a ritual for public worship, because it would be contrary to the genius and intentions of Christianity, for the whole world to be tied down to any one mode, in respect to these and similar points. (Compare Whately on *Kingdom of Christ*, Essay II. sec. 9.) The New Testament churches themselves, evidently, were not shut up to one unvarying order, but modified their forms as circumstances required, as we shall soon have occasion to show.

The most that I contend for in respect to Presbyterianism, the most that any intelligent Presbyterian contends for, so far as I know, is, that the Presbyterian model, in its essential features, on the whole approaches nearest to the Bible pattern; and, generally considered, it is best adapted to the external circumstances and intellectual condition of the age and country in which Providence has placed us; and in fact that some form of Presbyterian organization is best for all ages and all countries—it being, as to substance, the Bible organization, and therefore universally best.

The subject which I have selected for the present essay I shall proceed to discuss under the following divisions, namely :

I. A HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE PRINCIPLES OF PRESBYTERIANISM.

II. A GENERAL VIEW OF THE ADVANTAGES OF THOSE PRINCIPLES IN CONTRAST WITH THE PRINCIPLES OF OPPONING SYSTEMS.

III. SOME SPECIAL REASONS WHY THOSE PRINCIPLES SHOULD BE INSISTED ON AND PROPAGATED AT THIS TIME AND IN THIS COUNTRY.

As a preliminary, I must define what I understand, and what I suppose is generally understood, by the *principles of Presbyterianism*, or a *Presbyterian church*. By a Presbyterian church, I understand a church which, in its theology, is biblical, strict, and prevailingly Augustinian, or Calvinistic; in its rites and modes of worship, scripturally simple, and unencumbered with long liturgies and minute rubrical formulas; in its government, directed and assisted by a board of elders, or a committee, chosen from among its communicants; and for purposes of order

and discipline, associated with neighboring churches in a body composed of ministers and elders or lay delegates, usually denominated a Presbytery, but sometimes a Synod, as in the Lutheran and Dutch churches, and sometimes a Council or Consociation, as by the Congregationalists. To complete the theory of Presbyterianism, as now generally understood, this body must be permanently organized, and bounded by certain territorial limits, and not merely occasionally called together and without any reference to territorial boundaries. But this feature, though very convenient, is not essential to the Bible organization, as we shall soon see.

A Presbyterian church must be biblical, strict and Augustinian in its theology, in opposition to traditional, loose, and Pelagian views; it must be scripturally simple in its rites, in opposition to burdensome ceremonies of human invention; and it must have a lay representation in its government, in opposition to the assumptions of a hierarchical priesthood.

The theology of Presbyterianism is contained in the original creeds of all the reformed churches of Europe, among which we may specify particularly the Augsburg Confession of the Lutheran church, and the doctrinal part of the XXXIX Articles of the Anglican church. As to the Augsburg Confession, Calvin declares, "I willingly and gladly subscribe to it;" and he gave his cordial assent to the articles of the English church, making exceptions only to certain things in their modes of worship, which he denominates *tolerabiles ineptias*, or "fooleries that may be borne with." (*Das Leben Calvins von Henry*, II. 376, 505. *Koellner's Symbolik*, I. 241.) The Presbyterian theology, as received by the Scotch and American Presbyterians, is embodied in the Confession of Faith and Catechisms of the Westminster Assembly.

The fundamental principles of Presbyterianism, I contend and shall endeavor to prove, are most in accordance with the Scriptures, nearest to the views and practices of the primitive church, and best adapted to promote all the highest interests of man, both as an individual and a member of society, especially at the present age and in this country. The proof will be exhibited under the heads already indicated.

#### I. HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE PRINCIPLES OF PRESBYTERIANISM.

##### 1. *In the Apostolic times, or the Scriptural view.*

ORGANIZATION. According to the New Testament, when a

church was organized, a board of elders was appointed to superintend its spiritual concerns ; and these officers are called indifferently, *elders* or *bishops*, no difference at all being made between these two appellations. Thus, according to Acts 20: 17, 28, Paul sent from Miletus to Ephesus, and called the *elders* (*πρεσβυτέρους*) of the church, and in addressing these *elders* he says, ‘take heed to the flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made you *bishops*’ (*επισκόπους*). The same interchangeable use of these terms is found in Titus 1: 5, 7, and also in 1 Peter 5: 1, 2, in the original Greek, for King James’s Episcopal translators were not always careful to preserve in the English the exact shade of meaning of the original terms. If the early Christians had two distinct offices, it is strange indeed that having two names they should so utterly confound them, instead of applying the one name to the one office, and the other to the other. In military offices, is the general ever confounded with the colonel ? or in civil affairs, the judge with the sheriff ? King and sovereign are ever interchangeable, because they both indicate the same office, and so, for the same reason, chairman and moderator ; but who ever thinks of confounding admiral with commodore ? or chancellor with barrister ? Where a new office is created, an old name is sometimes given to it, as in the Latin term *imperator* ; but where the names and the office are from the beginning contemporaneous this is never done, and it would be a gross solecism in language to do it.

These elders took the charge both of teaching and discipline, dividing the work according to individual capacity, without as yet, so far as appears, making any *official* distinction between the two classes of duties. 1 Tim. 5: 17. After a while, when it became necessary that the preaching elders should devote all their time to the duties of their office, and be supported by the church, which was never the case with the ruling elders, then probably the official distinction was definitely made ; but we have no account in the Bible of any such transaction.

Besides the board of elders, another board of deacons was appointed to take care of the poor, and generally to manage the temporal affairs of the church. Acts 6: 1-7. With these two boards the organization of a church was complete ; and the churches are addressed indifferently through their *bishops* and *deacons*, or *elders* and *deacons*, as in Phil. 1: 1; 1 Tim. 3: 18; but no church in the Bible is ever alluded to as having a *bishop*, *elders*, and *deacons* ; the three orders under these names are never found in the New Testament.

These church officers administered the ordinances, Acts 10 : 48 ; 8 : 36-38, compared with 6 : 5 ; also 1 Cor. 1 : 17. They were chosen by the people and inducted into office by the apostles or missionaries. Acts 6 : 3-6 ; 14 : 23 ; 15 : 24, 25 ; 1 : 21-26, 2 Cor. 8 : 19. The Greek word *χειροτονία*, used in some of the passages above cited, indicates a popular election by raising the hand.

That the apostles were not diocesan bishops, and that modern diocesan bishops cannot be their successors, is manifest in every part of the New Testament. Christ prohibited among them all distinctions of rank. Matt. 20 : 25-28. They themselves disclaim episcopal authority. Rom. 1 : 11-13 ; 1 Cor. 3 : 5, 14, 15 ; 11 : 13, 16. They were travelling missionaries, not confined to any particular province or country, Rom. 15 : 18-28. In no respect can we trace in the New Testament a shadow of semblance between the apostles and modern diocesan bishops. But the Puseyites have discovered one proof of the identity between the diocesan bishops and the apostles, which a casual observer would scarcely suspect. They speak of "the SUFFERINGS of the bishops" as "the second mark of their being our living apostles." (*Oxford Tracts*, X. 5.) The *sufferings of the bishops*, the English bishops and the Roman Catholic bishops of Europe, a proof of their identity with the apostles ! We have had opportunities of witnessing something of the *sufferings of the diocesan bishops* in England and on the continent of Europe, and contrasting them with the *apostolic sufferings*, as described in such passages as the following, which we beg you carefully to read : 2 Cor. 11 : 23-33 ; 6 : 8-10 ; 1 Cor. 4 : 10-13. Grinding poverty and hard work, incessant itinerating and unceasing cares, stripes and imprisonments, hunger and cold, persecution and contempt, these were the *apostolic sufferings* ; and how do they compare with *modern prelatic sufferings* in England and on the continent of Europe ? A princely income and princely honors are not exactly like poverty, persecution, and contempt ; an easy coach, and an army of servants, and costly robes, are not like shipwreck, and destitution, and nakedness ; a regal palace, and savory meats, and strong wines, though they do afflict prelatical humanity with gout and stone, are not exactly like loathsome prisons and public whippings, and the feet fast in the stocks, and being stoned through the streets. Acts 16 : 22-24 ; 14 : 19. At least the resemblance

between the two classes of *sufferings* is not so striking as to establish identity.

In the apostolic age, a single individual appears sometimes to have had the presidency of a church, or to be chief minister in it, as in Rev. 1: 20, 2: 1, 12, 18, etc.; but that these were not authoritative bishops, but ministering servants, is manifest from the contents of the epistles themselves, which are addressed principally to the members of the churches, and not to the minister. Read the following passages: Rev. 2: 5, 10, 12, 29; 3: 6, 13, 22, and compare 1: 4, 11; 22: 16, 21.

In places where, by the customs of society, females were secluded from the public, and no men except their own relatives were allowed to visit them, female deacons were appointed to take charge of the female members of the church, Rom. 16: 1; but there is no evidence that this office was ever filled except where the customs of society rendered it necessary—an instance of the variety admitted in the apostolic organization.

There were the officers of each particular church; but besides these there were others not attached permanently to particular congregations, such as missionaries, called apostles and evangelists, also prophets or exhorters, and some others, not fixed, but varying as circumstances required. 1 Cor. 12: 28; Eph. 4: 11.

We read in the New Testament of no permanent judicatory above the eldership of a particular church; of no territorial presbytery or synod meeting at regular intervals; but as occasion demanded, councils, or occasional synods were called together, in which the missionaries or apostles, the elders, the brethren, and the whole church, assisted. Acts 15: 2, 4, 6, 22, 23.

Discipline seems to have been administered by the whole church, and questions respecting it to have been decided by the majority. 1 Cor. 5: 3-5, 11. Paul says respecting this excommunicated person, *Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which was inflicted* (*ὑπὸ τῶν πλειόνων*) *by the majority,* 2 Cor. 2: 6.

**WORSHIP.** As to public worship, the Bible Christians had no churches to meet in, but they came together in each other's houses, Acts 12: 12; Rom. 16: 5, 23; 1 Cor. 16: 19; or in some large convenient room, Acts 1: 13; where they prayed, sung, read the Scriptures, exhorted and comforted each other, administered the ordinances, all without pomp or parade, with-

out rubric or prayer-book or canonical vestments, in the simplest manner imaginable. Acts 2: 46; 4: 24-30; 1 Cor. 14: 16, 26; Eph. 5: 19; Col. 3: 16; 1 Tim. 2: 1; Rev. 5: 9-14; 15: 3.

THEOLOGY. That this was strict and prevailingly Augustinian, rather than loose or Pelagian, the epistle to the Romans, the chief theological work of the period, affords ample proof, particularly chapters 5-10.

I affirm, then, that the Bible church was Presbyterian in its organization, inasmuch as it was popular, with an eldership, and without a sacerdotal caste or episcopal hierarchy—that it was Presbyterian in its mode of worship, inasmuch as it was simple, without rubric or formal liturgy, or ceremonious parade—and that it was Presbyterian in its theology, inasmuch as the chief theological production of the age, the epistle to the Romans, according to my view of it, brings out prominently some of the most offensive points of Calvinism. But of this each one will judge for himself.

## 2. *In the times of the early Fathers, or the Patristic view.*

ORGANIZATION. As to the organization of the church in the times immediately succeeding the apostles, during the second and a good part of the third century, we have the most positive testimony, that it still continued presbyterian, in the sense which has already been explained. The only change seems to be, that some one teaching elder in each church had acquired an acknowledged preponderancy over the other elders, and was generally addressed as the bishop, or pastor, of the church. This appears from the epistles of Ignatius of Antioch, who suffered martyrdom at Rome about A. D. 110. These epistles, however, are acknowledged to be so corrupted and interpolated, that very little confidence can be placed in testimony derived solely from them, unless corroborated from other sources. In general, we may remark, that the patristic writings were so long in the hands of those who made use of every means, fair and foul, to sustain a hierarchy—not hesitating to corrupt, and even forge, writings for this purpose,—that we may implicitly rely on the genuineness of whatever remains that makes strongly against a hierarchy, while we may justly regard with some suspicion, all that goes very strongly to favor one. Ignatius, as his epistles now stand, exhorts those to whom he writes to render obedience to the *bishop* and *eldership* and *deacons* of their respective

churches; but both his contemporaries, Clement of Rome, and Polycarp of Smyrna, still retain the apostolic style, and speak of the *bishops* and *deacons*, or the *elders and deacons*, indifferently, but never of the three orders. I cannot but consider these two witnesses worthy of more credence than Ignatius, for no suspicion of interpolation or corruption rests on their writings. Clement was the personal friend of the apostle Paul (Phil. 4: 3), and Polycarp was the disciple of the apostle John, and was inducted by him into the eldership of the church at Smyrna. (*Gieselet, Kirchengeschichte*, I. 112. *Coleman on Prim. Ch.* pp. 164–168.)

But let us come to testimony more direct and explicit. Among the writings of Ambrose, bishop of Milan, who died A. D. 397, there is a very ancient commentary on the epistles of Paul, which is generally ascribed to Hilary, a deacon in the church at Rome, who died about A. D. 390. Whether these commentaries be the work of Hilary or not, they are at least as ancient as the days of Ambrose, and in their time were regarded as orthodox and excellent writings. On Eph. 4, 11 (“*and he gave some apostles, and some prophets*”) the writer thus expresses himself: “At first all taught and all baptized on whatever days and times there was occasion; for Philip did not seek a particular time or day, in which he should baptize the eunuch, nor did he interpose a fast.

“In order, therefore, that the people might increase and be multiplied, in the beginning it was allowed to all both to evangelize and baptize, and to expound the Scriptures in the church. But when the church embraced all places, congregations were established, and rulers and certain officers were ordained in the churches, that no one of the clergy (*de clericis, church officers*), who had not been ordained, might presume to exercise a function which he did not know had been intrusted or conceded to him.

“And the church began to be governed by another kind of order and care; because, if all were competent to do the same things, it would be irrational, and seem a vulgar and most mean affair. Hence, therefore, it is that now neither deacons preach among the people, nor clergy nor laity baptize, nor are believers baptized on any day indifferently, unless they are sick. Therefore the things here written by the Apostle, do not in all respects agree with the order which now exists in the church, for these things were written under the original order (*inter primordia*).”

Now if these be the expressions of Hilary, they may be taken with some grains of allowance; for Hilary was rather displeased with the clergy of his times, because, in his view, they were not sufficiently strict in their orthodoxy, nor severe enough against the error of Arius. But whether the statements be Hilary's or not, and with whatever allowance we may receive them, it is certain they must be founded in fact, for they were early published in the writings of that most dignified and strenuous of the ancient bishops, Ambrose of Milan, and gained currency as his. They are not mere opinions, but testimony to matters of fact.

But we have a witness to this point, even less exceptionable, the celebrated Jerome, the author of the vulgate translation of the Bible—the most laborious and most learned man of his age; orthodox above suspicion, and devotedly attached to the hierarchy as in his day established. He was born A. D. 340, and died 420. He had every opportunity of knowing, for he was perfectly familiar with all the book-learning of his time, and had travelled extensively among the most distinguished churches, having spent several years in Rome, Constantinople, Antioch, and Jerusalem. In his commentary on Titus 1: 1, he gives the following explicit and unequivocal testimony to the point under discussion: “Among the ancients, bishops and elders were the same; for the former is the title of dignity, the latter of age.—The elder is the same as the bishop; and before that there arose, by the instigation of the devil, dissensions in religion, and it began to be said among the people, ‘I am of Paul, and I of Apollos, and I of Cephas,’ the churches were governed by a common council of elders. But afterwards, each one imagined that all whom he baptized belonged to himself and not to Christ; then it was decreed in the whole world, that one chosen from among the elders should be appointed over the rest, to whom the care of the whole church should pertain, and the seeds of schism be taken away. Should any one suppose that it is not the sense of Scripture, but our opinion only, that bishop and elder are the same, the one the title of age, the other of office, let him read the words of the Apostle to the Philippians, saying, ‘Paul and Timothy, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons.’ Philippi is a single city of Macedonia; and certainly in a single city there could not be several bishops, as they are now styled; but as they, at that time, called the very same

persons bishops whom they called elders, the Apostle has spoken without distinction of the elders as bishops. Should this matter yet appear doubtful to any one, unless it be proved by additional testimony, it is written in the Acts of the Apostles, that when Paul had come to Miletus, he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of that church, and among other things said to them, ‘*take heed to yourselves, and to all the flock in which the Holy Ghost hath made you bishops.*’ Take particular notice, that calling the *elders* of the single city of Ephesus, he afterwards names the same persons *bishops*.

“These things we say, in order that we may show that, among the ancients, bishops and elders were the same; but gradually (*paulatin*), in order that the plants of dissensions might be rooted up, all the power was conferred on one. Thus, therefore, the elders know that they are subject to him who is appointed over them, by the custom of the church; and so, bishops should know that they are superior to the elders, rather by custom, than by any truth of divine arrangement; and they ought to rule the church in common.”

What shall be said to this? Did not Jerome know? Had he any motive to falsify? Was he ever contradicted? No! For ages the point was conceded; and as late as the year 1091, Pope Urban II. himself made the same statement; and the most eminent Papal canonists admitted it. Says Pope Urban, “The sacred orders, are the deaconate and eldership; we read that the primitive church had these alone; in respect to these only, have we apostolic precept.” The Papal canonist Bernaldus remarks: “When therefore it is read that elders and bishops were the same anciently, it is not to be doubted that they had the same power of binding and loosing, and other things now confined to the bishops. But after the elders were excluded from episcopal dignity, those things began to be unlawful for them which had before been lawful, viz., what ecclesiastical authority had delegated to be performed by Pontiffs alone.” (*Gieseler*, I. 96.)

A popular argument in favor of episcopacy is sometimes urged in terms like the following: “It is acknowledged that the church was episcopal, universally or nearly so, as early as the fourth century; no one pretends to tell when it began to be episcopal; therefore the church was always episcopal.” This argument is much like the following: “It is acknowledged that Gen. Jackson was an old man in 1840: no one pretends

to tell when he began to be old ; therefore Gen. Jackson was always an old man." Now we have credible evidence that Gen. Jackson was once a young man ; we acknowledge that he is now an old man ; we pretend not to say when he first became old, for as old age does not come at once, but steals on a man *by little and little*, the precise time of its entrance it is impossible to define.

Just so we have now exhibited credible evidence that the church in the apostolic and early patristic age was presbyterian. We acknowledge that in the fourth century it was episcopal : we pretend not to say when it became episcopal ; for episcopacy came on, just as old age steals on man, *by little and little*, so that the precise time of its entrance it is impossible to define. And this is exactly what Jerome testifies in the passage already quoted.

So far as testimony can settle any thing, the point I think is clear, that the patristic church, as well as the apostolic, was presbyterially organized.

**WORSHIP.** The earliest account we have of Christian worship, out of the Bible, is by the Roman magistrate, Pliny the younger, who was governor of Pontus and Bithynia under the Emperor Trajan, and died in the year 103. There were many Christians in those provinces, as we learn from the Acts and the Epistles ; and in the time of the persecution they were accused before Pliny, who tried by every method to ascertain their practices, and, according to the barbarous policy of the Romans, put to the torture two female slaves, who were deaconesses in the church. The result of all his inquiries he gives to the emperor in the following terms (*Plin. Epist. Lib. X. Ep. 97*) : "They affirm that the whole of their guilt or error was, that they were accustomed to assemble on a certain day, before light, and to sing a hymn among themselves to Christ as God ; binding themselves by a solemn oath, not to any thing wicked, but never to be guilty of fraud, theft, or adultery ; never to falsify their word ; never to deny a trust when called upon to deliver it up : after which it was their custom to separate, and then to reassemble and to take food together and without harm."

The next witness is Justin Martyr, a convert from Samaria, who was born A. D. 90, and suffered martyrdom at Rome A. D. 164 or 168. Near the close of his "Apology for the Christians," which he presented to the Emperor Antoninus Pius, A. D. 150, he thus describes the Christian worship, as he him-

self witnessed it in Palestine : " On the day which is called Sunday, all, whether dwelling in the towns or villages, hold meetings ; and the memoirs of the Apostles and the writings of the Prophets are read as much as the time will permit. Then the reader closing, the president, in a speech exhorts and incites to an imitation of those excellent examples ; then we all rise and pour forth united prayers ; and when we close our prayer, as was before said, bread is brought forward, and wine and water ; and the president utters prayers and thanksgiving, according to his ability, and the people respond by saying amen (1 Cor. 14 : 16) ; and a distribution and participation of the things blessed takes place to each one present, and to those absent it is sent by the deacons. And those who are prosperous and willing give what they choose, each according to his own pleasure ; and what is collected is deposited with the president : and he carefully relieves the orphans and widows, and those who, from sickness and other causes, are needy, and also those that are in prison, and the strangers that are residing with us, and, in short, all that have need of help. We all commonly hold our assemblies on Sunday, because it is the first day on which God converted the darkness and matter, and framed the world ; and Jesus Christ our Saviour rose the same day from the dead." (*Murdock's Mosheim*, I. p. 135.)

Another testimony respecting the early Christian worship is that of John Chrysostom, the justly celebrated bishop of Constantinople, who was born A. D. 347, and died 407. In his time public worship had assumed great splendor and parade ; but he gives explicit testimony to the simplicity and fervor of the early worship. He gives a minute description of the services of the Lord's day, not differing essentially from that by Justin Martyr.

" Early on Saturday," he says, " it was their practice to accomplish the duties of their households, and fulfil the necessary demands of their business, so that no secular care might disturb the enjoyment of the sacred day, or impede the current of their spiritual affections : and severe indeed was the illness, remote the situation, imperious the cause, that detained any from the scenes and occupations which the first day of the week brought along with it."

Besides the services of the Lord's day, Chrysostom says that, " under a conviction that social meetings held at the close and commencement of every day would prove an admirable preparation for the duties and trials of ordinary life, they adopted the

practice of having morning and evening service daily. The hours were so fixed as not to interfere with the routine of ordinary business. Long before daylight they assembled and opened their meeting with the 63d Psalm (*O God, thou art my God ; early will I seek thee*). They then united in prayer, the burden of which was, a supplication for the divine blessing and favor on the members of the household of faith, and for the extension of the Redeemer's kingdom. This was followed by the reading of a short and appropriate passage of Scripture, after which they sang the 90th Psalm (*Lord, thou hast been our dwelling-place*), so pathetically descriptive of the frailty and uncertainty of life ; and then embodied their sentiments on this subject in a second prayer, in which they expressed the sense of their dependence on the care of the Almighty, and their gratitude for their common preservation during the previous night. Another portion of the divine word being read, the whole service, scarcely if ever exceeding an hour, was brought to a close by singing the 51st Psalm (*Have mercy upon me, O God*), and a corresponding prayer, in both which they implored the divine mercy to pardon the sins of their past life, and the divine grace to help them amid the exigencies of their future course. The evening meeting was conducted on the same plan as that of the morning, only diversified by a set of Psalms and a strain of devotional sentiment appropriate to the change of time and circumstances. It began with the 141st Psalm (*Lord, I cry unto thee*) and a prayer, in which, like the corresponding one in the morning, the divine love was supplicated on the brethren ; an extract from the Gospels or the Epistles was read, and after this, as the evening meeting generally took place about the time of lighting candles, they sang a hymn in which they gave thanks both for natural and spiritual light, and then prayed a second time for a continuance of the bounty and grace of the Lord." (*Coleman's Antq.* pp. 247-50.)

Now, this respect and love for the holy Christian Sabbath, so beautifully described by Chrysostom as the characteristic of the early Christians, this delight in the appropriate duties of the Lord's day, these frequent prayer meetings early in the morning and at night, the constant Bible readings, prayings, singings, and exhortings, all look to me exceedingly like active, earnest, wide-awake new school Presbyterianism, and other Sabbath-keeping, revival-moving forms of Christianity.

That the patristic churches had neither liturgy nor prayer-

book, is manifest from a variety of testimony. "We pray (says Tertullian, *Apol.* c. 30) without a monitor, because from the heart—with the eyes raised toward heaven and the hands spread out." How could they look on a book with their eyes raised toward heaven, or hold a book with their hands spread out? We are told by Eusebius (*Vit. Cons.* IV. 36), that Constantine sent Bibles to the churches for use in public worship, but we have no account of their being furnished with prayer-books. These were the invention of a later age, the fifth and sixth centuries, when the clergy became too ignorant and prayerless to be trusted with the devotions of congregations. (*Coleman on Prim. Church*, p. 337-50.) The patristic worship was simple, unencumbered with ritual observances, Presbyterian.

**THEOLOGY.** During this period there were many loose and visionary theological speculations, and a variety of discussions on different topics in divinity by Origen, Lactantius, Tertullian, Augustine, and others; but no complete system of theology was ever written by an uninspired pen till the monk John of Damascus, in the eighth century, undertook the task. During this period the leading theologian was the Apostle Paul, as he had been during the period immediately preceding, and next in influence to Paul was Augustine.

In the early patristic age, therefore, Presbyterian principles, in respect to organization, worship, and theology, were the prevailing principles.

### *3. The revival of Presbyterianism, after the dark ages, by the Reformers in the sixteenth century.*

The world was not yet prepared to receive the liberty of the gospel. The people at large were ignorant and debased; the monarchical principle every where prevailed in civil governments; no one thought that the people were capable of managing their own governmental affairs; there were few schools, few books, and no printing; and Paganism, though apparently dead, still exerted a great influence over the minds of men. Gradually, therefore, and by steps that can easily be traced in the writings of the fathers themselves, the republicanism of presbyterian organization gave way to the despotism of episcopal authority; the simplicity of primitive worship, to a burdensome mass of ceremonial observances, borrowed from paganism and Judaism, but slightly modified by Christianity; and the severe Pauline theology to a conglomeration of loose, cor-

rupt and corrupting traditions, and shadowy, indefinite speculations, called the theology of the fathers.

Traces of the primitive purity were preserved in little isolated communities during the whole of this dark period; but Papal Rome ruled over Christendom with a rod of iron, and the saints hid themselves in mountains and caves, being destitute, afflicted, tormented, of whom the world was not worthy. The reformers of the sixteenth century made it their great object to restore the Scriptures, the scriptural organization, worship, and theology, to the church. But the power of Rome filled the earth like a huge mountain, a mountain of brass, and seemed to bid defiance to all human effort, and to be impervious even to the Spirit of God himself. The intrepid Luther fixed his fearless eye on this brazen rock, he raised his brawny arm, and with the hammer of God's word gave it a tremendous blow. It shook and rumbled, as if with an earthquake, and threatened to roll its whole weight upon the audacious assailant. But nothing daunted, he gathered his whole strength and smote again, harder than before, and it cracked through and through; then blow followed blow with lightning rapidity, and at every stroke the fragments flew in all directions, and men waked up and wondered what had become of it all; and from that day to this, Popery has been employed in gathering up the pieces, and trying to put them together again.

The task of reconstruction fell to the calmer and clearer, the less poetical and more philosophical, intellect of Calvin. He rediscovered and developed with admirable completeness and clearness the presbyterian organization of the apostolic church; and he finished it and polished it, just as he did his theology, to a systematic niceness and accuracy which the Bible never aimed at. Luther looked on and admired, and heartily wished he could introduce such a system of church organization into Germany; but he found the people were not prepared for it, and were as yet incapable of any system of self-government. "I fear," said he, "that anarchy would come of it, for we Germans are a wild, rough, roaring set, with whom it is scarcely safe to attempt any innovation, even when the most urgent necessity demands it." (*Henry's Calvin*, II. 134.) Very soon, however, the presbyterian organization was introduced into Germany, and even in a more popular form than Calvin had ventured upon in Geneva, and has ever since prevailed throughout the Lutheran church.

The theory of Calvin, like every thing else on which he

speculated, was very perfect ; but there were practical difficulties in the way of carrying it out in the Genevan commonwealth. The elders were appointed by the government, instead of being elected by the people ; so were the pastors ; though on the pastoral appointments, the congregations had a veto : the synods, also, were directly under the control of the magistrates, and the government had very great influence in all cases of discipline. Calvin, in his zeal to prevent clerical domination, brought the church into too close subjection to the state, and in all church courts, as established by him, there were two lay delegates to one clerical. (*Henry's Calvin*, II. pp. 79, 120.) The system of Calvin, essentially, was adopted in Holland ; in France the theory was carried out into practice with great completeness and the most happy results, as it was also in Scotland, from which last country it was transferred to the United States.

The Puritan churches of New England, formed by emigrants from Old England, who belonged to the national church, were presbyterially organized, and with a more rigid adherence to the scriptural model, than even the churches of Geneva or Scotland. There is no church constitution more essentially scriptural than the "Cambridge Platform," as originally published in 1648. Each church had its pastor and teacher, its board of elders and deacons, chosen by the people ; and instead of a permanent, territorial church court, above the church sessions, the practice mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles was adopted, viz., that of calling together an occasional synod or council, when circumstances required it.

Of all these churches the worship is very simple, and according to the Scriptures ; consisting of prayer, singing, reading the word, preaching, administering the ordinances of baptism and the Lord's supper, without pomp or unscriptural or extra-scriptural parade.

The theology of all these churches, too, and of the church of England, as expressed in their authorized creeds, is essentially the same ; biblical, strict, and prevailingly Calvinistic. In regard to the doctrine of the divine decrees, which is supposed to be one of the harshest features of Calvinism, the seventeenth article of the church of England is quite as high as any of the original Calvinistic creeds ; and Lutheranism differs only by admitting the divine prerecognition of faith and good works in the elect, which Calvinism denies.

The Lutheran churches admit rather more ceremony in their

public worship, than the Calvinistic, though the difference is not generally very observable; but unhappily the church of England, in its organization, rites, and modes of worship, has retained so much of the Papal element, as always to nourish within her bosom a large party entirely opposed to the strictly Protestant and Augustinian spirit of her doctrinal articles. These articles were the work of Cranmer and of Parker, but the ritual was in accordance with the taste of Henry and his daughter Elizabeth, whose object seemed to be, as a shrewd writer has observed, ‘to transfer the full cup of Rome to their own hands, and spill as little by the way as possible.’

The orthodox Baptist churches are organized on the principles of the strictest independency; they are strongly anti-prelatical, very simple in their worship, and strictly Calvinistic in their theology. The Wesleyan Methodists, derived directly from the church of England, discard the doctrinal Calvinism of the “thirty-nine articles,” while they retain the monarchical element in their organization; though they very properly and most emphatically disclaim all idea of the divine right of episcopacy. On this point, they sympathize entirely with us, and not at all with Rome or Oxford; and the same is true, to a considerable extent, of a large portion of the Episcopalians. The Baptists, the Methodists, and the evangelical Episcopalians are also with us on another most vital point, viz., the paramount authority of the word of God, in respect to all matters of faith and practice in the Christian church. With the religious people of these three classes, we desire to have no controversy, and need have none; we regard them as our brethren in Christ, and freely concede to them the same liberty which we take for ourselves, of choosing the form of church organization, and the mode of worship, which pleases them best.

After this brief historical sketch, I proceed, as was proposed, to give,

## II. A GENERAL VIEW OF THE ADVANTAGES OF PRESBYTERIAN PRINCIPLES, IN CONTRAST WITH THE PRINCIPLES OF OPPOSING SYSTEMS.

### 1. *Advantages in respect to polity.*

When Christianity was introduced, the despotic form of civil polity was universal, and the church was the only republic then in existence; but the despotic spirit soon found its way into the church, and after the incorporating of the church into the state, by Constantine, the same despotism reigned in both, and the

emperor became head of the church, as he had been before, of the state. Though bishops, for a while, still continued to be elected by popular suffrage, according to primitive usage, as is evident from the election of Ambrose of Milan (as given by Gibbon in the 27th chapter of "The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire,) and various other examples of the same kind; yet no bishop could retain the charge of his flock without the assent or confirmation of the civil power. After a while the government itself began to appoint to the important sees, and when the imperial power fell before the northern barbarians, the Bishop of Rome perpetuated the ecclesiastical despotism which the Emperor of Rome had begun. Hence, in the book of Revelation (chapter xvii.,) Papal Rome is justly represented as being but the resuscitation of old Pagan Rome, in a form somewhat modified.

I do not intend to say that despotism possesses no advantages over freedom, or that liberty of itself is the greatest of human blessings. Intelligence, and true piety are the greatest blessings which man can enjoy; and, in my judgment, an intelligent and truly pious subject is a happier, and a far more dignified man, than an ignorant and ungodly citizen of the freest republic that ever existed. The martyr, in his dungeon, has a far better lot than the maniac at large; and the most oppressed slave is not unfrequently a less miserable man than his master.

But despotism is always wrong in this: it checks and suppresses the growth of the individual man; it is a foe to the development of the species. Freedom puts no constraint on nature; it allows each individual to develope himself according to the powers which God has given him, and thus prevents monstrous inequalities. But despotism does violence to nature; it swells a few into bloated, unhealthful, unfeeling giants, and dwarfs all the rest to sickly pygmies. It is like some process, by which all the trees of our forests might be reduced to shrubs, except now and then an enormous, hollow, cumbering sycamore, attaining to three or four times its natural size. What would be the use of such an arrangement? Is not God's way the best?

Wherever the despotic principle prevails, and in exact proportion to the extent of its prevalence, this is the effect produced: it does violence to nature, it dwarfs the human race. It imparts to a few a disproportionate and unhealthful growth, at the expense of what properly belongs to the many. Look at

the great mass of the Roman Catholic laity, and see what mere children they are in religious knowledge, compared with an equal proportion of the members of any evangelical Protestant church : for example, contrast the Roman Catholics of Ireland, in this respect, with the Presbyterians of Scotland. Man is naturally indolent, and not inclined to exert himself when he finds every thing done to his hand ; and without exertion there is neither growth nor strength. Let all church matters be left to the priesthood, and the lay members will think and care, and of course know, very little respecting them: But when the people are habituated to act and direct, then they will labor and inform themselves. The different effects of ecclesiastical despotism and ecclesiastical freedom are immediately seen on contrasting any two countries where they respectively exist. Compare Austria with Prussia, or Italy with New England, or Mexico with our Middle States, or any prelatic community with any Presbyterian community, and judge from the intellectual condition of the great mass of the people, which has the best effect, in awakening, and invigorating, and informing the mind.

*2. Advantages in respect to ritual and worship.*

A cumbrous and ceremonious ritual overlays the intellectual powers and checks their exercise ; it engenders and perpetuates that kind of superstition which substitutes the means for the end, and offers to God the exercises of the body instead of the emotions of the soul. The same is the effect of a formal liturgy constantly used in all acts of worship. To a liturgy for some parts of public worship, such as is used in many of the evangelical churches of Germany, there can be no reasonable objection ; we can pray from a book, as well as sing from a book ; but the real objection is, to confining *all*, or even the greater part of the devotional exercises of the sanctuary to the words of a book, and leaving no room for the mind to expand itself according to the ever varying exigencies of times and circumstances. Liturgies embracing all the parts of worship owe their origin to an ignorant priesthood, unfit to be intrusted with the devotions of a congregation ; and they were at first enforced on all, by those who regarded uniformity in external rites as of more importance than intelligent devotion. To supply what the ignorance of the clergy would not allow them to furnish, the church of England formerly set forth books of homilies, that is, sermons, which those ignorant preachers were required to read from their pulpits, because they were not capable of making

sermons themselves. (*Coleman on Prim. Ch.*, p. 348-50 and 358.)

Supposing a party should arise in the Episcopal church, who should affirm that ministers have no right to preach sermons of their own composition, but are bound to confine themselves to the reading over and over again of these same homilies to their people, with the occasional supply of a new sermon from the ordinary, or bishop, when circumstances render it absolutely necessary ; what should we think of such a movement ? It would be every whit as rational and as Scriptural as the sentiments of those who affirm that the liturgy must all be read in public worship, and no other prayer ever introduced, except by the authority of the bishop. Why should not the mind and heart of the eloquent and gifted preacher be allowed to exert their powers for the edification of the people in prayer, as well as in preaching ? It is true, I have sometimes heard men pray, when I wished from my heart they had been compelled to use a liturgy, in order that they might be obliged to pray decently ; but I have oftener seen men employ the whole time appropriated to devotion, in reading from a book, when the devotions of the congregation would have been vastly improved, if, instead of the words of the book, they had poured forth the effusions of their own cultivated intellect and pious feeling, in a form adapted to the peculiar circumstances of the assembly. Liturgies may help the weak, but they embarrass the strong. A go-cart may help the child when he is learning to walk, but it would be an odd appendage to a full-grown man, with strong limbs and muscles well developed. If grave and respectable men should choose always to walk the streets in go-carts, we should have no right to object ; but if, not content with this, they should pour contempt on those who chose to make use of their own unincumbered limbs ; if they were even to affirm that it was impossible for a man to walk at all, or at least to walk gracefully, unless he made use of "*our excellent go-cart,*" we might be allowed to smile at what must seem to us such a piece of absurdity.

A liturgy, embracing the Scriptural and more ancient and venerable forms of devotion, partly chanted and partly read, not slavishly imposed, and leaving always ample room for other devotional exercises, might be very useful in public worship, and aid in forming a chastened and correct style of public prayer ; but a long and formal liturgy, absorbing all the time,

is worse than none, and tenfold more productive of abuse, than the worst kind of extempore prayer that ever flowed from pious lips.

The best form of devotion is that which unites variety with simplicity, and fervor with Scriptural chasteness; which leads the soul directly to God, and enables it to lay before his throne the ever varying but constantly recurring joys and thanksgivings, wants and woes, of this our pilgrimage: and this is the theory of Presbyterian worship.

### *3. Advantages in respect to theology.*

The presbyterian theology is a Biblical theology, as opposed to that which is traditional. It takes the Bible as its only infallible standard, and requires each man to examine it with the best means of information in his power, and draw his own doctrinal conclusions from it. In opposition to such views, we are told that this is a very arrogant and self-confident way of theologizing; that the private interpretation of Scripture, for the settlement of doctrinal questions, is not allowable; that we must hear the voice of the church; that the fathers of the first six, or at least of the first three centuries of the Christian era, in the best and purest ages of the church, are for us authoritative interpreters of Scripture, and their statements binding in respect to doctrinal conclusions; that this is the only safe method of theologizing, the only sure path to Scriptural truth.

It seems to me that people who talk in this strain have never read the fathers, or if they have read them, it must have been with an everlasting farewell to all common sense. The fathers were most of them good men, many of them for their times were great men; but they were all of them more or less tinctured with the errors and prejudices of the age in which they lived: many of them had been trained in pagan vices and follies, were converted late in life, and were never any more fit to be teachers of Biblical interpretation or theology than a converted Brahmin or Mohammedan of the present day. As to all matters of fact which fell under their own observation, or which they had other means of knowing, they are perfectly competent to give testimony; but as to their opinions--their speculations--their exegetical and theological views, they are among the weakest and least profitable of Christian writers. A few specimens of exegesis and theology from the best of them, must, I think, set this matter in a light perfectly clear.

Jerome was a man of great talent and industry, the best Biblical scholar of his time, and his translation of the Bible is now held by the Roman Catholic church to be of paramount, and even of divine authority. His contemporary Vigilantius had objected to praying to the saints, upon the ground that they could not be omnipresent, and therefore might fail to hear our prayers. To this Jerome, with great energy, replies (*adv. Vigilantium*), "Wilt thou give laws to God? Wilt thou put chains on the Apostles, that they shall be held in custody till the day of judgment, and not be with their Lord, when it is written concerning them, '*they follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth?*' If the Lamb be every where, then they who are with the Lamb must also be believed to be every where." So then, according to this most eminent Biblical scholar among the fathers, the text, Rev. 14: 4, refers not to a moral obedience to Christ, but to a physical presence with him, and is an unanswerable argument in proof of the omnipresence of all and each one of the saints.

Ambrose, bishop of Milan, was contemporary with Jerome. He was an energetic, dignified man, of great courage and consistency. He debarred the emperor Theodosius the Great from the communion on account of his offences; and made him confess his sins and beg pardon before the whole congregation, like the meanest penitent. He was the spiritual father of that greatest of patristic theologians, Augustine, and the author of that most beautiful piece of church music, the original "*Te Deum Laudamus.*" But how will it do to take Ambrose as an authoritative interpreter of Scripture? He is arguing (*Epist. 42*) that Mary the mother of Jesus was always a virgin, and had no children after the birth of Jesus; and for this purpose he quotes *Ezek. 44: 2*, "This (the east) gate shall be shut, it shall not be opened, and no man shall enter in by it; because the Lord, the God of Israel, hath entered in by it, therefore it shall be shut;" and thus he reasons upon it: "Is not Mary this gate by whom the Redeemer entered this world, concerning whom it is written, the Lord entered in by her, and she shall be shut after his birth?" The learned Jerome chimes in with the same tone of argument and says (*adv. Pelag. Lib. II.*), "Christ alone opened the closed portals of the virgin's womb, which nevertheless remained continually closed. This is the closed eastern gate by which the High Priest went in and out, and nevertheless it was always shut." (*Gieseler I. 508, 516.*) It

has often been matter of wonder to me whether Dr. Pusey, and Bishop Onderdonk, and Bishop Purcell, and other dignified gentlemen of the same class, do really open their mouths and swallow all this, and call it good. These are not select gems ; the fathers are covered *a rostro ad unguem* with diamonds of the same water. It would be easy to multiply quotations of this sort from the greatest and best of them—Origen, Augustine, Chrysostom, the Gregories, Ephrem the Syrian, etc. etc.

But Bishop Brownell of Connecticut, living in the land of the Puritans, is more modest in his claims, and confines his patristic authority to the first two centuries of the Christian era. According to Bishop Brownell's advice, then, we will go back to the second century, and even to the first. Old father Papias had been a disciple of the Apostle John himself, and so far as *tradition* is concerned is as well qualified as any body to be our teacher. Let us give one specimen of his exegesis and theology as presented to us by Irenæus (*adv. Hær.* c. 33), who had himself been personally acquainted with Polycarp and other personal friends of the Apostle John. The testimony of Papias is this : “The elders remember, who had seen John the disciple of the Lord, to have heard from him in what manner the Lord taught concerning those times (that is, the millennium), and said, ‘The days will come in which vines will grow, every vine having ten thousands stalks, and every stalk having ten thousand branches, and every branch having ten thousand stems, and every stem having ten thousand clusters, and every cluster having ten thousand grapes, and every grape, when pressed, will give three hundred gallons (*twenty-five metretus*) of wine : and when any one of the saints takes hold on one cluster, another will cry out, I am a better cluster ; here take me, and by me bless the Lord.’ In like manner every grain of wheat will yield ten thousand stalks, and every stalk will bear ten thousand grains, and every grain will give ten pounds of superfine flour,” *similæ claræ mundæ*. (*Routh's Relig. Sac.*, I. pp. 9, 10.) Alas ! what will the temperance societies do in the millennium ? When every grain of wheat produces ten thousand stalks of straw, when there are to be so many grapes, and every single grape to yield three hundred gallons of wine, the old advertisement will indeed be realized : “*Dead drunk for a penny, and straw for nothing.*”

This is what Irenæus testifies that Papias said, that John said, that the Lord Jesus said ; as fair and as well authenticated an

example of tradition as can be found in all Christian antiquity. Now just compare it with the New Testament, with the gospel of John in particular, and judge for yourselves whether patristic tradition is a safe guide, yea, the only safe guide, in Biblical interpretation. Indeed, one of the most convincing proofs of the divine inspiration and authority of the Bible, is found in the immense falling off in every quality fitted to inspire respect and confidence, which the reader feels in passing from the last books of the New Testament to the first books written by Christians immediately succeeding, and who had themselves been personally acquainted with the Apostles.

But if Papias was a good man, how came he to tell such a story? It is evident that Papias had never been a strong man; and in his old age he was probably weaker than ever, and acquired that species of memory which manifests itself in recollecting things that never happened. From the lusciousness of the picture he draws, I should imagine that he must have told the above story when hospitably entertained by some Christian family, after having eaten a much better dinner than he was usually wont to find, and washing it down with plenty of good mellow wine. I commend father Papias to the special attention of those who interpret Scripture by tradition, and oppose temperance societies.

In reference to the absurdity of attempting to interpret such a book as the New Testament by such traditions as these, I cannot help quoting a characteristic passage from that glorious old Puritan, John Milton. It is found in his tract on Prelatical Episcopacy, and reads as follows: "We do injuriously in thinking to taste better the pure evangelic manna, by seasoning our mouths with the tainted scraps and fragments of an unknown table, and searching among the venomous and polluted rags dropped overworn from the toiling shoulders of time, with these deformedly to quilt and interlace the entire, the spotless and undecaying robe of truth, the daughter, not of time, but of heaven."

But say the traditionists, it is not the individual opinion of the fathers that we rely upon, it is their *unanimous consent*. The great maxim is that so well stated by Vincentius Lirinensis (*Commonit.* ch. 3): "In the Catholic church itself, this principally is to be cared for: that we hold to that which has been believed every where, always, and by all." I ask, then, what that is which "has been believed *every where, always, and by*

*all?"* The fathers differed from each other, on all questions of doctrine and practice quite as much as any equal number of modern evangelical theologians have done, as can easily be proved by extracts from their writings. In what particulars did this so-called unanimous consent ever obtain, except in regard to the simple statements of the oldest creed that has been preserved (*I believe in God the Father Almighty,*) and the divine inspiration and authority of the Scriptures, the very points on which there is now, and always has been, unanimous consent, among all evangelical theologians and Christians? Beyond these points there is no unanimous consent, and to pretend to carry it any further is merely hoodwinking the ignorant.

The fathers themselves were far enough from pretending to unanimity, even on points of doctrine which they considered essential; nor did they admit, even into their thoughts, any of the arrogant claims which have since been urged in their behalf. They uniformly deferred to the authority of Scripture, and acknowledged their own liability to error; and, in truth, when they were at swords-points against each other, they must have known that they could not all be right.

Justin Martyr, Irenæus, and Tertullian, contend most earnestly for an earthly millennium, of physical as well as spiritual delight; which opinion is sharply and even bitterly opposed and ridiculed by Jerome and Gregory Nazianzen, and Dionysius Alexandrinus. Jerome affirmed that the dispute between Peter and Paul mentioned in the epistle to the Galatians, was all a sham, got up by agreement between the two Apostles, for popular effect; at which Augustine gets quite angry, and asserts that Paul rebuked Peter in real and sober earnest. Tertullian and Augustine maintained that the soul was propagated from father to son, like the body; Jerome ridiculed this idea, and asserted that the soul is created by God, and united to the body. The age of Christ, the duration of his ministry, the baptism of heretics, the celebration of Easter, occasioned violent disputes, in which fathers of undoubted orthodoxy fought against fathers equally orthodox. Cyril said that the Holy Ghost proceeded from the Son: Theodoret retorted that this was an impious and blasphemous doctrine. The council of Chalcedon made Constantinople the sovereign episcopate; the council of Sardica decreed the sovereignty to Rome. These are but specimens—

there is no end to their disputes. (*Daille on the Fathers*, II. 112—125.)

In further confirmation of the truth of what we have stated, we make the following quotation from the fathers themselves. Cyril of Jerusalem (*Catech.* 4): “For nothing at all ought to be delivered concerning the divine and holy mysteries of faith, without the Holy Scriptures ; nor ought we to be at all influenced by probabilities or prepared arguments ; nor should you in any wise believe me that say these things to you, unless you take the demonstration of the things that are declared out of the Holy Scriptures. Basil, (*Moral XXVI. 1*) : “Every word and action ought to be confirmed by the testimony of the divinely inspired Scriptures, to the full confirmation of the good and the confusion of the evil.”

Theophilus (*Pasch. 2*) : “It is an instinct of the Devil to follow the sophisms of the human mind, and to think any thing divine without the authority of the Scriptures.”

Ambrose (*Op. Lib. VII. Ep. 47*) : “I take it for a favor when any one that readeth my writings giveth me an account of what doubts he there meeteth with ; first, because I may be deceived even in those things which I know ; moreover, many things escape one, and many, sound differently to different persons.”

Jerome (*con. Helvid.*) : “As we do not deny those things which are written, so we reject those things which are not written.”

(*Com. in Hab.*) : “Thus have I delivered unto you my exposition of this book ; but if any one produce that which is more exact and true, take his exposition rather than mine.”

(*Com. in Zach.*) : “This I have delivered according to the utmost of my poor ability, yet if any man can give a better or a truer account of these things, I shall gladly acquiesce in it.”

Jerome speaks as freely of the other fathers as he does of himself. He says, “Cyprian scarcely touched the Scripture at all ; Victorinus was not able to express his own thoughts ; Lactantius is not so happy in his endeavors to prove our religion, as he is in overthrowing that of others ; Arnobius is very uneven and confused, and too luxurious ; Hilary is too swelling, and incumbered with too long periods.”

Augustine (*Liter. Petil. Lib. III. c. 6*) : “I say not, if we, but if an angel from heaven shall tell us any thing beside that

you have received in the Scriptures, legal and evangelical, let him be accursed."

(*Epist. to Jerome*) : "I owe only to those books of Scripture, which are called canonical, such reverence and honor as to believe steadfastly that none of their authors ever committed any error in their writings. But as for all other writers, how eminent soever they may be, either for sanctity or learning, I read them so as not immediately to conclude that whatever I there find is true, because they have said it, but only because they convince me, either out of the books of the said canonical Scripture, or else by some probable reason that what they say is true." (*Daille on the Fathers*, II. 11-40, and *Cary's Testimony of the Fathers*, pp 108-112.)

Such quotations express the true Presbyterian principle on this subject : they might be multiplied to any extent. They are genuine, and cannot be gainsaid. Now if any one can produce opposing quotations from these same fathers, quotations asserting unanimity or infallibility, or an authority co-ordinate with that of Scripture, such quotations would strengthen my position immeasurably ; for they would show that the fathers had no unanimous consent even with themselves in maintaining either truth or error. But I believe the fathers, fairly interpreted, will not be found to be much at variance on this point ; that there was among them a unanimous consent in respect to their own fallibility, and the infallibility and sufficiency of the canonical Scriptures alone. Their unanimous consent was confined to a very few articles, and these are the articles in regard to which all evangelical Christians of every name have always been agreed ; and in respect to all other things they differed and disputed as much as fallible men have ever done, in any age since.

A theology received on human authority, whether that authority be fathers or councils, popes or bishops—a theology depending for its proof on the assertions of men, and not on the authority of God's word or the force of argument, is tame, spiritless, and of very little use. A living, authoritative expounder of God's will, whose words were all to be received as oracles, and who was to infuse religious knowledge into us without study or responsibility of our own, would be a curse instead of a blessing. It would affect us morally and mentally, as it would physically, if God were to appoint a set of men to bring all our food to our mouths, and put all our clothing upon our bodies, without forethought or labor of our own. Either

arrangement would soon reduce us to a state of idiocy ; for without the necessity of exercise the powers are never developed. Such arrangements are contrary to the whole analogy of God's dealings with man ; they are hostile to all human improvement. The Creator of man has never made any such arrangements ; they are all the fictions of would-be tyrants, laboring to chain down the souls which God has made for freedom. It is easy for a man to believe passively the statements of another, but such a belief is not worth the having ; it does the soul no good. The injunction, *Prove all things, hold fast that which is good*, is not addressed to bishops and ecclesiastics merely, but to all Christians of every rank, who are all and equally kings and priests unto God, and under equal responsibilities and obligations to use their own powers and opportunities to investigate truth for themselves ; and to this responsibility they will all be holden at the great day of judgment, and no man can surrender his conscience to the keeping of his priest without imminent peril to his soul. The very labor necessary to investigate the Bible and examine the other sources of knowledge which God has given us, is as valuable to us as the truth itself which is obtained by it ; and the last is of but little use without the first. The exercise which the laboring man gets is as important to him as his wages, and without it he would have neither strength nor health. What but lifting the hammer gives such a muscle to the blacksmith's arm ? and what but the habit of reading the Bible for himself, makes the hated Presbyterian peasant so different a being from the Italian Romanist of the same class ? To secure uniformity in faith by taking away a man's power or right to investigate truth, is like preventing a soldier's running away in battle by cutting off his legs. It is true he can no longer retreat, but neither can he advance ; if he has lost the power to be a deserter, he has at the same time lost the power to be a soldier.

While man is limited in knowledge and imperfect in holiness, wherever there is freedom of investigation, there will be difference of opinion and some bitterness of controversy ; and perfect uniformity of opinion and entire quietness in the public mind, is to be secured only by an entire sacrifice of all the higher qualities of intellect and heart. In the papal church itself, wherever thought has been permitted, there has always been controversy ; and controversy has been suppressed only when it began to encroach on the ecclesiastical power. *Think*

*as you please, but only hear the church*, has always been the language of ecclesiastical despotism, to the mind disposed to think for itself; and in the prelatic vocabulary, *church* is synonymous with *hierarchy*. Yet papists vaunt their uniformity and reproach us with our divisions, as if this were an unanswerable argument in their favor, and against us. As well might the graveyard boast its own quiet, and reproach the busy mart with its bustle and noise. On all the great doctrines of the gospel there is essential unanimity among evangelical Protestants of every name; and any unanimity beyond this in the papal or prelatic church, is produced by intellectual palsy or death. The security which the rigid papist enjoys against sectarianism, is very much like the security which the man half dead with paralysis has against convulsions.

Freedom in religion, as well as in other matters, has its responsibilities and dangers, its trials and inconveniences; but yet without freedom there is no life. The living man must sometimes feel pain; it is the dead only who never smart. The celibate priest, by the efforts of his own ingenuity, makes an automaton, and by pressing its springs, he can cause it to move a little, and utter a few specified words which it was formed to utter. The married minister, according to God's ordinance, begets a living child, endued with spontaneity, sense, and reason. "Pshaw," says the priest, "your child cries, it is noisy, it makes trouble, it gets sick, it is exposed to danger, it gives you great anxiety; but here, see my child, that does not cry, is never noisy, makes but little trouble, is never sick, seldom runs into danger, gives me almost no anxiety." "All true," replies the minister; "still I am well contented to be the father of a living immortal man, if he does cost me some anxiety and labor, rather than the maker of a mere machine, however ingenious or amusing it may be." Here is just the difference between the two systems.

The Presbyterian theology is also strict and Augustinian, or rather I would say, Pauline, in opposition to loose and Pelagian views. There may be much of religious emotion and many lovely traits of character, even under the influence of an indefinite or Pelagian theology; but a doctrinal tendency of this kind is always injurious to the solidity and firmness of the Christian character. Though much is sometimes said, theoretically, of the necessarily immoral tendency of the strict Presbyterian theology, yet, in practice, it has always been found that, in com-

munities where this rigid theology prevails, there the morality is uniformly more strict and pure than in communities of an opposite theological tendency.

I am now to give, according to the plan indicated,

**III. SOME SPECIAL REASONS WHY THESE PRINCIPLES OF PRESBYTERIANISM SHOULD BE INSISTED UPON AND PROPAGATED AT THE PRESENT TIME, AND IN THIS COUNTRY.**

**1. These principles are best adapted to the present political condition and tendencies of our country.**

Our political institutions are democratic, and the tendencies are to a continued increase of the democratic development. This tendency must go on, for it is the tendency of the age, and not of an isolated nation. The old world is much faster verging towards democracy than the new world is towards monarchy. The church, in all countries, is the great educational seminary for the people at large; and as they are educated in the church, so will they act in the state. All the democratic elements in the British constitution, all the republicanism now in existence, owes its origin to a republican church organization; and had there been *no church without a bishop*, there would at this day have been *no state without a king*. Says that bitter hater of the Puritans and Presbyterians, David Hume, "The precious spark of liberty had been kindled and was preserved by the Puritans, \* \* and \* \* to this sect \* \* \* the English owe the whole freedom of their constitution." And again, "The noble principles of liberty took root, and, spreading themselves under the shelter of puritanical absurdities, became fashionable among the people." (*Hist. of England*, V. 183, 469.)

Yet some strangely think, at least they affect to think, for they actually say it, that a monarchical church organization, so far from being unfavorable to civil liberty, actually promotes it, gives people a relish for it, and an ability to secure it. By what strange process of reasoning they arrive at such a conclusion, I cannot tell; but they remind me of the reasoning of an old gentleman who was lamenting the fact, that all his sons became drunkards. "Why they should get into such a way," said he, "of going to the tavern and drinking and getting drunk, I cannot see; for I never kept them from spirits when they were young: I always bought my rum by the barrel and let them help themselves whenever they wanted. I am sure if they are drunkards it is not my fault." The old gentleman seemed

very sincerely to entertain the idea, that keeping children from rum was the very way to make them drunkards, and giving it to them was the way to make them sober ; and it must be by some analogous process of reasoning, that some people persuade themselves that a despotic church is favorable to a republican state. I know that some men may be sincere and hearty republicans, notwithstanding their connexion with a despotic church, as some men may be temperate notwithstanding a childhood accustomed to alcohol ; but that there is any essential tendency in the early use of alcohol to make men temperate, or in church despotism to make them freemen, is what I have never yet been able to see. So far as abstract reasoning or the observation of facts may go to justify a conclusion, it is directly the reverse of that which those people assume.

Again, popular education, the education of the masses, is essential to the existence of republics ; and where has there ever been provision made, under prelatic rule, for this kind of education ? Prelacy I know has made magnificent endowments for the higher branches of education, the education of the few ; but search the annals of education through and through, and where will you find a liberal system of common schools which did not originate with a popular church organization ? Presbyterian Scotland, Congregational New England, and Lutheran Germany, have been the great introducers and sustainers of common-school instruction, both in the old world and the new ; and in all those countries, the introduction of the common-school system immediately followed the presbyterian church organization. The reason is obvious : prelatic despotism seeks to control by direct authority, by a sacerdotal caste ; but presbyterian parity depends on the power of argument and persuasive reasonings. To the efficiency of the latter, intelligence is essential ; to that of the former, it is generally a most formidable obstacle. The education of our people, therefore, to the views and habits essential to the maintenance of republican institutions, both in the common school and out of it, depends mainly on the churches of our land which are presbyterianly or independently organized. I do not say that individuals of other organizations will not take deep interest in this matter and effect great good ; but I say the main dependence, the chief reliance, must be on the churches which are democratically organized.

2. *These principles are best adapted to the physical condition and necessities of our country.*

To bring our soil under cultivation, to civilize our country, to rear within it the structure of society on a solid and permanent foundation, we need a sturdy, self-relying, unflinching yeomanry, intelligent and of strict morality, with heads to plan and hands to execute the most arduous labors; and this is just the sort of population which a Presbyterian church is likely to produce, and which it always has produced. Look into all the branches of the Presbyterian household, and these are always the characteristics of her sons. If some other forms of religion may boast of more elegance, refinement, and taste; if others still are wont to exhibit more emotion, or the flame of a more showy zeal; none can show greater knowledge of the useful, more skill in the adapting of means to ends, a more determined perseverance, a more patient continuance in well-doing, an energy more unflagging, a zeal more lasting, a courage more steady, an intelligence more enlightened, a morality more strict, a success more certain.

The activity and enterprise, the thirst and shrewdness, the intelligence and good morals, of the Scotch and the Yankees, have passed into a proverb: none are more cordially welcomed than they, into any new place which is to be built up by industry and good management; and for very many of their most valuable qualities they are obviously indebted to the education which they have received from their ecclesiastical institutions, their churches and their common schools, their Bibles and their psalm-books. What kind of a civilization would have existed in this new world without them? if the Spanish or French, who first got footing here, had succeeded in holding on upon the soil? Mexico and South America now graphically portray the civilization that might be expected here, if Popery and Prelacy, instead of Presbyterianism and Independency, had had the training of our infant institutions.

The same causes that made these churches useful at first render their services necessary still. The same causes that have made them such a blessing to the nation already, would make the same principles which actuated and informed them, still more generally useful if more widely diffused. These are the principles to make the wilderness blossom as the rose, and the desert and the solitary place to be glad. Having tried their efficacy, having witnessed their fruits, having already reaped from them an abundant harvest of good, we trust our countrymen will not turn from them to try other and opposing prin-

ples, the operation of which has already turned many a fruitful field into a desert, but seldom, as yet, a desert into a fruitful field.

*3. These principles are best adapted to the moral state and wants of our country.*

No religion can be efficacious with us, unless it can make its appeals to the understanding, and through the understanding address itself to the emotions and the conscience. No state authority here enforces ecclesiastical decrees; there is no veneration for ancient usages that can stand in the place of an enlightened and tender conscience. A religion of the imagination, or a religion of emotion merely, cannot exert a permanent influence amid institutions such as ours. All the religion of high church prelacy, whether papal or Puseyite, is a religion of the imagination only. Its efficacy consists in a mysterious power communicated to the sacraments in consequence of their being administered by certain persons who have been ordained in a certain line of succession. Now there is no shadow of a proof of the communication or even of the existence of any such power. It makes no manifestation of its presence in those who claim it. The influence of the doctrines and precepts of the New Testament is not at all increased by it, in those who are said to receive it; nay, a reliance upon it seems uniformly to have a tendency to weaken this influence. According to all the sources of evidence to which we can have access, Isaac Watts and David Brainard were as good men and as useful ministers as they could have been if all the bishops of the church of England had laid their hands on their heads; and the celebrated Talleyrand was not in the least like Jesus Christ, or even like Paul or Peter, though he himself wore a mitre, and was said to be charged with this mysterious power as a Leyden jar is charged with electricity.

What has the understanding to do with a system which supposes that baptism or the Lord's Supper, when administered by Talleyrand, secures, at least for the time, the favor of God and the salvation of the soul; but when administered by Payson, are in the sight of God of no avail whatever? a theory which makes Jonathan Swift a true minister of Jesus Christ and Jonathan Edwards an intruder and an impostor? What is this mysterious power that produces no effect appreciable by any of the powers of perception which God has given us? Which cannot be known by the intellect nor appreciated by the senses, which

can neither be seen, nor heard, nor tasted, nor smelled, nor touched, and which produces no effects that can ever be witnessed by a human being? He that has it is not conscious of possessing it; he that receives it knows nothing of the matter; it may be lost or found, and the owner be equally unconscious of the loss or the acquisition.

A power which exhibits no evidence of its existence, except the mere assertion of a class of men interested to perpetuate a delusion, can have no strong hold on a people like ours. Some express declaration of God's word, or some obvious miracle, must attest the existence of such a power before it can generally be believed; and as we have long waited in vain to witness such declarations or such a miracle, we pronounce the whole thing a *humbug*. A religion resting only on the imagination requires physical power for its support; and such aid it always seeks. Prelacy, full grown, always resorts to persecution; it can rely on nothing else. And where the civil arm is beyond its reach, it next resorts to the money power, and seeks to intrench itself by holding every particle of church property within the sacerdotal grasp. But the republicanism of the New Testament seeks no such aids. Its property is cheerfully intrusted with the laity, and it asks nothing of Cæsar but to be let alone.

Nor will a religion of mere emotion hold our people. A system producing great revivals, which sweep two hundred or three hundred into the church in two or three weeks, of whom in less than a year there are scarcely twenty or thirty remaining, all the rest returning like dogs to their vomit, being ten-fold more the children of hell than before,—a system which produces such results has something in it radically defective; its defects are clearly perceptible to every sane mind, and weaken the public confidence in its efficacy.

Nor will a religion without emotion succeed any better than a religion which is all emotion. It fails to meet the soul in its most pressing necessities, and compels it to look elsewhere for relief. Neither dead orthodoxy nor self-conceited rationalism can hold the soul that has once become alive to its own wants: rather than be held in bondage by them it will rush to the wildest fanaticism; and indeed, dead orthodoxy first, and rationalism in the second place, are the two great feeders of all religious partisans.

The religion which our country needs is one which fully re-

cognizes all the spiritual wants of man and furnishes a supply for them. It is one which convinces the understanding before it appeals to the feelings—which rests for its support on the convictions of the mind, and the decisions of an enlightened conscience—which recognizes no authoritative voice but the voice of God, and whose only ultimate appeal is the Bible, the whole Bible, and nothing but the Bible, in its original shape, in the languages in which God first gave it to man—which believes neither in inspired translations, nor inspired traditions, nor inspired creeds or catechisms, or confessions of faith—and which therefore requires all its religious teachers to understand the original languages of the Bible, and to make the original Scriptures their only authoritative standard in all matters of faith and practice.

Such is the theory of all the churches presbyterially organized; it is the true theory—the only true theory, and needs but to be put in practice to cause its life-giving and soul-saving efficacy to be known and read of all men.

Brethren, bishops, elders, and members of the Constitutional Presbyterian Church, as I believe that Presbyterianism, as I have explained the term, is the primitive and best form of Christianity, so I believe that our form of Presbyterianism is, for our circumstances, the best form. If I did not believe this, I would not remain in your communion a day. If I knew any other church among us nearer to the mind of Christ, I would at once, as I value the salvation of your soul and the souls of others, seek connexion with it. If then we have the Christian religion in its purity, it remains for us to show it in our lives, and that our lives be devoted to its advancement.

Two things principally have corrupted our purity and hindered our efficiency as a church. In the old world orthodox churches have generally been corrupted by entangling alliances with the state, which require them to connive at iniquity in certain cases; and in our own country there is a civil institution, which has well nigh sucked out the life's blood of the church, and introduced into its veins a vicious, festering, loathsome circulation, that has broke out in sores and blotches all over the surface. Who that looks at the matter with a common sense view can doubt or hesitate to say that American slavery, as it actually exists in theory and practice, is the most fruitful source of evil, social, physical, and moral, which exists in the United

States ? that it lies at the foundation of almost all our embarrassments and disgraces, political, pecuniary, and religious ?

Yet, because influential men are making money by it ; because interesting and respectable people are involved in it and find it inconvenient to get rid of it ; because we have slaveholding members, slave-holding elders, and even slave-holding bishops, the church has been required to overlook this enormity, to be silent respecting its evils, to get along with it as quietly and easily as she can ; and some of her ministers even argue that it is not inconsistent with a Bible Christianity. This course has deadened the moral sense of a large portion of the church, and driven a small part into the extravagancies of a wild and reckless fanaticism. A portion of the body it has reduced to death and rottenness, and another portion it has driven into convulsion-fits. As well might you introduce the virus of small pox into the circulation of the human body, and expect the man still to have strong, robust limbs, a comely, wholesome face, as allow the virus of slavery to remain unmediated in the church, and still expect its moral influence to be healthful and beautifying. There is no blinking this thing out of sight. It must be met calmly, considerately, and with a Christian spirit. We would oppose every rash, ill-advised, or harsh measure ; we would not immediately amputate a limb, because it has received a wound, nor would we refuse to dress the wound at all, and allow it to gangrene and mortify, because touching it, however tenderly, makes it smart. Boldly yet humanely would we apply the proper remedies, and give them ample time to prove their efficacy. We are told that our church came together, from the north and the south, on the principles of compromise, and this compact of compromise must never be violated. Look at the action of our General Assembly on slavery, during the first twenty-five years of the existence of the General Assembly, when this compromise must have been made, if it was ever made, and abide by the declarations then given out as the solemn decisions of the church north and south on this subject, and we have nothing more to ask. (See Assembly's Digest).

The other cause that has corrupted our purity and hindered our efficiency, is the unhappy controversy and division which we have experienced. There was never any need of this division. The great body of the church, in both branches, was and still remains sound and right. There were some extra-

gant spirits on both sides, and from them alone the agitation and mischief originated. On the one hand there were a few stiff and bigoted antinomians, and on the other a few loose and hot-headed revivalists; and some of the most zealous and efficient of the former class were apostates fresh from the latter. It was those who had themselves professed to be converted over some half dozen times within a half a dozen years, that accused their brethren of Pelagianism ; it was those who had themselves clapped their hands and shouted glory at Methodist meetings, that accused their brethren of getting up Methodist revivals ; it was those who themselves violated every rule of Presbyterian discipline by their revolutionary measures, that accused their brethren of a neglect of Presbyterian order. But these things are now past. They need no longer hinder our efforts. The great body of Christians, in both branches, feel right toward each other—the great body of ministers, in both branches, are sound, self-denying, right-minded men. But bigots and fanatics will be bigots and fanatics still : for *though you bray a fool with a pestle in a mortar among wheat, yet will not his folly depart from him—and a fool is wiser in his own conceit, than seven men that can render a reason.*

Says Jesus Christ, the only head of the church whom we acknowledge—the *kingdom of God cometh not with outward show, and, my kingdom is not of this world.* What then is the church ? Just what the reformer, John Huss, said it is: *totus numerus predestinorum—the whole number of the elect—that is the church.* Where is the church ? Just where the father Irenæus said it is: *ubi Spiritus Dei, ibi est ecclesia—et ubi ecclesia ibi est Spiritus Dei, where the Spirit of God is, there is the church,—and where the church is, there is the Spirit of God.* Out of this church there is indeed no salvation, and in it there is no damnation ; and the connexion with this church is not that of a dead joist morticed and tenoned into a dead beam, but that of the living branch, growing out of the living vine, and bearing fruit constantly, abundantly. Much fruit,—much fruit is the only test of membership here ; for, says our Saviour, *Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit ; so shall ye be my disciples.*

## ARTICLE II.

## EVIDENCE FROM NATURE FOR THE IMMORTALITY OF THE SOUL.

By Rev. T. M. Post, Professor in Illinois College, Jacksonville, Ill.

Is the soul immortal? By soul we mean that within man, whatever it is, which *thinks and feels*, which is susceptible of reason, emotion, and conscience. Will it continue to think and feel FOREVER? We raise no question of materialism or immaterialism. That question we think has no relevancy to the point at issue.

We shall premise here that, as far as our reasoning can reach, this question is equivalent to that of *another life*. The anxious inquiry of the man of Uz, "If a man die, shall he live again?" involves the whole. We know of nothing deadlier than death. If the soul passes unextinguished through what we call death, we can imagine no more terrible foe beyond, likely to annihilate it. The question then stands, What evidence does nature furnish that that which now thinks, reasons, and feels within us, will continue to do so beyond what we call death? that is, What are the natural grounds of our hope of a future life?

In consequence of the wrong direction usually given to this argument, and the resulting unsatisfactoriness, it has, we apprehend, passed into an undeserved and injurious neglect. Relying on the explicit declaration of Christianity for the immortality of the soul, the Church has come to disregard, and even to decry, the testimony of Nature as ambiguous, or no longer needed, and seems to have thought, that to call her in as a witness enfeebled the argument and dishonored Revelation. In so doing, we think wrong has been done to the voice of Nature, and the harmony between natural and revealed religion been broken; the authority of Revelation itself has suffered in consequence, and the question been put in an attitude, which the spirit of our age will not permit it long to occupy, without consequences still more disastrous to religious faith. There are, we think then, important reasons for taking up the argument

from Nature at this time, not because we are left to it, and, it failing, our hope of immortality fails, but because,

First, it can be shown that Nature clearly conspires with Revelation; and it is grateful to the human mind to find these two witnesses unequivocally attesting the same mighty truth, while it cannot fail to distress and embarrass it, to find a break in the general correspondency between the natural and revealed systems of God, on a doctrine of such vast moment and universal reach.

And secondly, the *necessity of a Revelation* for the establishing of this doctrine, will appear from the grounds on which all valid arguments from nature, on this subject, must rest. All such argument being based, as we shall attempt to show, on a right idea of God, manifests the necessity of a new Revelation of Him in a world where that idea has been clouded, and will inspire us with additional gratitude to Christ as both the revealer of God, and the bringer of "Life and Immortality to light."

Again, it is important to put this argument in a right position, because it is the only ground on which you can meet the deniers of Revelation; and though little hope may be entertained that they will be brought to soundness of mind by any argument of this kind, if they reject the evidence of Revelation, still it may prepare them to receive that more favorably—to find nature attesting, through the essential laws of the human mind, its sublime, solemn, and unextinguishable prophecy of that great verity which the Bible explicitly reveals. Skeptic madness may pause when it finds that, even the Bible being thrown away, still the same retributive, everlasting destiny awaits it, treasured up in its moral immortality.

Again, in the conduct of this argument, as it seems to us, issue has almost universally been joined on wrong ground, and in consequence, in the first place, all conclusions have been marked by a painful hesitancy, till the argument from Nature seems almost to have been tacitly yielded. Nature, though interrogated for ages by the human soul of its immortality, in an agony of interest, seemed dark as a sybil. We think it was because she required right questioning, and that she ought, if possible, to be vindicated from the charge of ambiguity. Yielding to this charge, as it seems to us, cannot fail to be disastrous to all religious belief. For, that a fact so all-commanding, and possessing necessarily such universal relations to the present life, should not, like other parts of the revealed system, be pre-

indicated by Nature, but that on it she should mumble darkly in delphic enigmas, would go far to stagger faith in Revelation itself, and to drive the mind to universal skepticism. And in the second place, the grounds on which this argument has commonly been made to rest, have been such as to put Christianity and free science in a position of seeming antagonism to each other, a position always pernicious to both. Revelation clearly teaching the immortality of the soul, and this doctrine being supposed necessarily to rest on certain theories of the *substance of the soul*, all attacks or seeming attacks on those *theories* have been resisted and resented as assaults on Revelation itself. Thus phrenology and cognate speculations with reference to the connexion between the mental action and cerebral organization are often impugned, not on account of intrinsic absurdity or unprovableness, but as tending to *materialize mind*. Such a mode of opposing any scientific speculation is injurious both to science and religion—to science, as it tends to overawe, not convince, the human mind, and to put it out of the true course of inquiry into truth or falsehood—and to Revelation, because it exhibits her as an obstacle to free inquiry, and liable to be brought in conflict with the philosophy of natural facts, and exposed to a triumph of her enemies over her, at every new fact which, in their view, makes against the immateriality of the soul.

It was thus, in a great measure, the French Naturalists and Encyclopediasts of the last age intrenched infidelity, as they thought, in natural science, and it is for this reason, we apprehend, that so many skeptics are found among the medical men of the present day. Now we are no materialist, but we think it unfortunate that the advocates of the immortality of the soul have felt compelled to identify their cause with opposition to materialism. We think so, because we believe there is no necessary relevancy between the two, and it has been an attempt to prove a more evident by a less, and the mind has been diverted from the true course of argument to one that must be ever unsatisfactory.

Let us here premise, then, certain arguments which we do not rely on, but which are commonly urged. We discard all reasonings from the *physics* of the soul, i. e. *inferences from its supposed substance and its natural phenomena*. It is common to argue, from these sources, a natural and necessary immortality. The usual course of reasoning has been, "The soul

is indivisible, it cannot therefore be dissolved. But what we call death is a dissolution; the soul therefore cannot die; it is necessarily immortal." Or, "The soul is immaterial, and therefore cannot be annihilated by the dissolution of a material body." Or, "The soul is of the nature of God—something divine, and therefore cannot perish," etc. Now it will be perceived, these are merely forms of begging the question by the assumptions in the premises. They are reasoning from theories incapable of proof, and from unwarrantable analogies, attempted between the death of the body and the soul, which may amuse, but can mean nothing.

But it was on grounds of this kind, though they hint at others, that all the ancient philosophers except Socrates made issue. He alone, here as every where else, standing out prominent from the ancient world, based his argument mainly on *moral*, not physical, grounds. The different schools assert or deny the immortality of the soul, according to their assumed theories of the substance or physical nature of the soul. The Epicurean assumed it to be a congeries of atoms, and therefore dissoluble and mortal. The Pythagorean that it was a monad, a numeric unity, and therefore incapable of dissolution and death. The Stoic assumed it to be of a substance partly perishable, but that a part would be absorbed with the essence of God. The Peripatetic assumed that it was an emanation from God, and would return to him after death. The moderns, to a great extent, have done little more than present different forms of the physical argument. Different theories of the substance of the soul have been contested as if involving in them its life and death.

Now it is evident that all reasoning of this kind must be forever barren—no uniform decision has been, or can be, rendered on premises like these, but it must vary with the caprice of the reasoner in assuming. The issues are *impracticable* or *irrelevant*—impracticable, because they are on points we can never determine. We do not know the substance of the soul—pursue it as far we please, until it hides in the subtlest forms of matter, still we only detect its agents and instrumentalities. We can no more confound thought and conscience with the phenomena of electricity and galvanism, than we can with bones and muscles. The soul still ever eludes our analysis.

Again, the issue is irrelevant, because the substance of the soul does not decide its immortality. Materiality does not preclude, or immateriality ensure it. The question still rests with

God, who in the one case will not be compelled, nor in the other forbidden, to make it immortal at His pleasure. The necessary immortality of a created being is an absurdity. God alone hath it, and all other beings are, or are not, as He wills. Nor can we regard physical phenomena occurring just before death, as any experimental evidence of the state of the soul beyond it. For, in the first place, these phenomena are variable, and inferences from them, if warrantable, must be conflicting. If in some cases the soul seems to flash out triumphant over corporeal dissolution, in others it seems to die even before the body. Again, the *final result is in all cases uniform*—all mental manifestation perishes. However superior the soul may seem for a time over the mortal agony—though in full-orbed brightness it seems to sink far into the death-shade—it does at last, in all cases, to mortal seeming go out, and all that remains to us of the man lies before us a cold, dark, insensate, mindless clod. The soul may have struggled mightily, but death in every instance has been too strong for it.

The argument from *physical phenomena*—I use the term “physical” here as opposed to *moral*, and as relating to *substance* and *natural life*—can only rebut adverse presumptions, attempted to be drawn from the same source. To such presumptions it may be replied, “The soul *may* have such a substance as to be indestructible by death;” “it retains its vitality through a part of the dissolution of the body, it *may* survive the whole.” There we must stop.

We can then bring no positive testimony from experience; for apart from Revelation we have none. The question is of “that undiscovered country from whose bourne no traveller returns.” Shutting the Bible, and discarding tales of spiritual visitation which, true or false, are incapable of proof to mankind at large, the world of death is without an echo. For ages hope and fear and love have waited listening at the head of the dark valley, but no whisper has come from its silent confines.

We cannot, then, reach the height of this question by *physical reasoning* in any form. Its scope is necessarily limited by the physical and sensible world—on the brink of this its walk stops at once and forever—there its line of cause and sequence breaks off—beyond, it looks down upon clueless chaos and old night. To span the world-wide chasm between the visible and invisible world, philosophy must lay hold of relations which must stretch unbroken through every world—inperishable as Being itself: its chain of necessity must be a moral one.

Driven from all arguments for the necessary or natural immortality of the soul, our only recourse is to Him who alone hath immortality. WE GROUND THE WHOLE ARGUMENT IN GOD. That "in Him we live, move, and have being," will be as true of us millions of ages hence, as at this moment. Immortality is the gift of God, immortally given. The whole question then is, What is God's will? In His breast alone rests the mighty secret. Can we extract it thence by the key of Nature? This is the problem now to be solved. We believe we can, and that the immortality of the soul can be established to a moral certainty from a principle universally and necessarily admitted in all reasoning—the truthfulness of our intellectual and moral intuitions—that it can be shown that, to deny the immortality of the soul, implies the denial of primary beliefs and feelings, which however we may theorize, we are compelled to act on, and the contradiction of which makes our whole nature and being a falsehood, and loses us the present as well as the future life.

What then does nature testify of the will of God with regard to the destiny of the human soul? But before entering on this question, it may be urged, as we are reasoning apart from Revelation, we have no right to assume the existence of a God and his ability to eternize the existence of the soul, and must prove these before asking for his will. We are not reasoning with Atheists, nor are we here designing to enter on a treatise of Natural Theology; and we should feel warranted in assuming the existence, power, benevolence, and justice of God. But to avoid all cavil, we will embrace these among things to be proven, and in proof of all these points, as well as of God's will in regard to the destiny of the soul, we shall appeal to no testimony of third persons, nor to facts nor inferences requiring proof, but directly to the consciousness of the soul itself as it regards its own nature, and to its immediate, irresistible inferences, which that nature compels it to make from itself to its God.

First, then, the mind, as soon as it comes to reflect, intuitively infers the existence of God from its own. "I am, I was not; my own being is an effect which, by the very constitution of my nature, refers me to an adequate cause—a Creator; and the Power that has created, and thus far sustained my being, I cannot but regard as able to perpetuate it. Thus I am constrained to infer that God is, and is able, if He wills, to make me live hereafter as he has done here."

His will, then, how shall we learn that? No revelation, no direct voice or vision, by the conditions of the question, may we look for. Still God does speak in the ear of nature—indeed he must primarily do so, or revelation would have no significance or interpretation. God speaks by the constitution of the nature he has given us—by the laws of intellectual and moral belief he has ordained. Whatever the constitution of our minds irresistibly leads us to believe, has the warrant of the God who has ordained it thus to speak, that it is true, and what we in like manner are compelled to expect, has the testimony of our Maker that it shall be. What he thus utters could not have his veracity pledged more irrevocably, if it were written by lightnings on the sky, or pealed forth in the thunders of heaven. But we contend that in this way he has promised a future life to the soul of man, through the revelation of himself to the human consciousness, with attributes that compel us to look for a world beyond the present. For the soul thus naturally continues the argument from its own consciousness: "As God, through the laws of belief he has established within me, assures me through my own existence of his being and power, so by the same constitution of my nature which compels me to reason from myself to my God—from the made to the Maker—he tells me he is reasonable and just, and benevolent and true; and all these attributes necessitate the soul's immortality, or, rather, their revelation to me is God's declaration of his will to this effect; for that he has so made me that I naturally and irresistibly reason from the thing created to the Creator, from myself to my Maker, shows that it was his *intention* I should so reason, and this binds his veracity to the conclusions thus reached. I am so made, I cannot help regarding the implanter of my reason as himself reasonable; I cannot conceive he should have created in me a faculty which would condemn himself. I cannot help regarding the Author of my conscience as himself just, and feeling that he who has made me to approve benevolence and condemn malevolence, must himself be benevolent. It seems absurd to me to suppose he would have established in the minds he has created, laws of moral feeling that would lead them to disapprove and abhor himself. As I am led naturally to ask, 'He that formed the eye, shall he not see? he that planted the ear shall he not hear? he that teacheth man knowledge, shall not he know?' so my nature, constituted by

God, compels me to feel that the God of reason is reasonable—the God of the conscience is just—the God of my moral nature must be love."

This is a spontaneous feeling of the human mind when the idea of God its *Maker* is presented. Respecting a God outward and foreign to itself—God the architect and wielder of external nature and the arbiter of external destinies—it may doubt and speculate as to his character; but about God its *author*, the *ordainer of conscience, and fountain of its moral nature*, never.

A signal proof that this declaration for God is an original and inextinguishable utterance of the human soul, is found in the midst of ages and nations that have long perverted the original idea of God. The Greek and the Roman, while in popular fable ascribing all manner of injustice to their gods, still appealed to them by prayer and oath as avengers of injustice. Themselves perjured, adulterers, murderers, are still invoked as vindicators of purity and faith, and punishers of the very crimes of which they were fabled to be guilty. What is this but a proof that so strong are the convictions, that God is just and good, wrought into the soul of man, that ages of false education, and false worship, and false philosophy, and of guilty passion and practice, could not stifle them? Now a supposition that falsifies this original and inextinguishable declaration of the human soul conflicts with a first principle of reasoning; it violates a universal and irresistible conviction of the human mind. It then runs into a moral absurdity, which informs us as indubitably as a mathematical, that the course of our reasoning is false. But the denial of the soul's immortality must involve the denial of the attributes of reasonableness, and justice, and benevolence of the Deity, and in so doing contradict the primary laws of belief and the moral intuitions of the human soul. It must therefore be absurd and false.

First, then, God has assured to the soul another life, inasmuch as he has assured it he is reasonable—the perfection of reason. He has declared this to it by giving it a reason—one which irresistibly requires and expects order and congruity in the universe—a correspondency of ends to means—and then demands an adequate end for the human soul. "And he has also told me," the soul might say, "that he is reasonable, by placing me in the midst of a universe compacted throughout of adaptations the most intricate and perfect and benign and beautiful, from the flower and insect at my feet to the galaxy in galaxies

inorbed of systems of worlds above me : he has thus taught me to expect a fitting destiny for the soul of man. He has created here a capacity for endless progress—an intellect susceptible of infinite enlargement—a moral nature capable of Godlike virtue and glory—of sympathies and emotions that can embrace the unseen and everlasting, and by a discipline of threescore years and ten he has been educating these faculties to higher excellence and power; by a life of struggle with pain and hardship and grief and temptation, he has been schooling the soul to habits of patience and courage and self-mastery and faith, and subduing it to gentleness, meekness, and love ; and by the expansion and excitation of its faculties, has been wakening in it the feeling infinite, that reaches through the dark frontier of the visible after the divine and everlasting." Do not all these indicate aptitudes that reach into another world—or has he through this process plumed and renewed the soul for a higher flight, and wider sphere, and angelic rapidity of progress, merely that in mid career, with eye and pinion strained towards immortal destinies, it should drop at once sheer down the steep of everlasting nothing ?

Does the human mind recognize this as a *reasonable* end of such faculties and capacities, thus created and disciplined ? Can it ascribe to its Maker a course of conduct that would disgrace a human machinist ? Is it the fitting end of a wondrous and powerful piece of mechanism to be dashed in pieces just as, with much pains and expense, it has been constructed ? The more exquisite and labored and powerful its construction, the greater is the absurdity. But such a mechanism we may consider the soul of man at death. Life is to it but a period of discipline and accumulation of power for future action and enjoyment. Whatever it may have enjoyed or suffered in life, at death it is the mightiest means, the most vast preparation of powers it has ever been, and, with a voice louder than ever before, still demands an end. And has not God promised to the human soul such an end ? Has he not so constituted and taught it that it irresistibly looks for fitting adaptation in all parts of the universe ? Does it not know, in gazing on the minutest organism of the animalcule or the plant, the antennæ of the insect or the filament of the flower, as well as on the glittering systems of night, that they all have a corresponding end in the universe of God ? It turns from these to itself and hears the voice of God assuring it that the same all-pervading law of

adaptation and fitness embraces itself. If it does not, then its own being is not only the mightiest, but the only absurdity it can discover amid the works of God. The eye implies the light, the fin the water, and the wing the air, and, taught of God, it inquires what does the soul of man imply? Where shall it find its end? In its own earthly life? In powers accumulated to be destroyed? Virtues disciplined to annihilation? Capacities for active enjoyment expanded for eternal blasting? An eye created and opened on God's sun to be quenched in eternal darkness? A wing of a seraph, nerved and plumed and taught to scale the celestial height, merely to sink fluttering in vain mid eternal chaos and night?

Or does the soul find an adequate end of itself in the progress of society? But what is society on this hypothesis but an endless series of abortive souls—each advancing series rising higher for a mightier fall, and to utter more loudly in its fall the absurdity and opprobrium of the almighty Siva—creating but to destroy?

What adequate end does the common reason of mankind find in this life for the soul of the New Hollander's angelic capacities, according to this theory, blasted in the unopened germ—much more for the souls of a Newton, a Bacon, a Socrates, a Paul, and the like, with their Godlike aptitudes, intellectual and moral, while reaching from time's link into the eternal for their end, toppling over into the yawning chasm of annihilation? Verily, if the soul of man is mortal, then almighty Unreason sits on the throne of the universe! His most glorious work beneath the stars a tremendous abortion! Himself, the Father of the Reason, is guilty of the most monstrous violation of it in the universe! But such a conclusion the human soul feels, yea, *knows* to be absurd. From the harmonies of the universe, the chain of correspondencies binding all being—from each organic life or mote of matter or rolling world—from the depths of its own nature, comes an indignant and universal “no.” It hears, through all, the voice of God assuring it he is reasonable, and thereby promising that the accumulation of powers and discipline of virtues, often carried forward in the human soul till it disappears from time, shall find an appropriate end in eternity.

Again, the human mind may be assured that God wills the soul's immortality because he is benevolent. “He has told me,” it might say, “that he is love. He has told me so by the moral nature he has given me, which irresistibly compels me to ap-

prove benevolence and hate its opposite. He has told me so by a similar constitution of all moral natures I know of. To find a mind that hates benevolence *because it is benevolent*, I must go beyond the reach of all moral laws I am acquainted with—I must plunge to a deeper hell than I ever dreamed of. But, in assuring me that he delights in happiness, he has assured me that it is his will that the mighty capacity for happiness often developed by the human soul just before death, which by a life of intellectual and moral enlargement, by the disciplining of the passions, and the perfecting of the virtues, has attained an angelic vastness, shall not be quenched forever in the grave. Surely a God delighting in happiness would not wantonly annihilate such an infinitude of happiness as was prepared for in the mind of a dying Newton or Paul.

Moreover, God has assured me of a future life by the natural and moral evil I see around me, for many forms of which I can find no other solution under the reign of supreme Benevolence. Why do I see virtue often walking through this world under a cloud —her path one of pain and darkness and tears—her name accursed—her life persecuted even to the grave? Why these inflictions? If they are penal, why do they avoid the guiltier heads, to fall with such terrible tempest on the comparatively innocent? Is it urged that this is discipline? To what? Annihilation? Or to a life where “these afflictions, which are but for a moment, shall work out a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory?” A benevolent God utters in my ear but one answer.

In this way the human soul might reason by the light of nature in case of countless instances of natural and moral evil. Now it is not necessary for us to attempt any nicely adjusted balance of the goods and ills of the present life, or to argue that existence here is not upon the whole a blessing. It is sufficient to show, as we have done, that the annihilation of the soul at death is, in some cases, a vast annihilation of happiness, and that in many cases the evils of the present life admit of no solution under a God of love, except as preparatory to another. If it is said these proofs only indicate immortality to some, our reply is, first, that a single case breaks the charmed circle of death, bursts the barriers of the invisible world, and pioneers the way for the race; and secondly, that justice, the ground of our next argument—if indeed we can consider it other than another aspect of benevolence—will claim other cases, and open still

wider the portal of another life; and thirdly, if there are any souls whom neither justice nor benevolence requires to live hereafter, we do not feel bound to make any provisions for them in this argument, as our aim and argument are moral ones.

For the present purpose a single case is enough, and the earth furnishes millions. Go where the hero of goodness, the martyr of virtue, is passing out of life in abandonment, agony, and shame. He has walked in darkness and tears all his days; his life has been one conflict with penury, and scorn, and toil, and disease, and grief. He has seen repaid cruelty for kindness, curse for blessing, hate for love. And now, his body racked with anguish, and infamy gathering over his name, he is looking his last on the sun. But that soul within—by its life of conflict and trial, chastened, purified, and disciplined to glorious beauty and strength, with its Godlike capacities for excellence and happiness—whither is it going? A benevolent God looking down from on high, seeing and having seen all, and now allotting it its destiny, whither will its next step be? Into stark naught? or to a higher being? Has nature more than one answer? Why such a life? For discipline? Unto what? For this life? Why then such a death? Why the continuance of the discipline when there is no future on which it could take effect? Is it for a lesson to mankind? A lesson for what? The solution but multiplies the difficulty. Why lesson with such painful instructions a world of abortive souls, whose discipline is as objectless as that they are witnessing? Would a benevolent God discipline at such expense but to destroy? Would he school to slay? Human nature says "No. If that death of anguish and shame is the last appearance of that soul in this universe, then there sits a Moloch above. The soul has made a happy escape into annihilation from such a God." But we cannot doubt God's benevolence, and no more can we doubt that those glorious powers for enjoyment and action, thus painfully trained, are a promise to man of an existence where they shall find their scope.

Again, the human soul might insist, "God has promised me immortality by informing me he is just. He has thus informed me by placing in me a conscience, and the laws of my nature compel me to regard the God and father of my conscience as just. I am constrained to believe that he regards right and wrong with the same emotions that he has constituted me to feel; that there is in his mind the same feeling of indignation

at wrong, and of the fitness of punishment as its natural complement, and the same painful sentiment of violated moral order till retribution overtakes impenitent guilt, and happiness and honor crown suffering virtue. And as he has the power to secure this result, my moral sense becomes to me his declaration that somewhere, and at some time, all wrongs shall be righted, all moral acts meet a due reward, and moral order be vindicated. In earnest expectation of this vindication "the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain until now." Yet it comes not now, nor here. But the voice of God within me, assuring me it shall come, points me to another life for its consummation.

But if there be no other life, then there is no Supreme Justice in the universe. It is idle, amid the testimony of history and our own vision, to talk of full and certain retribution in a world like this—a world where vice often passes off the stage in triumph, while virtue dies under a cloud of wrongs. Take a single class of cases amid the millions that are presented. Go where the martyr of truth and love, the victim of falsehood and hate, is trampled, scourged, tortured, gibbeted, hooted and cursed out of earthly history—see the gentle, the lovely, the heroic and the pious, in sunless cells, pierced only by the eye of God—whose dialect of shrieks and groans reaches not the blessed light of the upper world—impaled alive—broken on the wheel—consumed over slow fires—stretched on the rack till limb is torn from limb—no friendly voice to cheer or eye to witness—no spectators to applaud or chronicle—no kind hand to wipe the sweat of the death-agony from the brow—but forms of brutal ferocity around, and looks of fanatic hate glaring on the meek sufferer, and words of cursing and mockery and abhorrence vexing the dying ear, and pushing the soul down the dark death-shade. Such has often been the earthly end of virtue. Is it its fitting *final* end? Human nature, God-taught, answers "No—if there is a God above there is a world beyond."

Or go and witness the last earthly end of prosperous sin; in the full income of wealth, and pleasure, and power, and fame—in the whirl of pleasurable excitement too intense to admit of reflexion or remorse—the bitter dregs of the cup of sin not yet reached—its brim of sparkling delights just quaffed—the perpetrator of a thousand crimes passes easily and quickly away, with blood on his hands, and adultery in his heart, and perjury on his lips—trampling on the wrecks of ruined fortunes and

slain virtue and broken hearts—the appliances of luxury around, the acclaim of the world in his ears, and the incense of adulation in his nostrils, with no bands in his death, he goes in a moment to the grave. A fall, a shot, a stroke, a lightning flash, and he is *no more*. Mortal pain, fear, curse or punishment cannot reach him further. He has hid him behind the shadow of death. Has he escaped forever? Is this the fitting *final* end of vice? Human nature answers, “No—if there is a God above there is a hell beyond.”

In proof that this is the declaration of human nature, look at the various systems of heathenism. What is their universal fabling of Elysium and Tartarus, but expressions of their feelings that the ends of justice require a future life? though the grounds of that feeling they were not able philosophically to analyze and set forth. They show that untaught nature, the common sense of man, rejects the dogma that virtue and vice work their own punishment here in all cases. True, they tend to it, but the consummation of that tendency—the full effect of the slow poison introduced into the soul—requires time, and often longer time than is found this side of death. God, too, assures us of another life by the conscience within us, that He has commissioned to accompany each act of deliberate guilt with a prophecy of coming doom. It is He that has bid it start up universally at the consciousness of committed crime, and inflict on the soul the sense of guilt, which is nothing else than a recognition and expectation of punishment as the fitting complement of its act. This universal apprehension of the soul cannot be a lie—it is the voice of the God of the soul—a whisper already reaching it from the great White Throne—a gleam from its intolerable brightness already flashing through the dark frontier of a future world.

Now, in view of the above facts, we believe in the immortality of the soul, as we believe that God is true; for he assures us of an hereafter by assuring us of his reasonableness, justice, and benevolence; and he assures us of these attributes in Himself by the very constitution of our natures, which constrain us to reason from our souls to him—by irrepressible feelings and intuitive inferences, as indubitable as those on which a proposition of Euclid is based. Moral intuition no more admits of question than intellectual. The negation of the distinction between right and wrong is as absurd as the denial that things equal to the same are equal to one another, or that a stone unsup-

ported in free space will fall to the earth. The law that like causes produce like effects holds as well in regard to moral as to physical causes, and compels us to reason from the soul to its Maker as from a machine to the machinist. And as we cannot but regard feelings and belief flowing from its original constitution as the voice of its Maker, so we cannot but regard its Maker as true.

Is it said that intuitive and irrepressible inference from the soul to God may deceive? Then all reasoning may deceive—all first truths may be first falsehoods. The uniformity of physical and moral law alike may be but a dream of the imagination. If a man choose to deny these primary feelings and consequent convictions of the human mind, there is no further arguing with him. One can only say, "God has so constituted me that I cannot help so feeling and so believing. It is my Maker that constrains me thus to feel and believe. If I am thereby deceived, God is chargeable with making my reason and whole nature a lie—with being Himself a liar. If I am thus mocked of God, it matters little what I believe or disbelieve—indeed it is impossible to reason at all—my intellect, my conscience, yea, this great universe itself is a lie. Nature reels around me, all is falsehood, phantom, impression, mockery, myself a sham, catching at shams amid a sham universe. I know not what or where I am, or that I am at all—the eternal heavens fade into a dream—the solid earth passes from underneath my feet—my own being I am no longer certain of—I cannot by self-consciousness be sure of my own soul, I can grasp nothing real. The pillars of the Eternal Throne give away. Amid infinite vacuity I clutch and clutch and clutch in vain. The truthfulness of my nature denied—the truthfulness of God going with it—the highest, the only absurdity in the universe, is to reason or believe at all."

Let us now pause a moment, and contemplate the enormous credulity of that man, who can believe the soul dies with the body. He believes that God is neither benevolent, nor reasonable, nor just, nor true, and that our nature which declares him so, is a lie; and yet, though all is delusive, he can reason out this fact which disqualifies him from reasoning at all. Or he believes that a God reasonable, and benevolent, and just, and true, has created a soul capable of endless progress in knowledge, virtue, and happiness; has placed it in this wondrous school of His universe for threescore years and ten, and by

stimulating and necessitating the constant exercise of thought, and reason, and study, and patience, and courage, and of conscience, and faith, and love, has been disciplining it to an angelic capacity for action, and bliss, and progress, merely to quench the glorious creature in the eternal grave. He can believe that such a God has led man as his child between this glorious earth and sky, and bid him look through all up to Him—to love, trust and commune with him—has placed in him a reason to converse with truth—a moral nature to sympathize with the right, the good, the beautiful, and the holy—a conscience to warn of duty and point to a coming retribution—and waked in him hope and faith that look beyond the sun's walk to the face of the Invisible—merely to dash the infant archangel down the everlasting void. He believes God can leave guilt to depart from the stage of being eternally in triumph, and can lead virtue through a life of toil, and penury, and pain, and disease, and sorrow, and conduct it mid racks, and chains, and scourges, and starvation, and flame, and diabolic sneer, and hate, and curse—to utter annihilation. If such be a God of justice, reason, truth and love, we do not see how the God of evil himself could show more dark or malign. The shadows of the infernal throne would almost seem a relief to the cruel gloom of supernal empire. Admit such a God on the throne of the universe, and who would care to believe at all, or to be? Annihilation would be an escape. Well might man rush on the eternal grave as to a bridal. Gladly might he haste to hide in everlasting night from the face of such almighty misrule.

In the whole circle of falsehood that the most abject and abhorred superstition ever fabled, is there one more hideous, or more monstrous, than those which the credulity of skepticism has here embraced? Strange that men can so believe, and still stranger that they can glory in so believing! "Methinks," one might remonstrate, "could I come to such a view of God and the destiny of the human soul, it would impend constantly over me like a horrid dream, too horrid for words—as some dreadful, abhorred, deadly thing, such as men speak of, not in places of glad light and life, but whisper with pale lips, in foul accursed glooms, and amid charnel-houses, where forms of corruption and horror gather on the senses and on the soul. I could not haste to proclaim it as some blissful discovery to mankind, and call upon my fellows to come and rejoice and be exceeding glad with me, when I had found the eternal grave. Methinks

I could not *triumph* to think that my soul, with its vast aspirations after the Everlasting Good and Fair and Great—its memory and affection, its hopes, its reason grasping after imperishable truth, its thoughts that wander through eternity—its faith and love that have gone forth toward an imagined Holy One, and its moral nature capable of wearing immortal glory and beauty, was soon to lie down on the breast of corruption and cease to be—that HEAVEN, the mourner's dream, the martyr's goal, the pilgrim's home, the life-hope of suffering virtue, had become to me a dull meaningless word—a beautiful mirage vanished from the illimitable desert of being—that the loved ones, that have faded away from my side, who still rise in the dreams of memory and sleep, are utterly perished—that the mighty, and gifted, and holy dead of past time are now nothing. Methinks, if I could come to such a conclusion, it would be in silence and sorrow. I would keep the awful secret in my own breast—I would not whisper it to my dearest friend—I would not breathe it in the ear of solitude and darkness. I would take my Bible and sit down for one more beautiful and happy dream, and then in mercy hand it over to mankind, and wait in mute despair till Almighty Accident or Tyranny should lay me in everlasting sleep with the brutes."

But such is not the language of Nature with reference to God and the soul. Strange and horrible perversion must have passed on the human mind before, when reflecting on God its Maker and its Fountain, it could come to a conclusion that the soul is thus mocked by Him. "Were it not so I would have told you," was the language of Christ; and Nature says the same—or at least, that God, if not designing man's immortality, would not in so many ways have mocked him with delusive promises of it.

Thus Nature argues intelligibly and convincingly, if we would listen to her, for a future life, in the same way that she does for the existence and reasonableness, justice, benevolence, and truth of God. But in neither case does she force her voice on man. These two doctrines are also mutually inter-dependent. God rightly believed, is the basis of all argument from nature for the soul's immortality; while the soul's immortality denied, reflects darkness over the attributes and the being itself of a God.

The argument from nature being thus founded on a true idea of God, perished necessarily with that idea. Men "changing the glory of God into a lie," changed that of the human soul

also—for God being misconceived, all reasoning from him became perverted, and darkness gathered alike over the present and future world. The great central orb being put out, the central attraction destroyed, reason and conscience wandered in twilight—the forces of the moral system were broken, and the universe was chaos. The present and the future were no longer a moral and reasonable whole, banded together by moral law and all-pervading reason. Darkness thick and palpable was gathering in the horizon of time, through which had glimpsed eternity. Death was a mighty and rayless chasm, over which no rainbow of Divine Love bridged to another life, and no flaming sword of justice pointed to a world of doom. All beyond was emphatically “a land of darkness and shadow, of death where the light was as darkness.”

Such had, to a great extent, become the condition of the ancient world. Socrates alone, of its philosophers, placed his argument on the right ground—the true idea of God. The Academics, Peripatetics, Pythagoreans, Stoics, and Epicureans, in discussing this question, attempted, from the physical nature of the soul, to prove its natural and necessary immortality or death. Of all these the Pythagoreans and Academics alone teach clearly the personal immortality of the soul, while the Epicureans, from a different theory of the substance of the soul, assumed with equal want of proof, argue its necessary perishableness. The face of God was in eclipse, and philosophy groping without His light could only throw over the mighty question “dimness of anguish.”

Thus for ages was the world living and dying under the darkening of the face of God, and consequently the destiny of the human soul. But this darkening of the future world was throwing back meanwhile its baleful shadow over the present. The clouds which before, gathering around the sunset of life, had been kindled by the light reflected from another sphere into forms of celestial glory and beauty, or those angry and portentous, and shedding on man a salutary awe, were now becoming a lifeless blackness. Not even the life of the lightning and thunder was there, but an utter stillness and darkness, more fearful than either, was throwing its chilling death-shade over human hearts. The moral interests of man were perishing—virtue was losing its incentives, vice its deterrents; appetite and sensualism, the clamors of present passion, the power of

the immediate and the physical were fast prevailing over the flickering glimpses of another life.

One was needed to come from heaven to reveal God anew. But heaven opened not her gates of light. One was needed to come as a witness from the grave, but death was too strong—he unbarred not the doors of his prisoners. The world had waited long, but none returned. Age after age, the brave, the mighty, the gifted, the good, the beautiful, had gone down to him, but none came back. Long had the earth held down her ear to the grave and listened, but no voice came from its silent realms. Nor the wail and prayer of stricken millions, “nor hero’s lyre or lover’s lute,” nor the posthumous acclaim of nations that shook the skies above, could startle a whisper in that lower world—an infinite, awful stillness; a dark, dead, unbottomed, illimitable emptiness, into which life’s successive millions, its glory of majesty, and power, and beauty, and genius, and eloquence, and song, and bannered battalia of noisy war, fell without an echo.

Long had the earth waited and listened, but none returned, and human nature was gathering itself up in agony to die, when lo ! in that hour of her despair, One mightier than death appears—with vesture dipped in blood up the dark vale he comes—travailing in the greatness of his strength. In his hand he bears the gates of the grave and the vanquished sting of death. He brings to light immortality. He comes its conqueror and living witness. Of a future existence “God hath now given assurance to all men, in that he hath raised Jesus Christ from the dead.”

Such are the relations of nature and revelation to this doctrine. Their testimony harmonizes, yet that of neither is superfluous. Revelation is a reaffirmance of Nature in a more direct and explicit manner, rendered necessary, not by a defect in the original declaration of God, but by the moral depravity of man. There is a “*nodus, deo vindice dignus*,” but it is of man’s own creating. By this view, the relations of nature to revelation in this, is harmonized with their relative position in other parts of the revealed system. The common view jars with it, and that most disastrously. It shocks a sense of moral fitness, and cannot fail to stagger faith, to be told, on the one hand, that man’s obligations to moral law are written by nature on the heart, and revelation is but a republication of what was before in the human constitution; but, on the other, that there is preindicated by nature no future tribunal where

this law shall be vindicated—nor future being where its natural and moral retributions can take effect. Indeed it seems almost an absurdity in terms to speak of a moral law under a moral God, with no judgment or world of retribution to vindicate the law. The former seems necessarily to imply the latter. Could one of these be disjoined from the other in God's revelation to man, it would be a monstrous discrepancy, distorting and destroying the whole system. The continued existence of the soul seems so indispensable a basis of a moral system relating to man, that one could hardly be disclosed or authenticated apart from the other. It could hardly seem possible that moral distinctions themselves, should they not be annihilated, could fail at least to lose their authority, when the soul in which they inhere, might at any moment utterly perish alike from all retribution and all consciousness. The natural language of the heart would be, "Let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die;" and we cannot suppose a wise moral governor would have disclosed a moral system in such a fragmentary, unsymmetrical, and powerless state. The common view, as it violates the fitness of things and the general analogy of natural and revealed religion, must tend to universal skepticism; while the one we have endeavored to present, approving itself to a philosophic analysis of the human mind, and agreeing with the uniform testimony of the faith, if not the philosophy of heathenism, and harmonizing the natural and revealed systems, must tend powerfully to corroborate the latter. Especially it may arrest the madness of the infidel to find that, could he silence the voice of revelation, he gains nothing. Still in himself a prophet of evil utters its fearful vision, though the word that blends mercy with justice were forever stifled. Still the grasp of moral law is on him forever, and an eternity of retribution is treasured up in the eternity of his moral existence. Though the revealed doom were only a hideous dream, still the tendencies of character move on eternally, and causes guiltily originated here accomplish their consequence hereafter. Still lives Remorse, "the undying worm"

still drags Despair her endless chain—and Memory pours out her fiery lake—and Conscience brandishes her scorpion sting. Still undying sin, "the second death," her hideous shade waited on by the pale armies of fear, and hate, and sorrow, and shame, stalks down the ever-thickening darkness of an immortal ruin.

This view, too, while it justifies the God of nature, glorifies the God of revelation. It shows us what we owe to Christ.

Appearing as he did to man in this eclipse of God and of the human soul, he stands virtually in the attitude of the Original Revealer of immortality. To this he adds, that through the agonies of death he has wrought out for us the testimony of experience, and has given to what was before prediction, the assurance of a witnessed fact: To Christ we owe it, that we know we are to live forever—that we may lay our loved and our beautiful in the dust, and know that they are not perished. We can now permit the mighty and overwhelming *certainty* of immortality to come in and enravish the soul. How changed thereby this whole universe! How changed our attitude in it! No longer a child of corruption, and brother of the worm, man is now the only abiding thing beneath the stars. A moral significance inheres in him, which is everlasting. No longer is he overpowered and crushed to earth by the amplitude and duration of the material universe—no longer does he wander amid its frail and flower-like delights, its scenes of fading light and loveliness, and list the swift flight of the hours as they forever pass, with the sorrowful thought, “I am still frailer and briefer than ye—I pass, to come not again—one thrill of youth, the morn, the moonlight, the balmy spring, the glory of thought, and the raptured vision of truth, alike warn me as they pass—‘so much we take from the capital of thy existence.’” He knows that “He who alone hath immortality,” hath breathed on him, and Christ has opened to him, beyond the seen and perishable, the new heavens and the new earth—where the mountain lifts its everlasting masses from the heart of the earth to the sky, the grave-stone of elder worlds—where the cataract pours forth its mighty anthem from the birth of time—where the hoar ocean peals its solemn organ-tone since the song of the morning stars; he no longer crouches, awe-crushed, trembling, earthward, creature of an hour. No longer does he shrink with agony into dark and desolate nothingness, as the sense of eternity descends upon him from the shining universe of night. Through the mighty agony and triumph of Christ, opens on him a destiny that shall outlive, outsing, outshine them all. He knows there is that within him which shall abide, when the fast-bound mountain has fled—which shall sing the hymn of life, and reflect the unapproachable brightness, when the organ of Ocean is mute, and Niagara has given up her harp to God, and the shadow of Death shall stretch through the starry infinite. Beyond the sun’s fading beam—beyond the storm’s waning beauty—beyond

the curtain-work of the visible, he looks to the Ancient of Days as his father, and the eternities that engird His throne as his home. From the dark grave of the brute to the vision of such a height, has the arm of Christ raised our race.

But there are other thoughts, solemn and fearful, that crowd upon this mighty idea. What consequences are bound up in moral immortality? In the imperishableness of moral acts, and the everlasting continuance of the present moral laws of our being? An eternal soul starting in a wrong direction—each successive guilty act impelling, by a stronger moral necessity, to deeper guilt—on forever—acquiring by a natural law of moral descent an increased velocity of ruin each moment of its fall through interminable ages—what created intellect can fathom the depth of its eternal fall? By its own moral gravitation—by the force of the essential laws of its being which must grasp it forever—must it not set at last in the bottomless darkness? Suppose the process of moral deterioration we witness here, to go on in its natural geometric ratio forever—the maddening of the passions—the ferocity of the appetites—the hardening of the heart, and blinding of mind, and searing of conscience—the binding of habit, the blunting of the moral tastes, and brutalizing of the entire moral nature—each moral act immortal, and etching itself imperishably on the soul—each crime an evil angel dogging it in its ever-darkening and downward career—all its past being aggregated into character, and pressing in constantly accumulating Aetnean masses on the soul;—suppose such a process for ages of hopeless end, and the Arch Fiend himself, in the depth he has now reached since the fall of the morning stars, might well start back from the deeper hell and more hideous spectre of ruin, which the perspective of the laws of its own moral nature, operating eternally, discloses to the human soul. The mind grows dizzy, and shrinks back with horror from gazing down such an infinite descent—it shudders at the laws and powers of everlasting death it bears within itself. Sure by the light of nature it requires no red right hand to scoop out hell—no thunder to drive the guilty soul to the shades below. Its own nature digs its eternal dungeon-house. Were then the hell of the Scriptures put out, itself would kindle anew the fires of its endless torture. Were Sinai to be quenched—the great white throne to disappear—the laws of its own moral being would disclose another apocalypse—another Sinai would thunder, and a tribunal of eternal

judgment start up from the depths of the soul itself—and branded on its very being stand forth the curse, “The soul that sinneth, it shall die.” Could it vault over the flaming bands of the universe, and escape from its Omnipresent punisher—still it would be under the lash of its torturer, and girt in by retribution—still within it the undying worm—still around it the quench-fire.

But nature reveals not only an immortality of natural sequences, but of judicial doom. Over that eternity which she discloses, glitters the flaming sword—mutters the wrathful thunder—rises the judgment throne of a personal, moral, just God. Thus a double necessity, natural and judicial, binds the guilty soul on the wheel of eternal death !

At this fearful aspect of destiny, human nature pauses and feels that, alas! IMMORTALITY IS NOT LIFE ! Her enravishment with the hope of immortal existence disappears—she stops, and in anxious misgivings for the race inquires, “What must be the eternity of spiritual destinies already here begun ?” From the presages of Nature she starts back with fear, and is almost ready to let fall from her lips the cup God has proffered of immortal existence. When lo ! again in her extremity Christ appears—the new revealer of God and new creator of the human soul—its ransomer from judicial curse, and from the horrible necessity of ruin dragging it darkly and forever downward. The face of Jehovah comes out of its long eclipse—the clouds which ages of falsehood had thrown up before it disperse—the thick darkness, gleaming with wrath and shedding gloom on a guilt-stricken world, passes from before the eternal Majesty—a vision of strange celestial beauty, unseen before by the eye of Nature, opens on the ravished universe—and God, its Forgiver, its Heavenly Father, smiles once more on the human soul. It feels the blessed attraction—its dreadful descent is arrested—its Æthereal masses of guilt vanish away—the chain of moral ruin is broken—upward it moves again toward celestial light and love.

Again, but now in chaster, meeker, holier rapture, human nature looks up to the Ancient of Days, and receives from him the boon of endless being, and in adoration and love ineffable, casts her crown of immortality at the feet of Him that weareth “the vesture dipped in blood,” who, by the triumph of his mighty agony, has brought to light, not only Immortality, but LIFE.

## ARTICLE III.

## REVIEW OF CARLYLE'S PAST AND PRESENT.

*Scribner*  
By Professor J. T. SMITH, of Newton Theological Institution, Mass.

*Past and Present.* By Thomas Carlyle. Boston: Charles C. Little and James Brown. pp. 296.

THE present condition of England must be confessed by all to be most extraordinary and unparalleled in the history of the world. With an empire commensurate with the circumference of the globe, a government efficient on every sea and under every sky, she seems to be the regulator of the world. When the Pacha of Egypt rebels against his legitimate lord, the Sultan, she sends her fleet, batters down the walls of Acre, prescribes their limits to Mehemet and his son Ibrahim, and then leaves the parties to manage their own government in their own way. When the Emperor of China concludes he had better keep his tea than have his subjects made dead men or living idiots by the use of opium, the fleets and cannon which were so effectual in maintaining the integrity of the Turkish Empire are found not less potent in regulating Chinese sumptuary laws; and the Emperor is convinced that it is best to leave the questions about opium and idiocy to be settled between British merchants and Chinese public or private opinion. Wherever she chooses to exert her power, whether in protecting weak nations or in subduing strong ones; in liberating Africans, or in worse than enslaving Asiatics—she is resistless. And yet that government is in debt beyond the possibility of payment—to all intents, bankrupt. That government, so strong externally, is convulsed internally with English Chartism, Welch Rebeccaism, Scottish Kirk dissension, and Irish Repeal agitation, to such a degree that my Lords and Gentlemen of Parliament, Sir Robert Peel, and Queen Victoria, seem at their wit's end, uncertain whether to advance, recede, or stand still.

Not less extraordinary is England in her private operations than in the operations of her government. Her benevolence, with commendable zeal, is going to the ends of the earth, seek-

ing ignorant vicious heathen to reclaim and enlighten, while multitudes of her own population are degraded in vicious ignorance, almost to the condition of the heathen. Her sense of justice has raised from the condition of chattels to that of freemen and citizens the Africans of her own colonies, and is exerting itself to the utmost to effect the same result in other countries, while millions of Englishmen, the producers of England's wealth, who by some law are surely entitled to a subsistence, are dying of hunger, or dragging out a miserable existence. At the same time, the country which thus pays its workers is purse-bearer for the world; it can dig canals, lay rail-roads, and furnish bank-stock for all nations. With cloth enough to cover naked backs the world over, the very weavers are without covering. With unbounded supply for human want of every kind, two millions in England and Wales alone, sit in work-houses, or receive out-door relief, and five millions more are starving in hunger-cellars.\*

This most anomalous and paradoxical condition of England excites many thoughts in thinking minds, and occasions the utterance of many words, both in speech and in print. The problem to be solved is one of sternest necessity: very existence depends upon its solution. "To be, or not to be: that is the question." How shall these crowded millions, increasing in number, be fed? A very intelligible and practical question, but a question, how difficult to be answered; which yet must be answered, at whatever cost; a heavy penalty awaiting the failure to answer it. Among those who are speaking at this crisis, is that most vigorous, unique, and original thinker and writer, Thomas Carlyle. If Carlyle speaks, he will utter his own thoughts in his own way. A book which gives the feelings with which a sincere and earnest thinker regards the present social condition in England, and the remedial measures he would recommend, is certainly worth reading, whatever we may think of the views it may present.

A method of his own, we have said, Carlyle would adopt to get his opinions before the public. The occasion he seized upon was the following. A certain Jocelinus de Brakelonda, a Monk of St. Edmundsbury Convent in the 12th century, wrote in Monk-Latin, a book entitled, "Chronica de rebus gestis

---

\* *Past and Present.* pp. 1, 172.

Samsonis Abbatis Monasterii Sancti Edmundi."\* " . . . in," says our author, "was a kind of born Boswell, though an infinitessimally small one, neither did he altogether want his Johnson, even then and there." This Chronicle, published by some Antiquarian society in its original Monk-Latin, Mr. Carlyle undertakes, by an abstract, to bring before the public; and around it, as a nucleus, he has arranged his remarks about past, present, and future things. His object we will give in his own words:

"Certainly, could the present Editor instruct men how to know Wisdom, Heroism, when they see it, that they might do reverence to it only, and loyally make it rule over them—yes, he were the living epitome of all Editors, Teachers, Prophets, that now teach and prophesy; he were an Apollo-Morrison, a Triumegistus and effective Cassandra! Let no Able Editor hope such things. It is to be expected the present laws of copy-right, rate of reward per sheet, and other considerations, will save him from that peril. Let no Editor hope such things: no; and yet let all Editors aim toward such things, and even toward such alone! One knows not what the meaning of editing and writing is, if even this be not it. Enough; to the present Editor it has seemed possible some glimmering of light, for here and there a human soul, might lie in these confused Paper-Masses now intrusted to him; wherefore he determines to edit the same. Out of old Books, new Writings, and much Meditation not of yesterday, he will endeavour to select a thing or two; and from the Past, in a circuitous way, illustrate the Present and the Future. The Past is a dim indubitable fact: the future too is one, only dimmer; nay, properly it is the *same* fact in new dress and development. For the Present holds in it both the whole Past and the whole Future; as the LIFE-TREE IGDRASIL, wide-waving, many-toned, has its roots down deep in the Death-kingdoms, among the oldest dead dust of men, and with its boughs reaches always beyond the stars, and in all times and places is one and the same Life-tree!" p. 36.

The whole work is divided into four books. Book first, appropriately headed "The Proem," contains six chapters. The first three chapters, under the titles of Midas, The Sphynx, Manchester Insurrection, set forth in a strong light the present social condition of England, the miseries of the working classes, the unhappiness of the unworking classes, and the necessity of entering upon some decisive measures of reform. These topics are illustrated by the two fables and the one fact which form the captions of the chapters. If there are admirers of England and

---

\* *Chronicles of the Life of Samson, Abbot of St. Edmund's Convent.*

England's institutions, who are skeptical as to the fact that misery exists there, untold and unspeakable, Carlyle, not less an admirer of England than they, and ready to apologize for her to any reasonable extent, does not sympathize with them in their doubts. It is scarcely possible for any writer to set it forth in stronger colors than he does in various parts of his work. Carlyle is a writer, who, in his own phrase, looks into the internal realities of things as well as the external appearances. He not only surveys and appreciates in its full extent, the outer bare part of literal starvation and insupportable physical suffering, but also internal misery, broken hearts, the anguish of the spirit, far deeper and more immeasurable than physical suffering. After describing briefly the great amount of pauperism in the United Kingdom, and its most baleful effects in every point of view, he proceeds:

"Why dwell on this aspect of the matter! It is too indisputable, not doubtful now to any one. Descend where you will into the lower class, in town or country, by what avenue you will, by Factory Inquiries, Agricultural Inquiries, by Revenue Returns, by Mining-Labour Committees, by opening your own eyes and looking, the same sorrowful result discloses itself: you have to admit that the working body of this rich English Nation has sunk, or is fast sinking, into a state to which, all sides of it considered, there was literally never any parallel. At Stockport assizes, a mother and a father are arraigned and found guilty of poisoning three of their children, to defraud a "burial society" of some £3 8s. due on the death of each child: they are arraigned, found guilty; and the official authorities, it is whispered, hint that perhaps the case is not solitary, that perhaps you had better not probe farther into that department of things. "Brutal savages, degraded Irish," mutters the idle reader of newspapers, hardly lingering on this incident. Yet it is an incident worth lingering on. Such instances are like the highest mountain apex emerged into view, under which lies a whole mountain region and land not yet emerged. A human Mother and Father had said to themselves, What shall we do to escape starvation? We are deep sunk here in our dark cellar, and help is far. Yes, in the Ugolino Hunger-tower stern things happen; best-loved little Gaddo fallen dead on his Father's knees! The Stockport Mother and Father think and hint. Our poor little starveling Tom, who cries all day for victuals, who will see only evil and not good in this world: If he were out of misery at once; he well dead, and the rest of us perhaps kept alive? It is thought, and hinted; at last it is done. And now Tom being killed, and all spent and eaten, is it poor little starveling Jack that must go, or poor little starveling Will? What an inquiry of ways and means!

"In starved sieged cities, in the uttermost doomed ruin of old Jerusalem fallen under the wrath of God, it was prophesied and said,

"The hands of the pitiful women have sodden their own children." The stern Hebrew imagination could conceive no blacker gulf of wretchedness; that was the ultimatum of degraded God-punished man." pp. 3, 4.

As a fit appendix to the above, we quote the following, illustrative of the spirit and earnestness with which he enters into the question of wages:

"These poor Manchester manual workers mean only, by day's wages for day's work, certain coins of money adequate to keep them living; in return for their work, such modicum of food, clothes, and fuel as will enable them to continue their work itself! They as yet clamor for no more; the rest, still inarticulate, cannot yet shape it-self into a demand at all, and only lies in them as a dumb wish; perhaps only, still more inarticulate, as a dumb, altogether unconscious want. *This* is the supportable approximation they would rest patient with, That by their work they might be kept alive to work more! *This* once grown unattainable, I think your approximation may consider itself to have reached the *insupportable stage*; and may prepare, with whatever difficulty, reluctance, and astonishment, for one of two things, for changing or perishing! With the millions no longer able to live, how can the units keep living? It is too clear the nation itself is on the way to suicidal death. What is the use of your spun shirts? They hang there by the million unsaleable; and here, by the million, are diligent bare backs that can get no hold of them. Shirts are useful for covering human backs; useless otherwise, an unbearable mockery otherwise. You have fallen terribly behind with that side of the problem! Manchester Insurrections, French Revolutions, and thousandsfold phenomena great and small, announce loudly that you must bring it forward a little again. Never till now, in the history of an Earth which to this hour nowhere refuses to grow corn if you will plough it, to yield shirts if you will spin and weave in it, did the mere manual two-handed worker (however it might fare with other workers) cry in vain for such 'wages' as *he* means by 'fair wages,' namely, food and warmth! The Godlike could not and cannot be paid; but the Earthly always could. Gurth, a mere swineherd, born thrall of Cedric the Saxon, tended pigs in the wood, and did get some parings of the pork. Why, the four-footed worker has always got all that his two-handed one is clamoring for! How often must I remind you? There is not a horse in England, able and willing to work, but *has* due food and lodging; and goes about sleek-coated, satisfied in heart. And you say, It is impossible. Brothers, I answer, if for you it be impossible, what is to become of you? It is impossible for us to believe it to be impossible. The human brain, looking at these sleek English horses, refuses to believe in such impossibility for Englishmen. Do you depart quickly; clear the ways soon, lest worse befall." pp. 19—27.

In the remaining chapters of this book, he briefly discusses remedies, on which we will not dwell, as they are but obscure-

ly hinted at here, and more fully brought out in a subsequent part of the work.

The second Book is entitled "The Ancient Monk;" and contains the abstract before mentioned of Jocelin's chronicle. Five chapters are occupied with describing with much vivacity, with a lively conception, often with a most amusing quaintness of expression, Bozzy Jocelin, St. Edmund's town and convent, how Landlord Edmund became a Saint, Abbot Hugo, and the 12th century, the whole interspersed with curious and original observations on various circumstances of ancient and modern times. We give an extract from this part of the work for the double purpose of showing how, in our author's conception, men became saints in former times, and the satirical power of his pen :

"Very singular, could we discover it! What Edmund's specific duties were; above all, what his method of discharging them with such result was, would surely be interesting to know: but are *not* very discoverable now. His Life has become a poetic, nay, a religious *Mythus*; though, undeniably enough, it was once a prose Fact, as our poor lives are; and even a very rugged unmanageable one. This landlord Edmund did go about in leather shoes, with *femoralia* and body coat of some sort on him; and daily had his breakfast to procure; and daily had contradictory speeches, and most contradictory facts not a few, to reconcile with himself. No man becomes a Saint in his sleep. Edmund, for instance, instead of reconciling those same contradictory facts and speeches to himself; which means *subduing*, and, in a manlike and godlike manner, conquering them to himself—might have merely thrown new contention into them, new unwisdom into them, and so been conquered by them; much the commoner case! In that way he had proved no 'Saint' or Divine-looking Man, but a mere Sinner, and unfortunate, blameable, more or less Diabolic-looking man! No landlord Edmund becomes infinitely admirable in his sleep.

"With what degree of wholesome rigor his rents were collected we hear not. Still less by what methods he preserved his game, whether by 'bushing' or how—and if the partridge-seasons were 'excellent' or were indifferent. Neither do we ascertain what kind of Corn-bill he passed, or wisely-adjusted Sliding-scale: but, indeed, there were few spinners in those days; and the nuisance of spinning, and other dusty labor, was not yet so glaring a one.

"How, then, it may be asked, did this Edmund rise into favor; become to such astonishing extent a recognised Farmer's Friend? Really, except it were by doing justly and loving mercy to an unprecedented extent, one does not know. The man, it would seem, 'had walked,' as they say, 'humbly with God;' humbly and valiantly with God; struggling to make the Earth heavenly as he could;

instead of walking sumptuously and pridefully with Mammon, leaving the Earth to grow hellish as it liked. Not sumptuously with Mammon? How, then, could he ‘encourage trade,’—cause Howell and James, and many wine-merchants to bless him, and the tailor’s heart (though in a very short-sighted manner) to sing for joy? Much in this Edmund’s Life is mysterious.

“That he could, on occasion, do what he liked with his own is, meanwhile, evident enough. Certain Heathen Physical-Force Ultra-Chartists, ‘Danea,’ as they were then called, coming into his territory with their ‘five points,’ or rather with their five-and-twenty thousand *points* and edges too, of pikes, namely, and battle-axes; and proposing mere Heathenism, confiscation, spoliation, and fire and sword—Edmund answered that he would oppose to the utmost such savagery. They took him prisoner; again required his sanction to said proposals. Edmund again refused. Cannot we kill you? cried they. Cannot I die? answered he. My life, I think, is my own, to do what I like with! And he died under barbarous tortures, refusing to the last breath; and the Ultra-Chartist Danes *lost* their propositions; and went with their ‘points’ and other apparatus, as is supposed, to the Devil, the Father of them.

“Well-done! Well-done! cried the hearts of all men. They raised his slain and martyred body; washed his wounds with fast-flowing universal tears; tears of endless pity, and yet of a sacred joy and triumph. The beautifullest kind of tears—indeed, perhaps the beautifullest kind of thing: like a sky all flashing diamonds and prismatic radiance; all weeping, yet shone on by the everlasting Sun: and *this* is not a sky—it is a Soul, and living Face! Nothing liker the *Temple of the Highest*, bright with some real effulgence of the Highest, is seen in this world.

“Oh, if all Yankee-land follow a small good ‘Schnüspel the distinguished Novelist’ with blazing torches, dinner invitations, universal hep-hep-hurrah, feeling that he, though small, *is* something; how might all Angle-land once follow a hero-martyr and great true Son of Heaven! It is the very joy of man’s heart to admire where he can; nothing so lifts him from all his mean imprisonments, were it but for moments, as true admiration. Thus it has been said, ‘all men, especially all women, are born worshippers;’ and will worship, if it be but possible. Possible to worship a Something, even a small one; not so possible a mere loud blaring *Nothing*!”

The remaining twelve chapters of this Book relate very graphically, the election of Monk Samson to the priorship of the convent, and his administration of affairs, interspersed with some keen remarks on the present social, civil, and religious condition of England. We will insert here the following paragraph, as an illustration of the strong admiration which Mr. Carlyle seems to have of the men and manners of the middle ages.

“The great antique heart: how like a child’s in its simplicity, like

a man's in its earnest solemnity and depth! Heaven lies over him wheresoever he goes or stands on the earth; making all the Earth a mystic temple to him, the Earth's business all a kind of worship. Glimpses of bright creatures flash in the common sunlight; angels yet hover doing God's messages among men: that rainbow was set in the clouds by the hand of God! Wonder, miracle encompass the man; he lives in an element of miracle; Heaven's splendor over his head, Hell's darkness under his feet. A great Law of Duty, high as these two Infinitudes, dwarfing all else, annihilating all else—making royal Richard as small as peasant Samson, smaller if need be! The 'imaginative faculties?' 'Rude poetic ages?' The 'primeval poetic element?' Oh, for God's sake, good reader, talk no more of all that! It was not a Dilettantism this of Abbot Samson. It was a Reality, and it is one. 'The garment only of it is dead! the essence of it lives through all Time and all Eternity!' p. 115.

The third Book, entitled "The Modern Worker," is a series of essays on the various phases of the social fabric of England. Every class receives a share of the author's consideration, and every power of his mind seems put in requisition to set them forth in their proper character. Especially has he made a conspicuous mark of the Aristocracy, whom he characterizes as an idle, rapacious, partridge-hunting, game-preserving, corn-lawing set of men, blindly rushing on to imaginary El-Dorados, but real iron spikes and French Revolutions. No matter what his subject, he is constantly on the alert to find some opportunity of letting fly a shaft at them. Sometimes by sober reasoning, sometimes by keen irony and bitter sarcasm, sometimes by bold denunciation and invective, but always with power and effect, he hurls his missiles at them. Their idle and unproductive modes of life, their extravagant and fruitless expenditure, and their oppressive legislation, he lashes in the most unsparing manner. As examples of his style of attack we subjoin the following extracts:

"Perhaps few narratives in History or Mythology are more significant than that Moslem one, of Moses and the Dwellers by the Dead Sea. A tribe of men dwelt on the shores of that same Asphaltic Lake; and having forgotten, as we are all too prone to do, the inner facts of Nature, and taken up with the falsities and outer semblances of it, were fallen into sad conditions—verging, indeed, toward a certain far deeper Lake. Whereupon it pleased kind Heaven to send them the Prophet Moses, with an instructive word of warning, out of which might have sprung 'remedial measures' not a few. But no: the men of the Dead Sea discovered, as the valet-species always does in heroes or prophets, no comeliness in Moses; listened with real tedium to Moses, with light grinning, or with spleenetic shifts and

sneers, affecting even to yawn ; and signified, in short, that they found him a humbug, and even a bore. Such was the candid theory these men of the Asphalt Lake formed to themselves of Moses, That probably he was a humbug, that certainly he was a bore.

"Moses withdrew ; but Nature and her rigorous veracities did not withdraw. The men of the Dead Sea, when we next went to visit them, were all 'changed into Apes,' sitting on the trees there, grinning now in the most unaffected manner ; gibbering and chattering complete nonsense ; finding the whole Universe now a most indisputable Humbug ! The Universe has *become* a Humbug to these Apes who thought it one ! There they sit and chatter to this hour ; only, I think, every Sabbath there returns to them a bewildered half-consciousness, half-reminiscence ; and they sit, with their wizened, smoke-dried visages, and such an air of supreme tragicality as Apes may ; looking out, through those blinking, smoke-bleared eyes of theirs, into the wonderfullest universal smoky Twilight and undecipherable disordered dusk of Things ; wholly an Uncertainty, Unintelligibility, they end it ; and for commentary thereon, here and there an unmusical chatter or mew : truest, tragicalest Humbug conceivable by the mind of man or ape ! They made no use of their souls, and so have lost them. Their worship on the Sabbath now is to roost there, with unmusical screeches, and half remember that they had souls.

"Didst thou never, O Traveller, fall in with parties of this tribe ? Meseems they are grown somewhat numerous in our day." pp. 152, 153.

"Two million shirtless or ill-shirted workers sit enchanted in Work-house Bastilles, five million more (according to some) in Ugolino Hunger-cellars ; and for remedy you say—what say you ? 'Raise *our* rents !' I have not in my time heard any stranger speech, not even on the Shores of the Dead Sea. You continue addressing those poor shirt-spinners and over-producers in really a *too* triumphant manner :

"Will you bandy accusations, will you accuse us of over-production ? We take the Heavens and the Earth to witness that we have produced nothing at all. Not from us proceeds this frightful overplus of shirts. In the wide domains of created Nature, circulates no shirt or thing of our producing. Certain fox-brushes nailed upon our stable-door, the fruit of fair audacity at Melton Mowbray ; these we have produced, and they are openly nailed up there. He that accuses us of producing, let him show himself, let him name what and when. We are innocent of producing ; ye ungrateful, what mountains of things have we not, on the contrary, had to "consume," and make away with ! Mountains of those your heaped manufactures, wheresoever edible or wearable, have they not disappeared before us, as if we had the talent of ostriches, of cormorants, and a kind of divine faculty to eat ? Ye ungrateful ! and did you not grow under the shadow of our wings ? Are not your filthy mills built on these fields of ours ; on this soil of England, which belongs to—whom think you ? And we shall not offer you our own wheat at the price that pleases us, but that partly pleases you ? A precious nation ! What

would become of you, if we chose, at any time, to decide on growing no wheat more?"

"Yes, truly, here is the ultimate rock-basis of all Corn-laws; whereon, at the bottom of much arguing, they rest as securely as they can: What would become of you, if we decided, some day, on growing no more wheat at all? If we chose to grow only partridges henceforth, and a modicum of wheat for our own uses? Cannot we do what we like with our own? Yes, indeed! For my share, if I could melt Gneiss Rock, and create Law of Gravitation; if I could stride out to the Doggerbank some morning, and, striking down my trident there into the mud-waves, say, 'Be land, be fields, meadows, mountains, and fresh rolling streams!' by Heaven, I should incline to have the letting of that land in perpetuity, and sell the wheat of it, or burn the wheat of it, according to my own good judgment! My Corn-lawing friends, you affright me." pp. 172, 173.

"Nature's message will have itself obeyed: messages of mere Free-trade, Anti-Corn-law League, and *Laissez-faire* will then need small obeying! Ye fools, in name of Heaven, work, work at the Ark of Deliverance for yourselves and us, while hours are still granted you! No: instead of working at the Ark, they say, 'We cannot get our hands kept rightly warm'; and sit obstinately burning the planks. No madder spectacle at present exhibits itself under this Sun. My rosy fox-hunting brothers, a terrible *Hippocratic look* reveals itself (God knows, not to my joy) through those fresh buxom countenances of yours. Through your Corn-law Majorities, Sliding-scales, Protecting-Duties, Bribery-Elections, and triumphant Kentish-fire, a thinking eye discerns ghastly images of ruin, too ghastly for word; a hand-writing as of MENE, MENE. Men and brothers, on your Sliding-scale you seem sliding, and to have slid—you little know whither! Good God! did not a French Donothing Aristocracy, hardly above half a century ago, declare in like manner, and in its featherhead believe in like manner, 'We cannot exist, and continue to dress and parade ourselves, on the just rent of the soil of France; but we must have farther payment than rent of the soil—we must be exempted from taxes too; we must have a Corn-law to extend our rent?' This was in 1789: in four years more—Did you look into the Tannerries of Meudon, and the long-naked making for themselves breeches of human skins! May the merciful Heavens avert the omen; may we be wiser that so we be less wretched." pp. 178, 179.

"Parchments? Parchments are venerable: but they ought at all times to represent, as near as they by possibility can, the writing of the Adamant Tablets—otherwise they are not so venerable! Benedict the Jew in vain pleaded parchments; his usuries were too many. The King said, 'Go to, for all thy parchments thou shalt pay just debt: down with thy dust, or observe this tooth-forceps!' Nature, a far juster Sovereign, has far terribler forceps. Aristocracies, actual and imaginary, reach a time when parchment pleading does not avail them. 'Go to, for all thy parchments thou shalt pay due debt!' shouts the Universe to them, in an emphatic manner. They refuse to pay, confidently pleading parchment: their best grinder-tooth, with horrible agony, goes out of their jaw. Wilt thou pay now? A

second grinder, again in horrible agony, goes: a second, and a third, and, if need be, all the teeth and grinders, and the life itself with them; and then there is free payment, and an anatomist-subject into the bargain!

"Reform-bills, Corn-law Abrogation-bills, and then Land-tax Bill, Property-tax Bill, and still dimmer list of *et ceteras*; grinder after grinder: my lords and gentlemen, it were better for you to arise and begin doing your work, than sit there and plead parchment!" p. 181.

"Hast thou looked on the Potter's wheal, one of the venerablest objects—old as the Prophet Ezekiel, and far older? Rude lumps of clay, how they spin themselves up, by mere quick whirling, into beautiful circular dishes. And fancy the most assiduous Potter, but without his wheel; reduced to make dishes, or rather amorphous botches, by mere kneading and baking! Even such a Potter were Destiny with a human soul that would rest and lie at ease, that would not work and spin! Of an idle unrevolving man, the kindest Destiny, like the most assiduous Potter without wheel, can bake and knead nothing other than a botch; let her spend on him what expensive coloring, what gilding and enamelling she will, he is but a botch. Not a dish; no, a bulging, kneaded, crooked, shambling, squint-cornered amorphous botch—a mere enamelled vessel of dis-honor! Let the idle think of thia." p. 197.

"And who art thou that braggest of thy Life of Idleness; complacently shovwest thy bright gilt equipages; sumptuous cushions; appliances for folding of the hands to mere sleep? Looking up, looking down, around, behind or before, discernest thou, if it be not in Mayfair alone, any *idle* hero, saint, God, or even devil? Not a vestige of one. In the Heavens, in the Earth, in the waters under the Earth, is none like unto thee. Thou art an original figure in this creation; a denizen in Mayfair alone, in this extraordinary Century or Half-century alone! One monster there is in the world: the idle man. What is *his* 'religion'? That nature is a Phantasm, where cunning beggary or thievery may sometimes find good victual. That God is a lie; and that Man and his Life are a lie. Alas, alas, who of us is there that can say, I have worked? The faithfulest of us are unprofitable servants; the faithfulest of us know that best. The faithfulest of us may say, with sad and true old Samuel, 'Much of my life has been trifled away!' But he that has, and, except 'on public occasions,' professes to have, no function but that of going idle in a graceful or graceless manner, and of begetting sons to go idle; and to address Chief Spinners and Diggers, who at least *are* spinning and digging, 'Ye Scandalous persons who produce too much, My Corn-law friends, on what imaginary still richer Eldorados, and true iron-spikes with law of Gravitation, are ye rushing!' p. 202.

In the fourth Book, entitled "The Horoscope," he discusses the prospective view of things as compared with the present, and brings out more particularly certain indispensable measures of reform. The Legislative measures he proposes are, Free Trade, Land Taxation, permanent relations between Masters and Workers, Popular Education, and a regular system of emi-

gration. After proposing and discussing these with sufficient distinctness, he sums up the whole with "more home application" in the following terms:

"For the rest, let not any Parliament, Aristocracy, Millocracy, or members of the Governing Class, condemn with much triumph this small specimen of 'remedial measures'; or ask again, with the least anger of this Editor: What is to be done, How that alarming problem of the Working Classes is to be managed? Editors are not here, foremost of all, to say How. A certain Editor thanks the gods that nobody pays him three hundred thousand a year: two hundred thousand, twenty thousand, or any similar sum of cash, for saying How; that his wages are very different, his work somewhat fitter for him. An Editor's stipulated work is to apprise *thee* that it must be done. The 'way to do it' is to try it, knowing that thou shalt die if it be not done. There is the bare back, there is the web of cloth; thou shalt cut me a coat to cover the bare back, thou whose trade it is. 'Impossible?' Hapless Fraction, dost *[thou discern* Fate then, half unveiling herself in the gloom of the future, with her gibbet-cords, her steel-whips, and very authentic Tailor's Hell; waiting to see whether it is 'possible?' Out with thy scissors, and cut that cloth or thy own windpipe!" p. 287.

Mr. Carlyle, as we have before intimated, when writing on one subject, takes occasion to express his opinions on any other that comes to his mind. Some of these expressions of opinion, scattered through his work without much regard to systematic connexion, are worthy of notice both from the fact that they are *his* opinions, and from the peculiar manner in which they are expressed; an indescribable combination of seriousness and burlesque, irony and sarcasm, in which he is unsurpassed. Some of these we will present, without detaining the reader with particular explanations, as each one discovers its own object with sufficient explicitness.

"Governments are of very various degrees of activity: some altogether lazy Governments, in 'free countries' as they are called, seem in these times almost to profess to do, if not nothing, one knows not at first what. To debate in Parliament, and gain majorities; and ascertain who shall be, with a toil hardly second to Ixion's, the Prime speaker and spoke-holder, and keep the Ixion's wheel going, if not forward, yet round? Not altogether so: much, to the experienced eye, is not what it seems! Chancery and certain other Law-Courts seem nothing; yet, in fact, they are, the worst of them, something: chimneys for the devilry and contention of men to escape by; a very considerable something! Parliament too has its tasks, if thou wilt look; fit to wear out the lives of toughest men. The celebrated Kilkenny Cats, through their tumultuous congress, cleaving the ear of Night, could they be said to do nothing? Hadst thou been of them, thou hadst seen! The feline beasts labored, as with steam

up—to the bursting point; and death-doing energy nerved every muscle: they had a work then; and did it! On the morrow two tails were found left, and peaceable annihilation; the neighborhood delivered from despair.

"Again, are not Spinning Dervishes an eloquent emblem, significant of much? Hast thou noticed him, that solemn-visaged Turk, the eyes shut; dingy wool mantle circularly hiding his figure; bell-shaped; like a dingy bell set spinning on the tongue of it? By centrifugal force the dingy wool mantle heaves itself; spreads more and more, like upturned cup widening into upturned saucer; thus spins he, to the praise of Allah and advantage of his country, fast and faster, till collapse ensues, and sometimes death!" p. 257.

"Oh, Anti-Slavery Convention, loud-sounding long-eared Exeter-Hall—But in thee too is a kind of instinct toward justice, and I will complain of nothing. Only, black Quashee over the seas being once sufficiently attended to, wilt thou not perhaps open thy dull sodden eyes to the 'sixty thousand valets' in London itself who are yearly dismissed to the streets, to be what they can, when the season ends; or to the hunger-stricken, pallid, yellow-colored 'Free Laborers' in Lancashire, Yorkshire, Buckinghamshire, and all other shires? These yellow-colored, for the present, absorb all my sympathies: If I had a Twenty-Millions, with model-Farms, and Niger Expeditions, it is to these that I would give it! Quashee has already victuals, clothing; Quashee is not dying of such despair as the yellow-colored pale man's. Quashee, it must be owned, is hitherto a kind of block-head. The Haiti Duke of Marmalade, educated now for almost half a century, seems to have next to no sense in him. Why, in one of those Lancashire Weavers, dying of hunger, there is more thought and heart, a greater arithmetical amount of misery and desperation, than in whole gangs of Quashees. It must be owned thy eyes are of the sodden sort; and with thy emancipationnings, and thy twenty millionings and long-eared clamorings, thou, like Robespierre with his pasteboard *Etre Suprême*, threatenest to become a bore to us, *Avec ton Etre-Suprême tu commences m'embêter!*" p. 276.

"Man of Genius?" Oh, Mecænas Twiddledee, hast thou any notion what a Man of Genius is? Genius is 'the inspired gift of God!' It is the clearer presence of God Most High in a man. Dim, potential in all men; in this man it has become clear, actual. So says John Milton, who ought to be a judge: so answer him the Voices of all Ages and all Worlds. Wouldst thou commune with such a one—be his real peer then; does that lie in thee? Know thyself, and thy real and thy apparent place, and know him and his real and his apparent place; and act in some noble conformity therewith. What! The star-fire of the Empyrean shall eclipse itself, and illuminate magic lanterns to amuse grown children? He, the God-inspired, is to twang harps for thee, and blow through scrannel-pipes; sooth thy sated soul with visions of new, still wider Eldorados, Houri Paradises, richer lands of Cockaigne? Brother, this is not he; this is a counterfeit, *this* twangling, jangling, vain, acrid, scrannel-piping man. Thou dost well to say with sick Saul, 'It is naught, such harping!' and, in sudden rage, grasp thy spear, and try if thou canst pin such a one to

the wall. King Saul was mistaken in his man, but thou art right in thine. It is the due of such a one; nail him to the wall, and leave him there. So ought copper shillings to be nailed on counters; copper geniuses on walls, and left there for a sign!" p. 290.

"Democracy, which means despair of finding any Heroes to govern you, and contented putting up with the want of them—alas, thou too, *mein Löber*, seest well how close it is of Kin to *Atheism* and other sad *Ioms*: he who discovers no God whatever, how shall he discover Heroes the visible Temples of God? Strange enough, meanwhile it is, to observe with what thoughtlessness, here in our rigidly Conservative Country, men rush into Democracy with full cry. Beyond doubt his Excellenz, the Titular-Herr Ritter Kauderwälzsch von Pferdefuss-Quacksalber, be our distinguished Conservative Premier himself, and all but the thicker headed of his Party, discern Democracy to be inevitable as Death, and are even desperate of delaying it much!

"You cannot walk the streets without beholding Democracy announce itself: the very Tailor has become, if not properly Sanscullotic, which to him would be ruinous, yet a Tailor unconsciously symbolizing, and prophesying with his scissors, the reign of Equality. What now is our fashionable coat? A thing of superfine texture, of deeply meditated cut; with Malinnes-lace cuffs; quilted with gold; so that a man can carry, without difficulty, an estate of land on his back? *Keineswegs*, by no manner of means! The Sumptuary Laws have fallen into such a state of desuetude as was never before seen. Our fashionable coat is an amphibium between barnsack and drayman's doublet. The cloth of it is studiously coarse; the color a speckled soot-black or rust-brown gray; the nearest approach to a Peasant's. And for shape—thou shouldest see it! The last consummation of the year now passing over us is definable as Three Bags: a big bag for the body, two small bags for the arms, and, by way of collar, a hem! The first Antique Cheruscan who, of felt-cloth or bear's hide, with bone or metal needle, set about making himself a coat, before Tailors had yet awakened out of Nothing—did he not make it even so? A loose wide poke for body, with two holes to let out the arms; this was his original coat; to which holes it was soon visible that two small loose pokes or sleeves, easily appended, would be an improvement." p. 215.

"Methodism with its eye forever turned on its own navel; asking itself with torturing anxiety of Hope and Fear, 'Am I right, am I wrong? Shall I be saved, shall I not be damned?' what is this at bottom, but a new phasis of *Egoism*, stretched out into the Infinite; not always the heavenlier for its infinitude! Brother, so soon as possible, endeavor to rise above all that. 'Thou art wrong; thou art like to be damned;' consider that as the fact, reconcile thyself even to that, if thou be a man; then first is the devouring Universe subdued under thee, and from the black murk of midnight and noise of greedy Acheron, dawn as of an everlasting morning, how far above all Hope and all Fear, springs for thee, enlightening thy steep path, awakening in thy heart celestial Memnon's music!

"But of our Dilettantisms and galvanized Dilettantisms; of Pusey-

ism—O Heavens, what shall we say of Puseyism, in comparison to Twelfth-Century Catholicism! Little or nothing; for, indeed, it is a matter to strike one dumb.

The Builder of this Universe was wise,  
He plann'd all souls, all systems, planets, particles :  
The Plan He shaped His Worlds and Æons by  
Was—Heavens! Was thy small Nine-and-thirty Articles?

That certain human souls, living on this practical Earth, should think to save themselves and a ruined world by noisy theoretic demonstrations and laudations of *the Church*, instead of some unnoisy, unconscious, but *practical*, total, heart-and-soul demonstration of *a Church*; this, in the circle of revolving ages, this also was a thing we were to see. A kind of penultimate thing, precursor of very strange consummations; last thing but one?" p. 116.

"The Popish Religion, we are told, flourishes extremely in these years; and is the most vivacious-looking religion to be met with at present. '*Elle a trois cents ans dans le ventre,*' counts M. Jouffroy; '*c'est pourquoi je la respecte!*' The old Pope of Rome, finding it laborious to kneel so long while they cart him through the streets to bless the people on *Corpus-Christi* Day, complains of rheumatism; whereupon his Cardinals consult; construct him, after some study, a stuffed cloaked figure, of iron and wood, with wool or baked hair; and place it in a kneeling posture. Stuffed figure, or rump of a figure; to this stuffed rump he, sitting at his ease on a lower level, joins, by the aid of cloaks and drapery, his living head and out-spread hands: the rump with its cloak kneels, the Pope looks, and holds his hands spread; and so the two in concert bless the Roman population on *Corpus-Christi* Day as well as they can.

"I have considered this amphibious Pope, with the wool-and-iron back, with the flesh head and hands; and endeavored to calculate his horoscope. I reckon him the remarkablest Pontiff that has darkened God's daylight, or painted himself in the human retina, for these several thousand years. Nay, since Chaos first shivered, and 'sneezed,' as the Arabs say, with the first shaft of sunlight shot through it, what stranger product was there of Nature and Art working together? Here is a Supreme Priest who believes God to be—What in the name of God *does* he believe God to be? and discerns that all worship of God is a scenic phantasmagory of wax-candles, organ-blasts, Gregorian Chants, mass-brayings, purple monsignori, wool-and-iron rumps, artistically spread out—to save the ignorant from worse." p. 138.

We have thus presented an analysis of the work before us, accompanied with examples sufficient to give an idea of the plan of its author and the mode of its execution. It is superfluous for us to say that it is a work of much interest. Whether considered as a literary, political, or religious production, it is certainly a rare curiosity. It is the production of a pen which has won for its author a high reputation among the English and Scotch Essayists. It is the utterance of the opinions of a

profound thinker, on a variety of subjects which excite a large share of public attention. It contains many noble and truthful sentiments, uttered, if not in an attractive style, with an energy which must command respect. He who has read Carlyle's "Heroes," will have perceived that his sympathies are with the sturdy, gigantic mythology of the Scandinavians, rather than with the light graceful mythology of the Greeks; and this partiality exhibits itself in full development, both in his style of thought and expression. Rudeness and strength, rather than elegance and beauty, are the characteristics of his mind. One is often reminded in this book, of Old Thor, with his thunder hammer, doing battle with the frost and mud gótnus. We are surprised at the boldness with which he attacks every existing institution in England; Ministry, Parliament, Judiciary, Aristocracy, Clergy. But to our mind, the work has strongly objectionable features. There are passages which indicate, to say the least, a weakness in the author, and others still, which are clearly and radically erroneous. While we find in it much to admire and praise, we must, on the whole, characterize it as a book in style barbarous, in politics incendiary, in philosophy dubious, and in theology execrable. But we will be more specific.

In the first place, the work breathes an overweening, morbid admiration of the past. A striking instance of it may be found in the extracts which have been given. It is a trait which gleams out on almost every page. Whatever subject is treated, the sole standard by which it is tried is the past. Nothing at present existing, in the whole civilized world, seems to afford Mr. Carlyle any satisfaction, unless it be a germ of some institution, which to his vision affords dim promise of shaping itself in the forms and spirit of the past, or a relic of some obsolete barbarism. On the other hand, there is nothing in the past ever so revolting to common minds, but it elicits, in some aspect of it, his admiration. Scandinavian savagery, Moham-medism, with its lying imposture, 12th century Catholicism, with its bigotry and heathenism, the fighting barons of feudal times, whose digest of common law was,

"That he should take who had the power,  
And he should keep who can;"

Pope Gregory, Hildebrand, William the Conqueror, Oliver Cromwell, and even the French Revolution and Bonaparte, all

present to him some phase worthy of special notice and admiration. [Religion, as at present exhibited, he characterizes as a cant, hypocrisy, and quackery. The present systems of Government he characterizes as huge chaotic imbroglios, administered by sham heroes, valets, flunkies, inevitably running into Chartism, French Revolutions, Sans Culottic Democracy, and all other frightful terminations. The Catholicism of the 12th century is infinitely preferable to any religion now extant, however sincere and earnest; and no reform in religion is of any value which does not bring us back to that standard. Government must be reorganized after the same model, with such modifications as the change of circumstances requires. The Hero must be found by some means, and set to rule with absolute power; if nobody else can find him he must find himself, as Wilhelmus Conqueror and Oliver Cromwell did. A fighting Aristocracy, like that of the 12th century, is no longer possible; the idea is an obsolete one and cannot be revived; the genius of our time requires a working Aristocracy. But the relation of villainage, which subsisted between the old feudal proprietors and the peasantry, must be restored between the masters and workers, with absolute authority on the part of the one, and quiet obedience on the part of the other. "Despotism," he says, "is essential in most enterprises; they do not tolerate freedom of debate in a seventy-four. Republican Senate and Plebiscita would not answer well in cotton mills." This is probably the reason why he sympathizes so little with the "Anti-Slavery Convention, loud-sounding, long-eared Exeter Hall, and Black Quashee beyond the seas." Indeed, American Slavery seems to be essentially the system he recommends. The injustice and cruelty of certain masters he would deprecate; but the permanence of relation, and despotic authority are essential features of his system, and these being given, the abuses which exist in American slavery must necessarily exist in any society similarly organized, so long as human nature remains what it is at present.

Against any such system of social reform, all the past and all the present remonstrate with one voice. A single objection which lies against it, obvious and insuperable, is sufficient to condemn it without searching for more. It has been tried and found wanting. Suppose the world were brought back to the spirit of the 12th century: would not the same elements, again

set in operation, reproduce the same results? Mr. Carlyle himself tells us, more than once, that the present and future are necessary developments of the past; "the Life-tree Igdrasil has its roots down deep in the Death Kingdoms, among the oldest dead dust of men, and with its boughs reaches among the stars;" 12th century religion and politics produced the Reformation, French Revolution, and all the present "Atheistic Quackeries" in politics and religion. Of course, if the world could all be reorganized after the model of the 12th century, it must, from the operation of the same causes, return to a state similar to its present state, and in a period of time somewhat shorter than the *Anaus Magnus* of Plato. Mr. Carlyle believes in progress; is this what he means by it? Did he ever visit an old fashioned New England cider-mill, and see a horse fulfilling his "Life task," by travelling round in his own tracks?

We have accorded to Mr. Carlyle a large share of discernment—we have pronounced him a profound thinker, nor would we reverse that opinion. And yet, such a notion of things we call, in his own phrase, "a most poor platitude of a world." "Such a platitude of a world," we should say, "it were best to end; to have done with it, and restore it once for all to the götnus, mud giants, frost giants, and chaotic brute gods of the beginning." Had we no higher notion of progress, we would engage, heart and soul, in praying for the coming of Father Miller's Millennium, the sooner the better, and call on all good people to join us. We can sympathize with Mr. Carlyle in his dissatisfaction with the present state of things. The world is surely in a most sad condition. But for remedies—he who can look to nothing higher than the religion of the dark ages—12th century Catholicism, improved or deteriorated by German Transcendentalism, must surely have a very low range of vision. We are not disposed to despair of the world. We are looking for a radical, permanent amelioration of human society. But the light by which we look upon such an amelioration as a certain event, is not any faith we have in the perfectibility of human nature, nor any confidence in the influence of principles such as are developed in this book. We regard the event as rendered certain by the declaration of Him who has said, "I will overturn, overturn, overturn it; and it shall be no more until he come whose right it is; and I will give it him." "Behold I make all things new." We see a pledge of its fulfilment in the influence of principles which have already, to a partial

extent and on a limited scale, proved their efficiency ; principles which are "mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds, casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God."\*

Another objectionable feature in Mr. Carlyle's work, considered as a political production, is the frequency and constancy with which he insists on the necessity of a "French Revolution" in England. The following passage in which he very distinctly expresses this opinion, is only one of many :

"Yes, when fathers and mothers, in Stockport hunger-cellars, begin to eat their children, and Irish Widows have to prove their relationship by dying of typhus-fever; and amid Governing 'Corporations of the Best and Bravest' busy to preserve their game by 'bushing,' dark millions of God's human creatures start up in mad Chartism, impracticable Sacred-Mouths, and Manchester Insurrections ; and there is a virtual Industrial Aristocracy only half-alive, spell-bound amid money bags and ledgers ; and an actual Idle Aristocracy seemingly near dead in somnolent delusions, in trespasses and double-barrels ; 'sliding,' as on inclined planes, which every new year they *soap* with new Hansard's-jargon under God's sky, and so on sliding ever faster toward a 'scale' and balance-scale whereon is written, *Thou art found wanting* ; in such days, after a generation or two, I say, it does become, even to the low and simple, very palpably impossible ! No Working World, any more than a Fighting World, can be led on without a noble chivalry of Work, and laws and fixed rules which follow out of that—far nobler than any chivalry of Fight-

---

\* Mr. Carlyle finds some grains of consolation even in this age of Atheism, Mammonism, and all other despicable *isms*. "Truly it is beautiful to see the brutish Empire of Mammon cracking every where, giving sure promise of dying or being changed. A strange, chill, almost ghastly day-spring strikes up in Yankee-land itself ; my Transcendental friends announce there, in a distinct, though somewhat lank-haired, ungainly manner, that the Demiurgus Dollar is dethroned ; that now, unheard of Demiurgus-ships, Priesthoods, Aristocracies, Growths and Destructions, are already visible in the gray of coming time. Socinian preachers quit their pulpits in Yankee-land, saying, 'Friends, this has all gone to a colored cobweb, we regret to say !'—and retire to the fields to cultivate onion-beds and live frugally on vegetables. It is very notable." p. 294.

If Socinian preachers are, in any considerable numbers, coming to the conclusion that Socinianism has all gone to a colored cobweb, we will agree with our author that it is a most auspicious symptom.

ing was. As an anarchic multitude on mere supply-and-demand, it is becoming inevitable that we dwindle in blind suicidal convulsion and self-abrasion, frightful to the imagination, into Choctaw Workers. With wigwam and scalps—with palaces and thousand pound bills; with savagery, depopulation, chaotic desolation! Good Heavens, will not one French Revolution and Reign of Terror suffice us, but must there be two? There will be two if needed, there will be twenty if needed; there will be precisely as many as are needed. The Laws of Nature will have themselves fulfilled. That is a thing certain to me." p. 271.

We will not undertake to say how excitable the English people are, but we should think that amidst anti-corn-law leagues, chartisms, and insurrections of a people goaded on to madness and despair by grim starvation, it were of doubtful utility to tell them that the overturning of the Government and the violent death of the nobility is as inevitable as the unalterable laws of Destiny. His final hope is a hero-king: "Yes, friends: Hero-kings, and a whole world not unheroic—there lies the port and the happy haven towards which, through all these storm-tost seas, French Revolutions, Chartisms, Manchester Insurrections, that make the heart sick in these bad days, the Supreme Powers are driving us. On the whole, blessed be the Supreme Powers, stern as they are! Towards that haven will we, O friends: let all true men, with what of faculty is in them, bend valiantly, incessantly, with thousandfold endeavor, thither, thither! There, or else in the ocean-abysses, it is very clear to me we shall arrive." p. 35.

Now if there are any considerable number of men in England, who would like to have a Revolution, would not a strain of reasoning like the following be very natural: 'Mr. Carlyle tells us that the Paradise of Heroes lies beyond a French Revolution, and to that we must tend with thousandfold endeavor; nay, the Supreme Powers are driving us thither with stern necessity, and resistance to them is useless; the sooner we get through that Revolution the better, and the sooner we begin, the sooner we shall get through. Let us bend valiantly, incessantly, thither, thither, O friends!'

But such a conclusion would not depend upon mere inference; the thing is occasionally more plainly spoken.

"In all cases, therefore, we will agree with the judicious Mrs. Glass: 'First catch your hare!' First get your man; all is lost: he can learn to do all things, from making boots to decreeing judgments, governing communities; and will do them like a man. Catch your

no-man ; alas ! have you not caught the terriblest Tartar in the world ? Perhaps all the terrible, the quieter and gentler he looks. For the mischief that one blockhead, that every blockhead does, in a world so ferocious, teeming with endless results as ours, no ciphering will sum up. The quack bootmaker is considerable ; as corn-cutters can testify, and desperate men reduced to buckskin and list-shoes. But the quack priest, quack high-priest, the quack king ! Why do not all just citizens rush, half-frantic, to stop him, as they would a conflagration ? Surely a just citizen is admonished by God and his own Soul, by all silent and articulate voices of this Universe, to do what in *him* lies toward relief of this poor blockhead-quack, and of a world that groans under him. Run swiftly ; relieve him, were it even by extinguishing him ! For all things have grown so old, tinder-dry, combustible ; and he is more ruinous than conflagration. Sweep him down, at least." p. 87.

"The most Conservative English People, thickest-skinned, most patient of Peoples, is driven alike by its Logic and its Unlogic, by things 'spoken,' and by things not yet spoken or very speakable, but only felt and very unendurable, to be wholly a Reforming People. Their Life as it is has ceased to be longer possible for them.

"Urge not this noble silent People ; rouse not the Berserkir-rage that lies in them ! Do you know their Cromwells, Hampdens, their Pyms and Bradshaws ? Men very peaceable, but men that can be made very terrible ! Men who, like their old Teutsch Fathers in Agrippa's days, 'have a soul that despises death,' to whom 'death,' compared with falsehoods and injustices, is light ; 'in whom there is a rage unconquerable by the immortal gods !' Before this the English People have taken very preternatural-looking Spectres by the beard ; saying virtually : 'And if thou *wert* "preternatural ?" Thou with thy "divine-rights" grown diabolic wrongs ? Thou—not even "natural ;" decapitable ; totally extinguishable ?' Yes, just so godlike as this People's patience was, even so godlike will and must its impatience be. Away, ye scandalous Practical Solecisms, children actually of the Prince of Darkness ; ye have near broken our hearts ; we can and will endure you no longer. Begone, we say ; depart while the play is good ! By the Most High God, whose sons and born missionaries true men are, ye shall not continue here ! You and we have become incompatible ; can inhabit one house no longer. Either you must go, or we. Are ye ambitious to try *which* it shall be ?" p. 164.

Nor can it be said that this is a forced construction put upon a single passage or two, wrested from their connection. It is scarcely possible to construct a chapter more calculated to stir up a whole people to violent revolt, than that from which the last extract is taken. But as this is not a subject of practical concernment to us as Americans, we have accomplished our object by simply calling attention to it, as a feature of the work. Whether the present age is to witness a Reign of Terror in England, or not, we shall leave to the political prognostica-

tors to settle among themselves; but if it does, posterity will point to Mr. Carlyle as a direct instigator of it.

There are some passages in the work before us, that we know not whether to characterize as weaknesses, or wilful misrepresentations. The following is one out of many that might be selected :

"God's absolute Laws, sanctioned by an eternal Heaven and an eternal Hell, have become Moral Philosophies, sanctioned by able computations of Profit and Loss, by weak considerations of Pleasures of Virtue and the Moral Sublime."

"It is even so. To speak in the ancient dialect, we 'have forgotten God,' in the most modern dialect and very truth of the matter, we have taken up the fact of this Universe as it is not. We have quietly closed our eyes to the eternal Substance of things, and opened them only to the Shows and Shams of things. God's Laws are become a Greatest-Happiness Principle, a Parliamentary Expediency: the Heavens overarch us only as an Astronomical Time-Keeper; a butt for Herschel-telescopes to shoot science at, to shoot sentimentalities at: in our and old Jonson's dialect, man has lost the *soul* out of him; and now, after the due period, begins to find the want of it!" p. 137.

The phrases "Profit and Loss," "Greatest-Happiness Principle," "Benthamee Utility," are of frequent occurrence in the satirical and denunciatory outbreaks of Mr. Carlyle on the morality and religion of the present. And from the use of the epithet "Benthamee," one might suppose he has particular reference to Mr. Bentham, and other writers who have advocated the system of optimism in morals. But however charitable such a supposition might be, it is a supposition which a reading of his book will not sustain. It is perfectly clear that he intends to characterize all the morals and religion of England (which includes America, since the American mind is essentially English in its characteristics), so far as public expression is given to it, as built on a false foundation. Compare the extract above with the following :

"But now in these godless two centuries, looking at England and her efforts and doings, if we ask, What of England's doings the Law of Nature had accepted, Nature's King had actually farthered and pronounced to have truth in them—where is our answer? Neither the 'Church' of Hurd and Warburton, nor the Anti-church of Hume and Paine; not in any shape the Spiritualism of England: all this is already seen, or beginning to be seen, for what it is; a thing that Nature does not own. On the one side is dreary Cant, with a reminiscence of things noble and divine; on the other is but acrid Candor, with a prophecy of things brutal, infernal. Hurd and Warburton are

sunk into the sere and yellow leaf; no considerable body of true-seeing men looks thitherward for healing: the Paine-and-Hume Atheistic theory, of 'things well let alone,' with Liberty, Equality and the like, is also in these days declaring itself naught, unable to keep the world from taking fire.

"The theories and speculations of both these parties, and, we may say, of all intermediate parties and persons, prove to be things which the Eternal Veracity did not accept; things superficial, ephemeral, which already a near Posterity, finding them already dead and brown-leaved, is about to suppress and forget. The Spiritualism of England, for those godless years, is, as it were, all forgetable. Much has been written: but the perennial Scriptures of Mankind have had small accession: from all English Books, in rhyme or prose, in leather binding or in paper wrappage, how many verses have been added to these? In brief, the Spoken Word of England has not been true."—  
p. 168.

Here we have it! most unequivocally spoken. If Carlyle is to be charged with obscurity of style, he is surely not guilty of it here. Every thing that has been written in England since 1660, is without exception condemned. Do such sweeping charges require refutation? What if Hume, Adam Smith, Paley, and Bentham have published false systems of morals, and other writers have endorsed them, does it therefore follow that no religious teachers in England, in the last two centuries, have believed that there is such a thing as Eternal Right, and Eternal Wrong, independent of utility? Take the first sentence in the extract from page 137, and although it must be confessed that the religious teaching of England, for the last two centuries, has in plainness and pungency fallen far below the Cromwellian era, yet do not the facts warrant a simple denial of the charge? especially if we include the religious teaching of America, which is essentially English in its intellectual and moral characteristics.

But with what grace can Mr. Carlyle make charges of this sort? If he had a right to make them before he published "Past and Present," he certainly has not now. Nothing can be more inconsistent than the fulmination of such charges in that book. With what frequency he points out the evils which England now suffers, as the penalty for her present social organization, and her errors in religion—how constantly he dwells upon the greater miseries impending over her unless a radical reform be effected, the extracts already given are sufficient to show; and if more light on this point were needed, it is sufficient to say that this is the burden of his book—apparently his

object in writing it. All conceivable blessings are described as following in the train of "Herohood," while untold miseries and penalties are represented as inseparably connected with "Quackhood" and "Unveracities," "each unveracity escorted by its corresponding penalty."

Nay, it is Mr. Carlyle himself who has denied "God's absolute laws, sanctioned by an eternal Heaven and an eternal Hell." God's Moral laws, given to men who have power to obey or disobey them, are changed by him into Pantheistic "Laws of Nature," "Laws of Destiny," "Laws of the Universe," which must and will be fulfilled; and the *interest* of man is to observe their operation, and conform himself to them. "To reconcile Despotism with Freedom—make your Despotism *Just*, rigorous as Destiny and its Laws. The Laws of God; all men obey these."<sup>\*</sup> If the Laws of God are Laws of Destiny, of course all men obey them; they cannot help it. Compare this with the following from "Heroes":<sup>†</sup> "'*Allah akbar*,' 'God is great;' and then also '*Islam*', that we must *submit* to God. 'If this be *Islam*?' says Goethe, 'do we not all live in *Islam*?'. Yes, all of us that have any moral life; we all live so. It has always been held the highest wisdom for a man, not merely to submit to necessity,—necessity will make him submit,—but to know and believe well that the stern thing that necessity had ordered, was the wisest, the best, the thing wanted there. To cease his frantic pretension of scanning this great God's world, in his small fraction of a brain; to know that it *had* verily, though deep beyond his soundings, a Just Law; that the soul of it was Good; that his part in it was to conform to the Law of the whole, and in devout silence follow that; not questioning it; obeying it as unquestionable. I say this is yet the only true morality known.' Compare further the following: "Had he faithfully followed Nature and her Laws,—Nature, ever true to her Laws, would have yielded increase fruit and felicity to him; but he has followed other than Nature and her Laws;" that is, he has not conformed himself to the operation of the laws of nature, which "will have themselves fulfilled," and now he is suffering for it, just as the man who throws himself from a precipice will have

---

\* *Past and Present*, p. 279.

† *Appleton's edition*, p. 71.

his bones broken, as a penalty for not conforming himself to the law of gravitation. "I quitted the Laws of Fact, which are also called Laws of God, and mistook them for the Laws of Sham and Semblance, which are also called the Devil's Laws." "Ye have forgotten God; ye have quitted the ways of God; it is not according to the Laws of Fact ye have lived." "We have departed far away from the *Laws* of this Universe."\*

Such being the nature of the Laws of God, one may easily infer what, in the estimation of such a writer, the penalty of those laws, or Hell, would be. To show that we have not mistaken our author in the extracts given above we will give his views on this point.

"READER, even Christian Reader as thy title goes, hast thou any notion of Heaven and Hell? I rather apprehend not. Often as the words are on our tongue, they have got a fabulous or semi-fabulous character for most of us, and pass on like a kind of transient similitude, like a sound signifying little.

"Yes, it is well worth while for us to know, once and always, that they are not a similitude, nor a fable, nor a semi-fable; that they are an everlasting highest fact! "No Lake of Sicilian or other sulphur burns now any where in these ages," sayest thou? Well, and if there did not! Believe that there does not; believe it if thou wilt, nay, hold by it as a real increase, a rise to higher stages, to wider horizons and empires. All this has vanished, or has not vanished; believe as thou wilt as to all this. But that an Infinite of Practical Importance, speaking with strict arithmetical exactness, an *Infinite*, has vanished or can vanish from the Life of any Man: this thou shalt not believe!"—p. 145.

"Under baleful Atheism, Mammonism, Joe-Manton Dilettantisms, with their appropriate Cants and Idolisms, and whatsoever scandalous rubbish obscures, and all but extinguishes the soul of man—religion now is; its Laws, written if not on Stone Tables, yet on the Azure of Infinitude, in the inner heart of God's Creation, certain as Life, certain as Death! I say the Laws are there, and thou art not disobey them. It were better for thee not. Better a hundred deaths than yes. Terrible 'penalties' withal, if thou still need 'penalties,' are there for disobeying. Dost thou observe, O redtape Politician, that fiery infernal Phenomenon, which men name FRENCH REVOLUTION, sailing, unlooked-for, unbidden, through thy inane Protocol Dominion; far-seen, with splendor not of Heaven? Ten centuries will see it. There were Tanneries at Meudon for human skins. And Hell, very truly Hell, had power over God's upper Earth for a season. The cruellest Portent that has risen into created space these ten centuries: let us hail it, with awe-struck repentant hearts, as the

---

\* *Past and Present*, pp. 26, 27.

voice once more of a God, though of one in wrath. Blessed be the God's voice; for it is true, and Falsehoods have to cease before it! But for that same preternatural quasi-infernal Portent, one could not know what to make of this wretched world in these days at all. The deplorablest quack-ridden, and now hunger-ridden, down-trodden Despicability and *Flebile ludibrium* of redtape Protocols, rotary Calabashes, Poor-law Bastilles: who is there that could think of its being fated to continue?

"Penalties enough, my brother! This penalty inclusive of all: Eternal Death to thy own hapless Self, if thou heed no other. Eternal Death, I say, with many meanings old and new, of which let this single one suffice us here: The eternal impossibility for thee to be aught but a Chimera, and swift-vanishing deceptive Phantasm, in God's creation; swift-vanishing, never to reappear: why should it reappear! Thou hadst one chance, thou wilt never have another. Everlasting ages will roll on, and no other be given thee. The foolishest articulate-speaking soul now extant may not he say to himself: 'A whole Eternity I waited to be born; and now I have a whole Eternity waiting to see what I will do when born!' This is not Theology—this is Arithmetic. And thou but half discernest this; thou but half believest it? Alas, on the shores of the Dead Sea on Sabbath there goes on a tragedy!" p. 229.

Of a kind similar to the charges which have been considered, are Mr. Carlyle's representations of the prevailing views of the Universe. There is apparent in many parts of his writings an affectation of some superior discernment, into the nature of things; a penetration into what he calls, after Goethe, "the open secret of the Universe," which from frequent repetition it becomes a weariness to read. Himself, Goethe, Mahomet, the old Scandinavians, and all heroic men discern a profound mystery in the universe; but these "poor scientific babblers, with their nomenclatures and classifications," seem to imagine they have explained it all, and left nothing to wonder at. "The Heavens overarch us, only as an astronomical time-keeper; a butt for Herschel-telescopes to shoot science at, +<sup>as</sup> shoot sentimentalities at."<sup>\*</sup> "The power of fire we designate by some trivial chemical name, thereby hiding the essential character of wonder that dwells in it." "From us no chemistry, if it had not stupidity to help it, would hide that Flame is a wonder." "Thunder was not then mere Electricity, vitreous or resinous."<sup>†</sup>

Now whether the explorers of physical science, with their <sup>ave</sup>

\* *Past and Present*, p. 137.

† *Heroes*, p. 25.

## ARTICLE IV.

## THE NATURAL HISTORY OF MAN IN HIS SPIRITUAL RELATIONS.

By SAMUEL ADAMS, M. D., Professor of Chemistry and Natural History, Illinois College.

Und was die innere Stimme spricht,  
Das tauscht die hoffende Seele nicht.—SCHILLER.

*Moral Condition of the Human Race.*

WHENEVER any of the inborn wants or desires of a sentient being remain unsatisfied, and when its active powers fail to move in their appropriate sphere of action, that being is involved in disorder;—its own nature is in conflict with itself, and with the circumstances which surround it. Such a conflict must sooner or later work the ruin of that being, unless destiny itself shall cease to hold on its course, and will check its all-sweeping tide in deference to individual necessity.

It requires no argument to prove, that the human race is in such a state of disorder. We read this on the pages of the Bible, in the vision of the seer, and in the poet's lament. We trace the same mournful fact along the bloody track of history; and we still recognize its existence in the jarring passions and conflicting interests of individuals, sects and parties among us. This position might be established by an appeal to the records of human thought and feeling, from the first glimmerings of fabulous antiquity down to the present moment.

But consciousness not only decides the human race to be in a state of disorder, but in a state of *moral* disorder,—that is, a disorder involving guilt. The Bible refers to an original defection of man from a state of moral purity and happiness. The fable of a golden age of purity, peace, and universal benevolence, and of the subsequent departure of the human race from the standard of moral purity, forms an important element in most of the pagan mythologies. The discrepancies of these records do not invalidate their testimony as it bears upon the point for which they are referred to. The question is not whether any or all of these records represent real events. The question is not whether the various embodiments, which imagin-

ation has given to the spontaneous convictions of the human mind, are all true to specific facts ; but whether the *convictions themselves* are true to nature and true to the moral condition of man. Viewed in this light, a universal consciousness testifies that the human race is in a state of moral disorder ; and yet it recognizes man as standing related to an original state of moral purity. This conviction holds its sway over the mind through all the various shades of skepticism and religious belief. The believer and the infidel are agreed on this point. The one may believe that the moral disorder which curses our race has come down in an hereditary line of descent from the progenitors of mankind ; while the other may trace its origin to priestcraft, ignorance, and superstition. Both alike admit the fact.

We are not about to enter upon the discussion of the philosophy of the fall of man, or to inquire why God has permitted the existence of moral evil. The reasons for such permission must be involved in those which may be supposed to have induced God to create moral beings at all. For the possibility of moral evil is necessarily incident to a moral system. Therefore, to resolve to create moral beings is to resolve to risk that possibility. This antecedent possibility, therefore, is a sufficient ground for the actual moral condition of man. All that we can say is, that what, in the nature of the case, was necessarily possible, has actually happened. But wiser heads than ours have puzzled themselves on this point to little purpose. It is enough to say of many boasted theories on this subject, that their authors have ingeniously contrived to impose upon themselves, by presenting specious statements of facts as solutions of those facts, or by specifying some prominent instances of moral disorder as the causes of that disorder ; or less fortunate still, these theorists have frequently dealt in baseless assumptions, which do not even possess the merit of being the only assumptions, which if true would equally well account for acknowledged acts.

But the idea of moral disorder implies that man has failed in the attainment of the objects of his moral and spiritual wants. Hence arises dissatisfaction, unhappiness. But more even than this is implied in the idea of moral disorder. Moral disorder carries along with it the guilt of those beings who are involved in it. But guilt implies the power, on the part of the guilty person, of comprehending, so far as he is concerned, the moral order of the system to which he belongs ; and that he recognizes

and feels an obligation to conform to that order. Beings not thus endowed may be involved in disorder, but not in *moral* disorder—not in guilt. The fierce bull that attacks, and kills a man, is not held guilty for the act, but the guilt passes over to the owner, who knew that he was wont to push with the horn and restrained him not.

We are aware, that there exists a certain class of ethical writers, who deny, that there is in the constitution of the mind any stable basis for moral distinctions, and who attribute our various moral decisions wholly to the influence of circumstances. Those who embrace this view might object to an attempt to trace our moral convictions to any fixed laws of the mind, or to infer from these convictions any permanent wants of human nature. We shall not stop to dispute with this class of writers, but shall be content to follow the dictates of reason and common sense, and from a uniform result shall infer the existence of a definite law. It is admitted that the universal decision, that the human race is in a state of moral disorder, has grown out of the facts around us and in our own consciousness. But it is impossible to conceive how such a decision could take place, unless the mind be so constituted as necessarily to come to it in view of these facts. It hence follows that He, who has created the human mind, and ordered the circumstances of our being, is responsible for this decision. As God is true, this conviction must be relied upon as disclosing the real condition of man.

#### *Moral Anticipations of the Human Race.*

Thus we are compelled to believe, that the human race is in a state of moral disorder. We decide man to be in this condition, because we see him knowingly and voluntarily violating the great laws of order under which he has been placed by his Creator. This conviction is the necessary response of our own reason amid the circumstances with which we are surrounded. We must trust this conviction or we can trust nothing. Indeed so strong has the reliance of the human mind ever been upon the truth of this conviction, that skepticism itself has scarcely presumed to doubt on the point. But it has been stated above, that moral disorder implies guilt—exposure to penalty. Accordingly the anticipation of penalty is one of the strongest

tendencies of the human mind, under a sense of guilt. "A certain fearful looking for of judgment," is as universal as the sentence of condemnation, which the conscience of all ages has pronounced against the human race. Each individual in his own case dreads the penalty due to his guilt, while he confidently anticipates it in the case of all others. This is that sense of justice which demands that every sin should be visited with punishment, that every wrong shall be righted, and that the deserts of all moral agents shall finally meet their appropriate awards. Unless God has contrived to mock the human mind with delusive fears, unrepented sin is approaching a fearful doom. The ulterior inferences from the mind's anticipation of doom must be deferred till some of our other moral presentations have been considered.

But is that being who has once sinned doomed beyond the reach of hope? What is the testimony of human nature on this point? That testimony, whatever it shall be, must be taken as the declaration of the Creator of the human soul. If God had designed to leave mankind irrecoverably in this state of ruin, he surely would not tantalize them with delusive hopes, that he might mock their ultimate despair. On the contrary, if he intended to recover them from their moral ruin, he would contrive to keep alive a hope in the human breast. The inspiring influence of hope alone could nerve the soul to that energy of purpose and action which would enable it to rise from the degradation of sin to moral purity and holiness. The necessary effort could never be called forth from the gloomy depths of despair. It is therefore taken for granted, that in any scheme for the restoration of sinful man to purity and holiness, God would aim at securing the concurrence of the voluntary efforts of the sinner. Any scheme which should leave out this element, would aim at a physical, and not a moral renovation; and would do violence to the constitution of a moral being. Thus the anticipations, the hopes, the aspirations and longings of the human race, will indicate the designs of God with regard to them; that is, they will point to the moral destiny of man. What then are the anticipations of sinful man? Does the light of hope come in to scatter the gloom of despair with which sin veils the prospects of man? Or is the sinful mind forever doomed to darkness impenetrable, which a guilty conscience prompts imagination to people with the gloomy spectres of fear? The answer comes

with but one voice, resounding through the dim twilight of antiquity, and responded to on every page of history down to the present time,

“Hope springs eternal in the human breast.”

A cursory survey of the history of mankind will show that the human mind has ever clung to the belief, that there is some way of pardon for the sinner—some way of escape from the ruin of sin. So strong has been this belief that it has borne up the guilty mind through ages and ages of disappointment and uncertainty. It is doubtful whether any nation has ever been found so degraded as not to have some method for washing out the stains of guilt from the human soul. Sacrificial purifications, self-torture, and bloody sacrifices, have prevailed in all ages and nations. These bear witness to man's consciousness of guilt, and his hope of pardon. We see here the perpetual struggle of the human mind, to answer to itself the question, “How shall man be just with God?”—animated with the ever-living belief that a way of pardon was somewhere to be found. It matters not, for the purposes of this argument, that pardon has been sought by methods absurd in themselves and dishonoring to God. It is sufficient that it *has been sought*, and believed to be attainable. Here, then, is a universal conviction of the human race, that there is a method of recovery from the ruin of sin. Who can endure the thought that this is a mere delusion? Who can persuade himself that the Creator has undertaken to tantalize the hoping spirit with deceptive phantoms, that he may at last add the keen pangs of disappointment to the bitterness of despair? No, it is not so. This want of the human soul must find under the government of God a satisfying object. There must be some way by which the curse of sin shall be swept from the earth. “The desire of all nations *will come*,” and will dispel the doubts and uncertainties that hang around the destiny of man.

Man not only seeks to escape from the consequences of the past, but he aspires after complete perfection and blessedness in the future. In the bosom of solitude, while we sympathize with the beauty, order and harmony which surround us amid the lonely walks of nature, we feel that there is yet a principle and a power for good, which man may lay hold of to recover himself from his ruin. The soul that is attuned to the deep harmonies of nature, shrinks from contact with the jar and conflict of

society, and seeks in the shades of solitude the peace for which it sighs. "Oh that I had wings like a dove ! then would I flee away and be at rest. Lo, then would I wander far off, and remain in the wilderness. I would hasten my escape from the windy storm and tempest." This is the fond aspiration, which in past ages of the world has tenanted the caves of the mountain and the solitudes of the wilderness with some of the purest spirits that earth has known. The call that would rouse man to aspire after a better life, has not unfrequently been "the voice of one crying in the wilderness." The tenant of the cave has often been resorted to for instruction with regard to the high destiny of man. This disposition of the human mind to seek peace and happiness in solitude, has thrown a dignity and a charm around pastoral life, and made it the theme of some of the sweetest strains of poetry. Indeed all of the fine arts have originated in the restless strivings of the soul after perfection, in which it seeks to realize in the creations of genius that order, beauty and harmony for which it longs, but which it fails to find in its converse with the world.

But it is not enough for the mind to taste of peace in solitude, or to realize perfection in the creations of genius, if this were possible. The solitary spirit is not content to be blest alone. It seeks for, it believes in a state of perfect blessedness within the reach of the whole human race. Poets have predicted such a state, and philosophers have sought to realize it in the doctrines they have taught, and in the systems they have framed. Imagination has ever been busy in depicting the scenes which such a state will disclose ; and reason has ever struggled to devise means for the attainment of that glorious destiny ; while hope, ever aspiring, has delighted in each new picture, and eagerly embraced each new system in its turn, as each seemed better suited to satisfy the restless cravings of the soul. That such an aspiration is natural to the human mind, is proved by the extant records of human thought and feeling in the Hebrew and Christian Scriptures, in Heathen fable, and even in the writings of infidels. This aspiration breathes forth in the servid language of Isaiah's prediction of Messiah's reign, its echo is heard in the "redeunt Saturnia regna" of Virgil, and far down the track of time a response comes from the wilds of Indiana—from the New Harmony of Robert Owen. It would not be difficult to establish this point by copious quotations from the sacred writings, the poetry and philosophy of all

ages. It would be easy thus to show that Jews and Pagans, Christians and Infidels, have agreed in longing and hoping for, and predicting the attainment of a state of perfection by man. The Atheist even exults in the prospect of the ascendancy of the "Divine Laws of Human Nature" over the "tyranny of custom," and predicts a complete regeneration of the human race, when that happy consummation shall take place. On this point we cannot forbear to quote the following passages from the poet and *seer* of Atheism. The first is from the "Revolt of Islam:"

"Victory! victory to the prostrate nations!  
 \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \*  
 Thoughts have gone forth whose powers can sleep no more.  
 Victory, victory! Earth's remotest shore,  
 Regions that groan beneath the Antarctic stars,  
 The green lands, cradled in the roar  
 Of western waves, and wildernesses  
 Peopled and vast, which skirt the oceans  
 Where morning dyes her golden tresses,  
 Shall soon partake our high emotions.  
 Kings shall turn pale! Almighty Fear,  
 The Fiend-God, when our charmed name he hear,  
 Shall fade like shadow from his thousand fanes,  
 While Truth with Joy enthroned, o'er his last empire reigns."

The following extracts are from "Queen Mab:"

"Some, eminent in virtue, shall start up  
 Even in perversest time,  
 The truth of whose pure lips shall never die,  
 Shall bind the scorpion Falsehood with a wreath  
 Of ever-living flame,  
 Until the monster sting himself to death."  
 \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \*  
 "How sweet a scene will earth become,  
 Of purest spirits a pure dwelling-place,  
 Symphonious with the planetary spheres,  
 When man with changeless nature coalescing  
 Will undertake regeneration's work."

Quotations of a similar import might be multiplied almost indefinitely, from the same author.

Thus it will be seen, that Shelley assumes the prophet, as well as Isaiah, and predicts the regeneration of the human race with no less confidence than the Hebrew seer. It is true that the two *prophets* (?) do not agree in their philosophy of the moral disorder that curses our race; but both alike admit its existence.

They differ also in their views of what will constitute the state of perfection, which they unite in predicting, as well as in their notions of the means by which it is to be attained. But both alike give utterance to the undying hopes and aspirations of man—hopes which have often cheered the mind of the darkest pagan, and almost awakened the assurance of faith in the bosom of skepticism itself.

Such facts in the history of man constitute, in an important sense, a revelation. They reveal the strong impulses of human nature, like the instincts of the lower animals, reaching out after their corresponding objects. But the minutest wants of the meanest insect are all supplied by an ever-watchful Providence. And is man made a prey to restless longings, for which there are no satisfying objects? Is he alone of all terrestrial beings endowed with powers which have no appropriate end or aim? Is he doomed to float at random on the changing stream of circumstances, and destined never to reach a peaceful, quiet shore? Unless man has been made by his Creator the sport of vain and delusive hopes, this aspiration of our nature looks forward to a glorious destiny for the human race.

We are aware that some may be disposed to allege, that the wide-spread predictions of the future regeneration of man, are no evidence of the existence of a corresponding instinctive tendency of human nature. It is supposed that these predictions are mostly traditional, and therefore cannot be considered as the spontaneous growth of the soil of the human heart. The lovers of the Bible are fond of tracing the shadowy predictions, which are scattered through the works of pagan writers, to the glorious utterances of the Hebrew prophets. Admitting all this to be true, it does not invalidate the argument which we would base upon the facts. Suppose that Isaiah were the first of mortals that ever gave utterance to the aspirations of the human soul after perfection. How does it happen that a word spoken in a corner has flown abroad upon the beams of light, on the wings of thought—has penetrated through the barriers of diversity of language—has pervaded all nations—has become a permanent element in the literature of all ages—has been consecrated in undying song, and has become universally enshrined among the cherished hopes of man? If it be admitted that such was the origin of these predictions, we cannot account for their spread and preservation without admitting what we have claimed above. If such were the nature of the facts, it would prove

the existence of an original aspiration already struggling into light. The words of the Hebrew *seer* could only have been echoed by the whole human race, because that in them a universal feeling of human nature found utterance. That universal aspiration must bind our race to a destiny transcendently sublime, or mockery and delusion are stamped upon the very lineaments of the soul itself.

But the mind of man aspires not only after ultimate social perfection, but after individual renovation. Man ever seeks a satisfying good, and believes it attainable. A life of disappointments cannot drive him from his faith in the ultimate attainableness of a satisfying portion for the soul. It is but too obvious, however, that the anticipations of man, whether of hope or fear, do not meet their complete fulfilment in this life. But the close of the career of man on earth does not forbid the realization of those instinctive anticipations, around which have clustered the hopes and the fears of this life. Fear looks forward to the hour of death, as an introduction to the arrears of penalty, which have failed to overtake guilt in the present state of existence. And hope does not expire even at the grave. We follow suffering humanity through the weary pilgrimage of life; we see the grave close over its mortal remains, and our faith in a life to come derives new strength from the failure of human hopes in this. We plant the tree of immortal hope over the wreck of mortality, and it blooms forth afresh, deriving renewed vigor from the decay of the tomb. Thus the disappointments of the present scene of things compel us to look to a future life for a supply of the deficiencies of this. Human hope, failing to meet its satisfying objects in this life, takes wing, and crossing the dark valley of the shadow of death,

“Rests and expatiates in a life to come.”

The necessity of a future life, therefore, is involved in the necessity that guilt shall finally meet its penalty, and that the cravings of human nature shall at last be satisfied. It may not be inappropriate to notice the bearings of this argument a little more in detail.

It has been remarked, that the forebodings of a guilty conscience are rarely, if ever, fully realized in this life. The threatenings of a guilty mind pursue it to the last moment of earthly existence, and still promise a fearful retribution to be realized beyond the grave. “The wicked travaileth with pain all his

days. A dreadful sound is in his ears. He knoweth that the day of darkness is ready at his hand. Trouble and anguish shall make him afraid." The life and death of many a renowned skeptic prove that this is no exaggeration of the truth. That dread word *remorse* indicates the fearful reprisals which conscience is sure to levy upon guilt. The most successful course of crime is not safe from the terrific visitations of this inward monitor. Conscience may sleep through a long course of crime, but she never dies. She shall *gnaw again*. The hour of calamity, the moment of death, arms her with tenfold terrors. If there be not, therefore, a future state of retribution, the last pang of human guilt is a lie—a lie for which the Creator is responsible. We almost tremble at the language we have used, though it be but hypothetically; and we fly to the alternative in which alone the mind can rest, that *God is true*, that man lives beyond the grave, and that the soul that perseveres in sin is hastening to a ruin, which it *must* meet at some point in its course of future existence. Such is the teaching of human nature,—such the teaching of the Author of human nature. All the efforts of a perverse ingenuity have never been able to invalidate this testimony, as it is written upon the very framework of the soul of man. However unbelief may continue to blunt the sensibilities of the conscience, and for a time to spread a delusive calm over the mind, by the influence of things seen and temporal, yet it can never change the essential nature of the soul. It may pervert its powers and bear it on to ruin, but it can never entirely tranquilize its instinctive presentiment of the doom that awaits it.

"You may break, you may injure the vase as you will,  
But the scent of the roses will hang round it still."

In no case is the mind under a stronger impulse to fly for relief to the belief in a future state, than in view of the unrequited wrongs of this life. What millions have lived and died, whose lives have been one unbroken series of sufferings under cruelty and wrong! We are unable to reconcile the existence of such beings to our own sense of right, much less to divine goodness and justice, without admitting the reality of a future state, where the downtrodden and oppressed shall be released from bondage and cruelty, and the pride of the oppressor shall be brought low. There is no agony more intense, than that which springs from witnessing the protracted triumph of wrong, with

no prospect of redress for the sufferer. And yet triumphant wrong has crushed, and will continue to crush millions of throbbing hearts, without a hope of redress, unless redress be found in a life beyond the grave. But the belief in a future life comes in to the relief of the mind in its agony of almost despair. Were it not for this assurance, life would be unendurable to the victim of unrequited wrong. But how consoling to the grief-worn slave is the thought that

"'Tis but to die, and then to weep no more"—

that there is a life to come, "where the servant is free from his master," where "the wicked cease from troubling, and the weary are at rest." A just God cannot disappoint this last hope of suffering humanity.

If we were not obliged to infer the reality of a future state in order to solve the enigma of this life, we should still be compelled to infer it as a direct object of the instinctive anticipations and wants of the human mind. The idea and belief of immortality are found in the records of all ages, wherever the mind of man has risen above the mere instincts of the brute. It is true, that a few skeptics have professed to doubt man's immortality, while they have united with others in predicting the future perfection of the race. But such doubts can never change human nature. Infidelity may sneer at human credulity, and raise the cry of "superstition," "prejudices of education," "tyranny of custom," its proud mockings can never satisfy or extinguish the hungerings and thirstings of the soul. It avails not to try to prove to man that his hopes of immortality are delusive and vain. This can never satisfy the cravings of his spiritual nature. It is no comfort to the starving man to be told, that the food upon which his life depends is beyond his reach and his power. He will still continue to feel the gnawings of hunger, and to long for that food, which alone can satisfy his cravings. It is no comfort to the soul, unsatisfied with worldly good, to be told that its aspirations after immortality can never reach their satisfying objects. The soul will still aspire, and still wait in anxious expectation for the fulfilment of its hopes.

We are forced, therefore, to believe that man is immortal, or that human life is a delusion and a mockery. The past is strewn with disappointments, the present fails to satisfy, and the soul flies for refuge to the promises of the future. The

indebtedness of the past and the present is transferred to the future, whose ability to make full payment is never distrusted. Besides, there is in the human mind an instinctive aspiration after immortality. A future state of immortal existence is thus involved in the above fact, on the principles of reasoning which we have adopted.

#### THE MEANS, BY WHICH HUMAN DESTINY IS TO BE ACCOMPLISHED.

Having attempted to trace the great outlines of human destiny, as written on the very constitution of the mind, we come next to inquire into the means by which that destiny is to be accomplished. Two modes of inquiry here present themselves. We may examine the mind in search of some specific tendency, directed to a definite object, which object may be only one of the instrumentalities for attaining the great ends of our being. Or we may show, by a general analysis of human nature, that a given means is alone consistent with the constitution of the human mind. We propose to avail ourselves of both of these modes of reasoning, as may best suit our purposes for direct argumentation, or for answering any objections that may arise.

#### *Revelation.*

If man could accomplish his destiny unaided and alone, without the interposition of Deity, he would undoubtedly be left to himself. But if, on the contrary, the well-being of the human race requires an especial interposition on the part of God, that interposition would doubtless be granted. It is believed that such a necessity can be traced throughout the whole history of our race. The want of an especial revelation, received and believed in, has frequently left the serious mind a prey to the most gloomy forebodings. The lower animals never miss the path of happiness; while man without an especial revelation from God would seem unable in this life to reach the full fruition of his nature, or even to feel assured that he is in the path that will lead to its attainment. While the brute creation seems to revel in uninterrupted enjoyment—ever to drink at a perennial fountain of pleasure—it is but too often the sad history of human pursuit and human enjoyment, to “sow the wind and reap the whirlwind.” The phantoms of pleasure, pursued with such eagerness by man, have either perished within his grasp,

leaving the sting of disappointment behind ;—or worse still, they have remained an abhorred possession, clinging like a loathsome disease to the possessor, adding the bitterness of positive infliction to the pining of unsatisfied longing. Alas! what numbers have been forced in subdued anguish to exclaim :

“What good is given to man  
More solid than the gilded clouds of heaven?  
What joy more lasting than the vernal flower?”

However such despairing views may seem to be justified by a survey of human life, yet man must rise above them or cease to be a rational being. To yield undisputed sway to the gloomy spectre of despair is justly regarded as one of the most frightful forms of insanity. Man does not sink irrecoverably into the abyss of despair; but in his extremity he instinctively turns to God for light and deliverance. It would moreover seem that a revelation is needed to mark out the path to that perfection on earth, which is promised to man by the prophetic utterances of all ages and nations, by persons of every shade of religious belief.

We are not only able to prove the necessity of an especial revelation by an appeal to facts in the history of man, but a recurrence to the records of human thought and feeling in all ages will show, that man has ever *felt* that necessity. Mankind feel an instinctive interest in the secrets of futurity, and all nations have had their supposed methods of unveiling the mysterious unknown that lies along the dark track of the future. The extensive prevalence of a belief in omens, auguries, oracles, soothsaying, astrology, etc., proves that the human mind feels its need of an especial illumination over and above the ordinary light of nature. We also see in the light of these facts the prevalence of a strong conviction, that there is somewhere, accessible to man, a power which can and will give a revelation. Some have gone so far as to claim, that the bare existence of the supposed science of astrology is a strong proof, that there may be such an analogy between the movements of the heavenly bodies and the course of Providence, as that the latter may be foreseen, by our being able to predict the former; and the star, which led the Eastern Magi to the birth-place of the infant Jesus, is referred to as an instance of the kind. Without stopping to combat this notion, it is sufficient to remark, that the fact that many have worshipped the sun, the moon, and the stars, does not prove that these lumina-

ries are really Gods. It only proves that an object of worship is a want of the human soul. Neither does the fact that many have sought a revelation in the mysteries of astrology, prove that a specific revelation is written upon the face of the starry heavens. It only proves that an especial revelation is a want of the present condition of man. It is this feeling of want that has gained credence to the thousand impostures which have been practised in the name of religion. The mind oppressed with a painful sense of want falls an easy prey to the first pretender, who promises to bring relief. Thus we have an instinctive want of the human soul looking to an especial revelation as its satisfying object. And has God made no especial revelation? Is man doomed to be the perpetual sport of delusion—the helpless victim of vile imposture? Or has God given to him a revelation—"a more sure word of prophecy, to which we do well if we take heed, as to a light shining in a dark place?" Unless the bounty of heaven is unjust to man *alone* of all terrestrial beings, God has given, or will give, to man a revelation; one which shall commend itself to reason, satisfy all our spiritual wants, solve our doubts, and ultimately supplant the vile fabrications which imposture has palmed upon superstitious credulity.

It is interesting to notice, that miracles have always been expected by mankind to accompany an especial revelation. All, who have pretended to bring a revelation, have professed to work miracles, and their claims have been admitted by their followers. The mind is, therefore, not naturally averse to believing in the truth of a miracle, when it comes forward as an accompaniment to a revelation, which professes to enlighten man on the great interests of immortality. So far is this from being true, that man has been ever ready to believe every variety of absurdity, which imposture could invent in the form of a pretended miracle.

It will be readily seen, that Hume's famous argument against miracles is directly contradicted by these facts. He argues that it is contrary to experience that a miracle should be true, but not contrary to experience that testimony should be false; and therefore that it is more improbable that a miracle should be true, than that testimony should be false. It has been well remarked, that the assertion "that it is contrary to experience that a miracle should be true," is a mere begging of the question, inasmuch as it assumes the point to be proved, viz., that universal experience is against the truth of a miracle; that is,

that a miracle has never fallen under the observation of any of the human race. If, however, he means "that it is contrary to *ordinary* experience that a miracle should be true," he but paraphrases the admitted definition of a miracle, viz., that it is a deviation from what has been observed to be the ordinary course of nature. But if he means that it is contrary to the natural, spontaneous convictions of the human mind, under all circumstances, that a miracle should be true, we deny the truth of the assertion, and appeal to facts to prove that mankind have universally expected a revelation sanctioned by miracles. This brings us to the grand fallacy in the argument of Hume. He assumes that our belief in recorded miracles is *wholly* based upon testimony. He, therefore, very naturally concludes, that if he can shake the basis of this belief, the superstructure must necessarily fall. Now it may be true, that our belief in the occurrence of a *particular miracle* rests upon testimony. But our belief in miracles *at all* rests upon an *a priori* probability, that in certain circumstances miracles would be likely to be wrought. Without such probability testimony would never command our assent to the truth of a miracle. That such a probability actually exists is proved by an appeal to the spontaneous convictions of the human race. We do not stop to inquire whether these anticipations are consistent with reason; they are a part of human nature, and as such they must have their correlate in nature. This longing and waiting for some especial manifestation of the power and wisdom that rule in nature are never to be set aside by any process of reasoning, however elaborate and subtle. It is one of the primary axioms of all reasoning, that the instinctive tendencies of sentient nature are adapted to real ends and aspire toward *real objects*. Any argumentative conclusion, therefore, which contradicts this axiom must be false. Such contradiction amounts to a *reductio ad absurdum* to the assumption upon which the argument is based.

We remark, in conclusion, that an especial revelation is itself a miracle, though not necessarily the *manifestation* of a miracle. Hence a revelation, in order to gain the ear of the human race, must be attended with sensible manifestations of invisible power. The person who professes to bring a new revelation to man, must be prepared to meet the inquiry, "What sign shovest thou?"

The workings of man's instinctive feeling of want, and the

belief that God would miraculously interpose to satisfy the longings of his nature, have been the fruitful source of a multitude of pretended revelations. An interesting question arises, whether all of these systems, which lay claim to our belief as revelations from God, are nothing but mere pretensions. From the foregoing discussions we derive an *a priori* probability that one of these is a true message from heaven. If it be not so, the Deity has failed to provide for the wants of the most important of his creatures here on earth. We might proceed to test the claim of the Bible to be that message, by inquiring into its fitness to meet the wants of human nature. But we are here met by certain modern objections against the necessity of an especial revelation or of miracles to confirm a revelation, if one should be given. It is alleged that reason is competent to reveal all that is necessary for man to know, or to decide upon the truth of a revelation, if one be given, without the aid of miracles. In order to answer these objections it will be necessary to go briefly into a comparative view of instinct and reason, and to notice the manner in which they adjust the relations of those beings of which they are distinguishing attributes.

Instinct may be defined to be an impulse, tendency, or propensity, which, without deliberation, urges on, and guides the animal toward the grand destiny of its being. There is always implied an internal impulse, which urges the animal to seek those objects toward which its nature aspires, and a response of its own nature, by which it recognizes those objects when it meets them. Thus we are able to see how the relations of one of the lower animals are adjusted, and the ends of its being secured. It grows into existence with an organization and instinctive tendencies, which destine it for a peculiar sphere of action and enjoyment. The laws of its own organization are so made to harmonize with the arrangements of external nature, as necessarily to bring it in contact with the objects of its wants: but till it meets with those objects, it can have no conception of what will satisfy the painful sense of need by which it is harassed. An animal, then, can have no knowledge of the objects of its wants till it meets with them in nature, and recognizes them in the enjoyment.

Take, as an illustration of this point, a young animal for the first time seeking the teat of its dam. It moves not under the mere impulse of activity, but is evidently urged on by a

painful sense of want. It seizes without discrimination upon whatever small body may happen to fall in its way. It knows not the object of its search till it is found. The question may arise, How does it recognize the object when found? We reply, that it is so constituted, that when it meets with the objects of its wants, its nature responds to the impression made upon it, and the animal feels satisfaction, enjoyment. Take the duckling and chick, neither of which has ever seen the water. Both are alike ignorant of that element. Place them side by side on the bosom of the clear lake. The one glides easily and gracefully over the gentle undulations of the surface, or darts in sportive gambols beneath the crystal wave; while the other struggles for a few moments in terror and dismay, and then sinks and dies. Here the same physical impression made upon different natures in one case, is followed by the most delightful activity and enjoyment, while in the other pain and death ensue. But why is this difference? Because the organization and instincts of the duckling adapt it to the aquatic mode of life, and its nature responds to the impressions made upon it,—it *feels itself at home*. The nature of the chick, on the contrary, is adjusted to altogether different relations, and hence it spontaneously relunctates against those impressions which are not congenial to it. Hence, in order to secure the good of the one and prevent the destruction of the other, an inward impulse leads the duckling to seek and the chick to avoid the water.

Thus we see that the animal knows nothing of its sphere of action and enjoyment, till it finds itself in that sphere, and acts, and enjoys and meets the objects of its wants. It is not sufficient that beings affected with wants should exist, together with objects to satisfy those wants. In addition to the constitutional want and its corresponding object, there must be the inward impulse leading the animal to seek the object, and a spontaneous recognition of it when found. Thus it will be seen that instinct does not reveal to the animal the objects of its wants. It only urges the animal to seek them, and recognizes them when found. An overruling Providence provides and presents or *reveals* to the lower orders of animals, the objects which are adapted to their natures. Instinct, then, is not a *revealer*, but it *seeks and embraces those objects which are presented by the providence of God*.

It would seem from the foregoing remarks, that instinct is  
SECOND SERIES, VOL. XII. NO. II. 24

twofold in its operation, *impelling* the animal to seek the objects toward which its nature aspires, and securing or *regulating* the enjoyment of the object, when it is attained. For the want of better terms, we may therefore speak of the animal instincts as divided into *impelling* and *regulating* instincts. The former would impel the water-fowl to seek its favorite element; the latter attaches it to the water, and regulates its motions in skimming over its surface or diving beneath it. The one cheers and urges on the animal in the path of its existence; the other patiently labors to overcome the obstacles incident to the way, and to secure the enjoyments which the journey affords. Both principles go together in the lower animals, acting and reacting upon each other. They may, for aught we know, be equally impulsive in their action upon the animal. The distinction refers not so much to the precise mode of their action, as to the results to which they lead.

We come next to take a comparative view of the nature and relations of a rational being. And first, we are at once struck with the wider and loftier range of objects, towards which a rational nature aspires. The nature of the lower animal finds a full satisfaction in sensual gratification. Man has spiritual wants. His nature aspires towards the good, the beautiful, the true, the right, the noble, the divine. The objects designed to gratify mere sensual wants are brought in contact with animal nature by impressions upon the senses. Those objects which are designed to supply man's spiritual wants, can only come in contact with his nature by being *apprehended* by the intellect, or *comprehended* by the reason. Animal nature finds its enjoyment in mere sensible objects. The object of our spiritual wants is frequently an idea believed in as the representation of a reality. Reason, then, differs from instinct in the nature and dignity of the objects which it embraces.

But let us compare instinct and reason with reference to the manner in which they operate in adjusting the relations of those beings, to which they belong. Animal nature is brought in contact with the objects of its wants by the force of *impelling* instincts, by the exertion of physical, sensitive, and sometimes of feeble intellectual powers. A *regulating* instinct recognizes and embraces the object, when it is reached. These principles apply strictly to man as endowed with an animal nature. But reason subjects him to higher wants, and introduces him to nobler objects. Man's rational nature is brought in contact with

the objects of his spiritual wants by the force of *impelling* instincts, by the exertion of physical, sensitive, and intellectual powers. The objects, when reached, are recognized, responded to, and embraced by *reason*. The scope of the active powers and intellectual faculties of man corresponds to the wider range of objects to which he is introduced by reason. Reason then bears the same relations to *its* objects, as the regulating instincts to *theirs*. Reason is sometimes confounded with deliberation, reasoning, or argumentation. These are more properly intellectual processes accompanied by successive responses of the reason, as new truths arise before the mind. This brings us to another point, in which man differs from the lower animals, viz., in the power of protracted, well-directed and regulated attention. Thus reason frequently is brought in contact with its objects by voluntary deliberation. A regulating instinct is brought in contact with its object by the force of blind impulse. But as the intellectual powers are the servants of reason, it is obvious that the range of truth to which reason is introduced must vary with the different grades of intellectual development. Hence the same circumstances which suggest sublime truths to one mind, fail to produce any impression upon another. In the latter case the truth does not come in contact with the reason, for the want of a *medium* of communication.

If the above analysis be correct, reason is no more a *revealer* than instinct. It attaches itself to nobler objects; but they must be presented in order to be embraced. Man knows not what will satisfy the longings of his spiritual nature, till he finds those longings satisfied. God must present the objects to satisfy our spiritual wants, through the medium of perception, consciousness, or living utterance. Reason is adequate to recognize and respond to the truth, when it is thus presented, but not to reveal it from its own unaided resources. Reason is not the *light* but the *eye* of the soul. It does not *reveal*, but it *perceives* truth by a light not its own. It is not the office of reason to ascend up into heaven to bring the Word of truth down from above, or to descend into the depths to bring it forth from some region of darkness below, but to recognize that truth which is nigh unto us, even in our mouths and in our hearts. It is not the business, therefore, of reason to reveal truth, but to interpret a revelation when one has been given.

It would seem to follow from the above remarks that all truth is *revealed* truth. This in a certain sense is true, but it is not

necessarily an *especial* revelation. We may be told, that in proving that reason is not a revealer of truth we have not proved the necessity of an *especial* revelation. It may be said, that we have only transferred the responsibility of giving a revelation from reason to universal nature. The question, therefore, becomes, not whether reason is competent to reveal all that man needs to be apprised of, but whether *nature has revealed* all that is important for him to know.

In the foregoing discussion we have considered the Bible a part of the light of nature. The question now arises, whether that be a just estimate of its character. The universal belief of the human race that God has given or will give an *especial* revelation to man, creates a strong probability that such a revelation exists. To determine whether the Bible be that revelation we may first withdraw it from the light of nature, and see whether there still remains a complete solution of the destiny of man, and full satisfaction to all his spiritual wants. If the light of nature be found to fail here, we may then bring in the Bible, and see whether it supplies the deficiency, whether it possesses the essential characteristics of an *especial* revelation, and conforms to the instinctive anticipations of the human race in the mode in which it solicits our acceptance. The discussion of these points must be deferred for a future communication.

[To be continued.)

## ARTICLE V.

### THE WORKS OF JONATHAN EDWARDS REVIEWED.

By ENOCH POND, D. D., Professor in the Theological Seminary, Bangor, Me.

*The Works of Jonathan Edwards, D. D., late President of Union College; with a Memoir of his Life and Character, by Tryon Edwards. In two volumes. Andover: Allen, Morrill, & Wardwell. 1842.*

RIGHT glad were we, when we saw it announced, some few years ago, that the works of the late Dr. Edwards were to be collected and published in a uniform series. This is an object which we had long desired to see accomplished, and for which we had exerted an influence with at least one of the connexions of the family, to induce him to carry it into effect. The volumes before us leave us almost nothing further to wish on the subject.

The ancestry of Dr. Edwards was among the most honorable and venerable that can be traced in this or in any country. By common consent, his father stood at the head of American theologians in his own day; nor is it likely that his equal has been found among us since. His paternal grandfather was also an eminent minister, and for more than sixty years the pastor of a single church. His paternal great-grandfather, the Rev. Solomon Stoddard, was contemporary with the Mathers, and next to Increase Mather, exerted, perhaps, a greater influence than any clergyman in New England. On his mother's side, Dr. Edwards was descended directly from Rev. James Pierrepont, a distinguished minister of New Haven, Conn., one of the principal founders of Yale College; and remotely from the excellent Thomas Hooker, first minister of Hartford, who is still acknowledged as "the father of the Connecticut churches."

Dr. Jonathan Edwards, the second son and ninth child of the first President Edwards, was born at Northampton, Mass., May 26, 1745. He was but a child when his father was dismissed from Northampton, removed to Stockbridge, and became teacher and minister of the Indians residing there. The circumstances

of young Edwards, after the removal of the family to Stockbridge, are thus stated by himself:

"When I was but six years of age, my father removed with his family to Stockbridge, which at that time was inhabited by Indians almost solely; as there were in the town but twelve families of whites or Anglo-Americans, and perhaps one hundred and fifty families of Indians. The Indians being the nearest neighbors, I constantly associated with them; their boys were my daily schoolmates and playfellows. Out of my father's house, I seldom heard any language spoken, beside the Indian. By these means I acquired the knowledge of that language, and a great facility in speaking it. It became more familiar to me than my mother tongue. I knew the names of some things in Indian, which I did not know in English; even all my thoughts ran in Indian; and though the true pronunciation of the language is extremely difficult to all but themselves, they acknowledged that I had acquired it perfectly; which, as they said, never had been acquired before by any Anglo-American. On account of this acquisition, as well as on account of my skill in their language in general, I received from them many compliments applauding my superior wisdom. This skill in their language I have in a good measure retained to this day."

The rapid progress which young Edwards made in acquiring the language of the Stockbridge Indians, (the Muhhekaneew, commonly called Mohegan,) encouraged his father to provide him the means of extending his knowledge of the different Indian dialects. Accordingly, when he was nine years old, he was sent with Rev. Gideon Hawley, a missionary, to reside among the Oneida Indians. Owing to the war then in progress between the English and French colonies, which involved also the Indian tribes, his residence with the Oneidas was not long. Still, while he was with them, he made much progress in overcoming the difficulties of their language, and was a great favorite among the people.

The knowledge which Dr. Edwards thus early acquired of the Indian languages, was of considerable service to him in after life, and through him to the world. In a paper, first communicated to the Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences, and which has been several times published, he states many facts, and furnishes much important information, respecting the language of the Aborigines of this country. The Muhhekaneew (alias Mohegan) language, he informs us, is more extensively spoken than any other in North America. It is the language not only of the Mohegans, properly so called, but, with some variation of dialect, of the Delawares, the Penobscots, the St. Francis Indians in Canada, the Shawanese on the Ohio, the Chippewas, to

the westward of lake Huron ; also "of the Ottowas, Nanticooks, Munsees, Menomonees, Messisaugas, Saukies, Ottagaumies, Killistinoes, Nipecongs, Algonkins, Winnebagoes, etc." Mr. Elliot's Bible was printed in a dialect of this language, and could be read without difficulty by Dr. Edwards.

It is a singular fact, that the language of the Mohawks, which was also that of the Six Nations, was entirely different from the Mohegan. "There is no more appearance of a derivation of one of these languages from the other," says Dr. Edwards, "than there is of a derivation of either of them from the English. I have never noticed one word, in either of them, which has any analogy to the corresponding word in the other."

In the year 1758, young Edwards met with an overwhelming affliction, in the death of both his parents, he being at that time but thirteen years old. He was not left, however, without friends, by the aid of whom he was enabled to prepare for College, and to pass respectably through it. He was graduated at Nassau Hall, in September, 1765.

It was in the summer of 1763, while a member of College, that Mr. Edwards became impressed with a sense of his lost condition as a sinner, and his need of salvation through a crucified Redeemer ; and finally obtained a hope of his reconciliation to God through Jesus Christ. This was during the presidency and under the impressive preaching of Dr. Finley. In September of this year, he made a public profession of his faith in Christ ; preceded by a solemn and formal consecration of himself, with all his powers, possessions, and influence, to the service of the Redeemer. He pursued the study of theology with Rev. Dr. Bellamy, the particular friend and correspondent of his father, and commenced preaching in the autumn of 1766. The following year he was appointed tutor in Princeton College, and had the offer of the Professorship of languages and logic, which he thought proper to decline.

On the fifth of January, 1769, Mr. Edwards was ordained pastor of one of the Congregational churches in New Haven, Conn. In connexion with this event, an incident occurred, illustrative of the talents and attainments of Mr. Edwards, which is thus described by the author of the memoir :

"The day of the ordination had arrived ; the hour was fixed for its public services ; and the ordaining Council was assembled for the examination of the candidate, which was ordinarily but a brief and a somewhat formal work. But as the examination of Mr. Edwards

376    *The Works of Jonathan Edwards Reviewed.* [Oct.

went on, they were so much interested and profited by it, that they felt it alike their duty and privilege to continue the questions long after the time appointed for divine service at the church, so that, in consequence, they deferred the ordination services several hours, merely for the privilege of continuing the examination, and of hearing his answers, which were so ready, pertinent and instructive. The incident shows the respect and deference which they paid to the man, and also the practical influence of the clergy of that day over the people, in thus deferring divine service from ten o'clock in the morning, until late in the afternoon or evening."

The period of Dr. Edwards's pastoral life in New Haven, lasting something more than twenty-five years, was peculiarly unfavorable to success or comfort in the ministry. In the first place, the extravagances into which the great revival of 1740 had degenerated, under Davenport and others, were followed by a lamentable reaction, and decline of vital piety. Then this was the period of the Revolution, when naught was heard or talked of but wars and rumors of wars, and when the concerns of religion were comparatively neglected. A portion of his church, too, were in favor of admitting children to baptism, on the ground of the half-way covenant; and because he could not consent to this, they separated from him, and constituted another church. During the latter part of his ministry, several members of his congregation—men of influence and property—began to call themselves *liberal* Christians, and to advocate the principles of Dr. Priestley. It was this latter circumstance which led to the dismissal of Dr. Edwards; though the ostensible reason assigned, on both sides, was the want of support. He was dismissed, May 19, 1795; all parties—the church, the society, the council—uniting in the most ample testimonials to his abilities and faithfulness.

In January of the following year, he was installed over the Congregational church and society in Colebrook, Conn. Here he continued to preach to an affectionate and united people, until May, 1799, when he was elected to the presidency of Union College. His acceptance of this important office, and his arrival in Schenectady to enter upon the duties of it, were celebrated, both by the students and citizens, with unusual demonstrations of joy. He was fully sensible of the magnitude and responsibility of the work in which he was about to engage, and he went to it with earnest desires and prayers that he might be divinely assisted and strengthened to be faithful.

The period of his presidency, however, was short. In July,

1801, after much fatigue from preaching and other labors, he was seized with an intermittent fever, which, in less than a month, brought him to the grave. The circumstances of his disease, during the latter half of it, prevented his making a full expression of his feelings; but his death was altogether submissive and peaceful. "It becomes us," he said, "cheerfully to submit to the will of God. He is wise and gracious. He orders every thing for the best. The blood of Christ is my only ground of hope."

His funeral was one of deep and unfeigned sorrow. He was greatly lamented, not only by the surviving officers and students of the College, but by an extended circle of acquaintances and friends, and indeed by the religious community generally. All felt, to borrow the language of the preacher at his funeral, that "a golden pillar in the temple of God had fallen; that a radiant lamp in the seat of science was extinguished; that a star of the first magnitude had set."

Dr. Edwards was twice married, and had four children, two of whom, it is hoped, are still living. The first Mrs. Edwards was accidentally drowned, in June, 1782, greatly to the grief of her husband and of her numerous friends. The second Mrs. Edwards survived her husband several years.

In person Dr. Edwards is represented as slender, erect, and somewhat above the ordinary stature. His complexion was rather dark; his features bold and prominent; his hair black; his eye keen, piercing, and intelligent to a remarkable degree; his expression thoughtful and serious; and his countenance and entire appearance such as to command the highest respect of every one in his presence. One individual, who remembers him, says of his eye, that "it seemed as if it would look him through and through;" and another, that "after he first saw it, its calm and intensely penetrating look haunted him for weeks."

Dr. Edwards was constitutionally a man of strong passions, but he had learned to subdue them. Though keenly sensitive to injury, he never allowed himself in resentment, and was ever ready to forgive. He was very exact in all his business transactions; punctual in the performance of his promises; in prosperity but little elated; in adversity not much cast down; deliberate in devising plans of conduct; prompt to enter upon their execution; and resolute and unwearied in surmounting all obstacles to their completion.

The principal works of Dr. Edwards are his *Reply to Dr.*

Chauncy on Universal Restoration; and his Reply to Dr. Samuel West on Liberty and Necessity. Besides these, the volumes before us contain twenty-nine Sermons, a variety of articles first published in the New-York Theological Magazine, and other miscellaneous publications.

Of the sermons before us, some were written in the earlier part of Dr. Edwards's ministerial life; others are the fruits of matured reason, and a longer experience. Some were delivered on important public occasions; others seem to have been designed especially for his own pulpit. Some were published soon after delivery, and under the immediate eye of the author; others are now first brought to light, having been transcribed and edited from posthumous manuscripts. The most of these sermons are specifically *doctrinal*; though some are of a moral and practical character;—for example, that on “the Injustice and Impolicy of the Slave Trade, and of Slavery,” that on “the Marriage of a Wife's Sister,” that on “Submission to Rulers,” his farewell sermons, and those entitled “False Refuges Unsafe,” and “the Broad Way.” The last two here mentioned are admirable specimens of close and faithful dealing with the conscience, and will well compare with some of the awakening revival sermons of the first President Edwards.

The intelligent, faithful minister will studiously endeavor to adapt his discourses to the circumstances of the age in which he lives. He will meet and refute—not old, exploded heresies and objections, but the living errors of the times—those which are advocated and propagated around him. Of such wisdom and faithfulness Dr. Edwards was an eminent example. The age in which he lived was one of *infidelity*—open, unblushing infidelity. This was the natural result of the sympathy extensively felt among us for the pseudo-republicans, the revolutionists of France. Accordingly we find Dr. Edwards strenuously exerting himself to meet this aspect of the times. He has one sermon on “Depravity the source of Infidelity;” and another admirable election sermon entitled, “the Belief of Christianity essential to Political Prosperity.” Among his miscellanies, are two articles on the same general subject: “Deistic Objections, with Answers;” and “Short Comments on new Texts.” The new texts here commented on, are short passages from Thomas Paine, which are dissected, retorted, used up, in the fewest words possible, in a manner peculiar to Dr. Edwards.

It was said by the Deistical writers of that day, that Chris-

tianity had rather corrupted than improved the morality of nations; that the morals of ancient heathen nations were even better than those of modern Christians. In his election sermon before referred to, Dr. E. takes up this objection, and proves conclusively that, however degenerate the Christian world may be, still, in point of temperance, chastity, truth, justice, humanity, indeed every thing which enters into the idea of public virtue, it is greatly in advance of the most enlightened heathen nations of antiquity.

It was while Dr. Edwards was on the stage, that Priestley came to this country, and commenced propagating his various errors. Though his professed followers were never numerous, still there were many, especially in our cities, who were ready to lend him a listening ear. This was the case, as we have said, with some of Dr. Edwards's congregation. Accordingly we find him, like a faithful watchman on the wall, sounding the alarm, prepared to combat the incipient error in all the forms which it had then assumed. In one sermon, he refutes the materialism of Priestley, and his unscriptural doctrine of an unconscious sleep between death and the resurrection.\*

He has several elaborate discourses on the *atonement*—its nature, consistency, and necessity; a doctrine which, of course, Priestley and his followers denied. He shows in several places, and by various forms of argument, that "mere repentance furnishes no ground of pardon," and that a principle of this nature, adopted and acted on in any government, would work its ruin.

We regard Dr. Edwards's sermons on the atonement as among the most valuable of his publications. They did much towards changing the previously common mode of thinking and teaching on the subject, and led to the adoption of those consistent and scriptural views, which have since generally prevailed among the evangelical clergy of New England. By considering justice under the three divisions of commutative, distributive, and public or general justice, and showing that it is *the latter* which is satisfied by the atonement, he proves, what in no other way can be proved, that a full atonement, and a free, and full, and gracious pardon, are entirely consistent ideas.

---

\* By mistake, parts of this sermon are published twice. Compare Vol. II. pp. 303 and 309, with pp. 497 and 529.

Among the errors of Priestley, was that of universal restoration. Nor was it peculiar to him and his followers. It came up, in a more threatening aspect, from another quarter. The Rev. Dr. Chauncy, who had been for more than half a century pastor of the first church in Boston—a man of great mental vigor and power, of much and varied learning, and of almost unbounded influence in certain quarters, who commenced his ministerial life a Calvinist, but was afterwards known as an Arminian, closed his downward career by publishing a volume in proof of universal restoration. It was, indeed, published anonymously, and in the first instance, we believe, in London; but it soon came to this country, and was acknowledged as the work of Dr. Chauncy. About the same time, other works of the same general import made their appearance in New England. Indeed, the doctrine of universal salvation began to be preached here, and preached at New Haven, under the very droppings of Dr. Edwards's sanctuary. In such circumstances, it was not in the nature of things for the learned Doctor to sit an idle spectator. He preached against universal salvation. He refuted Mr. Murray, who had promulgated the doctrine in New Haven, on the spot. He published remarks upon the principal works which inculcated the fascinating error. To the volume of Chauncy, he prepared and published an extended and elaborate reply—sufficient of itself, if he had written nothing else, to establish his reputation as one of the acutest reasoners and soundest divines that the world ever saw. We shall have occasion to advert to this work again. His strictures upon Murray are some of them so amusing and convincing, that we cannot forbear quoting a single passage. In reasoning from the Divine goodness, Mr. Murray had made his appeal to parental affection, in the following terms; “Can you, an affectionate parent, take your own child, and cast it into a glowing oven? No. But hath not God as much goodness and tenderness as you? How then can you suppose that he will cast any of his children into the lake of fire and brimstone, and confine them there for ever?” In reply, Dr. Edwards gives this turn to the argument, in order to show that, if it proves any thing, it proves vastly too much.

“Can you, an affectionate parent, throw down your child from eminences, so as to break his bones, mangle his flesh, and dislocate his neck? Or can you plunge him into a raging sea, and leave him to the mercy of the waves? Can you cast him to be devoured

by lions or tigers? Can you voluntarily bring on him the tortures of convulsions, of the colic or of the stone? Can you set your house on fire, and in it consume your wife, your children and whole family together? I know you cannot think of doing any of these. But hath not God as much goodness and tenderness as you? How then can you suppose that he will ever treat any of his children in this manner? Yet in fact he doth all those things to his children. The instances are very common. This shows the absurdity of all such arguments as that stated above; which however are the most popular, and, with many, the most convincing arguments employed to prove universal salvation. It is mere trifling to argue against future punishment, on principles which cannot be reconciled with God's common providence; and to assert boldly that God cannot do what we all see and know that he in fact doth."

Other errors of the times of Dr. Edwards, and these prevailing among ministers and churches of his own denomination, were of decidedly an Arminian character. The great doctrines of grace, such as the entire depravity of the natural man, the necessity of regeneration by the special influence of the Holy Spirit, Divine sovereignty, and personal election, were openly rejected and impugned. The Arminianism prevailing at that day in many of the Congregational churches, was not that of Wesley and his followers. It was cold, formal, lifeless, heartless, doubting as to the reality of experimental religion, and sneering at those who made pretensions to it, or were earnestly endeavoring to promote it. It was precisely through this channel that Unitarianism crept into the Congregational churches of New England; and the leaven was already at work, visibly, fatally, in the days of Dr. Edwards. Accordingly, much of his preaching and writing had respect directly to the class of errors here referred to. The title of one of the sermons in these volumes is, "God the author of all good Volitions and Actions;" and of another, "The Acceptance and Safety of the Elect." In his miscellaneous articles, he wrote on "the Doctrine of Election," on "Moral Agency," and on "Free Agency and Absolute Decrees reconciled." His Reply to Dr. West, which, next to his Reply to Chauncy, was the most important work of his life, had an immediate bearing on the same general subject. His great object in this discussion, like that of his father in his treatise on the Will, was to show, that the Calvinistic doctrines of Divine decrees and election were entirely consistent with the free agency of man.

In the early days of New England, ministers of the gospel were accustomed to take an important part in political proceed-

ings and discussions. Their advice was often sought by legislators and governors; and public measures were remarked upon with much freedom, even in the pulpit. This custom extended down to the times of Dr. Edwards; and we have a singular illustration of it in his sermon entitled "Submission to Rulers." It was "preached at the annual Freemen's Meeting for Voting," in the year 1775, at the very commencement of the American Revolution. The text was Romans 13: 1, 2—"Let every soul be subject to the higher powers: for there is no power but of God. The powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever, therefore, resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God." After an extended and elaborate exposition of the text, the preacher came to the following conclusion:

"Upon the whole, I think we may justly infer that the doctrines of passive obedience and non-resistance are not the doctrines of the Bible, and that non-resistance to the supreme powers is no more taught in the Scriptures, than non-resistance to our fellow men, and even to thieves, robbers, and those who use the most abusive violence. I hope, therefore, that our text, and some other passages of Scripture, all of which are to be taken in the same sense, will no more be quoted to prove and sustain the doctrines of passive obedience and non-resistance, especially in times like these. The truth is, and the whole spirit of Scripture sustains it, that rulers are bound to rule in the fear of God and for the good of the people; and if they do not, then in resisting them we are doing God service."

In applying the subject, Dr. Edwards urged upon the attention of his hearers, the freemen of New Haven, assembled in town meeting for the choice of representatives, the following considerations:

1. "As you ought always on this anniversary to make choice of those only to rule over you, who are real friends to your country and its constitution, so you ought to be especially careful in this day when the rights, the liberty, and the peace of our country are so immediately threatened. One man who is not a friend to the rights and liberty of his country, now chosen to any office in the civil government, may do more harm than ten good men in the same office can do good."

2. "You ought by no means to vote for a man who declares 'that he considers the citizens of Boston not as suffering in the common cause of American liberty, but as suffering the fruits of their own folly and rashness.' Such speeches have been made, and by some who would like to be chosen to office. But you ought to mark such men, and show your disapprobation of their sentiments and your love for your country, by refusing to give them your votes."

3. "Nor ought you to vote for those who speak contemptuously of the late law of our Assembly so necessary to put us in a posture of

self-defence; who either say, that it was foolish to make any such law, and that it is the most easy thing in the world for Great Britain to subdue this country; or who say, that they never were for these armings and trainings of the soldiers; that all the burden comes upon the farmers; that they must pay the expenses of the soldiers' training, and also must train themselves; and that they must go to Boston, and expose their lives in battle, for that gentlemen, and particularly the gentlemen of the Assembly, never expected to go there or any where else to fight."

4. "Once more, let me caution you against giving your votes for a man who being a farmer himself, and a known candidate for office, goes round among the farmers and tells them that it is by all means best for them to send a farmer to the Assembly, and not one that lives in the town or city. Such barefaced impudence is intolerable! I am astonished at it! And he must be shortsighted indeed, who cannot see through it. As well might such a one say, 'gentlemen, I would have you vote for me. I am the fittest one in the town to be sent as your representative. Let me have your votes.'"

5. "Finally; I would observe that we of this town, by some means or other, are become the objects of suspicion to many of our neighbors of the other towns about us. They suspect that we are not sincere and hearty friends to the cause of American liberty. This day we have a fair opportunity to remove this suspicion, by unanimously choosing men to represent us in the next legislature, who are known, and who on all occasions have appeared themselves to be, not only men of integrity and ability, but also hearty friends of the rights and liberties of their country, and steady opposers of every encroachment on these rights."

These extracts are presented, for the double purpose of illustrating the spirit and customs of the age, and of showing how much we are indebted to the ministers of that age—pious, orthodox ministers, for our national existence and independence. Had they taken different ground—had they stood up before their people as the apologists of oppression, or as the cringing advocates of passive obedience and non-resistance, we might have worn the yoke of colonial servitude to this very hour.

It appears from Dr. Edwards's sermon on "the Injustice and Impolicy of the Slave Trade and of Slavery," preached before "the Connecticut Society for the Promotion of Freedom, and for the Relief of Persons unlawfully held in Bondage," in the year 1791, that anti-slavery in this country is no new thing. We have not time to go into an extended analysis of this able sermon; but thus much we may safely say, there is scarcely a sound anti-slavery position or argument, brought forward by abolitionists at this day, which was not taken and urged, close and home, by Dr. Edwards, more than fifty years ago.

It has been remarked already, that the principal, the great works of Dr. Edwards, were his reply to Chauncy, and his reply to West. Of these it may be proper to speak more particularly.

Universalism, properly so called, is of comparatively recent origin in this country. It was scarcely avowed, and it had no respectable advocates, till subsequent to the American Revolution. It has assumed different forms at different times; and has been argued upon varying, conflicting, opposite principles, involving entirely different systems of theology. And yet there has been little disagreement or dispute among its advocates; thus showing that with them the *conclusion* is the main thing—the means of arriving at it a matter of comparative indifference.

One of the first forms of Universalism advocated among us, was that of Relly, Murray, Dr. Huntington, and others, who based their conclusion entirely on the atonement of Christ. They believed that men were sinners—great sinners; and that Christ, a Divine Saviour, had loved them, and died for them. By taking upon himself our nature, they believed that Christ became *one* with the human race; that for them he obeyed the law, and suffered its penalty; that in his life he wrought out for them a perfect righteousness, and in his death discharged their whole debt to justice; so that now the law has no further demands, and never will have, against any son or daughter of Adam.

A second form of Universalism was based upon very different grounds. This supposes that the law has been transgressed, and that punishment is merited; but it will be inflicted upon the sin, and not the sinner. The sins of men will be punished with everlasting destruction, but themselves will go free. In proof of this strange theory, a passage in Paul's first Epistle to the Corinthians used to be quoted: "If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss; but *he himself shall be saved, yet so as by fire.*"

Next came the Universalism of the Necessarians or Fatalists. These were the strenuous advocates of Divine decrees; but they held them in such a way as to destroy free-agency, and nullify the distinction between right and wrong. 'There is no such thing as sin in the universe. One man does the will of God as much as another. Every man accomplishes perfectly the Divine purpose respecting himself, answers the end for

which he was made, and is a fair candidate for everlasting happiness.

The Universalism chiefly prevalent at the present day is very different from either of the above. This supposes that men sin more or less, and that they suffer the full penalty of the law in the present life. Every sin brings its own punishment directly along with it. The soul of man naturally is not immortal. His existence terminates at death. This lost existence is to be renewed, indeed, in the resurrection; and to reveal this fact is the principal object of the Gospel; but that is to be literally a *new* existence, having no connexion with the present, and not affected at all by the character sustained here. This form of Universalism is supposed to have originated with Mr. Hosea Ballou, Sen., and is that which is held and taught by most of the present promulgators of the doctrine.

Beyond and behind all the above theories, is that of a *universal restoration*. This asserts the existence of sin, and the desert of punishment, and of greater punishment than is inflicted in the present life. It extends into the other world, and will be felt, in the case of some at least, for *long ages there*—a period long enough to be set forth by the scriptural term for ever and ever. This punishment, however, is all disciplinary; intended only for the good of the sufferer; intended and adapted to bring him to repentance. He deserves no other kind of punishment than this, and in no greater measure than is necessary to secure his repentance. When this object is effected (as in the progress of things it infallibly will be,) the sufferer is at once released, restored to favor, and raised to heaven.

Such was the kind of Universalism advocated by Dr. Chauncy, and other Restorationists, and of which Dr. Edwards undertook a formal refutation. And to say that he accomplished what he undertook—most thoroughly, effectually accomplished it—is only to repeat what has been on the lips and in the heart of every candid evangelical inquirer, who has read his book, from the day of its publication to the present. He begins, by drawing out “the fundamental principles of Dr. Chauncy’s system,” comparing them together, and showing their utter inconsistency one with another. He proves in various ways the absurdity of considering all Divine punishment as disciplinary, and that none other is merited by the transgressor. He shows the consistency of endless punishment, with, not only the justice but the goodness of the Supreme Being. He goes into a full

consideration of the testimony of Scripture on the subject, refuting the arguments of Dr. Chauncy, and bringing forward an array of proof-texts in support of eternal punishment, which can never be set aside, but by rejecting the Bible. In conclusion, he says, "I have no apprehension that the doctrine of endless punishment will suffer at all by a thorough discussion. In the course of the discussion, many may be perverted to fatal error; yet the final result will be the more clear elucidation of the truth. However many may run to and fro, yet knowledge shall be increased."

We never look over this work of Edwards without strong emotions of gratitude to God, that he was spared, disposed, and assisted to write it. It is the most perfect refutation of the system of restoration, that has ever been given to the world. It is "the great storehouse of arguments to all who have since written on the subject." It was never more needed than it is at the *present time*, when the refuted error, if not openly professed, is secretly cherished by great multitudes. Most of the Unitarian ministers, throughout the world, are supposed to be believers in universal restoration.

The second great work of Dr. Edwards was his Reply to Dr. West, on Liberty and Necessity. The first President Edwards published his treatise on the Freedom of the Will, about the year 1753. After a considerable time, strictures upon this great work were prepared and published by Dr. Samuel West, of New Bedford, Mass.\* It was to these strictures that Dr. Edwards replied, in the Dissertation now before us, which was published near the close of the last century, during the author's residence at Colebrook. The subject of moral agency was not, at this time, new to him. He has one chapter upon it in his reply to Chauncy. He had preached upon it before the General Association of Connecticut, before his dismission from New Haven. He had read and pondered the treatise of his venerated father, from his earliest years. He begins, as was usual with him, by defining terms; and by pointing out the important distinction between natural and moral necessity, and natural and moral ability and inability. In his chapter on "Liberty," he has some remarks on the importance of settling the signification of terms, especially in metaphysical discussions, which we wish to present for the consideration of our readers.

---

\* A very different man from Dr. Stephen West, of Stockbridge, the immediate successor of the first President Edwards.

"I have long since thought, that this controversy concerning *liberty* and necessity, so-long agitated, might be easily settled to mutual general satisfaction, if the disputants would but fully explain their own ideas of the subjects of the dispute. But till this is done, what prospect or possibility is there of settling it? Our opponents accuse us of denying the liberty of moral agents. Now the truth or falsehood of this charge depends on the ideas they affix to the word *liberty*. If by *liberty* be meant what Law in his notes on King\* defines it to be, 'A certain physical indifference or indeterminateness in its own exercise'; then we do deny liberty. We deny that a man is or can be indifferent in the exercise of his liberty or his will. Or, if by liberty be meant an exemption from all previous certainty, so that it is a matter of uncertainty and mere chance, what our volitions are to be; in this sense also we deny liberty. Further, if by liberty be meant an exemption from all extrinsic causality or influence, so that our volitions are efficiently caused by ourselves; this also we deny. But, if by liberty be meant a power of willing and choosing, an exemption from coaction and natural necessity, and power, opportunity and advantage to execute our own choice; in this sense we hold liberty."

His next chapter, which is that on "Self-Determination," is, perhaps, the ablest in the work. He pursues, in general, the same course of reasoning which his father had done before him, showing that the alleged power of self-determination is not only unnecessary, but is an utter impossibility, involving the absurdity of a volition before the first. The position has been controverted in our own times, and to make its overthrow the more sure and easy, a *bad name* has been affixed to it. It has been called "*the Dictum Necessitatis*." As an offset to this, we would with deference propose another name—the *Crux Oppugnatorum*; for, most assuredly, a *Crux Oppugnatorum* it has proved itself to be, to all who have undertaken to refute it, or explain it away.

When a voluntary exercise arises in our minds, there is a change in our minds; and this change, like every other in the universe, must have a cause. And if we may not look without the will for it—if the cause is to be sought in the will itself, what cause can be assigned, except that we chose because we *would* choose. We put forth an exercise of will, because we chose to put it forth. Here, then, is an exercise of will caused by a previous exercise of will. And this previous exercise of will, for the same reason, must be caused by one previous to that; and so on, ad infinitum.

Or, if we look at the subject in another view, the same absurdity will follow. If we originate our own voluntary exer-

---

\* Page 248.

cises, we must do it either voluntarily or involuntarily. If we do it involuntarily, there is nothing gained, certainly, on the score of freedom. There can be no freedom or voluntariness in an involuntary act of origination, more than there is in the beating of the heart, or in the process of digestion. But if we originate our own voluntary exercises voluntarily, this is the same as saying that we originate one voluntary exercise by another; which runs us into the same absurdity as before.

But we assume in this reasoning, it is said, that before we can admit the operation of a cause, we must be able to understand the *manner* of its operation—which no man living *can* understand. “No man is competent to answer the question, *How does a cause act?*” Nor do the defenders of Edwards assume to know *how* a cause acts; but only that it *does act somehow*. It moves, it energizes, it does something; else it is not a cause. And what can a will do, in originating its own volitions, but *to will*? And if it originate its volitions, by first willing them, then is there a volition before the first.

The old advocates of the self-determining power used to admit freely, that the mind chooses, because it *will* choose; it puts forth voluntary exercises, because it *will* put them forth. But our modern defenders of this kind of liberty have become more wary. They are afraid—as well they may be—of Jonathan Edwards’s net; and prefer to leave the whole matter of self-determination as a *mystery*—an inexplicable mystery. But according to their statement of the subject, it is something more than a mystery. It is an *absurdity*—an *impossibility*. Here is a cause acting, and yet not acting; bringing forth results, producing effects, and yet doing nothing to produce them; which is impossible.

In the subsequent chapters of this masterly Dissertation, Dr. Edwards discusses the subject of motives, and their influence, together with other important collateral questions; and concludes with a prolonged and elaborate reply to objections. In nothing are the controversial writings of the Edwardses more remarkable, than for the manner in which they meet and remove objections. To use the language of another, “What must have been extremely mortifying, not to say *provoking*, to an opponent, in the writings of the Edwardses, is, that they would anticipate more objections than he ever dreamed of himself, and then answer them in such a way, as to discourage every attempt at reply. We have often, from our very hearts, pitied the prostrate theologian; and have been ready to sue for quarter in his

behalf, when we found that he was too far gone to speak for himself."

On one point respecting the will, the younger Edwards is more full and explicit than his father; we mean that of *Divine efficiency*. The elder Edwards had no particular occasion to go into this question; and he seems not to have wished to embarrass his argument with a subject which did not necessarily belong to it. It was enough for him to refute the Arminian notions of indifference and contingency; to demolish the proud fabric of the self-determining power; to show that the will is under the influence of motives, and is always (in the sense explained) as the strongest motive, so that, being thus subject to an established law, it may be guided and controlled with infallible certainty, and yet without infringing at all on its freedom or voluntariness;—it was enough for the first President Edwards to accomplish these important objects—so at least he seems to have thought it—without entering directly on the question of Divine efficiency. And yet it can hardly be doubted that he believed, and (if called to it) would have defended, this latter doctrine. He certainly held that our volitions, like every thing else that comes into existence, must have an adequate *efficient cause*. And where could he have placed this efficiency but in God? To have placed it in man, or in the will of man, would have been to set up again that self-originating, self-determining power, which he had demolished. To have placed it in motives, would have been absurd; since motives, in the sense of Edwards, are but the occasional, instrumental causes of volition—the reasons why they are put forth, and not the efficiency that produces them. Where, then, we ask again, could the first President Edwards have rested this efficiency, but in the great First Cause of all?

But what is matter of inference in regard to him, is absolute certainty with respect to his son. Dr. Edwards says expressly, "The Deity is the primary efficient cause of all things. *He produces volitions in the human mind*, through the influence of motives." Again: "He who established the laws of nature, so called, is the primary cause of all things. *He is the efficient cause of volition*, by a general law, establishing a connexion between motives and volitions."

In the structure of their minds, and their modes of thinking and reasoning, the two Edwardses, father and son, were in many respects alike. And yet there were characteristic differences

pretty strongly marked. The elder Edwards had more invention than the younger, more imagination and originality, more ardor of emotion and of feeling. He was more capable than his son of profound investigation, of plunging into deep and untried subjects, of traversing unexplored regions of thought and of truth. He was also a more moving, effective preacher. But in polemic theology, properly so called—the power of exhibiting and defending acknowledged truth—the ability to overwhelm and annihilate an opponent—we regard the younger Edwards as more than equal to his father. The difference between them, in point of intellect, was well stated by Dr. Emmons: "The senior President had more *reason* than his son; but the son was a better *reasoner* than his father."

The mental resemblance between the two Edwardses was more than equalled in the similarity of their acts and lives.

"The name, education, and early employments of both were alike. Both were pious in their youth; were distinguished scholars; and were tutors for equal periods in the colleges where they were respectively educated. Both were settled in the ministry as successors to their maternal grandfathers; were dismissed on account of their religious opinions, and were again settled in retired country towns, over congregations singularly attached to them, where they had leisure to pursue their favorite studies, and to prepare and publish their valuable works. Both were removed from these stations to become presidents of colleges; and both died shortly after their respective inaugurations, the one in the fifty-sixth and the other in the fifty-seventh year of his age, each having preached on the first Sabbath of the year of his death, on the text, 'This year thou shalt die.'"

It would be interesting to trace the character of Dr. Edwards as a child, a brother, a husband, a father; as a Christian, and a Christian pastor. But time would fail to dwell on these several interesting points; and the labor would be superfluous, as his character in these respects is ably drawn in the Memoir before us, to which we must refer the reader.

Dr. Edwards was not one of those who, conscious of the possession of genius, *rely* upon it, and neglect the requisite means of improvement. Through life he was a systematic and laborious student. It was his custom to rise and retire early, and to live much by rule, in consequence of which he avoided numberless interruptions, and was enabled to perform much in a little time. The first and last hours of every day were given to communion with his own soul and with God.

During his pastoral life Dr. Edwards superintended the theo-

logical studies of quite a number of young ministers. These were thoroughly instructed, and guided into a clear and well digested system of religious truth. Among his students were the late Dr. Dwight, President of Yale College, and Dr. Griffin, President of Williams College, both of whom regarded him, to his dying day, with the utmost respect and veneration.

Of Dr. Edwards's presidential life, it can only be said, that it was one of high promise. From the nature of the case it could not have been more. He had time only to enter on the duties of his office, and show to his friends and pupils what they had reason to expect from his labors, when he was prematurely summoned to a higher sphere. His loss was severely felt in the city to which he had but just removed; and carried gloom and sadness to every heart connected with the Institution over which he was placed.

Of the works of Dr. Edwards it may be said, in conclusion, that they are not only excellent in themselves, but almost entirely *unexceptionable*. Some great men are left to write and publish improper things. Men of profound minds, who give utterance to the most important truths, sometimes so strangely clothe their thoughts, and mix them up with so much that is exceptionable, that we hardly know whether to commend them or not. But in reading the works of Dr. Edwards, we find scarcely a sentence or expression which we could wish to have been otherwise. There is little or nothing to correct or blot. The sentiments are just and weighty, the style perspicuous and appropriate, the arguments sound, the reasoning conclusive; all is in good and proper keeping, and we wish it to stand just as he left it. And this can be said of almost no other man, who wrote so extensively as he, and on so abstruse and difficult subjects.

We have only to say further, that the religious community is under great obligations to the Editor and Publishers, for issuing these instructive volumes. We cannot doubt that they will be extensively read, and will be a means of rich benefit, both to the ministry and the church.

## ARTICLE VI.

## SOUTH'S SERMONS REVIEWED.

By GEORGE SHEPHERD, D. D., Professor in the Theological Seminary, Bangor, Me.

*Sermons preached upon several occasions by Robert South, D. D., Prebendary of Westminster, and Canon of Christ Church, Oxford. A new edition in four volumes, including the Posthumous Discourses. Philadelphia : Sorin and Ball, 1844.*

We were glad when we saw it announced that the sermons of Dr. South were in the press at Philadelphia, and would soon be placed within the reach of American preachers and students. We wonder that it has not been done before. Some years since, we had a desire to become acquainted with the productions of this singular man, and we procured the Oxford edition of 1822 at more than double the cost of the present almost equally well executed edition. We have never regretted the purchase even at that rate ; as they have been a rich source of entertainment and profit. We do not agree with the author on many points ; we vehemently dissent from him on some ; and must be permitted, in this notice, freely to speak our mind—to say of him just what we think.

His was an age crowded with remarkable events. He was a youth when Charles I. was beheaded ; he lived through the Protectorate ; through the reign of Charles II. ; through the reign of James II., of William and Mary, of Anne, and died soon after the accession of George I. He witnessed both the "Rebellion" and the Revolution. His was an age crowded also with remarkable men ; this of course ; for great events always bring forth and mature great men. There were on the stage at the same time with him, Howe, Baxter, Bates, Flavel, Owen, Bunyan, Bishop Hall, Cudworth, Jeremy Taylor, Barrow, Tillotson, Atterbury. The list might be greatly extended. When has there been brought together a nobler galaxy ?

Robert South was born in 1633 ; and in 1660 he appeared in the full strength and attractiveness of his powers. He enjoyed

the best advantages of education. After being four years at Westminster under the care of the famous Dr. Busby, he was elected student of Christ Church, Oxford, "where he made those advances in literature, that gave him the admiration and esteem of the whole university, and drew upon him the eyes of the best masters of humanity, and other studies." South was a fellow-student, at the university, of Mr. John Locke, subsequently so distinguished in another department. He took the degree of Bachelor of Arts in 1654, and proceeded to the degree of Master of Arts in 1657, at the age of twenty-four. Notwithstanding his talents and scholarship, he met with some difficulty in attaining to this degree, on account of the opposition to him on the part of Dr. Owen, then dean of Christ Church, whom South had displeased by his manifested attachment to the Liturgy and to monarchy,—the Doctor plainly telling him, in rebuke of his proud and satirical spirit, "*He was one that sat in the seat of the scornful.*" In 1658, Dr. South was admitted into Holy Orders, according to the rites of the Church of England, by a regular, though deprived bishop; and in 1659 he was selected to preach before the judges: here we find him in the employ of the Presbyterians, and hurling his sarcasms at the Independents.

Having preached on the 29th of July, 1660, his sermon, entitled—*The Scribe well instructed,*—before the king's commissioners, he was made public orator to the university on the 10th of August following. It appears that some of our author's purest and finest sermons are among his early efforts. All the simplicity, strength, and maturity of the later productions, are found in some of those he first put forth. The sermon entitled,—*The Creation of man in God's image,*—written when the author was short of thirty, and which he calls, in his dedicatory epistle, "a raw endeavor of a young divine," is surpassed, we think, in all the great properties of thought and language, by no discourse in the whole collection. In 1663, he was installed Prebendary of Westminster, and in 1680, was made Canon of Christ Church, Oxford. He enjoyed many sinecures and many honors; and that a man of his great ability and burning zeal for the church was not made a bishop, is not a little strange. The probability is, he had overtures which he saw fit not to accept. His death occurred on the 8th of July, 1716. He was buried with distinguished ceremony, and praised, on the marble, for some qualities he never possessed.

Dr. South was a very remarkable man, altogether original and

peculiar in his character. He certainly possessed a noble intellect. There were strength and closeness of ratiocination, when he chose to employ them ; a keen metaphysical acumen ; the power of clear statement, and striking illustration ; he was at once solid and brilliant ; and all his strongly marked powers received the full benefit of the most perfect discipline and scholarship.

His moral qualities do not appear to so good advantage as his intellectual. He is thought to have been rather too pliant, in those changing times, for the credit of a stern integrity. Cromwell received his praises, then the Presbyterians ; finally, in his zeal to bless the establishment, he cursed all the rest. Dr. South proved himself to be a great and notable hater. The Puritans, the Papists, the Socinians, all infidels and atheists—the extremes of the godly and ungodly—he hated with perfect hatred. His wit, sometimes keen, at others coarse, his merciless sarcasms, his grinning caricatures, his club-like opprobriums, were dealt out in all these directions, with the utmost heartiness. He was a churchman of the highest and most exclusive order ; all that could save the soul or the state, in his view, was bound up in the establishment. His adhesion to monarchy, and his attachment to the kings of the realm, no matter what their character, were really ludicrous for their extravagance. When we read his beautiful portrait of Charles I., and his fulsome eulogy of the scoffing and lecherous son, it seems to us, that Dr. Robert South would not have withheld his homage nor his heart from a goat or jackass, if clad in the habiliments of royalty. His loftiness in some respects, his meanness in others, his greatness and his degradation, are perfectly amazing. His bigotry, his hate, and his snappish intolerance, existed in connexion with traits of kindness and generosity, such as are rarely surpassed.

We come now to Dr. South's character as a preacher ; and propose to exhibit, as far as our limits will allow, his commendable and faulty qualities. We have, in these volumes, seventy-two sermons carefully prepared for the press by himself, and published under his own eye, and sixty-two more published after his death from his somewhat imperfect manuscripts. No one can read far in these sermons, open where he may, without perceiving that they are vigorous, strongly marked productions ; taken together, they are very extraordinary sermons.

They present this rather singular feature, namely, a rigid orthodoxy on most points, at the same time a great want of the

evangelical spirit. The doctrine of the Trinity he held most tenaciously, and defended most furiously. The doctrine of original sin, he states in terms sufficiently strong to satisfy the extremest advocates of the article. He says, "We were sinners before we were born, and seem to have been held in the womb, not only as infants for the birth, but as malefactors in prison. .... Could we view things, *in semine*, and look through principles, what a nest of impurities might we see in the heart of the least infant, like a knot of little snakes wrapt up in a dung-hill." He recognizes the utter impotency of the sinner, and the necessity of a new creation—that he be born from above. He tells us that "the habit of holiness, finding no principle of reproduction in a nature wholly corrupt, must needs be produced by supernatural infusion; and consequently, proceed not from acquisition but gift. It must be brought into the soul, it cannot grow or spring out of it." To introduce unconverted persons to the Lord's Supper is "as preposterous, as for one who makes a feast to send to the graves and church-yards for guests, or entertain and treat a corpse at a banquet."

We find the doctrines of the atonement and election, in the strictest sense. Christ, the Infinite and Vicarious Sufferer, "by eternal compact receives from the Father the donation of a certain, determinate number of persons to be his people;" he provides for their justification and their sanctification, and will bring every one of them home to heaven. On the absolute eternity and the intolerable nature of the punishment of the wicked, he speaks in the most unqualified terms. The lost sinner is represented as doomed to feel God's hand, and never to see his face; he shall roll himself upon a bed of flames to all eternity; omnipotence shall do its utmost upon his soul; the cup God then administers to him shall be all justice without mercy—all wrath and venom—all dregs and yet no bottom—a cup never to be drunk off, inexhaustibly full, inconceivably bitter: such is a specimen of his terms descriptive of the miseries of the lost. He speaks in severe reprobation of those who undertake to limit this punishment;—who represent God's threatenings as having "a very comfortable latitude in them for men of skill to creep out at," who would cut short the term of suffering, and foster the presumption, that after a certain period "there will be a general gaol delivery of the spirits in prison." The doctrine of satanic agency is brought out on all occasions in the boldest way. The Adversary is no figure of speech, but

a veritable and terrible personage ; all spirit indeed, but no less a devil for that ; the grand architect of mischief ; the great Sophister and Prince of darkness ; the implacable and insatiable devourer of souls, working in all crafty ways, accomplishing his objects by the most notable fetches ; here playing the white devil, and there the black devil ; often quick as the lightning, bites and shows his teeth at the same time.

It is a remarkable fact, that our author should be so clear on the great points of Calvinism, when he undertakes to state them ; because he was so high and extreme in his Episcopal tendencies. High-churchism and Calvinism did not often go together. To be consistently high-church, or prospectively high in the church, it was necessary to put on the milder aspect and looser garb of Arminianism. The strict Calvinist was deemed "a doctrinal puritan ;" and the dispensers of ecclesiastical honors and livings looked upon such with great suspicion. But this should be said respecting South : Calvinism is not at all obtrusive in his sermons ; here and there we find a great bone, an arm, an artery, a sinew of the system, but they appear rather as fragments ; not as built and compacted into a symmetrical structure, and moved aggressively by a living spirit. It is one thing for a man to state the doctrine now and then in his preaching ; quite another thing to have the doctrine pervade and characterize his discourses. This is just the difference between our author and the Puritan and Reformer of Elizabeth's reign. With one the doctrine was an isolated statement, lying inoffensively in its solitary position ; with the other, it was a spiritual weapon for the pulling down of strong-holds. If South stated a doctrine clearly, he did not use it vigorously, as he might have done, on the conscience and the heart. Men care not how heavy the club, or sharp the knife we bear, if we will only be so civil as not to strike them with the one, or cut them with the other.

But we must make some little abatement from our author's orthodoxy. While he held to the Trinity—and woe to the man who dared to mar the doctrine, if within his reach—while he held also to the high points of Calvinism, he was not altogether clear on the doctrine of justification by faith alone. It is true, man had no merit and never could work out any ; his salvation is all of grace—all comes through the merits of the Vicarious Sufferer ; and yet our author represented, that faith *alone* was not the condition : no one could secure a title to heaven but by

a course of obedience. He teaches that where justification is ascribed to faith alone in the Bible, "faith is used by a metonymy of the antecedent for the consequent, and does not signify a mere persuasion, but the obedience of a holy life. This justifies not meritoriously but instrumentally, as a condition appointed of God, where he freely imputes Christ's righteousness as the sole cause of our justification. Thus it is not one single act of credence, but the whole aggregate series of Gospel obedience, which gives a title to a perfect righteousness without us, by which alone we stand justified before God." This is not Paul's doctrine, as Paul stated it, nor Luther's, nor the doctrine which has ever been powerful to subdue the soul and give it peace with God. The true doctrine is that *faith alone* justifies, and that the sinner is justified *the moment* he believes; and it is also true, that this faith will show itself in good works; a subsequent holy life. Before leaving this point we wish to say, that this doctrine of justification by faith alone is the one which may not be changed or modified in the least; and cannot be with impunity. Strike away this, and you strike with palsy the whole body of Christian truth. Yet this is the doctrine upon which high-churchism has ever laid its meddling hands, and for it ever received in return the scathing curse of God. The English Reformers made this doctrine stand out in its just place and proportion; but the servile conformists that followed, succeeded at length in sinking it out of sight; and when we are taught by the whole history of the church, that the love of mere forms has always encroached upon, and, in the end, crowded out this great doctrine, pre-eminently the power of God unto salvation, we pray God to deliver us from the witchery and foolery of forms.

While it is very manifest, that there is a great want of the right spirit, the true evangelical spirit—the spirit of God—in these sermons; the heart and the soul, the living fire throughout, which smites, and electrifies, and saves, it is equally manifest and more to be lamented, that there is so much of a positively bad spirit. We have said that South was a great hater; and he poured out at times the whole fury of his hatred from the pulpit. In no other sermons in the language, certainly in none characterized by so many excellencies in other respects, can there be found so atrocious specimens of temper; the utterance of such bitter prejudices; such barbarous attacks; such enormous and malignant misrepresentations, as in some of these ser-

mons ; and the most gallish of all his hate, and the most stinging of all his sarcasms, came full and square upon the person of the Puritan. He exhausted his whole vocabulary of abuse (and what man ever had a greater ?) against those who took part in reforming the church from Episcopacy to Independency and Presbyterianism. He speaks of them (here we adduce his identical phrases) as persons of so capacious consciences that they stuck at neither robbery nor murder,—as men who can smile in your face while they are about to cut your throat,—men of a large and sanctified swallow,—hypocrites, perverters of Scripture, and murderers of souls,—pulpit engineers, reforming harpies,—thriving regicides, sure of heaven, but quite as sure some of them would take Tyburn on the way,—men whose mouths are too foul to be cleansed, and too broad to be stopped, spitting poison against monarchy, against discipline and decency ; whose boasted power of godliness, means the godly party in power,—brainsick, fanciful opinionators, delivered over of God to their own sanctified and adored nonsense,—as mountebanks and quacks in divinity, pitifully ignorant, and fit for little else but to show how fools may be imposed upon by knaves ; as men praying with incoherence and confusion,—with endless repetitions and insufferable nonsense ; and with such length, that two whole hours, at a fast, used to be considered a moderate dose,—as men of screwed face and doleful whine,—speaking bad sense with worse looks,—as those who, like St. Paul, would work with their hands, and in a *literal* sense, drive the nail home, and were able to make a pulpit before they preached in it.

It does seem to us, that such stuff is altogether too bad ever to have been preached ; and some will say, it ought never to have been printed ; certainly not reprinted in our times ; it ought to have been all purged out. We say no—let us have the whole man just as he was, with no mutilating and no softening. We thank the American publishers for giving us the entire work, every line and feature, every beauty and deformity. These grossly offensive things, which, in their day, were envenomed arrows in the direction they were thrown, are now perfectly harmless. They are so extreme, so overdone, that nothing is done by them. We let it all pass by as we do the rant of a madman : then here, the frenzy is so fine often, there is so much keenness in the hits, such gleamings of genius ; he does the thing so handsomely now and then, and always so heartily ; he so makes us laugh under his most scorpion lashings ; it is

manifestly such a comfort to himself, he seems so to clear out and relieve his own laboring stomach, that we really enjoy it: we derive much intellectual sweet from the foulest and bitterest dregs of his obloquy. And we have little doubt that the author has regretted his own uncivil, unchristian sayings and doings: he is ashamed of them in his new abode,—if in heaven, most heartily ashamed, as he sees there some of the men he despised and defamed as unworthy a standing on the earth, far above him in the ranks of that state. If one star differs from another star in glory, if those who turn many to righteousness are to shine as the brightness of the firmament, and as the stars for ever and ever, then Howe, Flavel, Baxter, and Bunyan, the outcasts from the church below, are far more honored and exalted in the church above, than this, or any, the most zealous of the defenders of a lauded establishment.

But leaving what is objectionable, we come to what is praiseworthy in these sermons. We put up with the insolence they are seasoned with, for the sake of other and good qualities which are found in them. We may learn something from them —may derive much benefit from them. Still, as models, they are not to be followed; as specimens of effective preaching, they are greatly wanting; they have not the structure and spirit which arouses, convicts, and converts the soul. The author did not aim at any such result; was very little conscious, probably, of what Baxter felt, and called “a thirsty desire for men’s conversion and salvation.” Of course, not *meaning* to do this immediate work upon the souls of his hearers, he did not do it. It is not said that these sermons have nothing to do with the conscience and the heart. There is much faithful dealing in them. A large part of the subjects discussed are serious and weighty; not mere moral topics, frigidly relating to the conduct and decencies of life; we are entered, we are invaded by many stirring and salutary truths. God’s character is set before us in its awfulness and majesty—the all-seeing and sin-avenging God, the full power of whose anger none on earth or in hell can know; the impossibility of avoiding detection after we have transgressed, is made to appear—*Be sure your sin will find you out*: then the place of punishment is set before us, in colors that cause shuddering; the necessity that the heart be changed is enforced, if we would avoid that place of torment; and that the affections be in heaven, if we would

reach in person that glorious world : the hearer is stripped clean of all possible merit in the sight of God, and is pointed for pardon to the sufferer of Calvary, there bleeding under the sword of Infinite justice. He is urged to agree with his adversary quickly, while in the way with him ; to beware of delay in the matters of the soul, as the night cometh in which no man can work ; the utter inefficacy of mere death-bed repentance is strongly stated and drawn out ; the deep treachery of the heart, vividly exposed ; the hope of heaven, the hearer may be cherishing, is assailed by very searching tests, that he may know whether it will abide the day of trial. Such is a specimen of the topics treated by our author ; more spiritual and penetrating as a whole than those we find in Barrow : but still they are not such topics, and so treated, as to pierce the sinner, and cause him actually to flee to Jesus. Had one of our author's missiles by chance entered the heart of a hearer, and had that hearer come to him in the anguish of conviction, asking, what he must do, the Doctor would probably have assured him, as a preacher in this country, not long since, assured a similarly wounded hearer,—“that he was sorry if he had hurt his feelings ; it was the farthest possible from his intention.” Though the sermons of Dr. South cannot be very highly prized, as means of conversion and growth in grace, yet for other qualities and purposes they are exceedingly valuable.

Leaving, then, the design and spirit, let us pass to the more intellectual features of these sermons. For simplicity of outline, cleanliness of discussion, clearness and point of phraseology, freedom from the abstruse, the pedantic, and the complicated, South was half a century in advance of his age. Our author always has a plan, an obvious plan, with clear, strong points, clearly and strongly stated. He very emphatically calls attention to his main positions, and repeats them, that no hearer may miss them. The simplicity of the plans is wonderful, considering they were made in days of great complication and confusion ; when every important idea that went into a sermon, wore at least seven heads, and every head branched out as many as ten horns. In some of his sermons, our author does not much exceed the modern preacher in the number of his divisions. The splitting and sub-splitting system, which can serve only to split the heads of those who try to keep the reckoning while hearing or reading them, he seems to have measurably set aside.

The following is a specimen of his plans:—The text, Numbers 32: 23. Subject—Concealment of sin no security to the sinner. I. Men sin upon a confidence of concealment. II. The grounds of this confidence. III. The certainty that they will be defeated. 1. This very confidence helps to bring out the sin. 2. Providence operates to do it. 3. One sin the means of discovering another. 4. The sinner often his own discoverer—forced to it by conscience and the judgments of God. Lastly, His guilt will follow him into another world, if he chance to escape in this. The order and consecutiveness of these sermons is an admirable feature of them. The author had a mind that loved and produced order. There were no mobs allowed amongst his ideas.

These sermons are rather propositional than textual; indeed there seems to have been but little strictly textual preaching in those times. The author frequently discusses a subject in a series of propositions which constitute the steps of his argument. More rarely does he lay down a single logical proposition, and then address himself formally to prove it. He does, however, prove his points: there is much thorough discussion in these discourses; they are solidly argumentative, not dryly, but freshly, rhetorically, argumentative. As a specimen of the argumentation, we may take the sermon on the passage—*Can a man be profitable to God?* The doctrine is—That it is an impossible thing to merit of God. In the general outline the author admirably consults the memory. In the words there is, I. Something implied. II. Something expressed. III. Something inferred. IV. Something objected. It is implied that men are naturally prone to persuade themselves that they can merit of God, because they place too high a value upon themselves, and have too low and mean apprehensions of God. What is expressed is, that such opinion or persuasion is false or absurd. Here comes in the argument. The author lays down four unquestionable conditions of merit, and shows that man's best actions necessarily come short of all these conditions. 1. The first condition is, that the action be not due. 2. That the action may add to the state of the person of whom it is to merit. 3. That the action and reward be of equal value. 4. That the action be done by man's sole power, without the help of Him of whom he is to merit. The thing inferred is, that this persuasion of merit is the foundation of the great corruptions of religion—Pelagianism and Popery. The thing objected is, that

the doctrine discourages right practice, which objection is shown to be without foundation.

In making a sermon, it is important that the preacher understand the object he has to accomplish, by his argument, and what the nature of the argument required, in order to gain that object. Our author exhibited a good degree of skill in this respect. He was metaphysical when necessary, yet moderately so, for those hair-splitting times. He was descriptive in his argument, when a thing was best proved by making it appear. There is a good deal of "showing" in his sermons, as on the text, *The wages of sin is death* :—I. Show what sin is—original, actual. II. Show what is comprised in death. III. Show in what respects death is called the wages of sin. This "showing," unquestionably, is the best sort of reasoning for no small part of the subjects discussed in the pulpit. Here the imagination is brought into the service of the preacher. In order to success in this mode, a certain degree and kind of imagination are indispensable. Dr. South, we think, had the kind and degree. He undertook, in his early days, to be a poet, and even aspired to be the Laureate of the Protector. But he had not the poet's imagination: it was not sufficiently rampant and excursive for the poet—not keeping sufficiently long on the wing, brooding over the darkness, and making worlds out of nothing. South was endowed with strong, native, good sense; and this taught him that he could never distinguish himself as a poet, and consequently that he had better let poetry alone. Most wisely he dropped it; and if many others would do the same, they would act as wisely as he. For the relief of mankind, it would be well, were it a universally received maxim, that he, who is not made for a poet, should never make any poetry.

Though South had not the poet's imagination, he had the orator's. His imagination was of that restricted sort which produces the forcible simile and metaphor. These were not, in his case, the dull comparisons of the understanding, but bold and striking figures: they came from the imagination, and they went to the imagination. He had a most wonderful faculty of perceiving analogies. The fertility here was amazing, and this is the basis, to a great extent, of his wit, his raciness, his point, and his force. The boldness and strength he adventures upon in bringing out some of his figures of this sort are extreme. For example, speaking of certain wretches at the holy sacrament, he says,—“When I consider the pure and blessed body of our

Saviour, passing through the open sepulchres of such throats, into the noisome receptacles of their boiling, fermenting breasts, it seems to me a lively but sad representation of Christ's being first buried and then descending into hell." It is not quite so extravagantly, but better said, that—" Showers of tears and volleys of sighs, will no more purge a man's heart, than the washing of his hands can cleanse the rottenness of his bones." Our author thinks that Judas, "to receive and swallow, as he did, the sop, seasoned with those terrible words, 'It had been good for that man if he had never been born,' must have had a furious appetite and a strong stomach, thus to catch at a morsel with the fire and brimstone all flaming about it, and, as it were, digest death itself, and make a meal on perdition." The man of mere mouth charity, such an one as the Apostle James describes, instead of substantially helping his suffering neighbor, "thinks to lick him whole again with his tongue." In one of his sermons a person is represented as coming forth and saying—"I am a great hearer and lover of sermons; it is the very delight of my righteous soul: indeed, I am so entirely devoted to the bearing of them, that I have hardly any time left to practise them; and will not all this set me right for heaven?" Who but South could have perceived the analogy, and brought out such an image, as we have in the reply,—"Yes, no doubt, if a man were to be *pulled up to heaven by the ears.*"

Our author's quick perception of analogies both near and remote, and in subjects in most respects dissimilar, very often carried him into the regions of wit and humor. It is obvious that the same talent which enables a speaker to be forcible in the metaphor and illustration, gives him the other more questionable property, wit. The very striking metaphor usually borders on wit; and he who can go thus far, can ordinarily go farther: those who can execute well rhetorical painting, are commonly skilled in what Campbell calls "the limning of wit." This author makes wit a subordinate species of eloquence. The power is not only kindred with the oratorical, when properly used, particularly in the secular field, it is often a great help to it. Dr. South's fault is excess—enormous excess for one occupying the pulpit. Wit is a dangerous article to bring into the pulpit at all; our author brought it in without measure. So strongly is he characterized by it, that those who have only heard of him suppose that he has nothing else. He seems to be ever looking out for the queer resemblance, the piquant

turn, the facetious hit. There is apt to be a too studied aim or design about it: still he does succeed; and perhaps no man is more sudden and surprising in his strokes than he often is. When we are least expecting it, he slips out a parenthetic flash, and passes on as though nothing had happened.

Our author is almost unequalled in presenting before us a ludicrous image; especially when he wishes to put upon his object the lash of satire and ridicule. "Can any thing be so vile and forlorn as an old, broken, decrepit sensualist, creeping, as it were, to the devil upon all four?" A person who undertakes to be a preacher without being fit for it, in the figure of the author, "runs his head against a pulpit." The wit very often grows out of the queerness and singularity of the imagery—the analogy very remote and yet laughably striking: for instance, in the following most satirical passage:—"As it is observed in greyhounds, that *the thinness of their jaws* does not at all allay the ravenous fury of their appetite . . . so woe be to that man who stands in the way of a meagre, mortified, fasting, sharp-set zeal, when it is in full chase of its spiritual game." Sometimes this queerness of imagery is combined with Scripture allusion; as where he refers to a time when preaching was wonderfully in vogue,—every thing must be done by preaching, which, he says, "went to pamper a proud, senseless humor, or rather a kind of spiritual itch, which had seized the greater part of the nation, and worked chiefly about the ears." The figure here is made ludicrous by mere expansion, and an artful confounding of the proper and metaphorical sense. Dr. South is fond of making his wit turn upon a passage of Scripture, and for this he is very reprehensible,—"Let Christ and His flock lie open, exposed to all weather of persecution, *foxes* will be sure to have holes." Whoever throws before the community passages of God's word into ludicrous associations, does a great injury to the moral sense of the people. Occasionally the wit lies in the single pat word, again in what Barrow calls "the lusty hyperbole," but oftener in the sly allusion, and the epigrammatic turn. In this last the author shows a singular smartness and felicity. He says—"Cain was the only person I have read of, who sought to divert his discontent by *building cities*, but the reason was, because there were none for him to *pull down*."

The fact that our author employed his wit prominently in the work of satire and ridicule accounts for the lowness of his

descent now and then ; it was, that he might run equally low the contained objects of his shafts. Very few men could have said with any effect the things which South has said ; so that he, in a sense, verifies one of his own sly and shrewd remarks, "that some men cannot be fools to so good acceptance as others."

Our author sometimes employs his wit to show off the ridiculous absurdity of some opinion and practice. In the following, the prophet was beforehand with him. The prophet says: "A man hews him down a tree in the wood, and a part of it he burns, with the residue thereof he maketh a god." Upon this South comments :—"With one part he furnishes his *chimney*, with the other his *chapel*," (a sort of paronomasia the author was fond of.) "A strange thing that the fire must consume this part, and burn incense to that; as if there was more divinity in one end of the stick than in the other."

Dr. South not unfrequently means, that his wit shall do the work of argument : occasionally, however, the argument utterly fails, leaving nothing but the wit. He tells us, that the great principles of religion can be inserted in the mind only by catechising, in the proper season of it. "To expect this to be done by preaching, or *force of lungs*, is just as if a smith or artist, who works in metals, should think to frame or shape out his work only *with his bellows*." This is a laughable conceit, but puerile as argument ; equally so, when he attempts to argue against extempore prayer, from the analogy of literal parturition ; declaring it to be "monstrous and unnatural to conceive and bring forth together ; all abortion is from infirmity." According to the argument of this passage, every thought, no matter what it relates to, should lie some months in the head before it is suffered to see the light.

The attribute of our author's mind, which makes him so quick and keen in his wit, gives him great vivacity throughout. Briefness and a graphic precision are indispensable to wit ; and where these are found, there will of course be life and force to the style. Dr. South is never impassioned : he attempts not the higher flights and figures of the orator. Indeed, we find these very rarely, if at all, in the English pulpit. The English preacher keeps down to the earth ; he rarely ventures beyond the metaphor ; while the French preacher will soar aloft, bear you away, show you the distant, and will give life to the dead and speech to the dumb. There may be an arresting force to speech with-

out these extreme resorts of rhetoric. Few sermons have the admirable quality of vivacity to a higher degree than those now before us; and this quality is gained to them, in part, by the thick sprinkling of bold metaphor the author has charged them with. In his phrase—"Lies are drawn with cords of blasphemy, and nonsense with a cart-rope.—The winds *are crushed* into a calm.—The whole creation *bends and cracks* under the wrath of God: the strokes of this wrath, when they fell upon Christ, as it were *shook and staggered* Omnipotence itself.—Malice *comits* out its scandal and reproaches.—An enraged conscience takes the sinner by the throat, and hell sends up its flames into his face.—God turns the worm of conscience into a scorpion, and smites it with the invisible stings of his wrath, such as *fester and rage inwardly, gnaw and rake* the very entrails of the soul." The precision here and throughout is perfect. Our author commits no blunder in getting hold of his words. What he wants he knows, and that he is sure to seize. If there is a vigorous, robust word in all the language, precisely fitted to serve his idea and go into a particular place, he is sure to lay his hand on that word, and put it in that place. It is true that his precision and strength not unfrequently run into coarseness. In bringing in the most graphic words of the language, he brings in the low and the vulgar. He is not satisfied with discoursing about man in general, he must touch upon all the parts of a man—head, neck, pate, throat, back, belly, lungs, entrails. "The ungrateful person is a monster, all throat and belly." His scale of rather coarse terms, is long and varied. We have—scurvy instances, sneaking looks, pampered carcasses, crabbed studies, cases of grumbling and snarling. There is no mincing, no mealy-mouthedness with our author, no diluting paraphrases, no polite circuitousness to get round a hard expression. He speaks it right out, rough and heavy as it may be; he "kicks," and "cuffs," and "mauls," and "stabs," and "butchers."

South runs pretty often into an extreme harshness of expression. Some sinners are "hell and damnation proof." The sinner, in high life and of high living, is "fattening for the slaughter of eternity—he is damned in state, and goes to hell with more ease, more flourish, and magnificence than others." It was an age of coarse mouths, and even the most classical and accomplished preachers did not wear off all their roughness. Dr. South did not try to. He manifestly had an affection for

what was common and familiar ; his illustrations are from the most obvious sources. He could lay his hands upon the meanest objects ; and did not shrink from thrusting them into the dirt, and even the dunghill. A large measure of his power arose from this obvious, palpable style of illustration. The remote, the fine-spun, and the finical, we find every where in Jeremy Taylor ; nowhere in Robert South. The latter, we think, is vastly the superior, as imparting to others the true style of effective address.

The style of these sermons is strikingly idiomatic : there is a large infusion of the Saxon element. Perhaps no scholar of the period, has so large a proportion of native words and phrases as does our author. Hence the singular *clearness* of his diction. If a reader can understand any thing, he can understand these sermons. The meaning is nowhere dissipated by vague generalities ; it is nowhere suspended and vibrating between artful ambiguities ; it is nowhere buried from view under heavy heaps of verbiage. It stands definitely and boldly forth. It is here, it is there, it is throughout ; we know where it is, and what it is. The reader is not sent in the capacity of a hound, snuffing through the discourse—a miserable compound of weeds and flowers, briars and underbrush—to find out, if any sagacity can, in what part the game lies hid.

The fact that clearness and sententiousness are united in our author, which together constitute the true pith and force of style, adapts his discourses, particularly the best passages of them, to a powerful delivery. These sermons are more highly oratorical in their structure, than most English sermons are found to be. This, indeed, is a rare quality in the sermons that have been given to the public. The majority are conformed to, and cannot be raised above, a tame enunciation. But here the weight of voice comes naturally upon the nouns and the verbs. They are so significantly chosen, and so full of meaning, that they instinctively draw the pressure to themselves ; and they are able to bear it. The force is not divided amongst a half-dozen competitors. The author gives us the privilege of what may be termed, emphatic concentration : he never puts us upon the task of wearily gasping out a string of senseless adjuncts. There is a great deal of the skilful antithetic structure, always condensed, well balanced, and well fitted to the mouth and the lungs.—“ Some are atheists, not because they have better wits than other men, but because they have corrupter wills ; not because they reason better, but because they live worse.”

There is not only great compactness and strength in the style of these sermons; there is also a finish, a delicacy, a chaste beauty, in many of the paragraphs, which hold us in admiration. Had we room, we might quote passages from nearly all his sermons, which are as fine specimens of the high and rare qualities of style, as the range of English literature furnishes. We are surprised that any one, at that early period, should have used the language with such maturity and perfection. In this respect, he was greatly in advance of his age. The quaintness which was then so common and so much thought of, he had the good taste to leave behind. He gives us pure, strong, pointed, unembarrassed English. Perhaps the sermons of Dr. South, so far as mere style is concerned, come as near to the right model and medium for the pulpit, as any sermons in the language.

They are sermons which we love to read, whilst a majority of the sermons, then put forth, are heavy and perplexing; to go through them is hard wading. But here we are entertained, allured on, surprised, often electrified, on the way; the mind is kept on the alert; in a state of expectancy for something that is to come; and it very surely does come. South greatly improved upon most of his contemporaries, on the score of tediousness. It was an age of wearying prolixity; sermons were drawn out to an awful length, because preachers insisted upon pressing their thoughts to the last extremity of dribbling. Our author was not one of this school. He did not draw out and twist every idea he started into a string or noose, and then haul his bearers with it all over creation. He could let a thought go when he had got what he wanted out of it. He discussed his points, so far as related to his main design, and then left them.

We were exceedingly amused, and not a little astonished recently, in looking over a communication from a Sandwich Island youth to his benefactor in this country. He writes a sentence, and adds, "This thought is done." He then writes another sentence, upon another point, and adds again, "*This* thought is done." We were amused at the simplicity of the expression, and astonished at the greatness of the discovery. That a discovery which seems to have eluded the great majority of educated and disciplined minds in this enlightened land, should be thus made by one just emerging from a state of barbarism, is indeed astonishing. Were all who speak in public, especially all who occupy the pulpit, to make the discovery on their own produc-

tions,—to perceive instinctively, and to say to themselves at the right spot, *This thought is done*, and stop hammering upon it, turning it about and fumbling it over, but pass to something else, the relief to those who hear would be unspeakably great; it would be somewhat like removing mountains from their shoulders.

These sermons, we think, could never have been strictly popular. Nor could sermons now which should be as strongly characterized by the intellectual quality; for thought is not, and never has been, a remarkably popular commodity in discourses. There are some to appreciate it and be benefited by it; it is the article they love best. But these are not the mass. A preacher may go before some of our more refined and reputedly intelligent auditories, and utter clear, rich, forcible thought and argument, in a terse and attractive style, and he will encounter a vacant, unresponsive listlessness from no small portion of those he addresses; but let him go before the same auditory, and deal a little more in finery, and "flourish it in tropes," and be poetic and "eloquent," yea, let him open his mouth and pour out by the hour a stream of silken, silvery nonsense, and this same class will look at him and admire; will even gape upon him, and gulp it down, and scarcely shall there have died away the echo of the benediction, before he shall be enveloped in the thick incense of their praise. Though these sermons will not suit this sort of readers and hearers, they will suit those who have mind enough to appreciate their merits, and they will benefit, intellectually at least, those who have intercourse with them.

We like the sermons chiefly for their strong original thought, most forcibly and strikingly uttered. There is a great want of that most essential quality of good preaching—essential, if the great objects of preaching are to be gained—namely, unction. Still there is an earnestness, a something which reaches you, stirs you, grapples you; it is the vigor of the thinking; it braces you, and makes you strong, to feel even that you can think likewise. Preachers, it seems to us, cannot come within this influence, and not be made stronger and more effective by it. The good may be chosen and appropriated; while the objectionable spirit and features are left where they are. No one, indeed, could now indulge in the rancor of South, without hazard of ejection from all good society. No one could now attempt in the pulpit the wit of South, without making a fool of himself.

## ARTICLE VII.

## DIVINE AGENCY AND GOVERNMENT, TOGETHER WITH HUMAN AGENCY AND FREEDOM.

(Continued from p. 137, Jan. 1844.)

By the Rev. LEONARD Woods, D. D., Prof. Theol. Sem., Andover, Mass.

## ACCOUNTABILITY OF MAN.

The chief difficulty on this subject appears to arise from the wrong methods in which men attempt to settle the question, whether they are accountable for their actions. If we rely upon any logical reasoning, or if we undertake to determine, a priori, what is necessary to constitute an accountable being, or a fit subject of moral government, we shall fail in our attempt, and shall fall into great perplexities. *That we are accountable to God*, is an ultimate fact, which, aside from revelation, is ascertained in one way only, that is, by a direct inward perception, or consciousness. We know that we are moral, accountable beings, just as we know that we are intelligent beings. Do we ever go about to convince ourselves by argument that we *think*, or that we *love*, and *desire*? And why do we not? Because there is nothing more obvious and certain, than that we do think, and love, and desire; in other words, there is nothing which has the nature of *proof*;—*proof* being something more clear and obvious, than the thing to be proved. Our accountability (we may say) is *self evident*. The belief or feeling of it, in some way, is unavoidable. We perceive, and must perceive, an inherent difference among our mental acts. Some we see and feel to be right and praiseworthy, and some, wrong and blameworthy. This is as unquestionable as that one thing is agreeable to our taste, and another disagreeable. In a mind not totally perverted, one class of exercises is invariably accompanied with a feeling of self-approbation, and another with a feeling of self-disapprobation. Now to say I am conscious of right and wrong, is the same as to say I am conscious of being *responsible*. For right and wrong presuppose a law; and a law,

a lawgiver; and a lawgiver, a moral government. Under this moral government I know myself to be placed; inasmuch as I do, from the very constitution of my mind, approve or condemn myself, according as I obey or disobey the law. Thus the consciousness of an inherent difference among the acts of my own mind, as right or wrong, involves the sentiment that I am accountable for those acts. I do, and must, in some way, call myself to account for them, and pass judgment upon myself with reference to them. And in this judgment, there is always a felt or implied reference to a higher judge than myself, and a higher tribunal than my own conscience. Here is the sentiment of *accountability to God*.

My position is, that our accountableness to a Supreme Law-giver and Judge depends, essentially, upon the constitution of our mind, just as it is, and is inseparable from it. We are never to turn aside from this point, and to take it upon us to determine, that we must have such or such powers of mind, or be placed in these or those circumstances, in order to our being accountable agents. Whatever may be found true in regard to our mental powers or our circumstances, we *are* accountable. It is proper for me to inquire, whether I do possess this power or that, and what are my circumstances as to dependence on divine control, and in other respects. But my inquiries ought not to be embarrassed by any prepossession; and whether the result of my inquiries be this or that, I know that I am accountable for my actions, and that I am rightly placed under a moral law. Whatever I may find to be true as to the existence and extent of the divine predetermination, or as to divine providence, or as to the actual subserviency of all my actions, under a divine control, to a good end; in short, whatever else may be true or not true; my just accountableness is evident. Of this I am certain. No other truth, no other fact respecting either God or man, can interfere with the certain fact, that I am an accountable agent.

**DOES GOD'S UNIVERSAL AGENCY CONSIST WITH ANY OTHER AGENT OR AGENCY? AND DOES HIS BEING THE CAUSE OF ALL THINGS ADMIT OF OTHER CAUSES?**

It is sometimes said, that if God is the cause of all things, as the Calvinists represent, if, as the supreme cause, he is through all and in all, there can be no other cause. If he is the uni-

versal agent, and is always and every where active, and if all beings and events are absolutely dependent on him, then there is no room for any other agent or agency. All things must be absorbed in God ; and pantheism must be acknowledged as the true system of theology.

Now God's being the supreme, independent, and universal cause, having a perfect efficiency in all beings and events, does indeed imply that nothing else can be a cause in the same sense in which God is the cause ; that is, nothing else can be a supreme, independent, and universal cause. But because there is only one *supreme* cause, it does by no means follow that there are no *subordinate* causes. Because there is only one *first* cause, it cannot be inferred that there are no *secondary* causes. Subordinate, secondary causes may result from the supreme, first cause. Sir Isaac Newton, and all Christian philosophers before and since his day, and all Christian divines, have held, that there is only one supreme and universal cause, but that there are many subordinate causes, dependent on the supreme, and all having a measure of efficiency, from which result various and important consequences. The omnipotent energy of the first cause is so far from precluding secondary causes, that it gives them a real and permanent existence. The divine cause produces, not shadows, but substances ; not illusions, but realities. Created things, things which result as effects from the Supreme cause, may have as real permanent existence, as that which exists independently of a cause. And those things, which exist as effects of the first cause, may, in the above sense, be the cause of other things, resulting from them as effects ; and these effects of secondary causes, may become causes of other effects ; and there may be an endless series of dependent causes and effects. The created universe, both material and spiritual, is manifestly such a system of dependent causes and effects, all proceeding from God, arranged by his wisdom, and leading on to glorious results in an endless progression.

The supposition, then, that the doctrine of Edwards, the senior, or the junior, or of the other Calvinists, precludes the existence of any cause, except the first cause, or of any agent or agency, except the Supreme Agent or Agency, would be wholly unfounded. Indeed, we can much more satisfactorily conceive of a universe of things having a real and permanent existence, as effects dependent on an infinitely wise, powerful and, all-pervading cause, than in any other way. For here we come

at once to that, which is a manifest and sufficient ground of the existence of dependent things. But the moment we start from this principle, and begin to contemplate created things in any other light than as effects of the first cause, we are met with the inquiry, how things which are not eternal come into existence; or how things which are at first dependent on the first cause can afterwards acquire independence; how things which owe their existence to the efficacious act of God's will can continue to exist without the continued act of that will; or, on the other hand, how an unchangeable God can efficiently will the permanent existence of dependent beings, and yet not continue thus to will it; or, if he does thus continue to will their continued existence, how that will, which was at first an efficacious cause, can cease to be a cause, or lose its causal influence, and the things which first owed their existence to the influence of that divine cause, can turn about and say they have no further need of the influence of that cause. When we enter on such inquiries, and admit suppositions which are contrary to the obvious sense of Scripture, what was plain before, at once becomes perplexed, and the mind wanders about, "in endless mazes lost."

But *how* can moral, spiritual agents, who are entirely dependent on a supreme, all-efficient cause, and constantly under its controlling influence, be capable of actions for which they are *justly responsible*?

To the question *how* this can be, my answer is, I know not. But, from my own consciousness and the word of God, I know the fact that moral agents exist, who are thus dependent on God, and who, at the same time, are justly responsible for their actions. I cannot but regard it as an illusion of a speculative imagination, that independence in any respect is necessary to accountability. And as I give no place to such an illusion, and as I hold, what every man of common sense must hold, that a state of dependence is consistent with a just accountableness to a moral government, and is the only state where such accountableness can be found, I escape at once all the difficulties which any man must experience, who denies the fact that dependent beings are accountable, because he cannot understand the *mode* of it. In regard to the fact, I make my appeal directly to conscience. And I call for some instance in which a man of plain, unbiassed conscience feels himself less accountable for his actions, because he lives, and moves, and has his being in God. Who that believes the Scriptures can doubt that God can cre-

ate and sustain accountable agents, and exercise a sovereign control over their actions? Did he not by the measures of his righteous providence actually harden the heart of Pharaoh and Sibon, without interfering with their accountable agency? And cannot he do the same now? Does he not work faith and love in believers, without interfering with their moral agency? No one can say, that, because God influences and controls the acts of moral agents, he does it by a *force* or *compulsion* which supersedes their freedom and accountableness. For surely God has other ways of influencing and governing moral agents besides compulsion; and those other ways are such as correspond with the nature of moral agents. It is as certain as any thing can be, that God can adapt his efficacious influence to *moral* and *accountable* agents, as well as to material substances. His influence in both cases, however different in its nature or modes of action, is equally sure to accomplish its objects. When we contemplate this subject, we have constant reason to exclaim, How wonderful is the power and wisdom of God! His ways are past finding out!

If you inquire of me how I satisfy myself that I am a free, accountable agent, and that I am also in a state of entire dependence on God, and that I act under his sovereign control; my answer is, that I learn my own free, accountable agency from the uniform testimony of my own consciousness, and also from the manner in which God treats me in his word and providence. My accountableness is then certain. It cannot be doubted. The other point, that is, my dependence on God, is made out with equal clearness by the aid of reflection and divine revelation. By these I am taught that God sustains me; that all my actions are under the control of his sovereign providence; and particularly, that he governs my good actions by the influence of the truth, joined with the influence of his Spirit. These two points, then, are made known to me in different ways, but with equal certainty. I give them both full credence. I receive them into my heart, and leave them to work out their own consistency. If this cannot be done satisfactorily in the understanding, it can be done in the heart. Long labor has taught me, that the reconciliation of these two points, comes not within the province of speculative reason, and is not to be made out by any processes of intellect. But it is made out with perfect clearness by inward experience. Never, in any instance, have I felt the least incompatibility between the two

facts; never found that they interfere with or encumber each other; and I have been brought to the conclusion, that any idea of such interference is an illusion of the imagination. Free, accountable agency has been going on, for thousands of years, under an effective divine superintendence and control, by which it has been so shaped and directed, as to accord with God's purposes, and accomplish his holy ends; and yet, during these thousands of years, and amid countless millions of men, good and bad, there has never been one who has experienced any loss of conscious freedom, or any interruption or inconvenience in the use of his own faculties from the divine power which has effectually swayed all his actions. And thus it will be forever: God supreme, governing all his creatures, and all their actions, according to the counsels of his own will, and at the same time moral beings, good and bad, acting with all conceivable freedom, conscious that they themselves, while swayed by a power above them, and acting under the control of an invisible hand, must be regarded and treated as accountable agents, and that the whole of their conduct, whatever it may be, must be imputed to them as their own, and that a divine reward will be conferred, or punishment inflicted upon them, according as they have obeyed or disobeyed the divine law. Happy they, who view these things in the light of truth—as every one does whose moral faculties are awake, and who is blessed with the teaching of the Holy Spirit. The plain Bible Christian, who walks with God, has no difficulty here. But if any one shuts his eyes against the light of reason, conscience and revelation, and, because he finds in the existence of evil and in the supremacy of the divine government mysteries which he cannot fathom, stumbles at well-known facts,—let him stumble.

#### CAUSE AND EFFECT.

On this subject, strange as it may seem, it has become necessary to give line upon line, line upon line. There is so much confusion in the writings of some men in relation to cause and effect, that it is difficult for any one to peruse what they have written, without having his own mind confused. There are not a few at this day, who are so fond of innovation, that they make it an object to unsettle long-established principles, and to introduce novelties, really preferring what is new, though doubtful, or even erroneous, to what is old, however true. And there are

those, who are inclined to deny or doubt what is clear and certain, because there is something pertaining to the subject, which they find to be obscure or uncertain. If they would confine their habit of doubting to what is unknown and unknowable, they would act reasonably. But they extend the same habit to what is clear and certain.

A *cause* I understand to be that on which something else depends, or from which it results. And an *effect* I understand to be that which depends on something else, and results from it. It is not correct to say, that whatever *exists* has a *cause*. For a Being does and must exist, that has no cause. But it is manifest, that whatever exists in the *creation*, or whatever *begins* to exist, results from a cause. It is the beginning or continuance of existence among created beings, or some change in what exists, that we refer to a *cause*. The existence of an *un-caused cause*, is certain. But whatever else exists, and whatever event occurs among created things, we do necessarily ascribe to some cause. If a full moon should appear a week sooner than common, we should inquire for the *cause*. And if we should be unable to discover the cause, it would still be our instinctive belief, that there is a cause. The same in the moral world. If a parent, who was once kind and tender, becomes hard-hearted and cruel, we ascribe the change to some cause,—either to a physical disorder, or to the treatment he has received, or to the influence of his circumstances, or to something which is concealed from us. That there is a cause, no one doubts. And if any one should answer the inquiry, What is the cause? by saying the *man himself* is the cause, we should think the answer very indefinite and unsatisfactory. It is true the change may have taken place gradually, under the operation of principles in his own mind. And it is also true, that one of those principles is, that the disposition and state of a man's mind is affected by other things, either without or within him. Such a change as that just mentioned, may result from insanity. If so, we say, insanity is the cause. It may come in consequence of wicked and abusive treatment from his children; and then we should say, that is the cause. But suppose that by intemperance, or other evil practice, he brought the insanity upon himself; or suppose that in any other way he voluntarily put himself in circumstances which induced the change in his disposition, it might be proper to say, that he himself was the cause, the criminal cause of the unhappy change, or that he hardened his

own heart. Still our meaning would be, that he produced or helped to produce the change, *by his sinful conduct*, referring to that conduct as what had the unhappy influence upon his domestic disposition. We know it to be one of the laws of the mind, that particular mental states or exercises, and particular external acts, have an effect, good or bad, upon our subsequent states or exercises. But those previous states of mind had a cause as well as the subsequent. A particular mental state or habit, say avarice, may be said to be a development of principles, which essentially belong to the human mind. But how does it happen that this development is made in one man and not in others? We naturally look for a *cause* of this difference. We may find it in the influence of some well-known circumstances which have been acting upon the individual, or in something peculiar in the original structure of his mind. And in case we are unable to discover any particular cause, and are obliged to acknowledge that we cannot account for the fact, we still hold fast to the belief, that there is a cause, though hidden from our view, and that the difference in the effect is always owing to a corresponding difference in that which has operated as a cause.

The principle we are now considering, may be illustrated by what took place a few years since in this vicinity: the murder of White by Knapp. White was a kind, honorable man, and a particular friend to Knapp. The general inquiry was, Why did Knapp take away the life of his relative and friend? What was the *cause* of his doing such a deed of inhumanity and cruelty? What was his *reason* or *motive*? If any one had told us, that *Knapp himself* was the cause of the murder, we should probably have said, We know that Knapp was the *murderer*, or the author of the murder. It was he that committed the foul deed, but what was the *cause* of his doing it? What *reason* or *motive* had he for such an act? By and by we were informed that Knapp was a relative of White, and would inherit his estate if he died without a will. We found, then, that *avarice* was the cause of his committing the crime. He did it, because he hoped in that way to make himself rich. The love of money was the *motive* which influenced him; the *reason* or *cause* of his doing the particular act.

In common discourse among intelligent men, the words *cause* and *effect* are applied as familiarly to the acts or states of the mind, as to the motions or states of material substances. It is

common to speak of the cause of the hatred which Herodias felt against John Baptist, and of that hatred as the *effect* of John's faithful reproof;—of that which *caused* Joseph's brethren to envy and hate him, and of their envy as the *effect* of their father's partiality to Joseph. It is in accordance with good usage to speak of the conduct of Mordecai the Jew, and the malignant feeling of Haman, as *cause and effect*.

Some writers, who have taken a part in recent controversies, have shown an unwillingness to apply the words *cause* and *effect* to the determinations and actions of free, moral agents, and have often repeated the affirmation that the *law of cause and effect* cannot relate to man's accountable agency. The only reason which they have given for their position is, that the words *cause* and *effect*, when applied to *physical subjects*, have a meaning which is not suitable to moral subjects, and that the *law of cause and effect* in regard to material things, is such that it cannot be predicated of the actions of the mind. It is indeed true, that the words cannot be applied to the mind in the same sense in which they are applied to material things. But the same is true of other words without number. And if we should refuse to use words in relation to the mind in a different sense from what they have in relation to matter, that is, in a tropical sense, we should set ourselves against the most approved modes of speech, and deprive ourselves of the language best suited to express strong emotions, and to make strong impressions. Do we not constantly employ the word *understanding* in relation to the mind? Do we not speak of the mind as *seeing* and *perceiving*, as being *dark* or *enlightened*, as *moved*, *agitated*, *quiet*, etc.? And does any one need to be told, that these, and thousands of other words, which are familiarly applied to the mind, are used not in a literal or physical sense, but in a tropical or mental sense? No man can speak the English language, or any other language, without often using words in a secondary or figurative sense in relation to his own mind, or the minds of others. As to the words *cause* and *effect*, no man, in the exercise of common sense, is in danger of mistake. If they are applied to physical subjects, as cold and heat, vegetation, electricity, etc., we know they have a physical sense. And what the law of physical cause and effect is, we learn by our senses, and by instruction in the science of physics. If the words are applied to the affections or acts of the mind, we know at once that they have a sense corresponding to the nature of the mind; and what

the law of cause and effect is here, we learn by consciousness, or by observation of what passes within us. It is just as easy for us to distinguish between the literal and physical sense of the words, and their tropical or moral sense, as to distinguish between the literal and figurative sense of any other words. And the same principle that would lead us to object against applying these words to moral subjects, would lead us to object against the universal practice of taking words, originally appropriated to material things, and using them in a figurative and moral sense. And if an objection so unreasonable should prevail, it would make a most calamitous revolution in speech, and would set aside the language which inspired writers and the Saviour himself commonly employed in giving instruction to men. And as there is so wide a difference between the physical and the moral sense of cause and effect, we cannot find any arguments or conclusions respecting the *moral* sense, on the supposition that it is the same as the physical sense.

Some writers admit that there is a cause of moral actions, but hold that *man himself is the cause*. Here the chief point of inquiry evidently relates to the use of *words*; and it may be that those who differ in this respect, substantially agree in their conceptions of the subject.

We all hold that man himself is the *agent*; that it is he, and he alone, that wills and acts; and that he does this in the free use of his own powers and faculties. If a man acts, he is the actor. If he thinks and reasons, he is the thinker and reasoner. And this is little more than an identical proposition. Now when you say, man is the *cause* of his own acts, what more do you mean, than that he is the *agent*? You may explain yourself by saying, that he *originates* his own volitions and acts. To this I also agree, if you mean that he is truly the *agent*—that he himself puts forth his mental and bodily acts—that they proceed from him, and are the result of his own active powers. If the language means more than this, I have found no one who could point out what that additional meaning is. I must then, for the present, consider the meaning of those who choose to say, that a man *originates* his own acts, to be, that he is truly the *agent*, and does himself put forth the acts. The question, however, still remains, in what way and on what principles or conditions a moral agent puts forth his volitions and acts. If he *causes* or *originates* his own mental and bodily acts, it is still obvious that he must do this in a manner suited

to his rational nature. He cannot act under the influence of those principles which govern the action of dead matter or brute animals. As a rational being, he must act *rationally*. If he *causes* or *originates* his own acts, he must do it on rational principles, and under a rational influence. And what is a rational influence but the influence of motives addressed to the mind, or of inducements acting upon the mind. Ask a man *why* or *wherefore* he wills or does such a thing, and in his answer he gives you the *reason* or *cause* of his doing it. The *cause*, in this use of the word, is the *motive* or *inducement* which leads to the determination or action. But the word is sometimes used in a higher sense, as when it is said, God is the cause, that is, the Supreme, Almighty, all-controlling cause of the actions of men. In a manner suited to their moral nature, He influences their minds, and governs all the circumstances which operate upon them as motives to action. This application of the word cause is, however, uncommon. When it relates to the actions of men, it is ordinarily employed to denote the *reason* on account of which the actions are performed, or the *motive* or *consideration* which induces men to perform the actions. The love of money is the *cause* of a man's determinations and efforts in pursuit of wealth. If we inquire what is the *cause* of his undertaking such wearisome labors, you say, it is his *covetousness*. It would not meet the inquiry at all, to say he himself is the cause,—meaning that he is the person who undertakes the labors. What we wish to know is, the *reason* or *motive*, which influences him to act in that particular way. This is the *love of money*; and the particular course of action which he pursues, is the *effect* of this cause.

Now as to the words *cause* and *effect*, a writer may use them, and will find occasion to use them, in relation to different subjects. And in each case we are to determine from the nature of the subject, and other circumstances, what their particular meaning is; whether they are used in a higher or lower sense, in a physical or moral sense. And when they are applied to the affections or acts of the mind, we must remember that the *laws of the mind are not to be inferred from any sense previously given to the words employed, but that the sense of the words is to be inferred from the known laws of the mind*. The *laws of the mind, as really as the laws of matter, are fixed and immutable; while the meaning of words is variable, and always conforms to circumstances*.

## CONNEXION OF VOLITIONS WITH THE DISPOSITIONS, DESIRES, AFFECTIONS, AND ACTIONS.

It is sometimes said, *the will governs the whole man.* But it is said inconsiderately. For every one knows, that many of the bodily functions, and many attributes and acts of the mind, are not controlled directly by the will, and some of them neither directly nor indirectly. What power is there in an act of the will to direct and control the process of digestion, the beating of the heart, the motion of the blood, the growth of the body, or the color of the hair? The Author of our being has given the will an influence over our bodily organs just so far as he has seen to be best. Our sensations are often the effects, indirectly, of our previous volitions. But they are sometimes independent of our choice, and sometimes contrary to it; but they always result from their appropriate causes. The same is true as to intellectual exercises. To a certain extent they are under the direction of the will. But it is often otherwise. A man is sometimes obliged to think on subjects contrary to his choice, and to remember things which he wishes to forget. The attention and imagination are sometimes excited by causes which are entirely beyond our control. No theory on this subject is of any value, except that which is founded on actual experience. Experience and consciousness must teach us when, and how far, and in what circumstances the will has influence. We are to learn what are the facts in the case. And we shall do well to remember, that the facts will be just what they are, whatever our speculations may be. If you say the will is the cause of the activity of the other mental faculties, you say what is partly true, and partly not true. It is a well-known fact that the faculties of our minds are frequently roused to action, and sometimes to the most intense action, by causes which operate independently of our previous choice, and even contrary to it. The convictions of a man's conscience, for example, do not always conform to the dictates of his will. Indeed, the chief power of the will over the other faculties, when it has any power, is to bring those objects before the mind, or those influences to act upon the mind, which are suited to produce the desired effect.

As to the affections and emotions in general, every man of reflexion knows, that there are appropriate causes on which they immediately depend, whether the will acts in directing

those causes or not. Take a few examples. We do not feel the emotion of *pity* because we *will* to feel it, but because some object comes before us which is suited to excite it. And if, at any time, we do will to have the emotion, we can excite it in no other way, than by bringing the proper object before the mind. And if that object happen to come before us without any previous volition on our part, the effect is of the same nature as though it had been presented before us by our own choice. Ordinarily a man is not *angry* because he previously *wills* to be angry, but because he receives some insult or injury. It is this, and not an act of the will, which kindles the emotion of anger. A man does not feel the emotion of *envy* because he *wills* or *wishes* to feel it, but because he sees others raised above him. And when the *cause* or *occasion* of this base passion exists, the passion frequently takes possession of the heart, in opposition to the will; and the man is conscious of a feeling of *envy*, which he wishes to avoid. The affection of *love* is called forth, not by the power of a volition, but by the sight of a *lovely object*. Whether such an object is brought before the mind by a previous act of the will, or in some other way, it excites the affection. Good men love God, not because they previously will to love him, but because they see him to be lovely and glorious. Whether their thoughts are turned to God voluntarily, or in some other way, it matters not; it is that divine object which excites their love. They do not wait for an order of the will. As soon as they see God, they love him. They may turn their attention to his character by an act of the will; or some word may be spoken in their hearing, or some event take place which directs their thoughts to God. But in whatever way he is presented before their minds, it is the sight of his character which kindles their love. And it is equally true, that an ungodly man hates God, not because he previously *wills* to hate him, nor because he turns his thoughts toward him for the purpose of exciting his hatred, but because the character of God is contrary to his unholy, selfish heart. However such an object is presented to his view, his enmity will be excited as the consequence. And in whatever way the thoughts of men are turned to God, their affections toward him have a direct relation to the moral law. Love to God is obedience; and obedience is holiness. Hatred of God is disobedience; and disobedience is sin. And this is equally true whether a man's act in loving or hating is the direct or indirect effect of a previous volition or not.

Some have said that love to God and enmity against God, are themselves *acts of the will*, and are therefore of a moral nature. The propriety of this representation depends on the extent of meaning which is given to the word *will*. But at the present day, there are few, if any, distinguished writers, who use the word *will* in the wide sense which it formerly had, including all the affections and emotions, as well as the executive volitions,—it being so evident that there is a foundation in the constitution and operations of the mind, for a distinction between *affections* and *volitions*.

There is nothing in moral philosophy which is, in my view, more false, or more plainly pernicious, than the position, that no emotion or affection is morally good or evil, until it is voluntarily repeated and cherished,—a position which makes the character of the exercises of the mind depend, not on their *nature*, but on their circumstances. The position contradicts the decision of conscience and common sense. If the inward monitor and judge pronounces any sentence promptly and decisively, it is, that a rational being does what is morally right and commendable, when he truly loves God, and what is morally wrong when he hates God, whether the emotion of love or hatred is the first, or the second, or the tenth in a series. Conscience, if unperverted, looks at things *as they are*; and it sees that the *first* emotion of love or of enmity is of the same nature with any subsequent emotion. It would never occur to plain common sense, that while love to God is the grand virtue of a Christian, his first act of love is no virtue at all; or that, while the first act of love to God is destitute of goodness, following acts of love to the same object are morally good. The repetition of an affection may increase its strength, but cannot change its nature. If there is no sin in the first emotion of enmity, what law of God or of conscience forbids us to repeat and indulge it? Does not our instinctive conviction and feeling, that we ought not to repeat and cherish enmity to God, imply that any emotion of enmity is sinful? Indeed, is not the fact that the emotion of love or hatred to God rises *spontaneously* in the heart of a man, as soon as the object is presented, a clearer evidence of the goodness or badness of his character, than the same emotion when elicited by his voluntary effort? If a rational being is completely holy, he has no occasion for any effort of will to excite his love to God. The affection is kindled as soon as he sees the object. And the same is true of *enmity*, in a moral

agent who is the subject of entire and unrestrained depravity. The emotion of enmity rises instantly, whether he wills it or not, as soon as the real character of God comes before his mind. That the goodness or badness of a man's character is specially manifested by the *spontaneous* exercise of his affections in view of their appropriate objects, is, I think, clear and certain to an unbiassed conscience.

The scheme I am opposing is manifestly contrary to the *divine law*. That law extends over the whole of our intelligent and moral existence, and requires our *first* affections, as really as any subsequent affections, to be holy. If an intelligent being at the commencement of his existence truly loves God,—if his first emotion, however feeble, is an emotion of love, he so far obeys the divine law. The law says nothing of circumstances. It requires that one thing, *love*. If at any time, and in any circumstances, an intelligent being loves God, his love is obedience; and obedience is holiness. No other view of the subject corresponds with the principles of the divine law.

The same view is to be taken of the divine *prohibitions*. The law forbids pride, selfishness, malice, envy, revenge. If any one, at any period of his life, has pride, selfishness, hatred, envy, or revenge in his heart, he is a transgressor. If at the very commencement of his being, he *begins* to have either of these affections, he *begins* to transgress. The law will no more excuse a man for the *first* exercise of these hateful affections, than for any subsequent exercise.

The scheme on which I have animadverted, tends to diminish in the minds of men the sense of the evil of sin, and to do away the difference between what is right and what is wrong. If men admit the idea that the first actings of selfishness, pride, and ill-will in their hearts are blameless, because they do not result from previous volitions, they will naturally conclude that these and all similar actings of the depraved mind, in subsequent life, are blameless, when they do not follow as effects from a previous volition. And as they will find this to be the case with a large proportion of their evil affections, they will of course excuse them, or palliate their guilt. And how pernicious the tendency of this habit of mind must be in regard to our spiritual interests, will be obvious to every one who carefully reflects on the subject.

It is well known that the philosophical scheme under consideration, is substantially the same with that which Dr. John

Taylor, Socinus, and Pelagius maintained. But the scheme has been and is rejected by orthodox ministers and churches, throughout Protestant Christendom, as subversive of the essential principles of the Gospel. The scheme is sufficiently exposed by Edwards, in his work on Original Sin; and I deem it unnecessary for me to say more on the subject.

In the article in the number of the Repository for January, 1844, page 124, line 11 from the bottom, after "otherwise," insert *with me.*

[Concluded in the next number.]

---

## ARTICLE VIII.

### SKETCHES IN GRECIAN PHILOSOPHY.

By Rev. William S. Tyler, Professor in Amherst College, Mass.

#### INTRODUCTORY.

##### *Socrates.*

IN the first year of the ninety-sixth Olympiad (B. C. 396) there died at Athens a martyr to the truth—a victim to popular prejudice—who has been justly styled, by way of eminence, the Moral Philosopher, and whose influence, embodied in the Grecian Philosophy, will live and spread itself with the imperishable literature of Greece, till earthly knowledge shall vanish away. He was of humble origin, but Wisdom adopted him as her favorite son, and gave him a nature of unfading glory. The son of a statuary and a midwife, he playfully remarked, that, at different periods of his life, he followed the profession of each of his parents—that of his father in earning his daily bread, and that of his mother in developing the character of his numerous disciples; for in the height of his fame as a philosopher and a teacher, this aged sage claimed no higher pre-

rogative, than simply to *evolve* from his pupils the ideas and sentiments which lay dormant within them—a conception of *education* so just and true, that it has been incorporated into the very structure of the Latin and the English language. Yet in the education of himself, he had not only to cherish the growth of good seed, but to check the seminal principles of much evil. With the head of a Silenus, as he is described by a favorite pupil, and with all those gross propensities of which such a physiognomy is indicative, as he himself confessed, he formed a character of unblemished purity and extraordinary wisdom. With Xantippe for a wife, he congratulated himself on living in so fine a school of patience. When she pelted him with a storm of angry words within doors, he avenged himself by teaching his sons a lesson of filial duty to their mother. When she threw water on him, as he left the house, he *dryly* remarked, that rain was to be expected after so much thunder. With Crito for a patron, and several of the chief men of Athens for his providers, he lived in a style of the plainest simplicity and the strictest temperance. More than two thousand years before the boasted era of the temperance reform, he had discovered the fundamental principle of that reformation, and recommended to those who were given to appetite, as the only rule which would afford them safety, entire abstinence from such articles of diet and luxury as stimulated them to eat when they were not hungry, and to drink when they were not thirsty.

In an age of Sophists, he taught a true philosophy and a genuine eloquence. The style and spirit, as well as the result, of his teaching may be seen in the following tribute from the pleasure-loving yet aspiring Alcibiades, as recorded in Plato's Banquet of Philosophers : "When I heard Pericles or any other great orator, I was entertained and delighted, and I felt that he had spoken well. But no mortal speech has ever excited in my mind such emotions as are kindled by this magician. Whenever I hear him, I am, as it were, chained and fettered. My heart leaps like an inspired Coryphant. My inmost soul is stung by his words, as by the bite of a serpent; it is indignant at its own rude and ignoble character. I often weep tears of regret, and think how vain and inglorious is the life I lead. Nor am I the only one that weeps like a child and despairs of himself; many others are affected in the same way." Never was there penned a more perfect description of true effective eloquence. The eloquence of the pulpit especially should be that

of Socrates. The hearer should go away, not thinking how well the orator has spoken, but stung to the inmost soul, indignant at his own rude and ignoble character, and weeping tears of shame and repentance over his vain and inglorious life.

In an age of polytheism and idolatry, and among a people proverbial for their superstition, Socrates taught, so far as uninspired reason can teach, a true and spiritual religion. He believed in one supreme and eternal God, omnipresent, omniscient, omnipotent, infinitely wise, and just, and good, who created the universe, who governs the natural and the moral world, who hears prayer, who gives wisdom to those that ask it of him, and who will reward the truly pious by the everlasting enjoyment of himself, in a future life. Socrates furnished the elements and outlines of Paley's Natural Theology ; it is greatly to be regretted that he had not contributed as largely to the Moral Philosophy. For the system of the heathen moralist is as much superior to that of the Christian, as virtue is a higher and better end than happiness, and the claims of duty are paramount to the considerations of personal interest.

In like manner, his sentiments on providence and prayer, as they were not only uttered by his lips, but illustrated in his life, might well put to the blush many a doubting and many a philosophizing Christian. His was an intelligent and yet an unwavering faith, a childlike trust in superior wisdom—the truly believing spirit acting itself out habitually in a corresponding life. Amazed that men should be so easily swayed from a course of known duty by the flatteries or the frowns of the world, he declared that he would no more swerve from that path when disclosed to him by the wisdom of God, than he would follow a blind and ignorant guide in preference to one who had the clearest vision and the most perfect acquaintance with the road he wished to travel. With humility only equalled by his wisdom, he simply prayed, that God would give him good things, without further specification, since the Deity knew infinitely better than himself what things are truly good. To pray, as too many did, for pleasure, power, riches, or any so-called earthly good, was as foolish in his estimation, as to pray for a game of chance, or any thing else, which was as likely to prove a bane as a benefit, and might peradventure involve his utter ruin. In the same spirit of deference to divine authority, he bowed to the oracular response, which pronounced him to be the wisest of men, but he modestly put this construction upon it : Others thought they

knew far more than they did know; he was sensible he knew almost nothing : and in this particular he must acknowledge his own superiority to them. Yet the modesty of Socrates was at the farthest possible remove from the affected ignorance of the skeptic. He had a moral and religious creed, to which he held with unbroken firmness, and which linked him to the Eternal throne. He was modest, not because he knew nothing, but because there was so much more which he did not know. This modesty was that of the philosopher, when he looks out over a boundless universe—and like that of the Christian, when he looks up to an infinite God.

Socrates was a reformer in politics, as well as in religion. With a devotion to his country which often led him to peril his life in her service, and a deference to her laws and lawfully constituted authorities which would not let him evade, when he might, the execution of her unjust sentence against himself, he at the same time made no secret of his dislike for her ultra-democratic constitution, and the tyrannical exercise of unlimited power by her excited populace. With a consistency not to be found in the ultra-democracy of modern times, the Athenians asserted their perfect mutual equality, by casting lots for public officers among the entire list of citizens. Socrates told them that not a man of them would be such a fool as to act upon the same principle in the selection of a pilot, or a musician, or in the pettiest of all his private concerns. In his defence, written by Plato, and imagined to be spoken before the people, (a fictitious defence, indeed, but yet true to the character and spirit of Socrates,) he assures them that they have always ostracised or condemned by form of law, or otherwise persecuted their most distinguished citizens, and no man can expect to live long, who tells them the truth, or advises them for their good.

Here we see the secret of his accusation, condemnation, and death. He taught his fellow-citizens a wisdom too pure, spiritual and sublime for their comprehension. He told them truths which they could not bear to hear ; and they sent him the cup of hemlock. His last hours he spent with his disciples, conversing on the immortality of the soul. He bade them to dispose of his body as they saw fit ; but to conceive of Socrates as an emancipated, happy spirit. His last words are variously interpreted. We cannot speak of them with confidence. But may we not hope they were not the words of an idolater ? Do not his known character and established opinions authorize, if not

require us to give them an allegorical interpretation? "Offer a cock to Esculapius;" as if he had said, "Render a thank-offering to the God of health; I am almost well. I shall soon recover, and rise to a higher, better life." Words, thus understood, worthy to fall from the lips of the dying Christian! The whole scene was so affecting that his disciples were bathed in tears; and Cicero says, he could never read of it without weeping!

Socrates may have had his blind panegyrists—his indiscriminate admirers. Doubtless he has. Perhaps the writer is among them. If any think so, we would only say, with his disciple and biographer, Xenophon: Compare any other man's character with his—take into view the age in which he lived, and the difficulties which he encountered, and then decide between them. Quite sure we are, he has had his unjust censure—his unreasonable detractors. Critics and theologians have united to misrepresent and decry him.

Macaulay has done him no little injustice, in his brilliant and fascinating, but partial and sophistical review of Bacon. He represents him (on the authority of Bacon, too, he would have us believe) as the author of a reformation, which was far from being an improvement in the Greek Philosophy—as the father of a system of barren speculation, which could not condescend to the humble and degrading office of ministering to the comfort of human beings, and which gloried in nothing so much as its splendid unprofitableness. But is this said of *Socrates*—who stanched the wounds of the bleeding Xenophon, and bore away from the battle-field the fallen Alcibiades; who cheered the solitary artisan in his shop, and instructed him in the principles of his art; who, by his wise counsels and his personal influence, comforted so many desponding minds, and soothed so many aching hearts; who reconciled family feuds, regulated social and convivial entertainments, and put a check to legislative and judicial injustice; who silenced the declamations of sophists, baffled the rage of tyrants, and withstood the lawless violence of the popular assembly: in a word, whose characteristic glory it was, in the opinion of the academic Cicero, that he brought Philosophy down from heaven to earth, and made her the companion and guide of men in the private walks of life? Surely, here must be some mistake. There was doubtless ground enough for such a charge against many of the so-called Socratic schools of speculative philosophy, which were founded by his

disciples. Plato may be obnoxious to it, whom the reviewer represents as watering the tree which Socrates planted, but who in fact cultivated quite another tree, or inoculated it in almost every branch with buds from other and far less fruitful stocks. But *fruit* was the aim and end of Socrates, not less than of Bacon himself; and we could scarcely have found language more truly characteristic of the Athenian, than that which Macaulay has employed to set forth in contradistinction the spirit of the English philosopher. If any man was ever marked for "*a philanthropy so fixed in his mind that it could not be removed, a majestic humility, and a persuasion that nothing is too insignificant for the attention of the wisest, which is not too insignificant to give pleasure or pain to the meanest,*" that man was Socrates. Again, in the extended comparison, which the reviewer draws between Plato and Bacon, as to the views they severally took of the proper use of the mathematical and physical sciences—such as Arithmetic, Geometry, Astronomy, and Medicine, his description of Bacon, not of Plato, is manifestly characteristic of Socrates. Hear him. He holds, in substance, the following language, though somewhat condensed: "Plato would have his disciples apply themselves to these studies, not that they may be able to buy or sell, or measure land, or steer a vessel; not that they may qualify themselves to be book-keepers, or travelling merchants, or surveyors, or practical navigators, but that they may discipline their minds, cultivate their rational and spiritual faculties, withdraw their attention from the ever-shifting spectacle of this visible, tangible world, and fix it on the immutable essence of things. Bacon, on the other hand, valued these sciences only on account of their uses, with reference to that visible and tangible world which Plato so much despised. He speaks with scorn of the mystical Arithmetic of the later Platonists, and laments the propensity of mankind to employ on mere matters of curiosity powers, the whole exertion of which is required for purposes of solid advantage." Now hear Xenophon's account of Socrates' views. "Socrates recommended the study of Geometry, so far as to be able, if need be, to *measure off land*, in exchanges or divisions of estates, or to show others how the work is to be done. But he disapproved of extending the study to perplexing diagrams, and complicated propositions; *for of what use that could be he did not see. Such studies were sufficient to wear out a man's life, and kept him from other and more useful pursuits.*"

Equally practical were his views of Astronomy and medicine. Natural philosophy, as then understood, he renounced entirely, for two reasons—both mistaken, as is proved by the present state of the physical sciences, but both indicative of a mind eager almost to excess in the quest of fruit, viz.: the laws which govern the elements of the heavenly bodies could never be ascertained, in the first place; and in the second place, if they could, they were entirely beyond our reach, and so incapable of being subjected to our *use*. Is this a philosophy that despairs to be useful? If any fault is to be found with it, it is too utilitarian. It does not attach due importance to these studies as a means of disciplining the mind.

The reviewer informs us that *Bacon*, in the first edition of his *de Augmentis*, enumerated *mental discipline* among the advantages of mathematical study. But in an edition published twenty years later, he omits all reference to that collateral advantage, and asserts that the mathematics can claim no higher rank than that of an appendage to other sciences and a handmaid to Natural Philosophy. So it required in Bacon himself the study and experience of a long life to become as Baconian as Socrates—as stanch and exclusive an advocate for usefulness as that father of a barren and speculative philosophy—as orthodox as that great heresiarch of antiquity!

In our view Socrates occupies the happy medium—the juste milieu—between Plato and Bacon in this respect. His powers of speculation and imagination were not inferior to those of Plato. But he did not allow them so loose reins. He gave them a more practical and useful direction. His powers of observation and common sense were not less quick or sagacious than those of Bacon. But he did not confine them in their exercise so much to the material world. He chose to direct them towards higher and better objects. Like Plato, he dwelt chiefly in the province of mind. Like Bacon, he labored there only to do good. He was a better Platonist than Plato, because he speculated more wisely, and better knew his own spirit. He was a better Baconian than Bacon, because he explored a better world, and discovered richer clusters of *fruit*. Plato never contemplated with more rapt admiration the divine beauty of truth and virtue. Bacon never sought after wisdom with more child-like docility at the oracles of nature and of God. He was less proud and vain than Plato; less earthly and grovelling than Bacon. Plato was certainly not so much a Christian philosopher

as Socrates; and we sometimes fear Bacon was not so much of a Christian man. With the aid of revelation, he would probably have combined the excellencies of both, without the faults of either.

And this brings us back to the other of the two points, which we suggested, but which we did not intend should occupy us so long. We said, critics and theologians have united to misrepresent and decry him. We have done with the critic. Let us pass to the theologian. He too shall be a popular author—his theology a standard work. We refer to Dick; though his is only a specimen of wholesale denunciation of heathen philosophy, which is too common in theological works, and which is as bad policy as it is questionable morality. Near the beginning of his theology, he speaks thus of Socrates: "Were this wisest of men according to the oracle, this pattern of every excellence according to the nonsensical panegyrics of pedants and fools, now to appear among us, no man with correct ideas of piety and morality would choose to be seen in his company." However much Dr. Dick's reputation for virtue might have suffered from the society of Socrates, we think he might have learned from him a lesson of meekness, modesty, and Christian charity. Such language may befit a heated polemic in the excitement of a doubtful discussion. But it ill becomes a grave Doctor of Divinity, in the calm advocacy of unquestionable and infallible truth. Between the philosopher and his critic, it can harm only the latter; and if the mischief ended there, we would only cry, for shame! and pass over the stricture in silence. But it injures also the cause it was designed to subserve. It incurs the suspicion of weakness, where there is impregnable strength: *Haud istis defensoribus tempus eget.* Christianity asks no such boastful, yet timid and feeble advocacy. When the sun rises in his majestic brightness, he sends no pioneer to go before him and extinguish the lesser lights. On the contrary, the brighter the stars that fade away at his approach, the more emphatic and impressive is their silent homage. Rather let Soerates stand forth in all the purity and dignity of his noble nature—invest him with all the charms of mere earthly wisdom, and then let him bow down and worship at the feet of Jesus. We love to think of Socrates as a sort of type and forerunner of Christ under the dispensation of Providence. The Philosopher too went about doing good, instructing the ignorant, reclaiming the vicious, comforting the afflicted, and conversing with the poor.

The Philosopher also taught the people in parables ; presenting truth in the most perspicuous and impressive manner ; illustrating it by familiar objects and pursuits, making the brute animals to rebuke the ignorance and stupidity of men, and giving a tongue to every thing in the heavens above, or the earth beneath, to bear witness for truth and virtue and God. The Philosopher awed his opposers, so that they durst not ask him any more questions ; silenced his accusers, stood unabashed before judges and magistrates, and when his followers were overwhelmed by the approaching execution of his unjust sentence, he administered to them that consolation which most men would have needed to have administered to themselves in such an hour of trial. The Philosopher had numerous and powerful friends, who at his call would have hastened to his rescue ; but he was born to die a martyr to the truth, and he was ready for the sacrifice.

Would that we could go further and say, that Socrates prayed for the forgiveness of his enemies. But no ; he did not die for them. Socrates died only like a Philosopher, Jesus Christ died like a God ! Would that he had shown more of the tender sensibilities of our nature by commanding in his last agony a mother, a wife, or some other helpless friend, to the care and affection of a beloved disciple. But no ; Socrates died like a Philosopher. Jesus Christ died like a man.

Socrates was sensible of his own ignorance and imperfection, as well as the blindness and depravity of his race ; and if we may credit Plato, he anticipated the advent of one like Jesus of Nazareth, of humble origin, yet heavenly wisdom, who should be a Divine Teacher and yet a martyr to the cause of truth and mankind. We are not prepared to join with a venerable father of the ancient Church in saying : *Sancte Socrates, ora pro nobis.* We cannot admit the probability, that many of the heathen will be saved without the gospel ; for very few of them live and die in a state of mind to embrace the Saviour, if revealed to them. But we cannot refrain from indulging the hope, that one who possessed so much of the Christian spirit, will one day join with Christians in casting their crowns at His feet, who is the fountain of wisdom and goodness in every age.

Socrates did not himself commit to writing his philosophical system, though he had a system of moral philosophy well digested in his own mind. Content to live in the minds and hearts and writings of his numerous disciples, he gave himself up to

the fulfilment of his mission, which was to exert a direct, controlling, personal influence over as many as possible of all classes of his fellow citizens. The multitude were his hearers in the crowded market-place. Men of rank and wealth, statesmen and scholars, poets and historians, orators and philosophers, were among his followers. Seven distinct schools of philosophy grew up among his disciples, and vied with each other for the honor of bearing his name. Four of them were established in Athens. There—in that seat of literature, philosophy, and the fine arts, that city of Minerva and the Muses—surrounded by all that can inspire a generous and noble emulation, they struggled long and hard for the pre-eminence. And thence they sent out an influence, which has been felt, for good or for evil, in every subsequent age, sometimes lending the sanction of antiquity and a great name to a time-hallowed error; sometimes contributing to the support and adding to the fascinations of a universal and perpetual truth; and always imparting at once stimulus and direction to the energies of many powerful minds. The Cynic sect had the fewest followers, and was the most short-lived. The Stoic has its admirers—its virtual disciples—to this day. Transplanted from its own native clime, it flourished even more in Roman than in Grecian soil. Its memory will never die while the name of Cato lives. Its spirit will be cherished, wherever Roman heroism and Roman virtue are admired. There will always be individuals—there will always be communities where the Stoic Philosophy will meet a cordial reception, and find a congenial home. But the Academic, and the Peripatetic are the sects, whose influence, ‘perennius aere,’ has been most wide-spread and enduring. Alternately they ruled the church and the world till the Reformation. Now the literary and theological world is almost equally divided between them. No other uninspired men have set their seal on such a mass of mind, as the founders of these two sects. Indeed Plato and Aristotle may be regarded as the impersonations severally of the ideal and the actual—those great antagonist principles or tendencies, which ever have and ever will agitate and divide mankind.

*Plato.*

Sprung from the noble stock of Cadmus and of Solon, endowed with a commanding form, and a countenance of rare intellectual beauty, educated in childhood in the best schools at

Athens, and spending eight of the brightest years of his youth under the teaching of Socrates, Plato was one of nature's noblemen, formed and finished by the nicest touches of the hand of art. Or, as the superstitious and imaginative Greeks will have it, he was the offspring of Apollo, and the god of song had no reason to be ashamed of his son—the pupil of the Muses, and they might well have been proud of his proficiency. Laid on Mount Hymettus, while his parents were employed in offering a sacrifice to the deities of the place, the bees came and filled the mouth of the infant with cells of honey, thus prefiguring, says Olympiodorus, the sweet and persuasive eloquence which flowed from his lips as from those of the aged Nestor: *τοῦ καὶ ἀπὸ γλώσσης μέλιτος γλυκίων δέει αἰδήν.*

To complete the list of marvels, he was introduced into the Academy with the following romantic accompaniments: The night before, Socrates had one of those imaginative, half-prophetic dreams, for which he was remarkable. A young swan flew away from the altar which was consecrated to Love in the Academy, and alighted on the lap of Socrates, and at length rose into the air with an enrapturing song. As the philosopher was relating the dream the next morning to his disciples, Ariston came with his son. Struck with the external appearance of the youth, which bespoke superior genius, he turned to his pupils and said: There is the swan of the Academy. Another account, still more exquisitely tasteful and appropriate, makes the swan to have been *destitute of wings* when it first alighted in the lap of Socrates; but there it immediately acquired wings, and flew away with so sweet a song as to charm all the hearers.

It suits not our present purpose to follow Plato while perfecting his education by foreign travel, and at the same time imparting more valuable instruction than he received; nor while making his three successive visits to the court of Syracuse, which he succeeded in converting for a season into a school of morals and philosophy; but where he was ere long in imminent danger of losing his liberty, if not his life, at the hands of the capricious tyrant. These embrace almost all the *incidents* which diversify his long and, for the most part, happy life.

Romantic and instructive as some of these incidents are, we would exchange our knowledge of them all for a minute history of a single month of his more private life, as a teacher in the Academy, and a student at home. A home, in the ordinary sense, he had not; for, wedded only to Philosophy, he lived exempt

alike from family cares and family joys. A scholar's home he doubtless had and loved, where he spent much time absorbed in his beautiful speculations, and delighted in weaving them into that graceful and enduring form, in which they have come down to us. But a veil of impenetrable darkness hangs over it. We strive in vain to catch a glimpse of his personal and intellectual habits in that retirement where such a spirit chiefly lives, and moves, and has his being. None but Plato could write the life of Plato. A faithful autobiography is what we need to give us an insight at once into his character and his works. Compared with such a delineation of his own private and inward life, as he could have furnished us from his own pen, the best biographies extant are meagre chronicles, and all the commentaries that were ever written on the Platonic Dialogues, are idle romance. As to the Academy, we read enough of its outward attractions ; its gently flowing stream, and lofty plane-trees, its statues, and temples, and altars, and tombs ; enough of the crowds that were attracted thither, not so much by the charms of the place as by the fame of Plato, many from distant cities, and some women even in men's attire. But what we want is a copy of the Academic "Laws," or the last "Annual Catalogue," or something answering to those very satisfactory, though not very classical exposés of our modern systems of education. Or a "file of morning papers" containing full reports of the "last evening's Lecture or Debate" in the Academy, would let us into the very midst of the school, to breathe its air, and catch its spirit. But unhappily for us, (we will not say for them,) the ancients had no press to stereotype and transmit to posterity those minute features of every-day life, which are "the very form and pressure" of the age. If our age has any thing worth knowing, it will be known and preserved. If it has not, that too will be known. For every phase of social, and, to a great extent, of individual life, is now daguerreotyped, as it passes ; and our greatness and our meanness, our wisdom and our folly, our knowledge and our nonsense, will all be open to the inspection of the curious in subsequent times.

The circumstances of Plato's death, as they are transmitted to us by the wonder-loving Greeks, are as poetical as those of his birth and early life. At once a teacher and a scholar to the last, he died on the first day of his eighty-second year, through the mere decay of his physical nature, in the full possession of his mental faculties, breathing out his life in soft slumber among

friends at a wedding banquet. He was buried near the Academy, in the Ceramicus, the Westminster Abbey of Athens. And the Athenians erected for him in the same place a monument with this inscription : Apollo had two sons, Esculapius and Plato—the one to heal the body, the other to cure the soul.

Plato's moral character has been assailed, like that of his master, and with as little reason. Not that we think him as fine a specimen of high moral development as his master. He certainly had not the broad philanthropy, the practical piety, the truly Roman patriotism, and high moral courage of Socrates. We doubt whether he had all his modesty, or unaffected simplicity, or single-hearted love for the truth. But the positive vices with which he has been charged, would never have been heard of but for the jealous rivalry of contending sects, and are quite inconsistent, not only with the direct testimony of unprejudiced witnesses, but with the entire spirit of his writings, and the uniform tenor of his life.

His intellectual constitution will be more or less highly appreciated by different minds, according as it is more or less congenial to their own taste. We may as well plead guilty at once to the charge of not admiring his philosophy. Of course we shall be pronounced incapable of understanding it. We are not anxious to exculpate ourselves from this accusation. We only say to our readers, let him among you that is without sin in this respect cast the first stone. There are some features in the character of Plato, which no one can mistake, who knows his history, and has read, to any considerable extent, his works.

With small powers of observation, he gave himself up almost entirely to reflexion and reason. Instead of exploring the world to see how it is made, he sits down in his study, and draws out of his own reason and fancy a system of geography and geology, which to him is just as real as if it had been the result of the most patient observation and induction. In like manner, in astronomy and physical science in general, the only inquiry worthy of a philosopher is, how is it best that things should be constituted? That once determined, the all-wise Creator of the universe must of course have constituted them so.

Physical science, however, received very little attention from Plato. We hear of his going to Sicily among other things to examine Mount Ætna. But when he arrives we hear no more of the volcano, we find him teaching the pure mathematics and the Platonic Philosophy in the court of Syracuse. The soul of

man, its spiritual nature, and high capacities, its origin and destiny ; the Deity, his essence, and his relations to the universe ; being in general, its attributes and laws—such were the themes on which he delighted to dwell. What is the essence of knowledge ? what is the nature of virtue ? what constitutes true piety ? what are the laws of legitimate reasoning ? what would be a perfect state of society ? what is the highest good of the individual man ?—these are some of the questions which most exercised his thoughts. And in the discussion of them, he discovers a singular fondness for abstract ideas, for subtle and remote analysis. He can be satisfied with nothing short of the *essential, elementary principle* of knowledge, of virtue, of piety, and of being in general. What we regard as simple ideas, and therefore incapable of definition or analysis, are but the first steps in his analytical processes. He would fain apply a further abstraction to the most abstract conceptions of the human intellect. As might be expected, we find him making little progress in such inquiries. He refutes easily enough the answers of others. But it is not so easy to give a satisfactory answer of his own ; and very often he does not even make the attempt. Many a long dialogue is nothing but a graceful tissue of beautiful negations.

An enthusiastic admirer of mathematical science, he would allow no one to enter the Academy, who was unacquainted with geometry. But it was only the *pure* mathematics that he commended. He eschewed all physical and mechanical applications as quite degrading the heaven-born science. And he would gladly have reduced *intellectual and moral philosophy* to a system as purely abstract and ideal as the pure mathematics.

Plato's reasoning, so far as it was based on the causal relation at all, was from cause to effect, rather than from effect to cause. He inferred the actual from the logical, not the logical from the actual—how things are, from how they ought to be, not how things ought to be from how they are. A monstrous *τοτεπον αρότεπον*, as it appears to us ! Yet this strange inversion of the reasoning faculty seems to have been as natural to most of the old Greek philosophers, as it is to the German metaphysicians of our own day. Plato would not condescend to call any thing a cause except the reason, which rendered it *best* for a thing so to be. *Final causes* were the only causes that should be investigated, whether in physics or in metaphysics.

But Plato was more inclined to reason from analogy, than

from the relation of cause and effect. He is often merely adducing analogies, when he seems to think he is establishing logical conclusions. And he relies upon the result of an analogical process with undoubting confidence, as not merely affording a presumption, but creating a certainty, so far as any thing is certain. By far the greater part of the famous arguments for the immortality of the soul in the Phædo, are drawn from analogy, and cannot fail to strike the modern reader as rather specious than sound—more pleasing than convincing. They are hasty generalizations of an abstract nature, and to our American intellects scarcely furnish presumptive evidence of the doctrine to be proved. Is there not something puerile and almost ludicrous in an argument like this for instance: A person becomes greater from having been previously smaller, smaller from having been greater; worse from better, better from worse; awake from asleep, asleep from awake; and therefore (?) must he not only from alive become dead, but also from dead, alive again! Yet this is the substance of his principal argument for the immortality of the soul! If there is any truth in phrenology, the upper and middle portion of "the frontal bone" must have been enormously developed in Plato's cranium. Such a predominance of "the reflective" over "the perceptive faculties," and of "comparison" over "causality," would have furnished a capital subject for a Gall or a Spurzheim.

Tradition has transmitted to us one characteristic feature of Plato's cranial structure. He is even said by some authorities to have derived his name\* from a singular *breadth* of his *fore-head*. The Phrenologist would explain this feature by a large development of the organs of Wit and Ideality, and in the correspondence between this outward development and the known character of the Philosopher, would perhaps find a confirmation of his science. One thing is certain. Plato must have had those faculties in large measure. His wit was playful rather than severe. He was often humorous, not so often sarcastic. His temper was probably too mild and generous to indulge his wit in any malignant sallies. But he exhibits in its perfection the good-natured, yet effective irony of his master. Plato's Socrates never strikes down his adversary at a blow with the fiery logic of Demosthenes, and then "with the abrupt and

---

\* Πλάτων, from πλατύς, broad.

terrible interrogations of the same orator, tramples him in the mire." But he plays upon him the shafts of raillery and good humored ridicule, till he drives him from his position—sometimes from his presence, to the no small merriment of the spectators.

But Ideality was the grand, distinctive feature of Plato's character. Ideality gave their coloring, if not their cast, to all his conceptions. Ideality shed its rainbow hues over the Universe, as he beheld it. Perhaps we should say, it *created* an ideal universe, which concealed from his view the real. He fashioned for himself an ideal earth, an ideal heaven, an ideal man, and an ideal republic. He imagined a sort of world of ideas, distinct alike from the creation and the Creator, pure and perfect, eternal and immutable, which constituted the only proper field of scientific investigation—in which the Philosopher should live, and move, and have his being. Plato was not insensible to the sublime and beautiful in nature. He admired them still more in literature and the arts. The moral sublime and beautiful, he worshipped with idolatrous veneration. Even such an object of worship was the ideal Socrates, whom he introduces as the leading character in all his dialogues, invests with many imaginary qualities, and commends to our reverence and our love. He must have been enamored of many of his own creations, as Narcissus was of his own image in the fountain. Even such a creation was his fancy sketch of our world, of which he conceived the known part to be but a comparatively narrow, dark, and deep chasm, filled with murky vapors, deformed by mountains and marshes, and inhabited by ignorant and guilty men; while around the brink of the chasm, (like our earth around the sea,) spread out broad Elysian fields, where better men trod on sparkling gems, breathed the pure ether and walked among the stars. But it was in his world of ideas, of which we have spoken, that his sense of the sublime and beautiful found its highest gratification. There his rapt spirit gazed on beauties which eye has not seen, listened to music which ear has not heard, and swelled with emotions to which not even his seraph tongue could give utterance.

If Jupiter were to speak in the Greek tongue, says Cicero, he would borrow the style of Plato. Such was the estimation in which the ancients held Plato as a writer! Even the judicious Quintilian is smitten with admiration, and not only calls

him the Prince of philosophers, but ascribes to him a Homeric and superhuman eloquence, insomuch that he is to be regarded as instinct, not so much with the genius of a man, as with the very spirit of the Delphic oracle.

Yet ancient critics were not all blind to his faults. Dionysius of Halicarnassus particularly censures Plato for the harshness of his metaphors and his bold innovations in the use of terms; and quotes from his *Phædrus* examples of the puerile, the frigid, and the bombastic in style. It must be admitted, that some of his earlier productions, to which class we suppose his *Phædrus* belongs, are florid, perhaps bombastic. Occasionally, in his later works, you meet with sentences which are artificial and turgid, or loose, wordy, and unmeaning. Many of his dialogues are excessively obscure. Some apology for this may be found in the subtle and tenuous nature of the subjects which he treats. But it should never be forgotten, that some writers are always perspicuous, that any author can make any subject intelligible which he understands himself, and that the only proper treatment of other subjects is not to treat them at all. We are aware that it is the custom of a certain class of critics to charge all the darkness there is in the case to the readers of Plato. We say nothing of the modesty of this assumption. But to our mind, it is a self-evident proposition, that there is real and unpardonable obscurity in the writer, be he poet, orator, or metaphysician, whom only half a dozen minds in all Christendom can understand, and they only as the result of the study of a long life. His countrymen and contemporaries complained of his obscurity. One of his ancient biographers records, that when near his end, Plato saw a vision. "He saw himself transformed into a swan, hopping from branch to branch, and flying from tree to tree, and thus perpetually foiling the efforts of the fowler to take him. Simmias, the Socratic philosopher, put this interpretation upon the vision. Plato will not be easy of apprehension to those who in subsequent times shall undertake to explain his works." Seldom has a dream or vision proved more prophetic. Scholars always have been and always will be disputing the meaning of Plato.

Still few, on the whole, have ever approached so near to perfection in the use of any language, as this same Plato has done in his best writings—particularly in his more practical and more purely Socratic Dialogues. Whenever he comes as it were under the influence of Socrates, we not only admire but

love him. Then he writes like himself—then he is perspicuous, natural, earnest, always beautiful, often sublime. The perfection of his style was among the last, as it ever was among the most strenuous, labors of his life. After his death, the beginning of his Republic was found in a process of revision so careful and thorough, as to evince an extreme anxiety to amend and improve the expression. He never attains to the nervous conciseness of Demosthenes, seldom to the artless simplicity of Xenophon. But there is a fertility of genius, a felicity of illustration, a delicacy of conception and expression, a harmony of language, an indescribable charm in the whole composition, which is scarcely to be found in any other prose writer, and which is, as Quintilian terms it, truly Homeric. Let him, who would learn the power of words as music to the ear and painting to the soul, study Plato. There lies his strength and true glory. Our transcendental friends will esteem it an unpardonable heresy; but we must utter the conviction of our own hearts, and, as we believe, the sentiment also of nine-tenths of all his English readers. We cannot but think there was in him far more of rhetoric than of logic, and more of poetry than of either. Much of his logic is mere rhetoric, and very much of his philosophy is Oriental poetry. His reason is just what we of more earthly mould have always called imagination. Taste usurps the place of judgment, and feeling is more sacred and more *real* than fact. His very faults as a reasoner contribute to his fascination as a writer. His analogies are not conclusive as arguments, but they are exceedingly attractive as illustrations. And no writer has a greater exuberance of them. Besides the more extended comparisons which form the very texture of his discourse, and which are always in good taste, however bad the logic may be, the reader is surprised and delighted at every step by the discovery of some graceful allusion—some new and slight perhaps, yet pleasing resemblance. His pictures, like those of the daguerreotype and like the productions of nature, are full of those minute yet completely delineated beauties, which escape a mere passing observation, and appear only the more perfect as they are subjected to a closer inspection. Quintilian says that from Plato, more than any other source, Cicero drank in his divine eloquence. That Plato himself could have become a brilliant and persuasive orator, none can doubt after reading his bold, manly, and irresistible Defence of Socrates. Swayed by its truthful and

earnest appeals, inspired by its pure and lofty spirit, we only wish it could have been delivered before the judges of Socrates, and we could have sat by and seen them alternately blush and turn pale before it. It would doubtless have exasperated them, but it would also have made them tremble. We are told that, when young, he composed poems, but seeing their inferiority to those of Homer, he committed them to the flames. Many a beardless scribbler, with infinitely less of the poet's soul in him than Plato, has given his effusions to the public, and gone on composing rhymes all his days without once suspecting their inferiority to the minstrelsy of the Prince of Grecian Bards. His dissatisfaction with his first attempts only proves, that Plato had set up for himself a higher standard. We suspect he would have returned to his lyre, and succeeded, had he not fallen in with Socrates, in whom the beautiful and the true were so harmoniously blended as to captivate the whole soul of the aspiring youth. Certainly he has given us every thing but the *metre* of poetry in his Dialogues. And his *diction*, Aristotle and Quintilian agree in characterizing as a middle species between prose and verse. He had a noble instrument to play upon—the Greek language in all the infinite flexibility of its nature, in all the matchless perfection of its highest development; the new Attic dialect, with all its soft, sweet, flute-like melody; and he drew from it strains of enchanting, unearthly music. The epigram which he composed in honor of Aristophanes might, with equal propriety, have been inscribed on his own tombstone: The Graces, seeking to find some sacred and imperishable abode, found the *soul* of *Plato*.

#### *Aristotle.*

From the Academy, we now pass to the Lyceum—from a contemplative and ideal, to a metaphysical and practical philosophy. From Plato, we turn to his most distinguished pupil—from the personified Rhetoric and Poetry to the embodied Logic and Metaphysics of Greece and the world.

The birth-place of Aristotle is commemorated in the surname by which he is familiarly known—the Stagirite. The influence of his parentage is perpetuated in his love for the physical sciences—his father was a physician in the court of Macedon, and traced the origin of his family back to Esculapius. Deprived of his parents at an early age, he left his na-

tive country, and after a short sojourn in Aternea, found a home in Athens—a father in Plato. Different as they were in the constitution of their minds, he soon attracted the attention of his master, and gained his admiration to such a degree as to become a favorite pupil. Plato used to call him the Mind of the school, and to say when he was absent : “I speak to a deaf audience ; Intellect is not here.” After disciplining himself for twenty years in the Academy, and perhaps teaching rhetoric during a portion of the same time in a school of his own, he repaired to the court of Philip of Macedon, to take charge of the education of Alexander, then a youth of fifteen—a charge to which he had long before been invited in the most flattering terms by the father, who, in announcing the birth of the child to the philosopher, professed to be grateful to the gods, not so much for giving him a son, as for permitting him to be born in the time of Aristotle. Despite these extravagant expectations, Aristotle executed his trust to the entire satisfaction of pupil and parents. Philip admitted him to his public counsels, rebuilt at his request the town of Stagira, and restored to the inhabitants their ancient privileges, and gave him many other unequivocal tokens of gratitude and esteem. Alexander professed himself more indebted to his preceptor than to his father ; since Philip had only given him life, while Aristotle had taught him the art of living well. And the truly noble character of the youthful hero, till it was marred by uninterrupted success ; his command of his passions, till he was corrupted by flattery ; his regard for literature, science and the arts ; the surpassing greatness of mind which he displayed in all the earlier measures of his reign ; and indeed the grand and comprehensive schemes of public policy which he was forming and maturing to the very last, go far to justify the sentiment of Alexander, and scarcely shed more lustre on himself, than they reflect upon his aspiring and far-seeing teacher.

Returning to Athens after an absence of some half a dozen years, and finding Xenocrates installed in the chair of the Academy, Aristotle established a rival school of philosophy in the Lyceum, a public grove in the vicinity of the city, which had been highly adorned by Pisistratus and Pericles, and was used as a gymnasium for military exercises. Here he held daily conversations with such as resorted to him, walking as he conversed ; whence he and his followers derived the name of Peripatetics. He was present at the Lyceum twice every day. The forenoon

was devoted to his intimate pupils, to whom he then expounded the difficult parts of science; his Esoteric Philosophy; his subtle notions touching Being, Nature, and God. This he called his Morning Walk. In the evening, he admitted all who were desirous of hearing him; and then he discoursed in a more familiar manner on subjects more closely connected with common life; such as Rhetoric, Logic, Ethics, and Political Economy, which constituted his Exoteric Philosophy. This he called his Evening Walk. Aristotle continued his school in the Lyceum twelve years. Deprived of the patronage of Alexander, and regarded with a jealous eye on account of his intimacy with that ambitious prince; conspired against by demagogues, and charged with impiety by the priests, he at length left Athens, with the observation (alluding to the condemnation of Socrates) that he would spare the Athenians the guilt of a second crime against philosophy. He retired, with most of his pupils, to Chalcis in Euboea, where he died soon after in the sixty-third year of his age, as some say, from poison administered by his own hand, but more probably from exhaustion and decay induced by excessive watchfulness and application to study. His body was conveyed to Stagira, where his countrymen, in reverence for his genius, and in gratitude for his services, did what they could to honor and preserve his memory by an altar and a tomb. But Aristotle has done far more to embalm and perpetuate the name of Stagira; his was a chequered though by no means a romantic or eventful life. He received the highest honors which are bestowed on genius and learning. He experienced also the neglect and persecution which have too often been the allotment of gifted souls. His sun set in clouds; but his name shines with increasing brightness, like a star of the first magnitude, through the darkening night of ages.

We shall give a somewhat more minute analysis of his character and habits, as we wish in the sequel to call attention particularly to him and his works. The person of Aristotle was far from commanding or prepossessing. His short stature and slender form gave additional pertinence and emphasis, if they did not in part give rise, to the surname of Intellect by which he was distinguished in the Academy. His eyes too were remarkably small. His nose (perhaps by way of compensation) seems to have been the most largely developed member. To complete the catalogue of his physical disadvantages, he is said to have lisped and stammered in his speech.

Conscious of his ungracious person, Aristotle is said to have been anxious to compensate for it by the richness and elegance of his dress. His mantle was of costly materials and brilliant colors. He wore rings of great value; and he shaved both his head and his face, while the other disciples of Plato wore long hair and long beards.

His diet was not luxurious, like his dress, but simple and wholesome. His constitution was naturally feeble; but he strengthened it by temperance and exercise; and, by a strict observance of the laws of health, in that proper union of physical with mental exertion which is so strikingly symbolized by his *Peripatetic* lectures, he enjoyed almost uninterrupted health through a long life of the most intense study and thought.

The natural disposition of Aristotle, we are inclined to think, was kindly, affectionate, and generous. In his *domestic* and *social* relations, he certainly does not show that cold, passionless and heartless character, which is so characteristic of his *works*. True, he did not marry till the unsusceptible, unpoetical age of thirty-seven—the very age, too, which his unbiassed judgment had pronounced to be the proper age for a man to marry. But it is the more remarkable that, at that period of life, he should be capable of a match of friendship and affection. Such was his marriage to the niece and adopted daughter of his deposed and murdered friend Hermias, whom he wedded, not when she was heiress to a throne, but when she was a fugitive and an exile, with no attractions but her personal charms, and no dower but her virtues. And when his wife, as well as his friend, was no more, so lavish was he in the tokens of his grateful and affectionate remembrance, so nearly divine were the honors with which he commemorated their virtues, that the Athenians charged him with impiety—with treason against the majesty of the gods. In like manner, after the death of his master Plato, he wrote verses in his praise, erected altars in honor of him, and inscribed upon his monument an epitaph of which a Latin version is preserved :

Gratus Aristoteles struit hoc altare Platoni,  
Quem turbae injustae vel celebrare nefas,

But as he grew older, his generous nature seems to have been eaten up by his inordinate ambition. The desire of distinction and the pride of intellectual superiority prompted him to measures which were alike ungenerous and unjust. We give no

credence to the improbable story of his jealous and furious quarrel with the aged Plato. Of this the above epitaph were alone a sufficient refutation. We do not severely censure, indeed we scarcely wonder at his indignation and disgust at the preference of Speusippus and Xenocrates to himself in the succession to the Academic Chair. It was not unworthy of the man, though it was hardly becoming the philosopher, to cherish instead of checking the ardor and ambition which fired the breast of Alexander for the conquest of the Persians, who were esteemed the common enemies of all Greece, and to whose sovereign Aristotle felt a special animosity for putting to death his friend Hermias. All these offences against the purity or dignity of philosophy, we can overlook. But we know no apology, we can conceive of none, for the studied injustice with which he misrepresented the opinions of other philosophers, depreciated the wisdom of former ages, and erected his own edifice upon the ruins of every other structure, insomuch that Lord Bacon, with no less truth than severity, remarked, that "like a Turkish despot, he thought he could not reign secure, till he had first slain all his brethren." He seeks to disguise this injustice under the garb of zeal for the truth, as appears from a favorite adage of his, which has come down to us in a Latin dress: *Amicus Plato, amicus Socrates, magis tamen amica veritas.* But this is only adding insult to injury, as every reader feels, when he sees that this supreme regard for the truth is only a cover for vaulting ambition and overweening self-love. Aristotle had friends, and loved them; but they were personal, not literary. They might command his affections, and to some extent his services, but they must not interfere with his ambition. He had a heart, but he kept it at home. It never appears in his works, unless it be in the form of one absorbing passion—the desire of intellectual pre-eminence.

The ambition, of which we have been speaking, was not an unmixed evil. We are doubtless indebted to it in part for the prodigious exertions and no less prodigious achievements of this most intellectual of all philosophers. In him, exorbitant ambition, indefatigable industry, and extraordinary talents, conspired to do a work whose variety and vastness are amazing to look upon, and would be quite appalling when undertaken by almost any other man. Plato early observed of him, that he required the rein rather than the spur. In the Academy, his industry in perusing and copying manuscripts was unexampled, well

nigh incredible. He was named, *par excellence*, the reader, or the student. And he doubtless kept up these studious habits through life. Hence the astonishing fecundity of illustration from books, which is so apparent in his works. It would seem as if there were not an opinion in philosophy, or a fact in history, but he knows it and refers to it—not an oration ever spoken, or a poem ever sung, but he has read it and quoted from it.

His talent and industry were no less remarkable in the *observation*, whether of natural phenomena or of passing events. He was largely endowed with those perceptive faculties, in which Plato was so deficient. He would seem to have been formed by nature and education for universal knowledge. There is scarcely a phenomenon on the land or on the sea, in the air or in the starry concave, which he does not describe, as if from personal observation. There is scarcely an animal in the heavens above, or in the earth beneath, or in the waters under the earth, which he does not speak of as if he had dissected its frame and learned from personal inspection all its habits. If we were called on to select at this day the book, which contains in the smallest compass the greatest number of curious and instructive facts touching every variety of animals, we do not know but it would be the *Natural History* of Aristotle. In reading it, though we know that the resources of the conqueror of the world were employed in furnishing the materials, and the energies of a master mind were long devoted to the examination of them, still we wonder how he came by such a vast accumulation of zoological knowledge in an age and country so little given to physical researches.

But remarkable as Aristotle was for the observation of facts, he was still more remarkable for the use he made of them by reflexion and reason. If we may be allowed to retain a phrenological classification which we borrowed in speaking of Plato, and which, whatever may be said of its metaphysical accuracy, is quite convenient in practical and descriptive analysis, those reflective faculties which had such undue prominence in Plato, were developed in Aristotle in wonderful harmony with his perceptive faculties. If we confine our attention to his *intellectual* nature, few minds were ever better balanced than Aristotle's. He had in due proportion the faculty of comparison, and he understood the legitimate use of it. We see it in the frequent and pertinent *illustration* of his doctrines by corresponding principles and analogous facts. His comparisons are

not mere figures of speech. They are designed to illustrate, not to embellish his discourse. His analogies are presented as analogies, not as proofs—as affording a presumption or confirmation, not as establishing a conclusion. Again we see it in his marvellous power of *classification*. He observes facts, not so much for the purpose of knowing them, as of arranging them in due order and method. An isolated fact, stated for its own sake, without regard to any principle—out of its relation to any system—would be an anomaly in this philosopher's works. In Natural History, he collects his materials before he touches his pen; and when he commences writing, his great business is to classify and explain them. *Comparative Anatomy* (in its broadest sense) was a favorite subject with him. We know of no one, who so well deserves to be called the Father of that science. In his works on Intellectual, Moral and Political Science, he uses facts to confirm and establish principles. For it is a mistake to suppose that Aristotle was unacquainted with the method of induction in Philosophy. Macaulay has shown conclusively, in the Review to which we have already alluded, that the ancient philosophers differed from the moderns—that Aristotle, for instance, differed from Bacon—not so much in the means which he knew how to employ, as in the ends which he chose to pursue. Had Aristotle sought to discover the elements and powers of nature, and to lay them under contribution to the necessities, the comforts or the pleasures of man, he would have used the Inductive Method. Any man would; for it is the dictate of common sense, which, we take it, is not so very uncommon as to be the exclusive prerogative of modern times. Aristotle *did* follow that method more or less in all his practical works. His rules in the Art of Poetry are either deductions from the practice of the best poets, or inferences from those facts in human nature, which the testimony of consciousness establishes. In like manner, his Rhetoric rests upon the twofold basis of mental consciousness and rhetorical usage. Even his Logic, which it has become so fashionable to decry, as wholly speculative, barren of utility, and remote from the practice of mankind, is neither more nor less than a classification or analysis, and a masterly one too, of the manner in which men actually reason, and always have reasoned, and always will, while they continue to reason correctly. And yet wise men and great men, ever since the time of Bacon, have plumed themselves on the discovery, that the syllogism can never lead

to the discovery of new truth, inasmuch as nothing can be deduced in the conclusion which was not already involved in the premises—a fact which Aristotle knew as well as Bacon or Reid—but a fact which detracts nothing from the merit of Aristotle, or the value he attached to the syllogism, since he never recommended it as a means of discovering new truth, but as a test of the proof by which known truth is professedly established, and never proposed it as a new method of reasoning, but only as a classification or analysis of the essential steps by which men must proceed if they would reason correctly. We might also take up the Ethics and Politics, and show that the author every where recognizes and proceeds upon the Inductive method. The latter, especially, as we may show more fully hereafter, was in its original and complete form an enlarged induction of political principles from observed facts, which can scarcely be matched in all the political treatises of modern times. But we cannot enlarge in this connexion. Let a few more Whateleys arise to bring back one science after another to the basis on which they were placed by Aristotle, and the public mind will at length be disabused again of a world of prejudice, which has too long pressed like an incubus on the name of the illustrious Stagirite. The fact is, that no one man ever did more to classify isolated facts, and to reduce to a system the undigested materials of human knowledge. This is the chief merit of Aristotle, as a philosopher. He would have done an incalculable service to the cause of science, had he merely set the example, and marked out the way. But in some departments, he seems not only to have marked out the way but to have arrived almost at the end of human attainment, as all would be more ready to allow, were they more familiar with his admirable but much neglected practical treatises, and as all do virtually concede who acknowledge the superiority of Whateley's Rhetoric and Logic, since the characteristic excellence of those works consists in a return to the essential features of the Aristotelian method.

We have said, that Aristotle had the faculty of comparison in due proportion. And we have shown that he knew how to use it. But causality was perhaps his leading organ. And reasoning from cause to effect, rather than from effect to cause, seems to have been his supreme delight. When he saw an effect, he was always eager to know its cause. He knew how to reason *à posteriori*, and he was not averse to it. This is evi-

dent from his Natural History, Meteorology, and other practical treatises, in which he, for the most part, proceeds from an observation of the facts to a discovery of their causes or principles. But he was more fond of à priori argumentation. He loved to retire beyond the boundaries of sense and dwell in a world of pure, untrammelled reason. He delighted to go back of phenomena, and revel among the essence and abstract qualities of things. This is most strikingly manifested in his Physics. This work has nothing to do with any of the subjects which make up our treatises on Chemistry and Natural Philosophy. It lies entirely back of these. It is made up of what we should call *meta-physical* disquisitions on the nature of time, place, motion, cause, essence, and the like abstractions. And if such be his Physics, what must his Meta-Physics be? If his Physics carry us beyond the boundaries of sense, whither will his Meta-Physics—his Beyond-Physics—conduct us? We leave the question for the imagination of our readers.

Judging from his *Works*, we should take Aristotle to be, just what he is commonly considered, the most remarkable example of pure Intellection, the world ever saw. If he observed facts, it was that he might reason upon them. If he used a comparison, it was always for the sake of illustration or confirmation, never for the sake of embellishment. If he had taste, it was wholly a judgment—scarcely at all a feeling. If he had imagination, it was wholly employed in conjuring up entities and quiddities for the exercise of his ratiocination. If he had wit, it discovered no incongruities, but those of an argument. If he ever laughed, it was at the awkward position in which he had put his adversary. If he ever wept, it was because he found himself in such a position. He writes upon Poetry without a sign of emotion—upon Ethics, as if virtue were an intellectual habit, rather than a state of the heart. His treatise on Rhetoric aims at furnishing the speaker with matter to the almost entire exclusion of manner. He discusses taste and imagination without a particle of either. He treats of the passions as if he had seen them in others, but never felt them himself. He tells all about figures of speech, but never perpetrates one bolder than a logical comparison.

Now when in addition to all this it is considered, that Aristotle was deficient in the organ of language, it is easy to imagine what sort of a figure he makes in his writings. He uses words, as if he was continually oppressed with the fear of ex-

hausting his meagre stock. Particles, in which the Greek language is singularly rich, and which so adorn the style of the elegant Plato, scarcely belong to his vocabulary. Rhetorical epithets would seem as much out of place in his writings, as flowers in a snow-bank. Nouns and verbs, coupled together by the causal conjunctions, compose the whole structure of his language. And there is not enough to clothe his ideas. Moreover they are put together in the clumsiest and most uncouth style imaginable. His translator must expand his language to twice its original compass, and reconstruct his sentences, and then he must alter the arrangement of whole paragraphs to suit the ear or the taste of an English reader. He uses a kind of short-hand language, which, as the inventor is not at hand to explain it, you must often study long before you can discover the clew by which it may be deciphered. He gives you his process, as it were, in algebraic signs—clear and satisfactory enough doubtless to the author, but he has forgotten to furnish his reader with any explanation of their significance. He sets before you, as it were, a series of geometrical diagrams, which, to his perspicacious view, are a sufficiently full and distinct image of his science, but which leave to his reader the not very easy task of making out for himself the propositions and demonstrations the best way he can. It is for this reason—his singular conciseness and obscurity—his absolute clumsiness and repulsiveness as a writer—that Aristotle has been so grossly misunderstood and so greatly depreciated. But whoever will take the trouble to break through so hard and rough a shell, will find himself richly rewarded when he comes at the kernel.

It is interesting to compare the founders of the Academy and the Lyceum. There is a marked contrast between them ; and it extends to their persons no less than their characters ; to their manner of life no less than their systems of philosophy. They were both of illustrious parentage ; but Apollo was never fabled to have been the father of Aristotle, and no bees were ever fancied to have clustered around his lips in sleeping infancy. Fiction has adorned the birth of Plato with the most romantic tales, while history simply records of Aristotle, that he was born at Stagira, in the first year of the 99th Olympiad. Plato devoted much of his youth to the cultivation of poetry ; Aristotle spent the same period of life in the study of medicine. Romance presided over Plato's introduction to the pursuit of philosophy ; Science was the presiding genius at the

initiation of Aristotle. Plato's master called him "the Swan of the Academy;" Aristotle's master surnamed him "the Intellect of the School;" the latter was employed in copying manuscripts, collecting facts, and canvassing opinions, while the former was absorbed in studying his own nature, gathering in beautiful fancies, and writing imaginary Dialogues. Plato had a large frame and a comely face, but paid very little regard to dress or personal appearance; Aristotle's stature was diminutive and his features irregular, but he strove to compensate the disadvantage by the richness and elegance of his outward adornings. Aristotle was twice married; Plato, never—the former lived on earth, the latter in the air. Both visited Courts and instructed Princes; but the one trained his pupil to gain the mastery of the real world, while the other would fain have taught his to establish an ideal Republic. Each established a new and independent School; but the one sat before his pupils, and taught a speculative and musing philosophy, while the other walked among his scholars, and taught a practical and reasoning system. Plato was all Ideality, Aristotle had none. Plato was a better writer than reasoner, Aristotle could reason far better than he could write. Plato reasoned more by analogy; Aristotle more by induction. Both were too fond of à priori speculations: but the one believed in his, because he admired them as beautiful; the other held to his, because he thought he could prove them true. The one argued; the other felt: the one established by inference; the other saw by intuition. Plato's reason was seated very much in his heart; Aristotle's feelings lay wholly in his head. The one was the personification of German Idealism; the other the embodiment of Scotch Metaphysics. Aristotle would have made a good Englishman; Plato could not have breathed the air of London. Goethe has well characterized them:—Aristotle as a man of architectural genius who seeks a solid basis for his building, but seeks no further, who describes an immense circuit for its foundations, collects materials from all sides, arranges them, and lays one above the other, and thus ascends in a regular form pyramidal, while Plato, like an obelisk, nay, like a flame, seeks the heavens. We can readily conceive of them, as they are painted by Raphael in his School of Athens.\* Aristotle with a look of

---

\* See a fine article on Plato in the *Encyclopædia Americana*.

deep thought, and penetrating eyes directed forward ; while Plato raises his eye and lifts up his right arm, as if testifying of the worlds above, like a prophet.

As compared with Socrates, Plato and Aristotle are more brilliant and imposing, but less symmetrical and complete—they are better fitted to dazzle and excite admiration. But he is the man to command our veneration and attract our love. Plato may have had more imagination and emotion ; Aristotle more intellection and ratiocination—the heart may have been more developed in the one and the head in the other. But in Socrates, head, heart and hand ; reason, feeling, and action, were all combined, duly proportioned, and perfectly harmonized—Plato and Aristotle must have been put together to make a Socrates. They are the extremes, and he the mean, in a moral proportion. Or, to draw a better illustration from the analysis of light, in them are seen the separate colors of the spectrum, from the soft violet to the blazing red ; in him those colors are blended into a pure and perfect white. He is like a plane mirror, which reflects the exact complexion of nature, and images every object just as it is. They are like refracting lenses, which form magnified or diminished images and clothe them with the brilliant hues of the rainbow. A writer of the transcendental school has grouped the three philosophers with other men of transcendental genius, and characterized them thus : There is a large class of writers, who take a side and defend it the best they can—such were *Aristotle*, Lucretius, Milton, Burke. A smaller class state things as they believe them to be—*Plato*, Epicurus, Cicero, Luther, Montaigne. Two or three disinterested witnesses have been in the world, who have stated the facts, as they are, and whose testimony stands unimpeached from age to age—such were Homer, *Socrates*, Chaucer, Shakespeare. These men never mistake. You might as well say there was untruth in the song of the wind, or the light of the sun." Plato was great in writing, Aristotle in reasoning. Socrates might have been great in either, but he was chiefly great in that which is greater—in acting. They could shine in the Court and the School. So could he ; but he could also rule in the Camp and the Forum. Aristotle could convince the understanding of men, and Plato could delight their fancy ; but Socrates could sway their hearts and their lives. In them, you may admire the Poet, the Scholar, the Philosopher ; in him, you must reverence the Hero, the Prophet, the MAN.

## ARTICLE IX.

### DOMINICI DIODATI I. C. NEAPOLITANI, DE CHRISTO GRÆCE LOQUENTE EXERCITATIO.

Translated by O. T. Dobbin, D. D., of Western Independent College, Exeter, England.

Continued from p. 459, Vol. XI.

#### PART II. *Arguments adduced to show that Christ, the Apostles, and all the Jews used the Hellenistic tongue.*

OUR former part has been devoted to an exposition of the means by which the Greek language was introduced into Palestine. Our present task is to sustain, as best we may, the position that all the Jews, Christ and his apostles, employed no other tongue as the common medium of their intercourse but this. We must, however, prelude our argument to this effect with a remark or two designed to throw light upon all that is to follow. We begin, then, with stating:

In the first place, that the Greek language was widely diffused throughout Palestine 199 years before the Christian era, and that under Antiochus Epiphanes it struck its roots deeply into the national mind. In the second place, that the Jews retained the use of the Chaldee until the time of the Maccabees, so as to be bilingual. Thus among themselves they used the Chaldee, which they called *their native tongue* (*linguam patriam*), and with foreigners the Greek, the vernacular language of their masters. This fact is proved by innumerable passages in the books of Maccabees, and the works of Flavius Josephus, which mark with sufficient clearness the distinction between the one as a recent introduction, and the other as native to the land. Thus, in the second book of the Maccabees, we read that the second brother replied to the one who asked him would he eat swine's flesh or die, in the following words in *his native tongue*, "I will not do it;" and again a little after it is said, "Their mother exhorted each of them in *their native language* boldly." So also when the mother was summoned by Antiochus, and enjoined to persuade her only surviving son to eat the swine's flesh, she promised the monarch, in Greek, that she would do as he desired, but directly addressing her son in his native idiom, urged

him to persist, and bending towards him, mocked the tyrant while she said, “Have mercy upon me, my son,—fear not this cruel monster,” etc., etc.\* Judas Maccabæus, too, when engaging in battle against Gorgias, addressed his soldiers in the same language; “Judas invoked the Lord to be their keeper and their leader in the fight, beginning in his country’s tongue,” etc., etc.† The Jews, moreover, when they had routed the forces of Gorgias, used it—for we read that “they shouted with tumultuous joy, and blessed Almighty God in their own tongue,” etc., etc.‡

To the same cause must we attribute the excellency of ‘the Syriac version, the translator’s “native tongue” being the Aramean, as we gather from Second Maccabees 15: 37. This double use, however, gradually passed away, from the length and closeness of the intercourse maintained with the Greek settlers, who occupied the country for nineteen years, namely from 161 to 142 before Christ. From that period the Jews began to use the Greek exclusively, and to lay aside the Chaldee altogether. In the third place, we affirm, as we have already done more than once, that the Jews adopted no other dialect than the Hellenistic. By this we mean that the elder Jews, familiar with the Chaldee tongue, retained in their adopted Greek occasional Hebrew and Chaldee words and idioms: for instance, ἐνὶ τῆς ἀπωλείας, *son of perdition*, for an utterly abandoned person; τίς με δύσεται ἐξ τοῦ σώματος τοῦ θανάτου τούτου, *who will deliver me from the body of this death, for from this mortal body*; Αὐτὸς λέγω ὁὐρ, *amen I say to you, for truly I say to you*; thus also εἰς γέενναν *into Gehenna, for into the place of torment*; Ωσαρνὰ *for save now*; Παββὶ *for master*; Παββὼν *for my master*; *heaven of heavens, for the highest heaven*; *to speak to the heart, for to comfort*; *do justice and judgment*, for *just judgment*, and unnumbered other instances of the same sort of which Solomon Glass,§ Brian Walton,|| and especially James Rheinfort, in his *Syntagma of Dissertations* on the

\* Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 7, v. 8, 21, 27 et seq. [τῇ πατρὶ φωνῇ.]  
Joseph. de Imp. Rationis, p. 513, § 12, p. 517, § 16.

† Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 12, v. 36 et 37.

‡ Lib. 2 Mach. cap. 11, v. 19.

§ Glassius in *Philologia Sacra*.

|| Walton in *Proleg. Polygl.* p. 45 ad 48.

Style of the new Testament, treat more at large than we can venture upon here. That this dialect of Greek, called by Biblical critics the Hellenistic, prevailed among the Jews from the time of the Maccabees and was common to Christ and his apostles, I hope to demonstrate in this division of my essay. In the first place, then, as to its prevalence among the Jews in general.

**CHAPTER I. Designed to prove that from the age of the Maccabees, the Hellenistic dialect was the vernacular language of Palestine, and was that commonly spoken by the Jews.<sup>1</sup>**

**§ 1. The Jews composed their Books in the Hellenistic dialect from the time of the Maccabees.**

Most of the writers of antiquity, as was natural, composed their works in the dialect of their respective countries; but the Hebrews were impelled to the same practice, not only by the more obvious reasons, but also by a superstitious dislike to unnecessary communication with foreigners. They thought it unbecoming to study a foreign tongue, or be more than commonly versed in their own, because, as Josephus avers,\* these were accomplishments shared by slaves. They therefore never wrote in any other language than that which was current among their own countrymen. Hence it was that, when the Jews spoke Hebrew, Moses, Joshua, David, Solomon, etc., wrote in Hebrew. In accordance with the same rule, when the Jews during the Babylonian captivity had taken up the Chaldee, we find Ezra, Daniel, and Nehemiah writing in that language. The Law, moreover, was translated into it, according to the testimony of the Rabbis Azariah † and Gedaliah.‡ When, then, from the age of the Maccabees, we find the Jewish books, canonical and uncanonical, alike (*κανονικοὶ ἀκανόνιστοι*) composed in the Grecian tongue, nay more, the Hebrew, and Chaldee books translated into that tongue, are we not constrained to own that about that time the Greek was the familiar and vernacular language of the Jews ?§

\* Joseph. in *Antiquitat. in fine.*

† R. Azar. in lib. *Meor Enaim*, cap. 8 et 9.

‡ R. Gedalias apud Waltonum, 9 Prol. p. 60. n. 14.

§ [In codice Megilla, fol. 18, lingua Graeca Judæis dicitur vernacula.—ED.]

Let us, however, glance at these books and their authors in detail. We begin with those in the canon.\* About the year 160 before Christ, the Book of Wisdom was written in Greek by Philo the Elder.† This volume has been called *πανάριτος* by the Jews, as containing the sum of all virtues. About the same period the book of Ecclesiasticus was translated from the Hebrew by Jesus the son of Sirach, of Jerusalem. The third book of the Maccabees, which was the first in order, was composed in Greek; the second of the Maccabees, which was the fourth in order, was also composed in Greek; as was the first also, in the first case by its author,‡ a fact the distinguished

\* It is scarcely necessary to remind the reader that Diodati writes as a Roman Catholic. *Translator.*

† V. Hieronym. *Præfat.* in Proverb. Salomon. t. 9, p. 1294. Huet in Dem. Evan. Prop. 4, de lib. Sapient. § 11.

‡ "William Beveridge is the only writer whom I can ascertain to have known that the first book of Maccabees was originally composed in Greek. The generality of the learned, conceive it to have been first written in Hebrew or rather in Chaldee. Let us examine the reason upon which they lean.

They rely *first*, upon the testimony of Origen, who says "*Ἐξα δὲ τούτων δοτὶ τὰ Μακκαβαῖκα ἀπάρα ἐπιγέγραπται Σαρβῆθ Σαρβᾶς εἰ.*"<sup>1</sup> Besides these, are the books of the Maccabees inscribed Sarbeth Sarbane el.<sup>2</sup> From this Hebrew title they infer that the first book was composed in the Hebrew language. But on such a reason as this the opponents of a Greek original ought not to lay much stress; for if from this Hebrew inscription they conclude the first book to have been composed in Hebrew, for precisely the same reason should they conclude the *second* and *third* to have been written in the same language; and this the more, because Origen does not speak of a single book but of all the books of the Maccabees (*τὰ Μακκαβαῖκα*). Yet no one has been hardy enough to venture such an assertion as this, inasmuch as all agree in assigning a Greek original to these latter. If, then, our learned opponents would but be consistent, they must own they gain little by the testimony of Origen.

But, *secondly*, they lean upon the authority of Jerome, who declares in his *Prologus Galeatus*, that he met with the first book of the Maccabees in Hebrew. But this of Jerome does not any more effectually aid their cause, for his assertion is not that the book was originally composed, but simply that

1) *Origenes, Comm. in Psalm. 1, t. 2, p. 529, edit. Paris.*

Beveridge was acquainted with.\* The fourth book, although anonymous (*ἀνώνυμος*), and always considered apocryphal, Sixtus Senensis † declares he saw in Greek in the library of Sanct-

he found it, in Hebrew. Is there no difference between these two assertions? Consider, moreover, that before Jerome's time all the sacred books had been translated into nearly all the languages of the world—the Persian, Indian, Scythian, Thracian, Sarmatian, Moorish, Armenian, Roman, British, etc.—as Eusebius,<sup>2</sup> Theodoret,<sup>3</sup> and Anastasius Sinaita<sup>3</sup> testify; much more, therefore, would those books, which were not originally in Hebrew, be clothed in a Jewish garb, as the one peculiarly sacred to religion. We may, then, from these considerations, conclude that Jerome fell in with a translation of the Greek original made by some Jew. The same is indeed apparent from the very expression he employs: “The first book of the Maccabees I found in Hebrew.”

*Thirdly*, they rely upon the circumstance that the Latin version and the Greek text (which they also call a version) are disfigured with Hebraisms, whence they smack, say they, of a Hebrew original. But are not the Evangel, the Epistolary writings and the Apocalypse of John covered with Hebraisms? Is not this characteristic of the writings of Peter and Paul and James? Yet who would now-a-days deny that these were first written in Greek?

Granted, however, for argument's sake, that the first book of the Maccabees was written in Hebrew by its author, and that this was the text Jerome read—where, we ask, is now that Hebrew text? It is no longer extant, they tell us; the Hebrew original has perished, and the Greek version alone remains. Now is it credible, we rejoin, that those who have gone before us, the Church, the Councils, and the Fathers, would more carefully preserve the Greek translation than the Hebrew text itself? “Credat id Judæus apella non ego.” Not one of the Jewish doctors, however large may be their faith, could be persuaded of this. Since, then, there is no sound reason nor trustworthy authority for believing that this book was written in Hebrew, we are led to the conclusion that it

\* Beveregius apud Cotelerium, cap. 9, § 2, tom. 3, p. 111.  
† Sixtus Senen. in Biblioth. 5, lib. 1, t. 1, p. 51.

1) Eusebius de Laud. Constant, p. 772, t. 1, ex ed. Can.  
2) Theodoretus, V. Therapeut, p. 555, t. 4, ed. Sirm.  
3) Anastas. Sinait ‘Οδηγος, cap. 22, p. 339.

tis Pagnini at Leyden. At length the whole of the other books of the Old Testament began to appear in Greek in Judea, for the

---

was first written in Greek, like the rest of the books of the Maccabees, and other works published about the same period. The Greek text of this book is, therefore, to be regarded as the original and not as a version from a lost Hebrew text. This conclusion is further manifest from the work itself. In the course of the book occur many epistles from the Greeks to the Hebrews<sup>1</sup>—for instance, two from the Lacedemonians, the same number from Demetrius Soter king of Syria to Jonathan,<sup>2</sup> and others from Alexander Balas to the same.<sup>3</sup> Demetrius Nicator wrote to Simon Maccabæus<sup>4</sup>—as also did Antiochus Sidetes.<sup>5</sup> Now all these epistles were obviously in the Greek language, because written by parties whose vernacular was Greek. Let us assume then, for a moment, that the book in which they appear was itself written in Hebrew. If such were the case the author must either have inserted these epistles in Greek, or have given a Hebrew version of them in his history. That the former could have taken place—namely, that the Greek letters would be inserted in the text of a Hebrew narrative—none but an incompetent critic would dare to affirm; while the latter—that the author translated them into Hebrew—is incredible from his failing to notify such a circumstance. Such intimations are the prevailing usage of Scripture. Whenever a letter, speech or inscription occurs in any other language, the readers are invariably supplied with the name of the original whence the translation has been made. Thus when Ezra gives the letter of Bishlam, Mithridates, and Tabeel, he says: “The epistle was written in Syriac, and was read in Syriac, after this manner, To Artaxerxes the king, thy servants, the men beyond the river, send greeting.”<sup>6</sup> So also in the book of Esther: “And he sent letters into all the provinces of his kingdom in the various languages and characters which each people could speak and read.”<sup>7</sup> And a little after: “Letters were written to the Jews and to the princes

1) Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 12, v. 21, 22, et cap. 14, v. 20.

2) Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 10, v. 25, cap. 11, v. 30.

3) Ibid. v. 18.

4) Cap. 13, v. 36.

5) Cap. 15, v. 2.

6) Esdras, cap. 4, v. 7 et 11.

7) Esther, cap. 1, v. 22.

special edification and solace of the Jews. To this topic, however, we shall revert more at length hereaft

and to the governors and to the judges who presided over the hundred and twenty-seven provinces, from India to Ethiopia, province by province, and people by people, according to their language and character, and to the Jews as they could read and hear<sup>1</sup>—and this was the substance of each letter, that in all lands and people, etc. etc.” The same rule obtains with regard to the speeches of foreigners in Isaiah: “And Rab-shakeh stood and cried with a loud voice in the Hebrew tongue and said, Hear ye the words of the great King.”<sup>2</sup> It is thus in Daniel: “And the Chaldeans answered the king in Syriac, O King, live for ever; tell the dream, etc.”<sup>3</sup> So likewise in the Chronicles: “Sennacherib cried out with a loud voice in the Jews’ tongue to the people.”<sup>4</sup> The Acts of the Apostles exhibits the same form: “Paul standing upon the steps beckoned with his hand to the people, and when a great silence was made he addressed them in the Hebrew tongue, saying, Men, brethren, and fathers, hear, etc.”<sup>5</sup> On another occasion in the same book: “When the multitude saw what Paul had done they lifted up their voice and said in the Lycaonian tongue, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men.”<sup>6</sup> The same rule also holds in regard to inscriptions—for instance in Luke: “And the inscription was written in Greek, Latin and Hebrew characters, This is the King of the Jews.”<sup>7</sup> So also in John: “The writing was in Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, Jesus of Nazareth the King of the Jews,” etc., etc.<sup>8</sup>

Now nothing of this kind occurs in the First of Maccabees, for the aforementioned Greek Epistles are inserted without the slightest hint that they are only translations, nor does the author introduce them with the usual notice that they had been written in Greek. The inevitable conclusion is, that the book itself was written in the same language as those Epistles—viz. in the Greek.

- 1) Esther, cap. 8, v. 9 et seq.
- 2) Isaías, cap. 36, v. 13
- 3) Daniel, cap. 2, v. 4.
- 4) Paralipom. cap. 32, v. 18.
- 5) Act. Apost. cap. 21, v. 40.
- 6) Act. Apost. cap. 14, v. 10.
- 7) Luc. Ev. cap. 23, v. 38.
- 8) Joannes, Ev. cap. 19, v. 20.

We now turn to the New Testament. That the Gospel of Matthew was written in the Hellenistic dialect, is settled past controversy by the labors of those who have recently written on that subject. Mark likewise wrote his Gospel in Greek.\* John, by birth a Galilean, by trade a fisherman, composed his Gospel, three Epistles, and Apocalypse, in the same language. The fourteen Epistles of Paul were written in the Hellenistic, besides that which he addressed to the Hebrews. James, surnamed the Just, wrote his Catholic Epistle in the same tongue. Simon Peter published his two letters in Greek, while the same language was used by Jude in his Catholic Epistle.

Our attention must now be briefly given to those ancient writers who do not belong to the Canon. Of these we notice Philo the Elder first. Before the Maccabees became masters of the country, this Jew, for so Jerome calls him, wrote largely in Greek on the history of their kings and of Jerusalem. His poetical fragments, preserved by Polyhistor, are given in Eusebius.† Ezekiel, another Jew, was a tragic poet, one of his productions of superior order being the *Exagogue* (*Ἐξαγωγὴ*), in which the Exodus under Moses was celebrated. Fragments of his poem have been edited by Morell and Lectius. Some Greek poems are ascribed to Eleazar, the Jewish Pontiff,‡ who, according to common report, sent the seventy interpreters to Ptolemy. Jerome § also tells us that Eupolemus, the son of John, whom Judas Maccabæus sent as his legate to Rome,|| published a Greek history called *Archaionotia* (*Ἀρχαιονοτία*), in which the Mosaic and Jewish histories are detailed, as by Josephus afterwards. Alexander Polyhistor¶ informs us that Cleodorus Malchus, supposed to be a Jew, a supposition which his name confirms, compiled a history of Hebrew affairs in Greek, chiefly drawn from Moses. Demetrius, in like manner a Jew, and contemporary of Eupolemus, also composed an *Archæogony* in Greek, and a history of the Jewish Kings of which Clemens Alexandrinus makes frequent mention.\*\* Of Phocyllides, whom Scipio Sgam-

\* Vide quæ in fine operis adnotavimus.

† Eusebius, *Præp. Evang.* lib. 9, cap. 20 et 24:

‡ V. Sgambatum, in lib. 3, tit. 9, p. 479, *Arch. V. T.*

§ Hieronym. *de. Viris illustribus* in *Cl. Alex. col. 865*, t. 11.

|| Lib. 1 *Mach.* cap. 8, v. 17, lib. 2, cap. 4, v. 11.

¶ Alex. Polyh. apud Jos. in *Ant.* lib. 1, cap. 15, p. 44.

\*\* Clem. *Alexandr. Stromat.* lib. 1, p. 405, ed. Oxon.

batus\* proves satisfactorily to have been a Jew and a Pharisee, a Greek poem is still extant, called Noutheticon (*Νουθετικόν*). Aristobulus, not the one of the Maccabees, but another, also a Jew, and one of the seventy Interpreters, according to Anatolius in Eusebius,† published a Greek exposition of the Pentateuch. Lysimachus of Jerusalem, gave to the public an interpretation in Greek of the book of Esther, or rather, of the Epistle on the Feast of Purim.‡ Flavius Josephus, the most eloquent of the Hebrews, in the time of Vespasian composed a multitude of books in the Greek language, which remain to this day, and are in that department of composition so elegant and polished, that their author is justly styled among the learned the Grecian Livy. A contemporary and opponent of Josephus, Justus Tiberiensis, so called from his birth-place, Tiberias of Galilee, produced a chronicle of the Jewish kings, in Greek. There was, besides, according to a conjecture of Voss, a Joseph of Tiberias, who composed a Hypomnesticus in the same language.

In another class come the innumerable writings, some received in early days, others rejected, attributed to the apostles. Such are the Liturgy of Peter, the Preaching, the Gospel, the Acts, the Revelation, the Judgment, of that apostle; the Gospel, Liturgy and Protevangel of James; the Gospel and Apocalypse of Paul; the Acts of Paul and Thecla; the Epistle to the Laodiceans; the third Epistle to the Corinthians; the third to the Thessalonians also,§ &c., &c. and the Canons, the Creed, and the Constitutions of the Apostles. All these are composed in Greek, of which Sixtus Senensis speaks at length in his *Bibliotheca Sancta*,|| and Fabricius in his *Codex Apocryphus*. To draw my present argument to a close, Is not the writing of books in Greek from the period of the Maccabees, to be regarded as proof that the language itself was vernacular in Palestine at that period?

\* Sgambatus, Archivor. Vet. Test. lib. 3, tit. 16, p. 504.

† Eusebius, Hist. Eccles. lib. 7, cap. 32.

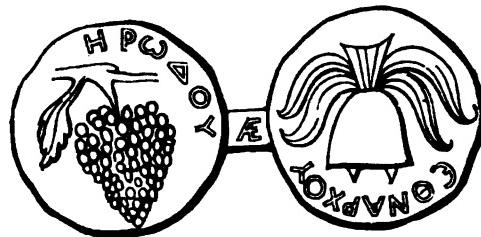
‡ Calmet. Proleg. in lib. Esther, t. 3, p. 518.

[§ Videsis erudit. nost. Jones "On the Canon." J. A. Fabric. Cod. Apoc. N. T. Ed.]

[|| Coteler. Patr. Apost. tom. 1, p. 199. Antwerpiae 1698. Hæc monumenta Anglice conversa edidit Gul. Whiston in t. 2, libri cui titulus Primitive Christianity. Ed.]

§ 2. *The Coins of the Jews bore Greek Inscriptions.*

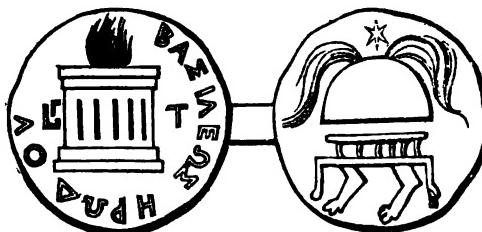
Let us now look at coins and medals—the most satisfactory of all testimonies to the student of antiquity. The practice of the ancients was totally different from ours in the choice of a language for inscriptions. We use Latin while they employed the vernacular tongue. From a series of their coins, therefore, we may ascertain with the most perfect exactness, not only the language of any given people, but also the sources whence it was derived and the changes which it underwent in the lapse of time. The learned Spanheim writes very much to my purpose in the present passage: "By this means," he says, "the unquestionable origin of languages, the primitive and the altered forms of letters, the distinctive marks of different ages, the manifold errors of the stone-cutters and other difficult questions relating to antiquity, were happily solved." \* From these premises we affirm that long before the birth of Christ, all the coins in circulation among the Jews, Galileans, Samaritans, and neighboring states, bore Greek inscriptions, and for brevity's sake we exhibit a few as a sample, where we have it in our power to produce a host.



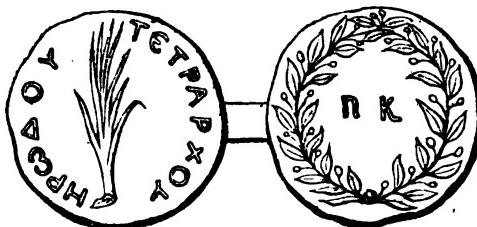
Here we have a coin of Herod the Great, exhibiting on one side a bunch of grapes, by which the vine-bearing region of Engaddi was represented, with the Greek characters *ΗΡΩΑΟΤ*; and on the other side what Hardouin thought to be the Lily of Phaselis, but which Spanheim, whose opinion is more generally adopted, more correctly represented as a helmet, with horsetail and crest. The Epigraph is *ΕΘΝΑΠΧΟΤ!* This piece of money was coined about forty years before the Christian Era, for in the fortieth, Herod was honored with the title of King.

---

\* Spanhemius, Diss. 2, § 1, tom. 1, p. 61, ed. Lond. Calmet. Diss. sur. les Medail. Hebraiq. in Dict. t. 1, p. 76.



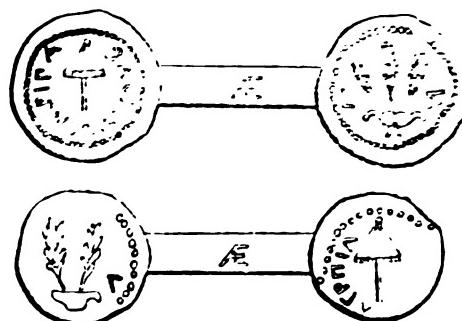
This is another coin of Herod the Great, also copied in Spanheim, and reported to be in the Royal Treasury of France. On the front is an altar with a flame, and on the back the high-priest's cap, or as Spanheim thinks a helmet, the inscription on the obverse being *ΒΑΣΙΛΕΩΣ ΗΡΩΑΟΥ*. From this it is evident that this coin was struck after the assumption of the regal dignity by Herod; perhaps after the building of the second temple.



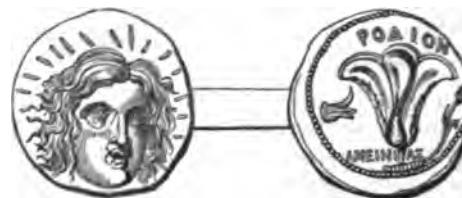
Here is a coin of Herod Antipas, the son of Herod the Great, whose coins are by far the most numerous.\* On the upper side presents itself a palm branch, the symbol (*ἰαρογλυνθικόν*) of Judea and Galilee, (for these countries by the testimony of Pliny† are covered with palm-trees,) having the Greek inscription *ΗΡΩΑΟΥ ΤΕΤΡΑΠΧΩΤ* and the numerals *ΛΑΑ*, the year 34 of the Tetrarchy of Herod, and 37 of Christ. On the under side a laurel wreath with the letters *N. K.*

\* Vide Spanhemium, loc. cit. pag. 527.

† Plinius, t. 1, p. 682, v. 26, lib. 13, cap. 4.



To the coins already exhibited, I add those of Herod Agrippa, in which two festivals of the Jews are represented, that of Tabernacles and that of Pentecost. The tent which appears on one side of them represents the feast of Tabernacles, and the ears of corn upon the other the feast of Pentecost.\* The inscription is Greek, *ΒΑΣΙΛΕΩΣ ΑΓΡΙΠΠΑ*, or simply *ΑΓΡΙΠΠΑ*. John Villalpandus, † Antony Augustinus‡ and others assure us that the thirty pieces of silver which were the price of Christ's betrayal bore a Greek inscription also. The following is a representation of them, according to these authors:



On the one is a radiated head of the Colossus of Rhodes, on the other a rose, with the Greek word *POΛΙΟΝ*, all which prove it to be a Rhodian coinage. One of these is preserved in the church of Santa Croce di Gierusalemma, and another in Paris in a glazed cabinet: nevertheless my own candid opinion is that these learned men have greatly mistaken about these

\* Vide Spanhem. loc. cit. p. 528. Calmet. l. cit. n. 20.

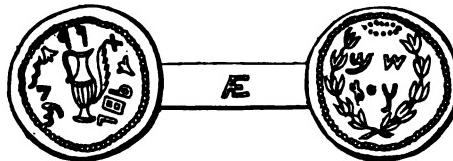
† Villalpandus, lib. 2, de Pond. Disp 4, cap. 30, p. 402, tom. 3.

‡ Anton. Augustin. Dial. 2. de Numism. p. 22, ed. Rom.

coins, as Selden has clearly shown.\* But enough of Jewish moneys with Greek inscriptions. They survive in such numbers that Hardouin has written a whole book upon them called *De Numis Herodiadum*, which those who require further information would do well to consult. †

\* Selden. *de. Jur. N. L. I.* p. 242 et 243, ed. Lond. t. 1.

† Here some will possibly object that about this period, (1) Simon Maccabæus was permitted by Antiochus,<sup>1</sup> king of Syria, to coin money inscribed with the Samaritan language and character, like the following:<sup>2</sup>



And (2) that the tribute money which the Pharisees and Herodians presented<sup>3</sup> to Christ for his opinion bore a Latin inscription, as follows:<sup>4</sup>



But neither of these coins is any serious objection to our argument. For, in regard to the first—John Christopher Wagenseil,<sup>5</sup> Charles Patin, and Otho Sperling,<sup>6</sup> some of our

1) Lib. 1 Mach. cap. 15, v. 6.

2) V. Conringium de N. Hebr; Parad. p. 56. Hadrianum Relandum, de Nummis Samaritanorum.

3) Math. Evang. cap. 22, v. 17 ad 19.

4) V. Selden. *de J. N. et G. lib. 2, cap. 8, p. 239.*

5) Wagenseil. *Annot. ad Lib. Mischnæ Sots*, p. 575.

6) Sperlingius, *de Nummis non euisis*, cap. 16.

In the same language also are inscribed the coins of the neighboring regions, Galilee, Samaria, and others. Many

---

first writers on numismatology, have declared it spurious, an opinion which commands my own most unhesitating suffrage. The passage in Maccabees goes for nothing: "I permit thee to make a coinage of thine own money," because this goes no further than the article of permission. That Simon availed himself of this license, and that he actually coined money, is neither proved by the phraseology, nor has it ever yet been proved by any author. This argument then is of no avail, for the authority of Antiochus was as despised in the country as his friendship was disregarded.

Thus we dispose of the Scripture argument; and now turn to the coins themselves, which are utterly destitute of any memorial of Simon. The inscription on them is *Sekel Ischrael, Jeruschalaim Hakkedoscha*—that is, *the Shekel of Israel, Jerusalem the holy*, and so on. But the most convincing proof of their spuriousness (*νοθεία*) is that they have a Samaritan inscription; that is an inscription in a language not then extant among the Jews. The force of this difficulty those who contend for the genuineness of the coins confess, and know not how to evade:<sup>1</sup> For although they urge that Simon had them struck in the cities of Samaria, this makes little for their purpose—because it is incredible that seeking to record the achievement of the national liberty of the Hebrews, he would have availed himself of the help of the Samaritans, a race held in the utmost detestation by the Jews. Would he, further, have chosen a language and character then unknown<sup>2</sup> and would he have abandoned so far the usage then universally prevailing of employing in their coinage none but their vernacular tongue<sup>3</sup>? Neither would the Samaritans have originated such an inscription—Jerusalem was not holy with them, nor would they go up to it to worship, preferring their native Samaria. Nor, finally, does the effort of Augustine Calmet,<sup>4</sup> Peter Allix,<sup>5</sup> and Father Souciet,<sup>6</sup> to explain away the difficulty by assuming that there were two characters then

1) Vide Morinum, exercit. 2. in Pentat. Samar. 1, 10. Biblio-  
thec. Critiq. lib. 2, cap. 27, p. 404, 405.

2) Calmet, Dissert. sur le Medail. Hebraiq. p. 65.

3) Allix apud Spanhem. de P. Num. p. 72, diss. 11.

4) Souciet, Diss. sur les Medail. Hebraiques, p. 41

coins of Tiberias, the chief town of Galilee, are extant bearing Greek inscriptions to this effect, *KΛΑΥΤΑΙΟ ΤΙΒΕΡΙΩΝ ΕΤ.*

*AII.* : This era is from the building of the city DCCLXX, on which see Noris,\* Vaillant,† etc. The coins of Sephoris, the most strongly fortified town of Galilee, are inscribed in Greek *ΣΕΠΠΩΦΩΡΗΝΩΝ*—on which consult Vaillant † and Patin.‡

It was just the same with the cities of the Samaritans; many Greek coins remain of the capital, Samaria, to which Herod, out of flattery to Augustus, gave the name of Sebaste (*Σεβάστη*). A representation of these is given by Noris in his masterly work *De Epochis Syro-Macedonum.*|| On one is found the inscrip-

---

in use among the Hebrews—a sacred and a profane—and that in this latter, borrowed from the Samaritans, the coins were struck, settle the point to our satisfaction.

If we ask them upon what ancient and valid authority they rest this assumption—they have absolutely none to produce. Let them, then, trumpet the worth of their Samaritan coins to others, they bring them to a bad market with us, so firmly satisfied are we that they are the productions of impostors.—Sperling in fact says, that he himself saw, at Holsace, a laboratory where such shekels as these were manufactured: and Patin, a most skilful and exact numismatologist, declares that in all the cabinets of coins he has ever seen, he has never yet found a genuine shekel. From these premises, then, we conceive ourselves justified in concluding, either that Simon Maccabeus never availed himself of the concession of Antiochus to coin his own money, or that the shekels now remaining and ascribed to him, are supposititious (*ὑποθολμαλοῦς*).

But in regard to the tribute money with its Latin inscription, if we should concede that it was the same as the Pharisees showed to Christ, as Freher, Fischer, etc., etc., assert,<sup>1</sup> what is this to the purpose? The Roman tribute was paid in Roman money, but we are now arguing about the inscriptions upon Jewish coins—so that this, too, is travelling beyond the record, and is nought to our purpose (*nihil hoc πρὸς τὴν λύγαν.*)

\* Noris, *de Epoch. Syro-Maced.* Diss. 5, t. 11, p. 582 et seq.

† Vaillant, *de Num. Imp. a Pop. Græc.* loq. p. 30.

‡ Vaillant, *de N. Imp. a Pop. Græc.* loq. p. 24 et 30.

|| Patinus, *in Num. Imp. Roman.* p. 183.

|| Noris, *de Ep. Syro-Maced.* diss. 5, p. 559 et seq.

1) Freherus. et Fischer de Numismate Census.

tion *CEBACHTHNRN. L. ΘΡ*, of the *Sebastians* the year cvi, and on another *CEBACHTHNRN CTP. CIE.* of the *Sebastians* of Syria, the year CCXV. For these see also Patin.\* Of Si-chem, a Samaritan city called afterwards Neapolis, Greek coins are also found with the inscription *ΦΛΑΟΤΙ. ΝΕΑΠΟΛΙ ΣΑΜΑΠΕΛΑΣ. L. ΑΙ.* Of these several may be seen in Spanheim and other writers. Not to be tedious, however, the same practice prevailed in Cæsarea, Paneas, Raphia, Gaza, Gadara, Livia, Ramatha, Azotus, Ascalon, and other cities that bordered upon Judea.

But further, these coins not only bore Greek inscriptions, but Greek names also were commonly given them by the Jews, for instance those of Drachma, Dedrachma, Stater and Denarius (*Δραχμή, Διδραχμος, Στατηρ, Δηραχίον.*) These occur in the New Testament. That they gave these Greek names to their current coins, is clear at once from the impropriety of calling Greek moneys by Hebrew names, and from these names, and from these names only, occurring in the New Testament, and not in the Old. But the word Stater occurs in the Old Testament it may be said, and Drachma at least three times in Nehemiah;† to which our reply is that it is so in our Latin Vulgate, but not in the Hebrew and Chaldee. Where we exhibit *Stateres* the Hebrew reads סְטָרֶת Seckalim; and the original of our Drachma is in the Chaldee טְרַכְּרָה.

As, then, it is quite certain that, long before the time of Christ, the Jews used not only money with Greek inscriptions, but called by Greek names, we are bound to own that they must have spoken Greek.

§ 3. *The Jews made use of the Greek language in their inscriptions.*

We here call in the aid of Inscriptions, a testimony of equal value with the last in the estimation of critics. The first of these which we shall quote will be that in the Lorica or outer court of the temple. By this persons were warned, on pain of death, whether Jews, the subjects of ceremonial pollution, (such as the emission of seed, the menstrual flux and those that came into contact with it,) or strangers, not to enter the inner

\* Patinus, *ibid.* p. 265.

† Spanhem. *de V. et P. Numis.* Vaillant. loc. cit. p. 279.

‡ Nehem. cap. 7, v. 70 ad 72.

court. For this see Maimonides.\* After the temple was rebuilt Josephus reports that two inscriptions were carved in the outer court—one in Greek and the other in Latin. Ἐν αὐτῷ δ' εἰστι καὶ οἱ ιεροὶ στήλαι, τὸν τῆς ἀγνείας προσημαίνονταν νόμον, αἱ μὲν Ἑλληνικοῖς, αἱ δὲ Ρωμαϊκοῖς γράμμασι, μὴ δεῖν ἀλλόφυλον ἐπέδος τοῦ ἄγιον παριέντα. “In it stood pillars equal distances from each other, which exhibited the law of purity inscribed both in Greek and Roman characters, to the effect that “no foreigner should pass within the Sanctuary.”†

The Antiquities present another passage of the same purport. Εἰς τοῦτο τὸν ιανὸν πάρτες, οἱ διαφέροντες ἀγνείᾳ καὶ παρατηρησεῖ τῶν νομίμων, εἰσήσθαν; “Into this temple any of the people had licence to enter, provided he was free from pollution and observant of the precepts of the law.”‡ On the subject of this prohibition too, Titus, the Roman General, thus addresses the Jews: Ἄρει οὐδὲν ὑμεῖς, ὃ μαρτύρατοι, τὸν δούρακτον τοῦτον προύβαλεσθε τῶν ἄγιων; οὐδὲν ὑμεῖς δὲ τὰς ἐν αὐτῷ στήλας διεστήσατε, γράμμασιν Ἑλληνικοῖς καὶ ἡμετέροις κεχαρακμένας; [οὐδὲν ἄμεσον] δὲ τοὺς ὑπερβάντας ὑμῖν ἀναιρεῖν ἐπεργέφαμεν, καὶν Ῥωμαῖος τις η̄; “Have not ye, accursed, put up this fence before the Sanctuary? Have ye not erected its pillars at proper intervals, engraven with Greek characters and ours? Have we not permitted you to kill those that go beyond it, although they be Romans?”§ Now if a law of such grave moment was set forth in the Greek language to be read by the Jews, who does not perceive that this language must have been their vernacular, else the purpose would not have been answered? No one assuredly who does not close his eyes against the light. As Bernard Lamy|| was ignorant of the true reason for the inscription being in Greek, he with some others has expended much labor to little purpose in the attempt to account for Josephus's not mentioning a Hebrew Inscription, as they were Hebrews for whom the premonition was chiefly intended. The reason is simply that stated above, that the Hebrews universally spoke Greek, and consequently the Hebrew Inscription was not required.

\* Maimonides, *de Domo Electa*, cap. 7, §13.

† Joseph. de Bello, lib. 5, cap. 5, § 2, p. 331, 332.

‡ Joseph. in Antiq. lib. 8, cap. 3, § 9, p. 427.

§ Joseph. de Bello, lib. 6, cap. 2, § 4, p. 376. ||

Lamy, *de Templo*. lib. 5, sect. 2. p. 813.

The next Greek Inscription to be noticed is that upon the cross of the Lord Christ, which Luke records in these words : " And a superscription also was written over him in letters of Greek and Latin and Hebrew."\* Now in this triad of languages some one must needs have been vernacular to the Jews, in order that by them, of all others, who were most pressing for the execution, the accusation and title might be read. John confirms this verse : " This title read many of the Jews, because the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city."† Now the Hebrew was no longer in common use, inasmuch as from the period of the Babylonish captivity it had been displaced : nor in fact did the Jews any longer understand that language, as our very opponents confess, and as will be made clear as we proceed. Much less could the Latin language be their common one, inasmuch as it has never been contended that they adopted it as a people ; it remains, therefore, that the Greek alone was the prevailing language at Jerusalem at that time. Nothing could more beautifully or perfectly harmonize with this conclusion than what Jochanan, the first of the Rabbins, has written of these three languages : " There are three tongues—the Latin best adapted for war, the Greek for social life, the Hebrew for prayer."‡ The Hebrew, therefore, was employed, on this occasion, because in a measure their sacred tongue ; the Latin because that of their masters, the Romans ; and the Greek, finally, because the familiar tongue of the inhabitants of Jerusalem. This accounts for Luke's putting the Greek first, because the most common and important—and this sacred writer, on Casaubon's showing§, has exhibited the true order of the inscriptions.||

Nor was this employment of the Greek language in inscriptions confined to Judea ; we find it prevailing in the neighboring territories, also Josephus supplies us with certain Roman Edicts, that prove this beyond dispute.¶ There is that, for instance, of Caius Cæsar, conferring upon Hyrcanus and his sons, the perpetual government of the Jews—

\* Lucas, Evang. cap. 23, v. 38.

† Joan. Evang. cap. 19, v. 19.

‡ R. Jochanan, in Midr. Tillim, fol. 25, c. 4.

§ Casaubon. exer. 16 ad Baron. An. 34, 119, p. 563.

|| Diodati makes no mention of John's putting the Hebrew first.—TRANSLATOR.

¶ Joseph. lib. 14 Antiq. cap. 10. p. 703 et ed.

which was engraven on brazen tables in the Greek and Latin tongues, in Ascalon, Sidon, Tyre, in the temples, in that of Jerusalem and elsewhere, by the order of the same Caius: "And that a brazen tablet with an inscription to this effect, be set up in public in the Capitol, in Sidon, Tyre and Ascalon, and in the temples, engraven in Roman and Grecian letters." To these might be added other rescripts for the Jews, given by Josephus in the same place, all, in like manner, published in Judea and the neighboring regions, in Greek and Latin. The Romans, of course, used the Latin because it was their own tongue, and the Greek as evidently, because the vernacular of the country, that it might be read and understood by the inhabitants.

Nor must we pass over in silence, the interesting fact that those Jews who settled and died in Rome, had Greek inscriptions cut upon their Tombs. After Pompey had subdued Judea, he took away with him to Rome immense numbers of the Jews as captives, to whom, however, liberty was afterwards given, together with the privilege of observing the usages of their ancestors without hinderance, by Augustus and Tiberius Cæsar. In the city, therefore, they had a synagogue, and outside the city a cemetery, on the way to the port, keeping up their national observances in every particular.\* Bos, in the year 1602, was the first who discovered this place of interment, while tracing some subterranean passages beyond the Tiber. There he found, first of all, sepulchres in the sides of the walls, as is usual, but some also under foot, without the slightest vestige of Christianity, the only symbol being a representation of the Mosaic Candelabrum with its seven branches.—There were also earthen lamps found, made in the same shape. There were, besides, fragments of bricks of a red color, with which and mortar, sepulchres were formerly closed, and these presented, one and all, merely Greek inscriptions, which generally began thus: *ENΩΑΙΕ KEITAI EN EIPHNH.* This means, Here lies in peace; and, though a phrase prevailing among the followers of Christ, has been evidently borrowed by them from the Hebrews, among whom the same use prevailed, as the Scriptures amply show. But in addition to this, two other forms of expression occur in the more recent

---

\* V. *Bosium Roma Sotterrani*, lib. 2. cap. 22, p. 142; *Arin-*  
*gum*, in *Ro. Subterr. Noviss.*, tom. 1, lib. 2, cap. 23.

sepulchral inscriptions given by Nicolai\* and others, that prove these to have been Jewish. On one tomb in the same cemetery, is the name *ΑΓΑΙΠΡΙΚΙΙ.*, and on another the word *ΣΤΝΑΓΩΓ.* . . . which every one knows is peculiar to the Hebrews. Having described these facts, Bos proceeds in a labored disquisition to inquire how the Jews whom he conceived to have spoken Hebrew, came to use Greek rather than their own language upon their coffins. The knot he thought might be untied in either of these two ways. Either that the Jews did so out of conformity to the general usage of Rome, where the Greek was then much cultivated; or that these tombs belonged to Grecian Jews, namely such as had come to Rome from Corinth, Thessalonica, and other towns of Greece. But neither of these will remove the difficulty.

The former supposition will not, because the Jews should have used the Latin if their object had been compliance with the usage prevailing around them; while the fact of the Jews notoriously shunning inter-communion of every kind with the heathen, is quite enough to show that they would not employ a language on their sepulchres, simply on the ground that it was generally known. Nor does the latter conjecture answer the purpose of Bos much better. For we have no satisfying proof that there were Grecian born Jews at Rome, while we are quite sure that Palestinian Jews were conveyed thither in thousands by Pompey, and at a subsequent period after the capture of the sacred city. And even if we were certain that there were Greek Jews there, they must have been greatly outnumbered by these latter who were born in Judea. Besides, Bos does not deny that the Jews had only one cemetery at Rome, and that this would be common to both races. If, then, it were true that the Palestine Jews spoke Hebrew, then some of the tombs at least should exhibit Hebrew inscriptions—so that each people should have the record in its own tongue. And the Hebrew inscriptions should exceed the Greek as greatly as the Palestinian outnumbered the Grecian Jews. But there are no Hebrew inscriptions at all, for Bos found them, one and all, in the self-same Greek idiom. Therefore, although we concede to Bos much more than we need in allowing that there *may have been* Greek Jews in Rome, still the inexplicable fact remains that all alike used Greek epitaphs. To him our concession is of little advantage indeed, but his discovery is all important to us.

---

\* Nicolai de Sepulch. Hebræor, lib. 4, cap. 4, p. 237.

§ 4. *The Jews gave Greek names to their children and adopted them themselves.*

Our position is sustained still further by the nomenclature in vogue among the inhabitants. The general argument from proper names, is fully treated by the Fathers, Augustine, Origen, Jerome, Theodoret, by Aben Ezra, whom the sounder part of the Rabbins follow, and by the learned Morin, Bochart, Walton and others in their disquisitions upon the primitive language of mankind.\* I follow nearly the same method in demonstrating the Hellenism (*τὸν Ἑλληνισμὸν*) of the Jews. How much pains the Jews bestowed upon the formation and imposition of names may be seen in Eusebius's treatise *Περὶ τῆς παρ’ Ἐβραιοὺς τῶν ὀνομάτων ὁρθότητος*, where the subject is discussed at length.† Even before the time of the Maccabees the Hebrews adopted Greek names. Those then in use are Philip, Alexander Lysimachus, Antipater, Antigonus, Alpheus, Andreas, Eupolemus, Numenius Dositheus, Aristobulus, etc., which occur in the books of the Maccabees, in the New Testament, and in Josephus, being without exception Greek. No one, for instance, can be ignorant that Philip, Alexander, Lysimachus, Antigonus, Antipater, were names commonly used among the Greeks, recurring as they do perpetually in Euripides, Demosthenes, Plutarch and Suidas. Eupolemus too is pure Greek, meaning *good soldier*; Dositheus, *the gift of God*; Numenius, *new month*; Aristobulus, *good counsel*; Andreas which is rendered *manly*; Nicodemus, *victory of the people*; Stephanus, *crown*; Cleophas, *all glory*; and Drusilla, *wet with dew*. In like manner might be adduced Philo, Epœnetus, Malichus, Sosipater, Timotheus, Archelaus, which are all Greek, and others, but I will not attempt the fruitless task of their enumeration.

Such is their number, that howe'er well hung,  
They'd tire glib Fabius' most loquacious tongue.

Thus far, concerning the Jews, who bore Greek names from childhood. But those whose early designations were Hebrew or Chaldee, when they grew up, either transformed the old one into a Greek shape, or assumed an entirely new Greek one. To the one class, belongs Onias, the High Priest, who assumed the Greek name *Menelaus*, throwing off altogether the former ap-

\* V. Waltonum Proleg. 3, n. 4, p. 15 et seq.

† Euseb. in Præp. Evang. lib. 11, cap. 6, p. 514, ed. Paris.

pellation; as also, Salome, called *Alexandra*; Cephas, *Peter*; Levi, *Matthew*, and Tabitha, *Dorcas*. To the other, the High Priest Jesus, who lived before the Maccabees, and metamorphosed his Hebrew Jesus into *Jason*; so Jacim into *Alcimus*, Simeon into *Simon*, Saul into *Paul*, Mathathias into *Matthias*; and others too numerous to cite. Now how is it reconcilable with reason that the Greeks should commonly adopt Greek names and yet continue to speak Chaldee?

[To be continued.]

---

## ARTICLE XI.

### CRITICAL NOTICES.

- 1.—*The Works of Charlotte Elizabeth, with an Introduction, by Mrs. H. B. Stowe. Volume I.* New York: M. W. Dodd. 1844. pp. 502 8vo.

The publisher has here commenced the fulfilment of a promise made some years since—to give the public a uniform series of the works of Charlotte Elizabeth. The volume is a large octavo, neatly got up and printed in double columns. It contains—Personal Recollections—Osric, (a poem)—The Rockite—The Siege of Derry—Letters from Ireland—Miscellaneous Poems;—and will soon be followed by a second volume of equal size and in the same style.

Of Charlotte Elizabeth, we have spoken so frequently, and in terms of so high commendation, that we can now say little more than commend the present enterprise to the respectful attention of the public.

Mrs. Stowe, in her brief Introduction, has well represented her as a woman of “strong mind, powerful feeling, and tact in influencing the popular mind.” She is independent, ardent, conscientious, and bent on doing good.

2.—*Biographical, Literary and Philosophical Essays: contributed to the Eclectic Review.* By JOHN FOSTER. With an Index prepared for this Edition. New York: D. Appleton & Co. Phil.: Geo. S. Appleton. 1844. pp. 419. 12mo.

The Eclectic Review is not unknown to our readers, as the present organ of the Congregationalists of England, nor John Foster as one of its earliest contributors, and as the author of "Decision of Character," which has been extensively read in this country and universally admired. Mr. Foster is a vigorous, effective, candid writer, who deals with his subject in a masterly manner.

The volume before us, consists of selections from the two volumes of his contributions compiled by Dr. Price, the present editor of the London Eclectic Review, and contains articles on Chalmers' Astronomical Discourses—Coleridge's Friend—Fox's James II.—Lord Kames—Benjamin Franklin—Hugh Blair—David Hume—Ireland—Epic Poetry—Spain—etc., etc.

3.—*Life and Eloquence of the Rev. Sylvester Larned, First Pastor of the First Presbyterian Church in New Orleans.* By R. R. GURNEY. New York: Wiley & Putnam. 1844. pp. 412. 12mo.

Larned was one of those rare and brilliant geniuses which sometimes flit, like meteors, athwart the moral heavens, and shedding forth a beautiful light for a little while, then vanish suddenly before our disappointed gaze. We remember, in our youth, to have heard of him as one of the most eloquent preachers of the day: and he was, probably, among the most eloquent of any age. His career was short. Very early did he go down to the grave; at the age of twenty-four. Some of his dearest friends in the ministry yet survive: others have followed him to the bosom of Jesus, where they rest from their labors, and rejoice together before the throne of Jehovah. Cornelius, Breckenridge, Larned, Nevins, were friends in life, and now, doubtless, glow with an eternal friendship in heaven.

The work given him to do on earth was an important one. It was soon accomplished, however, and he was not; for God took him. His labors will never be forgotten at New Orleans: and although he laid but the foundation-stones, a great temple is rising thereon, whose topmost stones will reach unto the third heavens.

We recommend the perusal of the book as containing a brief memoir of interesting events in the life of one universally admired and loved; and some specimens of those sermons, which enchanted all, in every place, who heard them. There must have been, however, great power in the enunciation and general manner of Larned, to give his sermons the commanding influence they had over his audience; for, in themselves, they are not equal to those of many other men, who, for the want of the power of voice and expression, fall far below him in eloquence and in effect on hearers.

- 4.—*Knowles's Elocutionist ; a First-Class Rhetorical Reader and Recitation Book.* By JAMES SHERIDAN KNOWLES. Enlarged and adapted to the United States, by EPES SARGENT. Second Edition. New-York : Saxton & Miles. 1844. pp. 322 12mo.

The book begins with laying down some general and simple principles of Elocution, which are followed by a variety of selections in prose and poetry. As far as we have examined, the pieces are well chosen, whether we respect style, thought or sentiment. Reading books are so numerous, that the chief difficulty with teachers must be to select.

- 5.—*Elements of Logic, together with an Introductory View of Philosophy in general, and a preliminary view of the Reason.* By HENRY P. TAPPAN. New-York and London : Wiley & Putnam. 1844. pp. 461, 12mo.

Professor Tappan is already known to the reading public as the author of a treatise on the Will, in which he undertakes to combat the views of Edwards, and support the new philosophy on that subject.

The "Elements of Logic" exhibits the same views of mental and moral philosophy, and embraces much more than is usual in a system of Logic. It is not confined to the method of deduction, the Aristotelian, which comprehends only the laws of inference and conclusion from previously established premises, but attempts to show how the primary or foundation-premises arise, and the basis on which they rest. It expounds the laws of the Reason, as the faculty of truth.

The work embraces an Introductory view of Philosophy in General—Preliminary view of the Reason—Logic Proper, including Primordial Logic—Inductive Logic—Deductive Logic—Doctrine of Evidence.

There is evidence in this book, both of reading and reflexion;

and we take great pleasure in recommending it to the notice of teachers and of those who love works requiring attention and thought. We wish there were more such in the world.

6.—*A Discourse on Theological Education: to which is added, Advice to a Student preparing for the Ministry.* By GEORGE HOWE, D. D., Prof. of Biblical Literature, Theol. Sem., Columbia, S. C. New York: Leavitt, Trow & Co., and M. W. Dodd. 1844. pp. 243, 18mo.

This "Discourse" was originally delivered by the direction of the Presbytery of Charleston, on the Bicentenary of the Westminster Assembly of Divines: but now appears in an enlarged form, and with the addition of some very wholesome advice to students of theology, in respect to the course of reading and study best to be pursued. Here those, who have not the opportunity of going to a theological seminary, will find a good directory as to the best works on the several subjects of study.

The former portions of the volume contain much information interesting and useful to ministers in general—a compendious history of theological instruction in the different periods of the church, in different countries, more especially, England, Scotland, Ireland and the United States.

In speaking of Newark College (now Delaware), which arose out of the Academy established at Newark, Del., in 1743, for the education of ministers, at which were prepared some of the most eminent ministers of the latter part of the last century, Dr. Howe speaks of the College as being in the hands of Episcopalians, and refers to Dr. Hodge's Hist. of Pres. Ch. This is a mistake. At the time Dr. Hodge wrote, it was under Episcopal influence, the greater part of the original Faculty and many of the Board of Trustees having resigned in consequence of the decision of the Board to accept lottery funds from the State. But the Episcopal rule did not succeed: the College went down; and was only revived by placing it again under the control of Presbyterians, as it has been for some years past.

7.—*Old Humphrey's Country Strolls.* New York: Robert Carter. Pittsburg: Thomas Carter. 1844. pp. 243, 18mo.

We are always glad to meet Old Humphrey. He is one of our favorite friends. Having accompanied him in his "Walks in London," we are equally pleased to join him in his "Coun-

try Strolls." He takes us to many interesting spots; as to the Lakes of Cumberland and Westmoreland—the Banks of the Wye—Kewinworth Castle—Stonehenge on Salisbury Plain—Burnham Beeches, etc. etc., and everywhere he makes his quaint and useful remarks. Although we do not think this equal to some of his other works, it yet bears the impress of his peculiar style.

8.—*Christian Fragments; or Remarks on the Nature, Precepts and Comforts of Religion.* By JOHN BURNS, M. D., F. R. S., Regius Professor of Surgery in the University of Glasgow. New York: Robert Carter. Pittsburg: Thomas Carter. 1844. pp. 240, 18mo.

This is truly what it professes to be—"Christian Fragments." The pieces are brief, and characterized by a Christian spirit. The author has drunk deeply of the cup of affliction, and seems imbued with the spirit of holiness. These fragments may be read with profit, and the reflexions will, doubtless, express the feelings of many a devoted worshipper of God.

9.—*The History of Evangelical Missions, with the date of Commencement, and Progress, and Present State.* By ANDREW M. SMITH. Hartford: Robins & Smith. 1844. pp. 193, 12mo.

This is a compendious view of the origin and present condition of Missions throughout the world, which will be found very convenient for reference. It is brief and cheap, and therefore accessible to all. Every thing that may tend to promote the cause of Evangelical Missions we hail with joy. It is the noblest of causes—the cause of Zion's King—the cause which, above all others, must engage the attention and awaken the interest of the children of God.

—*Memoir of the Life and Character of the Rev. Asahel Nettleton, D. D.* By BENNET TYLER, D. D., President & Professor of Christian Theology in the Theological Institute of Connecticut. Hartford: Robins & Smith. 1844. pp. 372.

We have seized this Book, just issued from the press, with great interest, and have read it with uncommon satisfaction. It portrays the life and character of a man, of whom a distinguished minister\* said, "He has served God and his generation with more self-denial, and constancy, and wisdom, and success, than any man living." The same writer added, that

\* Rev. Lyman Beecher, D. D.

he regarded Dr. Nettleton, "through his influence in promoting pure and powerful revivals of religion, as destined to be one of the greatest benefactors of the world, and among the most efficient instruments of introducing the glory of the latter day." We are sure this memoir will be read by thousands who have been savingly profited by his labors, and by thousands who have heard the report of his labors and his success as a minister of the gospel. The book will be very interesting and useful to ministers and churches at the present day. Dr. Nettleton's views of the nature of religion and the means and the manner of promoting it, agree with those of Edwards, Brainerd and Dwight, and all the leading divines and Christians in this country. And what is more, they agree with the infallible word of God.\* This memoir is ably written by a discerning and faithful friend and fellow-laborer, and is, every way, worthy of the subject. We have been delighted with the whole work, particularly with the closing part. W.

10.—*Observations in Europe, principally in France and Great Britain.* By JOHN P. DURBIN, D. D., President of Dickinson College. 2 vols. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1844. pp. 620, 12mo.

President Durbin has evidently not travelled without making observations, and those observations followed by reflections. He did not forget, either, that he was a minister of religion and had the vows of God upon him. Hence he looks upon things in the light of God's truth, and fearlessly condemns whatever he thinks inconsistent with its principles.—Hence he has been represented, in some of the English prints, as having written in a bitter spirit. We cannot but commend him, however, for the independence with which he comments on institutions and opinions opposed, in his estimation, to truth and right.

In France he sees much to condemn: and in her king a traitor. Louis Philippe he regards as no friend to republican institutions, and as exerting all his power and wealth to estab-

\* And there has now been sufficient time to apply the test of experience: "By their fruits ye shall know them." Let the revivals which took place under the influence of Dr. Nettleton be compared in respect to their *results*, with those which have since taken place under a different influence and on different principles; and the comparison will lead the community to a just and safe judgment. Sooner or later they will form their judgment in this way.

lish the throne on such a basis as will make himself and his government acceptable to the crowned heads of the continent. In this we think he is not mistaken : and we apprehend a fearful crisis is approaching, as Louis Philippe approaches his end.

These volumes are interesting in matter, and beautiful in appearance.

11.—*Grammar of the Greek Language, for the use of High Schools and Colleges.* By DR. RAPHAEL KÜHNER, Corrector of the Lyceum, Hanover. Translated from the German by B. B. Edwards and S. H. Taylor. Andover: Allen Morvill and Wardwell. New York: M. H. Newman. London: Wiley & Putnam. 1844, pp. 603, 8vo.

This, as appears from the title, is a large volume of 600 pages, printed in an elegant style. It is not, however, too large for introduction into our High Schools and Colleges. It is just what a Greek Grammar ought to be ; yet we fear it will be too extensive for the patience of many, both teachers and scholars, who prefer the old paths, principally, however, because they are easy and familiar.

Without some such Grammar as this, (and we know of none better,) our students of Greek can never become thorough scholars, capable either of accurately translating, or discriminatingly criticising a Greek author.

And we do hope to see among our young men, a great advance in knowledge of the beautiful Attic tongue—an advance which will ultimately qualify them for appreciating the deep theological researches of German scholars. Kühner's Grammar, if introduced to our Colleges and studied, will do much toward this advance. We do, therefore, most heartily commend the labors of the author and the learned translators to the acceptance of classical scholars.

The Preface gives desired information in respect to the author and his works ; and points out the chief excellences of the Grammar. These consist in—1. A profound and accurate knowledge of the principles of the language as its basis. 2. A lucid arrangement. 3. Fulness and pertinence of illustration. 4. Perfect analysis of the forms of the language. 5. Equal elaborateness of every portion of it.

An Appendix on versification has been added by the translators, who are every way competent to the task.

Our apology to the publishers for this late notice is, that

we did not receive the work until our July No. was through the press.

12.—*A Grammar of the Greek Language, principally from the German of Kühner, with selections from Matthiae Buitman, Thiersch and Rost. For the use of schools and Colleges. By Charles Anthon, LL. D.* New York: Harper & Brothers. 1844, pp. 536, 12mo.

This Grammar, founded on Kühner's, will by no means supply the place of his own work; yet is it a good Greek Grammar to put into the hands of younger scholars—much better than very many from which our youth are instructed. Our recommendation of Kühner's is, in some sense, a recommendation of Dr. Anthon's, although the former is, unquestionably, the more complete. The publishers are entitled to praise for the manner in which the book is got up, especially its fitness for school-boy handling.

13.—*The Land of Israel, according to the covenant with Abraham, with Isaac, and with Jacob.* By ALEXANDER KEITH, D. D., Author of "the Evidence of Prophecy," etc. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1844, pp. 388, 12mo.

This is a beautiful book, illustrated with appropriate and well executed engravings: and it is a book, too, full of interest to the Biblical student, unfolding prophecy and elucidating it by facts.

Dr. Keith views the land of Judea and Judaism, not only retrospectively but prospectively; and looks forward to a literal recovery of the land from strangers, and a restoration of God's ancient people, in accordance with a literal interpretation of the covenants with the Patriarchs. This is now becoming a very popular view; and the signs of the times give indication that it may be true. Events in the providence of God will, probably, ere long, determine the matter, and give us the only satisfactory and decisive solution of the question.

Dr. Keith's "Land of Israel" is, at all events, well worth a perusal, and will abundantly repay the reader.

14.—*The Poems and Ballads of Schiller.* Translated by Sir Edward Bulwer Lytton, Bart., with a brief sketch of the author's life. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1844, pp. 424, 12 mo.

Many of our readers will be glad, no doubt, to get a translation of Schiller's Poems. They know something of him,

but would know more. The poetry of one who ranks among the first poets of Germany and whose writings have acquired as much influence as any other, cannot but be interesting to an English reader.

True, whilst there is much that is beautiful and unexceptionable, there are not wanting sentiments which we should prefer to see expurgated—which rather, we could wish had never been penned.

The youthful reader should, perhaps, be cautioned against the phases of Kantism and Pantheism, which some of his pieces assume.

Then again, there was that in the *life of Schiller*, which detracts from his purity, although, even in this respect, he will compare advantageously with some other favorite sons of the muse. The memoir prefixed by Bulwer, is better than Carlyle's, because the former had access to more recent sources of information.

15.—*Adams on 2d Epistle of Peter. Greenhill on Ezekiel. Burroughs on Hosea. Manton on James. Jenkyn on Jude. Daillé on Philippians and Colossians.* London: Samuel Holdsworth.

The above are the titles of a series of most valuable reprints from the stores of the choice expository theology of the seventeenth century. They have been reproduced within the last five or six years by the labors of the Rev. Josiah Sherman, minister of Long Chapel, London, who has by this service levied largely on the gratitude of the Christian community, wherever the use of the English language can make these treasures available. Though long known by character to all who were skilled in bibliography, yet they had previously become extremely scarce, and could only be obtained, especially Adams and Greenhill, at an enormous cost. Thanks to the editorial zeal of Mr. Sherman, and the enterprise of his publishers, these noble monuments of the piety, learning, unction, and eloquence of a former age of the Church—an age rich in gifted and gigantic intellects—are now made accessible to students and ministers of moderate means, who can in no way give more effect to their studies and productions than by superinducing upon them the spirit which will not fail to be caught by a familiar converse with these admirable models. We look indeed to the divines of this period for finished specimens rather of homiletic than of exegetical exposition; but the advantage to be gained by habituation to their masculine style,

their affluent vocabulary, their fulness of illustration, their rich practical and hortatory vein immensely overbalances the hazard that may occasionally accrue of *taking on* from their pages a prolixity of descent but ill suited to the temperament of our times.

We speak thus in general terms of the collective series of volumes before us. Though all valuable and all models in their way, yet they cannot be deemed, of course, of equal merit. The work of Adams on Peter undoubtedly ranks highest on the score of talent, and is the reflexion of a genius of the loftiest order. It is scarcely to be paralleled in the whole circle of English theology, for splendor of thought and diction. Greenhill comes next in the same department, less grand, massive, and majestic, but falling little short in epigrammatic brilliancy and fertility of invention. But Burroughs, after all, we love the most, and scarcely admire any less, for his inimitable anatomy of religious experience, and the wonderful pungency and pathos of his appeals to the conscience.

But our object is not a critical estimate, so much as a hearty commendation of these noble volumes. We could yield to our prompting to say more of their value, could we assure ourselves of being able to persuade those who can afford it, by no means to have these works out of their theological collections. And we trust that the judicious and laborious editor will consider any exhortation on this head as a merited compliment for the service he has performed. Nor would we close without expressing the hope that the health, which we learn has been seriously impaired by the toil of getting up these volumes in their present beautiful style, may yet be such as to enable him to enhance our obligation still further by drawing yet again upon the storehouse of obsolete English theology.

16.—*The Hierophant; or monthly Journal of Sacred Symbols and Prophecy.* Conducted by Geo. Bush, Prof. Heb. N. Y. City University. Complete in one volume. New York: Mark H. Newman. 800. pp. 288.

This volume is made up of a new series of original articles, almost exclusively from the pen of the editor, and devoted mainly to subjects of prophecy in which Prof. Bush is laboring with great ardor and much ability. A considerable portion of the work is occupied with a course of letters addressed to Prof. Stuart, rather sternly arraigning the principles laid

down in the "Hints on Prophetical Interpretation," in regard to the double sense, the intelligibility of prophecy, and the prophetical designations of time. Prof. B. contends strongly for the double sense in many of the Psalms and symbolical predictions of the Old Testament, and maintains also, with the older school of expositors, that a day in Daniel and the Apocalypse stands for a year, on the principle that where the events are symbolical the connected time must also be symbolical. Its pages contain, moreover, an extended view of Daniel's Judgment of the fourth Beast and his little horn, succeeded by the everlasting kingdom of the saints, the commencement of which he refers to the establishment of Christianity in the Saviour's resurrection and ascension.

The discussions of the volume are full of ripe scholarship, and cannot but be very useful to the student of prophecy, which Prof. B. affirms any student of the bible must necessarily be.

17.—*The Valley of Vision ; or, the Dry Bones of Israel Revived. An attempted Proof (from Ezekiel xxxvi. 1-14) of the Restoration and Conversion of the Jews.* By GEO. BUSH, Prof. N. Y. C. University. New York: Saxton & Miles. 8vo. pp. 60.

The principles on which the various predictions respecting the final destiny of the Jews are to be interpreted, have ever been a matter of dispute among expositors—some contending for the literal, and some for the spiritual or allegorical sense. Professor Bush, in the pamphlet before us, ranges himself uncompromisingly in the ranks of the *literal* expounders, and maintains with great strength the position, that the promised restoration of Israel to their own land, shadowed forth by the symbol of the re-collected and re-animated bones of Ezekiel's vision, has never yet received a fulfilment, and must of necessity be future. Without attempting to define the precise time of the accomplishment, he yet thinks we have arrived at the borders of the period when its incipiency is to be expected, and dwells much upon the consideration, that the diligent study of their own prophets is to be itself, one of the grand means of their national regeneration. A leading feature of Prof. B.'s tract is, that the prophesying on the dry bones is *the explaining of prophecy*, and that whoever, at this day, rightly unfolds the import of the predictions respecting the Jews, is in effect performing the very office here attributed to Ezekiel. This is certainly a striking view of the drift of the passage, and it must be admitted that the author has sustained it in a fine

style of exegetical reasoning. We are not called upon to pronounce upon the soundness of the view itself, but we do not hesitate to say that a strong case is made out, and that his arguments can be met only by an equally thorough-going inquest into the meaning of the original.

18.—*Notes, Critical and Practical, on the Book of Joshua: designed as a general help to Biblical Reading and Instruction.* By George Bush. New York: Saxon & Miles. 1844. pp. 221, 12mo.

*Notes, Critical & Practical, on the Book of Judges: Designed as a general help to Biblical Reading and Instruction.* By George Bush. New York: Saxon & Miles. 1844, pp. 257, 12mo.

Professor Bush is so well known and so highly appreciated as a Biblical Commentator; and his works have been so often commended on the pages of the Repository, that we need only to announce the fact of the issue of these two additional volumes to secure their sale. These historical works are prefaced by a general introduction; and then each book preceded by one appropriate, scholar-like and useful. We know of no other commentaries on Joshua and Judges so well suited to family instruction and Sabbath Schools.

19—*The Prophecies of Daniel. Nebuchadnezzar's Dream of the Great Image. Nos. I & II.* By George Bush. New York: Harper & Brothers.

The above works of Prof. Bush have since been followed by the commencing portion of a new and elaborate commentary on Daniel, to be issued in ten or twelve numbers, of which the first two are before us. These embrace the prophetic dream of Nebuchadnezzar, with the inspired exposition of Daniel who has, we may say, anatomized the gigantic image, and shown the symbolic scope of its various constituent parts. The commentary of Prof. B. is strictly exegetical, and by presenting on his page the Heb. and Chald. originals, with several of the ancient versions, he has put the reader in the best possible position for judging in regard to the correctness of the results to which he comes. The image he regards as a prophetic personification of the great system of despotic government extending from the earliest ages of the world down to the period of the overthrow of all merely secular sove-

reignty, and the universal establishment of the everlasting kingdom represented by the smiting stone of the vision. In the excision of the stone from the mountain he recognizes the origin of the Christain church from the Jewish Kingdom, and his illustrations on this head are both new and interesting. The demolition and comminution of the image he supposes to be gradually effected, and sees no evidence of that sudden crisis which some interpreters anticipate in the downfall of the present dynasties of the old Roman world. The entire system of Millenarianism fares hardly before his rigid exegesis. The work on the whole we regard as rich in promise, and its completion will no doubt give the biblical reader a highly valuable commentary on this difficult and obscure book.

20.—*Religion in America ; or an account of the Origin, Progress, relation to the State, and Present Condition of the Evangelical Churches in the United States, with notices of other Evangelical Denominations.* By ROBERT BAIRD. New York : Harper & Brothers. 1844. pp. 343, 8vo.

This work has been some time before the public, although it has, but recently, fallen into our hands. Whilst it must be acceptable to Christians and others in Great Britain, containing as it does information important to them, it cannot but be useful to Dr. Baird's friends at home. It contains a great deal of knowledge condensed, on the several subjects indicated in the title, and will be found convenient as a book of reference. We trust its translation into French and German may do much toward opening the eyes of foreigners to the value of our system, and directing their attention to an evangelical creed and practice.

#### ADDITIONAL NOTICES.

*The Autobiography of Heinrich Stilling, late Aulic Counselor of the Grand Duke of Baden etc. etc. Translated from the German by S. Jackson.* New York : Harper & Brothers. 1844. pp. 187, 8vo.

This work is far more interesting than any novel, and it has received universal admiration. It is the life of a remarkable man written by himself, in beautiful simplicity, and developing the inner workings of his pious spirit.

*Cyclopædia of Biblical Literature.* By JOHN KITTO. New-York. Mark H. Newman.

Parts 11 & 12 are now issued together and bring the work down to Jephthah; when complete it will certainly be an excellent dictionary.

*Rabbah Taken; or the Theological System of Rev. Alexander Campbell, examined and refuted.* By ROBERT W. LANDIS. New York: Mark H. Newman, 1844. pp. 135, 8vo.

The readers of the Repository will remember some articles on this subject by Mr. Landis. In this volume he has much enlarged, and is certainly entitled to say "Rabbah Taken."

*Coleridge and the Moral Tendency of his Writings.* By ——. New York: Leavitt, Trow & Co. 1844.

This is a pamphlet of 118 pages handsomely printed, and prefaced by Dr. Skinner. It contains also a brief memoir of Coleridge. The warning we think in place, and hope it will be read. Our books exert a powerful influence over us. Let them be choice and true.

*Pictorial Illustrations of Apostolical Succession.* By WILLIAM PAGE, of Monroe, Michigan. Bishop Presbyterian. New-York: Ezra Collier.

This is quite a new idea in its application, but altogether according with the spirit of the age, which almost demands illustrated books. It is written in a somewhat queer style, but contains, withal, a great deal of argument.

## ARTICLE XII.

## LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.

## Germany.

Wm. Roscher, of Göttingen, has published one volume of his 'Olio, or Contributions to the History of the Historical Art,' embracing the Life, Writings and Times of Thucydides. This will be followed by a second treatise of Herodotus and Xenophon, and a third on the great Roman Historiana. This work must be of great value to classical scholars. Plato's *Staat übersetzt von K. Schneider*, (Plato's Republic, translated by K. Schneider,) is spoken of in the highest terms.—Prof. W. A. Becker's "Manual of Roman Antiquities," accompanied with a plan of Rome, has recently issued from the press.—Three parts of Umbreit's Commentary on the Prophets of the Old Testament have already appeared; and the fourth and last, containing all the minor Prophets, is in process of publication. Alexander Von Humboldt, aged 72, is preparing a physical description of the Earth, about to be published by Cotta, entitled "Cosmus."

## France.

A Volume of the "Histoire littéraire de la France" has been recently published, containing biographical notices of the French Troubadours. The first volume of this work first appeared in 1733.—The library of the late Charles Nadier, consisting of a choice collection of beautiful old books, although small, sold for 68,000 francs. So much for rare works.

## Italy.

Cardinal Pacca's collection of papers and letters, marked by him "for publication," have been sent to his relatives, and will probably be suppressed. They are said to contain some confidential correspondence between himself and Frederick the Great. A memoir of Rosellini has been prepared by his friend D. Giuseppe Bardilli.—Eight volumes of Angel Mao's "Spicilegium Romanum" have appeared; the remaining two will soon be out. Here are to be found interesting documents illustrative of the middle ages, from Greek, Latin and Italian MSS. in the Vatican.

## Great Britain.

Becker's "Gallus, or Roman Scenes of the time of Augustus," has been translated and published in London. This work will be valua-

ble to classical scholars and readers of Roman history, as illustrating Roman manners and customs. The "Letters and Official Documents of Mary Stuart" are soon to be published. They amount to 700, collected from original MSS., and are written in English, Scotch, Latin, and Italian.—Two numbers of "The North British Review" have appeared and give promise of great excellence. Such men as Sir David Brewster, Drs. Chalmers and Welsh, Mr. Hallam, etc. are among the contributors.

#### United States.

Professor Woolsey, of Yale College, is preparing for the press an edition of Plato's *Crito & Phædo*; and Prof. Champlin, of Waterville, a translation of Kühner's Elementary Latin Grammar.

## INDEX TO VOL. XII.

---

### A.

*Adams, Samuel, M. D.* The Natural History of Man in his Spiritual Relations 111-363.

*Adams' Peter.* Exposition of noticed 484.

*Additional Notices* 488.

*Anthon, Charles, LL. D.* Greek Grammar noticed 484.

*Aristotle*, 443.

*Atonement.* Coleridge's View of it 177.

*Augsburg Confession.* History of 2.

### B.

*Baird, Robert, D. D.* Religion in America noticed 488.

*Barstow, Rev. J. A.* His Biblical Dictionary, noticed 249.

*Biblical Dictionary.* A comprehensive digest of the History, Antiquities of the Jews, and neighboring Nations, the Natural History, Geography, and Literature of Sacred Writings, by Rev. J. A. Barstow, noticed 249.

*Bleat, Rev. Henry.* Posthumous Sermons of 247.

*Boardman, Rev. H. A.* His Prelatic Doctrine of Apostolic Succession noticed 248.

*Book that will suit you, or a word for every one*, by Rev. James Smith, noticed 250.

*Bradley, Rev. Charles.* His Sermons noticed 252.

*Burns, John, M. D.* Christian Fragments noticed 480.

*Burrough's Exposition of Hosea* noticed 484.

*Bush, Prof. George.* The Hierophant noticed 485.

*Bush, Prof. George.* Notes on Joshua and Judges noticed 487.  
\_\_\_\_\_. On the Prophecies of Daniel noticed 487.

### C.

*Carlyle's Past and Present.* Review of 317.

*Charlotte Elizabeth.* Works noticed 477.

*Christian Doctrines*, by Rev. Hubbard Winslow of Boston, noticed 248.

*Christian Fragments*, by John Burns, M. D. noticed 480.

*Ciceronius*; or the Prussian method of teaching the elements of the Latin language, by B. Sears, noticed 250.

*Coleridge's view of Atonement*, by Rev. Lemuel Grosvenor, 177. Views consistent with Socinianism 177. No such thing as literal atonement 178. Vicarious suffering unjust and insufficient 179. His view absurd 180. Inconsistent with itself 181. Inconsistent with the Bible 184.

*Colporteur System, American*, by Prof. J. M. Sturtevant 214. The political, social, and religious character of the Western States 215. Failure of the means hitherto employed to benefit them 216. Examination of the Colporteur System, and its adaptation to the present condition of the population in the West 217. State of society and education in the West 222. Colportage cannot meet the emergency 223. No scarcity of books—they are not read 224.

The people of the West are not a "stupid people"—eloquence is highly appreciated—and questions of interest well understood—the *living speaker* is the instrument to awaken activity 225. It is Baxter's *self not Baxter's writings* that are needed—no mode of effort has so immediate effect in forming society as our efforts for Education and Home Missions 231. Importance of a *Catholic spirit* in our missionary enterprises 232. A sectarian spirit is the *bane and curse* of the church 233. Claims of the Colporteur system as being "republican," "democratic" answered 234. Christianity in its purity is "republicanism," it cares as much for the poor as the rich 234. Missionaries can be found in abundance 238. Economy of the system 239. Founding permanent institutions our hope 241. Proper limits of colportage 242.

*Country Strolls.* Old Humphrey's noticed 479.

*Credulity and Skepticism in History.* Extremes of 131.

*Critical Notices* 243.

*Crosby, Alpheus.* His Narrative of the Expedition of Cyrus noticed 255.

\_\_\_\_\_. His Greek Grammar noticed 255.  
*Critical Notices* 476.

#### D.

*Daillé's Exposition of Philippians and Colossians* noticed 484.

*Daniel.* Prophecies of, by Prof. Bush noticed 487.

*Dick, Rev. John, D. D.* Lectures on the Acts of the Apostles noticed 247.

*Divine Agency and Government together with Human Agency and Freedom*, by Leonard Woods, D. D.—(Continued from Vol XI. p. 137)—410. We are accountable beings as clearly as we are intelligent beings 410. Because there is only one supreme cause it does not follow that there are no secondary causes 412. The state of

dependence is not inconsistent with just accountableness to a moral government 413. Free accountable agency is learned from consciousness 414. Cause and Effect 415. Understanding of the term 416. Unwillingness of some writers to apply the words *cause* and *effect* to the determinations and actions of moral agents 418. A rational being acts rationally in causing or originating his own acts, he must do it under rational influence, of motives addressed to the mind 420. Many of the acts of the mind are not controlled by the *Will* 421. Good men love God not because they will to love him, but because they see him lovely and glorious 422. The goodness or badness of man's character is manifested by the spontaneous exercise of his affections 424.

*Diodati Dominici, J. C. Neapolitanus, De Christo Grate Loquente, Exercitatio*, translated by O. T. Dobbins, D.D. Christ, the Apostles, and all the Jews used the Hellenistic tongue 455. The Syriac version 456. The Jews composed their books in the Hellenistic dialect from the time of the Maccabees 457. Important note on the Maccabees 458. The New Testament and other books 462. The coins of the Jews bore Greek inscriptions 464. Coins of the Herods 465. The Greek language used in inscriptions 470. The inscription on the Cross 472. The Jews gave Greek names to their children, and adopted them themselves 475.

*Doddridge, Philip, D. D.* Family Expositor noticed 253.

*Durbin, President, D. D.* Observations in Europe noticed 481.

#### E.

*Edwards, Jonathan.* The works of reviewed, by Enoch Pond, D. D. 373. Ancestry, ibid, his knowledge of Indian languages 374. Settlement in the ministry 375. Elected President of Union College 376. His principal Work

378. Sermons on the Atonement 379. Errors of Priestly considered 380. Prevalence of Arminianism 381. His Reply to Chauncy and different forms of Universalism 384. Reply to Dr. West 386. Self-determination—his view of it 387. Influence of motives 388. Comparison of the elder and the younger Edwards 389.
- Education, Theological*, by Prof. George Howe noticed 479.
- Elocutionist*, Knowles' noticed 478.
- Essay on the Moral Susceptibility, Moral Action, and Moral Character* 189. Meaning of right and wrong 189. Object of the creation of mind, the production of the greatest happiness—exhibited in his moral susceptibilities—of pleasure in being the cause of good 191. Desire of retaliation and reward 192. Pain in witnessing ingratitude 193. Self-denial of present enjoyment for future good 194. Of pleasure in seeing penalties properly inflicted 195. Susceptibilities of pain are means of preserving happiness 196. All nature confirms the design of the Creator of mind to promote its happiness 199. Of the motives of human actions 200. Actions right when they tend to good, and produce no evil 201. Some actions afford individual happiness yet the indulgence causes public evil 202. Causes of the difficulties which embarrass writers on ethical science 203. Moral character of mind 205. Four causes of Volition—Susceptibility 206. Habit, knowledge of motives—governing purposes 207. Character estimated by probability 208. Inquiry, What is the character which will secure the object for which mind was created?
- Essays. Biographical, Literary and Philosophical*, by John Foster noticed 477.
- Evidence from Nature for the Immortality of the Soul*, by Rev. T. M. Post 294. Reasons for the argument 295. Substance of the Soul 296. A true idea of God the whole ground of argument 299. He speaks to us through the nature he has given us 300. He assures the soul another life by its reasonableness 301. He assures me by the natural and moral evil surrounding me 304. He has promised immortality by his justice 306. Socrates placed his argument on the right ground 311. Revealed anew in Christ 312.
- Exposition of Matthew 7 : 6*, by Rev. E. Ballantine 158. Symbolic meaning of terms 159. Construction of the text 160. Different interpretations 161. Illustrations from history 172. Closing remarks 175.
- Extremes of Credulity and Skepticism in History*, by E. D. Sanborn 131. Early historians believed too much 131. Leading minds give direction to popular faith 132. Hence believing and doubting are alternately fashionable 132. Fondness for new opinions 133. Herodotus 134. Influence of the Ancients 135. Bardonin 136. Modern Critics 139. Iliad and Odyssey 141. Niebuhr 144. Objection to him—imbued with skepticism 146. Dogmatism 147. Fond of paradoxes and innovations 148. Primitive history oral 149. Old things suspected 155. Livy dreamy and credulous 156. Even Moses questioned 157.
- Ezekiel*. Greenhill's Exposition of noticed 484.
- F.
- Family Expositor*, or a Paraphrase and Version of the New Testament, with Critical Notes, by Philip Doddridge—with a Memoir of the author, by N. W. Fink, of Amherst noticed 253.
- Foster, John*. Essays contributed to the Eclectic Review [noticed 477.]
- G.
- Goodrich, S. G.* His Pictorial History of the United States noticed 251.

- Gorgias of Plato, with Notes*, by Theodore D. Woolsey, Prof. of Greek in Yale College noticed 243.
- Grammar of the Greek Language*. Part First. By Prof. Alpheus Crosby noticed 255.
- Grammar, Greek*. Kühner's, translated by Edwards and Taylor, noticed 452. ——, by Dr. Anthon noticed 483.
- Grecian Philosophy*. Sketches in, by Rev. Wm. S. Taylor. Of SOCRATES 425. In an age of Sophists he taught true Philosophy 426. And a true spiritual Religion 427. A Reformer in politics 428. Injustice done him by Macaulay in his article on Bacon 429. Misrepresentations of Dick 432. PLATO—his Origin 434. His retirement 436. Moral character assailed 437. His reasonings 438. Phrenological development of his cranium 439. Ideality the distinctive feature of his character 440. Perfection of his writings 441. ARISTOTLE—birth place 443. Invited to the Court of Philip, and charged with the education of Alexander 444. Habits and personal defects 445. His ambition 446. His discriminating mind 448. His power of classification—the father of Comparative Anatomy 449. Causality his leading organ 450. Remarkable example of pure intellect 451. Contrast between Aristotle and Plato 425. Compared with Socrates 454.
- Grimshaw, Rev. T. S., A. M.* His Memoir of Rev. Leigh Richmond noticed 251.
- Greenhill's Ezekiel* noticed 484.
- Gurley, Rev. R. R.* Life and Elocution of Sylvester Larned noticed 477.
- H.
- Hierophant, The*, by Prof. Bush noticed 485.
- Hosea*. Burrough's Exposition of, noticed 484.
- Hove, Prof. George*. Discourse on Theological Education noticed 479.
- Humphrey, Old*. Country Strolls noticed 479.
- Hyponia, or Thoughts on a Spiritual Understanding of the Apocalypse, &c.* noticed 254.
- I.
- Ideal of a Perfect Pulpit Discourse*, by Rev. H. N. Day 85. Pulpit eloquence not yet risen to its highest excellence 86. It is an art 87. Different minds move differently 88. Essential constituents of a Discourse 89. Scripture authority 91. Text 92. Truth 94. The form of logical propositions not essential 95. Unity 96. The end must be practical goodness 100. The topical method 101. French preachers 106.
- Immortality of the Soul*. Evidence of, from Nature 294.
- J.
- James. Manton's Exposition of* noticed 484.
- Jude. Jenkins' Exposition of* noticed 484.
- K.
- Knowles' Elocutionist* noticed 478.
- Kühner's Greek Grammar* noticed 482.
- L.
- Larned, Sylvester*. Life and Elocution of noticed 477.
- Lectures on the Acts of the Apostles*. By the late John Dick, D. D., Prof. of Theology of the United Secession Church, Glasgow—first American edition noticed 247.
- Literary Intelligence* 256.
- Logic, Elements of*, by Henry P. Tappan noticed 478.
- Luther, Martin*. Writings of (continued.) By C. E. Stowe, D. D. 1. History of the Augsburgh Confession—the friends and enemies of Luther 2. Edict of the diet at Spies 4. Protest against it—the signers called Protestants 5. Arrest and imprisonment 5. New diet summoned to meet at Augsburg 6. Luther draws up a creed of 17 articles 7. Melancthon em-

ployed to draw up a Confession 8. Luther's admonition to the clergy 9. Festival of "Corpus Christi" 10. Devotion of the Emperor 12. The princes all summoned to attend mass 13. Luther's devotions 15. Meeting of the diet 19. Confession presented and read 20. Impressions produced by it 23. Confutation prepared 24. Diet broke up 26. List of Luther's German writings 27-38.

## M.

*Men. The Natural History of, in his spiritual relations* 111. *Manton's Exposition of James* noticed 484. *Matthew VII. 6th. Exposition of,* 158. *Memoir of Rev. Leigh Richmond.* By Rev. T. S. Grimshaw noticed 251. *Missions Evangelical,* by Andrew M. Smith noticed 480. *Moral Susceptibility, Moral Action, and Moral Character* 189. *Mothers of England.* By Mrs. Ellis noticed 262.

## N.

*Natural History of Man in his Spiritual Relations,* by Samuel Adams, M. D. 111. Every animal is organized for a peculiar destiny 111. Every want has its supply in Nature 112. Deductions from genealogical phenomena 113. The disorder in the human race, reconciled by considering him a moral being 115. Movements and aspirations of his mind 116. Wants and tendencies of human nature 117. Being of a God 118. Origin of the idea and belief of a God 119. Reasonings of the mind in relation to it 120. Recognition of God a *feeling* rather than *belief* 126. Manifestation of God in Nature reveals him 128. No argument necessary to prove that the human race is in a state of disorder 353. The possibility of moral evil is necessarily incident to a moral system 354. Dread of penalty due to sin—God has not left

the sinner without hope 356. Man not only seeks to escape the consequences of sin, but looks forward to perfection and blessedness 357. Christians and Infidels agree in hoping for perfection 359. They differ only in their views respecting it 360. The anticipations of hope and fear do not meet their fulfilment in this life—hence the necessity of a future state 361. Unrequited wrongs prove it 362. Means for the accomplishment of human destiny 364. Necessity of a Revelation 365. Hume's argument against miracles contradicted 366. Objections against the necessity of a special revelation answered 368. Reason and instinct compared 369.

*Nettleton, Rev. Asahel, D. D. Memoir of his Life and Character* noticed 480.

*Notes on Joshua and Judges,* by Prof. George Bush noticed 487.

## O.

*Obligations of the World to the Bible.* A series of Lectures to Young Men, by Gardiner Spring noticed 250. *Observations in Europe,* by President Durbin noticed 481. *Original History of the Religious Denominations in the United States,* by J. David Rupp noticed 253.

## P.

*Parr, Samuel, LL. D. The Works of, with Memoirs of his life and writings,* by Rev. C. E. Park 39. Birth and childhood 40. Entered at Cambridge 41. Admitted to orders 42. His disappointment 43. Habit of smoking 45. Quarrel, and Advice of Sir William Jones 46. First appearance as an author 47. He publishes two Sermons 48. Entered into political contests 53. Doctor of Laws 55. His connection with Rev. Prof. White 57. His fondness for controversy 59. Was a Whig in politics and a Tory in religion 65. His celebrated Spital Sermon 66.

- His opinion of Edwards 70. An ardent admirer of Fox 72. His library 75. His domestic troubles 75. Religious character 78. Excellences and faults as a writer 82. His death 85.
- Past and Present* (Carlyle's.) Review of 317.
- Perfect Pulpit Discourse*. Ideal of 85.
- Peter, Adams' Exposition of*, noticed 484.
- Pictorial History of the United States*. with notices of other portions of America, by S. G. Goodrich noticed 251.
- Plato* 434.
- Pond, Enoch, D. D.* His Review of Jon. Edwards' Works 373.
- Poet, Rev. T. M.* Evidence from Nature for the immortality of the soul 294.
- Posthumous Sermons*, by the Rev. Henry Blunt, A. M., late Rector of Streatham, and formerly Fellow of Pembroke College, Cambridge; first American edition noticed 246.
- Prelacy and Parity*, discussed in several Lectures, comprising a Review of Rev. Lloyd Windsor's argument on the Ministerial Commission, by Rev. William C. Wiser, noticed 252.
- Prelatic Doctrine of the Apostolical Succession* examined, with a delineation of the High Church System, by H. A. Boardman, noticed 248.
- Principles of Presbyterianism, and Reasons for upholding them*, by C. E. Stowe, D. D. 257. The model nearest the biblical pattern 258. Scriptural mode of organization 260. Apostles were not diocesan bishops 261. Early Christians had no churches to meet in, and used no Prayer Books 262. Testimony of the Fathers 263. The Church was Episcopal in the fourth century 267. Revival of Presbyterianism after the Dark Ages by the Reformers 270. Puritan Churches in New England 272. Orthodox Baptist Churches 273.
- Despotism of the Church 274. Advantages of a Liturgy 275. Presbyterian Theology 277. The Fathers differ on questions of doctrine and practice 281. Principles best adapted to the political condition of our country 286. To the physical condition 288. The moral state and wants of our country 289. Slavery a source of evil in the Church 291. Divisions and controversy another source 292.
- R.
- Religion in America*, by Robert Baird, D. D. noticed 488.
- Review of Carlyle's Past and Present*, by Prof. J. T. Smith 317. He speaks his own thoughts in his own way 318. Much in it to admire and much to condemn 332. His condemnation of writers 339. Deistical Views 344. Pantheistic tendency of his writings 346. Personal religion mentioned with a sneer 348. Profitable for a discriminating mind to read Carlyle 350.
- Richmond, Rev. Legh.* Memoirs of, noticed 251.
- Rupp, J. David.* His History of the Religious denominations of the United States noticed 253.
- S.
- Sears, B.* His Ciceronian; or the Prussian method of teaching the elements of the Latin language noticed 250.
- Sermons*, Preached at Glassbury, Brecknockshire, and in St. James' chapel, Clapham, Surrey, by Rev. Charles Bradley, noticed 252.
- Shepard, Rev. George.* His Review of South's Sermons 392.
- Socrates* 426.
- South's Sermons Reviewed*, by Geo. Shepard, D. D. His age one of remarkable events 392. His purest and finest sermons are among his early efforts 393. His moral qualities and character 394. His doctrines 395. His bad spirit, and the abusive language of his sermons towards the Puritans 398

- The intellectual features of his Sermons 400. Specimens of the plan of his discourses 401. Failure in his attempt to be a poet 402. His lavish excesses of wit 403. His command of words and the boldness of his metaphors 406. Clearness of style 407.
- Smith, Rev. James.* His Book that will suit you noticed 250.
- Smith, Rev. J. T.* Review of Carlyle's Past and Present 317.
- Smith, Andrew M.* History of Evangelical Missions noticed 480
- Spring, Gardiner, D. D.* His Obligations of the World to the Bible noticed 25.
- Stone, C. E., D. D.* Principles of Presbyterianism, and reasons for upholding them 257.
- Taylor, Rev. Wm. S.* Sketches of Grecian Philosophy 425.
- Tyler, Bennet, D. D.* Life and Character of Nettleton noticed 480.
- W.
- Winslow, Rev. Hubbard.* His Christian Doctrine noticed 248.
- Wiener, Rev. W. C.* His Prelacy and Parity noticed 252.
- Woods, Rev. Leonard, D. D.* Divine Agency and Government, together with Human Agency and Freedom 410.
- Woolsey, Theodore D.* His Notes on the Gorgias of Plato noticed 243. *Xenophon's Narrative of the Expedition of Cyrus*, by Prof. A. Crosby noticed 255.
- Works of Charlotte Elizabeth* noticed 476.

## T.

- Tappan, Henry P.* Elements of Logic noticed 478.

## ERRATA.

- Vol. XI. Page 46, l. 11 for Petoho & Zekopo, read Petaha & Zekafa  
 " " 46, l. 12 transpose alaha and aloho, and for taora  
 read taoro.  
 " " 124 l. 11 fr. bot. after otherwise insert "with me."  
 " " 181 l. 17 " for Acaademy read Academia.  
 " " 186 l. 15 " for Alcintus " Alcimus.  
 " " " l. 18 " for twenty-one " nineteen.  
 " " 242 l. 1 " for em " in.

LEAVITT, TROW & CO.

PRINTERS, PUBLISHERS AND BOOKSELLERS,

194 Broadway, and 33 Ann Street,

Offer to the public an extensive assortment of Books in all the various departments of Literature, and will sell on as reasonable terms as any one in the city. Among their publications are the following standard Works:

THE COMPLETE WORKS OF PRESIDENT EDWARDS—A reprint of the Worcester edition, with valuable additions and a copious general Index, in four volumes. The following is the ADVERTISEMENT prefixed to the work :

"THE present Edition of the Works of President Edwards, is a reprint of that published at Worcester, with some variation of the arrangement, and considerable additions from other sources. The pieces added are as follows :—1. Distinguishing Marks of a Work of the Spirit. 2. God's Moral Government, a Future State, and the Immortality of the Soul. 3. The necessity and reasonableness of the Christian doctrine of Satisfaction for Sin. 4. The Perseverance of the Saints. 5. The Endless Punishment of those who die Impenitent. 6. Fourteen Sermons.

While the accuracy of the Worcester Edition has been carefully preserved, the value of the present publication has been greatly enhanced, not only by the introduction of the above mentioned matter, but by the COpious GENERAL INDEX, inserted at the close of the 4th volume. This has been prepared with much labor, and will be found to be unusually complete. For obvious reasons, the references are generally made in the very language of Edwards. Thus has all suspicion of partiality and misrepresentation been precluded, and the reader is presented besides, on many points, with a brief synopsis of the author's views and trains of argument. The publishers flatter themselves that they have done a service to the cause both of theological learning and practical piety, by making an improved edition of these invaluable works more accessible to the religious public than any former one has been."

The publishers have been highly favoured with Recommendations and Notices of their edition of this Standard Work. As a specimen of what they have received, they would introduce the following from Rev. Drs. Woods and Spring :

"This certifies, that I, the subscriber, have been conversant with those who have been concerned in publishing the new edition of the Works of Jonathan Edwards, at New-York, and that I have been particularly acquainted with their proceedings ; indeed, I should have consented, in compliance with Mr. Leavitt's request, to superintend the publication, had my other duties permitted. The edition is in four large octavo volumes, on good paper, and bound in very handsome sheep. It contains the whole of the Worcester Edition, copied faithfully, with several valuable additions.

"The value of this edition is greatly increased by a Table of Contents in each volume, and a copious General Index.

"The writings of President Edwards need no recommendations from me ; but I have thought it proper to give this testimony to the high value of this edition, and to assure Ministers of the Gospel, Theological Students, and all others, that they may have full confidence in the care and fidelity of those who have conducted the business of this important publication, and in the correctness with which they have accomplished their undertaking.

LEONARD WOODS.

"Theological Seminary, Andover, Dec. 15, 1842."

"I cheerfully concur with Dr. Woods in the recommendation he has given Mr. Leavitt's Edition of Edwards ; and only add, that in my humble judgment, it is a work not less important to intelligent laymen than to theological students.

GARDINER SPRING.

"New York, March, 1843."

**THE COMPLETE WORKS OF REV. DANIEL A. CLARK**; with a Biographical Sketch, and an estimate of his power as a Preacher, by Rev. George SHEPARD, A. M., Professor of Sacred Rhetoric, Bangor Theological Seminary; in two volumes 8vo.

**THE ANABASIS OF XENOPHON**, chiefly according to the text of L. Dindorf, with notes; for the use of Schools and Colleges; by JOHN J. OWEN, Principal of the Cornelius Institute, New-York.

This edition of the Anabasis is adopted, as a text-book, in Harvard University, Phillips Academy at Andover, and in several other of our best literary institutions.

Among the many favorable notices of this work which have already been given, the publishers would select the two following only:

*From Professor Woolsey, of Yale College.*

"Having pretty attentively examined considerable portions of the new edition of Xenophon's Anabasis prepared by Mr. Owen, I find that he has followed the best text; that the text is printed with general correctness; and that the notes bear abundant testimony to the diligent and careful study which Mr. Owen has spent upon his author, and to his judicious use of the best commentaries. His edition must be regarded, I think, as decidedly in advance of all others to which students of the Anabasis in our country hitherto have had access.

THEODORE D. WOOLSEY.

"*Yale College, June 21, 1843.*"

*From the New-York Commercial Advertiser.*

"This is a very neatly printed edition of one of the sweetest works of the 'Attic bee.' It possesses, we think, special claims upon the attention of teachers. The text adopted is chiefly that of Dindorf, one of the most perfect of the German editions, in which the style of this parent of writers is rescued from several deformities that mar and obscure it in the more common editions to which the American student has access. The notes are elaborated with great care, and the editor, though this is his first contribution to the cause of classical learning, has evidently brought to his task a sound judgment in regard to the aid required by the student, a just appreciation of the peculiarities of his author, and an 'iron diligence' in elucidating difficulties, which will secure to the edition the respect and, we trust, the countenance of teachers.

NOVUM TESTAMENTUM GRAECE, post I. A. H. Tittmannum, olim Prof. Lips. ad Fidem optimorum Librorum secundis curis recognovit, Lectionumque Varietatem notavit, AUGUSTUS HAHN, in Acad. Vratia. Prof. Editio Americana stereotype; curante Evar. ROBINSON, S. T. D.

THE ECONOMY OF FARMING, translated from the German of J. BURCK, Professor of Agriculture, and member of the Agricultural Societies of Vienna, Munich, Brunn, Goetz, Graiz, Klagenfurt, Laibach, Prague, &c., with many additional notes from the German of Thaer, Veit, Swertz, Sprengel, Petri, &c., and copious Index, by E. GOODRICH SMITH.

AN ECCLESIASTICAL CATECHISM OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, by Rev. THOMAS SMITH, author of "Presbyterian and not Prelacy," "Ecclesiastical Republicanism," &c. &c.; for the use of Bible classes, families, and private members. Third edition, much improved.

This work has been submitted to the revision of the Rev. Samuel Miller, D. D., and many others, and is now published as approved by them, and with their commendations.





## CONTENTS OF NO. XXIII.

---

ART. I.	WRITINGS OF MARTIN LUTHER. . . . .	1
	By Professor C. E. Stowe, D. D., of Lane Seminary, Cincinnati.	
II.	THE WORKS OF SAMUEL PARR, LL.D., REVIEWED. 39	
	By Rev. Calvin E. Park, Waterville, Me.	
III.	THE IDEAL OF A PERFECT PULPIT DISCOURSE. 85	
	By Professor Henry N. Day, Western Reserve College, Hudson, Ohio.	
IV.	NATURAL HISTORY OF MAN IN HIS SPIRITUAL RELATIONS. . . . .	111
	By Professor Samuel Adams, Illinois College, Ill.	
V.	EXTREMES OF CREDULITY AND SKEPTICISM IN HISTORY. . . . .	131
	By Professor E. D. Sanborn, Dartmouth College, N. H.	
VI.	EXPOSITION OF MATTHEW, VII. 6. . . . .	158
	By Rev. E. Ballantine, Prince Edward, Va.	
VII.	COLERIDGE'S VIEW OF ATONEMENT. . . . .	177
	By Rev. Lemuel Grosvenor.	
VIII.	ESSAY ON THE MORAL SUSCEPTIBILITIES, MORAL ACTION, AND MORAL CHARACTER. . . . .	189
IX.	THE AMERICAN COLPORTEUR SYSTEM. . . . .	214
	By Professor J. M. Sturtevant, Illinois College.	

ART. X. CRITICAL NOTICES.	Page.
1. Prof. Woolsey's <i>Gorgias of Plato</i> , . . . . .	243
2. Blunt's Posthumous Sermons, . . . . .	246
3. Dick's Lectures on the Acts, . . . . .	247
4. Winslow's Christian Doctrines, . . . . .	248
5. Boardman's Apostolical Succession, . . . . .	248
6. Bastow's Biblical Dictionary, . . . . .	249
7. Spring's Obligations of the World to the Bible, .	250
8. Sears's Ciceronian, . . . . .	250
9. Smith's Book that will suit you, . . . . .	250
10. Goodrich's Pictorial History of the United States, . . . . .	251
11. Grimshawe's Memoir of Legh Richmond, . . . . .	251
12. Mrs. Ellis's Mothers of England, . . . . .	252
13. Bradley's Sermons, . . . . .	252
14. Wisner's Prelacy and Parity, . . . . .	252
15. Doddridge's Family Expositor, . . . . .	253
16. Rupp's History of Religious Denominations, .	253
17. Hyponoia, . . . . .	254
18. Crosby's Xenophon's Anabasis, . . . . .	255
19. Crosby's Greek Grammar, . . . . .	255
20. Bush's Valley of Vision, . . . . .	256
 ART. XI. LITERARY INTELLIGENCE. . . . .	 256

THE  
AMERICAN  
BIBLICAL REPOSITORY,

DEVOTED TO

Biblical and General Literature, Theological Discussion; the History  
of Theological Opinions, &c.

EDITED BY  
JOHN HOLMES AGNEW.

SECOND SERIES.  
VOLUME XII. NO. XXIV.—WHOLE NO. LVI.

OCTOBER, 1844.

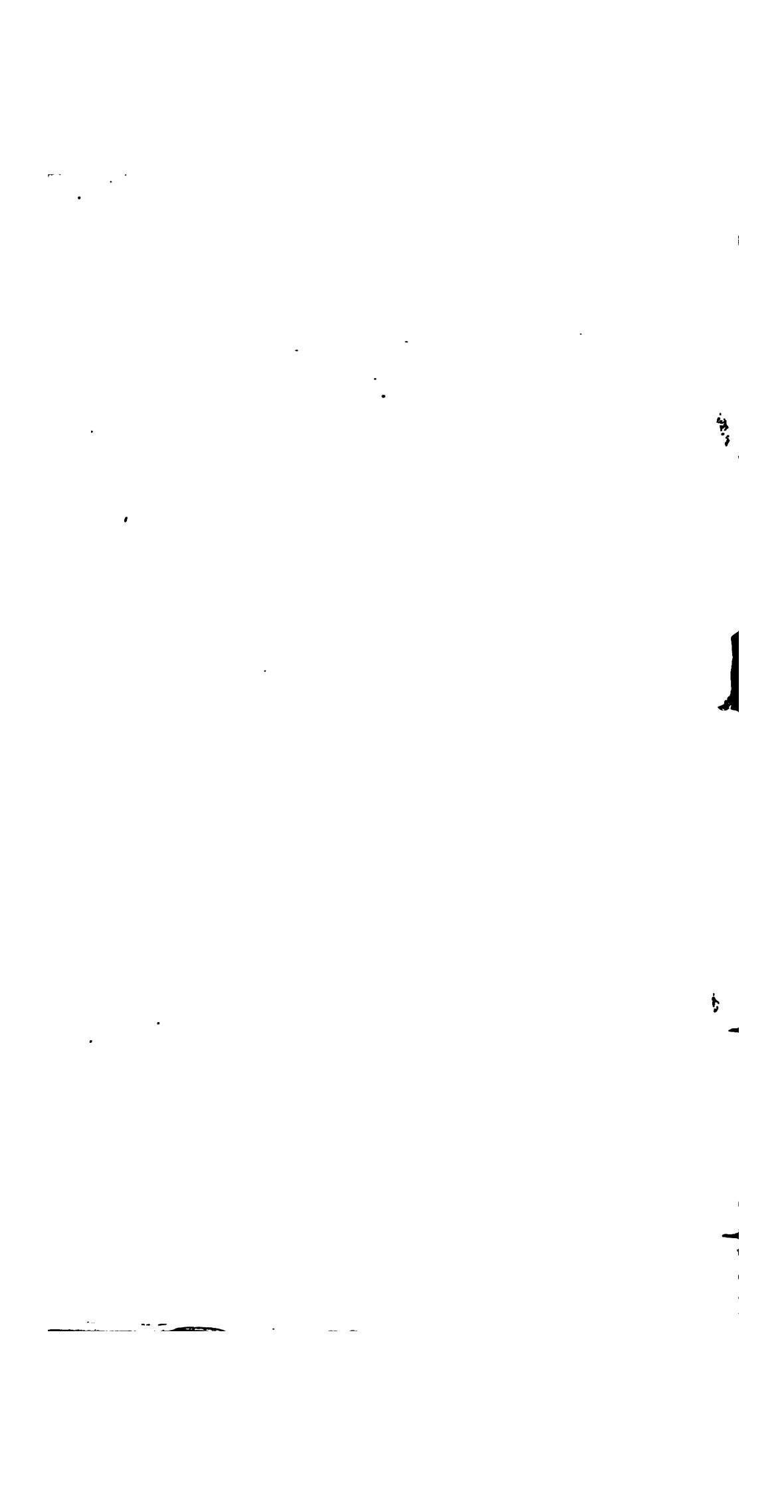
NEW-YORK:

PUBLISHED BY LEAVITT, THOMAS, & CO.  
No. 124 Broadway.

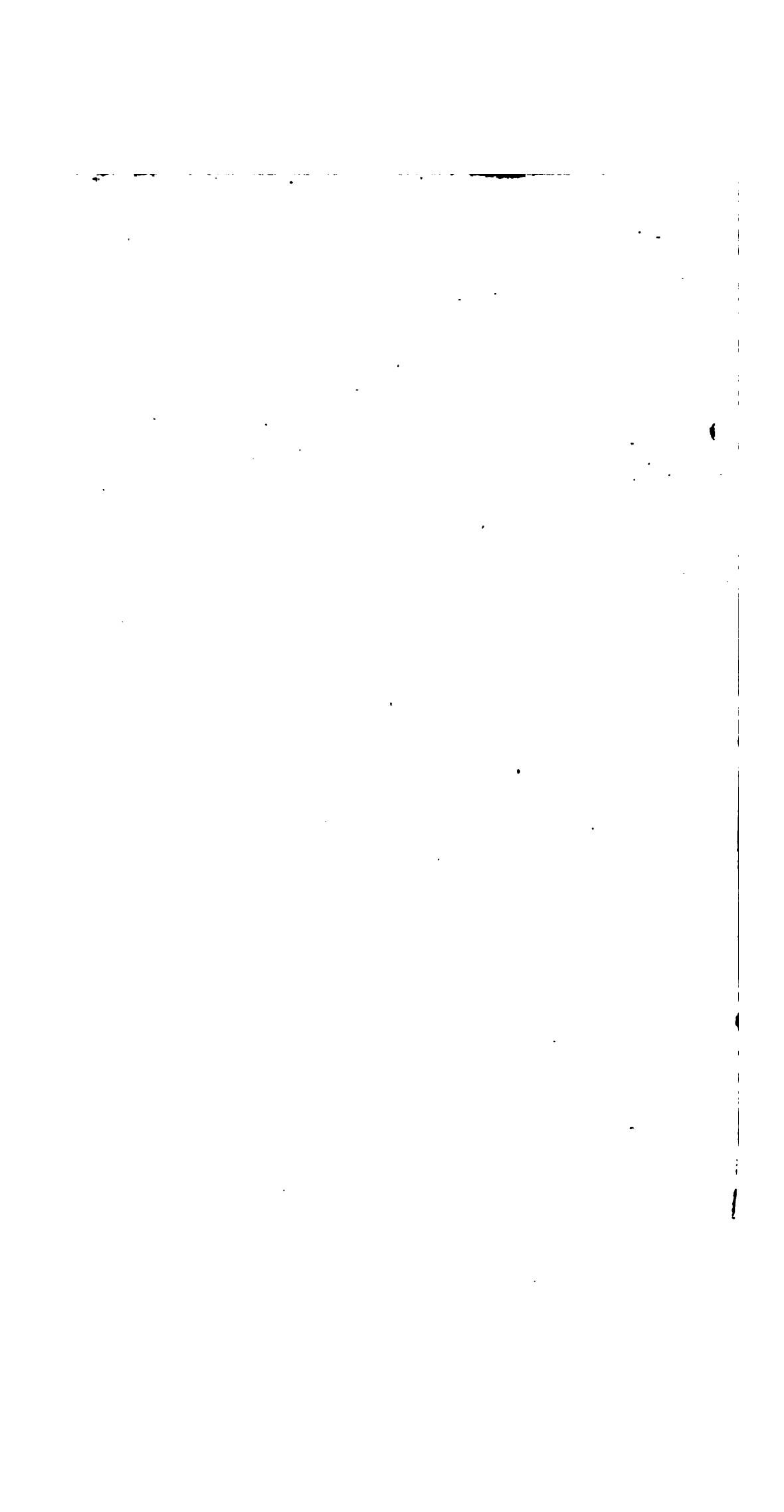
BOSTON:  
SAXTON, PIERRE & CO., 10 WASHINGTON-STREET.  
LONDON:  
WILEY AND PUTNAM, 25 PATERNOSTER-ROW.

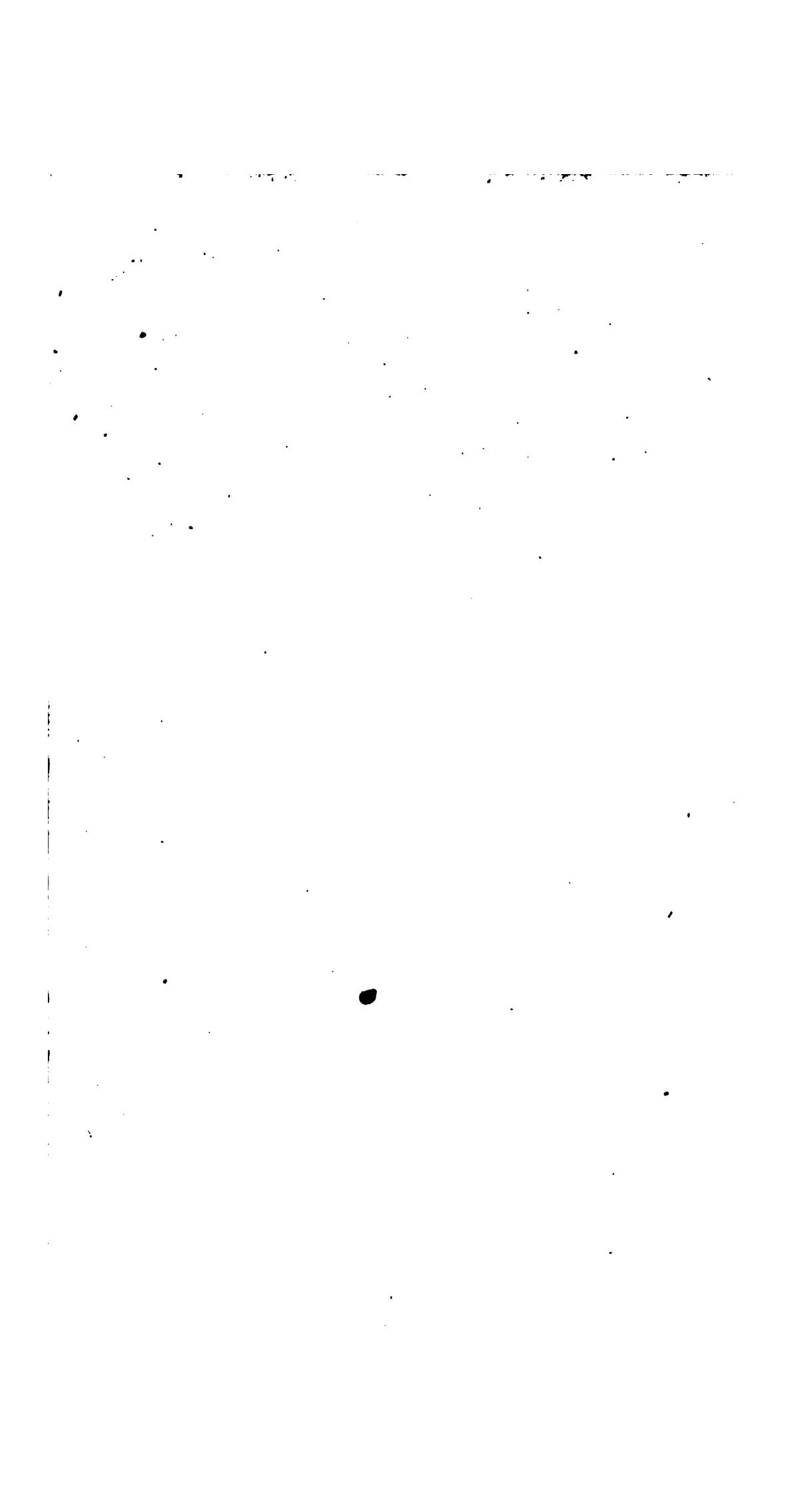
1844.

4 dollars.—TO CANADA, MEXICO, AND CHINA, 10 DOLLARS.—OVER 100 DOLLARS 20 DOLLARS.









## TAKE NOTICE.

As has been already announced, we shall commence a *Third Series* of the *Repositorium* with the next number. This will afford opportunity to new subscribers to begin with No. 1 of Vol. I., and will, we presume, be an inducement to many to commence taking the work.

It will, in future, be issued only in the *octavo format*, three dollars a year. Of course those who have paid this sum for the 12mo. will be pleased to get an 8vo. for the same price. True, we shall be obliged to reduce the numbers to about 200 pages each, or about \$10 a year; but, as a compensation for this, we shall furnish a much handsomer book, got up in a better style—and still it will contain some 120 pages more of matter than any other Telligen's quarterly at the same price, and as much as some others sold at \$1 a year.

We will retain its old title, and be conducted very much in the same manner it has been, except that we hope to be able to give more valuable translations from the German, such as appeared in the first volumes of the *first series*.

Those in arrears will greatly oblige us now, at the close of this series, by settling their accounts.

□ The *Index* to the whole work, (24 volumes) already announced, will be ready for sale by the first of January next, at about one dollar. Orders, with the money, will be answered.

